

# GENESIS, CREATION, AND EARLY MAN

*The Orthodox Christian Vision*



FR. SERAPHIM ROSE

*Introduction by Phillip E. Johnson*



**A**MIDST the creation/evolution debate that is now raging, with evidence being offered for both sides, few have made use of what Fr. Seraphim Rose called “the missing evidence”: the timeless teaching of the Orthodox Holy Fathers on the events of creation, the first-created world, the natures of created things, the original nature of man, and the cosmic consequences of man’s fall.

In the present volume, this teaching has been gathered and set forth in a thorough, detailed, and above all *honest* manner. Perhaps more than anyone else in our times, Fr. Seraphim Rose searched, studied, prayed, and struggled to understand how the Holy Fathers noetically apprehended the beginning of the world as revealed in the Divinely inspired book of Genesis. Having acquired their mind, he has presented to the modern world the harmonious Patristic *vision* of the cosmos.

A much-needed answer to today’s “crisis of meaning,” this book sheds unique light on the origin and primordial condition of man and the cosmos, showing how these mysteries are inextricably tied to those of our redemption by Jesus Christ and of creation’s redeemed state beyond the general resurrection. The Divine vision of the Fathers opens up deeper levels of awareness concerning God’s creation and His ultimate intention for it—levels that cannot be reached through merely rational or scientific means.

**FR. SERAPHIM ROSE** (1934–1982) was an Orthodox monk in the ancient tradition who dedicated his life to reawakening the modern West to forgotten spiritual truths. From his remote cabin in the mountains of northern California, he authored works that have had a profound international impact.

---

“A presentation of the traditional, Patristic understanding of Genesis, which at the same time bravely exposes the lie of the modern philosophy of evolution. This is a vital, pathfinding work, which can serve as a true foundation for all sides in future discussions.”

—His Eminence Metropolitan **JOSEPH**, Bulgarian Eastern Orthodox Diocese of the USA, Canada, and Australia

“It is with great joy and tremendous interest that we greet the publication of the second edition—containing much additional theological and scientific material of great value—of this remarkable work by Hieromonk Seraphim of blessed memory. Having myself employed the first edition of this work as a sourcebook in our courses on Apologetics and Comparative Theology, I can testify to the clarity and meticulousness of Fr. Seraphim’s presentation of the traditional Orthodox doctrine of creation. I can moreover witness to the satisfaction with which students, previously instructed in evolutionist theories, encounter the truth about our God-breathed origins in the pages of this book. As an antidote against the fashionable but spiritually and intellectually corrosive ‘dogma’ of evolution, this work is unsurpassed. As such, it belongs everywhere—parishes, monasteries, seminaries, and homes—where Orthodoxy is taught and studied.”

—Archimandrite Luke, Rector, Holy Trinity Orthodox Seminary, Jordanville, New York



## GENESIS, CREATION, AND EARLY MAN





HIEROMONK SERAPHIM ROSE  
1934–1982



# GENESIS, CREATION, *and* EARLY MAN

*The Orthodox Christian Vision*

FR. SERAPHIM ROSE

Edited by Hieromonk Damascene

*Second Edition*



ST. HERMAN OF ALASKA BROTHERHOOD

2011



St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood  
P. O. Box 70  
Platina, California 96076  
[www.sainthermanpress.com](http://www.sainthermanpress.com)

Copyright © 2000, 2011 by the St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood.  
All rights reserved.

First edition 2000  
Second edition 2011  
Printed in the United States of America

*Icons on front cover and spine:* The creation of the sun, moon, and stars (“lights in the firmament of the heavens”) on the Fourth Day of Creation.  
*Interior frescos from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*  
*Photographs by Mihai Tabacu.*

---

Publishers Cataloging-in-Publication

Rose, Fr. Seraphim, 1934–1982.

Genesis, creation, and early man : the Orthodox Christian vision / Fr. Seraphim Rose ; edited by Hieromonk Damascene. — 2nd ed. — Platina, Calif. : St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2011.

p. ; cm.

ISBN: 978-1-887904-25-4

Previous edition issued in 2000.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

1. Bible. O.T. Genesis—Criticism, interpretation, etc. 2. Creation—Biblical teaching. 3. Fall of man. 4. Deluge. 5. Babel, Tower of. 6. Orthodox Eastern Church—Doctrines. 7. Salvation—Christianity. 8. Eschatology. 9. Creation—Religious aspects—Christianity. 10. Evolution (Biology)—Religious aspects—Christianity. I. Damascene, Hieromonk, 1961– II. Title.

BS1235.R67 2011

222/.1106—dc23

2011933037

1108

# *Contents*

<b>Abbreviations</b>	17
<b>Notes on Citations</b>	19
<b>Editor's Preface: The Story behind the Book</b>	21
1. The Intellectual Milieu of Fr. Seraphim's Formative Years	21
2. From the Evolutionary Worldview to the Orthodox Worldview	24
3. The Roots of Evolutionism	28
4. The Mind of the Holy Fathers	29
5. Evolution and Chiliasm	34
6. The Holy Fathers on Genesis	36
7. Alexander Kalomiros	43
8. The Scientific Side of the Question	45
9. The "Survival Course" and the Courses on Genesis	49
10. The Plan of the Book	51
11. Developments in the 1980s	53
12. Phillip E. Johnson and the Intelligent Design Movement	54
13. Evidence from Genetics	61
14. A Turning of the Tide	63
15. Developments in Russia	64
16. A Comparison of Orthodox and Protestant Scientists Who Uphold the Biblical View	72
17. The Present Book	75
18. This Book's Primary Contribution	77
19. A Spiritual Awareness of Original Incorruption	80
20. The Original Nature of Man	83
<b>A Note on the Second Edition</b>	88



## CONTENTS

<b>Introduction: Fr. Seraphim Rose and Twenty-First-Century Science</b>	
<i>by Phillip E. Johnson</i>	89
1. The Mechanism of Evolution: Mutation and Selection	94
2. The Common Ancestry Thesis	98
3. Evolution (in the Scientific Sense) Is Inherently Godless	100
4. Conclusion: Can Science Tell Us a True Story about Origins?	101

## PART I AN ORTHODOX PATRISTIC COMMENTARY ON GENESIS

<b>Editor's Note</b>	105
<b>Foreword: Why Study the Book of Genesis?</b>	107
<b>Chapter One: How to Read Genesis</b>	109
1. Approach	109
2. The Holy Fathers: Our Key to the Understanding of Genesis	112
3. Basic Principles of Our Approach to Understanding Genesis	116
4. Literal vs. Symbolical Interpretations	119
5. The Nature of the Text	124
<b>Chapter Two: The Six Days of Creation (General Observations)</b>	134
1. Introduction	134
2. General Remarks about the Six Days	137
3. Why Six Days?	140
<b>Chapter Three: The Six Days (Day by Day)</b>	145
1. The First Day (Genesis 1:1–5)	145
2. The Second Day (Genesis 1:6–8)	159

## CONTENTS

3. The Third Day (Genesis 1:9–13)	164
4. The Fourth Day (Genesis 1:14–19)	169
5. The Fifth Day (Genesis 1:20–23)	175
6. The Sixth Day (Genesis 1:24–31)	188
7. The Seventh Day (Genesis 2:1–3)	192
<b>Chapter Four: The Creation of Man (Genesis 1:26–31, 2:4–7)</b>	<b>195</b>
<b>Chapter Five: Paradise (Genesis 2:8–24)</b>	<b>220</b>
<b>Chapter Six: The Fall of Man (Genesis 3:1–24)</b>	<b>253</b>
<b>Chapter Seven: Life outside Paradise (Genesis 4:1–6:5)</b>	<b>283</b>
1. The Banishment of Adam	283
2. Cain and Abel	288
3. The Genealogy from Adam through Seth to Noah	306
4. The Corruption of Mankind	318
<b>Chapter Eight: The Flood (Genesis 6:6–8:22)</b>	<b>323</b>
<b>Chapter Nine: The Dispersion of the Peoples (Genesis 9:1–11:26)</b>	<b>349</b>
1. Noah and God's New Covenant	349
2. The Generations of Noah	358
3. The Tower of Babel	361
<b>Chapter Ten: Questions and Answers</b>	<b>370</b>
1. The Age of the Earth	370
2. Carbon-14 Dating	372
3. Geological Strata	373
4. A Matter of Models	374
5. The Origin of the Heavenly Bodies (Patristic Cosmogony)	375
6. Creation Scientists	378
7. Various Evolutionary Ideas	380
8. The Limits of Biological Change	382
9. "Human Evolution"	383



## CONTENTS

10. The Limits of Scientific Inquiry	386
11. The Biblical Chronology	387
12. The Preexistence of Souls, “Reincarnation,” and Evolution	388
13. The Nature of Paradise	389
14. Free Will	392
15. The Creation of Adam and Eve	393
16. The Mind of Adam	396
17. Paradise and Heaven	398
18. The Devil	400
19. Christ’s Spiritual Body	403
20. The Firmament	404
21. The “Location” of Paradise	406
22. Between the Fall and the Flood	408
23. The Flood	408
24. Patristic Interpretation vs. Modern “Higher” Criticism	409
25. The Ages of the Patriarchs	412
26. Different Interpretations	412

## PART II THE PATRISTIC DOCTRINE OF CREATION

Editor’s Note	417
1. Evolution as Philosophy	420
2. A Clear Definition	422
3. Development, Not Evolution	424
4. How Do the Holy Fathers Interpret Genesis?	433
5. “The Bondage of Corruption” (Romans 8:21)	450
6. Divine Vision	457
7. The Nature of Man	465

## PART III THE PHILOSOPHY OF EVOLUTION

Chapter One: Science and the Holy Fathers	501
1. True Theology and Secular Knowledge	501

## CONTENTS

2. Science and Christian Philosophy	505
3. Distinguishing Materialistic Fantasies from Scientific Truth	507
4. Science as a Lower Form of Knowledge	508
5. An Alien System of Thought	509
6. The Lack of Philosophical Culture among Orthodox Christians	510
7. The Philosophy of the Holy Fathers	511
<b>Chapter Two: A Brief Critique of the Evolutionary Model</b>	<b>512</b>
1. Introduction	512
2. Historical Background	515
3. "Proofs" of Evolution	519
4. The Theory of Evolution Is Understandable Philosophically	533
5. Scientific Faith	540
6. The Conflict between Christian Truth and Evolutionary Philosophy	543
<b>Chapter Three: "Christian Evolutionism"</b>	<b>558</b>
1. Introduction	558
2. Pierre Lecomte du Noüy	561
3. Fr. Anthony Kosturos	564
4. Karl Rahner	567
5. Stephanus Trooster	569
6. The Roman Catholic View of Original Man	571
7. Theodosius Dobzhansky	573
8. Pierre Teilhard de Chardin	577
9. The Chiliasm of Teilhard de Chardin	590
10. Teilhardism in the Light of Orthodoxy	595
11. "Orthodox" Followers of Teilhard de Chardin	598

## PART IV SELECTIONS FROM LETTERS

1. A Key in the Program of Anti-Christianity	605
--	-----

## CONTENTS

2. Theistic Evolution	606
3. A Rival Thought-Pattern to Orthodoxy	609
4. A Deep-Seated Primordial Force	613
5. The Argument against Evolution Is Not Scientific but Theological	614
6. The Real Intellectual Problems of Today	614
7. Such "Theology" We Do Not Need	616
8. A Product of the "Spirit of the Times"	616
9. Looking Forward with an Open Mind	617
10. Quibbling over Words	617
11. The Holy Fathers as the Answer to Medieval Scholasticism	618
12. The Philosophy of the Age	619
13. At Last the Real Battle Begins	624
14. Love for the Holy Fathers	626
15. The Power of This World and Its Fashionable Ideas	627
16. Unknowingly Harboring "Modern Ideas"	628
17. Genuine Science	629
18. Clearing Up Confusion	629
19. The Genealogy of Christ	630
20. The Larger Idea of Naturalism	632
21. Scientists Who Question Evolution	632
22. Avoiding One-Sidedness	635
23. Three Axioms	635
24. Notes from a Dialogue on Evolution	640
25. Clergy in Greece against "Orthodox Evolutionism"	644
26. People Are Ready to Hear This	645

## PART V NOTES AND OUTLINES

<b>Chapter One: Notes on Science, Evolution, and Christian Philosophy</b>	649
1. The Incorruption of the First-Created World	649
2. Science and the Question of Incorruption	652



## CONTENTS

3. Evolution and “Cosmic Religion”	653
4. The “Mysticism” of Teilhard de Chardin	655
5. Evolution as the Exact Opposite of Christianity	655
6. Why Orthodox Christians Should Not Be Indifferent to Evolution	657
7. Paleontology and “Ivory-Tower Orthodoxy”	658
8. Which Interpretation of the Fossil Record Makes God a Deceiver?	660
9. Man as Qualitatively Different from Animals	660
10. The Roman Catholic Idea of the State of Adam (according to Fr. Michael Pomazansky)	660
11. An “Inferiority Complex” among Christians	661
12. What Kind of Simple-Minded Fools Are We?	661
13. For the “Orthodox Evolutionist,” Where Does History Begin and Fables Leave Off?	662
14. The Old Testament Chronology	663
15. The Missing Evidence	663
<b>Chapter Two: Outlines of Proposed Studies</b>	665
1. Evolution	665
2. Patristic Section	673
<b>Afterword: Fr. Seraphim’s Last Talk on Creation and Evolution</b>	677
<b>Appendix One: Created in Incorruption—The Orthodox Patristic Understanding of Man and the Cosmos in Their Original, Fallen, and Redeemed States</b> <i>by the editor</i>	689
I. INTRODUCTION	689
II. THE ORIGINAL CONDITION OF MAN	691
1. Man’s Spiritual Condition before the Fall	691
2. Man’s Physical Condition before the Fall	692
3. Desire and Pleasure before the Fall	695
4. The Condition of Man’s Mind before the Fall	697
5. St. Maximus on Man’s Original Condition	699

## CONTENTS

6. St. Maximus and St. Symeon on What Might Have Been	702
III. THE ORIGINAL CONDITION OF THE COSMOS	703
1. Patristic Accounts of the Cosmos before the Fall	703
2. Animals before the Fall	705
3. The Unknowability of the World before the Fall	708
4. Man's Calling to Deify the Cosmos	710
IV. THE EFFECTS OF THE FALL ON MAN	712
1. The Corruption of Human Nature	712
2. The Loss of Grace: Spiritual Death	714
3. Physical Suffering, Death, and Decay	717
4. The Change in Man's Physical Condition	719
5. Sexual Procreation	721
6. The Condition of Man's Soul after Death	723
7. The Change in Human Nature	723
8. The Commonality of Human Nature as It Relates to the Fall	725
V. THE EFFECTS OF THE FALL ON THE COSMOS	727
1. The Dependence of the Cosmos on Man	727
2. Subjected in Hope	729
VI. "BY MAN CAME DEATH"	733
1. Death Is Not from God	733
2. The Devil's Role	735
3. Is Death "Natural"?	736
4. St. Gregory Palamas on the Cause of Death and Illness	741
5. Why God Allowed the Entrance of Death and Suffering	743
VII. THE REDEMPTION AND DEIFICATION OF MAN AND THE COSMOS	748
1. "Trampling Down Death by Death"	748
2. The Commonality of Human Nature as It Relates to Redemption	751
3. The Order of Redemption (I): Spiritual Resurrection	753
4. The Order of Redemption (II): Physical Resurrection	759
5. The Restoration of Incorruption	761

## CONTENTS

6. The Permanent Deification of Man and the Cosmos	763
VIII. THE ORTHODOX DOCTRINE OF PRELAPSARIAN INCORRUPTION AS IT RELATES TO ORTHODOX SOTERIOLOGY AND ESCHATOLOGY	774
IX. A COMPARISON OF THE ORTHODOX CHRISTIAN AND EVOLUTIONIST WORLDVIEWS	778
X. THE PERSONAL RELEVANCE AND APPLICATION OF THE ORTHODOX TEACHING	784
<b>Appendix Two: Modern Saints and Elders on Evolutionism</b> <i>by the editor</i>	787
1. St. Ambrose, Elder of Optina	787
2. St. Theophan the Recluse, Bishop of Tambov	787
3. St. John of Kronstadt	794
4. St. Barsanuphius, Elder of Optina	795
5. Holy Hieromartyr Vladimir (Bogoyavlensky), Metropolitan of Kiev and Gallich	796
6. St. Nectarios (Kephala), Metropolitan of Pentapolis and Wonderworker of Aegina	797
7. Holy Hieromartyr Hilarion (Troitsky), Archbishop of Verey	799
8. Holy Hieromartyr Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver	801
9. Holy Hieromartyr Varlaam (Nikol'sky), Holy Hieromartyr Nicholas Pokrovsky, Holy Hiero-confessor Gabriel (Igoshkin), and Holy Hieromartyr Paul Andreyev	802
10. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich), Bishop of Zica	805
11. Schema-Abbot John (Alekseyev), Elder of Valaam	807
12. Holy Hiero-confessor Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky), Archbishop of Simferopol	808
13. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije	809
14. Elder Paisius (Olaru) of Sihastria and Sihla	812
15. Archimandrite Sophrony (Sakharov) of Essex	813
16. Elder Paisios (Eznejidis) of Mount Athos	814



## CONTENTS

17. Fr. George Calciu	818
<b>Appendix Three: Biological Evidence and the Neo-Darwinian Paradigm</b>	
<i>by Yuri Zharikov, Ph.D.</i>	822
1. Two Models	822
2. The Theory of Evolution	826
3. What Is a Scientific Theory?	827
4. What Does the Theory of Evolution Predict?	829
5. “Facts” of Evolution; or, Can the Predictions Be Upheld?	832
6. Conclusions	853
7. Kicking against the Pricks	855
<b>Appendix Four: The Age of the Earth and the Rate of Geological Processes</b>	
<i>by Alexander Lalomov, Ph.D.</i>	861
1. Introduction	861
2. Radioisotope Dating	862
3. Checking Radioisotope Dating	863
4. Possible Reasons for Large Concentrations of Daughter Isotopes	868
5. The Rate of Sedimentation Processes	871
6. The Rate of Formation of Mineral Resources	873
7. Paleontology and Stratigraphy	878
8. Conclusion	881
<b>Suggested Resources</b>	
<i>by the editor</i>	883
I. PATRISTIC SOURCES	883
II. SCIENTIFIC SOURCES	888
1. Critiques of Biological Evolutionism	888
2. On “Human Evolution”	892
3. On the History of Darwinism	892
4. On the Age of the Earth	893
5. On the Dinosaurs	895

## CONTENTS

6. On the Flood	900
7. On Astronomy and Cosmology	901
8. For the Education of Young People	906
III. SOURCES IN RUSSIAN	907
Saints and Early Church Writers Cited in the Present Book	911
Notes	953
Bibliography	989
Acknowledgments	1043
Scripture Index	1045
Index of Works by Saints and Early Church Writers	1049
General Index	1063



Scenes from the life of Adam and Eve.  
*Russian icon of the eighteenth century (detail).*

# ABBREVIATIONS

- ACCS Thomas C. Oden, general ed. *Ancient Christian Commentary on Scripture*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2001–.
- ACT Thomas C. Oden and Gerald L. Bray, series eds. *Ancient Christian Texts*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2009–.
- ACW *Ancient Christian Writers: The Works of the Fathers in Translation*. Mahwah, N.J.: Paulist Press, 1946–.
- ANF A. Roberts and J. Donaldson, eds. *Ante-Nicene Fathers*. 10 vols. Buffalo, N.Y.: Christian Literature, 1885–1896. Reprint, Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 1951–1956. Reprint, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1994.
- AW H.-G. Opitz, ed. *Athanasius Werke*. Berlin: Kirchenväter-Kommission der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1934–1940, 1996–.
- CCSG *Corpus Christianorum. Series Graeca*. Turnhout, Belgium: Brepols/Leuven University Press, 1977–.
- CCSL *Corpus Christianorum. Series Latina*. Turnhout, Belgium: Brepols/Leuven University Press, 1953–.
- CSCO *Corpus Scriptorum Christianorum Orientalium*. Louvain, Belgium, 1903–.
- CSEL *Corpus Scriptorum Ecclesiasticorum Latinorum*. Vienna, 1866–.
- Dobrotolyubiye* St. Theophan the Recluse, trans. *Dobrotolyubiye v" Russkom" perevode, dopolnennoye* (The Philokalia in Russian translation, supplemented). 5 vols. Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1877–1889. 2nd ed., 1883–1900. 3rd ed., 1913.
- FC *The Fathers of the Church: A New Translation*. Washington, D.C.: Catholic University of America Press, 1947–.
- FCM Fr. Seraphim Rose, trans. *St. Symeon the New Theologian: The First-Created Man*. St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1994.

## ABBREVIATIONS

Originally published in 1979 under the title *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption*.

- GCS Die Griechischen Christlichen Schriftsteller der ersten Jahrhunderte. Leipzig/Berlin, 1897–.
- GNO Gregorii Nysseni Opera. Leiden: Brill, 1960–.
- KJV Holy Bible: King James Version
- LEC The Library of Early Christianity. Washington, D.C.: The Catholic University of America Press, 2007–.
- LFC A Library of Fathers of the Holy Catholic Church: Anterior to the Division of the East and West. Oxford: J. H. Parker, 1838–1881.
- LXX Old Testament: Septuagint (Greek) Version
- NPNF P. Schaff et al., eds. A Select Library of the Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers of the Christian Church. 2 series (14 vols. each). Buffalo, N.Y.: Christian Literature, 1887–1894. Reprint, Grand Rapids, Mich.: Eerdmans, 1952–1956; Reprint, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1994.
- PG J.-P. Migne, ed. Patrologia Cursus Completus, Series Graeca. 166 vols. Paris: Migne, 1857–1886.
- Philokalia* G. E. H. Palmer, Philip Sherrard, and Kallistos Ware, trans. *The Philokalia: The Complete Text, compiled by St. Nikodimos of the Holy Mountain and St. Makarios of Corinth*. London: Faber and Faber, 1979–.
- Philokalia* (Greek). *Philokalia: Ton ieron niptikon* (The Philokalia of the neptic fathers). Athens: Astir Publishing Company, 1957–1963. 5 vols. Reprint, Athens: Publishing House “Sotir,” 1976. Based on the earlier editions published in Venice, 1782, and Athens, 1893.
- PL J.-P. Migne, ed. Patrologia Cursus Completus, Series Latina. 221 vols. Paris: Migne, 1844–1864.
- PPS Pocket Patristics Series. Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir’s Seminary Press, 1977–.
- PTS Patristische Texte und Studien. Berlin: De Gruyter, 1963–.
- SC H. de Lubac, J. Daniélou et al., eds. Sources Chrétiennes. Paris: Editions du Cerf, 1941–.



# NOTES ON CITATIONS

1. An asterisk (\*) following a reference indicates that the cited English translation has been modified based on the original text.

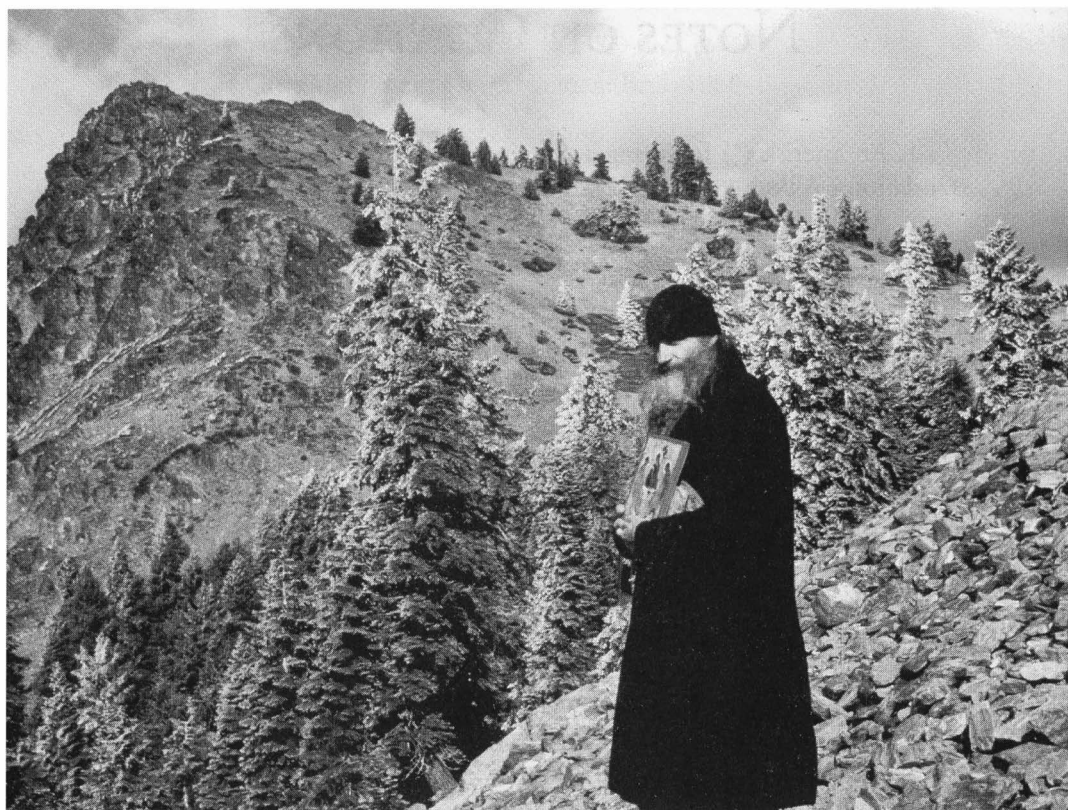
2. All the Psalm references follow the numbering of the Septuagint version of the Old Testament.

3. In the footnotes, foreign-language titles of works of recent centuries are given only in English translation, while in the endnotes and bibliography such citations are given both in the original language and in English translation.

4. For two of his main Patristic sources—*Homilies on Genesis* by St. John Chrysostom and *Commentary on Genesis* by St. Ephraim the Syrian—Fr. Seraphim translated from and referred to Russian editions. After his repose, both of these works have been made available in English translation, in the FC series.

The section divisions of the Russian translation (1898) of St. John Chrysostom's *Homilies on Genesis* correspond with those in the original Greek text published in PG, vols. 53 and 54 (1862), while those in the FC volumes (74, 1986; 82, 1990; 87, 1992) were made by the translator. In each citation of *Homilies on Genesis* found in the present book, we have provided the section numbers found both in PG and in the Russian edition, as well as those in the FC volumes.

The original Syriac text of St. Ephraim's *Commentary on Genesis* (first published in 1732–1743) has no chapter or section divisions. The Russian edition of 1887, which Fr. Seraphim used, contains added chapter divisions. In 1955, a critical edition of the work (CSCO, vols. 152–53) was published containing added chapter divisions that differ from the Russian, as well as section divisions. The English translation in FC (vol. 91, 1994) follows the divisions found in the critical edition. In the present book, wherever Fr. Seraphim refers to the Russian translation, we have provided the chapter numbers for the Russian edition and the chapter and section numbers for the FC edition. In references given by the editor alone, only the FC chapter and section numbers are indicated.



Fr. Seraphim Rose amidst one of the oldest stands of living trees on earth,  
atop Mount Yolla Bolly in northern California, October 1981.

## EDITOR'S PREFACE

### *The Story behind the Book*

THIS BOOK, compiled and published posthumously, represents one of the most important achievements in the life of the revered Orthodox writer Fr. Seraphim Rose. It is an exhaustive collection of all the relevant material—from manuscripts, transcriptions of tape-recorded lectures, and letters—that Fr. Seraphim produced on the subject of Genesis and creation over the course of nine years, until his repose in 1982. Broad in scope and rich in detail, it can serve as a source book and an invaluable reference for students of Orthodox Patristic teaching.

Behind the gathered components of this book there lies a story integral to Fr. Seraphim's life and work, which were always concerned with the beginning and end of all things. It is our purpose here to tell that story.

#### *1. The Intellectual Milieu of Fr. Seraphim's Formative Years*

In the 1950s, when Fr. Seraphim (then Eugene) Rose was attending high school and college in Southern California, the evolutionary worldview of secular science was at the height of its prestige. The scientific establishment had long since come to be defined by the philosophy of naturalism: the belief that “nature is all there is.” Since it logically follows from such a philosophy that nature itself must have brought all things into existence, it was assumed *a priori* that natural and material explanations could be found not only for repeatable phenomena presently observed in nature, but also for the unrepeatable, unobserved *origin* of the universe, including biological systems and

man himself. Belief in a spontaneous, undirected, materialistic origin of all things actually requires more faith than does belief in supernatural creation by a Divine intelligence, particularly when one confronts the marvelous order and complexity of the natural world. Nevertheless, scientists working from naturalistic presuppositions were successfully promoting the idea that their own origins story—that of molecules-to-man evolution, without need for God—relied not at all on faith but only on “science,” and that the concept of Divine creation was “unscientific.”

The ascendancy of evolutionary theory as a naturalistic origins story culminated in the grand Darwin Centennial celebration at the University of Chicago in 1959, commemorating the publication of Charles Darwin's evolutionary treatise *The Origin of Species* one hundred years earlier. Scientists came from all over to share in the triumph, not only of a scientific theory, but of a worldview. As Phillip E. Johnson writes:

“The participants in the Darwin Centennial were understandably in a triumphal mood. The prestige of science was never higher. Polio had been conquered by a vaccine; atomic power seemed to promise abundant, cheap energy; space travel loomed in the near future. Besides these technological achievements, science had seemingly established that a purposeless process of evolution was our true creator and hence had dethroned the God of the Bible. The religious implications of this intellectual revolution were frankly emphasized by the most prominent speaker at the centennial, the British biologist, philosopher and world statesman Sir Julian Huxley.

“Julian Huxley was the grandson of Thomas Henry Huxley, who was known as ‘Darwin's bulldog’ because he was the most important early champion of Darwin's theory. T. H. Huxley had also invented the word *agnostic* to describe his own religious views. Julian Huxley, a zoologist, was one of the scientific founders of the neo-Darwinian synthesis, the modern version of Darwin's theory.\* He was also the promoter of a naturalistic religion called evolutionary humanism, and

---

\* Neo-Darwinism attempts to combine Darwin's idea of evolution through natural selection with the findings of modern genetics. See p. 823n below.

the founding secretary general of UNESCO, the United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization. In short, Julian Huxley was one of the most influential intellectuals of the mid-twentieth century, and 1959 was the high-water mark of his influence. Here are some excerpts from Huxley's remarks at the Centennial:

Future historians will perhaps take this Centennial Week as epitomizing an important critical period in the history of this earth of ours—the period when the process of evolution, in the person of inquiring man, began to be truly conscious of itself.... This is one of the first public occasions on which it has been frankly faced that all aspects of reality are subject to evolution, from atoms and stars to fish and flowers, from fish and flowers to human societies and values—indeed, that all reality is a single process of evolution.

In 1859, Darwin opened the passage leading to a new psychosocial level, with a new pattern of ideological organization—an evolution-centered organization of thought and belief.

In the evolutionary pattern of thought there is no longer either need or room for the supernatural. The earth was not created, it evolved. So did all the animals and plants that inhabit it, including our human selves, mind and soul as well as brain and body. So did religion.

Evolutionary man can no longer take refuge from his loneliness in the arms of a divinized father figure whom he has himself created, nor escape from the responsibility of making decisions by sheltering under the umbrella of Divine Authority, nor absolve himself from the hard task of meeting his present problems and planning his future by relying on the will of an omniscient, but unfortunately inscrutable, Providence.

Finally, the evolutionary vision is enabling us to discern, however incompletely, the lineaments of the new religion that we can be sure will arise to serve the needs of the coming era.

“In short, the triumph of Darwinism implied the death of God and set the stage for replacing Biblical religion with a new faith based on evolutionary naturalism. That new faith would become the basis



not just of science but also of government, law and morality. It would be the established religious philosophy of modernity."<sup>1</sup>

Some of the world's most eminent scientists—from Richard Owen and Louis Agassiz in the 1860s to Richard Goldschmidt and Otto Schindewolf in the 1940s—had shown to the scientific community the embarrassing difficulties of the neo-Darwinian synthesis that was being heralded at the Centennial, but these scientists had been censured and their valid objections dismissed out of hand.\* In addition to these vocal critics, there was a silent group of scientists who disagreed with neo-Darwinism but were afraid to challenge the prevailing model. The existence of this group was even acknowledged at the Darwin Centennial by the paleontologist Everett Claire Olson of the University of California, who said, "It is difficult to judge the size and composition of this silent segment, but there is no doubt that the numbers are not inconsiderable."<sup>2</sup>

Whether they were silenced or chose to remain silent, the many scientists who questioned neo-Darwinism were not heard by the American people. Consequently, when Fr. Seraphim began studying science in high school and college in the early 1950s, he was taught that the evolution of all life from a primeval soup was an undisputed and unassailable fact, as sure (in Julian Huxley's words) as the fact that the earth goes around the sun.

## *2. From the Evolutionary Worldview to the Orthodox Worldview*

Possessed of a brilliant mind, Fr. Seraphim from a young age exhibited a burning desire to *know*, to understand reality in the highest sense. In high school he zealously sought knowledge in science (chemistry, biology) and mathematics. Graduating at the top of his class, he was granted a scholarship to Pomona College in Southern

---

\* A list of some of the scientists who had openly challenged neo-Darwinian claims was included in the English edition of *Evolution above the Species Level* by German evolutionary biologist Bernhard Rensch, published during the same year as the Darwin Centennial (Columbia University Press, 1959, pp. 57–58).

California, thanks to the enthusiastic endorsement of his math teacher.

At Pomona he continued his study of science, which he now combined with a study of philosophy. Under the influence of the humanists of his time, he joined in the grand enterprise of thinkers like Julian Huxley: to explain the universe without God. In a freshman philosophy paper (1953), he stated:

All science points to the existence of the Universe, the totality of all things. Nothing in science points to the existence of a God removed from the Universe. For the present time, since I have not yet developed my own theory of knowledge, I assume for convenience' sake that I can gain knowledge (as certain as it *can* be obtained) through science. Therefore, I believe in the findings of science that point to the existence of the Universe; I reject the concept of an independent God for insufficient evidence.<sup>3</sup>

This statement may seem naive nowadays, when the equating of science with naturalism is being increasingly challenged by both scientists and non-scientists, but it must be considered in the context of the 1950s, the decade of the ascendancy of Humanism and the triumphal pronouncements of the Darwin Centennial.

"At one time I believed entirely in evolution," Fr. Seraphim was later to recall. "I believed not because I had thought very much about this question, but simply because 'everyone believes it,' because it is a 'fact,' and how can one deny 'facts'?... I still remember my freshman professor of zoology expatiating on the 'great ideas of man': for him the greatest idea man ever invented was the idea of evolution; much greater, he believed, than the 'idea of God.'"<sup>4</sup>

Ultimately, Fr. Seraphim's striving to understand the meaning of reality could not be satisfied by modern science, limited as it was by materialism, nor by Western philosophy, which had been born in rationalism. "I was an undergraduate," he later recalled, "looking for some kind of truth in philosophy, and not finding it. I was very bored with Western philosophy."<sup>5</sup> During his sophomore year he began to seek higher wisdom in the philosophy of ancient China, for which he

undertook a study of the Chinese language, both ancient and modern.

Fr. Seraphim graduated from Pomona College in 1956 and pursued his study of ancient Chinese language and philosophy at the Academy of Asian Studies in San Francisco and later at the University of California in Berkeley. While at the Academy, he discovered the writings of the twentieth-century French metaphysician René Guénon, a traditionalist who looked to the ancient, orthodox expressions of the world's religions for answers to ultimate questions. Guénon both clarified and transformed Fr. Seraphim's intellectual outlook. Later he wrote, "It was Guénon who taught me to seek and love the truth above all else, and to be unsatisfied with anything else."<sup>6</sup>

Fr. Seraphim's education had taught him to view all things in terms of historical *progress*, according to the evolutionary worldview of the modern age. Upon discovering Guénon, he began to see things in terms of historical *disintegration*.

In his book *The Reign of Quantity and the Signs of the Times*, Guénon explained how the elimination of traditional spiritual principles has led to a drastic degeneration of humanity. He showed how twentieth-century science, with its tendency to reduce everything to an exclusively quantitative level, had corrupted man's conception of true knowledge and confined his vision to what is temporal and material.

Guénon wrote elsewhere that, "in attempting to reduce everything to the stature of man taken as an end in himself, modern civilization has sunk stage by stage to a level of his lowest elements and aims at little more than satisfying the needs inherent in the material side of his nature."<sup>7</sup> Trying to fill in the gap left by science and materialism in the modern age, "pseudo-religions" have sprung up; but in their confusion of psychic with spiritual reality, they have only further obscured the truth.

Guénon wrote that "the modern world, considered in itself, is an anomaly, and even a sort of monstrosity"; and he regarded the modern scientific theory of evolution, which was developed in an attempt to explain the universe purely naturalistically, as an offspring of this monstrosity. In evolutionism, he wrote, "all reality is placed exclusively in 'becoming'; involving the final denial of all immutable principle, and consequently of all metaphysic."<sup>8</sup>

It is likely that Guénon caused Fr. Seraphim to question evolutionism even before the latter began his conversion to Orthodox Christianity. “I began to think more deeply on this question [of evolutionism],” Fr. Seraphim later recalled. “I began to see that very often what calls itself ‘science’ is not *fact* at all, but *philosophy*, and I began very carefully to distinguish between *scientific facts* and *scientific philosophy*.”<sup>9\*</sup>

In his freshman year at Pomona, Fr. Seraphim had trusted the modern scientific outlook. After his study of Guénon, he was still to regard science as a way to knowledge, but now he saw this as “knowledge of the lowest, commonest sort.”<sup>10</sup>

Guénon had shown Fr. Seraphim what to leave behind and had started him on the path to Truth, but he had not shown him his final destination. Fr. Seraphim found this destination when, by a miracle, he discovered that the Truth he was seeking was a Person—Jesus Christ—Whose image was preserved undistorted in the Orthodox transmission of the very Christianity he had previously rejected.

In the Orthodox Church, Fr. Seraphim found the true, ancient worldview to replace the modern evolutionary one; and the key to this worldview he found in the writings of the Orthodox Holy Fathers. The theology of the Holy Fathers, he understood, was based on the living, personal revelation of God to man, and thus was of an infinitely higher order not only than science, but even than the metaphysical insights he had gained through Guénon. He never ceased to appreciate the crucial step that Guénon had given him on his path to Truth, but now he saw that the path of metaphysics, which places human intellection above the Divinely inspired theology of the Church, is fraught with dangers, leading to subtle errors mingled with higher truths. Whereas before he had relied on his mind to arrive at Truth, now he knew he had to humble his mind before the Truth as Person: Jesus Christ. Shortly after his conversion he wrote, “When I became a Christian I voluntarily crucified my mind, and all the crosses that I

---

\* On the distinction between “fact” and “philosophy” in this context, see p. 421n below.

bear have only been a source of joy for me. I have lost nothing, and gained everything."

### 3. *The Roots of Evolutionism*

During the early years following his conversion, Fr. Seraphim made a thorough examination of the philosophical history of Western civilization, in order to fully understand the past causes, present state, and future development of the West's apostasy from the "Old Order" of traditional Christian civilization. Out of this study was to come his philosophical magnum opus, entitled *The Kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of God*.

In chapter 4 of the proposed work, Fr. Seraphim was to discuss the new physics propounded at the end of the Renaissance by the rationalist Descartes, which aimed at assigning natural (i.e., not Divine) causes to all physical phenomena, and thus made way for the eventual identification of science with philosophical naturalism.\* In the same chapter he was to describe the modern philosophy of *progress* which arose at the end of the Enlightenment, displacing the stable worldview that had characterized much of Enlightenment thought. These two *a priori* philosophical commitments—to naturalism and to progress—formed the seedbed out of which came ideas of biological evolution: ideas first propagated by Western European thinkers in the second half of the eighteenth century,\*\* long before the publication of Charles Darwin's *Origin of Species*. As Fr. Seraphim later observed, "This theory [of evolution] developed *together with the course of modern philosophy from Descartes onward*, long before there was any 'scientific proof' for it."<sup>11</sup>

The research Fr. Seraphim did for his proposed book was prodigious. He wrote thousands of pages of notes but, due to new avenues of Orthodox activity that opened up to him, he never completed the work,

---

\* On the historical roots of naturalism, see Michael Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, pp. 71–73. On the modern identification of science with philosophical naturalism, see Phillip E. Johnson, "Evolution as Dogma: The Establishment of Naturalism" (1990).

\*\* For a list of these thinkers, see p. 462n below.

save for chapter 7, on Nihilism.\* By 1963, along with his co-laborer, the future Fr. Herman, he was heavily involved in beginning an Orthodox Christian Brotherhood in San Francisco and opening the first city storefront in America that sold exclusively Orthodox materials.

#### 4. *The Mind of the Holy Fathers*

In the meantime, Fr. Seraphim's archbishop and spiritual mentor, the miracle-worker St. John of Shanghai and San Francisco, had begun a series of theological courses in San Francisco, which Fr. Seraphim attended several times a week for three years. Although Fr. Seraphim was an American convert and all the courses were conducted in Russian, he graduated at the head of the class. Among the many subjects covered, he was taught Patristics by Bishop Nektary (a disciple of St. Nektary of Optina Monastery in Russia) and Old Testament by Archimandrite Spyridon (a clairvoyant elder and the closest disciple of St. John). Here, in contrast to the rationalistic evolutionary ideas he had been taught while growing up, Fr. Seraphim learned the revelation of God Himself regarding the creation of the universe and the nature of the first-created world, as passed on in the Sacred Scriptures and in the writings of the God-bearing Holy Fathers throughout the centuries. Having such rare instructors as St. John, Bishop Nektary, and Fr. Spyridon, Fr. Seraphim was able to receive the transmission of Patristic wisdom not only from books, but from living bearers of that transmission. It was through living repositories of sanctity that the meaning of Genesis was opened to him.

In 1969 Fathers Seraphim and Herman moved to the mountains of northern California, where they became monks and continued their Orthodox missionary work through writing, translating, and printing Orthodox material. There, in their forest hermitage, Fr. Seraphim continued to fill himself with the Scriptures and the writings of the Fathers. Over years of study, he acquired extensive knowledge of Patristic teaching, which had already been placed in the proper context for him

---

\* Published posthumously as a separate book: Eugene (Fr. Seraphim) Rose, *Nihilism: The Root of the Revolution of the Modern Age* (1994).

through the courses he had attended in San Francisco. In addressing a particular issue in his writings, he would make use of a wide range of Patristic sources both ancient and modern, from both Eastern and Western Christendom, many of them never before rendered in English.

Fr. Seraphim's aim, however, was not to become simply a scholar whose specialty was Patristic studies. As always, he had to go deeper, to get the whole picture. He had not only to grasp the Fathers' writings intellectually, but to *acquire their mind* and spiritual orientation: to learn to think, feel, and look at things as they did, and to imbibe the true meaning and intention of Holy Scripture as they did. "In the Holy Fathers," he wrote, "we find the 'mind of the Church'—the living understanding of God's revelation. They are our link between the ancient texts which contain God's revelation [i.e., the Scriptures] and today's reality. Without such a link it is every man for himself—and the result is a myriad of interpretations and sects."<sup>\*</sup>

Fr. Seraphim struggled in his quest to acquire the mind of the Fathers, praying fervently to God. He supplicated the ancient Holy Fathers as living members of the Body of Christ, that through their prayers to God he would be given to see how they apprehended reality. He felt especially close to the fourth-century Father St. Basil the Great, who, among the many sacred treasures he bequeathed to the Church, wrote the most authoritative Patristic commentary on the Six Days of Creation.

Too often in contemporary Orthodox scholarship the tendency is to revise the Faith of the Holy Fathers in order to conform it to the mind-set of modern man. This approach is informed by the modern notion of "progress" mentioned above: the idea that, since we live in "enlightened" times, with more knowledge and research tools at our disposal, we are better equipped than the Fathers of previous times to answer the fundamental questions of interpretation, doctrine, and even life. Sometimes Orthodox scholars who adopt this approach will try to spot contradictions between the teachings of various Fathers, thereby calling the authority of the Fathers into question and freeing the scholars themselves to revise the Faith according to modern conceptions.

---

\* See p. 112 below.

Categorically rejecting this approach of “we know better than they,” Fr. Seraphim both practiced and advocated a humble, reverent, and loving approach to the Holy Fathers. He knew that, rather than conform Orthodoxy to modernity, he had to do just the opposite: to conform his consciousness to that of the Fathers, to enter fully into the two-thousand-year continuity of Christian experience. The tradition of the Fathers, he understood, was a continuation of the tradition of the Apostles—of “the faith that was once delivered unto the saints” (Jude 1:3), of the truth (in the phrase of St. Irenaeus of Lyons) that the Apostles “deposited” in the Church.<sup>12</sup> In acquiring the mind of the Apostles and Fathers, and through them the mind of the Church, Fr. Seraphim was at the same time acquiring the mind of Christ (cf. 1 Cor. 2:16), Who is the Head of the Church.

As Fr. Seraphim stated, we are not to be looking for “contradictions” in the Fathers; rather, we are to view the Orthodox teaching of the Fathers as “one single whole”:

Since the whole of Orthodox teaching is obviously not contained in any one Father (for all the Fathers are human and thus limited), we find parts of it in one Father and other parts in another Father, and one Father explains what is obscure in another Father; and it is not even of primary importance for us who said what, as long as it is Orthodox and in harmony with the whole Patristic teaching.\*

Fr. Seraphim’s approach was to find the consensus or accord of the Holy Fathers, the “whole Patristic teaching”; and if a difficult or obscure passage from one Father might seem to contradict it, he sought to find how that passage might rather be harmonized with the broader Patristic heritage, and he never felt free to discard the com-

---

\* See p. 447 below. Compare the words of St. Barsanuphius the Great of Gaza (†ca. 570): “Just as God revealed the way of life through the Prophets and Apostles, so also each of these spoke the truth partially. So the truth was not spoken through one person alone; but what one person left out, another spoke according to God’s will. God made the same happen also in the case of saints who followed after them” (Sts. Barsanuphius and John, *Letter* 605, FC 114, p. 189).



mon teaching.\* This approach to the Fathers was not at all new with Fr. Seraphim: it was the same approach that the Holy Fathers themselves took to those Fathers who came before them.\*\*

Fr. Seraphim held to the common Patristic teaching because he believed that it has been “deposited” in the Church under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, Who Christ promised would lead His people “into all truth” (John 16:13). The same Holy Spirit Who inspired the Apostles also inspired the Fathers,\*\*\* enabling the God-bearing teachers of each era to testify truly to what had been deposited in the Church from the very beginning. The Fathers imparted the mind of the Church in light of the unique needs and challenges of their respective times: not by revising the substance or content of what had been taught before them, but rather by expressing the same Faith in new ways, in order to

---

\* In those cases where a saying of a Holy Father could in no way be harmonized with the prevailing Patristic view, Fr. Seraphim followed the dictum of St. Photius the Great of Constantinople (†891): “We ... do not take as doctrine those areas in which they strayed, but we embrace the men” (quoted in Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Place of Blessed Augustine in the Orthodox Church*, 2nd ed., p. 67). Specifically, Fr. Seraphim took this approach with regard to those teachings of Blessed Augustine that were clearly at odds with the overriding Patristic vision. In accordance with the mind of the Church, he regarded Augustine not as a Father of theological authority, but as a “Father of Orthodox piety” (ibid., p. 80).

\*\* Thus, for example, St. Maximus the Confessor composed an entire work, *Ambigua* (Difficulties), in order to reconcile some difficult—and in some cases seemingly heretical—passages of St. Gregory the Theologian with the common Patristic teaching. Elsewhere, in his *Opuscula*, St. Maximus explained how certain expressions of St. Cyril of Alexandria, which might seem to contradict the Patristic consensus, could be understood in a way that harmonizes with Orthodox teaching (*Opuscula* 8, PG 91.89C–112C).

\*\*\* The decrees of the Ecumenical Councils testify that the teaching of the Holy Fathers as a whole partakes of Divine inspiration and constitutes a consensus that needs to be followed. In the Definition of Faith of the Fourth Ecumenical Council, for example, we find the Council’s decision authenticated by such phrases as “renewing the unerring faith of the Fathers,” “following the Holy Fathers,” and “this is the faith of the Fathers”; while in the Decree of the Seventh Ecumenical Council we hear proclaimed: “Following the royal pathway and the Divinely inspired authority of our Holy Fathers and the traditions of the Catholic Church (for, as we all know, the Holy Spirit indwells her) ...” (*The Seven Ecumenical Councils*, NPNF 2 14, pp. 264, 550).

clarify different aspects of the unified, internally consistent theology of the Church, aspects which had not been previously scrutinized. Sometimes they were obliged to find different modes of expressing the abiding truths of the Church precisely so that these truths could *not be altered* amidst changing contexts of interpretation and vocabulary over time. Later Fathers drew from and commented on the theology of earlier Fathers, contributing to a theological framework within which to understand some of the difficult passages from earlier times. Thus, the common vision of the Fathers—as an integral and harmonious teaching—is a reality accessible to all. In the words of St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, a Holy Father of nineteenth-century Russia for whom Fr. Seraphim had great love and admiration: “What was it that above all struck me in the works of the Fathers of the Orthodox Church? It was their harmony, their wondrous, magnificent harmony. Eighteen centuries, through their lips, testified to a single unanimous teaching, a Divine teaching!”<sup>13</sup>

In order to find and be nourished by this single teaching, however, one must approach the Fathers with reverence and humility. As Fr. Seraphim wrote:

We must go to the Holy Fathers *in order to become their disciples*, to receive the teaching of true life, the soul’s salvation.... We shall find true guidance from the Fathers, learning humility and distrust of our own vain worldly wisdom, which we have sucked in with the air of these pestilential times, by means of trusting those who have pleased God and not the world.<sup>14</sup>

Having seen the falsity of the modern idea of progress, Fr. Seraphim called on his contemporaries to turn to the timeless wisdom of the Fathers in order to find answers to all the questions and problems they face in today’s world, including the question of “evolution”:

There is no problem of our own confused times which cannot find its solution by a careful and reverent reading of the Holy Fathers: whether complex philosophical questions such as “evolution,” or the straightforward moral questions of abortion, euthanasia, and “birth

control."... In all these questions the Holy Fathers, and our living Fathers who follow them, are our only sure guide.<sup>15</sup>

### 5. *Evolution and Chiliasm*

While working on *The Kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of God*, Fr. Seraphim had identified the faith of modern man as a secular form of *chiliasm*: a belief in the inevitability of progress and in the perfectibility of this fallen world.\* Evolutionism, in its belief in the gradual development from the lower to the higher, was closely related to chiliasm. Although secular evolutionists claim that evolution is random and not directed toward any end, it is difficult not to see the principles of progress and perfectibility in a process which—in the words of Charles Darwin—has brought about a “perfection of structure ... which most justly excites our admiration,” and “the most exalted object of which we are capable of conceiving, namely, the production of the higher animals.”<sup>16</sup> Thus, as Fr. Seraphim noted, “chiliasm is almost an inevitable deduction from evolution”;\*\* and it was precisely this deduction that evolutionist thinkers like Teilhard de Chardin have drawn from the modern evolutionary paradigm.\*\*\*

Together with chiliasm, evolution was what Fr. Seraphim called “a deep-seated primordial force, which seems to capture people quite

---

\* In its original form, chiliasm is the belief, based on a misinterpretation of the book of the Apocalypse (Revelation), that Christ will come to reign over an earthly Kingdom for a thousand years before the Last Judgment. It was held by some early Christian writers before being condemned in 381 at the Second Ecumenical Council, which introduced into the Symbol of Faith the phrase “and His [Christ’s] Kingdom shall have no end.” Fr. Seraphim spoke of “chiliasm” sometimes in its strict theological sense, and sometimes in a more general sense, as referring to any religious or secular belief in this-worldly perfectibility.

\*\* See p. 656 below.

\*\*\* Other thinkers who have formulated chiliastic, teleological versions of evolutionism include the philosophers Henri Bergson, Alfred North Whitehead, and Jean Gebser; the esotericists and occultists Max Théon, C. W. Leadbeater, H. P. Blavatsky, Alice Bailey, and Rudolph Steiner; the Hindu teachers Swami Vivekananda and Sri Aurobindo; and the “integral” theorists Edward Haskell, Arthur M. Young, Ken Wilber, and Don Beck.

apart from their conscious attitudes and reasoning. (There's a good reason for that: it's been drilled into everyone from the cradle, and therefore is very hard to bring out and look at rationally.)" Echoing the words of Julian Huxley, who at the Darwin Centennial had called evolution a "pattern of thought," Fr. Seraphim said that it was "a *rival thought-pattern* to Orthodoxy, not just another idea."<sup>17</sup> And this thought-pattern, he observed, followed a course that was "just the opposite of what Christianity teaches":

The whole "evolutionary philosophy" which grasps people today leads them to believe, often unconsciously, in a view of creation and life which is just the opposite of what Christianity teaches: simple begets complex, savagery "evolves" to civilization, imperfect gives rise to perfect, "progress," etc. According to Orthodoxy, the perfect\* falls to the imperfect (Paradise to fallen world ...), and man in the last days will be much lower spiritually than in the early Church ...; incorruption and immortality precede corruption and mortality. The perfection and immortality of the coming age (heaven) are not a *development* or "evolution" from the present world ... but a radical transformation.\*\*

It was the chiliastic-evolutionary thought-pattern which produced such politico-religious movements as international socialism and ecumenism in the twentieth century, and which underpins the globalist hopes and dreams of today. All such movements share the same chiliastic goal: a coming "new order" in which all previous standards, seen as relative to a particular stage in a process, will be changed. Just as all distinctions between organisms are blurred in the idea of biological

---

\* "Perfect," that is, in the sense of a "flawless" or "impeccable" creation. As will be seen in this book, the Holy Fathers sometime speak of "perfection" in this limited sense, and sometimes in the absolute sense of something having reached its final, eschatological state. (The Greek term for "perfect," *τέλειος/τελειότης*, is derived from *τέλος*, which means consummation or end). Thus, at the time of their creation man and the cosmos were "perfect" in the first sense of the word, but not yet in the second.

\*\* See the full quotation on pp. 655–56 below. On this theme, see also the reflections of Holy Hieromartyr Hilarion Troitsky, Archbishop of Verey, pp. 799–801 below.

evolution from a molecule to a man, so too all distinctions between nations and religions are blurred in the chiliastic vision of this-worldly perfection.

### 6. *The Holy Fathers on Genesis*

To Fr. Seraphim it was self-evident that evolutionism, with its innumerable corollaries in modern thought and life, was antithetical to the Orthodox worldview that he had embraced. He wrote:

I have always regarded evolution, in all its ramifications, as an important part of the “modern American” intellectual baggage which I left behind when I became Orthodox, and it never occurred to me that any aware Orthodox Christian would regard it as unimportant, especially now when many scientists have abandoned it (purely on scientific grounds), [and] when the pseudo-religious presuppositions of its supporters are so evident.<sup>18</sup>

As Fr. Seraphim noted, all attempts by Christians to add God to the Darwinian theory of evolution

are self-contradictory because the whole purpose and intent of the theory of physical evolution is *to find an explanation of the world without God*; i.e., physical evolution is *by its nature atheistic*,\* and it's

---

\* As atheist evolutionists Stephen Jay Gould and Ernst Mayr have shown through researching Charles Darwin's notebooks, Darwin identified himself as a philosophical materialist (hence, in essence an atheist) as early as May 1838, several months before he developed the idea of natural selection as the driving force behind evolution (Gould, *Ever Since Darwin*, pp. 24–25; Mayr, *One Long Argument*, p. 15). Moreover, his early notebooks show that he entertained two other mutually exclusive materialistic theories of evolution before finally arriving at his final theory, which indicates that he was attempting to make empirical data conform to his prior philosophical outlook by means of various hypothetical models and mechanisms. Having settled on natural selection as the mechanism, he was well aware that the thoroughgoing materialism of his theory rendered a supernatural Creator superfluous. He wrote: “The old argument of design in nature, as given by [William] Paley, fails, now that the law of natural selection has been discovered” (*Autobiography of*

only ridiculous when “theologians” run after the latest “scientific” theory in order not to be left behind by the times.<sup>19</sup>

Just how far his fellow Orthodox Christians had gone in accepting the reigning evolutionary paradigm was first made known to Fr. Seraphim in 1973. In February of that year he helped and encouraged his spiritual son Alexey Young, a public school teacher,\* to write and publish an Orthodox article against evolution.<sup>20</sup> This article, as Fr. Seraphim later wrote, “touched something very deep.”<sup>21</sup> It broached a volatile subject which until then most Orthodox Christians in the West, either swayed or confused by the bold claims of naturalism posing as science, had preferred not to discuss.

Soon after Alexey’s article appeared, articles began coming out in major Orthodox journals in support of evolutionism. This was not surprising to Fr. Seraphim, for he had known ever since his conversion that many Orthodox in America were—largely unconsciously—influenced by the spirit of this world and its intellectual fashions. However, he was genuinely surprised when his fellow “traditionalist” Orthodox, who like him were critical of the modern ecumenical movement, also came out in favor of evolutionism, and roundly censured Alexey for his article.

---

*Charles Darwin*, p. 87). Accordingly, he referred to Natural Selection as “my Deity” (letter to Asa Gray, June 5, 1861), and to his theory as “the devil’s gospel” (letter to T. H. Huxley, Aug. 8, 1860). As historian of science George James Grinnell (McMaster University, Hamilton, Ontario) has concluded after years of research into Darwin’s public and private writings: “I have done a great deal of work on Darwin and can say with some assurance that Darwin also did not derive his theory from nature but rather superimposed a certain philosophical worldview on nature and then spent twenty years trying to gather the facts to make it stick” (Grinnell, “Reexamination of the Foundations,” *Pensée*, vol. 2, no. 2 [May 1972], p. 44).

On the inherent godlessness of Darwinian evolution, see also Phillip E. Johnson’s introduction, pp. 100–101 below, as well as Jerry Bergman, “Why Orthodox Darwinism Demands Atheism,” *Answers Research Journal*, vol. 3 (2010), pp. 147–52.

\* Alexey Young was ordained to the priesthood in 1979; hence, he is referred to as “Fr. Alexey” later in this book. In 2002, following the repose of his wife, Fr. Alexey was tonsured a monk with the name Ambrose, and in 2007 he was tonsured into the Great Schema, becoming a hieroschemamonk. He now resides at a skete of the St. Gregory Palamas Monastery in Hayesville, Ohio.

"Frankly," Fr. Seraphim wrote, "we are astonished that people who are so keen on ecclesiastical matters, ecumenism, etc., should seem never to have given much thought to such an important thing as evolution; apparently it is because it seems to be outside the Church sphere."<sup>22</sup>

To one of these "traditionalist" Orthodox, Fr. Seraphim wrote:

We fully agree with Alexey that "evolution is one of the most dangerous concepts that faces Orthodox Christians today"—perhaps it is the very key (intellectual) to the assault upon the Church, to the very "philosophy" (and there is such a thing!) of the coming Antichrist.<sup>23</sup>

With this in mind, he encouraged Alexey to write a booklet on evolutionism. In the meantime, he made his own in-depth study of the teaching of the Holy Fathers regarding creation, the first-created world and the first-created man. His starting point was the main Orthodox Patristic commentaries on Genesis—by Sts. Basil, Ambrose, Ephraim the Syrian, and John Chrysostom—but he went well beyond these, drawing material from a wide range of Patristic sources.

Concurrently with his study of the Orthodox teaching on creation, Fr. Seraphim did extensive research into the teaching of evolution as a scientific theory. Comparing the two teachings, he discovered that the ancient Fathers, although they of course did not refute Darwinian evolution *per se* (since it had not been invented until recent times), provided a definite refutation of its main tenets. In the first place, they explicitly rejected the scientific-philosophical speculations of their own days which posited a naturalistic origin of the cosmos, and which thereby anticipated the modern theory of evolution.\* As against such theories, they affirmed that God's supernatural acts of creation were direct, instantaneous, and effortless, showing forth His omnipotence. Secondly, they spoke at length on the distinction between the "kinds" of organisms (cf. Gen. 1:11–12, 20–26)\*\* both at the time of their creation and afterwards, and were clearly against any philosophy that would confuse that distinction. Their teaching allowed for *variation*

---

\* See pp. 132, 132n, 503–4n, 557n below.

\*\* On the difference between the "kinds" mentioned in Genesis and the modern concept of "species," see pp. 181–86, 181n, 184n below.

within each kind, which is observable and scientifically demonstrable, but was adamantly opposed to the idea that one kind could be transformed into another: an idea intrinsic to modern evolutionary theory but scientifically unprovable.

In the course of his research into the Patristic understanding of Genesis and creation—which he undertook, as always, with heartfelt prayer—Fr. Seraphim perceived the profound harmony which, as we have seen, characterizes the testimony of the Fathers. Concerning the various Patristic commentaries on Genesis, he said:

Here we can see how, when one Father speaks specifically on one passage, another Father will perhaps say something in detail about a different passage. If you keep it all together, you get a very good overview of how the mind of the Church, how the Fathers in general look at these passages. You might find a disagreement over some little interpretation, some small point, but concerning the big points you will see they all say the same thing in different ways, that they are quite in harmony over how to interpret the book of Genesis.\*

In finding the consensus of the Fathers—the “whole Patristic teaching”—concerning the first book of the Old Testament, the most basic question that Fr. Seraphim addressed was: Did the Fathers view the Genesis account as a record of real events and people? Having become familiar with the ideas brought forth by “Christian evolutionists,” including Orthodox ones, Fr. Seraphim knew that the most common—and perhaps inevitable—means they employed to make evolutionism and Christianity appear compatible was to de-historicize the book of Genesis (especially the early chapters), viewing it as merely a parable, allegory, or mythological narrative. According to this approach, theological, spiritual, and typological meanings can be derived from the Genesis narrative while the historical meaning can be dismissed as unimportant and expendable.

As Fr. Seraphim understood from his own immersion in the Patristic literature on this subject, such an approach runs directly counter to

---

\* See p. 114n below.



that of the Holy Fathers. In interpreting Genesis, the Fathers did draw out its theological meaning, seeing it in the light of New Testament revelation, in the light of Christ's redemptive work. They applied the truths of the Genesis narrative to the daily lives of Christians, and offered symbolic, spiritual, and typological interpretations of certain elements of the narrative. However, the Fathers did not, as do today's evolutionists, offer such interpretations to the exclusion or at the expense of the historical meaning. They regarded the early chapters of Genesis as a Divinely inspired *prophecy of the past*, telling of real events and people.\*

The de-historicizing of Genesis is not a problem unique to our times. The ancient Fathers dealt with it also, counting it among the heretical tendencies of the Origenists. As Fr. Seraphim noted, the fourth-century Fathers John Chrysostom, Basil the Great, and Ephraim the Syrian—all of whom, as we have seen, wrote commentaries on Genesis—specifically warned against treating Genesis as an unhistorical myth or allegory.\*\*

In the integral Orthodox worldview of the Holy Fathers, neither the theological nor the historical meaning of Holy Scripture can be regarded as expendable. One cannot exist without the other, for the higher theological, spiritual meaning is founded upon humble, simple faith in the historical reality. As St. Cyril of Alexandria wrote, one cannot “apprehend rightly” the Scriptures if one attempts to draw out spiritual meanings from them without believing in the historical reality of the events and people they describe.\*\*\* If an element in the historical record of Scripture can be given a symbolic or spiritual interpretation, the value of this interpretation is tied to the very historicity of the record.\*\*\*\* Thus, according to St. John Chrysostom, when we view an event in the Old Testament as a “type” of an incident in the life of

---

\* In viewing the early chapters of Genesis as a record of actual events, we must of course take into consideration that we can understand only imperfectly the realities described therein. See p. 131 below.

\*\* See pp. 120–22 below.

\*\*\* See p. 123n below.

\*\*\*\* Patristic scholar Hieromonk Irenaeus (M. C. Steenberg) writes of this in connection with the teaching of St. Irenaeus of Lyons on the early chapters of

Christ, we must at the same time view the former as having actually happened.\*

Speaking specifically of those who would de-historicize the account of Paradise in the book of Genesis, St. John Chrysostom warned:

Let us not pay heed to these people, let us stop up our hearing against them, and let us believe the Divine Scripture, and following what is written in it, let us strive to preserve in our souls sound dogmas.<sup>24</sup> \*\*

---

Genesis. Noting that St. Irenaeus saw Adam and Eve as representing the created state of *all* human beings, Fr. Irenaeus goes on to observe: “But this symbolic or iconic value, far from encouraging Irenaeus to view Adam and Eve and their lives as substantially legend or myth, causes him to endeavor with all the greater urgency to establish the full ‘facts’ of their existence, for therein can be learned the true anthropological reality of present-day man. The symbolic value of the creation account is, for Irenaeus, bound up in its very historicity—a notion evidenced in Irenaeus’ tireless charges of Gnostic modification or alteration of that very history.... There is symbolism to be had in the histories, but the symbolism is lost if the history did not in actuality take place *as history*” (M. C. Steenberg, “Children in Paradise: Adam and Eve as ‘Infants’ in Irenaeus of Lyons,” pp. 9–10; see also M. C. Steenberg, *Irenaeus on Creation*, p. 87). Cf. St. Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 3.12.11, where this second-century Father refutes the Gnostic notion that Old Testament events, as recounted by the Apostles in the New Testament, should be treated as mere allegories.

\* See the quotation by St. John Chrysostom, and a similar one by his disciple St. Nilus of Sinai, on pp. 122–23n below.

\*\* St. John Chrysostom took pains to defend the historicity of the Gospels just as he did to uphold the historicity of Genesis and the rest of the Old Testament. In his *Homilies on the Gospel of St. Matthew* 1.6 (NPNF 1 10, p. 3), he countered those who would point out the alleged discordances in the Gospels, and he harmonized those places where the Evangelists recounted the same event in different ways. (As he explained, the minor differences between the Gospels testify to the truth of the events they describe, since this demonstrates that the Evangelists were not in collusion with each other and that they described the same actual events from different points of view.) St. John’s rebuttal of those who would question the historicity of the Gospels on the basis of their alleged contradictions, as well as his counsel not to listen to those who would de-historicize Genesis, indicates that the spirit of modern rationalistic criticism of the Bible is not in fact unique to our times, but was met in different forms, and inveighed against, by the early Fathers of the Church.

Fr. Seraphim, in quoting this passage, pointed out the connection St. Chrysostom drew between the right understanding of dogmas and the upholding of the historical meaning of Genesis. For St. Chrysostom as for the other Fathers, the dogmas of the Church cannot be divorced from history. All the areas of the Church's theology—Triadology (particularly those aspects pertaining to the economic actions and revelations of the Holy Trinity), protology, anthropology, Christology, Pneumatology, soteriology, ecclesiology, and eschatology—are tied in some way to objective, real events that have happened or will happen.\*

Furthermore, since each area of Orthodox theology is connected to the others as in a seamless garment, the historical dimension of one area of theology is tied to the same dimension of other areas. Thus, the Church's understanding of the creation, the first-created world and the fall of man is linked inextricably to her understanding of the world's redemption by Jesus Christ. As we learn from the Genesis account of the fall, and especially from its explication by the Holy Apostle Paul and the Holy Fathers after him, death entered the world as a consequence of man's first act of sin. The fall of man through eating of the

---

\* If the foundation of belief in the real events described in Holy Scripture is taken away, the edifice of one's Christian faith rests on the shifting sands of one's personal predilections, and one falls victim to the same relativism that has infected the whole of the modern secular world. This is recognized and openly spoken about by contemporary atheists. Richard Dawkins, who is today's most prominent popularizer of evolutionism and a virulent opponent of theistic religion, writes in his book *The God Delusion*: "Of course, irritated theologians will protest that we don't take the book of Genesis literally any more. But that is my whole point! We pick and choose which bits of scripture to believe, which bits to write off as symbols or allegories.

"Such picking and choosing is a matter of personal decision, just as much, or as little, as the atheist's decision to follow this moral precept or that was a personal decision, without an absolute foundation. If one of these is 'morality flying by the seat of its pants', so is the other" (*The God Delusion*, p. 269).

Here Dawkins acknowledges that his own atheistic "morality" is relative, and he rightly points out that, if theologians "pick and choose" which historical narratives in Scripture to "write off as [i.e., reduce to] symbols or allegories," they too are conceding that truth is relative. In the Orthodox Christian context this is even more apparent, since Orthodox believers who would reduce the historical narratives in Scripture to allegories must "write off" not only the historical meaning of Scripture itself, but also the Patristic interpretation of Scripture, which upholds that very historical meaning.

tree, said Fr. Seraphim, “was a real, physical event, bringing about an actual change in man’s spiritual and bodily condition.” Likewise, Christ’s death on the Cross, in which He took upon Himself the ultimate physical consequence of sin in order to overcome all the consequences of sin, “was a real, physical event, not an image or an allegory; and through it comes an actual change in man’s condition.... It gives us salvation: not figurative salvation, but actual salvation.”\*

If, on the contrary, one de-historicizes the book of Genesis in order to make the Christian Faith compatible with the modern evolutionary outlook, one breaks the physical, causal connection between Adam’s act of sin and the presence of death in the world. In so doing, one removes the theological basis for understanding the physical, causal connection between Christ’s death and the overcoming of the consequences of sin in the world.

As Fr. Seraphim understood, belief in Genesis as history is also bound up with faith in what will come into being in the future age, beyond the general resurrection. According to St. Paul and the Holy Fathers, the entire visible creation was incorrupt (without decay) before the fall of man, and this incorruption will be restored at Christ’s Second Coming. Thus, belief in the incorrupt first-created world is linked specifically with belief in the future age of incorruption. “If we believe and think as the Holy Fathers do,” Fr. Seraphim affirmed, “then our future incorruptibility will be *real*, as was that of the creation and of Adam before his disobedience.”\*\*

Thus, one’s understanding of the book of Genesis has implications that go far beyond the basic question of literal and symbolic interpretations. As Fr. Seraphim saw, it is foundational to one’s Orthodox Christian worldview.

### *7. Alexander Kalomiros*

In his study of the doctrine of the Holy Fathers touching on the creation of man and the world, Fr. Seraphim found it so clear and compelling that he said he was “simply amazed at the power ‘evolution’

---

\* See p. 282 below.

\*\* See p. 650 below.

has over even educated Orthodox minds. Such is the power of this world and its fashionable ideas."<sup>25</sup>

All the living transmitters of Patristic tradition whom Fr. Seraphim knew in the Russian Orthodox Church were aware that evolutionary theory was a naturalistic faith hiding behind a pretense of scientific objectivity. He was heartened to hear that in Greece there were respected Orthodox Patristic scholars who rejected evolutionism as well. The critics of Alexey's article, however, kept holding up a traditionalist Orthodox writer and medical doctor in Greece, Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, as one who was pro-evolution. Not being able to read Kalomiros' article in Greek, Fr. Seraphim was frustrated at having his name repeatedly thrown at him in this way. He had appreciated the English translation of Kalomiros' strong critique of ecumenism, *Against False Union*, and could not imagine how the same author could be in favor of evolution. He wrote to Kalomiros asking his views, and the latter promised to send a detailed reply in English, with quotes from the Holy Fathers. "We look forward to this with open mind and some expectation!" wrote Fr. Seraphim to Alexey Young. "We hope to receive a confirmation of our suspicion that he is quite wrongly used as virtually a proponent of evolution."<sup>26</sup>

Several months later Fathers Seraphim and Herman received a forty-page epistle from Kalomiros. "I must confess," wrote Fr. Seraphim, "that it is shocking beyond our expectations—giving the 'evolutionary' teaching quite unadorned and unqualified, complete with the 'evolved beast Adam' and 'he who denies evolution denies the Sacred Scriptures.' In a way, however, we are rather glad of this—because now *for the first time* we have found a reputable Orthodox 'evolutionist' who is willing to be quite frank about matters which others, I believe, are afraid to speak up about."<sup>27</sup>

Fr. Seraphim put all his energy into composing a reply, which turned out to be as long as Dr. Kalomiros' letter. Fr. Seraphim's letter—a treatise, actually—is a profound work of Patristic exegesis, and we today can only be grateful that his correspondence with Dr. Kalomiros impelled him to write it. Although he was to hone his understanding of the subject in subsequent years, it is widely regarded today as the clearest Patristic refutation of evolution ever written.

8. *The Scientific Side of the Question*

By this time, the original idea of coming out with a booklet on evolutionism no longer seemed adequate to Fr. Seraphim. Now he and Alexey Young began to plan the writing of a complete book. Fr. Seraphim was to write about the Patristic teaching on creation and early man, and also about the philosophical origins of evolution, while Alexey was to write about evolution as scientific theory and about “Christian evolution.” “Our study,” wrote Fr. Seraphim, “is supposed to give a ‘complete’ picture, which hopefully will clarify many minds. It’s certainly clarified my own mind, since previously I hadn’t thought in detail on many aspects of the question.”<sup>28</sup>

Fr. Seraphim’s correspondence with Dr. Kalomiros had underlined for him the importance of being abreast with scientific discussions on the subject of evolution. Dr. Kalomiros had claimed to be standing superior to these discussions, since they were “Western” and thus “not Orthodox.” As Fr. Seraphim pointed out, however,

The question of evolution can’t be discussed at all if one doesn’t have a basic grasp of the scientific side of it (the “scientific proofs” of it) as well as the broader philosophy of evolution based on it (Teilhard de Chardin, etc.). . . . By this I don’t mean that one has to be a scientific specialist in order to discuss the scientific side of the question—the scientific side is not *the* most important one, and specialists usually trip themselves up by concentrating too much on it; but if one isn’t sufficiently aware of the scientific side one won’t be able to grasp the question in its full scope. One can’t say with assurance, for example, whether man has been on earth some seven or eight thousand years (“more or less,” as the Fathers often say) if one is totally ignorant of the principles of radiometric dating, geologic strata, etc., which “prove” that man is “millions of years” old. And such knowledge is not esoteric at all—the basic principles of radiometric dating (enough to show its strong and weak points) can be explained in a rather short article. . . .\*

---

\* We have provided such an article, as appendix 4, pp. 861–82 below.

## EDITOR'S PREFACE

This is just a sample to show that to get anywhere in this question one must have a basic, layman's awareness of the scientific evidences for and against evolution. If one is reasonably objective and not out to "prove one's point" at any cost, such questions need not arouse passionate debates. As a basic principle, of course, we must assume that scientific *truth* (as opposed to various opinions and prejudices) cannot contradict revealed *truth* if only we understand both correctly.<sup>29</sup>

During the first half of the twentieth century, as we have seen, scientists were loath to question the evolutionary model. They would test every hypothesis save that one, for otherwise they might appear to be questioning the hegemony of naturalism over modern science. Those few scientists—including some very important ones—who dared to question this dogma were considered "heretics" and were blacklisted. When Dr. Kalomiros was going to school in the 1950s, it was not only unfashionable but positively anathema not to believe in evolution; and hence his attempt, as an interpreter of Patristic teaching, to make the ancient Fathers believe it as well.

After the 1950s, this situation began to change. One by one, the "silent dissenters" mentioned at the Darwin Centennial began to surface. Reputable scientists began raising serious doubts about evolution, and there were simply too many of them to be silenced. New advances in the "hard sciences" of molecular genetics, embryology, etc., were making it very difficult for scientists to reconcile their data with the neo-Darwinian model. Scientific books came out which were critical of Darwin's theory, including *Implications of Evolution* (1961) by G. A. Kerkut, professor of physiology and biochemistry at the University of Southampton, England, and *L'Evolution du vivant* (1973) by Pierre P. Grassé, one of the world's greatest living biologists and ex-president of the French Academy of Sciences. Dr. Grassé ended his book by issuing this devastating indictment of Darwinian evolution:

Through use and abuse of hidden postulates, of bold, often ill-founded extrapolations, a pseudoscience has been created. It is taking root in the very heart of biology and is leading astray many biochemists and biologists, who sincerely believe that the accuracy of

fundamental concepts has been demonstrated, which is not the case.<sup>30</sup>

In spite of such statements by mainstream scientists, the debate concerning the viability of evolutionary theory remained for the most part within the walls of the scientific establishment; it was still not known to the public. As far as the American public was concerned, evolution was still just as much an incontrovertible fact in the 1970s as it had been in the 1950s. People wishing to learn what was really happening in the scientific community would have to familiarize themselves with specialized books and journals.

In his sincere desire to know what modern science had to say about evolution—what was actually known and what was speculation—Fr. Seraphim studied the mainstream scientific literature, as well as popular treatments of the “proofs” of evolution and human origins. He also spoke to scientists working within the prevailing establishment, who told him that many of the evolutionists themselves admitted that there was not actual *proof* for it, but that it “makes more sense,” or “the alternative is unthinkable”—i.e., creation by a Divine agency.

Although he possessed no scientific degrees, through his studies and personal contacts Fr. Seraphim became more abreast of the current status of evolutionary theory than Dr. Kalomiros. Assuring Dr. Kalomiros that he was not “against science,” he wrote to him:

You seem to be unaware of the great mass of *scientific literature* in recent years which is highly critical of the evolutionary theory, which talks about relegating it to poetry and metaphors instead of scientific theory (Prof. Constance, professor of botany at the University of California, Berkeley), or even deny its validity altogether. If you wish (but it is quite pointless!), I could indeed compile a list of *hundreds* (if not *thousands*) of reputable scientists who now either disbelieve in evolution entirely or state that it is highly questionable scientific theory.<sup>31</sup>

In his studies, Fr. Seraphim appreciated the work of creation scientists (also known as scientific creationists, Biblical creationists, and young-earth creationists): Christians, primarily from Protestant



churches, who as professional scientists rejected the presuppositions of naturalistic philosophy and instead worked from presuppositions derived from the Biblical view of origins and history. The creation science movement had been catalyzed in America with the publication of the seminal textbook *The Genesis Flood* by Dr. John Whitcomb and Dr. Henry Morris in 1960 (only a year after the Darwin Centennial),\* and its growth had precisely coincided with the growing doubts about evolutionary theory within the scientific establishment. While upholding the Biblical view, its strategy was to emphasize not how much evolution contradicts the Bible, but how much it contradicts scientific evidence. Its early success and influence caused evolutionists to take the offensive, caricaturing the creationists and accusing them of faith-based bias while not acknowledging their own faith-based bias. As Dr. Henry Morris wrote:

The answer of the evolutionary establishment to the creationist arguments has not been scientific, but emotional. Intimidation is evidently the game plan. The A.C.L.U. files or threatens to file lawsuits wherever a two-model [creation/evolution] approach is considered in a school district. A veritable stream of anti-creationist tirades has poured forth from the liberal news media, as well as the journals and books of the educational/scientific establishment. Evolutionists publicly gloat over the merest suggestion of a misquotation or misrepresentation which they can discover in the copiously documented creationist literature, while their own writings are saturated with out-of-context quotes and flagrant distortions of the creationist arguments.<sup>32</sup>

Thus, by the time Fr. Seraphim was making an in-depth study of this subject in the early 1970s, the creationist movement had been made an object of ridicule in the public mind. Fr. Seraphim himself was at first somewhat skeptical about the movement, not because he

---

\* In 1932 a similar movement had started in England, calling itself the Evolution Protest Movement. Its prime mover was ornithologist Douglas Dewar. Continuing its work to this day, it is now known as the Creation Science Movement.

was swayed by public opinion (in which he had no trust at all), but because he saw the movement as being based on the rationalistic, “common sense” Scriptural interpretation of Protestantism rather than on the Divinely revealed interpretation of the Orthodox Holy Fathers.<sup>33</sup> However, when he actually studied books by leading creation scientists, he was impressed by their sober, thoughtful presentation. “Their presentation of the ‘Creation Model,’” he wrote, “is a promising approach to a more objective view of the whole question.”<sup>34</sup>

Fr. Seraphim looked to creation scientists not to resolve questions of theology and philosophy. (For these questions, of course, he turned to the Holy Fathers and saints of the Church, as well as to traditional Orthodox writers such as Ivan V. Kireyevsky and Constantine Leontiev.) Rather, he used the work of the creation scientists exclusively to deal with questions raised by modern science, in order to support the teachings he had *already found* in Patristic theology. Although these scientists indeed lacked the Patristic understanding of the nature of man and the first-created world (and in general the whole field of Patristic commentary on Genesis), their books presented facts which pointed to the fixity of the “kinds” of animals, the global Flood, and a (relatively) recent creation—all of which Fr. Seraphim had found stated unequivocally in the writings of the Holy Fathers. Hence, without intending to, these Protestant scientists were in many ways serving as active defenders of Patristic Orthodoxy.

Fr. Seraphim’s respect for this courageous group of scientists only increased when he made contact with the Institute for Creation Research, located in his hometown of San Diego. He subscribed to their newsletter, *Acts & Facts*, often discussing interesting new articles with the brothers at the monastery. Frequently he referred his fellow Orthodox Christians to the many books put out by the Institute.

### 9. *The “Survival Course” and the Courses on Genesis*

The book that Fr. Seraphim planned was never finished. Alexey Young sent rough drafts of his own sections to Fr. Seraphim, which the latter revised and augmented with his own writings, even sending one

section to a professor of natural sciences for review; but still the book remained in a rough and fragmentary state.

In the meantime, however, Fr. Seraphim continued to do research, write and speak on evolution and the Patristic view of creation.

In the summer of 1975, with the aim of giving pilgrims to the monastery a foundation in Orthodoxy, Fathers Seraphim and Herman held a three-week course, naming it the "New Valaam Theological Academy." Fr. Seraphim gave a series of lectures on the development of Western thought from the Great Schism to the present. For all the talks he wrote extensive outlines, organizing the vast historical and philosophical research he had done for *The Kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of God*. This was the ripened fruit, not only of that early research, but also of his rich store of experience as an Orthodox Christian. He was now much better equipped than before to present his knowledge in a way that would have a practical application to the lives of contemporary people. He called his lecture series a "Survival Course" because of his belief that, in order for people to survive as Orthodox Christians nowadays, they have to understand the apostasy, to know why and how modern Western society has fallen away from the traditional Christian worldview. Once Orthodox Christians are able to identify the philosophical roots of the modern age, Fr. Seraphim held, they can more readily discern what in society is potentially beneficial to the soul, and can better protect and defend themselves from what is harmful. With this in view, he also called his classes "a course in Orthodox self-defense."

Twelve lectures were given by Fr. Seraphim, each of them several hours long. The eleventh lecture was on the subject of evolution. Here Fr. Seraphim brought to bear not only his early research, but also his more recent studies for the proposed book on the Patristic understanding of creation. In the lecture, he discussed evolution from several points of view—the historical, scientific, philosophical, and theological—and ended with a presentation of the various expressions of "Christian evolutionism," especially that of Teilhard de Chardin. The lecture was thus a rich summary of all his thoughts on the subject up until 1975.

In subsequent years Fr. Seraphim continued to write notes and outlines on creation and evolution. Then, in 1981, a little over a year

before his death, he took up the subject again in earnest. During the “New Valaam Theological Academy” course in the summer of that year, he gave a series of classes on the Patristic interpretation of the first three chapters of the book of Genesis. He put much effort into these classes beforehand, writing out an extensive manuscript of a verse-by-verse commentary filled with Patristic quotations, many of which he translated himself. His eight years of contemplating, reading, and praying about this subject had not been in vain. His series of classes was the product of a matured Patristic mind, of one who, perhaps more than any of his contemporaries, had searched through the whole sum of the teaching of the Fathers in order to find and elucidate the single Patristic *doctrine of Creation*. And how exalted was the teaching of the Fathers that he poured forth! To his listeners, his presentation was all the more inspiring for the fact that he did not in any way compromise Orthodox teaching out of deference to modern intellectual fashions.

At the next Academy course in the summer of 1982, Fr. Seraphim continued his commentary on Genesis, this time discussing the fourth to the eleventh chapters. Within two weeks after finishing these classes he unexpectedly fell ill, and within another week he reposed in the Lord. His Patristic commentary on Genesis, therefore, was the last achievement of his life.

### *10. The Plan of the Book*

In Fr. Seraphim’s early plans for the proposed book, he thought it best to begin with a discussion of evolution first, showing that it has no coercive scientific evidence to support it, and then to present the Patristic understanding of creation. At that time, he thought that this was necessary because, before people could even take the Patristic teaching seriously, they first had to understand that what they had learned all their lives about the “fact” of evolution was, in actuality, disputed.

At the end of his life, Fr. Seraphim thought differently. In his last stated plan of the proposed book, he said it should begin with his Patristic commentary on Genesis (i.e., his 1981 and 1982 lecture series),

which would be followed by a discussion of evolution. "The whole outline of it now becomes clear to me," he wrote. "It should be called something positive (no evolution in the title), such as *Genesis, Creation, and Early Man: An Orthodox View*, and the first and main part should be simply an Orthodox interpretation (according to St. John Chrysostom, St. Ephraim, etc.) of the first chapters of Genesis, discussing 'problems' raised by modern men in the course of the discussion. Then, as the secondary thought (less than half the book), a discussion of the whole question of evolution."<sup>35</sup> In the present, post-humous compilation, we have followed this plan.

Why did Fr. Seraphim change his plan for the book? One clue may be found in the following words, which he wrote to Alexey Young in February 1981:

Thinking about my Genesis course this summer, I was rereading part of Dr. Kalomiros' letters. How discouraging! One loses all inspiration to get tangled up in this subject, seeing how he handles it.... Anyone who is really *converted* to Christianity will surely begin to re-think his whole intellectual outlook, won't he? Isn't the real problem that Dr. Kalomiros ... and others are intellectuals who haven't fully converted, or have brought their intellectual baggage with them into Orthodoxy?<sup>36</sup>

Fr. Seraphim had frankly become bored with the idea of having to present the Patristic teaching on creation exclusively as it related to the modern intellectual baggage of evolutionism. He had done this in his letter to Dr. Kalomiros back in 1974, but now, as he was preparing his Patristic commentary eight years later, he had distanced himself from the controversy. He saw that the whole weight of the Patristic teaching on creation was so powerful and compelling that the unproved assumptions and confused thinking of modern evolutionists paled in comparison. The Patristic teaching, Fr. Seraphim saw, could stand on its own divine authority, even before modern minds raised on evolutionary teaching; and a discussion of evolution was only needed as a secondary consideration.

*11. Developments in the 1980s*

This was probably the main reason why Fr. Seraphim wanted to reverse the original order of the book. But there was possibly another reason: in the last two years of Fr. Seraphim's life, a change had begun to occur in the public's acceptance of evolution. We have mentioned earlier how, in the 1960s and 1970s, the growing doubts of scientists about neo-Darwinism had been mostly hidden behind the walls of the scientific community. By the end of the seventies, these walls began to crumble. The first fissure occurred when the prominent paleontologists Niles Eldredge and Stephen Jay Gould publicized their new evolutionary theory of "punctuated equilibrium" to account for the lack of transitional, evolutionary forms in the fossil record—which forms would be expected according to classical neo-Darwinism. The new theory was of no great interest to the general public, but what was regarded as really newsworthy was that, contrary to popular belief, the fossil record did not at all fit Darwinian expectations. Gould went so far as to call the lack of transitional forms the "trade secret of paleontology." This became international news, and helped set in motion the next phase in the crumbling of the Darwinian edifice. Aware of this development, Fr. Seraphim spoke about it in his course on Genesis.\*

Another extremely important development, beginning in 1980, was the resurgence of catastrophism in geology. Geologists began to challenge the reigning uniformitarian model that had inspired Darwin (the idea that the sedimentary layers were formed gradually, at constant rates), demonstrating that it was incapable of accounting for the rock beds of the earth's crust, especially the fossil deposits. A number of geologists, calling themselves "neocatastrophists," have thus returned to the idea that practically all the strata were formed by floods

---

\* See Fr. Seraphim's indirect reference to Stephen Jay Gould's popular article, "The Return of Hopeful Monsters" (1977) on pp. 381–82 below. In this article, Gould argued against Darwinian gradualism, saying that "the fossil record with its abrupt transitions offers no support for gradual change." On Eldredge and Gould's "punctuated equilibrium" theory, see also Phillip E. Johnson's introduction, pp. 96–97 below.

and other such catastrophes. Although they reject Biblical catastrophism and retain the standard evolutionary/uniformitarian framework of billions of years, these non-creationist geologists have offered secular confirmation of much of what Flood geologists (i.e., geologists who believe in the global Flood) have been saying for years.<sup>37</sup>

In the years immediately following Fr. Seraphim's repose in 1982, new developments continued to be seen. More non-creationist scientists made public the fact that the neo-Darwinian theory does not account for new data in the fields of geology, paleontology, genetics, physics, biochemistry, and other sciences.

In 1984 three scientists published a polite but rigorous critique of the then-current theories of chemical evolution of the first cell. Entitled *The Mystery of Life's Origin*, the book was authored by Charles Thaxton, a chemist and historian of science; Walter Bradley, a materials scientist; and Roger Olsen, a geochemist. With its technical presentation devoid of religious overtones, the book received endorsements from well-known evolutionists (including chemist Robert Shapiro and physicist Robert Jastrow), with the *Yale Journal of Biology and Medicine* acknowledging that "this volume as a whole is devastating to the relaxed acceptance of current theories of abiogenesis [chemical evolution]." <sup>38</sup>

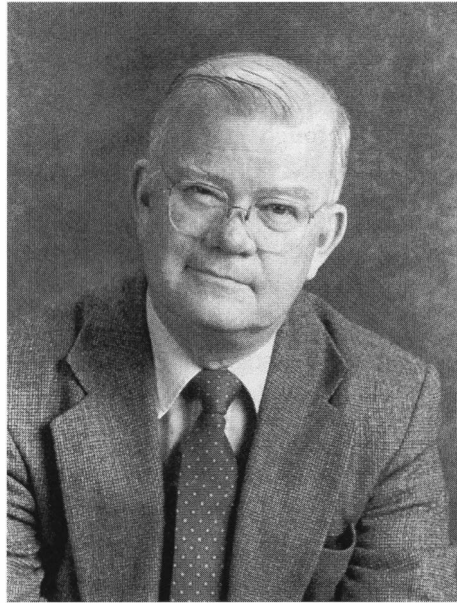
During the following year there appeared another pivotal book, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, by Australian molecular biologist and agnostic Michael Denton. Systematically critiquing the current evolutionary model from a variety of scientific disciplines, Denton showed from his own specialty that the discoveries of molecular biologists are casting more and more doubt on Darwinian claims.

## 12. Phillip E. Johnson and the Intelligent Design Movement

At the beginning of the following decade, an interesting and unexpected event in the evolution debate was seen with the rise of a professor of law, Phillip E. Johnson, as one of the world's leading critics of Darwinism. Johnson, who taught law at the University of California at Berkeley for nearly thirty years, says that one of his specialties is "analyzing the logic of arguments and identifying the assumptions that lie behind those arguments." In 1987, in reading the arguments for evolu-

## THE STORY BEHIND THE BOOK

Phillip E. Johnson.



tion in the recent book *The Blind Watchmaker* by biologist Richard Dawkins, he noticed that they were based on rhetoric rather than hard science. “I could see,” he recalls, “that Dawkins achieved his word magic by the very tools that are familiar to us lawyers.... I picked up one book after another, and became increasingly fascinated with the obvious difficulties in the Darwinist case—difficulties that were being evaded by tricky rhetoric and emphatic repetition.”<sup>39</sup>

Johnson also noticed the way his scientific colleagues responded when he asked hard questions about Darwinism:

Instead of taking the intellectual questions seriously and responding to them, they would answer with all sorts of evasions and vague language, making it impossible to discuss the real objections to Darwinism. This is the way people talk when they’re trying very hard not to understand something.

Another tip-off was the sharp contrast I noticed between the extremely dogmatic tone that Darwinists use when addressing the general public and the occasional frank acknowledgments, in scientific circles, of serious problems with the theory...



## EDITOR'S PREFACE

It was an enormous shock to me getting into this to see, in fact, how bad the reasoning really is, how illogical the whole scientific field of evolution is and how resistant the scientists are to having any logic brought into it. So I felt like there was a real opportunity for somebody outside of science whose interest was in good logical thinking rather than promoting any one particular set of solutions, and that's the mission I've been on ever since....

Biologists who spend their lifetimes studying biology will be legitimate authorities, obviously, on the details of what they've learned in that investigation, and an outsider can't really challenge that, but an outsider definitely can challenge their thinking, particularly when it turns out that they believe in what they believe in not because of what they know as biologists, but *in spite of* what they know as biologists. It's a philosophical movement based on materialism.... So, that's a thinking issue, and it's really more within my discipline than it's within theirs.<sup>40</sup>

In 1991 Professor Johnson came out with the book *Darwin on Trial*. His clear-headedness in cutting through the rhetoric of Darwinism and exposing the logical foundations of the controversy quickly won him the respect of creationists and non-creationists alike, and also the ire of die-hard evolutionists.

No sooner had Johnson's book been published than he began working on a plan to raise a broadly based challenge to the Darwinian stronghold. At a symposium at Southern Methodist University in spring of 1992, which featured high-level academic discussion between Darwinism's supporters and critics, Johnson began to galvanize the critics—mainly scientists and philosophers—into a fledgling movement. In 1993 he organized a private, several-day meeting of potential leaders of this movement at Pajaro Dunes, south of San Francisco. At that time, although networking over the Internet had not yet become common, he insisted that all the participants in the meeting be part of a computer network that he would run from Berkeley. In this way, he created an ongoing forum for skeptics and critics of Darwinism to share their ideas and research, and to support each other when attacked in the academic milieu by staunch Darwinists. Out of this com-

munity of thinkers organized by Professor Johnson, the movement known as intelligent design (ID) was born.

Johnson sees the work of the intelligent design movement in terms of a “wedge” strategy. “The idea,” he says,

is that you get a few people out promoting a new way of thinking and new ideas. It’s very shocking, and they take a lot of abuse.... Then you get people used to talking about it. It becomes an issue they are used to hearing about, and you get a few more people and a few more, and then eventually you’ve legitimated it as a regular part of the academic discussion. And that’s my goal: to legitimate the argument over evolution and particularly over the Darwinian mechanism and its supposed creative power, to legitimate that as a mainstream scientific and academic issue. As soon as we can do that and put the spotlight on it, then everybody knows that there is no evidence. So, we can’t lose the argument. We’re bound to win it. We just have to normalize it, and that takes patience and persistence, and that’s what we are applying.<sup>41</sup>

The intelligent design movement is distinguished from the above-mentioned creation science movement in that it has a much more narrowly defined position, thus allowing it to include people of more widely disparate views. While creation science takes a stand on the identity of the Creator and the veracity of the Biblical account of the origin and history of the universe, the ID movement takes no such stand. Its only stated position is that “certain features of the universe and of living things are best explained by an intelligent cause, not an undirected process such as natural selection.” It detects intelligence without speculating about the nature of the intelligence. Thus, the movement can count among its members scientists and philosophers from a wide variety of religious traditions, as well as agnostics. It can accommodate young-earth creationists, old-earth creationists, and even evolutionists who acknowledge the empirical evidence of intelligent design in nature. Among its most well-known members are Michael Behe, a professor of biochemistry whose landmark 1996 book *Darwin’s Black Box* demonstrated that the astonishing new discoveries of biochemistry cannot be

accommodated by any form of Darwinism; and William A. Dembski, a professor of mathematics and philosophy whose 1997 book *The Design Inference* showed on the basis of mathematical probability that undirected natural causes cannot account for biological complexity. Among young-earth creationist members of the ID movement is an Orthodox Christian, John Mark Reynolds, associate professor of philosophy at Biola University;\* a Roman Catholic, Dean H. Kenyon, retired professor of biology at San Francisco State University; and a Protestant, Marcus R. Ross, professor of paleontology at Liberty University.

In the years following the historic meeting in Pajaro Dunes in 1993, Phillip Johnson's "wedge" strategy has seen remarkable gains. By paring the issues down to only one—was intelligence required to design living things?—the ID movement has made it more difficult for Darwinists to avoid discussing the overwhelming evidence for such intelligence. Further, with its inclusive approach of allowing disparate views, the ID movement has succeeded in moving discussion of the weaknesses of Darwinism into the broad public sphere in ways that the creation scientists have not. In so doing, it has helped inspire a number of legislative bills in various U.S. states, either already passed or currently pending, which encourage public-school students to examine scientific evidence both for and against molecules-to-man evolution.\*\* Evolutionist lobby groups such as the "National Center for Science Education," as if fearing that once both sides of the debate are closely

---

\* In a 1999 anthology on creation and evolution, Dr. Reynolds affirmed: "The Fathers from the first century forward overwhelmingly took a young-earth, global-flood view.... Simply discarding the views of the Fathers is not an option for any thoughtful Christian" (Moreland and Reynolds, ed., *Three Views on Creation and Evolution*, p. 97). In 2010 Reynolds coauthored a book with Phillip Johnson entitled *Against All Gods: What's Right and Wrong about the New Atheism*.

\*\* According to the Discovery Institute, a public policy think tank based in Seattle, "Seven states (Alabama, Minnesota, Missouri, New Mexico, Pennsylvania, South Carolina, and Texas) have science standards that require learning about some of the scientific controversies relating to evolution. Additionally, Louisiana has a statewide law that protects the rights of teachers 'to help students understand, analyze, critique, and review scientific theories in an objective manner,' specifically naming evolution as an example" ("Discovery Institute's Science Education Policy," posted Aug. 17, 2010, <http://www.discovery.org/a/3164>).

examined they will have lost the war, are fighting hard against such bills, and decry the fact that more are sprouting up all the time.

The ID movement has made another significant contribution in that, by shining a light on the fact that Darwinists deny the possibility of *any* supernatural causes behind the formation of living things, it has made the public more aware that the teaching of Darwinism is not philosophically or religiously neutral, but is based on the presuppositions of naturalism: in Johnson's words (which echo those of Fr. Seraphim quoted earlier), it is "inherently godless." Going beyond its critique of Darwinism, the ID movement has also brought forth a positive research program wherein intelligent causes are seen as the key for understanding the diversity and complexity of life.

Creation scientists, such as those with whom Fr. Seraphim was familiar, view the ID movement as a natural ally in the debate over Darwinian claims, and have both appreciated and utilized its contributions. At the same time, some of them have pointed out the limitations inherent in ID's theologically minimalist position.\* Indeed, from the traditional Christian perspective on origins, the ID approach—which allows for the possibility of any designer and even of intelligently directed

---

\* For example, since the ID position does not include the Christian teaching on the fall of man, ID theorists have no theological/philosophical answer to the logically deduced challenge of their Darwinist opponents, as indeed of Darwin himself (cf. *The Autobiography of Charles Darwin*, pp. 85–96): How could an all-knowing and all-beneficent God have created a world full of suffering, carnivory, and death, as well as of defective living things? The traditional Christian answer to this challenge, as found in the Holy Scriptures and Patristic writing, is clear and unequivocal: these negative aspects of the creation were not part of God's original, "very good" world that God designed (Gen. 1:31), but entered the world because of man's sin, through which the creation was subjected to the "bondage of corruption" (Rom. 8:21). Without this answer from Christian theology, one who believes in intelligent design is forced to admit the possibility that the Designer was either monstrous or inept in creating a corrupted world. Thus, when addressing the Darwinist challenge, some ID theorists who are also Christians (notably, Behe and Dembski) *have* mentioned the Biblical teaching of the fall as a possible answer, but in so doing they have stepped outside the bounds of the ID position. It should also be noted that the Christian teaching on creation's "bondage of corruption" through human sin makes sense only within a young-earth framework, and that this framework also lies beyond the stated position of the ID movement.

evolution—addresses only part of the problem posed by Darwinism. Dethroning unconditional naturalism and materialism in science is not enough. As Fr. Seraphim said in his “Survival Course”: “The period in which agnosticism and atheism are replacing Christianity is only a temporary period. Its purpose is to do away with the true God of traditional Christianity.” In place of the true God people will turn to false gods and pseudo-spiritualities, including those of deism, pantheism, panentheism,\* paganism, and mediumism. In this Fr. Seraphim saw the seeds of the “religion of the future”; and in evolutionism, as we have seen, he saw a possible key to the “philosophy of the coming Antichrist.” Thus, while a weakening of the hegemony of naturalism in science may be a boon for believers in traditional Christianity and for those seeking the true God, for others it may lead to pseudo-spiritual forms of the evolutionary worldview.

As the founder and unofficial head of the ID movement, Phillip Johnson is not unaware of these dangers. A Christian who has profound admiration for the life and writings of Fr. Seraphim,\*\* Johnson agrees with the prognosis Fr. Seraphim made over three decades ago. “It’s what all my friends and I have been discussing,” he says. “Scientific materialism is waning, but unhealthy forms of religion will largely take its place.”<sup>42</sup> For Orthodox Christians, this is all the more reason to cling firmly to the common teaching of the Holy Fathers, whom Fr. Seraphim called a “sure guide to true Christianity.”<sup>43</sup>

---

\* Here we refer to panentheism according to its commonly accepted definition: “The doctrine that God includes the world as a part though not the whole of his being” (*Webster’s Third New International Dictionary*). According to Orthodox Patristic teaching, God is present and participates in His creation through His Energies; however, the world is not part of His Being. In the words of St. John Damascene: “[God] penetrates everything without mixing with it, and imparts to all His Energy in proportion to the fitness and receptive power of each.... All things are far apart from God, not in place but in nature” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 1.13, NPNF 2 9, pp. 15b–16b). See pp. 216–17, 216–17n, 477n below.

\*\* See Phillip Johnson’s review of Fr. Seraphim’s biography, published first in *Books & Culture* (Sept.–Oct. 1997) and later in the collection of Johnson’s essays, *Objections Sustained*, pp. 173–78.

### *13. Evidence from Genetics*

In the last decade, while media coverage of the creation/evolution debate has been focused primarily on the ID movement, some of the most devastating critiques of neo-Darwinism have been made in the field of molecular genetics by scientists not formally associated with the movement. According to the modern evolutionary synthesis of neo-Darwinism, the basic mechanism of evolution is natural selection acting together with chance genetic mutations. If mutations can be shown to be incapable of accounting for the vast complexity of living things on a genetic level, neo-Darwinism falls apart as a theory of origins. This is precisely what advances in molecular genetics have demonstrated.

In 1997, the publication of the book *Not by Chance!* by Dr. Lee Spetner landed a strong blow against neo-Darwinism. An Israeli biophysicist, Spetner had spent thirty years researching the possibility of evolution on the genetic level. While it is true that mutations can produce beneficial adaptive changes in organisms, Spetner showed that they cannot produce grand-scale evolution, since they result not in an increase of prescriptive, functional genetic information, but rather in a *loss* of information. (This, incidentally, supports the traditional Christian view that the universe is in fact *devolving* due to the corruption that entered the world at the fall of man.)

In 2005, at an Orthodox Christian conference in Moscow (of which more will be said later), doctor of biology Alexey N. Lunyy presented conclusions along the same lines. In the review article he presented, "Mutations and New Genes,"<sup>44</sup> Dr. Lunyy noted the great amount of experimental data that researchers in molecular biology and genetics have acquired about adaptive mutations precisely during the previous ten to fifteen years. To investigate claims by critics of neo-Darwinism that mutations do not increase genetic information for specified complexity, he undertook a search of all the relevant scientific literature up to the present, checking and comparing the evidence, and found not a single clear example of such an increase. Experimental data, he concluded, do not confirm neo-Darwinian claims; and the

Darwinists' defense that evolution takes millions of years and thus cannot be observed in the laboratory is simply a faith-based argument, employed to explain away a lack of empirical evidence.

In the same year, another powerful book was published that carried this line of research even further: *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome* by Dr. J. C. Sanford. Sanford, who taught plant genetics at Cornell University for twenty-five years, has made several major scientific contributions, including the invention of the biolistic "gene gun" process that is used on a large percentage of the world's transgenic crops today. Late in his career, he began to question neo-Darwinian theory, and now he counts himself among the creation scientists. In his cogent presentation of genetic evidence, he shows that the mechanism of mutation/selection cannot create a single functional gene, because the net information must always be declining, even within a single gene. "Mutation/selection," he writes, "cannot stop the loss of genomic information, let alone *create* the genome."<sup>45</sup> Specifically, he details the new genetic evidence that the human genome has been continually deteriorating due to a constant agglomeration of mutations. "This situation," writes Phillip Johnson in his endorsement of the book, "has disturbing implications for mankind's future, as well as surprising implications concerning mankind's past."

More recently, in 2009, a leading figure in the ID movement, Stephen C. Meyer, explored yet other aspects of the origin of genetic information in his important book *Signature in the Cell: DNA and the Evidence for Intelligent Design*. Whereas the books of Dr. Spetner and Dr. Sanford focus on whether natural selection and mutation can account for the massive *increase* in genetic information that would be necessary for molecules to evolve into human beings, Dr. Meyer takes up the prior question of whether the digital code embedded in DNA molecules—which cannot be explained by natural selection because it makes natural selection possible—could have come into being in the first place without an intentional cause. He describes the most recent discoveries that have been made as the exquisitely complex technical system for processing and storing information in the cell has been progressively revealed, and he amply demonstrates that all attempts to find a non-purposive chemical explanation of the origin of biological infor-

mation have failed. While best-selling atheist writers like Richard Dawkins have claimed that Darwin's explanation of the origin of living things has rendered belief in God irrelevant and irrational, Meyer shows that, on the contrary, the latest scientific findings are serving to confound materialistic theories of life's beginning, and point powerfully to the existence of a designing Intelligence.

#### *14. A Turning of the Tide*

The success of the "wedge" strategy of which Professor Johnson speaks has not been without repercussions in the Orthodox world. In 1998 *The Christian Activist*—a popular Orthodox journal that reached seventy-five thousand Orthodox Christians of all backgrounds—published an article by Dr. Kalomiros (who had recently reposed) which claimed that modern evolutionary theory was compatible with Orthodox Christianity. There was of course nothing unusual about this. As we have seen, Orthodox journals in America had shown acceptance of evolutionism many times in the past. What *was* unusual and surprising was the readers' reaction to Dr. Kalomiros' article. *The Christian Activist* had always received large amounts of mail, but this time they were inundated. In the following issue the publisher wrote:

We received more letters to the editor about issue #11 than any other prior issue. We also received more letters on "Eternal Will," the article on creation by Dr. Kalomiros, than any article we have ever published, all of them in disagreement with his views.

The editor then decided to print large portions of Fr. Seraphim's letter to Dr. Kalomiros, with a statement that Fr. Seraphim's presentation of the Church Fathers on the subject of evolution was indeed the traditional, Orthodox one.<sup>46\*</sup>

---

\* Fr. Seraphim's letter to Dr. Kalomiros had previously been published in a special double-issue of the Orthodox journal *Epiphany* (Fall 1989–Winter 1990). This issue, the first work of its kind to appear in the American Orthodox press, also included scientific and philosophical refutations of evolution by William Dembski, Wolfgang Smith, and others.



The response to the 1998 *Christian Activist* article appeared to represent a shift since the 1970s, when pro-evolution articles evoked nothing but cautious silence or open approval in Orthodox circles in America. At that time, Fr. Seraphim had gone against the most commonly endorsed view in contemporary American Orthodoxy, and was therefore subjected to criticism by fellow Orthodox Christians. By the end of the twentieth century, with the public legitimatization of doubts about neo-Darwinism, the tide had begun to turn.

### 15. *Developments in Russia*

Also at the end of the last century, much more notable signs of Orthodox dissatisfaction with evolutionism began to be seen. Over the last ten to fifteen years, Russia, which is the traditionally Orthodox nation with the largest and most advanced scientific establishment, has also become the Orthodox land with the most visible and organized opposition to evolutionism, on both the scientific and theological fronts.

Criticism of evolutionism had arisen in Russia within decades of the publication of Darwin's *Origin of Species* in 1859. From the theological side, refutations of evolution were voiced by Sts. Theophan the Recluse, John of Kronstadt, Barsanuphius of Optina, and others who would later be glorified as saints by the Russian Orthodox Church.\* From the scientific side, the most sustained critique of evolution was the fourteen-hundred-page tome *Darwinism: A Critical Study* (1885) by the Russian naturalist Nikolai Yakovlevich Danilevsky, which was based in part on the research of the Baltic German biologist Karl Ernst von Baer, one of the founders of embryology.

With the Bolshevik Revolution of 1917, any such criticism was suppressed by the new atheist regime. Soviet Communism bound itself to evolutionism from the beginning, regarding it as a parallel in the natural sciences to Marxist doctrine in the social sciences, and using it as a propaganda tool to destroy people's faith in God. In the wake of the Revolution, the banner of evolutionism was also taken up by the "Living Church," a movement of Orthodox clergyman of a liberal, modernist

---

\* See pp. 787–97, 799–804, 808–9 below.

persuasion who allied themselves with Communist ideology. In addition to attempting to introduce radical liturgical reforms, establish a married episcopate, and replace monasteries with Communist fraternities, the “Living Church” saw as a key element of its program the adoption of evolutionism as a cardinal Christian teaching.<sup>47</sup> For a time the “Living Church”—thanks to favorable status granted by the Soviet government, coupled with ruthless persecution by the same government of the canonical Orthodox hierarchy—was able to take over a large sector of the Orthodox churches in Russia. The faithful Orthodox people of Russia, however, did not accept the new robber “Church,” and thus it eventually died out. Darwinian evolutionism, however, continued to be taught as dogma in all Soviet schools. Orthodox Christians were not allowed to speak out against it, and some of those who did are now counted among Russia’s New Martyrs and Confessors.\*

This situation changed drastically with the fall of the Soviet Union in 1991, when religious freedom at last returned to the Russian Orthodox Church. Within five years, books against evolution and in favor of the Orthodox doctrine of creation began to come out from the Orthodox press. The year 1997 saw the publication of a Russian translation of Fr. Seraphim’s letter to Dr. Kalomiros, with the title *An Orthodox View of Evolution*. Significantly, the book was published by the newly reopened Optina Monastery, where the aforementioned Bishop Nektary—Fr. Seraphim’s Patristics instructor and his spiritual father after the repose of St. John—had once received his spiritual formation under the holy Optina Elders. This book was followed by a plethora of other books and articles in Russian, authored by both theological writers and scientists, which upheld the Orthodox Patristic teaching on creation, and contrasted it with the secular view of evolutionism.\*\* Often acknowledging a debt to the pioneering work of Fr. Seraphim, these later authors came to the same conclusions as he did regarding the Six Days of Creation, the state of man and the world before the fall, the age of the earth, the global Flood, etc., simply because the Orthodox tradition is so clear on these topics. Most of their books were published with

---

\* See pp. 796–97, 799–804, 808–9 below.

\*\* See a partial listing on pp. 907–10 below.

the blessing of His Holiness Patriarch Alexy II of Moscow and All Russia (†2008) or other hierarchs of the Russian Orthodox Church.

Also with the blessing of Patriarch Alexy II, the Orthodox Missionary Center “Shestodnev” (Six Days) was founded in the year 2000 by Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev. Fr. Constantine is the rector of the Dormition of the Most Holy Mother of God Church in Arkhangel-skoye-Tyurikovo (north Moscow), a doctor of geology and mineralogy, a lecturer at the St. Nicholas–Ugresh Seminary, and a member of the International Academy of Science (Russian Section). He was moved to establish the society after one of his parishioners, a teenaged girl named Anna Kuryatova, was reprimanded and given a failing grade for a paper at an Orthodox church school because she accepted the Orthodox Patristic understanding of creation over the secular evolutionary one. If a pious young Orthodox Christian is not even allowed to confess the faith of the Holy Fathers at an *Orthodox* school, Fr. Constantine thought, something must be done to make Orthodox believers more aware of the Patristic teaching and of the scientific evidence that supports this teaching. His main inspiration in taking on this task was the life and work of Fr. Seraphim Rose. As he wrote:

In the work of the Shestodnev center, we have always set down as a principle to base ourselves, in the realm of science, only on trustworthy and verified facts. In theology we prefer to use primarily Patristic sources, and we allow no departure from dogmatic Orthodox teachings. In this we are trying to be continuers of the work of Hieromonk Seraphim (Rose) of blessed memory, who, it seems to us, has set forth the only right direction in the theological interpretation of the problems posed by the modern unchurched world.<sup>48</sup>

Having an extensive educational background in both theology and natural science, Fr. Constantine was well prepared to head the Shestodnev center, while Anna's mother Elena became the main organizer.

From the society's inception, the well-known missionary priest and author Fr. Daniel Sysoyev served as its secretary. Fr. Daniel was among the first in post-Soviet times to come out with books defending the

Orthodox doctrine of creation and critiquing evolutionism. Before his death in 2009, he wrote two books, edited two anthologies, and gave many talks on the subject.\*

The society was also joined from the start by Dr. Alexander Lalomov. Having, like Fr. Constantine, a doctorate in geology and mineralogy, Dr. Lalomov serves as director of the ARCTUR geological research laboratory in Russia. Besides helping with the work of Shestodnev, he has compiled three volumes of an anthology of scientific articles entitled *Sotvoreniye* (Creation). Interestingly, he was initially brought back to the Orthodox Church through his scientific research, when the most reliable methods of measuring the age of placer mineral deposits confirmed for him the Scriptural-Patristic reading of the earth's age rather than the generally accepted secular view.

Beginning in 2005, the Shestodnev center has sponsored conferences in Moscow on "The Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science," as part of the International Nativity Educational Readings held annually throughout the Russian capital by the Moscow Patriarchate. Presided over by hierarchs of the Russian Orthodox Church,\*\* the Shestodnev conferences have featured talks on both theological and scientific subjects. While most of

---

\* A tireless and fearless evangelist, Fr. Daniel authored many missionary works on a broad range of topics, gave weekly Bible classes, trained "street missionaries," and counseled people who were recovering from involvement in pseudo-religious cults. Through his labors, many people were brought to Christ in the Orthodox Church, including atheists, Satanists, and skinheads. He was especially active in the mission to Muslims, over eighty of whom he converted to Christ. For this he received several death-threats and was finally murdered in his own church on the night of November 19, 2009. At his funeral—in which 237 priests took part—His Holiness Patriarch Kyrill of Moscow and All Russia spoke of his death in terms of martyrdom. He is widely regarded as a martyr by believers in Russia today, where his work is being carried on by the Prophet Daniel Orthodox Missionary Movement which he founded. About Fr. Daniel, see *The Orthodox Word*, no. 268 (2009) and nos. 270–71 (2010).

\*\* Archbishop Dimitry of Tobolsk and Tyumen and Archbishop Alexy of Orekhovo-Zuevo have presided over different conferences, inaugurating them with a hierarchical Divine Liturgy or Moleben. At the conferences in 2008 and 2009, Archbishop Dimitry gave the opening talk on some of the primary aspects of the Orthodox teaching on creation.



Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev speaking at the second Shestodnev conference, with the presiding hierarch, Archbishop Alexy of Orekhovo-Zuevo, at his left. Chapel of the Moscow State University of Railway Engineering, February 1, 2006.



The first conference, held in the same university chapel, January 25, 2005.



Dr. Alexander Lalomov speaking at the second conference, February 1, 2006.



The missionary priest Fr. Daniel Sysoyev (†2009) at the communal meal following the second conference, February 2, 2006.

the speakers have been native Russians, some have come from the United States, Georgia, Serbia, Canada, France and Italy. The theological talks have been given by bishops, priests, monastics, seminary instructors, church-school teachers, catechists, and missionaries. The scientific talks, which comprise the majority, have been given by doctors and professors of biology (biochemistry, molecular and population genetics, zoology), physics, mathematics, geology, and astronomy, who are currently working in secular scientific/academic institutions. Having decades of experience in their specialized disciplines, these scientists testify that they have not seen conclusive proofs against the Scriptural-Patristic understanding of creation and history, and that on the contrary they have found much evidence substantiating it and offering glimpses into the wisdom and majesty of God.

The Shestodnev center has published books of the proceedings of each year's conference. Patriarch Alexy II acquainted himself with these anthologies, and in his public statements expressed his support of the Orthodox position confessed in them. In contrast to the view of the Orthodox school teacher of the aforementioned teenager Anna, His Holiness endorsed the instruction of Orthodox young people in the traditional Biblical teaching on origins. Thus, at the opening of the International Nativity Educational Readings in 2007, he told the assembled faithful at the Moscow Kremlin:

A polarity of worldviews poses the task today of introducing students to a wide range of views on fundamental questions. Such questions traditionally refer to the problems of the origin of life, the origin of the universe, and the appearance of man. And no harm will be done to a schoolboy if he knows the Biblical theory of the origin of the world. Man's realization that he is the crown of God's creation will only elevate him; if someone wants to think that he has descended from apes, let him think that way, but let him not thrust it on someone else.<sup>49</sup>\*

---

\* More recently, in June 2010, the head of the Moscow Patriarchate's Department of External Church Relations, Metropolitan Hilarion (Alfeyev) of Volokolamsk, said concerning the education of children in Russia: "The time has come to end the

In the realm of Orthodox education in Russia, a significant development has been the publication of the high school textbook *General Biology* by Dr. Sergei Y. Vert'yanov. Written with the help of Russian scientists from a number of disciplines, this work presents scientific evidence for the Scriptural-Patristic understanding of the creation, history, and age of the world. The second edition (2006) was carefully reviewed and edited by the late Dr. Y. P. Altukhov, a world-renowned population geneticist whose seminal research into the limits of genetic change led him to the inescapable conclusion that the neo-Darwinian paradigm is founded on an impossible premise. An Orthodox believer nearing the end of his life, Dr. Altukhov was more than happy to assist Dr. Vert'yanov in producing a book of high scientific standards which would help free the minds of young students from the shackles of Darwinism. Having labored long over the book with a concilium of fellow scientists from Moscow State University (MGU), Dr. Altukhov stated only a few days before his repose: "Everything was written correctly. There are no mistakes. Now I can say that I have not lived in vain."<sup>50</sup> The book was blessed by Patriarch Alexy II, published by the Patriarchal Publishing House of the Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, and—in an act equally inconceivable in the former Soviet Union and in contemporary America—approved by the Russian Ministry of Education as a supplemental textbook for public schools.

Through the Shestodnev center, Orthodox scientists in Russia

---

monopoly of Darwinism and the deceptive idea that science in general contradicts religion. These ideas should be left in the past. Darwin's theory ... should be taught to children as one of several theories.... Children should know of other theories, too." Metropolitan Hilarion went on to note that the theory that one kind of creature can evolve into another has never been proven, and that children "should know about the religious picture, the creation of the world, which is common to all the monotheistic religions" (Conor Humphries, "Russian Church Wants End to Darwin School 'Monopoly,'" *Reuters*, June 10, 2010). A year earlier, the metropolitan explained that "Darwin's theory contradicts Biblical revelation, because this theory proposes to us ... that man developed from some kind of animal state by way of gradual evolution to the point that people have reached now. The Biblical picture is quite different. The Bible states that God created man perfect, and that the imperfection of today's human life is bound up first of all with sin" (Metropolitan Hilarion, interview by Dmitry Didrov and Dmitry Gubin, *Temporarily Open*, ATV, May 1, 2009 [in Russian]).



who uphold the Scriptural-Patristic view of origins have been able to form a network through which to share their ideas and research. At the completion of the 2008 Shestodnev conference, thirty-two of these scientists, each holding a Kandidat or Doctor of Sciences degree in their respective fields,\* sent a letter to Patriarch Alexy II, which read in part:

In the era dominated by “scientific” atheism, which ended not long ago in our country, as is well known it was difficult to propose and discuss scientific models based on the idea of creation. Now, thanks be to God, atheism is not forced as a dogma in political and ideological circles of our society. However, in scientific circles and the realm of education, the deeply rooted ideology of evolutionism is dominant, contradicting the Biblical worldview and the teaching of the Holy Fathers of the Church.<sup>51</sup>

### *16. A Comparison of Orthodox and Protestant Scientists Who Uphold the Biblical View*

While a number of creation scientists in the West work in Protestant creationist organizations in order to freely pursue their research, all of the Orthodox scientists in Russia who believe in the Biblical view of creation are employed by mainstream scientific and academic institutions. This is indicative of the fact that, after the fall of the Soviet Union, the scientific/academic milieu in Russia is more open to criticism of evolutionism than it is in the West, and the Russian doubters of Darwinism are much less likely to be blacklisted and lose their positions than are their Western counterparts.\*\*

---

\* The Russian Kandidat of Sciences degree is usually recognized as equivalent to a Ph.D. in the U.S. The Doctor of Sciences degree in Russia is distinctly higher than a Ph.D., and is roughly equivalent to a full professor rank in the U.S. system.

\*\* See Dr. Jerry Bergman, *Slaughter of the Dissidents* (vol. 1, 2008) for an extensively documented account of how Darwin doubters, including university students and accomplished scientists and educators, have faced all manner of discrimination for their views. For a popular presentation of the subject, see the film *Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed* (2008), hosted by Ben Stein.

The Russian Orthodox scientists who support the creation model often make use of the research done by Protestant and Roman Catholic creation scientists, as well as by scientists associated with the ID movement, but more often they refer to the work of fellow Russian scientists, including evolutionists whose findings inadvertently support the Scriptural-Patristic teaching on creation. In general, these Russian scientists, as well as scientists from other Orthodox countries who hold to the creation model, highly value the work of creation and ID scientists in the West. Some have noted that the Protestant creationist literature is at times marked by an overly triumphalistic tone, not sufficiently acknowledging the questions that remain unresolved within the creation paradigm.<sup>52</sup> At the same time they affirm that, overall, the work of Western creationists is just as scientifically valid as that of secular evolutionists, and if the former are sometimes too facile in making claims from the evidence and explaining away problems, they are certainly no more guilty of this than are the latter.\*

As the above-mentioned Orthodox scientists understand, the reason why creationists and evolutionists come to such different conclusions about the same empirical evidence lies not in the quality of their respective scientific work, but rather in the fact that they rely on different metaphysical/philosophical assumptions. Because these foundational assumptions—the Christian and the naturalistic—concern the question of the origin of all things, they are ultimately untestable.\*\*

---

\* The secular establishment's portrayal of Western creation scientists as inept, unprofessional, and dilettantish is a feature of the caricature mentioned earlier. Such a view is contradicted by distinguished and accomplished scientists from secular academia who have taken up the creation paradigm. At a recent conference of Creation Ministries International, for example, one of the world's foremost geneticists, the above-mentioned Dr. John Sanford of Cornell University, remarked about his fellow presenters: "I'm impressed with their professional and scientific rigor. Everything I've seen thus far has a great deal of scientific integrity" (Sanford, *The Mystery of Our Declining Genes* [2009]). As in any legitimate scientific enterprise, creation scientists in the West peer-review each other's work and continually challenge and test each other's hypotheses.

\*\* On the distinction between origins science and operational science, see p. 421n below. On the role of foundational assumptions in science, see pp. 666, 666n, 683, 903–5.

Thus, as Fr. Seraphim observed, neither creation nor evolution can be conclusively “proved” scientifically: both are founded on faith.\*

While the diametrically opposed assumptions of Christians and materialists make for essential disagreements in how scientific evidence is interpreted as it relates to origins, the difference in confessions of faith makes for some comparatively minor but nonetheless notable disparities between Orthodox and Protestants as they approach scientific evidence in light of the Biblical account of beginnings. Both the Orthodox and Protestant creationists confess a special creation, a young earth, an historical Adam and Eve, an incorrupt creation until the fall, a global Flood, and other basic Biblical teachings. Since, however, the Orthodox have at their disposal a rich Patristic tradition of Scriptural elucidation, they are able to penetrate further into the meaning of the Biblical text. The Orthodox Holy Fathers, as Fr. Seraphim observed, spoke about the Scriptural narrative of the creation and the first-created world from a common experience of Divine grace in the Church, which illumined their understanding and enabled them to go beyond the level of merely rational exegesis. Living within the same Ark of grace as did the ancient Fathers, and following them, Orthodox scientists of today know not only that the creation during the Six Days and up until the fall was without death and corruption (as the Protestants also rightly confess from the Bible), but also that it was of a nature radically different from the creation as we know it today. As Fr. Seraphim wrote, drawing from the teaching of St. Symeon the New Theologian:

The law of nature before Adam's disobedience *is different from the law of nature now in force, and it is therefore totally unknowable by science....* Certain it is that science cannot, on the basis of observing a creation which is everywhere corruptible and mortal, make even the slightest inference about a creation not subject to these laws. What was before the disobedience of Adam, and what is beyond the end of this corruptible world (when the creation will not be destroyed but totally *transformed*)—*are totally outside the sphere of science* and may

---

\* See pp. 423–24, 620–21, 668 below.

be known only through Orthodox theology in accordance with God's revelation to mankind.\*

This Patristic perspective prevents Orthodox scientists from trying to investigate what occurred during the Six Days and in the pre-fall cosmos, as some Protestant scientists (geologists, physicists, astronomers, biologists) have done.\*\* Knowing that physical laws and principles—and very likely also the properties of matter and time—were different before the fall of man, Orthodox scientists are content to leave the nature of God's original “very good” world as a mystery outside the scope of scientific inquiry: a mystery to be penetrated only in the realm of theology, through the Divine revelation imparted to the saints.

### *17. The Present Book*

As noted earlier, the present volume is an anthology of various materials that Fr. Seraphim left at the time of his repose, either in manuscript form or as taped lectures. The main body of the book has been compiled from the following materials, all of them by Fr. Seraphim:

---

\* See p. 650 below.

\*\* See pp. 894–95, 905–6 below. Examples include speculation into the properties of humans and other living things before the fall (an endeavor which Fr. Seraphim saw as futile; see p. 458 below), conjecture about the transformation of radioisotopes during the Six Days of Creation, attempts to investigate astronomical events during the Six Days according to the principles of modern physics, and suppositions regarding how the laws of physics (including the second law of thermodynamics) operated before the fall. Some Protestant creationists have objected to this approach, arguing as did Fr. Seraphim that present laws should not be applied to the pre-fall cosmos (see, for example, Jeffrey Wilson, “Pre-Fall Physics” [letter to the editor], in *TJ* [now *Journal of Creation*], vol. 18, no. 2 [2004], pp. 64–65); but at the current time theirs is not the prevailing opinion within Protestant creation science.

It may be added here that Protestant creationists sometimes bring forward interpretations of the Genesis narrative that are contrary to the common Patristic view. For example, while the Holy Fathers taught that Adam and Eve did not have sexual relations or even passions before the fall, the Protestant creationist reading generally assumes that they did have them.

## EDITOR'S PREFACE

1. Letter to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, 1974;
2. Lecture 11 of the "Orthodox Survival Course" in 1975, which includes both Fr. Seraphim's "Brief Critique of the Evolutionary Model" and his discussion of "Christian Evolutionism";
3. Patristic Commentary on Genesis, 1981 and 1982, taken both from Fr. Seraphim's manuscript and from his oral delivery, including the question-and-answer sessions;
4. Letters from 1974 to 1981;
5. Miscellaneous notes, including outlines, brief essays, and Fr. Seraphim's own additions to Alexey Young's unfinished chapters.

Although Fr. Seraphim never lived to complete the book he planned, the present volume covers all the main areas that he wanted discussed. In fact, in a certain sense this posthumous collection is more full than the book he envisioned.\* For example, some of Fr. Seraphim's most interesting theological observations are found in the tape transcriptions of his question-and-answer sessions (part 1, chap. 10), and some of his most concise and penetrating thoughts about evolutionism are contained in the selections from his letters (part 4).

Fr. Seraphim's discussion of the scientific side of the creation/evolution issue does not represent as full a treatment as he had envisioned for the book, nor is it fully up to date. We have attempted to remedy this situation by including (1) explanatory footnotes to Fr. Seraphim's discussion of scientific themes, with references to more recent literature; (2) Phillip Johnson's introduction on the burgeoning reconsideration of Darwinism in the years following Fr. Seraphim's repose, up until 1997;\*\* (3) an article by Dr. Yuri Zharikov, Russian Orthodox Christian and doctor of zoology, which elaborates further on Fr. Seraphim's discussion and covers scientific developments through 2010

---

\* Since this is a compilation of separate bodies of work done at different times for different purposes, there is some repetition of Patristic passages. Had Fr. Seraphim lived to complete this book himself, these repetitions would of course not occur. We have elected to allow for them in this posthumous collection so as not to disturb the integrity and continuity of each separate work.

\*\* Phillip Johnson's introduction was written for the first edition of this book, which was published in 2000.

(appendix 3); (4) an article on the age of the earth by the above-mentioned doctor of geology in Moscow, Alexander Lalomov (appendix 4), and (5) an up-to-date list of suggested resources.

We have also added to Fr. Seraphim's discussion of theological themes. In footnoted material throughout the main body of the book, as well as in the appended article "Created in Incorruption" (appendix 1), we have cited many Patristic sources to supplement those quoted by Fr. Seraphim. In the article we have augmented Fr. Seraphim's examination of the Patristic teaching on the original state of man and the cosmos, and on the effects of the fall, and have explained at greater length how this relates to the Patristic teaching on the redemption of man and the cosmos by Christ, and on the state beyond the general resurrection. In so doing, we have attempted to highlight a vital point made by Fr. Seraphim: that our understanding of Genesis and creation affects the whole of our faith as Orthodox Christians, and thus when this understanding is undermined by the modern secular faith of evolutionism, our entire faith is compromised.

### *18. This Book's Primary Contribution*

While this book attempts to address many of the issues raised by the naturalistic paradigm of modern science, as we have seen this was a decidedly secondary aim in Fr. Seraphim's mind. As Fr. Seraphim understood, scientific conceptions lie within the sphere of relative knowledge and hence are always subject to uncertainty and change, whereas the dogmatic, theological teaching of the Church rests on the certainty of Divine revelation and does not change. Therefore, while scientific evidence may *support* one's faith in the veracity of revelation as shown forth in the Church through her Holy Scriptures and Patristic writings, this evidence cannot in any way constitute the substance of one's faith, nor should it be seen as being somehow comparable to revelation.

The uniqueness of this book does not rest in its discussion of scientific issues. As we have seen, there is now plenty of excellent material, by writers associated both with creation science and with the ID movement, which sheds light on these issues. Rather, this book adds a singu-

lar dimension to the current creation/evolution debate by presenting, in a penetrating, detailed way, the otherworldly mind of the Holy Fathers as it interprets the Holy Scriptures, and as it perceives the creation, the first-created world, the natures of created things, and the original nature of man.

In overcoming the temptation, which had been bred in him from childhood, to feel he knew better than the ancients, Fr. Seraphim revealed how *noble*, how utterly treasurable is the Patristic mind. Clearly, from his writing one can see that this is no ordinary human mind, but one illumined by God.

As the Holy Fathers affirmed, the author of Genesis, Moses the God-seer, related what had been directly revealed to him by God regarding the Creation and the first-created world, and it was in this way that he was able to set forth his prophecy of the past. The Holy Fathers themselves, who commented on Holy Scripture in expounding the theology of the Church, were given to know something of these mysteries through Divine vision—*theoria* (θεωρία) in Greek—and thus they are the only sure interpreters of Moses' text. Fr. Seraphim, having immersed himself in the mind of the Fathers, presented to the modern world the Scriptural-Patristic *vision* of the cosmos, and thus raised the discussion far above the merely rational and scientific.

Protestant creationists, as we have seen, only present part of the picture, rightly defending the historical aspect of the Genesis narrative, but scarcely penetrating beyond the most obvious meaning of the text. Being as yet outside the fullness of revelation—a fullness given by Christ in His Church—they do not appreciate all that God has revealed about the original state and final end of man and the cosmos, nor do they plumb all the deeper typological and symbolical meanings in Genesis. "Orthodox evolutionists," on the other hand, may follow the Holy Fathers in bringing out the typological and symbolic meanings, but in failing to follow them in upholding the historical meaning as well, they too miss a vital dimension. Thus, the Patristic teaching on God's instantaneous, effortless acts of creation during the Six Days cannot be adopted by them. Moreover, the testimony of the Holy Fathers on the original state of man and the world—as a true, historical reality—remains irrelevant for them, and they cannot fully appreciate

how this reality relates to man's redemption by Christ and to the state beyond the general resurrection.

It is only in embracing without reservation what Fr. Seraphim called the "whole Patristic teaching" that one can see the whole picture—as much as God has revealed it to mankind. That is why Fr. Seraphim's contribution, gathered in these pages, is so invaluable for our times. All the levels of interpretation—historical, symbolical, typological—were embraced by Fr. Seraphim at once, just as they were by the Holy Fathers. But for him as for them, the historical reality of the Six Days and of life before the fall was viewed differently than the same reality in the post-fall world: it was viewed with spiritual eyes, informed by spiritual life in the Church.

Today, just as in Fr. Seraphim's day, one can find Orthodox scholars who hold to the traditional Christian understanding of Genesis and creation, as well as those who seek to combine evolutionism with Christianity. Since the posthumous publication of Fr. Seraphim's writings on the Patristic understanding of Genesis—which to date have appeared in English, Russian, Romanian, and Serbian—those in the former group have a precious resource through which to grow in faith and understanding, while those in the latter have a greater challenge before them. Nowadays the "Orthodox evolutionists," in addition to being faced with a growing public awareness of the flaws of evolutionism from the perspective of natural science, must confront a greater awareness among Orthodox Christians that evolutionism is in conflict with Patristic teaching. Thanks in large part to Fr. Seraphim's work, it is more difficult now than in former times to make such blanket statements as "the Holy Fathers read Genesis not as history but as allegory," or "Patristic teaching is compatible with evolutionism" without being called to account. To be sure, there are still "Orthodox evolutionists" who make such claims, backing them up with a few Patristic quotes one-sidedly interpreted and ignoring the overwhelming evidence to the contrary. But for those evolutionists who take up the challenge raised by Fr. Seraphim's exposition and actually reckon with the sum of Patristic teaching, such facile evasions are not possible. If they wish to retain their evolutionary ideas, it seems there remain but two ways to deal with the obvious incompatibility that exists between the



Patristic and evolutionary worldviews: (1) try to find contradictions and errors in the Patristic teachings on Genesis and creation, thereby undermining the Fathers' authority so that it can be replaced by the authority of modern scientism; and (2) frankly acknowledge that the Fathers did regard the Genesis narrative as history and did have a very non-evolutionary view of origins, but that now we must adopt a different view, since we as moderns know better than they.

As should be evident from our previous discussion, both of these closely related methodologies are poles apart from Fr. Seraphim's reverent reception of Patristic wisdom. The present book is intended for those who, along with Fr. Seraphim, find the modern attitude of "knowing better" unsatisfactory or even repugnant, who are looking for an exposition that embraces the "whole Patristic teaching," not one that distorts or attenuates it in order to make it compatible with the modern secular worldview. For believers such as these, this book does not aim to be the last word on the subject of Genesis and creation, but rather a primer, an inspiration, and a guidepost for further study and contemplation. In the words of Fr. Constantine Bufeyev quoted above, it can help point believers in "the only right direction" as they seek the mind of the Fathers concerning first things. In perceiving, through Fr. Seraphim, how one is to approach the Church's tradition with regard to the doctrine of creation vis-à-vis evolutionism, one can understand how to do this with regard to any traditional Christian teaching as it interfaces with the modern secular world. Fr. Seraphim indicates how one is to receive and pass on the Faith of the Church as did the Holy Fathers themselves.

### *19. A Spiritual Awareness of Original Incorruption*

While Orthodox scholars continue to take various positions on the creation/evolution issue, among Orthodox saints and holy elders who have lived since the time of Darwin the issue has long been settled. From the time Darwinian evolutionism began to be widely propagated, these holy ones equated it with *unbelief*, recognizing that it is not a scientific discovery based on evidence, but rather a materialistic

philosophy imposed on the evidence and based in modern Western society's loss of faith in the Christian God. Since they understood that the original aim of Darwin's theory was to find an explanation for the origin of living things without need for a Divine Creator, it never occurred to them—as it has to theistic evolutionists past and present—to try to insert God into a philosophy that had been devised in order to keep Him out. Participating in the Divine-human life of the Orthodox Church in full measure, they affirmed that evolutionism is foreign to the mind of the Church and thus to the mind of Christ. Their common witness shows forth the fact that evolutionism is in conflict with a basic spiritual awareness about God, man and the cosmos that is imparted to Christians, especially those closest to God. In the present book (appendix 2) we have included the testimony of some of these saints and righteous ones, from the Russian saints already mentioned to St. Nectarios of Pentapolis and Elder Paisios of Mount Athos in Greece, St. Nikolai Velimirovich and St. Justin Popovich in Serbia, Elder Sophrony Sakharov in England, and others.

Not only from sacred writings but also from spiritual experience, these saints and elders of recent centuries have known a Creator Who can and did make all things in instantaneous, effortless creative acts. Such a Creator, they have testified, could not be associated with the blind, fumbling, laborious process which, according to evolutionism, brought living things into being.\* Moreover, these saints and elders have known—again, not just from books but from living experience—a Creator Who made the world “very good” in the beginning, without death, suffering, disease, and all the other negative elements

---

\* This spiritual awareness of modern-day saints and elders was expressed by saints of earlier ages in response to other forms of error. Thus, for example, in the second century St. Irenaeus of Lyons took pains to refute the Valentinian Gnostic doctrine of the creation of the world by an ignorant, fumbling demiurge. As Hieromonk Irenaeus (M. C. Steenberg) has pointed out, this Valentinian concept of origins bears a certain resemblance to today's concept of the blind, fumbling process of evolution, and any deity that a “theistic evolutionist” might associate with such a process must inevitably bear some unwelcome resemblance to the Valentinian demiurge itself (personal communication of Hieromonk Irenaeus; see M. C. Steenberg, *Irenaeus on Creation*, chap. 1, and pp. 156–57n below).

that entered the world through human sin. Thus, they have rejected the evolutionary doctrine that regards all these aspects of corruption as having been present in the world from the beginning.

As Orthodox believers of holy life have drawn nearer to the Uncreated Source of incorruption, they have drawn nearer to incorruption itself, and have thereby gained spiritual insight into the original, incorrupt state of humanity and the entire visible creation. In the words of Fr. Seraphim's spiritual forebear St. Barsanuphius of Optina, the present world reveals only "hints" and "fragments" of "that wondrous beauty, incomprehensible to human thought, which was originally created," when everything—including the sun, the moon, and even the material nature of light itself—was different.\*

Fr. Seraphim himself, as he entered more deeply into the Patristic mind through study coupled with prayer and ascetic labor, lived in this awareness of creation's blessed condition in the beginning. In the morning, before church services, he had a practice of circling the entire monastery grounds. As the morning light filtered through the broad canopy of oak leaves, Fr. Seraphim could be seen blessing and even kissing the trees. Once, when he was asked why he was doing this, he only looked up, smiled radiantly, and continued walking.

Those who knew Fr. Seraphim understood that there could be no chiliastic worship of the earth in this routine of his. Fr. Seraphim was acutely aware that this weary earth, "groaning" under the "bondage of corruption" that had entered it through human sin (cf. Rom. 8:21–22), was not his true home, that it would be one day recreated, transfigured into a new earth. For this reason, he did not even like nature photography that attempted to make this corruptible earth look as attractive as possible. Why then, did he kiss the trees of the monastery? Was it not because he saw in them the very "fragments" of the lost beauty of the original creation, as well as the promise of the transfigured world to come? The very tree he kissed was a reminder of the incorrupt realm which man had lost at the fall—for trees too, according to the teaching of St. Gregory the Sinaite, partook of incorruption in the beginning.

---

\* See pp. 709–10 below.

In his commentary on Genesis, Fr. Seraphim made a self-revelatory statement which confirms that this awareness was behind his unusual practice of kissing trees:

In the peaceful murmur of the forests (where so many ascetic strugglers have taken refuge) can we not see a reminder of the Paradise of vegetation originally intended for our dwelling and food, and still existing for those able to ascend, like St. Paul, to behold it?\*

There also may have been a sense of repentance behind Fr. Seraphim's practice—a sense of mankind's responsibility for creation's "groaning." As Metropolitan Joseph of the Bulgarian Orthodox Church suggested at the commemoration of the twenty-fifth anniversary of Fr. Seraphim's repose, in blessing and kissing trees Fr. Seraphim was "as if begging forgiveness that because of our sins they also suffer."<sup>53</sup>

As with the forest of vegetation in which he lived, Fr. Seraphim had a profound appreciation for the animal kingdom around him: both the many wild animals which freely roamed through the monastery, and the monastery's many domesticated animals. Ever since he was a boy he had shown this appreciation for God's creatures, which had moved him to spend three summer vacations studying zoology at the Summer School of Science in San Diego. Now that he was an Orthodox monk living in the wilderness, he viewed animals in a more sublime light, even while realizing that they too had been affected by man's primordial fall. His monastic co-laborer Fr. Herman recalls a quiet moment when some of the monastery's animals came up to them. "From your point of view," he asked Fr. Seraphim, "what are animals all about?" Fr. Seraphim replied: "They have something to do with Paradise."

## *20. The Original Nature of Man*

As Fr. Seraphim lived in the awareness of the original incorruption of the creation around him, even more so was he aware of the

---

\* See p. 252 below.

original incorruption of man: spiritual, intellectual, and physical. More than anything else, it was this awareness of man's original nature, which he shared with the Holy Fathers before him, that revealed to him evolution's opposition to the Orthodox Christian worldview. As he wrote to Dr. Kalomiros, "The most important question which is raised for Orthodox theology by the modern theory of evolution is *the nature of man*, and in particular *the nature of the first-created man Adam*."<sup>54</sup>

Through faith in naturalism, and in particular through its offspring evolutionism, modern secular man has lost an understanding of what he was like before the fall. While Orthodox Patristic theology teaches that man fell from a blessed state in which he had no bodily needs, was dispassionate, possessed ineffable intelligence and the gift of prophecy, and was "wrapped about" by Divine grace—a condition that St. John Chrysostom likened to that of the angels<sup>55</sup>—evolutionism teaches rather that man came up from the beasts through the law of bloody tooth and claw. Thus, it is no wonder that St. Barsanuphius of Optina called evolutionism a "bestial philosophy," or that St. Justin Popovich of Celiye observed: "That theology which bases its anthropology on the theory of 'scientific' evolution is nothing but a contradiction in terms. In reality, it is a theology without God and an anthropology without man."<sup>\*</sup>

As Fr. Seraphim came to realize, many of his fellow Orthodox Christians have, together with their surrounding society, also lost an awareness of man's original condition. And yet, as he also knew, without an apprehension of his original nature man cannot know what it is he should be striving to get back to, nor can he know what he was ultimately created for. For this reason, Fr. Seraphim felt it was essential to introduce his fellow believers to the wealth of Patristic teaching on this subject.

"With the opening of their eyes through the transgression," Fr. Seraphim told the assembled faithful at the monastery, "Adam and Eve have already lost the life of Paradise.... From now on their eyes will be open to the lower things of this earth, and they will see only

---

\* See pp. 795–96, 812 below.

with difficulty the higher things of God. They are no longer dispassionate, but have begun the passionate earthly life we still have today.”\*

It is by becoming dispassionate through prayer and ascetic struggle that Orthodox saints throughout the ages have restored in themselves, while yet in a corruptible body, some measure of the pre-fallen state of Adam.\*\* Like him, they have been shown to be impervious to the elements; like him, they have been masters and stewards of creation, and all creatures have obeyed them.

First-created Adam, Fr. Seraphim said, was in “a state called sobriety: *nepsis* [νῆψις] in Greek.” “He looked at things and saw them the way they were. There was no ‘double thought’ like we have ‘in our fallen state,’ no ‘looking at things and imagining something else.’”\*\*\*

Through the grace of Christ in His Church, Orthodox saints have also returned to this pre-fallen state of sobriety or watchfulness. With pure, open awareness, they have perceived the original nature of man, the distinct natures of created things, and, beyond these, the “ideas” or “thought-wills” (λόγοι—*logoi*) of created beings that preexist in the

---

\* See p. 259 below.

\*\* The restoration of man to his pre-fallen state is a regular theme in Orthodox ascetic literature. Nicetas Stethatos, a disciple of St. Symeon the New Theologian, writes about it as follows: “Unless through the labor of repentance and assiduous ascetic practice we first restore the soul’s powers to the state in which they were when God originally formed Adam and breathed into him the breath of life, we will never be able to know ourselves; nor will we be able to acquire a disposition that is master of the passions.... If we do not regain the beauty of our original high estate, continually renewing the impress of the image of Him Who created us in His likeness ... how can we ever enter into union with Him?” (*On the Practice of the Virtues* 17–18, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 83–84). In a similar vein, Metropolitan Theoleptus of Philadelphia, the spiritual father of St. Gregory Palamas, teaches: “He who stands aloof from the senses and sensory things—stands aloof, that is to say, from the world and the flesh—is energized by the Spirit and meditates on the things of the Spirit. One can learn of this from God’s relationship with Adam prior to the fall” (*Texts* 4, *Philokalia* 4, p. 189).

See also the Patristic passages quoted on pp. 235n, 472–73, 755–56 below.

\*\*\* See pp. 396–97 below.

Mind of God.\* In Christ, they have experienced not only the closeness to God that Adam enjoyed in the beginning, but the spiritual union with God (θέωσις—*theosis*) that Adam would have attained if not for his disobedience.\*\*

Fr. Seraphim, in reading the Lives of the saints (especially the ascetic “desert dwellers” of both ancient and recent times) was inspired and elevated by these living icons of man’s original, incorrupt condition, and likewise of his future, redeemed state, when he will be raised in a body that is at once incorruptible, spiritual, and deified. In following in the footsteps of the saints, Fr. Seraphim prayed much, cultivated the lofty virtues of sobriety and dispassion, and began to ascend with them beyond this corruptible earth. From a higher vantage point gained through drawing closer to God, he was granted to share to some degree in the experience of the saints as they contemplated the original and final states of man and the cosmos, as well as the distinct created natures and Uncreated *logoi* of beings.

Through revelation from above, the Prophet Moses described the creation and the first-created world. Through the grace of Christ

---

\* In Orthodox theology, the *logoi* are the Uncreated inner principles of created things. They are contained within the Divine Logos (Word), and are separate from the created things themselves, just as the ideas and will of a craftsman are separate from the work in which they are manifested. Proper to the Energies rather than to the Essence of God, the *logoi* determine the differences among created things, including the different modes according to which these things participate in the Uncreated Energies. Everything in the created order receives its existence, as well as tends toward its end, according to the *logoi*. The saints, in rising toward the vision of God in His Energies, can at the same time be given knowledge of the Uncreated *logoi*. See Melchisedec Törönen, *Union and Distinction in the Thought of St. Maximus the Confessor*; Vladimir Lossky, *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*, pp. 94–100; Fr. Dumitru Staniloae, *Orthodox Spirituality*, pp. 203–23; as well as pp. 182n, 217n, 477n, 699 below.

\*\* Thus, for example, St. Macarius the Great (in the adaptation of his writings by St. Symeon Metaphrastes) teaches: “What is the purpose of Christ’s advent? The restoration and reintegration of human nature in Him. For he restored to human nature the original dignity of Adam, and in addition bestowed on it the unutterable grace of the heavenly inheritance of the Holy Spirit” (*On the Freedom of the Nous* 150, *Philokalia* 3, p. 353). See also pp. 396, 474, 757, 763–64, 772, 774 below.

working within them, the Holy Fathers provided further illumination of Moses' account. And finally, through the same action of grace, a man of our own times, Fr. Seraphim Rose, has pierced through the dark clouds of unbelief and shed light on the mind of the Fathers for contemporary seekers of truth.

It is our hope and prayer that more of these seekers will hear the message. Through the work of those in the intelligent design movement, one can find compelling evidence that the mechanism of Darwinian evolution cannot produce a man from a molecule, no matter how much time is allowed for the process. Through the work of non-Orthodox creation scientists, one can examine the great mass of scientific evidence that points to the veracity of Genesis as an historical narrative. Through the work of Orthodox scientists who uphold Scriptural-Patristic teaching, one can gain further perspectives on scientific issues according to a specifically *Orthodox* understanding of the boundaries of scientific inquiry. All of these sources of knowledge, however, can at most merely point to man's source of revealed truth about himself and the world: the Holy Scriptures *of* the Church, as elucidated *by* the Church through the Holy Fathers. Through this source, approached with reverence and humility, today's truth-seekers can raise their minds and hearts above this fallen, corruptible earth along with their fellow seeker, Fr. Seraphim. From there they will perceive God as the all-powerful Creator He truly is, man and the cosmos as they were in the beginning, and all things as they will be in the future age, redeemed forever by the saving work of Jesus Christ.

Hieromonk Damascene  
St. Herman of Alaska Monastery  
Great Lent, 2011



## A NOTE ON THE SECOND EDITION

In this second edition of *Genesis, Creation, and Early Man*, published a decade after the first, we have substantially added to the theological and scientific material in the footnotes and appendices, as well as in the above preface. One of our aims in this has been to provide a more representative treatment of the Patristic interpretation of the book of Genesis, quoting or at least listing the Patristic sources that touch upon each salient point of exegesis. Another has been to address theological and scientific issues that have come to our attention since the first edition was published. A number of these issues were brought up by our readers and by those whom we have met at conferences; others were found in various books and articles, including two lengthy reviews of the present book: "Genesis and Creation: Towards a Debate" by George Theokritoff, with Elizabeth Theokritoff (*St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly*, vol. 46, no. 4 [Nov. 4, 2002], pp. 365–90), and "Orthodoxy and Genesis: What the Fathers *Really* Taught" by Terry Mortenson (*TJ* [now *Journal of Creation*], vol. 16, no. 3 [Dec. 2001], pp. 48–53). With help from Orthodox Patristic scholars and scientists and from the wealth of material that has been published on the subject since the first edition of this book came out, we have attempted to respond to the most pertinent questions and challenges that have been raised in recent times concerning the Orthodox doctrine of creation.

## INTRODUCTION

# *Fr. Seraphim Rose and Twenty-First-Century Science*

By Phillip E. Johnson

I FIRST HEARD of Fr. Seraphim Rose in the summer of 1996, while lecturing in the Seattle area. A young man who had been in contact with the monks at the Monastery of St. Herman in Platina, California, brought me a stack of books, saying that the monks would like me to write an essay to accompany a collection of Fr. Seraphim's writings on Genesis and evolution. I had most of the books mailed to my office but selected the slimmest one (*Nihilism*) to read on the trip. I was fascinated by the insight displayed in this early work, and needed no urging to read later all the other materials I received, including Fr. Damascene Christensen's biography and the previously unpublished writings collected in this volume. Fr. Seraphim Rose believed in and lived by the teachings of the early Christian Church, but (or should I say "and therefore"?) he also thoroughly understood the problems of modernity. I am honored to have been invited to assist in bringing his teaching to the attention of a broader section of the public.

My task is to review the state of the scientific questions today, to give the reader a sense of how well Fr. Seraphim's critique of evolutionary naturalism stands up now that a major reconsideration of Darwinism is beginning to occur in the secular world. I should explain first that my involvement with the subject of evolution has been quite different from his. Fr. Seraphim's primary objective was to explain the teaching of the Church Fathers, especially with respect to their understanding of the Scriptures, so that Orthodox believers would not be misled by

## INTRODUCTION

misguided efforts to reinterpret those teachings in the light of modernist evolutionary science. He dealt with scientific questions mainly in the context of defending the Patristic writings, and he directed his teaching towards fellow Orthodox believers. Although he understood the philosophical roots of evolutionary theory very profoundly, he was not extensively involved with the scientific community. He seems to have debated the subject only with Dr. Kalomiros, who was apparently esteemed within part of the Orthodox community but whose scientific views were confused and laden with misinformation.

My own writings are addressed to the world at large, including secular intellectuals and religious believers from a variety of traditions. My writing and speaking brings me into constant debate with a variety of scientific authorities of greater and lesser renown. Most of my critics would not consider the Church Fathers to be reliable authorities, or even recognize their names. Many of them are also strongly prejudiced against anything that smacks of “fundamentalism,” or even “religion,” and hence are repelled rather than persuaded by any reference to the Bible or its interpreters. To avoid endless confusion and distraction, and to keep attention focused on the most important point, I have firmly put aside all questions of Biblical interpretation and religious authority, in order to concentrate my energies on one theme. My theme is that, in Fr. Seraphim’s words, “evolution is *not* ‘scientific fact’ at all, but philosophy.” The philosophy in question is naturalism (the doctrine that nature is “all there is”), which for this purpose is identical to materialism (the doctrine that reality consists of nothing but the particles that physicists study). If materialism is true then nature had to be capable of doing its own creating, and the existence of a materialistic evolutionary process follows as a matter of inevitable logic. Hence, I have argued, scientific materialists believe in naturalistic evolution not because of the evidence, but regardless of it.

Although my own project has led me to avoid the questions of Patristic authority that most concerned Fr. Seraphim, some of my debating opponents have (like Dr. Kalomiros) invoked the Fathers in highly distorted form for their own purposes. I am therefore gratified to see that Fr. Seraphim has thoroughly demolished one of the favorite canards of accommodationists not only in Orthodoxy, but also in Roman

Catholic and Protestant circles. Desperately seeking anything that will support their program of melding Christianity with evolutionary naturalism, these theologians and scientists have claimed that such esteemed Fathers as Basil and Augustine taught a doctrine which is more or less like a primitive version of modern evolutionary theory. I need say no more on this subject, because no one who understands Fr. Seraphim's lectures on Genesis and creation, which are contained in this volume, is in danger of being misled by such perverse misinterpretations.\*

With those introductory comments out of the way, I will explain certain common misunderstandings of the scientific issues with which Fr. Seraphim had to deal, and in the course of doing this I will attempt to bring his discussion up to date. Fr. Seraphim's thought was thoroughly at odds with twentieth-century science, shaped as that science has been by its *a priori* commitment to metaphysical materialism. It may well be, however, that the science of the next century will be more modest and hence more realistic, in which case he may seem like a man who was far ahead of his time.

What is "evolution"?

A succinct and accurate definition of "evolution," as the term is understood by today's mainstream scientists and science educators, is given in the official (USA, 1995) policy statement of the National Association of Biology Teachers\*\* (NABT):

---

\* See the article by Jonathan Wells, "Abusing Theology: Howard Van Till's 'Forgotten Doctrine of Creation's Functional Integrity,'" in the journal *Origins & Design*, vol. 19, no. 1 (1998), pp. 16–20.

\*\* The complete text of the NABT statement on the teaching of evolution was published in *The American Biology Teacher* (Jan. 1996), pp. 61–62, and in the collection *Voices for Evolution* (Berkeley, Calif.: National Center for Science Education, 1995) pp. 140–44. Following public criticism by myself and others, the NABT amended the Statement to omit the words "unsupervised" and "impersonal." This amendment was in no way a change in the substance of the NABT's position; it merely deleted incautious words too obvious and undeniable. The Darwinian establishment prefers to make its main point—that God had nothing to do with evolution—by persistent insinuation rather than the kind of plain language that invites opposition. That evolution was never guided by an intelligent agent (until scientific man developed genetic engineering) remains the standard Darwinian teaching.

## INTRODUCTION

The diversity of life on earth is the outcome of evolution: an unsupervised, impersonal, unpredictable and natural process of temporal descent with genetic modification that is affected by natural selection, chance, historical contingencies and changing environments.

This definition contains three elements:

1. evolution is an unsupervised and impersonal process—i.e., it is not directed or guided by God;
2. evolution is a natural process of descent with modification by which all of today's living organisms descended by a natural process from a single primordial ancestor which itself evolved (without supernatural assistance) from non-living chemicals; and
3. the mechanism of evolution is a combination of random genetic changes (chance) and natural selection, operating in the context of historical contingencies and changing environments.

I will discuss these three elements below, in reverse order. As a preliminary matter, however, I should firmly correct one of Dr. Kalomirós' many misunderstandings. Not every instance of change in nature constitutes "evolution," as that term is used today. The growth of a giant oak tree from an acorn is not evolution, nor is the development of a human baby from an embryo in the womb of its mother. These processes of what biologists call "development" are fundamentally different from biological evolution, because they are programmed by the information inherited from the parents and hence are highly predictable. A human embryo never grows into some animal other than a human being, and an acorn never turns aside from its programmed path to become a pine tree or a rose bush.

There is a persistent legend among evolutionists that "ontogeny recapitulates phylogeny"; that is, that the development of the human infant in the womb is a kind of rerun of evolutionary history, as the embryo goes from a fish stage to a reptile stage and so on. This non-existent phenomenon is often called "Haeckel's Law," after Darwin's

most prominent German disciple.\* In another form, the “Law” states that the embryo goes through not the adult stages but the embryonic forms of earlier, “ancestral” forms. In either form, the “Law” does not exist, and is not defended by qualified embryologists in the professional literature. One can, however, find stages evident here and there of characteristics that, with imagination, can be made to fit the pattern of Haeckel’s Law, and these are continually cited to the public in popular treatments as proof of “evolution.” The most famous example is the supposed “gill slits” possessed by human embryos at one stage of development, although these slits are not gills and never develop into gills.

Although Haeckel’s Law was discredited many decades ago, it has such an irresistible appeal to the Darwinian imagination that it is still taught in many schools around the world. Even reputable museums and universities continue to propagate a version of it, in a vague and unfalsifiable form. For example, the online Paleontology Museum at the University of California at Berkeley has this to say about Haeckel’s Law:

The “law of recapitulation” has been discredited since the beginning of the twentieth century. Experimental morphologists and biologists have shown that there is not a one-to-one correspondence between phylogeny and ontogeny. Although a strong form of recapitulation is not correct, phylogeny and ontogeny are intertwined, and many biologists are beginning to both explore and understand the basis for this connection.<sup>1</sup> \*\*

In fact, research into embryology has shown that it is a tightly directed process which does not fit the Darwinian paradigm at all.

---

\* In one of his letters to Fr. Seraphim, Dr. Alexander Kalomiros brought forth Haeckel’s Law as a “proof” of evolution. See pp. 633, 639 below.—ED.

\*\* For an example of the continuing promotion of the recapitulation concept in presentations to the public, see the discussion of an American Public Television “NOVA” program on human embryology in my internet debate with Professor Kenneth Miller of Brown University: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/nova/odyssey/debate/index.html>.

## INTRODUCTION

Efforts to alter the process by inducing mutations can produce deformities of various sorts, but they do not succeed in changing the path of development so that the embryo develops into a viable creature of a different type.

### *1. The Mechanism of Evolution: Mutation and Selection*

At bottom, biological evolution is a theory of change, which undertakes to explain how it is possible for one kind of organism to change into something completely different. It also seeks to explain how extremely complex biological organs and organisms can come into existence without the need for a supernatural Creator. As the eminent Darwinist Richard Dawkins has explained, "Biology is the study of complicated things that give the appearance of having been designed for a purpose."<sup>2</sup> Nonetheless, Dawkins says that Darwin "made it possible to be an intellectually fulfilled atheist" by explaining how a mindless material mechanism could perform the apparent miracle of biological creation. The mechanism is therefore the heart of the theory, as Darwin himself explained:

In considering the Origin of Species, it is quite conceivable that a naturalist, reflecting on the mutual affinities of organic beings, on their embryological relations, their geographical distribution, geological succession, and such other facts, might come to the conclusion that each species had not been independently created, but had descended, like varieties, from other species. Nevertheless, such a conclusion, even if well founded, would be unsatisfactory, until it could be shown how the innumerable species inhabiting this world have been modified, so as to acquire that perfection of structure and coadaptation which most justly excites our admiration.<sup>3</sup>

In other words, simply postulating that change has occurred, or that primitive species are "ancestors" of modern species, is not much of an improvement over special creation unless a mechanism of change is specified. Our experience is that "like begets like." An ape never gives

birth to a human (or vice versa), and it is still more unthinkable that a bacterium would give birth to a butterfly. So how does one kind of organism change into something completely different? Above all, how does this process of change build new complex organs (like eyes, wings, kidneys and brains) which did not exist before? The origin of the human mind is of course the ultimate problem, and Dawkins acknowledges the scope of the problem:

Physics books may be complicated, but ... the objects and phenomena that a physics book describes are simpler than a single cell in the body of its author. And the author consists of trillions of those cells, many of them different from each other, organized with intricate architecture and precision-engineering into a working machine capable of writing a book.... Each nucleus ... contains a digitally coded database larger, in information content, than all 30 volumes of the *Encyclopedia Britannica* put together. And this figure is for *each* cell, not all the cells of the body put together.<sup>4</sup>

How does an unsupervised material process create such an intricate marvel, which is far more complex than a computer or a space ship?

The Darwinian answer is that tiny changes—the sort of variations that appear in each generation and differentiate a juvenile organism from its parents—accumulate gradually over many generations until they produce an entirely new kind of creature with new organs and adaptive features. This mechanism has never been shown to be capable of generating anything other than minor variations (such as back-and-forth variations in the size of finch beaks, or variations in the relative frequency of light and dark varieties in a moth population).<sup>\*</sup> Because it is the only naturalistic possibility that has any plausibility

---

<sup>\*</sup> Although the peppered moth experiment never proved anything of importance, readers should know that the experiment itself was the result of Darwinian enthusiasm. For details of how science has discredited the experiment, see the article by Jonathan Wells, "Second Thoughts about Peppered Moths," *The Scientist*, vol. 13, no. 11 (May 24, 1999), p. 13. [See also Jonathan Wells, *Icons of Evolution: Science or Myth?* (2000), pp. 137–57.—ED.]



whatever, Darwinists extrapolate wildly from these trivial examples to postulate a mechanism capable of creating countless adaptive wonders, including even the human brain. Such claims are poorly supported, to put it mildly, and in recent years they have come up against insuperable negative evidence. The details are given in my book *Darwin on Trial*, and in various articles which are collected at my website (<http://www.arn.org>). Very briefly, two independent lines of evidence are decisive:

1. *Fossil stasis*. The fossil record is pervasively characterized by a pattern of *sudden appearance* followed by *stasis*. New types of organisms appear suddenly and fully formed, and they remain basically unchanged thereafter. This pattern can be used to support the proposition that creation occurred not just at the beginning but throughout earth's history (assuming the dating of the rocks is accurate),\* but it consistently refuses to support the key Darwinian claim that one kind of creature changes step-by-step into something completely different. This pattern of evidence cannot be attributed to any incompleteness in the fossil record, because the pattern is most obvious and undeniable in just those areas (especially marine invertebrates) where the record is most complete.

The very anti-Darwinian state of the fossil record was known to insiders all along as the "trade secret of paleontology," but it first came to the attention of the general public in the 1980s, due to the publicity given to the theory of evolution by "punctuated equilibria." This theory attempted to reconcile Darwinism with the pattern of sudden appearance and stasis by supposing that significant evolution occurs in small groups, which go away from the (unchanging) main population, accumulate mutations, and then reappear as a new species without leaving a trace of the transformation in the fossil record. By this means the absence of evidence for evolution became transformed into evidence for invisible evolution. In the memorable (1995) words of Niles

---

\* The currently accepted radiometric dating procedures, however, are based on unproven naturalistic and uniformitarian assumptions. See Fr. Seraphim's discussion of this subject on pp. 372–73, 529–33 below, as well as appendix 4, "The Age of the Earth and the Rate of Geological Processes," pp. 861–82.—ED.

Eldredge, one of the founders of the punctuated equilibria theory, "Evolution cannot forever be going on somewhere else. Yet that's how the fossil record has struck many a forlorn paleontologist looking to learn something about evolution."<sup>5\*</sup>

As Eldredge's remark implies, this spectacular pattern of fossil disconfirmation persists even after more than a century of determined efforts by Darwinist paleontologists to find evidence that will support their cherished theory. Any doubtful fossil that could conceivably be interpreted as an intermediate form in a Darwinian transition has been cited as proof that Darwinism is true, and yet even after these heroic efforts the bulk of the fossil record is as thoroughly inconsistent with Darwinian expectations as it was when Darwin proposed the theory in 1859.

2. *Irreducible complexity.* A 1996 book by molecular biologist Michael Behe<sup>\*\*</sup> has brought to public attention the fact that biological systems at the molecular level are irreducibly complex. This means that they are made up of many complicated parts and subsystems, all of which have to be in place in order for the system as a whole to perform a useful function. In other words, these intricate systems cannot be built up step-by-step as the Darwinian theory requires, and molecular biologists do not even attempt to present detailed scenarios of how evolution might have produced them. As with the pervasive stasis in the fossil record, irreducible complexity at the molecular level has long been known to specialists, but has been kept from public attention because biologists did not know how to explain it within a Darwinian framework. This illustrates the phenomenon famously described by Thomas Kuhn: facts which do not fit the dominant scientific paradigm tend to be systematically ignored, because they are a distraction from the prevailing research agenda.

When they are faced with the devastating evidence against the Darwinian mechanism, and reminded of the lack of positive evidence in its favor, Darwinists tend to retreat to what they think is a more

---

\* For a general discussion of the punctuated equilibrium controversy, see chapter 4 of my book *Darwin on Trial*.

\*\* Michael Behe, *Darwin's Black Box: The Biochemical Challenge to Evolution*.

defensible line. They distinguish between “Darwin’s specific theory,” which they admit to be vulnerable, and something they call the “fact of evolution,” which they claim to be undeniably true.\* That takes me to the second subject.

## *2. The Common Ancestry Thesis*

The difference between the supposedly undeniable “fact of evolution” and “Darwin’s theory” is obscure, for the very good reason that the mere existence of a pattern of relationship has no great significance unless there is a theory that explains how the pattern came into existence. The “fact” is usually described as “common ancestry,” which is the proposition that humans (and other animals) share a common ancestor with plants, and fungi, and bacteria. The supposed proof of the fact is that living things exist in groups, and the groups are related by a pattern of greater and lesser similarity. Humans are similar in many ways to apes, somewhat less similar to rabbits, less similar still to snakes, still less similar to trees, and so on. All of the disparate groups of the taxonomic order (bacteria, plants, animals, etc.) have a common biochemical basis, indicating that they come from a common source. The Darwinian explanation of this pattern is that it results from common ancestry, with those groups having the greatest degree of similarity being the ones with relatively recent common ancestors. In reality the common ancestors are postulates in a theory, which aims to explain the fact of classification or relationship.

“Ancestry” implies a very gradual process of change, since offspring differ only slightly in each generation from their parents. Hence the common ancestry thesis implies not only that the common ancestors existed on the earth, but also that very long lines of gradual descent linked these ancient ancestors to their putative modern descendants. None of this can be confirmed from fossil studies, but Darwinists believe that the process must have occurred nonetheless because they

---

\* For a general discussion of the elusive distinction between the “fact” and “theory” of evolution, see chapter 5 of my book *Darwin on Trial*.

think it is the only scientific (i.e., naturalistic) explanation for the pattern of life.

On the contrary, a pattern of greater and lesser similarities, or of variations within a basic type, is more likely to be evidence of a common design plan rather than of a natural evolutionary process. This was inadvertently demonstrated in a (1990) book by a Darwinist zoologist, who illustrated the “fact of evolution” by citing the example of a line of automobiles:

Everything evolves, in the sense of descent with modification, whether it be government policy, religion, sports cars, or organisms. The revolutionary fiberglass Corvette evolved from more mundane automotive ancestors in 1953. Other high points in the Corvette’s evolutionary refinement included the 1962 model, in which the original 102-inch was shortened to 98 inches and the new closed-coupe Stingray model was introduced; the 1968 model, the forerunner of today’s Corvette morphology, which emerged with removable roof panels; and the 1978 silver anniversary model, with fastback styling. Today’s version continues the stepwise refinements that have been accumulating since 1953. The point is that the Corvette evolved through a selection process acting on variations that resulted in a series of transitional forms and an endpoint rather distinct from the starting point. A similar process shapes the evolution of organisms.<sup>6</sup>

Of course the Corvettes, like the organisms, have common features because they were conceived in the mind of a designer, and not because some mindless process made either one. In other words, the fact of relationship is not evidence of the existence of a purely naturalistic or mindless mechanism of creation. Beethoven’s symphonies follow the pattern of common design with variations, but this pattern has no tendency whatever to support a theory that the symphonies composed themselves without any help from Beethoven.

Evolutionary theory today is in a state of confusion, in which major figures like Stephen Jay Gould and Richard Dawkins disagree violently over how evolution is supposed to have occurred. (See chapter 4

of my book *Reason in the Balance* for a review of these major disagreements.) These warring ideologues do have a common program of sorts, but it is a philosophical program rather than a scientific program. What they agree on is that, at all costs, God must be kept out of the picture. That brings us to the third and most important part of the definition of evolution.

### *3. Evolution (in the Scientific Sense) Is Inherently Godless*

We saw that the NABT definition states that evolution is by definition “unsupervised.” This requirement is not a conclusion that Darwinists reach from empirical evidence, but a philosophical assumption that reflects their starting point in metaphysical naturalism or materialism. If nature is all there is, then nature had to be able to do its own creating. That implies the existence of a naturalistic evolutionary process capable of making very complex things from simple beginnings. The process must be unguided at first, because a mind capable of guiding evolution would itself have to evolve from non-living matter. Once human beings have evolved, of course, evolution can become a guided process, through practice of eugenics and genetic engineering.

Given these assumptions, something at least roughly like Darwinism simply has to be true, regardless of the evidence. Evolution has to start with chance or random changes, and it has to have some mindless guiding force capable of producing the wonders of complex engineering that we call organisms. That is why Richard Dawkins has argued in lectures that, if complex life exists on other planets, Darwinian evolution would have to be responsible for it. There is no need for evidence or observations, because the Darwinian mechanism is the only plausible candidate for the job, given the starting point in naturalism. This logic explains why Darwinists are unperturbed by all the evidentiary problems that critics such as myself have identified. The theory has to be true regardless, because otherwise we would be without a materialistic explanation for life’s complexity and we would have to turn to God. This logic has been succinctly encapsulated in a paragraph from a 1997 essay by the leading geneticist Richard Lewontin:

We take the side of science *in spite of* the patent absurdity of some of its constructs, *in spite of* its failure to fulfill many of its extravagant promises of health and life, *in spite of* the tolerance of the scientific community for unsubstantiated just-so stories, because we have a prior commitment, a commitment to materialism. It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us to accept a material explanation of the phenomenal world, but, on the contrary, that we are forced by our *a priori* adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counterintuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated. Moreover, that materialism is absolute, for we cannot allow a Divine Foot in the door.<sup>7</sup>

There is no need to say more. We can see the profound truth of Fr. Seraphim's comment that "EVOLUTION WOULD NEVER HAVE BEEN THOUGHT OF BY MEN WHO BELIEVE IN THE GOD WHOM ORTHODOX CHRISTIANS WORSHIP" (emphasis in the original).<sup>\*</sup> Once the Divine Foot is in the door, there is no reason to postulate either legions of unobservable fossil ancestors, or a mindless material process that performs wonders of creation.

#### 4. Conclusion:

##### *Can Science Tell Us a True Story about Origins?*

Criticisms of evolutionary theory, however valid, cannot answer the most important question. If we wish to know the truth about origins, should we rely primarily upon Divine revelation or scientific investigation? Fr. Seraphim, like many creationists, believed that science was impotent when it comes to the subject of ultimate origins, and that true knowledge on this subject can only come from revelation. His reason was that the events of the Genesis creation week took place under a unique set of laws, laws which were entirely different from those which have operated since the Fall.

---

<sup>\*</sup> On the inherent godlessness of Darwinian evolution, see also pp. 36–37n above and p. 607 below.—ED.

## INTRODUCTION

If true, that conclusion implies that the entire subject of origins is outside of scientific investigation. Science can only observe what is going on in the world today, and can draw inferences about the remote past only by assuming a uniformity over time of physical processes and physical laws. That is why evolutionary scientists, for example, assume that the process that created plants and animals in the first place is fundamentally the same process of small-scale variation we can observe today in the living world. There may be little evidence to support that assumption, but without it a science of origins would be helpless. Conceivably, there may have been some very unDarwinian creative evolutionary process operating in the distant past, which employed mechanisms which are no longer in operation today. Such a process would be nearly as unacceptable to scientific materialists as outright creationism, because a mechanism which is in principle unobservable is as inaccessible to scientific study as a miracle.

Science could discard the Darwinian theory without serious loss if there were at hand another materialistic theory, one likewise based on uniformitarian and naturalistic assumptions. But what if there *is* no alternative theory, or at least no theory with enough factual support to command widespread acceptance? Scientists who want to explain everything will always insist on making assumptions that permit them to achieve their grand objective, and they will always be extremely reluctant to admit that their methods may be inadequate to explain the mysteries of creation. Science does not like to tolerate rival ways of understanding, and hence ambitious scientists will bitterly denounce those religious thinkers who raise the possibility that physical laws and processes have profoundly changed since the time of creation. Fr. Seraaphim was not intimidated by that sort of denunciation, nor should others be. Uniformitarianism, like naturalism, is a philosophical assumption, not a fact. It is perfectly rational to make other assumptions, including assumptions that point to the conclusion that we can only have knowledge about origins if God has chosen to reveal it to us.

July 1997\*

Berkeley, California

---

\* A few annotations were later made or updated by the author.—ED.

PART I

*An Orthodox  
Patristic Commentary  
on Genesis*



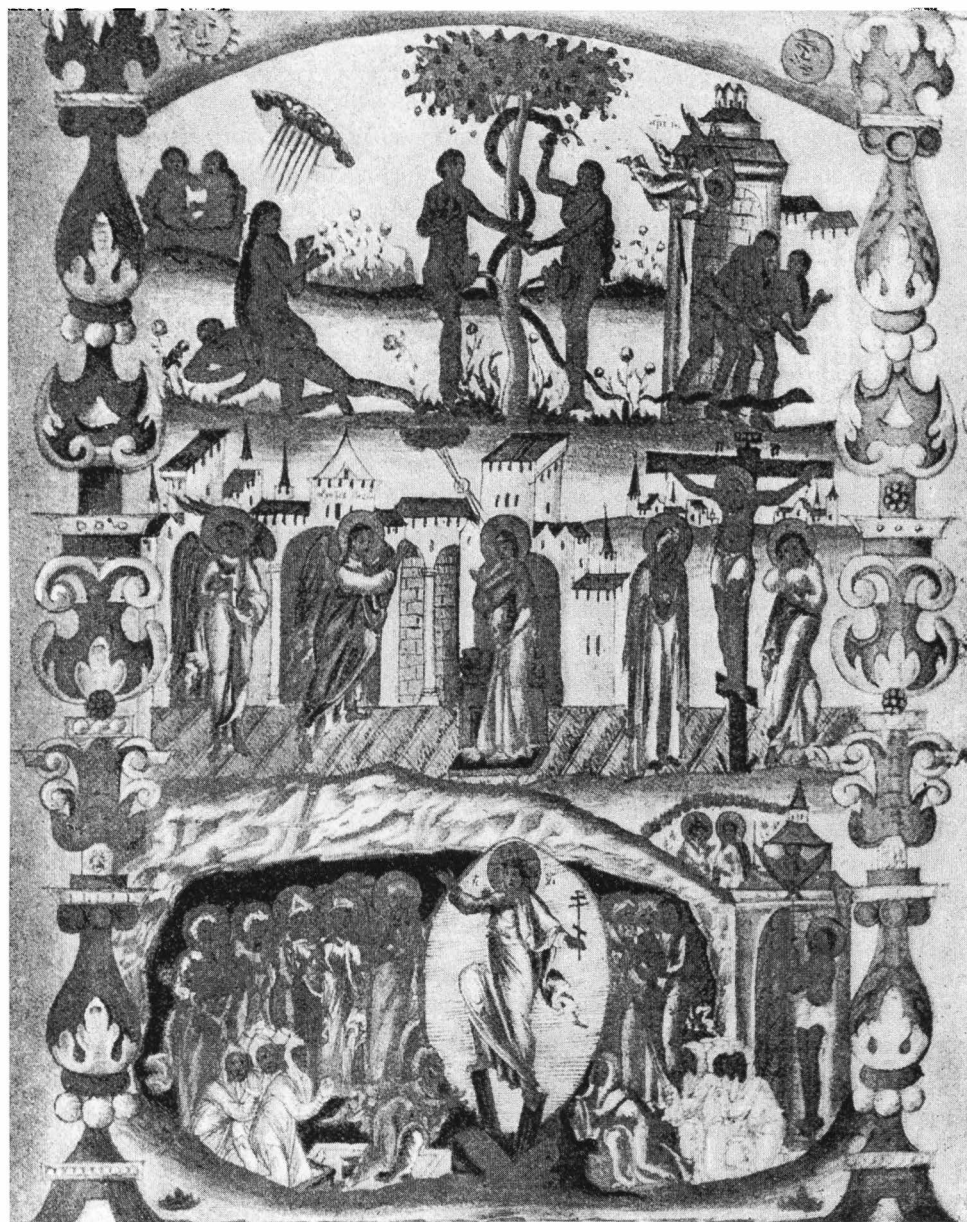


Icon of the Prophet Moses, author of the book of Genesis, painted on the walls of the Christian catacombs in Rome, second century A.D.

## EDITOR'S NOTE

*This commentary has been taken primarily from Fr. Seraphim's original manuscript, which he wrote in preparation for his course on Genesis at the New Valaam Theological Academy summer sessions in 1981 and 1982. During the oral delivery of his course, which was tape-recorded, he extemporaneously added valuable insights which were not in the manuscript. Not wanting to deprive the reader of this extra material, we have included much of it in the Commentary, both in the main text and in the footnotes (identified as author's notes [—AUTH.], as distinct from editor's notes [—ED.]). For this reason, the text at times changes from a polished to a more colloquial tone.*

*We have also included transcripts of Fr. Seraphim's tape-recorded question-and-answer sessions with his students during the Genesis course. These are found in chapter 10 below.*



Icon of the Creation and Redemption, showing the creation of Eve, the fall, the expulsion from Paradise, the Annunciation, the Crucifixion of Christ, Christ's Resurrection and descent into hell, and the entry of man into the Kingdom of Heaven. Icon from the Monastery of St. Anthony of Siya, Russia, printed in *Russkiy palomnik* (Russian pilgrim), no. 10, 1895.

## FOREWORD

# *Why Study the Book of Genesis?*

WHY SHOULD WE study such a book as Genesis? Why shouldn't we just be concerned to save our souls, instead of thinking about these things, like what is the world going to be like at the end, or what was it like at the beginning? We might get into trouble—Carl Sagan might come and fight with us.\* Isn't it safer to just occupy ourselves with saying our prayers, and not think about these great subjects? Why think about these remote things when we have to think about our salvation?

I've heard phrases like these. In answer to them, we can say, first of all, that *there is a direct relation between how you behave and how you believe about man's origin*. Fr. George Calciu, in his public addresses to young people living under Communism in Romania, said: "You have been told that you descend from the apes, that you are a beast which must be trained."<sup>1</sup>\*\* That can be a very powerful thing: "Science

---

\* In a letter of 1981, Fr. Seraphim remarked on Carl Sagan's *Cosmos* television series and book: "One of our subscribers just sent us a clipping about this, which seems to be much in the air now, and it seems typical of the way evolution is preached today as dogma and almost religion."—ED.

\*\* At the time Fr. Seraphim gave this lecture, Fr. George Calciu was in prison in Communist Romania for delivering his homilies to the youth. Inspired by Fr. George's heroism and moved by his words, Fr. Seraphim later published the homilies in *The Orthodox Word*. In 1984 Fr. George was released from prison, and in 2006 he reposed in America. Having endured a total of twenty-one years in Communist prisons for his faith, he is remembered as a modern-day Confessor of Orthodox Christianity, as well as a righteous pastor of Christ's flock. Other comments by Fr. George on the subject of evolution are quoted on pp. 818–21 below.—ED.

proves we're just animals, and therefore, let's go out and blow up a church."\*

Secondly, *the book of Genesis is a part of the Scriptures, and God gave us the Scriptures for our salvation*. We're supposed to know the meaning of the Scriptures through all the commentaries of the Holy Fathers. The Fathers talked about the book of Genesis in church; all their commentaries were actually sermons given in church, because the book of Genesis is read in church on all weekdays during Great Lent. The great Fathers who did this were St. John Chrysostom, St. Basil the Great, and St. Ambrose of Milan. Their sermons were taken down in shorthand by people who were in church listening to them, so that others could read them. Thus, the reading of these texts was considered a part of the everyday life of people who went to church. We have somewhat lost this idea nowadays. Therefore, the account of Genesis or the Apocalypse has become a very mysterious realm somehow. We are so scared of these subjects—but the Fathers were talking about them.

Finally (this is the big point): *our Christianity is a religion which tells us about what we are going to be doing in eternal life*. It is to prepare us for something eternal, *not of this world* (cf. John 18:36). If we think only about *this* world, our horizon is very limited, and we don't know what is after death, where we came from, where we're going, what is the purpose of life. When we talk about the *beginning* of things, or the *end* of things, we find out what our whole life is about.

---

\* St. Barsanuphius of Optina (1845–1913) made a similar observation in one of his spiritual talks; see pp. 795–96 below.—ED.

## CHAPTER ONE

# *How to Read Genesis*

### *1. Approach*

IN A SENSE, none of us knows how to approach this book. Modern science and philosophy have filled our minds with so many theories and supposed facts about the beginnings of the universe and man that we inevitably come to this book with preconceived notions. Some want it to agree with their particular scientific theories; others look for it to disagree. Both of these look to it as having something scientific to say; but others look on it as sheer poetry, a product of religious imagination having nothing to do with science.

The central question that causes our difficulties in understanding this book is: how “literally” are we to read it?

Some Protestant fundamentalists tell us it is all (or virtually all) “literal.” But such a view places us in some impossible difficulties: quite apart from our literal or non-literal interpretation of various passages, the very nature of the reality which is described in the first chapters of Genesis (the very creation of all things) makes it quite impossible for *everything* to be understood “literally”; we don’t even have words, for example, to describe “literally” how something can come out of nothing. How does God “speak”?—does He make a noise which resounds in an atmosphere that doesn’t yet exist? This explanation is obviously a little too simple—the reality is more complex.\*

Then there is the opposite extreme. Some people would like to interpret this book (at least the earliest chapters which give the most

---

\* On references to God “speaking” in the first chapter of Genesis, see the teaching of St. Basil the Great on pp. 145–46 below.—Ed.

difficulty) as being an allegory, a poetic way of describing something that is really much closer to our experience. Roman Catholic thinkers in recent years, for example, have come up with some ingenious ways of “explaining away” Paradise and the fall of man; but in reading these interpretations one has the impression that they have so little respect for the text of Genesis that they treat it as a primitive commentary on some recent scientific theories.\* This is also an extreme. St. John Damascene, the eighth-century Father whose views generally sum up the Patristic opinion of the first Christian centuries, specifically states that the allegorical interpretation of Paradise is part of an early heresy and does not belong to the Church.<sup>1\*\*</sup>

One encounters often today a common way out between these two views. The statement of a Roman Catholic nun (who is also a teacher) was recently publicized widely under the title: “God helped create evolution.” She says: “The biblical story of creation has a religious purpose. It contains, but does not teach, errors. The evolutionary theory of creation, in contrast, has a scientific purpose, and the search for truth is the province of astronomers, geologists, biologists, and the like. Those two purposes are distinct, and both offer truth to the human mind and heart.” She states that Genesis comes from oral traditions which were limited by the scientific views of that time.

According to this view, Genesis belongs in one category, and scientific truth or reality in another; Genesis has little if anything to do with any kind of truth, whether literal or allegorical. Therefore, one doesn’t really need to think about the question: you read Genesis for spiritual uplift or poetry, and the scientists will tell you what you need to know about the facts of the world’s and man’s beginning.

In one form or another this is a very common view today—but what it actually amounts to is a failure to look at the question at all; it does not take Genesis seriously. But our very purpose in studying Genesis is to take it seriously, to see what it actually says. None of these

---

\* There are other contemporary Roman Catholic thinkers, however, who hold to a more traditional reading of the Genesis narrative. See p. 571n below.—Ed.

\*\* See the quotations of St. John Damascene and, before him, St. Epiphanius of Salamis on p. 446, 446n below.—Ed.

approaches we have mentioned can do this. We must look elsewhere for the “key” to understanding Genesis.

In approaching Genesis we must try to avoid pitfalls such as we have mentioned above by a certain degree of self-awareness: what kind of prejudices or predispositions might we have in approaching the text?

We have already mentioned that some of us may be too anxious to have the meaning of Genesis agree (or disagree) with some particular scientific theory. Let us state a more general principle as to how we, with our twentieth-century mentality, tend to do this. In reaction to the extreme literalness of our scientific outlook (a literalness which is required by the very nature of science), when we turn to non-scientific texts of literature or theology we are very much predisposed to find non-literal or “universal” meanings. And this is natural: we want to save these texts from appearing ridiculous in the eyes of scientifically trained men. But we must realize that with this predisposition we often leap to conclusions which we have not really thought over very seriously.

To take an obvious example: When we hear of the “Six Days” of Creation, most of us automatically adjust these “days” to accord with what contemporary science teaches of the gradual growth and development of creatures. “These must be some indefinitely long periods of time—millions or billions of years,” our twentieth-century mind tells us; “all those geological strata, all those fossils—they couldn’t have been formed in a literal ‘day.’”<sup>\*</sup> And if we hear that a fundamentalist in Texas or southern California is once more loudly insisting that these days are positively twenty-four hours long and no longer, we can even become indignant and wonder how people can be so dense and anti-scientific.

In this course I don’t intend to tell you how long those days were. But I think we should be aware that our natural, almost subconscious

---

<sup>\*</sup> The identification of the Six Days of Creation with vast ages—now known as the Day-Age theory—is indeed a modern concept, first promoted in nineteenth-century Scotland (see pp. 546n, 663, 663–64n, 668–69, 668–69n below). Some Christians of our own times have attempted to find this idea in the writings of the early Fathers, but a careful examination of the Patristic writings they cite reveals that the Fathers taught no such doctrine (see p. 546n).—ED.



tendency to regard them as indefinitely long periods, thereby thinking that we have solved the “problem” they present, is not really a thought-out answer to this problem, but more of a predisposition or prejudice which we have picked up out of the intellectual air in which we live.\* When we look at these “days” more closely, however, we will see that the whole question is not so simple and that our natural predisposition in this as in many other cases tends more to cloud than to clarify the real question.

We will look at this specific question later. For now I would urge us to be not too certain of our accustomed ways of looking at Genesis, and to open ourselves to the wisdom of the God-bearing men of the past who have devoted so much intellectual effort to understanding the text of Genesis as it was meant to be understood. These Holy Fathers are our key to understanding Genesis.

## *2. The Holy Fathers: Our Key to the Understanding of Genesis*

In the Holy Fathers we find the “mind of the Church”—the living understanding of God’s revelation. They are our link between the ancient texts which contain God’s revelation and today’s reality. Without such a link it is every man for himself—and the result is a myriad of interpretations and sects.

There are many Patristic commentaries on Genesis. This already is an indication to us that this text is considered extremely important by the Fathers of the Church. Let us look now at which Fathers talked about this text and what books they wrote.

In this course I will make use primarily of four commentaries of the early Fathers:

1. St. John Chrysostom wrote a larger and smaller commentary on the whole book of Genesis. The larger, called *Homilies on Genesis*, was

---

\*This common error was even made by a traditional Orthodox thinker whom Fr. Seraphim greatly respected: I. M. Andreyev (1894–1976), in his book *Orthodox Apologetic Theology* (1955). In a letter of July 3/16, 1977, Fr. Seraphim wrote: “I would say that his [Andreyev’s] simple equation of ‘days’ with ‘periods’ is too loose.”—ED.

actually a course of lectures delivered during Great Lent, since during Lent the book of Genesis is read in church. This book contains sixty-seven homilies and is some seven hundred pages long. Another year, St. John delivered eight other homilies, comprising several hundred more pages.\* He also wrote a treatise called *On the Creation of the World*, over a hundred pages long. Thus, in St. John Chrysostom we have a thousand pages or more of interpretation of Genesis. He is one of the main interpreters of this book.

2. St. Ephraim the Syrian, from about the same time as St. John Chrysostom, also has a commentary on the whole book. In his work, called simply *Interpretation of the Books of the Bible*, several hundred pages are devoted to Genesis. St. Ephraim is valued as an Old Testament interpreter because he knew Hebrew, was an “Easterner” (i.e., of an Eastern mentality), and knew sciences.

3. St. Basil the Great gave homilies\*\* on the Six Days of Creation, called the *Hexaemeron*—meaning “Six Days.” There are other *Hexaemera* in the literature of the early Church, some going back to the second century. St. Basil’s, one might say, is the most authoritative.\*\*\* It does not cover the whole of Genesis, but only the first chapter. Another book by him which we will quote is called *On the Origin of Man*, which is like a continuation of the *Hexaemeron*.

4. In the West, St. Ambrose of Milan read St. Basil’s homilies and

---

\* St. John Chrysostom’s *Eight Homilies on Genesis* were delivered during Great Lent in 386. His sixty-seven *Homilies on Genesis* were delivered in 388 or 389.—ED.

\*\* “Homilies” usually means they were delivered in church, where the people stood and listened.—AUTH.

\*\*\* St. Basil’s *Hexaemeron* was held in high esteem in the ancient Church. St. Gregory the Theologian wrote of it: “When I take his [Basil’s] *Hexaemeron* in my hand and read it aloud, I am with my Creator, I understand the reasons for creation, and I admire my Creator more than I formerly did when I used sight alone as my teacher” (*Oration 43: Panegyric on St. Basil* 67, SC 384.272, NPNF 2 7, pp. 417–18\*). St. Basil’s brother, St. Gregory of Nyssa, called the work “a divinely inspired study by our father [Basil], whose exposition everyone treasures as not being inferior to what Moses taught” (St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Apologia to His Brother Peter on the Hexaemeron*, GNO 4.1.6, trans. Richard McCambley).—ED.

wrote homilies on the Six Days himself.\* His *Hexaemeron* is quite a bit longer, about three hundred pages.\*\* St. Ambrose also wrote a whole book on Paradise, a continuation of the *Hexaemeron*, as well as a book on Cain and Abel.

In addition to these basic commentaries, we will look at a number of books which do not go into the whole book of Genesis or into the whole of the Six Days. For example, the brother of St. Basil, St. Gregory of Nyssa, has a book *On the Making of Man*, which goes into detail about the end of the first chapter and the beginning of the second chapter of Genesis.

I have also made use of outlines of Orthodox dogma. The book of St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith*, contains many chapters on questions about the Six Days, the creation of man, the fall, Paradise, and so forth. The catechisms of the early Church—the *Great Catechism* [*Catechetical Oration*] of St. Gregory of Nyssa and the *Catechetical Lectures* of St. Cyril of Jerusalem—also have a few details on these questions.

On one specific question of the Patristic worldview I have used the treatises on the Resurrection by Sts. Athanasius the Great, Gregory of Nyssa, and Ambrose of Milan.

St. Symeon the New Theologian has written homilies on Adam, the fall and the early world, which we have in English in the book *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption*\*\*\*

Then there are various writings of St. Gregory the Theologian about the creation of man, about man's nature and his soul. St. Macarius the Great, St. Abba Dorotheus, St. Isaac the Syrian, and

---

\* St. Ambrose's homilies were probably delivered in 387, about seventeen years after St. Basil's.—ED.

\*\* Here we can see how, when one Father speaks specifically on one passage, another Father will perhaps say something in detail about a different passage. If you keep it all together, you get a very good overview of how the mind of the Church, how the Fathers in general look at these passages. You might find a disagreement over some little interpretation, some small point, but concerning the big points you will see they all say the same thing in different ways, that they are quite in harmony over how to interpret the book of Genesis.—AUTH.

\*\*\* Later published under the title *The First-Created Man* (hereafter, FCM).—ED.

other writers of the ascetic life often talk about Adam and the fall. Since the basic aim of the ascetic life is to return to the state of Adam before the fall, they write about what the fall means, what Paradise was, and what it is we are trying to get back to.

Blessed Augustine touches on the subject of Genesis in *The City of God*;<sup>\*</sup> St. Gregory Palamas writes on various aspects in his apologetic works; and St. Gregory the Sinaite writes on Paradise as well.

(There are also some later commentaries which I have not seen,

---

\* Blessed Augustine also wrote a lengthy work on the subject, *The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, which contains some ideas that are at variance with the Patristic consensus. Fr. Seraphim was aware of the existence of this work, but said he had not seen it (see p. 283 below); in 1982, the year of his repose, it appeared in English in the Ancient Christian Writers series. In this work Blessed Augustine suggested (but did not insist) that the Six Days of Creation were a literary device to describe the totally instantaneous creation of everything in the cosmos. (On this, see pp. 140–41n below.)

Other of Blessed Augustine's teachings had deficiencies as well, due to his tendency to over-rationalize. Fr. Seraphim wrote that "some of his writings, such as his anti-Pelagian treatises *On the Trinity*, are read only with caution" (Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Place of Blessed Augustine in the Orthodox Church*, p. 76). It should be added, however, that Blessed Augustine's errors have never caused him to be regarded as a heretic by the Orthodox Church, which, as noted above, honors him primarily as a Father of piety and moral instruction (on the basis of his non-dogmatic works like *The Confessions* and *The Soliloquies*), while not accepting his theological exaggerations (see *ibid.*, pp. 79–81).

It should also be mentioned that, even where Blessed Augustine's interpretation of Genesis is questionable, it is not compatible with evolutionism or an "old-earth" view, as some modern-day scholars have claimed. Augustine maintained that the cosmos was created in about 5500 B.C. and he refuted those who said it was older (see p. 314n below). Further, he stressed that Adam and Eve were specially created rather than born, that the capacities of creatures are incapable of producing anything new, that the originally created kinds of beings are fixed, and that the transformation from one kind into another is impossible (see Blessed Augustine, *The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, 3.12, 5.20, 5.23, 6.2, 6.15, 9.17, in ACW 41, pp. 87, 171, 176, 179, 196, and ACW 42, p. 92; Jonathan Wells, "Abusing Theology: Howard Van Till's 'Forgotten Doctrine of Creation's Functional Integrity,'" *Origins & Design*, vol. 19, no. 1 [1998], pp. 16–20; Etienne Gilson, *The Christian Philosophy of St. Augustine*, pp. 207, 240, 365; Christopher J. O'Toole, *The Philosophy of Creation in the Writings of St. Augustine*, p. 81; Eugene TeSelle, *Augustine the Theologian*, p. 218).—ED.

unfortunately. One is by St. John of Kronstadt on the *Hexaemeron*, and another is by Metropolitan Philaret of Moscow on Genesis.)\*

These Fathers don't give us all the answers to questions we may have about Genesis; we read them rather to get our *attitude* toward Genesis. Sometimes Fathers may seem to contradict each other or to speak in a way we might not consider very useful for the questions we have today. Therefore we must have some basic principles which govern our understanding *both* of Genesis and the Holy Fathers.

### 3. Basic Principles of Our Approach to Understanding Genesis

1. We are seeking *truth*. We must respect the text of Genesis enough to recognize that it contains truth, even though that truth may seem unusual or surprising to us. If it seems to conflict with what we think we know from science, let us remember that God is the Author of all truth, and anything genuinely true in Scripture cannot contradict anything that is genuinely true in science.

2. The Scripture is *Divine* in inspiration. We will look more closely below at what this means; but for a beginning, it means that we must look in it for truths of a high order, and if we find difficulty in understanding anything we should suspect first our own lack of knowledge rather than a deficiency in the inspired text.

3. We should not hasten to offer our own explanations of "difficult" passages, but should first try to familiarize ourselves with what the Holy Fathers have said about these passages, recognizing that they have spiritual wisdom that we lack.

4. We should also beware of the temptation to seize on isolated, out-of-context quotes from the Holy Fathers to "prove" a point one

---

\* St. John of Kronstadt (1829–1908) was an outstanding pastor, miracle-worker, and spiritual writer of the Russian Orthodox Church. His work *Talks on the Days of Creation* (in Russian) was published in 1893 as part of his collected works. See pp. 183–84n, 502, 794–95, 951 below.

St. Philaret (Drozdov), Metropolitan of Moscow (1782–1867), was one of the greatest theological writers of the Russian Orthodox Church. His *Commentary on the Book of Genesis* (in Russian) was first published shortly before his repose. He was glorified as a saint in 1995. See pp. 141n, 157n, 704, 950 below.—Ed.

would like to make. For example, I have seen an Orthodox person, wishing to prove that there was nothing “special” about the creation of Adam, quote the following statement from St. Athanasius the Great: “The first-created man was made of dust like everyone, and the hand which created Adam then is creating also and always those who come after him.” This is a general statement about God’s continuous creative activity which no one would think of contradicting.\* But the point this person wanted to make was that there was no real distinction between the creation of every living man and the creation of the first man—and specifically, that the body of Adam could have been formed by natural generation in the womb of some not-quite-human creature.\*\* Can such a statement legitimately be used as a “proof” on this question?

It so happens that we can find a passage in the works of St. Athanasius that specifically refutes this idea. In another place he says: “Though Adam only was formed out of earth, yet in him was involved the succession of the whole race.”<sup>2</sup> Here he quite specifically

---

\* Without God’s continuous creative effort, nothing would exist or come into being. We think it is “natural” that plants grow from a seed, that everything, in fact, comes from a small seed and grows into a full individual. But without God, this process cannot continue. So of course God is still creating today, “from the dust.”—AUTH.

\*\* The person who tried to make this point was Fr. Seraphim’s correspondent Dr. Alexander Kalomiros. Fr. Seraphim quoted the above statement of St. Athanasius from a letter he had received from Dr. Kalomiros, who had translated it from the Greek (PG 25b.429C; also in AW 2.1.8). Not knowing the work from which this statement came, Fr. Seraphim was not able to check the translation or the context of the passage. As it turns out, the passage—from St. Athanasius’ *Defense of the Nicene Definition (De decretis)* 8—had been paraphrased and condensed by Kalomiros from a longer passage. The actual passage, properly translated, reads as follows: “Adam alone came to be by God alone, through the Word. Yet, for all that, no one would say that Adam had any precedence over all other people or that he was different from those after him, even if he alone was made and fashioned by God alone while all of us came to be from Adam and were constituted through the succession of the race. This makes no difference, so long as he was fashioned from the earth, and at first did not exist but later came to be” (trans. Khaled Anatolios, p. 186\*; also in NPNF 2 4, p. 155). As can be seen, the actual passage contradicts the idea that Kalomiros tried to extrapolate from it, and confirms what Fr. Seraphim goes on to say about St. Athanasius’ intended meaning, in light of the Saint’s other writings.—ED.

states that Adam was created in a way different from all other men, which indeed, as we shall see, is the teaching of the Holy Fathers in general. Therefore, it is illegitimate to take one quote of his and think that it proves or opens the way to some favorite idea of our own. St. Athanasius' *general* statement about the nature of man says nothing whatever about the *specific* nature of Adam's creation.

Such a misuse of quotations from the Holy Fathers is a very common pitfall in our days when polemics on such subjects are often very passionate. In this course we will try our best to avoid such pitfalls by not forcing any of our own interpretations on the Holy Fathers, but simply trying to see what they say themselves.

5. We do not need to accept every word the Fathers wrote on Genesis; sometimes they made use of the science of their time for illustrative material, and this science was mistaken in some points. But we should carefully distinguish their science from their theological statements, and we should respect their whole approach and general conclusions and theological insights.

6. If we ourselves think we can add something to the understanding of the text for our days (perhaps based on the findings of modern science), let it be done cautiously and with full respect for the integrity of the text of Genesis and the opinions of the Holy Fathers. And we should always be *humble* in this attempt—the science of our own days also has its failings and mistakes, and if we rely too much on it we may find ourselves with wrong understandings.\*

7. Specifically in this course we will be trying first to understand the Fathers, and only *then* to offer our own answers to some questions, if we have them.

8. Finally, if it is true that modern science is capable of throwing some light on the understanding of at least a few passages of Gene-

---

\* It is a very common view among people who do not go too deeply into the question that "ancient science is wrong, modern science is right, and therefore we can trust everything the modern scientists tell us." But it so happens that one generation overthrows the so-called scientific facts of the preceding generation. We have to realize what is fact and what is theory. Contemporary science has many views which, fifty years from now (if they even last that long), will be overturned, and there will be new theories.—AUTH.

sis—for we do not need to deny that in some areas the truths of these two spheres overlap—I think that it is no less true that the Patristic understanding of Genesis is also capable of throwing light on modern science and gives some hints on how to understand the facts of geology, paleontology, and other sciences concerned with the early history of the earth and of mankind. This study can therefore be a fruitful one in both directions.

9. The aim of this course, however, is not to answer *all* questions about Genesis and creation, but rather, first of all, to inspire Orthodox Christians to think about this subject in a broader way than it is usually approached, without being satisfied with the simplistic answers that are so often heard.

### *4. Literal vs. Symbolical Interpretations*

This question is a great stumbling block for us modern men, who have been brought up with a “scientific” education and worldview which has left us impoverished in our understanding of symbolical meanings in literature. Too often, as a result of this, we jump to conclusions: if there is a symbolical meaning to some image in Scripture (for example, the tree of the knowledge of good and evil) we are very inclined to say “it’s *only* a symbol”; the slightest indication of a figurative or metaphorical meaning often leads us to dismiss the *literal* meaning. Sometimes this attitude can even lead to sweeping judgments of whole portions or books of Scripture: If there are symbolical or figurative elements, for example, in the Genesis narrative of the Garden of Eden, we easily jump to the conclusion that the whole narrative is a “symbol” or an “allegory.”

Our key to understanding Genesis is: how did the Holy Fathers understand this question, specifically with regard to separate passages, and generally with regard to the book as a whole?

Let us take some examples:

1. St. Macarius the Great of Egypt, a Saint of the most exalted mystical life and whom one certainly cannot suspect of overly literal views of Scripture, writes on Genesis 3:24: “That Paradise was closed and that a Cherubim was commanded to prevent man from entering it



by a flaming sword: of this we believe that in visible fashion it was indeed just as it is written, and at the same time we find that this occurs mystically in every soul.”<sup>3</sup> This is a passage which many of us might have expected to have *only* a mystical meaning, but this great seer of Divine things assures us that it is also true “just as it is written”—for those capable of seeing it.

2. St. Gregory the Theologian, noted for his profound mystical interpretations of Scripture, says of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil: “This tree was, according to my view, Contemplation, upon which it is only safe for those who have reached maturity of habit to enter.”<sup>4</sup> Does this mean that he regarded this tree as *only* a symbol, and not also a literal tree? In his own writings he apparently does not give an answer to this question, but another great Holy Father does (for when they are teaching Orthodox doctrine and not just giving private opinions, all the great Fathers agree with each other and even help to interpret each other). St. Gregory Palamas, the fourteenth-century hesychast Father,\* comments on this passage:

Gregory the Theologian has called the tree of the knowledge of good and evil “contemplation” ... but it does not follow that what is involved is an illusion or a symbol without existence of its own. For the divine Maximus [the Confessor] also makes Moses the symbol of judgment, and Elijah the symbol of foresight! Are they too then supposed not to have really existed, but to have been invented “symbolically”?<sup>5</sup>

3. These are specific interpretations. As for general approaches to the “literal” or “symbolical” nature of the text of Genesis, let us look at the words of several other Holy Fathers who have written commentaries on Genesis. St. Basil the Great in his *Hexaemeron* writes:

Those who do not admit the common meaning of the Scriptures say that water is not water, but some other nature, and they explain a

---

\* Hesychasts are those living in stillness and continuous noetic prayer. See pp. 944–47 below.—ED.

plant and a fish according to their opinion.... [But] when I hear “grass,” I think of grass, and in the same manner I understand everything as it is said, a plant, a fish, a wild animal, and an ox. Indeed, “I am not ashamed of the Gospel” (Rom. 1:16).... [Some] have attempted by false arguments and allegorical interpretations to bestow on the Scripture a dignity of their own imagining. But theirs is the attitude of one who considers himself wiser than the revelations of the Spirit and introduces his own ideas in pretense of an explanation. Therefore, let it be understood as it has been written.<sup>6\*</sup>

4. St. Ephraim the Syrian tells us similarly in the *Commentary on Genesis*:

No one should think that the Creation of Six Days is an allegory; it is likewise impermissible to say that what seems, according to the account, to have been created in the course of six days, was created in a single instant, and likewise that certain names presented in this account either signify nothing, or signify something else. On the contrary, one must know that just as the heaven and the earth which were created in the beginning are actually the heaven and the earth and not something else understood under the names of heaven and earth, so also everything else that is spoken of as being created and brought into order after the creation of heaven and earth is not empty names, but the very essence of the created natures corresponds to the force of these names.<sup>7</sup>

---

\* In other places of his *Hexaemeron*, St. Basil again refutes attempts to reduce elements of the Genesis narrative to mere symbols. As against the notion that the “darkness” mentioned in Genesis 1:2–5 is not “a place deprived of light” but rather “an evil power, or evil itself,” he wrote: “Let us accept the concept of darkness simply and without curiosity, following the meaning of Scripture” (*Hexaemeron* 2.4–5, FC 46, pp. 26–29). Later, rejecting the idea that the “waters which were above the firmament” are the good angels while the “waters which were under the firmament” (Gen. 1:7) are the fallen angels, the Saint affirms: “Dismissing such explanations as dream interpretations and old women’s tales, let us consider water as water, and let us receive the separation that was made beneath the firmament according to the reason given us” (ibid. 3.9, p. 52).—ED.

5. St. John Chrysostom, speaking specifically of the rivers of Paradise, writes:

Perhaps those who love to speak from their own wisdom here also will not allow that the rivers are actually rivers, nor that the waters are precisely waters, but will instill, in those who decide to listen to them, the idea that they (under the names of rivers and waters) represented something else. But I entreat you, let us not pay heed to these people, let us stop up our hearing against them, and let us believe the Divine Scripture, and following what is written in it, let us strive to preserve in our souls sound dogmas.<sup>8</sup>

This shows that the Holy Fathers were facing this question in their day, in the fourth century. There were many people who were interpreting the text of Genesis as an allegory, running wild with symbolical interpretations, and denying that it has any literal meaning at all—especially the first three chapters we will be studying. Therefore, the Holy Fathers made a specific point of saying it *has* a literal meaning, and we must understand exactly what that meaning is.

This should be enough to show us that the Holy Fathers who wrote on Genesis were in general quite “literal” in their interpretation of the text, even while, in many cases, allowing *also* a symbolic or mystical meaning.\* There are, of course, in Scripture, as in every kind of

---

\* The approach that the Holy Fathers took to Genesis—regarding it as a Divinely inspired text that tells of actual, historical events and people, while at the same time drawing out spiritual meanings from it—was the same approach they took when interpreting other books of Scripture. Expressing the mind of the Church in his hermeneutics, St. John Chrysostom stated that events recorded in Scripture must be understood to have actually happened, although they might also be given a spiritual or typological meaning. Regarding Christ’s words “As Moses lifted up the serpent” (John 3:14, cf. Num. 21:9), for example, he wrote: “We must accept that this happened—it did happen, in fact—and what meaning comes from it, namely, a type of Christ” (St. John Chrysostom, *Commentary on the Psalms* 9, trans. Robert C. Hill, vol. 1, p. 185).

Likewise, Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, commenting on the Apostle Paul’s words that Hagar and Sarah were “allegorized” (ἀλληγορούμενα) types of the the Old the New

literature, obvious metaphors which no one in his right mind would think of taking “literally.” For example, in Psalm 103 it says, “The sun knoweth his going down.” With full respect for the text, we do not need to believe that the sun has a consciousness and literally “knows” when it is to set; this is simply a normal device of poetic language and should cause trouble to no one.

There is, further, one important kind of statement in Scripture—and there are many examples of it in Genesis—which the Holy Fathers tell us specifically *not* to understand in a literal way. These are anthropomorphic statements made of God *as though* He were a man who walks, talks, gets angry, etc. All such statements we are to understand in a “God-befitting” manner—that is, based on our knowledge from Orthodox teaching that God is purely spiritual, has no physical organs, and that His acts are described in Scripture *as they seem to us*.

---

Covenants (Gal. 4:24), explained that the Apostle “wrote this, not to reject the historical facts, but to relate the type to the reality” (*Questions on Joshua* 1, LEC 2, p. 261).

St. Cyril of Alexandria wrote that one cannot “apprehend rightly” the Scriptures if one attempts to contemplate their spiritual meaning without respecting the historical meaning: “Those who reject the historical meaning [*ἱστορία*] in the God-inspired Scriptures as something obsolete are avoiding the ability to apprehend rightly, according to the proper manner, the things written in them. For indeed spiritual contemplation is both good and profitable; and, in enlightening the eye of reason especially well, it reveals the wisest things. But whenever some historical events are presented to us by the Holy Scriptures, then in that instance, a useful search into the historical meaning [*ἱστορία*] is appropriate, in order that the God-inspired Scripture be revealed as salvific and beneficial to us in every way” (St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Commentary on the Prophet Isaiah* 1.4, PG 70.192AB).

St. Nilus of Sinai, a disciple of St. John Chrysostom, also stated emphatically that the historical meaning of Scripture must be maintained whenever a spiritual interpretation is given: “If something has been recorded in the Old or New Testament to have happened historically, and this or that deed was manifestly accomplished, and we interpret it for our own purposes, using ideas and thoughts for our own spiritual edification, do not suppose that we have disregarded the letter, or rejected the history. By no means! We neither condemn nor reject the perceptible event that has been committed to history. Since, however, we are [in] the world, we benefit today by interpreting everything that happened yesterday for our own purposes” (St. Nilus of Sinai, *Letter* 2.223, PG 79.316BC, quoted in Paul M. Blowers, *Exegesis and Spiritual Pedagogy in Maximus the Confessor: An Investigation of the Quaestiones ad Thalassium*, p. 115).—ED.

The Fathers are very careful over the text of Genesis in this regard. Thus, St. John Chrysostom states:

When you hear, beloved, that “God planted Paradise in Eden in the east,” understand the word “planted” befittingly of God: that is, that He commanded; but concerning the words that follow, believe precisely that Paradise was created and in that very place where the Scripture has assigned it.<sup>9</sup>

As for the “scientific” information given in the book of Genesis—and since it talks about the formation of the world we know, there cannot but be some scientific information there—contrary to popular belief, there is nothing “out-of-date” about it. Its observations, it is true, are all made *as seen from earth and as affecting mankind*; but they do not put forth any particular teaching, for example, on the nature of the heavenly bodies or their relative motions, and so the book can be read by each generation and understood in the light of its own scientific knowledge. The discovery in recent centuries of the vastness of space and the immensity of many of its heavenly bodies does nothing but add grandeur in our minds to the simple account of Genesis.

When the Holy Fathers talk about Genesis, of course, they try to illustrate it with examples taken from the natural science of their time; we do the same thing today. All this illustrative material is open to scientific criticism, and some of it, in fact, has become out-of-date. But the text of Genesis itself is unaffected by such criticism, and we can only wonder at how fresh and timely it is to each new generation. And the *theological* commentary of the Holy Fathers on the text partakes of this same quality.

### 5. *The Nature of the Text*

A final important point to consider before approaching the text of Genesis itself: *what kind of text is it?*

We all know of the anti-religious arguments about the Scripture,

and in particular about Genesis: that it is a creation of backward people who knew little of science or the world, that it is full of primitive mythology about “creator-gods” and supernatural beings, that it has all been taken from Babylonian mythology, etc. But no one can seriously compare Genesis with any of the creation myths of other peoples without being struck by the sobriety and simplicity of the Genesis account. Creation myths are indeed full of fabulous events and fairy-tale beings which are not even intended to be taken as the text is written. There is no competition between these texts and Genesis; they are not in the least comparable.

Nonetheless, there is a widespread popular view—without foundation either in Scripture or in Church tradition—that Moses wrote Genesis after consulting other early accounts of the creation, or that he simply recorded the oral traditions that came down to him; that he compiled and simplified the tales that had come down to his time. This, of course, would make Genesis a work of human wisdom and speculation, and it would be pointless to study such a work as a statement of truth about the beginning of the world.

There are different kinds of knowledge, and the knowledge that comes directly from God is quite distinct from that which proceeds from man’s natural powers. St. Isaac the Syrian distinguishes these kinds of knowledge in the following way:

Knowledge which is concerned with the visible, or which receives through the senses what comes from the visible, is called natural. Knowledge which is concerned with the power of the immaterial and the nature of incorporeal entities within a man is called spiritual, because perceptions are received by the spirit and not by the senses. Because of these two origins (perceptions of the visible and of the spiritual) each kind of knowledge alike comes to the soul from without. But the knowledge bestowed by Divine power is called supranatural; it is more unfathomable and is higher than knowledge. Contemplation of this knowledge comes to the soul not from matter, which is outside it... It manifests and reveals itself in the innermost depths of the soul itself, immaterially, suddenly, spontaneously,



The Holy Prophet and God-seer Moses  
(†1531 B.C.).

*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, Mount Athos, Greece,  
1545–1546.*

## HOW TO READ GENESIS

and unexpectedly, since, according to the words of Christ, “the Kingdom of God is within you” (Luke 17:21).<sup>10</sup>

St. Isaac in another place describes how, in men of the highest spiritual life, the soul can rise to a vision of the beginning of things. Describing how such a soul is enraptured at the thought of the future age of incorruption, St. Isaac writes:

And from this one is already exalted in his mind to that which preceded the composition (making) of the world, when there was no creature, nor heaven, nor earth, nor angels, nothing of that which was brought into being, and to how God, solely by His good will, suddenly brought everything from non-being into being, and everything stood before Him in perfection.<sup>11</sup>

Thus, one can believe that Moses and later chroniclers made use of written records and oral tradition when it came to recording the acts and chronology of historical Patriarchs and kings; but an account of the beginning of the world’s existence, when there were no witnesses to God’s mighty acts, can come only from God’s revelation; it is a supranatural knowledge revealed in direct contact with God.\* And this is exactly what the Fathers and Church tradition tell us the book of Genesis is.

St. Ambrose writes:

Moses spoke to God the Most High, not in a vision nor in dreams, but “mouth to mouth” (Num. 12:8). Plainly and clearly, not by figures nor by riddles (cf. *ibid.*), there was bestowed on him the gift of the Divine presence. And so Moses opened his mouth and uttered what the Lord spoke within him, according to the promise He made to him when He directed him to go to King Pharaoh: “Go therefore and I will open thy mouth and instruct thee what thou shouldest speak” (Ex. 4:12). For, if he had already accepted from God what he

---

\* The book of Exodus recounts two occasions on which God Himself said to Moses: “In six days the Lord made heaven and earth” (Ex. 20:11, 31:17).—ED.





The Prophet Moses receiving his first revelation of God, at Mount Horeb  
(Ex. 3:1–5). At top, the vision of Paradise.

*Russian fresco of the sixteenth century.*



The Prophet Moses on Mount Sinai, receiving from God the Tables of the Law (Ex. 31:18). *Icon from Tours, Gaul (France), A.D. 840.*

should say concerning the liberation of the people, how much more should you accept what He should say concerning heaven? Therefore, “not in the persuasive words of wisdom,” not in philosophical fallacies, “but in the demonstration of the Spirit and power” (1 Cor. 2:4), he has ventured to say as if he were a witness of the Divine work: “In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.”<sup>12</sup>

In a similar vein, St. Basil writes at the very beginning of his *Hexameron*:

This man, who is made equal to the angels, being considered worthy of the sight of God face to face, reports to us those things which he heard from God.<sup>13</sup>



The Prophet Moses writing in Eden.  
*Frontispiece to the book of Genesis in the Bible of Leo Sakellarios,  
Constantinople, A.D. 940.*

St. John Chrysostom in his *Homilies on Genesis* comes back again and again to the statement that every word of the Scripture is Divinely inspired and has a profound meaning—that it is not Moses' words, but God's:

Let us see now what we are taught by the blessed Moses, who speaks not of himself but by the inspiration of the grace of the Spirit.<sup>14</sup>

He then has a fascinating description of how Moses does this. We know that the Old Testament prophets foretold the coming of the Messiah. In the book of the Apocalypse (Revelation), St. John the Theologian prophesied about the events of the end of the world and the future of the Church. How did they know what was going to happen? Obviously, God revealed it to them. St. John Chrysostom says that, just as St. John the Theologian was a prophet of things of the future, Moses was *a prophet of things of the past*. He says the following:

## HOW TO READ GENESIS

All the other prophets spoke either of what was to occur after a long time or of what was about to happen then; but he, the blessed [Moses], who lived many generations after (the creation of the world), was vouchsafed by the guidance of the right hand of the Most High to utter what had been done by the Lord before his own birth. It is for this reason that he begins to speak thus: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth," as if calling out to us all with a loud voice: it is not by the instruction of men that I say this; He Who called them (heaven and earth) out of non-being into being—it is He Who has roused my tongue to relate of them. And therefore I entreat you, let us pay heed to these words as if we heard not Moses but the very Lord of the universe Who speaks through the tongue of Moses, and let us take leave for good of our own opinions.<sup>15</sup>

Thus, we should approach the early chapters of Genesis as we would a book of prophecy, knowing that it is actual events being described, but knowing also that—because of their remoteness to us and because of their very nature as the very first events in the history of the world—we will be able to understand them only imperfectly, even as we have a very imperfect understanding of the events at the very end of the world as set forth in the Apocalypse and other New Testament Scriptures. St. John Chrysostom himself warns us not to think we understand too much about the creation:

With great gratitude let us accept what is related (by Moses), not stepping out of our own limitations, and not testing what is above us as the enemies of the truth did when, wishing to comprehend everything with their minds, they did not realize that human nature cannot comprehend the creation of God.<sup>16</sup>

Let us then try to enter the world of the Holy Fathers and their understanding of the Divinely inspired text of Genesis. Let us love and respect their writings, which in our confused times are a beacon of clarity which shines most clearly on the inspired text itself. Let us not be quick to think we "know better" than they, and if we think we have

some understanding they did not see, let us be humble and hesitant about offering it, knowing the poverty and fallibility of our own minds. Let them open our minds to understand God's revelation.

We should add here a final note about the study of Genesis in our own times. The Holy Fathers of the early Christians who wrote about the Six Days of Creation found it necessary at various points to take note of the non-Christian scientific or philosophical speculations of their days—such views, for example, as that the world is eternal, that it produced itself, that it was created out of preexisting matter by a limited fashioner-god (demiurge), and the like.\*

In our own times, too, there are non-Christian speculations about the beginnings of the universe, of life on earth, and the like, and we cannot help but touch on them at various points of our commentary. The most widespread such ideas today are those bound up with the so-called theory of evolution. We will have to discuss some of these ideas briefly, but in order to avoid misunderstandings let us state what we mean by this word.

The concept of "evolution" has many levels of application in both scientific and popular language: sometimes it is no more than a synonym for "development"; at other times it is used to describe the "variations" that occur within a species; and again, it describes real or hypothesized

---

\* In chapter 2 of his fourth-century work *On the Incarnation of the Word*, St. Athanasius the Great refuted all these non-Christian views. "Of the making of the universe and the creation of all things," he writes, "many have taken different views, and each man has laid down the law he pleased." The first such notion he rejects is that of the chance self-organization of matter: an idea that anticipates modern evolutionary naturalism. "Some say," he writes, "that all things have come into being of themselves [*αὐτομάτως*—automatically, spontaneously], and in chance fashion; as, for example, the Epicureans, who tell us in their self-contempt that universal Providence does not exist, speaking right in the face of obvious fact and experience. For if, as they say, everything had its beginning of itself, and independently of purpose, it would follow that everything would have come into mere being, so as to be alike and not distinct" (SC 199.262, NPNF 2 4, pp. 36–37). The Saint then goes on to argue against the idea of the Platonists that all things were created out of eternal matter, and the teaching of the heretics that they were created by a limited fashioner-god. On refutations of such false teachings by other Holy Fathers, see pp. 156–57n, 503–4n, 557n below.—ED.

changes in nature of a somewhat larger kind. In this course we will not have to be concerned with these kinds of “evolution,” which belong pretty much to the realm of scientific fact and its interpretation.

The only kind of “evolution” we will have to deal with is evolution as a “cosmogony”—that is, a theory about the origin of the world. This kind of theory of evolution occupies the same place for contemporary students of the book of Genesis as the ancient speculations on the origins of the world did for the early Church Fathers. There are those, of course, who will insist that even this kind of evolution is perfectly scientific; in fact, some of them are quite “dogmatic” about it. But any reasonably objective view will have to admit that the evolutionary cosmogony, unless it claims to be Divinely revealed, is just as speculative as any other theory of origins and can be discussed on the same level with them. Although it may claim to have its foundation in scientific facts, it itself belongs to the realm of philosophy and even touches on theology, inasmuch as it cannot avoid the question of God as Creator of the world, whether it accepts or denies Him.

In this course, therefore, we will touch on “evolution” only as a universal theory that attempts to explain the origin of the world and of life.

## CHAPTER TWO

# *The Six Days of Creation*

(GENERAL OBSERVATIONS)

### *1. Introduction*

NOW LET US study the Patristic model of the Six Days of Creation. We will not occupy ourselves with trying to guess “how long” these “days” were, although by the time we come to the end we will have a pretty good idea of how the Fathers viewed their length. Many fundamentalists think their literal interpretation of Genesis is lost if these “days” are not accepted as precisely twenty-four hours long; and many others who want to reconcile Genesis with the modern theory of evolution think their hopes rest upon accepting these “days” as millions or billions of years long so they will accord with the supposed findings of geology. I think we can safely say that both of these views miss the mark.

It is not that these days could *not* have been twenty-four hours long, if God so willed; one or two Fathers (St. Ephraim the Syrian, for example) even state precisely that they were twenty-four hours long. But most Fathers do not say anything at all on the subject: it was not a subject of debate in their times, and it seems not to have occurred to them to insist on projecting the time scale of our fallen world back to the stupendous and miraculous events of those Six Days. Blessed Augustine, I think, sums up well the Patristic attitude when he says: “What kind of days these were is very difficult for us to conceive, or even completely impossible; and all the more impossible is it for us to speak of this.”<sup>1\*</sup>

---

\* In quoting here from Blessed Augustine’s *City of God*—a work in which the author’s view of the Six Days is not entirely clear—Fr. Seraphim was not aware that in another, then-untranslated work, *The Literal Meaning of Genesis*, Augustine offered an interpretation of the Six Days that was at variance with the common Patristic teaching; see p. 115n above and pp. 140–41n below.—Ed.

But if we do not need to define the Six Days of Creation as twenty-four hours long, it is quite impossible for us to regard them as millions or billions of years long—that is, to force them into an evolutionary time scale. The events of the Six Days simply do not fit into the evolutionary picture at all. In Genesis the first living things are grasses and trees upon the dry land; life did not first appear in the sea, as the evolutionary theory would have it; these land plants exist for a whole day (billions of years?) before the sun was created, while in any evolutionary conception the sun precedes the earth itself.\* Any reasonably objective observer would have to conclude that the Six Days of Creation, if they are a true account and not a product of arbitrary fancy or speculation, simply do not fit into the evolutionary framework, and therefore there is no need to make them billions of years long. We will see below also how the description of these Days by the Holy Fathers makes this interpretation quite impossible. Evolutionary theory is obviously talking about something other than the Six Days of Creation.

And in actual fact, *no* scientific theory can tell us about those Six Days. Science tries to explain (sometimes with more and sometimes with less success) the changes of this world, based on projections of natural processes which can be observed today. But the Six Days of Creation are *not* a natural process; they are what came *before* all the world's natural processes began to work. They are God's work; by very definition they are miraculous and do not fit into the natural laws which govern the world we see now.\*\* If we can know what happened

---

\* Not only "Christian evolutionists" but also "old-earth/progressive creationists" attempt to place the Six Days into the evolutionary/uniformitarian time scale of billions of years, and thus they too must distort the Genesis account in order to deal with the contradictions outlined above.—ED.

\*\* In his notes, Fr. Seraphim says further: "The fossil record is *not* a record of the 'Six Days,' but of the history of the corrupt world *after* its creation. The Six Days are *beyond scientific observation and measurement*, and are different in kind from what science measures. (Cf. St. Symeon the New Theologian on the new law of nature after the fall of Adam.) *Their time lapse is not measurable by science* and does not fit in with any scientific theories."

Since the fossil record is, as Fr. Seraphim says, a record of a "corrupt world" (suffering, disease, violence, carnivory, death, and decay), it must be placed not only



in those Six Days at all, it is not by scientific projections or speculations, but only by God's revelation. In this respect, modern scientists are no better off than the ancient creators of cosmic speculations and myths. The writers of commentaries on Genesis emphasize this point. St. John Chrysostom writes:

What does it mean that first there is heaven, and then earth, first the roof and then the foundation? God is not subject to natural necessity; He is not subject to the laws of art. The will of God is the creator and artificer of nature and of art and of everything existing.<sup>2</sup>

Speaking of the Fifth Day of Creation, the same Father says:

Today God goes over to the waters and shows us that from them, by His word and command, there proceeded animate creatures.... What mind, tell me, can understand this miracle?<sup>3</sup>

St. Basil teaches in the *Hexaemeron* that in the Third Day there was no natural necessity for waters to flow downward; this is a law of our own world, but then there was as yet no law, until God's command came:

Someone may, perhaps, ask this: Why does the Scripture reduce to a command of the Creator that tendency to flow downward which belongs naturally to water?... If water has this tendency by nature, the command ordering the waters to be gathered together into one place would be superfluous.... To this inquiry we say this, that you recognized very well the movements of the water after the command of the Lord, both that it is unsteady and unstable and that it is borne naturally down slopes and into hollows; but how it had any power previous to that, before the motion was engendered in it from this command, you yourself neither know nor have you heard it from one who knew. Reflect that the voice of God makes nature, and the

---

after the Six Days of Creation, but also after the fall of man, which brought corruption into the world. See pp. 449, 457–58, 460–61, 649–53, 651–52n, 669, 708–10 below.—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS OF CREATION (GENERAL OBSERVATIONS)

command given at that time to creation provided the future course of action for the creatures.<sup>4</sup>

Undoubtedly, here is one of the chief sources of the conflict between scientific theory and religious revelation. During the Six Days *nature itself was being made*; our present knowledge of natural laws cannot possibly tell us how these laws themselves were made. The very subject of ultimate origins, of beginnings, of the Genesis of all things—is outside the sphere of science. When a scientist enters this realm, he guesses and speculates like any ancient cosmologist; and this not only distracts him from his serious work of studying the natural processes of this world—it also makes him a competitor of religious revelation, which is the only possible source of our real knowledge of the beginning of things, just as it is our only source of knowledge of the final end of all things. St. Basil writes:

We are proposing to examine the structure of the world and to contemplate the whole universe, beginning, not from the wisdom of the world, but from what God taught His servant when He spoke to him in person and without riddles.<sup>5</sup>

If we can humble ourselves enough to know that we can actually know rather little about the details of the Creation of the Six Days, we will have a better chance of understanding what we can about Genesis. The Holy Fathers, and not scientific or cosmological speculations, are our key to understanding the text.

### 2. General Remarks about the Six Days

What, then, can we say of these Six Days?

First: One Orthodox person reflecting on the Six Days very nicely expressed our aim in studying them: we should measure them, not quantitatively, but theologically. The important thing about them is not how long they were, but what happened in them. They are the statement of *six immense creative acts of God* which produced the universe as we know it. In a moment we will look at these six acts in detail.

Second: As we have seen, by their very nature the events of these days are miraculous, are not subject to the laws of nature that now govern the world, and we cannot understand them by projections from our present experience.

Third: a point very much emphasized by the Holy Fathers who have written on Genesis: The creative acts of God in the Six Days are sudden, instantaneous.

St. Ephraim the Syrian, who understands the days of Creation to be twenty-four hours long, emphasizes that the creative acts of God in these days do *not* require twenty-four hours, but only an instant. Thus, concerning the First Day he writes:

Although both the light and the clouds were created in the twinkling of an eye, still both the day and the night of the First Day continued for twelve hours each.<sup>6\*</sup>

St. Basil the Great likewise emphasizes at various points of his commentary on the Six Days the instantaneous nature of God's creation. On the Third Day of Creation, he writes,

At this saying all the dense woods appeared; all the trees shot up.... Likewise, all the shrubs were immediately thick with leaf and bushy; and the so-called garland plants ... all came into existence in a moment of time, although they were not previously upon the earth.<sup>7</sup> "Let the earth bring forth." This brief command was immediately a mighty nature and an elaborate system which brought to perfection more swiftly than our thought the countless properties of plants.<sup>8</sup>

St. Ambrose writes that when Moses says so abruptly, "In the beginning God created," he intends to "express the incomprehensible speed of the work." And, having the cosmological speculations of the

---

\* Concerning the specific length of the Six Days, see also the teaching of Sts. Basil the Great, Ambrose of Milan, and John Damascene on pp. 442, 442n, 545, 546n below.—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS OF CREATION (GENERAL OBSERVATIONS)

Greeks in mind, he writes words that apply equally well to the speculations of our own times:

He [Moses] did not look forward to a late and leisurely creation of the world out of a concourse of atoms.<sup>9</sup>

St. Ambrose says further:

And fittingly [Moses] added: "He created," lest it be thought there was a delay in creation. Furthermore, men would see also how incomparable the Creator was Who completed such a great work in the briefest moment of His creative act, so much so that the effect of His will anticipated the perception of time.<sup>10</sup>

St. Athanasius the Great—in arguing against the Arian teaching that Christ is the "beginning" of all things and thus like the creation—sets forth as his understanding of the Six Days of Creation that all things in each of these days were created *simultaneously*:

As to the separate stars or the great lights, not this appeared first, and that second, but in one day and by the same command, they were all called into being. And such was the original formation of the quadrupeds, and of birds, and fishes, and cattle, and plants.... No one creature was made before another, but all things originate subsisted at once together upon one and the same command.<sup>11\*</sup>

---

\* From the passage quoted above, which refers to the fact that *each* of God's creative acts was instantaneous, some modern commentators have wrongly ascribed to St. Athanasius the idea that *all* things were created in a single instant—an idea that Fr. Seraphim discusses below. In the same work, St. Athanasius makes clear his belief that the universe came into being through separate creative acts over the course of the Six Days: "All the visible creation was made in six days: in the first, the light which He called day; in the second the firmament; in the third, gathering together the waters, He bared the dry land, and brought out the various fruits that are in it; and in the fourth, He made the sun and the moon and all the host of the stars; and on the fifth, He created the race of living things in the sea, and of birds in the air; and on the sixth, He made the quadrupeds on the earth, and at length man" (*Four Discourses against the Arians* 2.19, NPNF 2 4, p. 358).—ED.

### 3. *Why Six Days?*

We have already quoted St. Ephraim the Syrian, who states that “it is likewise impermissible to say that what seems, according to the account [of Genesis], to have been created in the course of six days, was created in a single instant.” The Holy Fathers are quite insistent in their faithfulness to the text of Genesis: when the text says “day,” they find it impermissible to understand some indefinitely long epoch, since God’s creative acts are instantaneous; but they also find it impermissible to interpret these Six Days as merely some literary device to express a totally instantaneous creation.\* Although each creative act is

---

\* Although stated somewhat ambiguously, the idea of a totally instantaneous creation can be found in the works of three Alexandrian thinkers: the first-century Jewish writer Philo (*On the Creation* 3.13) and the second- and third-century Christian writers Clement (*Stromateis* 6.16) and Origen (*Against Celsus* 6.50–51, 60–61). The only saint of the Orthodox Church to develop a teaching along these lines was the fourth-century Father Blessed Augustine. In his elaborate formulation, all things were created at the same moment as *causales rationes* or causal reasons (as distinct from what he called *aeternae rationes* or eternal reasons—which, although they preexist in God, do not exactly correspond to the Uncreated *logoi* of created beings in Greek Patristic thought; see Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, pp. 95–96). The days of creation, Blessed Augustine suggested, were but a literary device to describe six simultaneous moments of angelic consciousness, through which God’s creative activity was understood by the angels (cf. Bl. Augustine, *The Literal Meaning of Genesis* 4.22–35, ACW 41, pp. 127–45).

Blessed Augustine devised this novel interpretation due to two errors in his exegesis of Scripture. First of all, whereas other Fathers understood the second creation account in Genesis (2:4–25) to be a retelling of the events in the first account (1:1–2:3) (see pp. 209–10, 410, 410n below), Augustine saw the second account as being chronologically posterior to the first. Therefore, he felt he had to account for how God could have made Adam *after* He rested from His creative work on the Seventh Day. Augustine’s second error lay in his attempt to reconcile the Genesis account with a verse in Sirach (18:1) that he read in faulty Latin translations (Old Latin and Vulgate). An accurate translation of the verse reads, “He Who lives forever created the whole universe,” but the misleading Latin translation of τὰ πάντα κοινῇ as *omnia simul* caused Augustine to think it meant God created “all things at the same time.” Citing this verse numerous times in his commentary on Genesis, he

instantaneous, the whole creation consists of an orderly sequence of these creative acts.

St. Gregory the Theologian writes:

To the days [of creation] is added a certain firstness, secondness, thirdness, and so on to the seventh day of rest from works, and by these days is divided all that is created, being brought into order by unutterable laws, but not produced in an instant, by the Almighty Word, for Whom to think or to speak means already to perform the deed. If man appeared in the world last, honored by the handiwork and image of God, this is not in the least surprising; since for him, as for a king, the royal dwelling had to be prepared and only then was the king to be led in, accompanied by all creatures.<sup>12</sup>

In the same vein St. John Chrysostom writes:

The Almighty right hand of God and His limitless wisdom would have had no difficulty in creating everything in a single day. And what do I say, in a single day?—in an instant. But since He created

---

wrote: “We tried to show at some length that the two statements about the creation of the world can be reconciled, namely, that it was finished in Six Days with all the creatures that are in it, and that it also was made when day was made, so that the account of creation agrees with the statement that ‘God made all things at the same time’” (*Literal Meaning* 5.17, ACW 41, p. 168). (See an explanation of the reasons behind Augustine’s interpretation in *ibid.*, pp. 252–54, and in Allan D. Fitzgerald, ed., *Augustine through the Ages*, p. 380.)

As will be seen, the idea of a totally instantaneous creation was rejected either explicitly or implicitly by other Fathers, although some of them spoke of God making the material elements on the First Day and then bringing forth His individual creations out of these elements during the Six Days (see pp. 154–57, 155n, 157n below). Blessed Augustine’s interpretation of the Six Days was specifically rejected by the nineteenth-century Russian Father St. Philaret, Metropolitan of Moscow, who wrote: “The Six Days of Creation do not signify ... the number of degrees of understanding by which the angels ascend in the knowledge of the nature of things, as Augustine guessed, for creation cannot be mixed together with knowledge” (St. Philaret, *Commentary on the Book of Genesis* [in Russian], p. 27).

On the Orthodox Church’s general approach to Blessed Augustine’s teachings, see pp. 32n, 115n above and pp. 926–27 below.—ED.

everything that exists not for His own benefit, because He needs nothing, being All-sufficient unto Himself, on the contrary He created everything in His love of mankind and goodness,\* and so He creates in parts and offers us by the mouth of the blessed Prophet a clear teaching of what is created so that we, having found out about this in detail, would not fall under the influence of those who are drawn away by human reasonings.... And why, you will say, was man created afterwards, if he surpassed all these creatures? For a good reason. When a king intends to enter a city, his armsbearers and others must go ahead, so that the king might enter chambers already prepared for him. Precisely thus did God now, intending to place as it were a king and master over everything earthly, at first arrange all this adornment, and only then did He create the master [man].<sup>13</sup>

St. Gregory of Nyssa repeats this same teaching that man, as king, appeared only after his dominion had been prepared for him; but he also has another, more mystical interpretation of the sequence of the Six Days which some have tried to interpret as an expression of the theory of evolution. Let us therefore look closely at this teaching. He writes:

Scripture informs us that the Deity proceeded by a sort of graduated and ordered advance to the creation of man. After the foundations of the universe were laid, as the history records, man did not appear on the earth at once; but the creation of the brutes preceded him, and the plants preceded them. Thereby Scripture shows that the vital forces blended with the world of matter according to a gradation; first, it infused itself into insensate nature; and in continuation of this advanced into the sentient world; and then ascended to intelli-

---

\* Cf. St. Irenaeus of Lyons: "The creation is suited for the benefit of man; for man was not made for its sake, but creation for the sake of man" (*Against Heresies* 5.29.1, SC 153.363, ANF 1, p. 558\*). On creation having been made for man, see also the quotations of Sts. Ambrose of Milan, John Chrysostom, and Symeon the New Theologian on pp. 323n, 728–31 below.—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS OF CREATION (GENERAL OBSERVATIONS)

gent and rational beings.... The creation of man is related as coming last, as of one who took up into himself every single form of life, both that of plants and that which is seen in brutes. His nourishment and growth he derives from vegetable life; for even in vegetables such processes are to be seen when aliment is being drawn in by their roots and given off in fruit and leaves. His sentient organization he derives from the brute creation. But his faculty of thought and reason is incommunicable, and is a peculiar gift in our nature.... It is not possible for this reasoning faculty to exist in the life of the body without existing by means of sensations, and since sensation is already found subsisting in the brute creation, necessarily, as it were, by reason of this one condition, our soul has touch with the other things which are knit up with it; and these are all those phenomena within us that we call "passions."<sup>14</sup>

At the end of another description in a different book, St. Gregory concludes:

If, therefore, Scripture tells us that man was made last, after every animate thing, the lawgiver [Moses] is doing nothing else than declaring to us the doctrine of the soul, considering that what is perfect comes last, according to a certain necessary sequence in the order of things.... Thus we may suppose that nature makes an ascent as it were by steps—I mean the various properties of life—from the lower to the perfect form.<sup>15</sup>

This is one of the very few passages in the writings of the Holy Fathers which believers in the evolutionary cosmogony find sympathetic to their views. It speaks of an "ascent by steps ... from the lower to the perfect form," and states that man somehow "partakes" in the life of the lower creation. But the evolutionary theory of origins requires much more than these general views, which no one will dispute. The theory of evolution requires that man be shown to be a *descendant* of the lower creation, to have "evolved" out of it. In a later lecture we will look closely at what the Fathers say of man's origin. Here we will only say that St. Gregory not only says nothing whatever



that indicates he believed such a view, but other of his own views contradict it. Thus, he agrees with the rest of the Fathers who have written on Genesis that God's creation is instantaneous; in this same treatise he says that "every hillside and slope and hollow were crowned with young grass, and with the varied produce of the trees, just risen from the ground, yet shot up at once into their perfect beauty,"<sup>16</sup> and that "the creation is, so to say, made offhand by the Divine power, existing at once on His command."<sup>17</sup>\*

Further, St. Gregory states specifically that the one reason human nature has contact with the lower creation is because it shares the same sentient nature; it comes, indeed, from the same earth the lower creatures also sprang from. It is a totally arbitrary addition to the Saint's meaning to insist that this means man "descended" from the brute creation; in this case, indeed, it would be required also that he (and the brutes) descended from the vegetable creation, since he has something of their nature also within himself. But evolutionary theory teaches, not that animals "evolved" from plants, but that the two kingdoms are separate and parallel branches from a common primitive ancestor.

St. Gregory's "ascent by steps," therefore, does not at all show the chronological descent of man from plants and animals, but only shows his kinship with the lower creation through sharing the nutritive and sentient nature which all earthborn creatures have, to the degree God has given it to them. He is describing, not the *history* of man, but his *nature*.

We will see more specifically below what St. Gregory actually thought about the "mixing of natures" which is implied in the evolutionary theory.

---

\* Moreover, St. Gregory of Nyssa made it clear that Adam was specially created, not born of another human being or any other creature: "Now while Abel came into existence by way of generation, what reasonable man would deny that, in the actual sense of human generation, Adam existed ungenerately?" (*Against Eunomius* 3.3, NPNF 2 5, p. 143). "Adam himself was not begotten according to the natural generation of men; but Abel was begotten of Adam" (*On the Faith: To Simplicius*, *ibid.*, p. 338). (See also the quotations of St. Gregory on pp. 430, 432n below.)—ED.

## CHAPTER THREE

### *The Six Days*

(DAY BY DAY)

(Genesis 1:1–25, 2:1–3)

LET US turn now to the text of Genesis and see briefly what God brought into being during the Six Days of Creation:

#### *1. The First Day (Genesis 1:1–5)*

*1:1 In the beginning ...*

This book is about the very first things in the world. But there can also be a mystical significance to the words, as St. Ambrose teaches:

A beginning in a mystical sense is denoted by the statement: “I am the first and the last, the beginning and the end” (Apoc. 1:8).... In truth, He Who is the beginning of all things by virtue of His Divinity is also the end.... Therefore, in this beginning, that is, in Christ, God created heaven and earth, because “all things were made through Him and without Him was made nothing that was made” (John 1:3).<sup>1</sup>

The succeeding acts of creation begin with the words: “And God said.” St. Basil asks the meaning of this, and answers it for us:

Let us inquire how God speaks. Is it in our manner?... Does He manifest His hidden thought by striking the air with the articulate movement of the voice? Surely, it is fantastic to say that God needs such a roundabout way for the manifestation of His thoughts. Or, is

it not more in conformity with true religion to say that the Divine will joined with the first impulse of His intelligence is the Word of God [i.e., Christ]? The Scripture delineates Him in detail in order that it may show that God wished the creation not only to be accomplished, but also to be brought to this birth through some co-worker. It could have related everything fully as it began, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth," then "He created light," next, "He created the firmament." But now, introducing God as commanding and speaking, it indicates silently Him to Whom He gives the command and to Whom He speaks.... This way of speaking has been wisely and skillfully employed so as to rouse our mind to an inquiry of the Person to Whom the words are directed.<sup>2</sup>

And so we see *Christ* is the Creator, as is also stated by St. John the Evangelist: "In the beginning was the Word ... all things were made through Him and without Him was made nothing that was made" (John 1:1, 3). St. Paul teaches the same thing: "God ... created all things by Jesus Christ" (Eph. 3:9); "by Him [Christ] were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him and for Him" (Col. 1:16).\*

Thus, in traditional Orthodox iconography of the creation we see not Michelangelo's old man (the Father) creating Adam (as in the fresco in the Sistine Chapel), but Christ. Of course, it is the Trinity as a whole that creates: the Father commands, the Son creates, and in a moment

---

\* In demonstrating that the Word of God is the Creator of all, St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 1.22.1, 2.2.5) cites Psalm 32:6, 9 as well: "By the Word of the Lord the heavens were established, and all the power of them by the Spirit of His mouth.... For He spoke, and they were made; He commanded, and they were created." (Later we will see how this verse was cited by the Fathers to demonstrate the activity of the Holy Spirit in the events of creation, as well.) In the same work, St. Irenaeus writes: "The Creator of the world is truly the Word of God, and this is our Lord, Who in the last times was made man, existing in this world, Who invisibly contains all created things, Who is inherent in the entire creation, since the Word of God governs and arranges all things" (*Against Heresies* 5.18.3, SC 153.244–45, ANF 1, pp. 546–47\*).—ED.

we will see the Spirit participating in this work, as He “moves” or “hovers” over the waters. Of this St. Ephraim the Syrian writes:

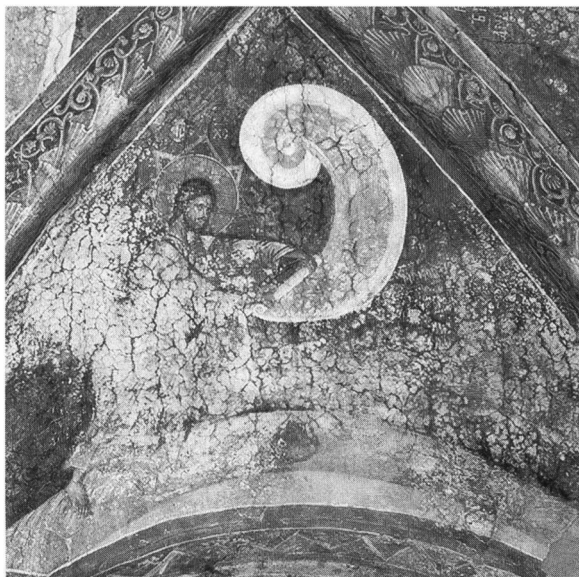
It was fitting for the Holy Spirit to hover as a proof that in creative power He is equal to the Father and the Son. For the Father uttered, the Son created, and it was fitting for the Spirit also to offer His work. And this He did by *hovering*, thereby clearly showing that all was brought into being and accomplished by the Trinity.<sup>3\*</sup>

---

\* St. Irenaeus quotes Ephesians 4:6—“One God and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in you all”—as proof that the creation is the common work of the Holy Trinity, “because ‘above all’ is the Father, and ‘through all’ is the Word—since through Him everything was made by the Father—while ‘in us all’ is the Spirit, Who cries ‘Abba, Father’ (Gal. 4:6, Rom. 8:15) and forms man to the likeness of God” (*Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 5, PPS 17, p. 43).

St. Basil the Great writes as follows on the Holy Trinity as Creator: “The Father is the original cause [προκαταρκτική αἰτία] of all things that exist, the Son is the creative [δημιουργική] cause, and the Spirit is the perfecting [τελειωτική] cause—such that [everything] subsists by the will of the Father, is brought into being by the Energy of the Son, and is perfected by the presence of the Spirit.... For the Origin of all beings is one, creating through the Son and perfecting by the Spirit. Neither does the Father, ‘Who worketh all in all’ (1 Cor. 12:6), have imperfect energy, nor does the Son have deficient creativity, if not perfected by the Spirit. The Father, Who creates by His will alone, could not stand in any need of the Son, but nevertheless He wills through the Son; likewise neither could the Son, Who works according to the likeness of the Father, stand in any need of cooperation, yet the Son too wills to make perfect through the Spirit” (*On the Holy Spirit* 16.38, SC 17.376–78, NPNF 2 8, p. 23).

St. Gregory of Nyssa offers further elucidation: “For neither did the Universal God make the universe ‘through the Son,’ as needing any help, nor does the Only Begotten God work all things ‘by the Holy Spirit,’ as having a power that comes short of His design; but the fountain of power is the Father, and the power of the Father is the Son, and the spirit of that power is the Holy Spirit; and creation entirely, in all its visible and spiritual extent, is the finished work of that Divine power. And seeing that no toil can be thought of in the composition of anything connected with the Divine Being (for performance being bound to the moment of willing, the plan at once becomes a reality), we should be justified in calling all that nature which came into existence by creation a movement of Will, an impulse of Design, a transmission of Power, beginning from the Father, advancing through the Son, and completed in the Holy Spirit” (*On the Holy Spirit [Against the Macedonians]* 13, NPNF 2.5, p. 320).—ED.



The creation of the heavens and the earth on the First Day of Creation.

*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

1:1–2 *God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form and void (LXX: invisible and unfinished).*

St. Basil asks:

How is it, if both the heavens and the earth were of equal honor, that the heavens were brought to perfection and the earth is still imperfect and unfinished? Or, in short, what was the lack of preparation of the earth? And for what reason was it invisible? Surely, the perfect condition of the earth consists in its state of abundance: the budding of all sorts of plants, the putting forth of the lofty trees both fruitful and barren, the freshness and fragrance of flowers, and whatever things appeared on earth a little later by the command of God to adorn their mother. Since as yet there was nothing of this, the Scripture reasonably spoke of it as incomplete. We might say the same also about the heavens; that they were not yet brought to perfection themselves, nor had they received their proper adornment, since they were not yet lighted around by the moon nor the sun, nor crowned by the choirs of the stars. For, these things had not yet been

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

made. Therefore, you will not err from the truth if you say that the heavens also were incomplete.<sup>4</sup>

St. Ambrose speaks of this work of the First Day as the “foundation” of the world:

The good architect lays the foundation first, and afterwards, when the foundation has been laid, plots the various parts of the building, one after the other, and then adds thereto the ornamentation.... Why did not God ... grant to the elements at the same time as they arose their appropriate adornments, as if He, at the moment of creation, were unable to cause the heavens immediately to gleam with studded stars and the earth to be clothed with flowers and fruit? That could very well have happened. Yet Scripture points out that things were first created and afterwards put in order, lest it be supposed that they were not actually created and that they had no beginning, just as if the nature of things had been, as it were, generated from the beginning and did not appear to be something added afterwards.<sup>5</sup>

St. Ephraim says:

He said this desiring to show that emptiness preceded the natures [of things].... There was then only the earth, and there was nothing beside it.<sup>6</sup>

*1:2 And darkness was upon the face of the deep.*

The waters of the “deep” were created together with the earth and completely submerged the earth. This is the cause of its unfinished appearance. The Fathers assume there was a certain light created with the heavens, since the heavens are the region of light; but if so the clouds covering the earth prevented its reaching the earth. St. Ephraim writes:

If everything created (whether its creation is mentioned or not) was created in six days, then the clouds were created on the first day.... For everything had to be created in six days.<sup>7</sup>

(This is another indication, incidentally, that the work of the Six Days is distinct from the continuous creative work of God after that, and that we cannot understand it by projecting back from our present experience.)

St. Ambrose specifically rejects the opinion that the “darkness” here refers allegorically to powers of evil.<sup>8\*</sup>

1:2 *And the Spirit of God was moving over the face of the waters.*

Here we see the activity of the Third Person of the Holy Trinity in the creation. St. Ambrose writes:

There was still to come the plenitude of the operation in the Spirit, as it is written: “By the Word of the Lord the heavens were established, and all the power of them by the Spirit of His mouth” (Ps. 32:6).... The Spirit fittingly moved over the earth, destined to bear fruit, because by the aid of the Spirit it held the seeds of new birth which were to germinate according to the words of the Prophet: “Send forth Thy Spirit and they shall be created and Thou shalt renew the face of the earth” (Ps. 103:32).<sup>9</sup>

St. Ephraim gives us a homey image of the activity of the Spirit on the First Day:

[The Holy Spirit] warmed the waters and made them fertile and capable of birth, like a bird when it sits with its outstretched wings on its eggs and by its warmth gives them warmth and produces fertility in them. This same Holy Spirit represented for us then an image of Holy Baptism, in which by His moving over the waters He gives birth to the children of God.<sup>10\*\*</sup>

---

\* As does St. Basil; see p. 121n above.—ED.

\*\* The same interpretation of Genesis 1:2 is given in St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Hymns on the Epiphany* 8.16, and St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 2.6.—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)



The creation of light on the First Day of Creation (detail).  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

The Holy Spirit also participated in the other days of Creation, for the book of Job speaks of “the Divine Spirit [Who] hath made me” (Job 33:4).

*1:3 And God said, Let there be light; and there was light.*  
St. Ambrose writes:

God is the Author of light, and the place and cause of darkness is the world. But the good Author uttered the word “light” so that He might reveal the world by infusing brightness therein and thus make its aspect beautiful. Suddenly, then, the air became bright and darkness shrank in terror from the brilliance of the novel brightness. The brilliance of the light which suddenly permeated the whole universe overwhelmed the darkness and, as it were, plunged it into the abyss.<sup>11</sup>



St. Ephraim, in harmony with the other Fathers, tells us clearly that this light had nothing to do with the sun, which was created only on the Fourth Day:

The light which appeared on earth was like either a bright cloud, or a rising sun, or the pillar that illumined the Hebrew people in the desert. In any case, the light could not disperse the darkness that embraced everything if it had not extended everywhere either its substance or its rays, like the rising sun. The original light was shed everywhere and was not enclosed in a single definite place; it dispersed the darkness without having any movement; its whole movement consisted in its appearance and disappearance; after its sudden disappearance there came the dominion of night, and with its appearance this dominion ended. Thus the light produced also the three following days.... It aided the conception and bringing forth of everything that the earth was to produce on the third day; as for the sun, when it was established in the firmament, it was to bring to maturity what had already been produced with the aid of the original light.<sup>12</sup>

*1:4 And God saw that the light was good.*

God calls each stage of His work "good," seeing its perfect and unspoiled nature and, as St. Ambrose teaches, looking forward to the perfection of the whole work:

God, as judge of the whole work, foreseeing what is going to happen as something completed, commends that part of His work which is still in its initial stages, being already cognizant of its termination.... He praises each individual part as befitting what is to come.<sup>13</sup>

*1:4–5 And God separated the light from the darkness. God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night.*

St. Basil comments on this passage:

"God separated the light from the darkness." That is, God made their natures incapable of mixing and in opposition, one to the

other. For, He divided and separated them with a very great distinction between them. "And God called the light Day and the darkness He called Night." Now, henceforth, after the creation of the sun, it is day when the air is illuminated by the sun shining on the hemisphere above the earth, and night is the darkness of the earth when the sun is hidden. Yet, it was not at that time according to solar motion, but it was when that first created light was diffused and again drawn in according to the measure ordained by God, that day came and night succeeded.<sup>14</sup>

1:5 *And there was evening and there was morning, one day.*  
St. Basil continues:

Evening, then, is a common boundary line of day and night; and similarly, morning is the part of night bordering on day. In order, therefore, to give the prerogative of prior generation to the day, Moses mentioned first the limit of the day and then that of the night, as night followed the day. The condition in the world before the creation of light was not night, but darkness; that which was opposed to the day was named night; wherefore it received its name later than the day did....

Why did he say "one" and not "first"? It is more consistent for him who intends to introduce a second and a third and a fourth day, to call the one which begins the series "first." But he said "one" because he was defining the measure of day and night.<sup>15</sup>

This First "Day" of creation (no matter how "long" one may guess it to be) is the beginning of the cycle of seven days (each with its "day" and "night") which continues up to our own days. Those rationalist commentators who see in the "seven days" and the fact that "evening" precedes "morning" merely a projection backwards of later Jewish customs show themselves totally out of harmony with the Patristic way of viewing these things, and they are therefore unable to answer the question: where and why did the Jews derive these customs? In the Patristic view, the revealed text can and does give the literal *origins* of the world and the reasons for the Jewish customs

(which are now Christian—for our church day also begins with Vespers, the evening service).

Thus we have come to the end of “Day One,” the First Day of Creation. It has established the measure of time for all succeeding ages (because “before” it there was no time; time begins with it). And in another sense also it is a day unlike those that follow it, as St. Ephraim explains:

Thus, according to the testimony of Scripture, heaven, earth, fire, air, and the waters were created out of nothing; while the light which was created on the First Day and everything else that was created after it were created out of what existed before. For when Moses speaks of what was created out of nothing he uses the word “created” [Hebrew: *bara*]: “God created the heaven and the earth.” And although it is not written that fire, the waters and the air were created, it is likewise not said that they were produced from what existed earlier. And therefore they also are out of nothing, just as heaven and earth are out of nothing. But when God begins to create out of what already existed, the Scripture uses an expression like this: “God said, let there be light,” and the rest. And if it is said: “God created the great sea monsters,” before this the following is said: “Let the waters bring forth swarms of living creatures.” Therefore, only the above-named five kinds of creations were created out of nothing, while everything else was created out of what had already been created out of nothing.<sup>16</sup>

The “five creations” that St. Ephraim mentions are the “four elements” out of which, according to the definition of ancient science, everything on earth consists, in addition to “heaven.” One does not have to accept this particular way of analyzing the creation to see that there is indeed something “fundamental” about the First Day of Creation: it contains the beginnings of everything that is to come after. One might speculate as to where the actual *matter* came from for the living creatures, the heavenly bodies, and other creations of the next five days: was it newly created out of nothing, or was it really only a transformation of preexisting [created] matter? But this would be a profitless exercise that would not, in any case, contradict the truth that the basic

structure and matter of creation was made on the First Day; the work of the next five days is less “radical” than that of the First Day—it is rather a “shaping” than a “creation” in the strict sense.\*

The very idea of “creation out of nothing” or “from non-being”

---

\* Together with St. Ephraim, St. Basil the Great says that the elements (heaven, earth, water, air, fire) were created on the First Day of Creation. He then goes on to say that, when “the earth was invisible and unfinished” (Gen. 1:2) on the First Day, it was “in travail with the birth of all things through the power stored up in it by the Creator, and waiting for the proper times that it might bring forth its offspring into the open at the Divine command” (St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 2.3, FC 46, pp. 25–26). St. Basil’s brother, St. Gregory of Nyssa, comments in like manner on the same verse of Scripture: “‘And the earth was invisible and unfinished.’ Clearly this means that God’s power over all things in the beginning came into existence by one impulse of creation, for His power seminally contained every created being and came into existence through one initiative” (St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Apologia to His Brother Peter on the Hexaemeron*, GNO 4.1.27). St. Gregory then goes on to speak of how God, on the subsequent Days, brought forth His creations out of the previously created material elements.

Some modern writers (including Fr. Seraphim’s interlocutor, Alexander Kalomiros, in *The Six Dawns*, chap. 4) have cited these passages as proof that Sts. Basil and Gregory believed in molecules-to-man evolution. However, like St. Gregory of Nyssa’s statement about creation’s “ascent by steps” (pp. 143–44 above), such general Patristic affirmations of God’s power to bring forth creatures out of already-created elements—a power as-yet-unrealized in the “unfinished” creation of the First Day—cannot in themselves be seen as supporting modern evolutionary theory. As Fr. Seraphim has stated above, to show that the Holy Fathers believed in evolution, one must also demonstrate that they believed in the common descent of all living things from a primordial life-form. Sts. Basil and Gregory clearly believed otherwise, for they both taught that living things were created by God directly, instantly and effortlessly, fully formed, in their perfect beauty, each with its seed in itself; and both Fathers rejected the idea that the natures of created things can be mixed (see especially pp. 143–44 above and pp. 166–67, 181–83, 187–88 below). Likewise, Sts. Ephraim and Ambrose, who also spoke of God’s power making the earth fertile on the First Day (see p. 150 above), were no less emphatic about the immediate, absolute and radical character of each act of creation on the next five days.

On God’s fashioning of the world out of material elements created on the First Day, see also St. Hippolytus, *Fragments on Genesis*; idem, *The Refutation of All Heresies* 10.28–29; St. Ambrose, *On the Decease of His Brother Satyrus* 2.85; idem, *Hexaemeron* 1.7, quoted on p. 149 above; St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.5, 2.7, 2.9–10, 2.12; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics on Natural and Theological Science* 21–22, quoted on p. 157n below.—Ed.

sharply distinguishes the Genesis account from that of all pagan myths and speculations about creation.\* In the latter it is some kind of “demiurge” or “fashioner-god” who forms the world out of already existing matter—which, as the Holy Fathers say, thus is a kind of “god” also.\*\* Genesis describes the *absolute* beginning of the whole world, not its development from something already existing; even the cre-

---

\* Cf. 2 Maccabees 7:28: “I beseech you, my child, to look to heaven and earth and see everything in them, and know that God made them out of nothing”; and Hebrews 11:3: “By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.” St. Athanasius (*On the Incarnation of the Word* 3), St. Gregory of Nyssa (*Against Eunomius* 1.26), St. John Chrysostom (*Homilies on Hebrews* 22.1–2), and Blessed Augustine (*Concerning the Nature of Good: Against the Manichaeans* 26) cited one or both of these passages as Scriptural testimony of God’s creation out of nothing. St. Athanasius also quoted from the early Christian work *The Shepherd of Hermas*: “First of all believe that God is one, Who created and framed all things, and made them to exist out of nothing” (*Shepherd* 1.2).

Statements concerning God’s creation of all things out of nothing or non-being can be found throughout the Patristic corpus. For an overview, see Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, pp. 91–95; and [Fr.] Georges Florovsky, *Creation and Redemption*, pp. 43–48.—ED.

\*\* In his second-century work *Against Heresies*, St. Irenaeus of Lyons set forth an extensive refutation of the pagan idea of creation by a demiurge, particularly as it was conceived by the Valentinian Gnostics. In the same work, he rejected the pagan-Gnostic notion that “the creator formed the world out of previously existing matter” (*Against Heresies* 2.14.4, ANF 1, p. 377; see also 2.10.4, p. 370). Other Holy Fathers also spoke out against this conception, including St. Theophilus of Antioch (*To Autolycus* 2.4, 3.26) in the second century; Sts. Hilary of Poitiers (*On the Trinity* 4.16), Athanasius the Great (*On the Incarnation of the Word* 2–3), Basil the Great (*Hexaemeron* 2.2–3; see p. 504n below), and John Chrysostom (*Homilies on Genesis* 2.2 [2.6]; *Eight Homilies on Genesis* 1; *Homilies on the Acts of the Apostles* 2) in the fourth century; and Blessed Augustine (*Confessions* 11.5, 13.33; *Concerning the Nature of Good: Against the Manichaeans* 27) in the early fifth century. (Sts. Theophilus and Athanasius ascribed the notion to the Platonists, while St. Chrysostom and Blessed Augustine attributed it to the Manichaeans.) St. Chrysostom wrote: “To say that existing things came to be from underlying matter, and not to confess that the Creator of all produced them from non-existence, would be a mark of extreme derangement. Accordingly, this blessed Prophet [Moses], when he was on the point of beginning the book [of Genesis], stopped the mouths of such ingrates, by beginning like this: ‘In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth’ (Gen. 1:1). When

ations of the following five days, as we shall see, although they come out of the matter which has already been created, are something radically new which cannot be understood as a mere development of the first-created matter. The speculations of modern thinkers who try to trace the world back to some ultimately simple matter which develops by itself can be seen to be akin to the ancient pagan speculations; the radicalness of the Genesis explanation is beyond them both—precisely because it comes from God’s revelation and not the guesses and projections of men.\*

The Christian who understands the absoluteness of God’s creative work in the Six Days views the present creation with different eyes than does someone who views it as a gradual development or “evolu-

---

you hear ‘He created,’ concern yourself no further, but with head bowed believe what is said” (*Homilies on Genesis* 2.2, PG 53.28, FC 74, p. 32 [2.6]\*).

In teaching the doctrine of creation from non-being, the Fathers also made plain God did not create from His own Essence; see pp. 216–17, 216–17n below.—ED.

\* In the fourteenth century, St. Gregory Palamas elucidated the above-mentioned teaching on how God brought forth His individual creations out of the material elements that He created on the First Day: “First of all, God created the heavens and the earth (cf. Gen. 1:1) as a kind of all-embracing material substance with the potentiality of giving birth to all things.... After this initial creation, He Who brings forth all things from non-being proceeds as it were to embellish and adorn the world. In Six Days He allotted its own proper and appropriate rank to each of His creatures that together constitute His world. He differentiates each by command alone, as though bringing forth from hidden treasures the things stored within, giving them form, and disposing and composing them harmoniously, with perfection and aptness, one to the other, each to all and all to each” (*Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 21–22, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 354–55). Elsewhere St. Gregory expanded on this teaching by delineating the creative acts that God performed on the Six Days (*Homilies* 6.7–10, 17.2, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 44–45, 135).

Here again it can be seen that the Orthodox Patristic teaching on the Six Days, far from accommodating evolutionary ideas of the self-development of matter, holds that each of God’s creations was brought forth by Him specially and directly, in perfect form, out of the material elements He had previously created. In the words of St. Philaret of Moscow in the nineteenth century: “The Six Days of Creation do not signify ... such a period of time during which things would form and develop only according to natural laws from the heaven and earth that were created in the beginning” (*Commentary on the Book of Genesis* [in Russian], p. 27).—ED.

tion” from primordial matter (whether the latter is understood as created by God or as self-existing). In the latter view, the world is seen to be “naturally” what it is, and one can trace it back to ever simpler forms, each of which can be understood “naturally”; but in the former view, the view of Genesis, one is placed before the two radical poles of existence: that which now is, and the absolute nothingness from which it came, suddenly and by God’s will alone.

There is only one more question for us to ask concerning the First Day: where does the creation of the world of angels fit into it? Moses describes the creation only of the visible world; when was the invisible world of spiritual beings created? Some Fathers think they are included in the creation of “heaven”;\* others are not so specific, but know that they were also created “in the beginning.” St. Basil teaches:

In fact there did exist something, as it seems, even before this world, which our mind can attain by contemplation, but which has been left uninvestigated because it is not adapted to those who are beginners and as yet infants in understanding. This was a certain condition older than the birth of the world and proper to the supramundane powers, one beyond time, everlasting, without beginning or end. In it the Creator and Producer of all things perfected the works of His art, a spiritual light befitting the blessedness of those who love the Lord, rational and invisible natures, and the whole orderly arrangement of spiritual creatures which surpass our understanding and of which it is impossible even to discover the names. These fill completely the essence of the invisible world.<sup>17</sup>

Similarly, St. Ambrose writes:

The Angels, Dominions, and Powers, although they began to exist at some time, were already in existence when the world was created. For all things “were created, things visible and things invisible, whether Thrones or Dominions or Principalities or Powers. All

---

\* For example, Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus (*Questions on Genesis* 3–4) and St. Epiphanius of Salamis (*Panarion* 65.4.9–65.5.4).—ED.

things,” we are told, “have been created through and unto Him” (Col. 1:16).<sup>18\*</sup>

Indeed, God said to Job: “When the stars were made, all My angels praised Me with a loud voice” (Job 38:7, LXX). We will see on the Sixth Day how Adam was tempted by Satan, and therefore we know that the battle of the proud angels in heaven, as described in the Apocalypse (12:7–8) has already been fought before then, and Satan has already “fallen like lightning” (Luke 10:18).

## 2. *The Second Day (Genesis 1:6–8)*

*1:6–8 And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it separate the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament and separated the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament. And it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And there was evening and there was morning, a second day.*

Some have tried to find in this passage an “unscientific” view of the heavens, as though Moses believed in a kind of hard crystal dome in which the stars are embedded and above which there is a fictitious store of water. But there is nothing so fantastic to be found in this text.

---

\* Compare St. Gregory the Theologian: “He [God] first conceived the heavenly and angelic powers. And this conception was a work fulfilled by His Word, and perfected by His Spirit. And so the secondary splendors came into being, as ministers of the Primary Splendor; whether we conceive of them as intelligent spirits, or as fire of an immaterial and incorruptible kind, or as some other nature approaching this as near as may be.... Then when His first Creation was in good order, He conceives a second world, material and visible; and this a system and compound of earth and sky, and all that is in the midst of them” (*Oration* 38.9–10, NPNF 2 7, p. 347; see pp. 197–98 below). St. John Damascene concurs with St. Gregory: “Now, some say that the angels were made before all creation, as Gregory the Theologian says.... But there are others who say that they were made after the creation of the first heaven. However, they all agree that it was before the formation of man. For my part, I agree with the Theologian, because it was fitting for the spiritual substance to be created first and then the sensible and then finally man himself from both” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.3, FC 37, p. 208). St. John Cassian, recounting the teaching of Abba Serenus of Egypt, says the same (*Conferences* 8.7.1–4, ACW 57, p. 295).—ED.





The creation of the firmament, called Heaven, on the Second Day of Creation.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

The word “firmament” seems to have two shades of meaning in Genesis, one quite specific and “scientific,” the other general.\* In its general meaning the firmament is more or less synonymous with “heaven” or “sky”: the stars are called “lights in the firmament of the heavens” (Gen. 1:14), and the birds fly “across the firmament of the heavens” (Gen. 1:20). We who have lost the specific meaning of “firmament” would omit it in such descriptions and say that stars and birds are both to be seen in the “heavens.” The idea that the stars are embedded in crystal spheres is a speculation of ancient pagan thought and does not have to be projected into the inspired text of Genesis.

What, then, is the specific “scientific” meaning of the “firmament” in this text? St. Basil teaches that, even though it is also called “heaven,” it is not synonymous with the “heaven” mentioned at the beginning of Genesis.

---

\* In the Septuagint, the Greek word for “firmament” in Genesis chapter 1 is *στερέωμα*, which denotes something of solidity and firmness. In the Masoretic Text, the Hebrew word is *raqiya* (also translated as “expanse”): a noun that comes from the verb *raqa*, meaning to “beat out” and “make broad,” as one might hammer metal in order to make it thin and spread it out.—Ed.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

Since both a second name and a function peculiar to the second heaven was recorded, this is a different one from that recorded in the beginning, one of a more solid nature and furnishing a special service for the universe.... We believe that this word has been assigned for a certain firm nature which is capable of supporting the fluid and unstable water. And, surely, we need not believe, because it seems to have had its origin, according to the general understanding, from water, that it is like either frozen water or some ... translucent stone ... almost like the air in transparency. Now, we compare the firmament to none of these things. Truly, it is peculiar to a childish and simple intellect to hold such notions about the heavens.... We have been taught by the Scripture to permit our mind to invent no fantasy beyond the knowledge that has been granted it....

Not a firm and solid nature, which has weight and resistance, it is not this that the word “firmament” means. In that case the earth would more legitimately be considered deserving of such a name. But, because the nature of the substances lying above is light and rare and imperceptible, He called this [a] *firmament*, in comparison with those very light substances which are incapable of perception by the senses. Now, imagine some place which tends to separate the moisture, and lets the rare and filtered part pass through into the higher regions, but lets the coarse and earthly part drop below, so that, by the gradual reduction of the liquids, from the beginning to the end the same mild temperature may be preserved.<sup>19\*</sup>

The “firmament” in Genesis, therefore, is some kind of natural barrier or filter that separates two levels of atmospheric moisture. We do not observe today such a definite phenomenon that we could call a “firmament.” Was it perhaps different in the first-formed earth?

St. Basil believes that the function of the “firmament” was to preserve a mild temperature over the whole earth. Now, it so happens that

---

\* In commenting on the “firmament” mentioned in Genesis 1:6–8, St. Ambrose of Milan (*Hexaemeron* 2.4, FC 42, pp. 60–62), Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus (*Questions on Genesis* 11.1, LEC 1, pp. 29–30) and St. John Chrysostom (*Homilies on Genesis* 4.3, FC 74, pp. 55–56 [4.7–8]) offered an interpretation similar to that of St. Basil.—ED.

we know of a certain “greenhouse” effect on the earth in prehistoric times: tropical plants and animals have been found in the ice of the far north, indicating that the northern regions were indeed once temperate. Further, in the second chapter of Genesis we are told that before the creation of man, “the Lord had not caused it to rain upon the earth ... but there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground” (Gen. 2:5–6).

The early earth, then, seems to have been a place rather different from the one we know: a place universally temperate, plentiful in moisture which constantly watered an abundant vegetation, which, as we shall see, was all that God intended not only for the food of man, but even of the beasts (Gen. 1:30).\*

When did this happy situation come to an end? We will soon look at the consequences of the fall of man; but there are indications that the earth even after the fall of man preserved some of the characteristics of the earliest earth. Let us look briefly at what the Scripture says in the light of our scientific knowledge of the atmosphere. The Holy Fathers themselves often applied the scientific knowledge of their times in understanding the Scripture, and we are also permitted to do so—provided only that we do no violence to the text of Scripture and are humble and moderate in our own supposed understanding. The following explanation, therefore, is offered not as dogma but as speculation.

The very phenomenon of rain is not mentioned in the text of Genesis until the time of Noah; and then it is not an ordinary rain but a kind of cosmic catastrophe: “All the fountains of the great deep burst forth, and the windows of the heavens were opened. And rain fell on the earth forty days and forty nights” (Gen. 7:11–12). Immense—to us, nearly unimaginable—amounts of water were loosed on the earth, reducing it virtually to its state on the First Day of Creation, when the “deep” covered the earth. The rains we know today could not cause this to happen; but the text describes something even worse: an immense underground supply of water was loosed, and the

---

\* On the climate of the first-created world, see also the quotations of St. Theophilus of Antioch, St. Epiphanius of Salamis, St. John Damascene, St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, and Archimandrite Sebastian Dabovich on pp. 704–5 below.—ED.

“firmament”—the atmospheric condition that preserved a permanent reservoir of water in the air, evidently in the form of clouds such as the planet Venus has even now—was literally “broken” and emptied its contents upon the earth.

In this light we can also understand why God gave the *rainbow* as the sign of His covenant with Noah and all creatures that there would never again be such a flood upon earth. How could the rainbow have been a sign, when supposedly it had existed throughout the centuries before that? Evidently the rainbow then appeared for the first time. The rainbow is formed by the direct rays of the sun upon moisture in the air. If the permanent cloud cover of the earth was dissipated by the breaking of the “firmament,” then literally the direct rays of the sun struck the earth for the first time after the Flood. The rainbow had been unknown to man before that—which is why it can now be a sign to man that literally the supply of moisture in the air is limited and cannot cause a universal flood any more.\*

In view of all this, it would seem that the time after the Flood is a whole new epoch in human history. The comparatively “paradisaical” conditions of the earth up to the time of Noah, when a universal temperateness prevailed over the earth and abundant vegetation supplied the needs of man without the need to eat meat (Noah is the first to receive God’s permission to eat flesh; Gen. 9:3), gives way to the harsher post-Flood earth we know, when there is “seedtime and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter” (Gen. 8:22), and men no longer live nine hundred years as did Adam and the early Patriarchs, but very quickly are reduced to the seventy or eighty years which is the general limit of our life even up to now.\*\*

---

\* On the “firmament,” see also pp. 404–5, 404–5n, 411–12 below.—ED.

\*\* During his oral delivery of this section, Fr. Seraphim explained this last point more fully: “We know that, with the race of mankind up until the time of Noah, a very extraordinary thing happened. All the Patriarchs of the Old Testament up to then are said to have lived tremendous numbers of years: Adam lived 930 years, Methuselah lived 969 years, others lived 900, 800 years.

“Nowadays people might say: ‘That’s an exaggeration, that’s a mistake, that’s silly.’ But almost every single Patriarch lived that long.... Only after Noah (who lived

### 3. The Third Day (*Genesis 1:9–13*)

**1:9–10** *And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place, and let the dry land appear. And it was so. God called the dry land Earth, and the waters that were gathered together He called Seas. And God saw that it was good.*

On each Day of creation a command is given that becomes the law of nature for all time thereafter. From the First Day, the succession of day and night begins; and from the Third Day, the waters begin their ceaseless movement. Thus, “the element of water was ordered to flow, and it never grows weary when urged on unceasingly by this command.”<sup>20</sup>

It is tempting for us, in the pride of our scientific knowledge, to speculate about the *how* of this event: Did the waters flow into underground reservoirs? Did the land rise up? The Scripture does not say, and for this reason the Holy Fathers say little on this subject. St. Ambrose writes:

What He actually has done, which I have not learned from the clear testimony of Scripture, I pass over as a mystery, lest, perchance, that stir up other questions starting even from this point. Nevertheless, I maintain in accordance with the Scriptures, that God can extend the low-lying regions and the open plains, as He has said: “I will go before thee and make level the mountains” (Is. 45:2).<sup>21</sup>

On this same question of the “how” of creation St. Gregory of Nyssa teaches:

---

950 years, 600 of which were before the Flood), the age of man begins to decrease.... Why? The world even before Noah was quite a different place; the world before Adam’s fall, even more so. Before the time of Noah, man was not allowed to eat meat; man was living on vegetables.... Of course, today it’s inconceivable that man could live 900 years, but under those totally different conditions, who knows what might have happened? God created the world in the beginning totally new and fresh, and according to a totally different way of life than what we know now.”—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

As for the question, how any single thing came into existence, we must banish it altogether from our discussion. Even in the case of things which are quite within the grasp of our understanding and of which we have sensible perception, it would be impossible for the speculative reason to grasp the “how” of the production of the phenomenon; so much so, that even inspired and saintly men have deemed such questions insoluble. For instance, the Apostle says, “Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear” (Heb. 11:3)... While the Apostle affirms that it is an object of his faith that it was by the will of God that the world itself and all which is therein was framed,... he has on the other hand left out of the investigation the “how” of this framing... Let us, following the example of the Apostle, leave the question of the “how” in each created thing, without meddling with it at all, but merely observing incidentally that the movement of God’s will becomes at any moment that He pleases a fact, and the intention becomes at once realized in nature.<sup>22</sup>

In all that has to do with the Six Days of Creation, therefore, the Holy Fathers offer few guesses (and they are always tentative) regarding *how* God created; and we likewise should refrain from projecting our knowledge of the “how” of the present creation (to the small extent that we know it) back to the first-created world.

The dry land appeared at the command of God, and not by some natural process. St. Ambrose writes:

It was provided that the earth would, to all appearance, have been dry by the hand of God rather than by the sun, for the earth actually became dry before the sun was created. Wherefore, David, too, distinguished the sea from the land, referring to the Lord God: “For the sea is His and He made it, and His hands made the dry land” (Ps. 94:5).<sup>23</sup>

*1:11–13 And God said, Let the earth put forth vegetation, plants yielding seed, and fruit trees bearing fruit in which is their seed, each*



The creation of the grass, plants, and trees on the Third Day of Creation (detail).

*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

*according to its kind, upon the earth. And it was so. The earth brought forth vegetation, plants yielding seed, according to their own kinds, and trees bearing fruit in which is their seed, each according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And there was evening and there was morning, a third day.*

The Holy Fathers are unanimous in emphasizing the miraculous nature of the creation of the Third Day. St. Basil teaches:

“Let the earth bring forth herbs.” And in the briefest moment of time the earth, beginning with germination in order that it might keep the laws of the Creator, passing through every form of increase, immediately brought the shoots to perfection. The meadows were deep with the abundant grass; the fertile plains, rippling with standing crops, presented the picture of a swelling sea with its moving heads of grain. And every herb and every kind of vegetable and

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

whatever shrubs and legumes there were, rose from the earth at that time in all profusion.... “And the fruit tree,” He said, “that bears fruit containing seed of its own kind and of its own likeness on the earth.” At this saying all the dense woods appeared; all the trees shot up, those which are wont to rise to the greatest height, the firs, cedars, cypresses, and pines; likewise, all the shrubs were immediately thick with leaf and bushy; and the so-called garland plants—the rose bushes, myrtles, and laurels—all came into existence in a moment of time, although they were not previously upon the earth, each one with its own peculiar nature.<sup>24</sup>

St. Ephraim the Syrian states precisely:

The herbs, at the time of their creation, were the productions of a single instant, but in appearance they appeared the productions of months. Likewise the trees, at the time of their creation, were the productions of a single day, but in their perfection and fruits, which weighed down the branches, they appeared the productions of years.<sup>25</sup>

St. Gregory of Nyssa also emphasizes that what was created by God was not merely seeds or a potentiality for growth, but the actual creations we know; seeds come from those first-created plants:

We learn from Scripture in the account of the first creation, that first the earth brought forth “the green herb,” and that then from this plant seed was yielded, from which, when it was shed on the ground, the same form of the original plant again sprang up.... In the beginning, we see, it was not an ear rising from a grain, but a grain coming from an ear, and, after that, the ear grows round the grain.<sup>26\*</sup>

Plants and trees appeared on earth, as the Fathers repeat again and again, before the very existence of the sun. St. John Chrysostom writes:

---

\* See also p. 144 above, where St. Gregory of Nyssa again affirms that the plants were instantly created in a condition of full growth.—ED.



(Moses) shows you that everything was accomplished before the creation of the sun, so that you might ascribe the ripening of the fruits not to it, but to the Creator of the universe.<sup>27</sup>

St. Basil states:

The adornment of the earth is older than the sun, that those who have been misled may cease worshipping the sun as the origin of life.<sup>28</sup>

St. Ambrose waxes eloquent on this subject:

Before the light of the sun shall appear, let the green herb be born, let its light be prior to that of the sun. Let the earth germinate before it receives the fostering care of the sun, lest there be an occasion for human error to grow. Let everyone be informed that the sun is not the author of vegetation.... How can the sun give the faculty of life to growing plants, when these have already been brought forth by the life-giving creative power of God before the sun entered into such a life as this? The sun is younger than the green shoot, younger than the green plant.<sup>29</sup>\*

The vegetation and trees brought forth seeds, “each according to its kind.” This expression of Scripture is a key one in Patristic thought; we will devote a lengthy discussion to it under the Fifth Day of Creation, when living creatures were brought forth likewise “each according to its kind.”

---

\* Before Sts. Basil, Ambrose, and John Chrysostom, the second-century Holy Father St. Theophilus of Antioch set forth the same teaching: “On the Fourth Day the luminaries were made; because God, Who possesses foreknowledge, knew the follies of the vain philosophers, that they were going to say that the things which grow on the earth are produced by the heavenly bodies, so as to exclude God. In order, therefore, that the truth might be obvious, the plants and seeds were produced prior to the heavenly bodies, for what is posterior cannot produce that which is prior” (*To Autolytus* 2.15, ANF 2, p. 100). Here God’s foreknowledge can be seen to have anticipated not only the naturalistic origin theories current in the time of the early Fathers, but also those prevalent today.—ED.

4. *The Fourth Day (Genesis 1:14–19)*

1:14–19 *And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to separate the day from the night, and let them be for signs and for seasons and for days and years, and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light upon the earth. And it was so. And God made the two great lights, the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night; He made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heavens to give light upon the earth, to rule over the day and over the night, and to separate the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. And there was evening and there was morning, a fourth day.*

The Fourth Day of Creation is a source of great embarrassment for those who would like to fit the Six Days into an evolutionary framework. There is absolutely no way this can be done if the sun was actually created on the Fourth Day.

For this reason, such apologists for the evolutionary interpretation have to believe that the sun was really created on the First Day with the heavens, but only *appeared* on the Fourth Day—apparently after the cloud covering of the earth during the first three days had lifted.\*

But we should remind ourselves once more that the first chapters of Genesis are not an account of the natural development of the earth according to the laws now governing this development, but an account of the miraculous beginnings of all things. We are not free to rearrange the Days of Genesis to fit our theories; we must rather humble our understanding so as to comprehend what the sacred text actually says. And here as always the Holy Fathers are our key to this comprehension. How did they understand the Fourth Day?

The Holy Fathers are unanimous in affirming that the sun and the heavenly luminaries were *created* on the Fourth Day; they did not merely *appear* then. There is no reason why, if the text of Genesis permitted it, the Fathers could not have accepted the seemingly more “natural explanation” that the light of the sun illuminated the first

---

\* This explanation is given by “old-earth/progressive creationists” as well as by “Christian evolutionists.”—ED.



The creation of the sun, moon, and stars ("lights in the firmament of the heavens") on the Fourth Day of Creation. (It will be noticed that, in this icon and in the ones on p. 172 and the front cover, the plants are shown to have already been created on the Third Day.)

*Contemporary wall painting from the Far Monastery of St. John the Forerunner, Greece.*

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

three days of creation, but that the orb of the sun only became visible from earth on the Fourth Day. That they universally reject this explanation can only mean that the text of Genesis does not allow it.

St. John Chrysostom writes: "He created the sun on the Fourth Day so that you might not think that it produces the day."<sup>30</sup>

St. Basil teaches:

The heavens and the earth had come first; after them, light had been created, day and night separated, and in turn, the firmament and dry land revealed. Water had been collected into a fixed and definite gathering. The earth had been filled with its proper fruits; for, it had brought forth countless kinds of herbs, and had been adorned with varied species of plants. However, the sun did not yet exist, nor the moon, lest men might call the sun the first cause and father of light, and lest they who are ignorant of God might deem it the producer of what grows from the earth.... If the creation of light had preceded, why, now, is the sun in turn said to have been made to give light?... At the time [the First Day] the actual nature of light was introduced, but now this solar body has been made ready to be a vehicle for that first-created light....\* And do not tell me that it is impossible for these to be separated. I certainly do not say that the separation of light from the solar body is possible for you and me, but that that which we are able to separate in thought can also be separated in actuality by the Creator of its nature.... "Let them serve," He says, "for the fixing of days," not for making days, but for ruling the days. For, day and night are earlier than the generation of the luminaries.<sup>31</sup>

---

\* St. John Damascene also states that the sun and other luminaries, created on the Fourth Day, were made to serve as "receptacles" of the light created on the First Day (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.7, FC 37, pp. 215–16). Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus sets forth the same teaching in order to explain the order of God's creative acts. To the question "Why did God create the plants before, and the animals after, the heavenly lights?" Blessed Theodoret replies, "Animals have eyes and could not have tolerated the excessively bright light. But when this [light] was apportioned among the lesser and the greater lights, it emitted a brightness commensurate with the vision of the animals. Plants, in contrast, have no senses" (*Questions on Genesis* 16, LEC 1, pp. 39–40).—Ed.



The creation of the sun, moon, and stars on the  
Fourth Day of Creation (detail).  
*Interior fresco from Sucevita Monastery,  
Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

St. Ambrose makes a special emphasis on this point:

Look first upon the firmament of heaven which was made before the sun; look first upon the earth which began to be visible and was already formed before the sun put in its appearance; look at the plants of the earth which preceded in time the light of the sun. The bramble preceded the sun; the blade of grass is older than the moon. Therefore, do not believe that object to be a god to which the gifts of God are seen to be preferred. Three days have passed. No one, meanwhile, has looked for the sun, yet the brilliance of light has been in evidence everywhere. For the day, too, has its light which is itself the precursor of the sun.<sup>32</sup>

The idea that life on earth from the beginning was dependent on the sun, and even that the earth itself comes from the sun—is a recent idea that is nothing but the sheerest guess; it even has no direct connection with the truth or falsity of the so-called evolution of life on earth. Because men in recent centuries have been looking for a “new” and “natural” explanation of the world’s origin, having rejected the explanation that comes from Divine revelation, it has seemed a matter of course that the sun—so much larger and astronomically more significant than the earth, and the center of the earth’s orbit—should precede the earth, rather than the other way around.

But Divine revelation, as interpreted by the Holy Fathers, tells us the contrary: that the earth comes first, both in time and in significance, and the sun comes second. If our minds were not so chained to the intellectual fashions of the times, if we were not so fearful of being thought “behind the times,” we would not have such difficulty in opening our minds to this alternative explanation of the world’s beginnings.

In the Scriptural-Patristic view the earth—as the home of man, the pinnacle of God’s creation—is the center of the universe. Everything else—no matter what the scientific explanation of its present state and movement, or the physical immensity of it in comparison to the earth—is secondary, and was made for the sake of the earth, that is, for man. Our God is of such power and majesty that we need not doubt that in a single momentary exercise of His creative might He brought

into being this whole earth—large to us, but only a speck in the whole universe—and that in another moment of His power He made the whole immensity of the stars of heaven. He could do vastly more than that if He willed; in the inspired text of Genesis He has left us the barest outline of what He did do, and this account is not required to accord with our human speculations and guesses.

In our days it has become fashionable and easy to believe that everything “evolved,” by absolutely uniform laws which we can now observe, from a primordial blob of energy or matter; if one needs “God” to explain anything, it is only to be the “creator” of this blob, or the initiator of the “big bang” that supposedly has produced everything there is. To-day it requires a broader mind, less chained to “public opinion,” to begin to see the enormity of the creative acts of God as described in Genesis. The Holy Fathers—the most “sophisticated” and “scientific” minds of their time—can be the unchainers of our fettered minds.

But surely, it might be asked, the creations of God must make sense from the “natural” point of view also: Why, therefore, did God create such an enormous body as the sun to serve such a small body as the earth? Couldn’t He have conserved this energy and made a sun more in accordance with the scale of the earth?

One could, of course, conceive of a sun much smaller than the one we know and much closer to the earth, while preserving its apparent size as seen from the earth. But such a sun would expend its energy many times more rapidly than our present sun does. Evidently God made the sun the size and the distance from earth it needs to have if it is to give to earth the amount of light and heat it requires to support life to the end of this age, when “the sun shall be darkened” (Matt. 24:29).

We may also see another, mystical reason for the fact that the light precedes the sun in the days of creation. Here, admittedly, we have no Fathers to quote, and we offer this interpretation as our own opinion.

We will see below that the separation of man into male and female was not part of the original “image” in which God created him; and we know that it will not be part of man’s nature in the eternal Kingdom of Heaven, for “in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven” (Matt. 22:30).

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

Rather, God made the division into male and female foreseeing the fall of man and that the increase of mankind would require a passionate mode of generation.

Might it not be, then, that the sun and moon are also not part of God's original "image" of His creation, but were only created to mark the days and months and years of man's fallen estate? The original light, created on the First Day, had no need of a body to contain it. At the end of the world "shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven" (Matt. 24:29); and in the Kingdom of Heaven, as on the First Day of Creation, there will be once more light without the sun and moon—for "the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it; for the glory of God did lighten it" (Apoc. 21:23).

But these are mysteries at which we can do no more than guess.

### 5. *The Fifth Day (Genesis 1:20–23)*

*1:20–23 And God said, Let the waters bring forth swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the firmament of the heavens. So God created the great sea monsters and every living creature that moves, with which the waters swarm, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth. And there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day.*

In his commentary on the Fifth Day of Creation, St. John Chrysostom emphasizes the preciseness and accurateness of the order in which the creation is described.

The blessed Moses, instructed by the Spirit of God, teaches us with such detail ... so that we might clearly know both the order and the way of the creation of each thing. If God had not been concerned for our salvation and had not guided the tongue of the Prophet, it would have been sufficient to say that God created the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and living creatures, without indicating either the order of the days or what was created earlier and what later...





The creation of the creatures of the sea and air on the Fifth Day of Creation.  
*Byzantine mosaic from the Monreale Cathedral, Sicily, twelfth century.*

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)



The creation of the creatures of the sea and air on the Fifth Day of Creation.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

But he distinguishes so clearly both the order of creation and the number of days, and instructs us about everything with great condescension, in order that we, coming to know the whole truth, would no longer heed the false teachings of those who speak of everything according to their own reasonings, but might comprehend the unutterable power of our Creator.<sup>33</sup>

Thus, on the Fifth Day, he writes:

Just as of the earth He said only: “Let it bring forth,” and there appeared a great variety of flowers, herbs, and seeds, and everything occurred by His word alone, so also here He said: “Let the waters bring forth swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the firmament of the heavens,” and suddenly there appeared so many kinds of crawling things, such a variety of birds, that it is impossible even to enumerate them with words.<sup>34</sup>



The creation of the creatures of the sea and air on the Fifth Day of Creation.  
*Interior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

St. Basil writes:

All water was in eager haste to fulfill the command of its Creator, and the great and ineffable power of God immediately produced an efficacious and active life in creatures of which one would not even be able to enumerate the kinds, as soon as the capacity for propagating living creatures came to the waters through His command.<sup>35</sup>

And St. Ambrose:

At this command the waters immediately poured forth their offspring. The rivers were in labor. The lakes produced their quota of life. The sea itself began to bear all manner of reptiles.... We are unable to record the multiplicity of the names of all those species which by Divine command were brought to life in a moment of time. At the same instant substantial form and the principle of life were brought into existence.... The whale, as well as the frog, came into existence at the same time by the same creative power.<sup>36</sup>

Here, as in the creation of all living things, God creates the first of each kind:

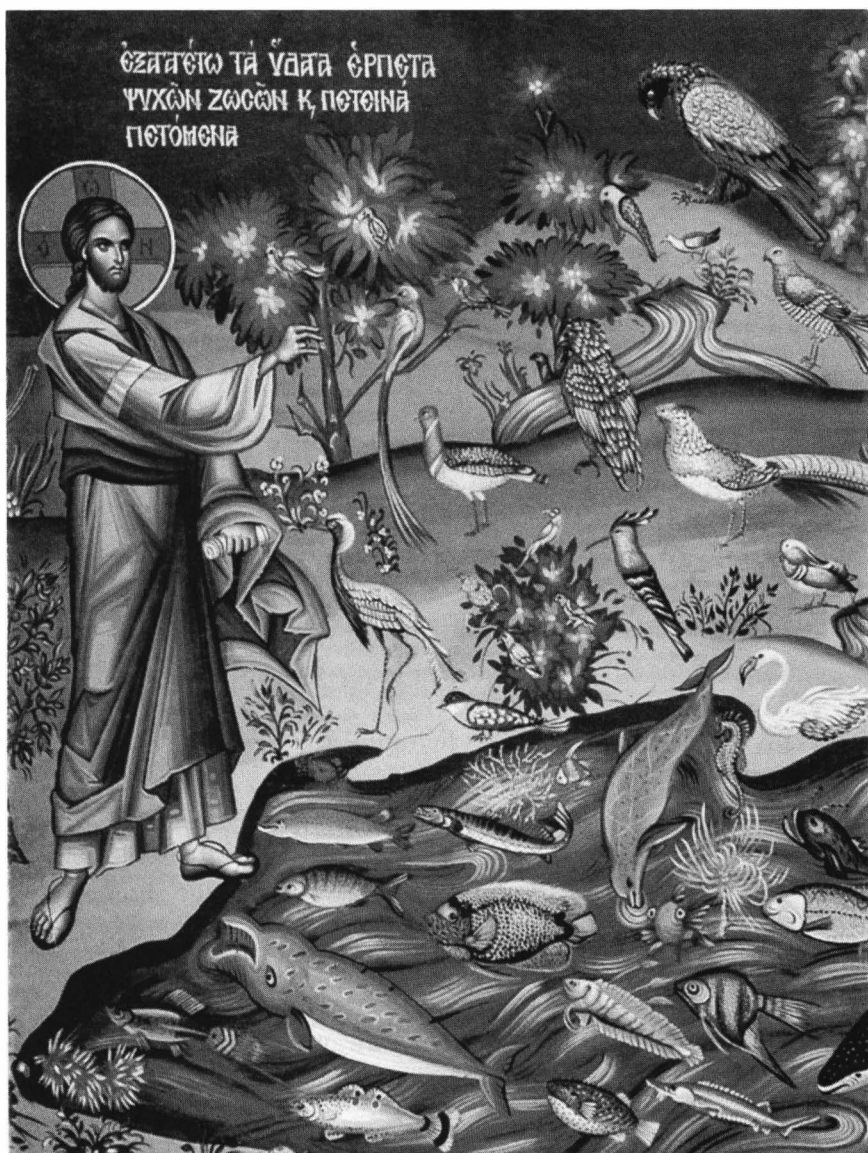
God orders the firstlings of each kind to be brought forth, seeds, as it were, for nature; and their numbers are controlled by successive progeny, whenever they must increase and become numerous (St. Basil).<sup>37</sup>

Here, therefore, let us examine the meaning of the expression, repeated on each of the three days in which life is created, “each according to its kind.”\*

There can be no doubt whatever that the Holy Fathers understood, clearly and unanimously, that on these three days God created all the *kinds* of creatures that we know today. This can be seen in their

---

\* In the Septuagint, the Greek word for “kind” is *γένος*; in the Masoretic Text, the Hebrew word is *min*.—ED.



The creation of the creatures of the sea and air on the Fifth Day of Creation.  
*Contemporary wall painting from the Far Monastery of St. John the Forerunner, Greece.*

often-repeated assertions that God creates immediately and instantly, that it is His word alone that brings the creatures into being, that it is not a natural property of the waters or earth to bring forth life. On the latter point St. Basil writes (speaking of the Sixth Day):

When He said: "Let it bring forth," [the earth] did not produce what was stored up in it, but He Who gave the command also bestowed upon it the power to bring forth. Neither did the earth, when it heard, "Let it bring forth vegetation and the fruit trees," produce plants which it had hidden in it; nor did it send up to the surface the palm or the oak or the cypress which had been hidden somewhere down below in its womb. On the contrary, it is the Divine Word that is the origin of all things made. "Let the earth bring forth"; not, let it put forth what it has, but, let it acquire what it does not have, since God is enduing it with the power of active force.<sup>38</sup>

The Holy Fathers have a very definite teaching on the "kinds" of creation. Let us only bear in mind here that we need not define precisely the limits of these "kinds." The "species" of modern taxonomy (the science of classification) are sometimes arbitrary and do not necessarily correspond to the "kinds" of Genesis;\* but in general one might say that the Fathers understand as included in a "kind" those

---

\* The definition of "species" has been the subject of much debate in the modern scientific community. In the first half of the twentieth century, a species was generally defined as a group of plants or animals that are able to interbreed and produce fertile offspring. In 1940 and again in 1942, evolutionary biologist Ernst Mayr proposed a definition that was much less limiting: a species is a group that is "reproductively isolated from other such groups," i.e., does not generally mate with another group, although it may be capable of doing so (Mayr, *Systematics and the Origin of Species*, p. 120). This new definition of species is today accepted by many biologists. Because it is so loose, it makes it easier to show that one "species" (actually a breeding population) can "evolve" into another. Thus, for example, the polar bear and the grizzly bear are classified in modern taxonomy as separate species, although they are capable of mating with each other and producing fertile offspring. In view of the Patristic teaching on the "kinds" described in Genesis, however, it is evident that these two "species" of bear are but different varieties within one of the original created "kinds."—ED.

creatures capable of producing a fertile offspring, as will be seen in what follows.

St. Basil teaches that the “kinds” of Genesis (except, of course, for those that may have become extinct)\* maintain their nature to the end of time:

There is nothing truer than this, that each plant either has seed or there exists in it some generative power. And this accounts for the expression “of its own kind.” For the shoot of the reed is not productive of an olive tree, but from the reed comes another reed; and from seeds spring plants related to the seeds sown. Thus, what was put forth by the earth in its first generation has been preserved until the present time, since the kinds persisted through constant reproduction.<sup>39</sup>

And further:

The nature of existing objects, set in motion by one command, passes through creation without change, by generation and destruction, preserving the succession of the kinds through resemblance, until it reaches the very end. It begets a horse as the successor of a horse, a lion of a lion, and an eagle of an eagle; and it continues to preserve each of the animals by uninterrupted successions until the consummation of the universe. No length of time causes the

---

\* The physical extinction of many of the original “kinds” mentioned in Genesis is one of the results of the “bondage of corruption” (Rom. 8:21) that began at the fall of man. In a sense, however, the extinction of these “kinds” is not absolute. Viewing this question theologically, the Orthodox priest Fr. Timofey Alferov writes: “In the present condition we see both individual death and the dying out of species. Information on the majority of living creatures has already been lost, is disincarnate, has lost its material bearers, and has returned to its Source, in a pre-creation condition. These creatures exist only in their ideas, which were in God pre-eternally, before time. For us, though, there remains only a partial knowledge of certain traits of these creatures in excavated bones and imprints” (Alferov, *Two Cosmogonies* [in Russian], p. 72). (On the “ideas” [*logoi*] of created beings that preexisted in God, see pp 86n above and pp. 217n, 477n below.)—Ed.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

specific characteristics of the animals to be corrupted or effaced,\* but, as if established just recently, nature, ever fresh, moves along with time.<sup>40</sup>

Similarly, St. Ambrose teaches:

In the pine cone nature seems to express an image of itself; it preserves its peculiar properties which it received from that Divine and celestial command, and it repeats in the succession and order of the years its generation until the end of time is fulfilled.<sup>41</sup>

And the same Father says even more decisively:

The Word of God permeates every creature in the constitution of the world. Hence, as God had ordained, all kinds of living creatures were quickly produced from the earth. In compliance with a fixed law they all succeed each other from age to age according to their aspect and kind. The lion generates a lion; the tiger, a tiger; the ox, an ox; the swan, a swan; and the eagle, an eagle. What was once enjoined became in nature a habit for all time. Hence the earth has not ceased to offer the homage of her service. The original species of living creatures is reproduced for future ages by successive generations of its kind.<sup>42</sup> \*\*

---

\* Here St. Basil is not necessarily claiming that no “kind” of creature ever goes extinct. Within the context of St. Basil’s broader discussion, one may understand this statement to mean simply that, no matter how much time passes, each kind of animal maintains its “characteristics” (“peculiarities”—τὰ ἰδιώματα) as a kind: a horse will always beget a horse, etc.—ED.

\*\* St. Athanasius the Great likewise writes on how each kind of creature preserves its own essence, and specifically on how irrational creatures cannot be transformed into rational man: “‘The invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made’ (Rom. 1:20); and neither the light is as the night, nor the sun as the moon; nor the irrational as rational man; nor the Angels as the Thrones, nor the Thrones as the Authorities, yet they are all creatures, but each of the things made according to its kind exists and remains in its



The attempts of breeders, both of animals and plants, in all ages to make a new species by mating individuals of different species produces (when it succeeds) a result that only proves the Patristic maxim of the constancy of species: these “hybrids” are sterile and cannot reproduce themselves.\* St. Ambrose uses this example to warn men against “unnatural unions” which go against the laws which God established in the Days of Creation:

---

own essence, as it was made” (*Four Discourses against the Arians* 2.19, NPNF 2 4, pp. 358–59).

The modern Holy Father St. John of Kronstadt (†1908) echoes the same Patristic teaching with regard to animals and man: “The Creator in the beginning made only the beginnings of fish and birds, their kinds, and left their propagation to them themselves, under His protection, just as the propagation of the human race. Even till now all kinds of fish and birds, having propagated themselves infinitely, exactly preserve the appearance, temperaments and habits of their own kinds, not mixing themselves in the slightest with other ones. Every kind of fish and bird, and every kind of reptile, remain also the same even now such as they were several thousand years ago, with the same characteristics which they received from the Creator in the beginning” (*Talks on the Days of Creation*, in *Complete Collected Works* [in Russian], vol. 1, p. 79). (It will be noted that St. John of Kronstadt here contradicts not only the theory of evolution but also its corollary of “millions of years” of earth history, despite the fact that both ideas had gained wide acceptance in his time. Elsewhere, St. John explicitly rejected evolutionary theory; see pp. 794–95 below.)—ED.

\*Today, most Protestant creation scientists take a broader view of the “kinds” than did Sts. Basil and Ambrose. While the latter included within the same “kind” only those creatures that produce fertile offspring, the former also include creatures that generally produce infertile offspring—arguing that, in very rare cases, pairings of such creatures (mules and horses, lions and tigers) do produce fertile offspring. However, as Orthodox Christian doctor of zoology Yuri Zharikov has pointed out, there are fundamental biological reasons why such pairings do not generally produce fertile offspring, and the rare exceptions do not disprove the rule. Dr. Zharikov says that the ability to regularly produce fertile progeny is a good indicator of the “kinds” described in Genesis, but he adds that it is impossible to know the exact biological limits of what the original “kinds” might have been. This is because, not only is there no way for us to scientifically investigate what creatures were like before the fall, but we cannot even discover what they were like immediately after the fall, before the loss and reshuffling of genetic information that has taken place in the post-fall world through mass extinctions and divergence of populations of populations (personal communication). (See Dr. Zharikov’s article on pp. 822–60 below.)—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

What pure and untarnished generations follow without intermingling one after another, so that a thymallus produces a thymallus; a sea-wolf, a sea-wolf. The sea-scorpion, too, preserves unstained its marriage bed.... Fish know nothing of union with alien species. They do not have unnatural betrothals such as are designedly brought about between animals of two different species as, for instance, the donkey and the mare, or again the female donkey and the horse, both being examples of unnatural union. Certainly there are cases in which nature suffers more in the nature of defilement rather than that of injury to the individual. Man as an abettor of hybrid barrenness is responsible for this. He considers a mongrel animal more valuable than one of a genuine species. You mix together alien species and you mingle diverse seeds.<sup>43</sup>

The distinctness and integrity of the “seeds” of each of the “kinds” of creation is so much a part of Scriptural and Patristic thought that it serves in the Gospel as the basis for the Parable of our Lord regarding the distinctness of good and evil, virtue and sin. St. Ambrose uses this parable (Matt. 13:24–30) to illustrate the integrity of the seeds of each “kind”:

There is no danger that the precept of God, to which nature has accustomed itself, may become void in future time by a failure of propagation, since today the integrity of the stock is still preserved in the seeds. We know that cockle and the other alien seeds which often are interspersed among fruits of the earth are called “weeds” in the Gospel. These, however, belong to a special species and have not degenerated into another species by a process of mutation from the seed of the wheat plant. The Lord told us that this is so when He said: “The Kingdom of Heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field, but while men were asleep, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat.” We gather from this that weeds and wheat certainly seem to be distinct both in name and in kind. Hence, the servants, too, said to the householder, “Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? How then does it have weeds?” He said to them, “An enemy hath done this.” One is the seed of the devil; the other, that of

Christ which is sown in accordance with justice. Therefore, the Son of Man sowed one and the devil sowed the other. For that reason the nature of each is distinct, since the sowers are opposed. Christ sows the Kingdom of God, whereas the devil sows sin. How, therefore, can this kingdom be of one and the same race as sin? "This is the Kingdom of God," He says, "as though a man should cast seed into the earth" (Mark 4:26).<sup>44</sup>

Just as the distinction of species is related to the distinction between good and evil, so is the confusion of species related to moral relativity. It is certainly well known how believers in the relativity of good and evil, of virtue and vice, make use of the cosmological theory of universal evolution to defend their belief as "scientific" and "factual": if man was "once" a lower animal and is "evolving" into something else, then how can his inconstant nature be compelled to obey commandments given at only one stage of his "development"? Marxist atheism bound itself to this theory of evolution from the very beginning and to this day preaches it as one of the cardinal doctrines of its relativistic philosophy.

The idea of the consistency of nature and the integrity and distinctness of its "kinds" runs throughout Patristic literature. It serves as a model, for example, of the resurrection of the human body. St. Ambrose writes, in his treatise on the resurrection:

Nature in all its produce remains consistent with itself.... Seeds of one kind cannot be changed into another kind of plant, nor bring forth produce differing from its own seeds, so that men should spring from serpents and flesh from teeth; how much more, indeed, is it to be believed that whatever has been sown rises again in its own nature, and that crops do not differ from their seed, that soft things do not spring from hard, nor hard from soft, nor is poison changed into blood; but that flesh is restored from flesh, bone from bone, blood from blood, the humors of the body from humors. Can ye then, ye heathen, who are able to assert a change, deny a restoration of the nature?<sup>45</sup>

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

In a similar view, St. Gregory of Nyssa writes:

Whereas we learn from Scripture in the account of the first Creation, that first the earth brought forth “the green herb” (as the narrative says), and that then from this plant seed was yielded, from which, when it was shed on the ground, the same form of the original plant again sprang up, the Apostle, it is to be observed, declares that this very same thing happens in the resurrection also; and so we learn from him the fact, not only that our humanity will be then changed into something nobler, but also that what we have therein to expect is nothing else than that which was at the beginning.<sup>46</sup>

A strange parallel to the modern theory of universal evolution may be seen in the ancient pagan teaching of the transmigration of souls (reincarnation). The reaction of the Holy Fathers to this idea, which they universally condemned, shows how concerned they were to preserve the orderliness of creation and the distinctness of its kinds of creatures. St. Gregory of Nyssa writes:

Those who would have it that the soul migrates into natures divergent from each other seem to me to obliterate all natural distinctions; to blend and confuse together, in every possible respect, the rational, the irrational, the sentient, and the insensate; if, that is, all these are to pass into each other, with no distinct natural order excluding them from mutual transition. To say that one and the same soul, on account of a particular environment of body, is at one time a rational and intellectual soul, and that then it is cavered along with the reptiles, or herds with the birds, or is a beast of burden, or a carnivorous one, or swims in the deep; or even drops down to an insensate thing, so as to strike out roots or become a complete tree, producing buds on branches, and from those buds a flower, or a thorn, or a fruit edible or noxious—to say this, is nothing short of making all things the same and believing that one single nature runs through all beings; that there is a connection between them which blends and confuses hopelessly all the marks by which one could be distinguished from another.<sup>47</sup>

The idea that “one single nature runs through all beings,” of course, lies at the heart of the theory of universal evolution. Erasmus Darwin (the grandfather of Charles) had already pointed scientific speculation in this direction at the end of the eighteenth century.\* Such an idea is profoundly alien to Scriptural and Patristic thought.

6. *The Sixth Day (Genesis 1:24–31)*

1:24–25 *And God said, Let the earth bring forth living creatures according to their kinds: cattle and creeping things and beasts of the earth according to their kinds. And it was so. And God made the beasts of the earth according to their kinds and the cattle according to their kinds, and everything that creeps upon the ground according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.*

The teaching of the Holy Fathers on the creation of the land animals on the Sixth Day does little more than repeat what has already been said about the other living creatures. Thus, St. Ephraim writes:

The earth at God’s command immediately brought forth creeping things, beasts of the field as companions to the wild beasts; it brought forth as many beasts as were necessary for the service of him who, on that very day, transgressed the commandment of his Lord.<sup>48</sup>

St. Basil teaches:

The soul of brute beasts did not emerge after having been hidden in the earth, but it was called into existence at the time of the command.<sup>49</sup>

With this act of creation, all is ready for the appearance of man, who is to be lord over it all. But this magnificent creation is not merely for the practical use of man. There is something mystical in it; being the good creation of the All-good God, it can raise our minds to Him. St. John Chrysostom writes:

---

\* See pp. 462n, 508n, 516–17, 516n, 540n below.—ED.

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

God created everything not only for our use, but also that we, seeing the great wealth of his creations, might be astonished at the might of the Creator and might understand that all this was created with wisdom and unutterable goodness for the honor of man, who was to appear.<sup>50</sup>

St. Basil, marvelling at the grandeur of God's creation, says:

Let us glorify the Master Craftsman for all that has been done wisely and skillfully; and from the beauty of the visible things let us form an idea of Him Who is more than beautiful; and from the greatness of these perceptible and circumscribed bodies let us conceive of Him Who is infinite and immense and Who surpasses all understanding in the plenitude of His power. For even if we are ignorant of things made, yet, at least, that which in general comes under our observation is so wonderful that even the most acute mind is shown to be at a loss as regards the least of the things in the world, either in the ability to explain it worthily or to render due praise to the Creator, to Whom be all glory, honor, and power forever.<sup>51</sup>

God made the world, as St. John Damascene teaches, because, "not content to contemplate Himself, by a superabundance of goodness He saw fit that there should be some things to benefit by and participate in this goodness."<sup>52</sup>\*

Perhaps no part of Scripture expresses so well the awe-inspiring

---

\* This teaching—that God's goodness is the only motive and reason for the creation—is also found in the writings of earlier Fathers. St. Athanasius, for example, writes: "For God is good, or rather is the very source of goodness, and one who is good could not be grudging about anything; hence, grudging existence to no one, He has made all things out of nothing through His own Word, our Lord Jesus Christ" (*On the Incarnation of the Word* 3, SC 199.270, NPNF 2 4, p. 37\*). St. Gregory of Nyssa writes that God created man "in the superabundance of love ... because it was fitting that neither His light should be unseen, nor His glory without witness, nor His goodness unenjoyed" (*Catechetical Oration* 5, GNO 3.4.17, NPNF

majesty of God in His creation, and man's nothingness in comparison, as does the passage in which God speaks to Job out of the whirlwind:

Where wast thou when I founded the earth? Tell me now, if thou hast knowledge, who set the measures of it, if thou knowest? Or who stretched a line upon it? On what are its rings fastened? And who is he that laid the cornerstone upon it? When the stars were made, all My angels praised Me with a loud voice. And I shut up the sea with gates, when it rushed out, coming forth out of its mother's womb. And I made a cloud its clothing, and swathed it in mist. And I set bounds to it, surrounding it with bars and gates. And I said to it, Hitherto shalt thou come, but thou shalt not go beyond, but thy waves shall be confined within thee. Or did I order the morning light in thy time; and did the morning star then first see his appointed place; to lay hold of the extremities of the earth, to cast out the ungodly out of it? Or didst thou take clay of the ground, and form a living creature, and set it with the power of speech upon the earth? (Job 38:4–14, LXX).

The Genesis account of the creation of man is given in two accounts, those of chapter 1 and chapter 2; these we shall examine in the next chapter.

---

2 5, p. 478\*; see also St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38.9–10, NPNF 2 7, p. 347).

The Fathers also emphasize that God was not bound by necessity to create. In the superabundance of His goodness and love, God created all things freely, solely through the exercise of His will. See the quotations of St. John Chrysostom and St. Gregory of Nyssa on pp. 136, 165 above, as well as St. Hippolytus, *Against Noetus* 10, ANF 5, p. 227; St. Methodius of Olympus, *Extracts from the Work on Things Created* 7, ANF 6, p. 381; St. Athanasius, *Four Discourses against the Arians* 2.2, 2.31, NPNF 2 4, pp. 349, 364–65; St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 1.7, NPNF 2 8, p. 56; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Catechetical Oration* 5, NPNF 2 5, p. 478; St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 1.8, NPNF 2 9, p. 7b; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Four Hundred Texts on Love* 4.3–4, *Philokalia* 2, p. 100; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 103, 135, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 393, 410.—ED.



The creation of Adam.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*



7. *The Seventh Day (Genesis 2:1–3)*

*2:1–3 Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God finished His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done. So God blessed the seventh day and hallowed it, because on it God rested from all His work which He had done in creation.*

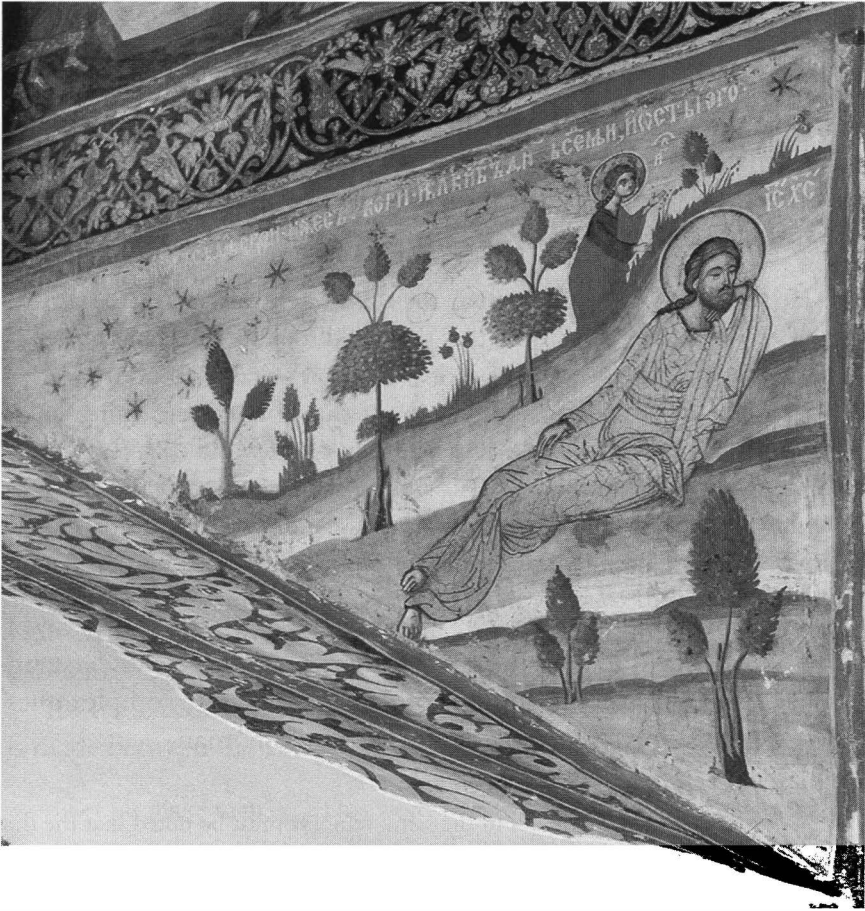
Of this, God's "sabbath" rest from creation, St. John Chrysostom writes:

The Divine Scripture indicates here that God rested from His works; but in the Gospel Christ says: "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work" (John 5:17). In comparing these utterances, is there not a contradiction to be found in them? May it not be so; in the words of the Divine Scripture there is no contradiction whatever. When the Scripture here says: "God rested from all His works," it thereby instructs us that on the Seventh Day He ceased to create and to bring out of non-existence into existence; but when Christ says: "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work," it thereby indicates to us His uninterrupted Providence, and it calls "work" the preservation of what exists, the giving to it of continuance (of existence) and the governance of it at all times. Otherwise, how could the universe exist, if a higher hand did not govern and order everything visible and the human race?<sup>53</sup>

Viewing the marvel of what happens every day in what we have become accustomed to call "nature"—the development, for example, of a fully mature plant, animal, or even human being from a tiny seed—we cannot help but see the continuous creative activity of God. But this is not at all the same as the Creation of the Six Days, the original bringing into being of everything there is. The first chapter of Genesis describes this unique and unrepeatable creation.

Being accustomed to the "working" of God in our present world, we can scarcely conceive of that other kind of "work" which He did in the Six Days. The world, then, while perfect and fully formed, was still

## THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)



God resting on the Seventh Day from all His work.  
*Interior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

“new.” St. Gregory the Theologian emphasizes that when God wished to create Adam of the dust, “the Word ... having taken a part of the newly created earth, with His immortal hands formed my image.”<sup>54</sup> St. Ephraim the Syrian teaches:

Just as the trees, the grasses, the animals, birds and man were at the same time both old and young: old in the appearance of their members and structures, young in the time of their creation; so also the

moon was at the same time both old and young: young because it was just created, old because it was full as on the fifteenth day.<sup>55\*</sup>

St. Ephraim<sup>56</sup> and other Fathers emphasize this newness by stating their belief that the world was created in the spring. St. Ambrose ties this together with the fact that among the Hebrews the year began in the spring:

He created heaven and earth at the time when the months began, from which time it is fitting that the world took its rise. Then there was the mild temperature of spring, a season suitable for all things. Consequently, the year, too, has the stamp of a world coming to birth.... In order to show that the creation of the world took place in the spring, Scripture says: "This month shall be to you the beginning of months, it is for you the first in the months of the year" (Ex. 12:2), calling the first month the springtime. It was fitting that the beginning of the year be the beginning of generation.<sup>57</sup>

Now, after this look at the Holy Fathers' very realistic understanding of the Six Days of Creation, let us turn to the more complex question of the making of the crown of God's creation, man.

---

\* St. Bede the Venerable writes in the same vein: "It must be noted that the first shoots of the trees and plants did not come from seed, but they sprang forth from the earth; for the earth, which appeared dry in accordance with the command of the Creator, suddenly was beautified with plants and arrayed with flowering groves, and fruits of every type continuously came forth from the seeds they bear. It was fitting that in the beginning, whatever the form of each thing, it came forth according to the command of God as mature; in the same manner it must be believed that man, for whom all things on earth had been created, was fashioned in a mature form, that is, as a youthful man" (*Commentary on Genesis* 1:10–13, ACT, pp. 121–22).

This teaching—that God's first creations were fully formed, with the appearance of age, having no need of generation or growth—was used by St. John Chrysostom as a demonstration of God's power to bring about the general resurrection at the end of the world. "[God] took earth ... and made man," he said; "no pangs of travail preceded" the coming-into-being of the irrational creatures, and "no rains came down" to facilitate the fashioning of the plants. "This is more inexplicable than the resurrection.... With God nothing is difficult" (*Homilies on 1 Corinthians* 17.2, PG 61.141, NPNF 1 12, pp. 97–98 [7.3]\*).—ED.

## CHAPTER FOUR

# *The Creation of Man*

(Genesis 1:26–31, 2:4–7)

*1:26–27 Then God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness, and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth. So God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.*

We have seen that the Creation of the Six Days is the work of the Holy Trinity, and in particular that the Father commands: “Let there be!” and the Son creates.

In the creation of man, however, a special consultation, as it were, is made between the Persons of the Trinity. Of this St. Basil says:

“Let Us make man” ... This word was not yet used for any of the organized beings; there was light, and the commandment was simple: “God said, Let there be light.” The heaven was made, and there was no deliberation for the heaven.... Here, man is not yet, and there is a deliberation over man. God did not say, as for the other beings: “Let man be!” Recognize the dignity that belongs to you. He did not cause your origin by a commandment, but there was a consultation in God in order to know how to introduce into life this living being worthy of honor....

Why did God not say, “Make,” but “Let Us make man”? It is so that you might recognize the sovereignty. He desires that in bringing your attention on the Father, you would not deny the Son; He desires you to know that the Father has created by the Son and that the Son has created by the will of the Father, and that you should glorify the Father in the Son, and the Son in the Holy Spirit....



The Holy Trinity appearing to Abraham in the form of three visitors.  
*Fresco by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration,  
Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*

## THE CREATION OF MAN

[But] He did not say: “And They created,” so that you might not draw from this a pretext for polytheism.<sup>1</sup>

Similarly, St. John Chrysostom says:

Why, when the heaven was created, was it not said: “Let Us make,” but rather: Let there be heaven, let there be light, and so concerning each part of creation; but here only is there added: “Let Us make,” by which is expressed counsel, deliberation, and communication with someone equal in honor? Who is it that is to be created that he is granted such honor? It is man—a great and wondrous living being, and for God more precious than all the creation.... There was counsel, deliberation, and communication, not because God has need of counsel—may this not be!—but in order by the very means of expression to show us the dignity of what is created....

And Who is it to Whom God says: “Let us make man”? It is the *Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Prince of Peace, Father of the age to come* (Is. 9:6 KJV q.v.), the Only Begotten Son of God Himself. To Him He says: “Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness.” He did not say: “In Mine and Thine,” or “in Mine and Yours,” but “in Our image,” indicating a single image and a single likeness.<sup>2\*</sup>

St. Gregory the Theologian speaks very poetically about the creation of man as a mixture of the higher and lower worlds that God had already created. First:

He gave being to the world of thought [i.e., the world of intellectual beings, angels], as far as I can reason on these matters, and estimate great things in my own poor language. Then, when His first Creation was in good order, He conceives a second world, material and visible; and this a system of earth and sky and all that is in the midst

---

\* On the counsel or deliberation of the Persons of the Holy Trinity in making man, see also St. Justin Martyr, *Dialogue with Trypho* 62, 128; St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.18; St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Against Heresies* 4.Preface.4, 4.20.1; Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *Questions on Genesis* 19.2; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 3; and St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Against Julian* 29.—ED.

of them; an admirable creation indeed when we look at the fair form of every part, but yet more worthy of admiration when we consider the harmony and unison of the whole, and how each part fits in with every other in fair order... This was to show that He could call into being not only a nature akin to Himself [i.e., the angelic, invisible world], but also one altogether alien to Him. For akin to Deity are those natures which are intellectual, and only to be comprehended by mind; but all of which sense can take cognizance are utterly alien to It; and of these the furthest removed from It are all those which are entirely destitute of soul and power of motion.

Mind, then, and sense, thus distinguished from each other, had remained within their own boundaries, and bore in themselves the magnificence of the Creator-Word, silent praisers and thrilling heralds of His mighty work. Not yet was there any mingling of both, nor any mixture of these opposites, tokens of a greater wisdom and generosity in the creation of natures; nor as yet were the whole riches of goodness made known. Now the Creator-Word, determining to exhibit this, and to produce a single living being out of both (the invisible and the visible creation, I mean) fashions man; and taking a body from already existing matter, and placing in it a breath taken from Himself (which the Word knew to be an intelligent soul, and the image of God),\* as a sort of second world, great in littleness,\*\* He placed him on the earth, a new angel, a mingled worshipper, fully initiated into the visible creation, but only partially into the intellectual; king of all upon earth, but subject to the King above; earthly and heavenly; temporal and yet immortal; visible and yet intellectual; halfway between greatness and lowliness; in one person combining spirit and flesh; spirit because of the favor bestowed on him, flesh on account of the height to which he had been raised; the one that he might continue to live and glorify his benefactor, the other that he might suffer, and by suffering be put in remembrance,

---

\* St. Maximus the Confessor expounds on the above teaching of St. Gregory the Theologian, observing that "our progenitor Adam came into being in a secret way"; see St. Maximus, *Ambigua* 42, PPS 25, p. 88.—ED.

\*\* Or, "as a sort of second world, a great one within a small one (ἐν μικρῷ μέγαν)" (SC 358.124).—ED.

and be corrected if he became proud in his greatness; a living creature, trained here and then moved elsewhere; and to complete the mystery, deified by its inclination to God.<sup>3</sup>

What is this image of God? Different Holy Fathers have emphasized different aspects of the image of God in man: some have mentioned man's dominion over the lower creation (which is mentioned specifically in the text of Genesis); others, his reason; still others, his freedom.\* St. Gregory of Nyssa sums up the meaning of the image of God most concisely:

He creates man for no other reason than that He is good; and being such, and having this as His reason for entering upon the creation of our nature, He would not exhibit the power of this goodness in an imperfect form, giving our nature some one of the things at His disposal, and grudging it a share in another: but the perfect form of goodness is here to be seen by His both bringing man into being from nothing, and fully supplying him with all good gifts. But since the list of individual good gifts is a long one, it is out of the question to apprehend it numerically. The language of Scripture therefore expresses it concisely by a comprehensive phrase, in saying that man was made "in the image of God": for this is the same as to say that He made human nature participant in all good; for if the Deity is the

---

\* St. Irenaeus speaks of the "image of God" in a Christological light. As he makes clear, while man was created *in* the image of God (Gen. 1:26), the Word of God *is* the image of God; and when this invisible Word became flesh in Christ, "He showed forth the image truly" (*Against Heresies* 5.16.2, ANF 1, p. 544). St. Basil the Great also speaks of the Son as the image of the Father, and adds that the Son and Father have one and the same image: "Father and Son have by absolute necessity the same form, but the form is here understood as becomes the Divine, not in bodily shape, but in the proper qualities of Godhead.... To Whom does He [God the Father] say, 'in Our image,' to Whom if it is not to Him Who is 'the brightness of His glory and the express image of His Person' (Heb. 1:3), 'the image of the invisible God' (Col. 1:15)? It is then to His living image, to Him Who has said 'I and My Father are one' (John 10:30), 'He that hath seen Me hath seen the Father' (John 14:9), that God says 'Let Us make man in Our image.' Where is the unlikeness in these Beings Who have only one image?" (*Hexaemeron* 9.6, NPNF 2 8, p. 106).—ED.



fullness of good, and this is His image, then the image finds its resemblance to the Archetype in being filled with all good.<sup>4</sup>

What is the difference between the “image” and the “likeness” of God in man? The Holy Fathers explain that the image is given to us in full and cannot be lost; the likeness, however, was given in the beginning only potentially, and man himself was to work on attaining its perfection. St. Basil the Great teaches:

“Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness.” We possess the one by creation, we acquire the other by free will. In the first structure it is given us to be born in the image of God; by free will there is formed in us the being in the likeness of God.... “Let Us make man in Our image”: Let him possess by creation what is in the image, but let him also become according to the likeness. God has given the power for this; if He had created you also in the likeness, where would your privilege be? Why have you been crowned? And if the Creator had given you everything, how would the Kingdom of Heaven have opened for you? But it is proper that one part is given you, while the other has been left incomplete: this is so that you might complete it yourself and might be worthy of the reward which comes from God.<sup>5\*</sup>

In the very passage of Genesis which describes the creation of man, it is said that he was created “male and female.”\*\* Is this distinction,

---

\*The distinction between the image and likeness of God in man is discussed in several passages of *The Philokalia*. See, for example, St. Diadochus of Photiki, *On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination* 4, 78, 89, *Philokalia* 1, pp. 253, 278, 288; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Four Hundred Texts on Love* 3.25, *Philokalia* 2, pp. 86–87; idem, *On the Lord's Prayer*, *Philokalia* 2, p. 294; Nicetas Stethatos, *On Spiritual Knowledge* 8, *Philokalia* 4, p. 141; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 39, 64, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 363, 376.—ED.

\*\*Christ Himself quoted this passage from Genesis. In Mark 10:6 He says: “But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.” His words “from the beginning of the creation,” it may be noted, contradict the modern secular notion that there were billions of years of earth history before the appearance of human beings (see also the words of Christ quoted on p. 298n below).—ED.

then, part of the image of God? St. Gregory of Nyssa explains that the Scripture refers here to a *twofold* creation of man:

That which was made "in the image" is one thing, and that which is now manifested in wretchedness is another. "God created man," it says; "in the image of God He created him." There is an end of the creation of that which was made "in the image": then it makes a resumption of the account of creation, and says, "male and female created He them." I presume that everyone knows that this is a departure from the Prototype: for "in Christ Jesus," as the Apostle says, "there is neither male nor female" (Gal. 3:28). Yet the phrase declares that man is thus divided.

Thus the creation of our nature is in a sense twofold: one made like to God, one divided according to this distinction: for something like this the passage darkly conveys by its arrangement, where it first says, "God created man, in the image of God He created him," and then, adding to what has been said, "male and female He created them,"—a thing which is alien from our conceptions of God.

I think that by these words Holy Scripture conveys to us a great and lofty doctrine; and the doctrine is this. While two natures—the Divine and incorporeal nature, and the irrational life of brutes—are separated from each other as extremes, human nature is the mean between them [this is similar to the idea of St. Gregory the Theologian we have already quoted]: for in the compound nature of man we may behold a part of each of the natures I have mentioned—of the Divine, the rational and intelligent element, which does not admit the distinction of male and female; of the irrational, our bodily form and structure, divided into male and female: for each of these elements is certainly to be found in all that partakes of human life. That the intellectual element, however, precedes the other,\* we learn as from one who gives in order an account of the making of man; and we learn also that his community

---

\* "Precedes," that is, in an ontological rather than a chronological sense. On the instantaneous creation of man, see pp. 218–19, 483–85 below.—ED.

and kindred with the irrational is for man a provision for reproduction....

He Who brought all things into being and fashioned man as a whole by His own will to the Divine image ... saw beforehand by His all-seeing power the failure of their will to keep a direct course to what is good, and its consequent declension from the angelic life. In order that the multitude of human souls might not be cut short by its fall ... He formed for our nature that contrivance for increase which befits those who had fallen into sin, implanting in mankind, instead of the angelic majesty of nature, that animal and irrational mode by which they now succeed one another.<sup>6\*</sup>

Thus the image of God, which, as the Holy Fathers teach, is to be found in the soul and not the body of man,\*\* has nothing to do with the division into male and female. In God's *idea* of man, one might say—man as he will be in the Kingdom of Heaven—there is neither

---

\* That is, the whole sexual function [in man] is seen to be taken from the animal creation. It was not meant to be that way in the beginning.—AUTH.

\*\* Some of the Holy Fathers—St. Justin Martyr (*On the Resurrection—Fragments* 7), St. Irenaeus of Lyons (*Against Heresies* 5.6.1–2), and St. Epiphanius of Salamis (*Panarion* 70.3)—state that the “image of God” refers to the whole man. However, the vast majority of Holy Fathers teach that the “image of God” refers to man’s soul, or, more particularly, to the highest faculty of the soul: the *nous* (νοῦς). Many of them categorically deny that the “image” refers to the body. Thus, for example, Nicetas Stethatos writes: “Only in ignorance would one claim that man is created in the image of God with respect to the organic structure of his body. He is in the image by virtue of the spiritual nature of his *nous*” (*On Spiritual Knowledge* 4, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 139–40). St. Gregory Palamas likewise writes: “To know that we have been created in God’s image prevents us from deifying even the noetic world. ‘Image’ here refers not to the body but to the nature of the *nous*” (*Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 27, *Philokalia* 4, p. 357). St. John Damascene and St. Gregory Palamas make a further distinction in this teaching, which may point to a deeper unity between those who say the “image” refers to the whole man and those who say it refers to the soul. According to Sts. John and Gregory, while the “image of God” refers to the soul, human beings are more in the image of God than are angels, because the human soul governs, sustains and gives life to the body just as God does with regard to His creation (St. John Damascene, *On the Two Wills in Christ* 16, 30, PTS 22, pp. 199, 216; St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 38–40, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 362–64).—ED.

male nor female; but God, foreknowing man's fall, made this division which is an inseparable part of man's earthly existence.\*

However, the reality of sexual life did not come about before the fall of man.\*\* St. John Chrysostom, commenting on the passage, "Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived" (Gen. 4:1)—which occurred after the fall—says:

---

\* Besides St. Gregory of Nyssa (as quoted above) and St. John Damascene (see p. 204 below), Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus (*Questions on Genesis* 37.2) and St. Maximus the Confessor (*Ambigua* 41) taught that the division between male and female human beings was made by God in foreknowledge of the fall.

Speaking of the saving work of Christ, St. Maximus says that the God-man "has done away with the difference and division [διαφορὰν τε καὶ διαίρεσιν] of nature into male and female, which human nature in no way needed for generation.... Instead of men and women He has shown us as properly and truly to be simply human beings, thoroughly transfigured in accordance with Him, and bearing His intact and completely unadulterated image, touched by no trace at all of corruption" (*Ambigua* 41, PG 91.1309A, 1309D–1312A, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, pp. 159–60\*). From this one may surmise that the "difference and division" between male and female will not exist in the state beyond the general resurrection. At the same time, however, the experience and worship of the Church would seem to indicate that human beings will bear some kind of "imprint" of maleness or femaleness in that state, since the incarnate Son of God and His Most Holy Mother—as the only ones already in their fully glorified, spiritual bodies, beyond the resurrection (see St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 37.8)—are regarded by the Church as still in some sense man and woman. One should be careful not to try to define this point too precisely, since the Scriptural-Patristic testimony of the Church does not elaborate on it. St. Gregory of Nyssa, relating the teaching of his sister St. Macrina, said that we are not now given to know what will become of each of our bodily members and organs (including sexual organs) in the state beyond the general resurrection, when they are no longer needed. "The true explanation of all these questions," he writes, "is still stored up in the hidden treasure-rooms of Wisdom, and will not come to the light until that moment when we shall be taught the mystery of the resurrection by the reality of it; and then there will be no more need of phrases to explain the things which we now hope for. Just as many questions might be started for debate among people sitting up at night as to the kind of thing that sunshine is, and then the simple appearing of it in all its beauty would render any verbal description superfluous, so every calculation that tries to arrive conjecturally at the future state will be reduced to nothingness by the object of our hopes, when it comes upon us" (*On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 464).—ED.

\*\* On this subject, see also pp. 275n, 694–95, 721–22 below.—ED.

After the disobedience, after the banishment from Paradise, then it was that married life began. Before the disobedience, the first people lived like angels, and there was no talk of cohabitation. And how could this be, when they were free of bodily needs? Thus, in the beginning life was virginal; but when, because of the carelessness (of the first people) disobedience appeared and sin entered the world, virginity fled away from them, since they had become unworthy of such a great good, and in its place there entered into effect the law of married life.<sup>7</sup>

And St. John Damascene writes:

Virginity was practiced in Paradise.... After the fall,... to keep the race from dwindling and being destroyed by death, marriage was devised, so that by the begetting of children the race of men might be preserved.

But they may ask: What, then, does “male and female” mean, and “increase and multiply”? To which we shall reply that the “increase and multiply” does not mean increasing by the marriage union exclusively, because if they had kept the commandment unbroken forever, God could have increased the race by some other means.\* But, since God, Who knows all things before they come to be, saw by His foreknowledge how they were to fall and be condemned to death, He made provision beforehand by creating them male and female and commanding them to increase and multiply.<sup>8</sup>

In this as in other respects, as we shall see later, man—like the rest of the creation—before the fall was in a state different from that after the fall, even though there is a continuity between these two states provided by God’s foreknowledge of the fall.

It should not be thought, however, that any of the Holy Fathers looked upon marriage as a “necessary evil” or denied that it is a state blessed by God. They regard it as a good thing in our present state of

---

\* This teaching is found in the writings of other Holy Fathers. See pp. 291, 291n, 494–95n, 721–22, 721n, 722n below.—ED.

sin, but it is a good thing that is second to the higher state of virginity in which Adam and Eve lived before their fall, and which is shared even now by those who have followed the counsel of the Apostle Paul to be “even as I am” (1 Cor. 7:7–8). St. Gregory of Nyssa, the very Father who teaches so clearly the origin of marriage in our kinship with the beasts, also defends the institution of marriage in the clearest fashion. Thus, in his treatise *On Virginity*, he writes:

Let no one think that we depreciate marriage as an institution. We are well aware that it is not a stranger to God’s blessing.... But our view of marriage is this: that, while the pursuit of heavenly things should be a man’s first care, yet if he can use the advantages of marriage with sobriety and moderation, he need not despise this way of serving the state.... Marriage is the last stage of our separation from the life that was led in Paradise; marriage is the first thing to be left; it is the first station, as it were, for our departure to Christ.<sup>9</sup>

1:28 *And God blessed them, and God said to them, Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.*

“Be fruitful and multiply” are the very words already addressed by God to the creatures of the water (Gen. 1:22) and indicate man’s kinship with the lower creation and, through his fall, with their mode of sexual generation.\* But there is also a deeper meaning to these words. St. Basil writes:

There are two kinds of increase: that of the body, and that of the soul. The increase of the soul is the development of knowledge with

---

\* As St. John Damascene says in the above-cited quotation (p. 204), the command that man “be fruitful and multiply” refers in one sense to the means of increasing the human race that God would have employed if man had not fallen, and in another sense it is as an expression of God’s foreknowledge of the sexual procreation that would be introduced into human life through the fall. (On this, see also Blessed Theodoret, *Questions on Genesis* 37.2, LEC 1, p. 83.) This interpretation is complemented by that of St. Basil, which Fr. Seraphim presents below.—ED.

the aim of perfection; the increase of the body is the development from smallness to normal stature.

To the animals deprived of reason He therefore said "increase" according to bodily development, in the sense of completing nature; but to us He said "increase" according to the interior Man, in the line of progress that leads to God. This is what Paul did, stretching out towards that which is ahead, forgetting that which he leaves behind (Phil. 3:13). Such is the increase in spiritual things....

"Multiply": This blessing concerns the Church. Let the Divine word not be limited to a single individual, but let the Gospel of salvation be preached throughout the earth. "Multiply": to whom is this order addressed?—To those who give birth according to the Gospel....

Thus, these words apply equally well to the animals deprived of reason, but they acquire a particular meaning when we have to do with the being who is in the image with which we have been honored.<sup>10</sup>

Man is to "have dominion," also, not only over the external creation, but also over the beast-like passions that lurk within him. St. Basil writes:

You have dominion over every kind of savage beast. But, you will say, do I have savage beasts within me? Yes, many of them. It is even an immense crowd of savage beasts that you carry within yourself. Do not take this as an insult. Is not anger a small wild beast when it barks in your heart? Is it not more savage than the first dog that comes? And is not the trickery that crouches in a treacherous soul more ferocious than the bear of the caverns?... What kind of savage beast do we not have within us?... You were created to have dominion; you are the master of the passions, the master of savage beasts, the master of serpents, the master of birds.... Be master of the thoughts within you in order to become master of all beings. Thus, the power which was given us through living beings prepares us to exercise dominion over ourselves.<sup>11</sup>

## THE CREATION OF MAN

The beast-like passions are within us owing to our kinship with the animal creation through our fall. St. Gregory of Nyssa writes:

As brute life first entered into the world, and man, for the reason already mentioned, took something of their nature (I mean the mode of generation), he accordingly took at the same time a share of the other attributes contemplated in that nature; for the likeness of man to God is not found in anger, nor is pleasure a mark of the superior nature; cowardice also, and boldness, and the desire of gain, and the dislike of loss, and all the like, are far removed from that stamp which indicates Divinity. These attributes, then, human nature took to itself from the side of the brutes.<sup>12</sup>

This is a very profound teaching. The people who believe in evolutionary ideas say, “Man comes from monkeys; therefore, you’re an animal-like creature.” The Holy Fathers, however, say that we are a mingled creation, part heavenly, part earthly. In the earthly side, God made allowance for the animal-like mode of reproduction; and thus we see how animalistic we are when we let passions control us. We have these “animals” within ourselves, but we also have the heavenly side, to which we are striving to get back.

*1:29–30 And God said, Behold, I have given you every plant yielding seed which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree with seed in its fruit; you shall have them for food. And to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the air, and to every thing that creeps on the earth, everything that has the breath of life, I have given every green plant for food. And it was so.*

Here we are told that in the beginning, when the earth and all its creatures were still new and man had not fallen, not only men, but even the beasts, were given only green plants for food; the beasts were not meant to be, and in the beginning were not, carnivorous. Of this St. Basil says:

Let the Church neglect nothing: everything is a law. God did not say: “I have given you the fishes for food, I have given you the cattle,



the reptiles, the quadrupeds.” It is not for this that He created, says the Scripture. In fact, the first legislation allowed the use of fruits, for we were still judged worthy of Paradise.

What is the mystery which is concealed for you under this?

To you, to the wild animals and the birds, says the Scripture, fruits, vegetation, and herbs [are given].... We see, however, many wild animals who do not eat fruits. What fruit does the panther accept to nourish itself? What fruit can the lion satisfy himself with?

Nevertheless, these beings, submitting to the law of nature, were nourished by fruits. But when man changed his way of life and departed from the limit which had been assigned him, the Lord, after the Flood, knowing that men were wasteful, allowed them the use of all foods: “Eat all that in the same way as edible plants” (cf. Gen. 9:3). By this allowance, the other animals also received the liberty to eat them.

Since then the lion is a carnivore, since then also vultures watch for carrion. For the vultures were not yet looking over the earth at the very moment when the animals were born; in fact, nothing of what had received designation or existence had yet died so that the vultures might eat them. Nature had not yet divided, for it was in all its freshness; hunters did not capture, for such was not yet the practice of men; the beasts, for their part, did not yet tear their prey, for they were not carnivores.... But all followed the way of the swans, and all grazed on the grass of the meadow....

Such was the first creation, and such will be the restoration after this. Man will return to his ancient constitution in rejecting malice, a life weighed down with cares, the slavery of the soul with regard to daily worries. When he has renounced all this, he will return to that paradisaical life which was not enslaved to the passions of the flesh, which is free, the life of closeness to God, a partaker of the life of the angels.<sup>13\*</sup>

This life of the original creation, it should be noted, is not the life of Paradise, into which man has not yet been led; it is the life of the

---

\* On the absence of carnivory in the first-created world, see also pp. 453–55, 706–8 below.—ED.

## THE CREATION OF MAN

earth outside of Paradise, which God has already blessed as man's dwelling-place after his fall. St. Ephraim the Syrian writes of this:

God blessed our first ancestors on the earth, because, even before they sinned He prepared the earth for their dwelling; for, before they sinned, God knew that they would sin.... He blessed [man] before settling him in Paradise, on the earth, so that by the blessing, which was preceded by His goodness, He might weaken the power of the curse which soon struck the earth.<sup>14</sup>

In the beginning, therefore, before man's fall, the whole earth was like a kind of Paradise. St. Symeon the New Theologian teaches:

God, in the beginning, before He planted Paradise and gave it over to the first-created ones, in five days set in order the earth and what is on it, and the heaven and what is in it. And on the Sixth Day He created Adam and placed him as lord and king of the whole visible creation. Then there was not yet Paradise. But this world was from God as a kind of Paradise, although it was material and sensuous.... God gave it over to the authority of Adam and all his descendants, as the Divine Scripture says (Gen. 1:26–30).... God gave over to man at the beginning this whole world as a kind of Paradise.... Adam was made with a body that was incorrupt, although material and not yet spiritual, and was placed by the Creator God as an immortal king over an incorrupt world, not only over Paradise, but also over the whole of creation which was under the heavens.... This whole creation in the beginning was incorrupt and was created by God in the manner of Paradise. But later it was subjected by God to corruption, and submitted to the futility of men.<sup>15</sup>

That is a remarkable view of the original creation.

*1:31 And God saw everything that He had made, and behold, it was very good. And there was evening and there was morning, a sixth day.*

The first chapter of Genesis is entirely devoted to the Six Days of Creation. In chapter 2, the creation of man is described in more detail.

One might say that chapter 1 describes the creation of *humanity*, both in the exalted sense as God's image, and in its divided, earthly aspect as male and female; while in chapter 2 the specific creation of the *first man* Adam and the *first woman* Eve is set forth. Some of the other creations of the Six Days are also mentioned in chapter 2, but not in the strict chronological order of the first chapter. We should keep this in mind to avoid the elementary mistakes of rationalist critics who find "contradictions" between these two chapters and suppose there must be different authors of them.\*

*2:4–6 These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens, and every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a mist from the earth,\*\* and watered the whole face of the ground (KJV).*

This is a brief description of the state of the world before the appearance of man, emphasizing that without God there would have been nothing, that He brought everything into being out of nothing. St. John Chrysostom comments on this passage:

When [the Scripture] speaks of heaven and earth, it understands everything together that is in heaven and on earth. Therefore, just as in the account of the creatures [in chapter 1] it does not speak about all of them in order, but having mentioned the most important, it does not relate to us about each one in detail—so also this whole book, although it contains in itself much else, it calls the book of "the generations of the heaven and of the earth," allowing us to conclude from the mention of them that in this book is to be included everything visible that is in heaven and on earth.... The Holy Spirit shows ... what occurred first and what afterwards, and likewise the fact that the earth produced its seeds by the word and command of the Lord

---

\* On this, see p. 410, 410n below.—ED.

\*\* LXX: "a spring came up from the ground."—ED.

and began to give birth without needing either the cooperation of the sun, nor the moisture of rain, nor the tilling of man, who was not yet created.... This [passage] means that what had not existed previously received existence, and what had not been appeared suddenly by His word and command.... All this is so that we might know that the earth, for the germination of its seeds, had no need of the cooperation of other elements, but the command of the Creator was sufficient for it.<sup>16</sup>

*2:7 Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.\**

Here we are given as much as we can know of the *how* of man's creation. There can be no doubt that the Holy Fathers understood by "dust" the literal dust of the earth; but when they speak of the "hands" of God which "took" this dust, they mean to emphasize the great care of God and His direct action in this work.\*\* Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus writes:

---

\* LXX: "And God formed man of dust from the earth, and breathed into his face the breath of life, and man became a living soul."—ED.

\*\* St. Irenaeus also points out the connection between God's creation of man from the dust and Christ's healing of the blind man by means of earth (John 9:6): "To that man who had been blind from his birth, He gave sight, not by means of a word, but by an outward action; doing this not without a purpose, or because it so happened, but that He might show forth the hand of God, that which at the beginning had molded man. And therefore, when His disciples asked Him for what cause the man had been born blind, whether for his own or his parents' fault, He replied, 'Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents, but that the works of God should be made manifest in him' (John 9:3). Now the work of God is the fashioning of man. For, as Scripture says, he made man by a kind of process: 'And the Lord took clay from the earth, and formed man' (cf. Gen 2:7). Wherefore also the Lord spat on the ground and made clay, and rubbed it on the eyes [of the blind man], indicating the original fashioning of man—how it was effected—and manifesting the hand of God to those who can understand by what hand man was formed out of the dust" (*Against Heresies* 5.15.2, SC 153.204–7, ANF 1, p. 543\*). (This parallel was later brought out in Patristic commentaries on the Gospel of St. John, e.g., St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 56.2; St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Commentary on the Gospel of St.*

When we hear in the account of Moses that God took *dust* from the earth and formed man, and we seek out the meaning of this utterance, we discover in it the special good disposition of God towards the human race. For the great Prophet notes, in his description of the creation, that God created all the other creatures by His word, while man He created with His own hands.... We do not say that the Divinity has hands ... but we affirm that every one of these expressions indicates a greater care on God's part for man than for the other creatures.<sup>17</sup>

St. Basil states that this verse emphasizes how different in his origin is man from the animals:

Above, the text says that God created; here it says *how* God created. If the verse had simply said that God created, you could have believed that He created [man] as He did the beasts, the wild animals, the plants, the grass. This is why, to avoid your placing him in the class of wild animals, the Divine word has made known the particular art which God has used for you: God took of the "dust from the earth."<sup>18</sup>

The same Father tells of the difference between the "creation" of man and his "fashioning":

---

*John* 6.1; Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria, *Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. John* 9.6–7.)

Elsewhere, St. Irenaeus reveals yet another Christological parallel—God's fashioning of Adam from virgin soil, he says, prefigures Christ's birth from a virgin: "And as the protoplast himself, Adam, had his substance and formation from untilled and as yet virgin soil—for God had not yet sent rain, and man had not tilled the ground' (cf. Gen. 2:5)—and was formed by the hand of God, that is, by the Word of God, for 'all things were made through Him' (John 1:3), and the Lord took dust from the earth and formed man, so did He Who is the Word, recapitulating Adam in Himself, rightly receive a birth from Mary, who was as yet a virgin, enabling Him to gather up Adam into Himself" (*Against Heresies* 3.21.10, SC 211.428–29, ANF 1, p. 454\*). (St. Irenaeus gives the same teaching in *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 32, as do St. Ephraim in *Hymns on the Nativity* 1.16, St. Maximus in *Ambigua* 42, and St. Photius in *Homily* 5: *On the Annunciation* 7.)—ED.

## THE CREATION OF MAN

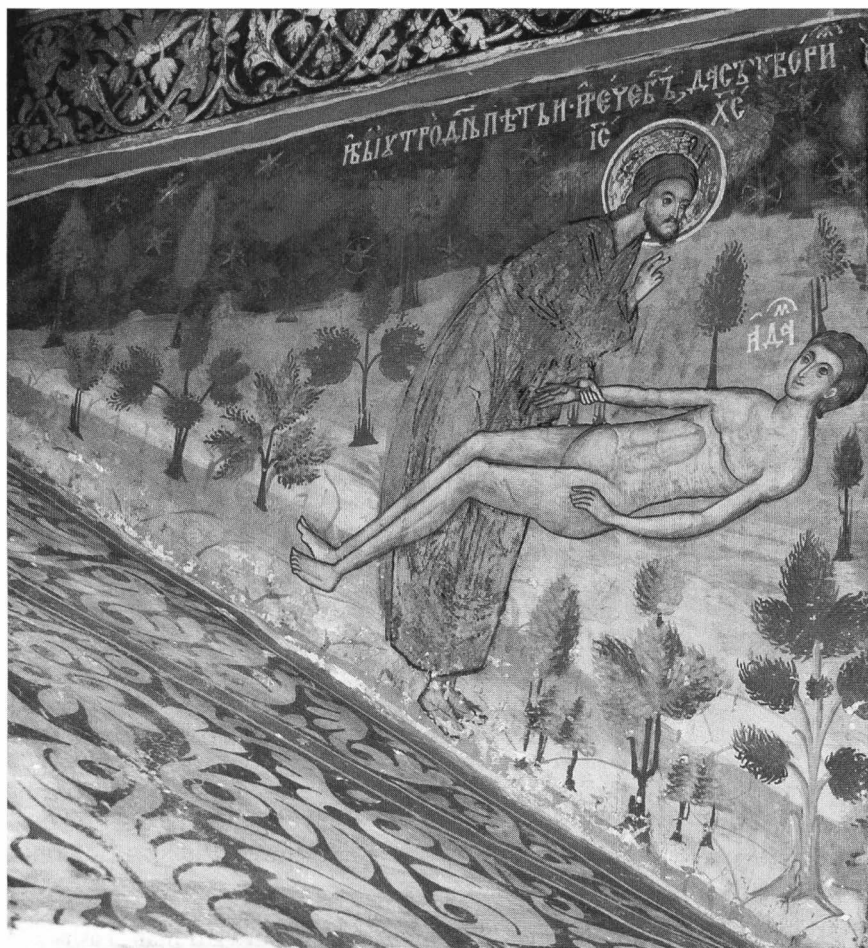


The creation of Adam.  
Detail of a Russian icon, ca.1570, Solvychevodsk Museum of History and Art,  
Arkhangelsk Oblast, Russia.

God *created* the inward man, and *fashioned* the outward man. Fashioning is suited to the clay, and creation to that which is in the image. Thus, the flesh was fashioned, but the soul was created.<sup>19</sup>

The creation of man indicates both his greatness and his nothingness:

God took “dust from the earth” and “formed man.” In this word I have discovered the two affirmations that man is nothing and that man is great. If you consider nature alone, he is nothing and has no value; but if you regard the honor with which he has been treated, man is something great.... If you consider what it is that [God]



The creation of Adam.

*Interior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

took, what is man? But if you reflect on the One Who fashioned, what a great thing is man! Thus at the same time he is nothing because of the material, and great because of the honor (St. Basil).<sup>20</sup>

In the usual interpretation of the Holy Fathers, what was “breathed” into man was his *soul*. St. John Chrysostom writes:

## THE CREATION OF MAN

“And God formed man of dust from the earth, and breathed into his face the breath of life, and man became a living soul”! Moses used such a crude manner of speaking because he was speaking to people who could not listen to him otherwise, as we are able to do; and also to show us that it was pleasing to God’s love of mankind to make this thing created out of earth a participant of the rational nature of the soul, through which this living creature was manifest as excellent and perfect. “And He breathed into his face the breath of life”: that is, the inbreathing communicated to the one created out of earth the power of life, and thus the nature of the soul was formed. Therefore Moses added: “And man became a living soul”; that which was created out of dust, having received the inbreathing, the breath of life, “became a living soul.” What does “a living soul” mean? An active soul, which has the members of the body as the implements of its activities, submissive to its will.<sup>21</sup>

St. Seraphim of Sarov has a rather different interpretation of this passage of Scripture; in his “Conversation with Motovilov” he states that what was made from the dust of the earth was the entire human nature—body, soul, and spirit (“spirit” being the higher part of the soul)—and that what was breathed into this nature was the grace of the Holy Spirit.\* This is a different perspective on the creation of man (found in few other Fathers), and does not really contradict the usual interpretation that it was the soul that was breathed into man; those who hold the latter view also believe that man was created in the grace of God.\*\*

St. Gregory the Theologian speaks of the exalted nature of man, the

---

\* See pp. 479–86 below.—ED.

\*\* In the *Homilies* of St. Gregory Palamas, we can find evidence of the inner harmony of these two views. In some places St. Gregory says that God breathed Adam’s soul into him at his creation (*Homilies* 6.10, 18.2), and in other places he says that God’s Spirit was breathed into him (*Homilies* 17.14, 58.8, 60.3). In yet another place, the Saint says that both were breathed into Adam at the same time: “From the beginning man was not just a creation of God, but also a son in the Spirit, which was given to him at the same time as his soul, through God’s quickening breath (Gen. 2:7)” (*Homily* 57.2, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 469).—ED.



highest part of whose nature comes not from earth but directly from God:

The soul is the breath of God, and while being heavenly, it endures being mixed with what is of the dust. It is a light enclosed in a cave, but still it is divine and inextinguishable.... The Word spoke, and having taken a part of the newly created earth, with His immortal hands formed my image and imparted to it His life; because He sent into it the Spirit, which is a ray of the invisible Divinity.<sup>22</sup>

Such expressions, however, should not lead us to the false opinion that the soul itself is Divine, or a part of God. St. John Chrysostom writes about this:

Certain senseless ones, being drawn away by their own conceptions, without thinking of anything in a God-befitting manner, and without paying any attention to the adaptation of the expressions (of Scripture), dare to say that the soul has proceeded from the Essence of God. O frenzy! O folly! How many paths of perdition has the devil opened up for those who will to serve him!... \* Thus, when you

---

\* The Holy Fathers also make this point with regard to the whole of creation: that is, not only the soul of man but all of creation was brought into existence from non-existence, not from the Essence or Nature of God; therefore, creation does not have the same essence as God, and it is not a part of God. In this connection, the Fathers emphasize the difference between the pre-eternal, beginningless begetting of the Son of God from the Father—which, in the words of St. John Damascene, is “the work of [God’s] Nature and a producing out of His own Essence”—and God’s creation of the world, which has a beginning in time and is “the work of [God’s] will.” “For the creation,” writes St. John Damascene, “even though it originated later, is nevertheless not derived from the Essence of God, but is brought into existence out of nothing by His will and power, and change does not touch God’s Nature. For ‘begetting’ means that the begetter produces out of his essence offspring similar in essence. But ‘creation’ and ‘making’ mean that the creator and maker produces from that which is external, and not out of his own essence, a creation of an absolutely dissimilar nature” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 1.8, PTS 12.20–21, NPNF 2 9, p. 7b\*).

Likewise, St. Gregory of Nyssa states: “He Who made all the creation is assuredly something else besides the creation.... Who that is in any sense classed among

hear that God “breathed into his face the breath of life,” understand that, just as He brought forth the bodiless powers, so also He was pleased that the body of man, created out of dust, should have a rational soul which could make use of the bodily members.<sup>23</sup>

There are those today who would like to use the order of man’s creation in this verse to “prove” that man “evolved” from lower beasts: that his body or earthly nature came first in time, and his soul or state of being in God’s grace came second. Such an interpretation is quite impossible if we accept the Patristic understanding of man’s creation.

To begin with, we have seen that in the Patristic view the “days” of creation—whatever their precise “length” may have been—were very short periods of time; that God’s work in each of the days was swift, indeed, instantaneous; that at the end of the Six Days the world was still “new” and not yet given over to corruption and death.

Secondly, the Holy Fathers themselves insist that the creation of

---

Christians admits that the definition of the essence of the parts of the world, and of Him Who made the world, is the same? For my own part I shudder at the blasphemy” (*Against Eunomius* 3.1, 4.2, NPNF 2 5, pp. 136, 156). St. Gregory also makes clear that the creation is not coeval with God, but has a temporal beginning (*ibid.* 1.26, p. 71). As St. Maximus teaches, only the Uncreated *logoi* (Divine “thought-wills”) of creatures preexist in God from eternity: these are distinct from the creatures themselves, which are “brought out of non-being into being” by God in time (*Ambigua* 7, PPS 25, pp. 54–61; here, p. 54).

On the fundamental distinction between creation of the world and the begetting of the Son of God, see also St. Athanasius, *Four Discourses against the Arians* 1.20–21, 2.2, 2.21, 3.59–67; and St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 4.8. On created nature being wholly other than Divine Nature, and on creation not being coeval with God, see also St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.10; Clement of Alexandria, *Stromateis* 2.16; St. Hippolytus, *The Refutation of All Heresies* 10.28–29; St. Methodius of Olympus, *Extracts from the Work on Things Created* 2–5; St. Alexander of Alexandria, *Epistle to Alexander, Bishop of Constantinople* 4, 11; St. Hilary of Poitiers, *On the Councils* 10, 17, 83; *idem*, *On the Trinity* 5.4, 8.53, 11.8, 12.16; St. Athanasius, *Against the Heathen* 41; St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 49.4; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 16.12; Blessed Augustine, *Confessions* 12.7, 12.17, 12.22, 12.28; St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Thesaurus on the Holy and Consubstantial Trinity* 15; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Four Hundred Texts on Love* 4.6; as well as p. 60n above and p. 477n below.—ED.

man is not to be understood *chronologically*; it is rather an *ontological* description that tells the *makeup* of man, but not the chronological order in which it occurred. When St. John Chrysostom states that “before” the inbreathing man was a “lifeless dummy,”<sup>24</sup> or St. Seraphim states that he was *not* a “lifeless dummy” but a living and active human being—we must understand the word “before” in the ontological sense of “without.” But the creation of man itself—both body and soul, together with the grace in which man was made—was instantaneous. The Fathers found it necessary to set forth this teaching quite explicitly because in ancient times there were two opposed but equally false teachings on this subject: one, that of the Origenists, who stated that souls “preexisted” the creation of bodies and only entered their bodies as a “fall” from a higher state; and the other, that the body preexisted the soul and was therefore of a nobler nature. St. John Damascene teaches:

From the earth He formed his body and by His own inbreathing gave him a rational and understanding soul, which last we say is the divine image.... The body and the soul were formed at the same time—not one before and the other afterwards, as the ravings of Origen would have it.<sup>25</sup>

And St. Gregory of Nyssa teaches in more detail (referring both to the original creation of man and the conception of individual men today), after refuting the opposite error of Origen:

Others, on the contrary, marking the order of the creation of man as stated by Moses, say that the soul is second to the body in order of time, since God first took dust from the earth and formed man, and then animated the being thus formed by His breath. And by this argument they prove that the flesh is more noble than the soul, that which was previously formed [more noble] than that which was afterwards infused into it.... Nor again are we in our doctrine to begin by making up man like a clay figure, and to say that the soul came into being for the sake of this; for surely in that case the intellectual nature would be shown to be less precious than the clay figure. But

as man is one, the being consisting of soul and body, we are to suppose that the beginning of his existence is one, common to both parts, so that he should not be found to be antecedent and posterior to himself, as if the bodily element were first in point of time, and the other were a later addition.... For as our nature is conceived as twofold, according to the apostolic teaching, made up of the visible man and the hidden man, if the one came first and the other super-vened, the power of Him that made us will be shown to be in some way imperfect, as not being completely sufficient for the whole task at once, but dividing the work, and busying itself with each of the halves in turn.<sup>26</sup>\*

The idea of the “evolution” of man from a lower animal cannot be harmonized with the Patristic and Scriptural view of man’s creation, but requires a sharp break with it: If man “evolves” solely according to the laws of nature, then his rational nature, his soul, the image of God, differs not *qualitatively* but only *quantitatively* from the beasts; he is then a creature only of the earth, and there is no room for the Patristic view that he is partly of earth and partly of heaven, a “mixture” of two worlds, to use the phrase of St. Gregory the Theologian. But if, to escape such earthly thinking, a Christian evolutionist admits a Divine creation of man’s soul—“when his body was ready for it,” as some say—then he not only parts company with scientific thinkers, who will not admit “Divine” acts into their conceptual framework, but he also presents no consistent Christian outlook, mixing scientific speculations with “revealed” knowledge in a most haphazard way. In the Patristic-Scriptural view, the entire Six Days of Creation is a series of Divine acts; in the uniformitarian scientific view, the origins of things (as far back as scientists think they can be traced) are nothing but natural processes. These two views are as opposed as any two views can be, and any mixture of the two must be purely arbitrary and fanciful.

---

\* St. Maximus the Confessor likewise teaches that, both in the original creation of man and in the conception of individual human beings today, the soul and body come into existence at the same time. See *Ambigua* 42, in PPS 25, pp. 87–89.—Ed.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Paradise*

(Genesis 2:8–24)

*2:8 And the Lord God planted a garden in Eden, in the east;\* and there he put the man whom He had formed.*

In the garden (“paradise” in Greek) where Adam dwelt before his fall, we approach a subject that is subtle and mystical, and at the same time is a necessary key to understanding the whole of Christian teaching. This Paradise, as we shall see, is not merely something that existed before the fall; it exists even now and has been visited by some while still alive on this earth; and it is also (in a somewhat different form) the goal of our whole earthly life—the blessed state to which we are striving to return and which we shall enjoy in its fullness (if we are among the saved) at the end of this fallen world.

Our knowledge of Paradise, therefore, is in a sense fuller than our knowledge of the world of the Six Days of Creation; but at the same time it is of a mystical nature that renders “precise” statements about it very difficult to make.

Let us see here what the Holy Fathers say about it.

St. Ambrose reminds us, in the first chapter of his treatise on “Paradise,” that we must be very careful in discussing the “place” of Paradise and its nature:

On approaching this subject I seem to be possessed by an unusual eagerness in my quest to clarify the facts about Paradise, its place, and its nature to those who are desirous of this knowledge. This is all the more remarkable since the Apostle did not know whether he was

---

\* LXX: “And God planted a garden eastward in Eden.” —ED.

## PARADISE

in the body or out of the body, yet he says that he “was caught up to the third heaven” (2 Cor. 12:2). And again he says: “I know such a man—whether in the body or out of the body I do not know, God knows—that he was caught up into Paradise and heard secret words that man may not repeat” (2 Cor. 12:3–5).... If Paradise, then, is of such a nature that Paul alone, or one like Paul, could scarcely see it while alive, and still was unable to remember whether he saw it in the body or out of the body, and moreover, heard words that he was forbidden to reveal—if this be true, how will it be possible for us to declare the position of Paradise which we have not been able to see and, even if we had succeeded in seeing it, we would be forbidden to share this information with others? And, again, since Paul shrank from exalting himself by reason of the sublimity of the revelation, how much more ought we to strive not to be too anxious to disclose that which leads to danger by its very revelation! The subject of Paradise should not, therefore, be treated lightly.<sup>1</sup>

Nevertheless, despite the difficulty of speaking about it, there are certain things we can know about Paradise, as interpreted by the Holy Fathers.

First of all, it is not merely a spiritual phenomenon which may be beheld now in vision as the Apostle Paul beheld it (of which more below); it is also a part of the history of the *earth*. The Scripture and Holy Fathers teach that in the beginning, before the fall of man, Paradise was right here on earth. St. Ambrose writes:

Take note that God placed man [in Paradise] not in respect to the image of God, but in respect to the body of man. The incorporeal does not exist in a place. He placed man in Paradise, just as He placed the sun in heaven.<sup>2</sup>

Likewise, St. John Chrysostom teaches:

Blessed Moses registered even the name of this place [Eden], so that those who love to speak empty words could not deceive simple listeners and say that Paradise was not on earth but in heaven, and rave

with similar mythologies....\* As you hear that “God planted a garden eastward in Eden,” the word “plant” understand of God in a God-befitting way, that is, that He commanded; but regarding the following words, believe that Paradise precisely was created and in the very place where the Scripture has assigned it.... And the word “plant” let us understand as if it had been said: He commanded man to live there, so that his view of Paradise and his stay there might furnish him a great satisfaction and might arouse him to a feeling of gratitude.<sup>3</sup>

*2:9 And out of the ground the Lord God made to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food, the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.*

The connection of Paradise with the earth is understood by St. Ephraim in such a literal way that he specifies, in his *Commentary on Genesis*, that as a place of trees it was created on the Third Day with the rest of the vegetable creation.<sup>4</sup>

But what connection can there be between this earthly Paradise with its growing trees, and the obviously spiritual Paradise that St. Paul beheld? We may see an answer to this question in the description of Paradise by a Holy Father of the highest spiritual life, St. Gregory the Sinaite, who visited Paradise in the same state of Divine vision as St. Paul:

Eden is a place in which there was planted by God every kind of fragrant plant. It is neither completely incorruptible, nor entirely

---

\* Here St. John Chrysostom was refuting the notion of Origen (*Selecta on Genesis* 29) and his followers that the Paradise mentioned in the second chapter of Genesis was located in heaven. Other Holy Fathers rejected this idea as well. Thus, for example, St. Methodius of Olympus wrote that Paradise was created as a place on earth, and that when St. Paul spoke of being caught up to the third heaven and to Paradise, he was speaking of two separate revelations (*On the Resurrection*, quoted in St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 64.47, trans. Frank Williams, vol. 2, p. 172; see also St. Methodius, *From the Discourse on the Resurrection* 3.9, ANF 6, p. 370). To the statement “Some commentators locate Paradise in heaven,” Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus replied: “Since Holy Scripture says, ‘Out of the ground the Lord God made to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food’ (Gen. 2:9), it is quite rash to abandon the teaching of the Spirit and follow one’s own reasoning” (*Questions on Genesis* 25, LEC 1, p. 61).—Ed.

## PARADISE

corruptible. Placed between corruption and incorruption, it is always both abundant in fruits and blossoming with flowers, both mature and immature. The mature trees and fruits are converted into fragrant earth which does not give off any odor of corruption, as do the trees of this world. This is from the abundance of the grace of sanctification which is constantly poured forth there.<sup>5</sup>

A number of cases are known in the Lives of saints and righteous people of literal fruits being brought back by those who have been lifted up to Paradise—for example, the apples which St. Euphrosynus the Cook (ninth century) brought back and which were eaten by the pious as some holy thing with a nature quite different from that of ordinary earthly fruits (Lives of Saints, September 11).

A striking experience of Paradise is found in the Life of St. Andrew the Fool for Christ of Constantinople (ninth century). This experience was written down in the Saint's own words by his friend Nicephorus:

Once during a terrible winter when St. Andrew lay in a city street frozen and near death, he suddenly felt a warmth within him and beheld a splendid youth with a face shining like the sun, who conducted him to Paradise and the third heaven. "By God's will I remained for two weeks in a sweet vision.... I saw myself in a splendid and marvelous Paradise.... In mind and heart I was astonished at the unutterable beauty of the Paradise of God, and I took sweet delight walking in it. There were a multitude of gardens there, filled with tall trees which, swaying in their tips, rejoiced my eyes, and from their branches there came forth a great fragrance.... One cannot compare these trees in their beauty to any earthly tree.... In these gardens there were innumerable birds with wings golden, snow-white, and of various colors. They sat on the branches of the trees of Paradise and sang so wondrously that from the sweetness of their singing I was beside myself....<sup>6\*</sup>

---

\* A similar vision of Paradise is recounted in the Life of a holy man of our own times: Elder Cleopa (Ilie) of Sihastria Monastery, Moldavia, Romania (1912–1998). See Archimandrite Ioanichie Balan, *Shepherd of Souls: The Life and Teachings of Elder Cleopa* (2000), pp. 71–72.—ED.



Therefore, Paradise, while originally a reality of this earth, akin to the nature of the world before the fall of man, is of a “material” which is different from the material of the world we know today, placed between corruption and incorruption. This exactly corresponds to the nature of man before his fall—for the “coats of skins” which he put on when banished from Paradise (as we shall see) symbolically indicate the cruder flesh which he then put on. From that time on, in his cruder state, man is no longer capable of even seeing Paradise unless his spiritual eyes are opened and he is “raised up” like St. Paul. The present “location” of Paradise, which has remained unchanged in its nature, is in this higher realm, which also seems to correspond to a literal “elevation” from the earth; indeed, some Holy Fathers state that even before the fall Paradise was in an elevated place, being “higher than all the rest of the earth” (St. John Damascene, *Orthodox Faith* 2.11; see also St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2).<sup>7</sup>

Concerning the two trees—one of life and one of the knowledge of good and evil—we shall speak later.

**2:10–14** *A river flowed out of Eden to water the garden, and there it divided and became four rivers. The name of the first is Pishon; it is the one which flows around the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; and the gold of that land is good; bdellium and onyx stone are there. The name of the second river is Gihon; it is the one which flows around the whole land of Cush (LXX: “Ethiopia”). And the name of the third river is Tigris, which flows east of Assyria. And the fourth river is the Euphrates.*

This passage emphasizes that Paradise before the fall was located in a definite place on earth. The Fathers forbid merely allegorical interpretations of these four rivers. Thus, St. John Chrysostom says:

Perhaps those who love to speak from their own wisdom here also will not allow that the rivers are actually rivers, nor that the waters are precisely waters, but will instill, in those who decide to listen to them, the idea that they (under the names of rivers and waters) represented something else. But I entreat you, let us not pay heed to

these people, let us stop up our hearing against them, and let us believe the Divine Scripture.<sup>8\*</sup>

These four rivers are generally understood by the Fathers to be the Tigris, Euphrates, Nile and Danube (or, according to others, the Ganges); the area of the earthly Paradise, therefore, is in the cradle of ancient civilization. St. John Chrysostom says of this passage (in another treatise):

From this know that Paradise was not a small garden which had an insignificant area. It is watered by such a river that from its fullness come out four rivers.<sup>9</sup>

It would be fruitless to speculate how the one river of Paradise divided into four rivers which, as we know them today, have four distinct sources. The world of today is so different from the world before the fall, and even before the Flood in Noah's time, that such geographical questions are not to be traced out.

What is more difficult for our modern mentality, formed by literalistic science, to puzzle out is how the Fathers can speak without distinguishing between Paradise as a geographical location (before the fall), and Paradise as a spiritual habitation of the righteous (at the present time). Thus, St. John Chrysostom, in the same treatise just quoted, speaks of the one river of Paradise being so abundant because it was prepared also for the later Patriarchs, Prophets, and other saints (beginning with the thief on the cross—Luke 23:43) who are to inhabit Paradise.<sup>10</sup> Evidently our modern ideas have become too dualistic: we divide things too easily into "spirit vs. matter," whereas the reality of Paradise partakes of both.

*2:15 The Lord God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to till and to keep it.*

---

\* While St. John Chrysostom here forbids reducing the rivers of Paradise to mere symbols, in another place he speaks of these actual rivers as being *also* types of the Holy Mysteries which flow forth from the altar of the Church (*Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 46.4, FC 33, p. 470).—ED.

In this passage, as interpreted by the Fathers, we may see something of the *spiritual* occupation of Adam in Paradise. Before the fall there was no need for a physical tilling or cultivation of Paradise; this refers to Adam's spiritual state. St. John Chrysostom writes (in a teaching identical to that of St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis*):<sup>11</sup>

"To till." What was lacking in Paradise? And even if a tiller was needed, where was the plow? Where were the other implements of agriculture? The "tilling" [or "working"] of God consisted in tilling and keeping the commandment of God, remaining faithful to the commandment.... Just as to believe in Christ is the work of God (John 6:29), so also it was a work to believe the commandment that if he touched (the forbidden tree) he would die, and if he did not touch it, he would live. The work was the keeping of the spiritual words.... "To till and to keep it," it is said. To keep it from whom? There were no thieves, no passersby, no one of evil intent. To keep from whom? To keep it for oneself; not to lose it by transgressing the commandment; to keep Paradise for oneself, observing the commandment.<sup>12</sup>

St. Gregory the Theologian opens up a deeper understanding of this "work" of Paradise:

This being He placed in Paradise ... to till the immortal plants, by which is perhaps meant the Divine conceptions, both the simpler and the more perfect.<sup>13</sup>

And, in general, the ascetic Fathers refer the "tilling" and "keeping" to the spiritual work of prayer. Thus, St. Nilus of Sora, commenting on this interpretation by the ancient Father St. Nilus of Sinai, writes:

Now this Saint brings forth from antiquity that one should till and keep; for the Scripture says that God created Adam and placed him in Paradise to till and keep Paradise. For here this St. Nilus of Sinai calls prayer the tilling of Paradise, and the guarding against evil thoughts after prayer he calls keeping.<sup>14</sup>

And Blessed Paisius Velichkovsky, commenting in his turn on these two Holy Fathers, writes:

From these testimonies it is clear that God, having created man according to His image and likeness, conducted him into a Paradise of sweetness to till the immortal gardens, that is, the most pure, exalted, and perfect Divine thoughts, according to St. Gregory the Theologian. And this means nothing else than that he remained, as being pure in soul and heart, in contemplative, grace-filled prayer, sacredly working in the mind alone, that is, in the sweetest vision of God, and that he manfully preserved this, it being the work of Paradise, as the apple of his eye, lest it ever decrease in his soul and heart. Wherefore, great is the glory of sacred and Divine mental prayer, whose verge and summit, that is, beginning and perfection, were given to man by God in Paradise, and so it is from there that it has its beginning.<sup>15</sup>

*2:16–17 And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Thou mayest freely eat of every tree of the garden, but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou shalt not eat, for in the day that thou eatest of it thou shalt surely die.*

If one is tempted to find allegory in the account of creation and Paradise, nowhere is the temptation stronger than with regard to the two trees: one of “life” and one of “the knowledge of good and evil.” Yet the whole “realism” of the Patristic interpretation of Genesis, as well as the fact that Paradise was (and is) indeed a “garden” with material (or semi-material) trees, point to the fact that these trees were actually trees; and, as we have already seen, this very fact is emphasized by St. Gregory Palamas, speaking for St. Gregory the Theologian and other Fathers.

The account of the temptation in Paradise, therefore, is not an allegory—a spiritual lesson clothed in the tale of a garden—but an historical account of what actually happened to our first ancestors. What happened, of course, was primarily a spiritual event, just as Adam’s dwelling in Paradise was primarily a spiritual dwelling (as we shall see

more clearly below); but the way in which this spiritual event occurred was indeed through the tasting of the fruit of a “forbidden tree.”\*

St. John Damascene well describes the double aspect, material and immaterial, of Adam’s dwelling in Paradise:

Some have imagined Paradise to have been material, while others have imagined it to have been spiritual. However, it seems to me that, just as man was created both sensitive and intellectual, so did this most sacred domain of his have the twofold aspect of being perceptible both to the senses and to the mind. For, while in his body he dwelt in this most sacred and superbly beautiful place, as we have related, spiritually he resided in a loftier and far more beautiful place. There he had the indwelling God as a dwelling place and wore Him as a glorious garment. He was wrapped about with His grace, and, like some one of the angels, he rejoiced in the enjoyment of that one most sweet fruit which is the contemplation of God, and by this he was nourished. Now, this is indeed what is fittingly called the tree of life, for the sweetness of Divine contemplation communicates a life uninterrupted by death to them that partake of it.<sup>16\*\*</sup>

Again, St. Damascene says of Adam in Paradise:

While in his body he lived on earth in the world of sense, in his spirit he dwelt among the angels, cultivating thoughts of God and being nurtured on these. He was naked because of his innocence and his

---

\* Accordingly, Blessed Theodoret affirms that the “tree of life” and the “tree of knowledge” were actual, material trees even though they were given special names to denote their spiritual significance, and he further points out that other material objects are given such names by the Church as well. Thus, he says, “The tree of the Cross was a tree and is called ‘saving’ because salvation is accomplished by faith in it.... Likewise, Baptism is called ‘living water,’ not because the water of Baptism has a different nature, but because, through that water, Divine grace confers the gift of eternal life” (*Questions on Genesis* 26, LEC 1, pp. 63–65).—ED.

\*\* Drawing from the teaching of St. John Damascene, Nicetas Stethatos discusses the double aspect of Paradise in his work *Contemplation of Paradise* 3–4, SC 81.156–58.—ED.

simplicity of life, and through creatures he was drawn up to their only Creator, in Whose contemplation he rejoiced and took delight.<sup>17</sup>

The purpose of man's dwelling in Paradise and eating of "every tree" was obviously not merely to be satisfied with the delights of this marvelous place, but to look and strive towards something higher; the very presence of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and of the commandment not to eat of it, indicates a challenge and a test which man must pass through before ascending higher. St. Damascene thus sets forth the ascension to perfection which was set forth before Adam in Paradise:

God says: "Of every tree of Paradise thou shalt eat," meaning, I think: By means of all created things be thou drawn up to Me, their Creator, and from them reap the one fruit which is Myself, Who am the true Life; let all things be fruitful life to thee and make participation in Me to be the substance of thine own existence; for thus thou shalt be immortal.... He made him a living being to be governed here according to this present life, and then to be removed elsewhere, that is, to the world to come, and so to complete the mystery by becoming Divine through reversion to God—this, however, not by being transformed into the Divine Essence, but by participation in the Divine illumination.<sup>18\*</sup>

Thus Paradise—and indeed the whole earthly life of man—was made by God, in the phrase of St. Basil, "primarily as a place of training and a school for the souls of men."<sup>19</sup> Man was given in the beginning a path of ascent from glory to glory, from Paradise to the status of a spiritual dweller of heaven, through the training and testing which God might send him, beginning with the commandment not to taste of the one tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Man was placed in Paradise as in a state between that of heaven, where only the purely spiritual may dwell, and the corruptible earth—which came about, as we shall see, because of his fall.

---

\* On the original designation of man, see also pp. 691–92, 702–3, 757, 763–66, 772, 774 below.—ED.

What, then, was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and why was it forbidden to Adam? In the classical interpretation of St. Gregory the Theologian, God gave Adam in Paradise

a Law, as a material for his free will to act upon. This law was a commandment as to what plants he might partake of, and which one he might not touch. This latter was the tree of knowledge; not, however, because it was evil from the beginning when planted; nor was it forbidden because God grudged it to us—let not the enemies of God wag their tongues in that direction, or imitate the serpent. But it would have been good if partaken of at the proper time; for the tree was, according to my view, Contemplation, upon which it is only safe for those who have reached maturity of habit to enter, but which is not good for those who are still somewhat simple and greedy; just as neither is solid food good for those who are yet tender and have need of milk.<sup>20</sup>\*

And St. John Damascene writes:

The tree of knowledge of good and evil is the power of discernment by multiple vision, and this is the complete knowing of one's own nature. Of itself it manifests the magnificence of the Creator and it is good for them that are full-grown and have walked in the contemplation of God—for them that have no fear of changing, because in the course of time they have acquired a certain habit of such contemplation. It is not good, however, for such as are still young and are more greedy in their appetites, who, because of the uncertainty of their perseverance in the true good and because of their not yet being solidly established in their application to the only good, are naturally inclined to be drawn away and distracted by their solicitude for their own bodies.<sup>21</sup>

---

\* St. Gregory Palamas expounds on this teaching of St. Gregory the Theologian; see his *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 49–50, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 369–70.—ED.

To sum up the Orthodox teaching on the two trees of Paradise, St. John Chrysostom writes:

The tree of life was in the midst of Paradise as a reward; the tree of knowledge as an object of contest and struggle. Having kept the commandment regarding this tree, you will receive a reward. And behold the wondrous thing. Everywhere in Paradise every kind of tree blossoms, everywhere they are abundant in fruit; only in the center are there two trees as an object of battle and exercise.<sup>22\*</sup>

This is a profound subject, which is very much bound up with our human nature.<sup>\*\*</sup> In fact, we see in human life today something of this very temptation that Adam had. Although Adam was not fallen then—and in this regard his state was different from our present state—nonetheless, his situation was similar to that of a young person of sixteen, seventeen, or eighteen years old who is brought up in goodness and then comes to the age when he must himself make the choice of whether to be good or not. It so happens that, because we have freedom, there must be a choice. One must *consciously* will to do good. You cannot simply be good because someone tells you to be good. Sooner or later in your freedom you must actively choose the good or else it does not become part of you. That is true of everyone except, of course, a child who dies quite young.

Therefore, when one comes to the age at which one must become a man, it is then that one must make the same choice Adam made—either to freely choose to do good or else to make the mistake of entering into evil, into a life of sin.

---

\* Elsewhere St. John Chrysostom explains that God gave the “slight command” not to eat of the tree of knowledge so as “to teach man that he has a Creator and Craftsman Who produces all visible realities,” and to make man “aware he is under God’s dominion and along with everything else is a partaker of His generosity.” God did this, says St. Chrysostom, “lest man be gradually perverted in his thinking and come to regard visible things as self-sufficient and get inflated ideas of his own importance” (*Homilies on Genesis* 16.6, FC 74, pp. 219–20 [16.18]).—ED.

\*\* The following discussion has been taken from Fr. Seraphim’s oral delivery. Many of the people listening to him were in their teens or early twenties, and he was applying the subject matter directly to their own situation.—ED.



The Holy Fathers say that the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is something which is only for *mature* people.\* Because we have freedom, it cannot be that we will not have knowledge of evil. The

---

\* Thus, St. Theophilus of Antioch writes: "The tree of knowledge itself was good, and its fruit was good. For it was not the tree, as some think, but the disobedience, which had death in it. For there was nothing else in the fruit than only knowledge; but knowledge is good when one uses it discretely. But Adam, being yet an infant in age, was on this account as yet unable to receive knowledge worthily" (*To Autolycus* 1.25, ANF 2, p. 104).

According to the prevailing Patristic view, while the newly created Adam and Eve were spiritually immature, having not yet been confirmed in the habit of contemplation of God (cf. Sts. Gregory the Theologian and John Damascene above), they were in a physical condition of full maturity from the very beginning. St. Ephraim the Syrian argues this latter point as follows, stating explicitly what is assumed in the writings of other Fathers: "If they [Adam and Eve] were children, as those without say, [Moses] would not have said they 'were both naked, and were not ashamed' (Gen. 2:25); nor would he have said, 'Adam knew Eve his wife' (Gen. 4:1), if they had not been young adults. The names Adam bestowed should be sufficient to convince us of [the level of] his wisdom. And the fact that [Moses] said he will 'till and keep it' (Gen. 2:15) should make known to us Adam's strength. The law that was set for them testifies to their full maturity, and their transgression of the commandment should bear witness to their arrogance' (*Commentary on Genesis* 2.14, FC 91, p. 106; see also pp. 193–94, 194n above).

Of all the Fathers, only St. Irenaeus of Lyons appears to state that Adam and Eve were physically immature in Paradise, since he says not only that they were "infants" (which might be interpreted as simply "infants in age," as in the passage of St. Theophilus above), but also that they were "very little" (*Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 12, SC 406.100). However, as Patristic scholar Hieromonk Irenaeus (M. C. Steenberg) observes, St. Irenaeus' meaning here "remains elusive," since together with calling Adam "very little" he speaks of him walking, speaking, and naming all the animals (ibid. 12–13)—activities which, as St. Ephraim points out above, would not be associated with those who are physically infants. Elsewhere St. Irenaeus, having asked why God did not make man "perfect" (i.e., in his final state) from the beginning, answers as follows: "Since these things [i.e., God's creations] are of recent origin, so are they infantile; and since they are infantile, so are they unaccustomed to and unexercised in perfect discipline" (*Against Heresies* 4.38.1, SC 100.944). Here St. Irenaeus identifies "infancy" with lack of spiritual growth due to recent bodily origin, which would accord with the more common Patristic view of Adam and Eve in Paradise, and would suggest that the Saint did not in fact hold strictly to the divergent conception that they were physically infants. (See M. C. Steenberg, "Children in Paradise: Adam and Eve as 'Infants' in Irenaeus of Lyons.")—ED.

only choice is whether we have knowledge of evil through the mistakes of others, or through ourselves overcoming evil.

Everyone, in order to become a mature Christian and to be established in the way of doing good, *has* to know about evil. He has to know what it is that he has chosen not to do. And this knowledge *can* be without falling into great sins—if you are willing to take the examples of others. If you are able to see, almost as if it is your own experience, when someone else makes a tremendous sin, and if you are able to see the result of that sin, then you can make that part of your experience without falling into sin.

Evidently that is what Adam could have done. If he had resisted this temptation, he would have seen that there was a temptation, that is, that everything was not perfect, and that there was someone out to get him. Then, if a second temptation had come, he would have seen that the serpent (or whatever else was used by the devil) was out to make him fall. He would have begun to realize there was such a thing as evil: an evil will that makes him want to lose his Paradise. Through this he could have attained that knowledge of evil and eventually tasted of that tree.

The tree itself represents the knowledge of evil, since tasting of it meant disobeying the commandment. Adam learned about evil through his disobedience. He chose the way of sin and thereby discovered in bitter experience what it meant to be evil, and then to repent of that evil and come back to goodness.

So that is the path that Adam chose; and because of that our whole nature has been changed. Each person is free—the same as Adam—but we have been born in sins already. Even small children are filled with all kinds of evil things. Nonetheless, real evil does not come in until one consciously chooses to be evil. And that is the choice of adulthood.

Thus, in a sense everyone tastes of this tree, or else refrains from tasting of it and goes on the path of goodness. Unfortunately, the odds are very much against one's surviving without falling into these evils, although there's no reason to fall into them. We see now the evil all around us, and we have instructors and Holy Fathers to keep us on the path of good. A person can be raised in Christianity—like St. Sergius

of Radonezh or other saints who were in monasteries from their childhood—and he can be surrounded by good examples. He can see the results of evils in others and can choose not to do that himself. Theoretically, it is quite possible. In bitter practice, however, usually it happens that we taste the tree by sinning ourselves.

*2:18–20 And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make a help meet for him. And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found a help meet for him (KJV).*

In this passage, again, we should not look for the “contradiction” some rationalist scholars think they have found, as though the text describes the creation of the animals *after* the creation of man, contradicting the order of creation in the first chapter. The subject of this passage is the naming of the animals by Adam, and only incidentally does the text mention that these animals had already been created by God, and that they were not the “help meet” for Adam, which could only be someone of the same nature as he (woman, as mentioned in the next passage).

The animals are “brought” to Adam because their place is not in Paradise but in the earth outside; Paradise is meant for the dwelling of man alone—a preindication that man alone of all earthly creatures is meant for the Heavenly Kingdom to which he can ascend from Paradise through keeping the commandments of God. St. John Damascene writes that Paradise

was a divine place and a worthy habitation for God in His image. And in it no brute beasts dwelt, but only man, the handiwork of God.<sup>23</sup>

And St. John Chrysostom teaches:

Adam was given the whole earth, but his chosen dwelling was Paradise. He could also go outside of Paradise, but the earth outside of

## PARADISE

Paradise was assigned for the habitation not of man, but of the irrational animals, the quadrupeds, the wild beasts, the crawling things. The royal and ruling dwelling for man was Paradise. This is why God brought the animals to Adam—because they were separated from him. Slaves do not always stand before their lord, but only when there is need for them. The animals were named and immediately sent away from Paradise; Adam alone remained in Paradise.<sup>24</sup>

The Holy Fathers interpret the naming of the animals by Adam quite literally, and see in it an indication of man's dominion over them, his undisturbed harmony with them, and a wisdom and intellect in the first man which far surpasses anything since known to man. St. Ephraim writes of this:

The words "He brought them to Adam" show the wisdom of Adam, and the peace which existed between the animals and man before man transgressed the commandment. For they came together before man as before a shepherd filled with love; without fear, according to kinds and types, they passed before him in flocks, neither fearing him nor trembling before each other....\* It is not impossible for a man to discover a few names and keep them in his memory. But it surpasses the power of human nature, and is difficult for him, to discover in a single hour thousands of names and not to give the last of those named the names of the first.... This is the work of God, and if it was done by man, it was given him by God.<sup>25</sup>

---

\* St. Isaac the Syrian writes of how, through the redemptive work of Christ, His humble followers can regain this harmonious relationship that Adam had with the animals: "The humble man approaches ravenous beasts, and when their gaze rests upon him, their wildness is tamed. They come up to him as to their Master, wag their heads and tails and lick his hands and feet, for they smell coming from him that same scent that exhaled from Adam before the fall, when they were gathered together before him and he gave them names in Paradise. This was taken away from us, but Jesus has renewed it and given it back to us through His coming. This it is that has sweetened the fragrance of the race of men" (*Ascetical Homilies* 77, trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, p. 383).—ED.





Adam naming the animals.

*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan in the Catholicon of the Monastery of St. Nicholas Anapausas, Meteora, Greece, 1527.*

In other words, this was a sign of a truly Divine intelligence in Adam. St. John Chrysostom writes:

God does this in order to show us the great wisdom of Adam ... and also so that in the giving of names might be seen a sign of dominion.... Just think what wisdom was needed to give names to so many kinds of birds, reptiles, wild and domestic animals, and other irrational creatures ... to give them all names, and names belonging to them and corresponding to each kind.... Just think of how the lions and leopards, vipers and scorpions and serpents and all the other even more ferocious animals came to Adam as to a lord, with all submission, in order to receive names from him, and Adam did not fear a single one of these wild beasts.... The names which Adam gave them remain until now: God confirmed them so that we might constantly remember the honor which man received from the Lord of all when he received the animals under his authority, and might ascribe the reason for the removal (of this honor) to man himself, who lost his authority through sin.<sup>26</sup>

Because man possesses in himself something of the animal nature, as we have seen, and this animal nature became dominant in him because of his fall, Adam's naming of the animals also indicates the original dominance of man's mind over this lower, passionate nature. St. Ambrose writes:

The beasts of the field and the birds of the air which were brought to Adam are our irrational senses, because beasts and animals represent the diverse passions of the body, whether of the more violent kind or even of the more temperate.... God granted to you the power of being able to discern by the application of sober logic the species of each and every object, in order that you may be induced to form a judgment on all of them. God called them all to your attention, so that you might realize that your mind is superior to all of them.<sup>27</sup>

*2:21–22 So the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and while he slept took one of his ribs and closed up its place with flesh;*



St. Paul of Obnora, Russia (1317–1429), one of the many Orthodox saints who have regained the likeness of Adam in Paradise; see Fr. Seraphim’s mention of him on p. 333 below. St. Paul’s Life, translated by Fr. Seraphim, tells of how another Saint (St. Sergius of Nurma, shown here at left) went to where St. Paul was living in the forest and saw there a wondrous sight: “A flock of birds surrounded the marvelous anchorite; little birds perched on the Elder’s head and shoulders, and he fed them by hand. Nearby stood a bear, awaiting his food from the Saint; foxes, rabbits, and other beasts ran about, without any enmity among themselves and not fearing the bear. Behold the life of innocent Adam in Eden, the lordship of man over creation, which together with us groans because of our fall and thirsts to be delivered into the ‘liberty of the children of God’ (Rom. 8:21).” St. Paul lived to be one hundred and twelve years old. See his Life in *The Northern Thebaid*, compiled and translated by Fr. Seraphim (Rose) and Fr. Herman (Podmoshensky) (1975; 3rd ed., 2004), chap. 2. *Illustration from Russkiy palomnik* (*Russian pilgrim*), 1910.



*and the rib which the Lord God had taken from the man He made into a woman and brought her to the man.*

Perhaps no passage of Genesis is more a touchstone of our interpretation of the whole book than this brief passage of the creation of Eve from Adam's rib. If we understand it "as it is written," as the Holy Fathers did, we will have no difficulty understanding the rest of the book in the same way. But if we have difficulty understanding it in this simple way—and our modern minds almost instinctively rebel against this simple interpretation—we will undoubtedly find much else in Genesis that we have difficulty understanding as the Fathers did.

This passage is also a stumbling block for those who wish to promote the evolutionist view of the origin of life and of mankind. In this view, man (at least in his body) is a descendant of lower animals; the "father" of the first man, therefore, must have been a non-human creature closely related to the higher apes. The whole point of this evolutionary view is that man and every living being developed from more primitive organisms by natural laws now known (or hypothesized) by science; to accept the evolution of the first man from lower animals, and then provide a wife for him by the miracle of taking one of his ribs—is surely something no evolutionist could agree to. If Adam "evolved naturally" from the beasts, then Eve must have done the same; but if you accept the miraculous account of Eve's creation as described in Genesis, you open yourself by this very fact to understanding the entire Six Days of Creation in the Patristic, and not the naturalistic, way.

What do the Holy Fathers say of the creation of Eve? St. Ambrose writes:

Woman was made out of the rib of Adam. She was not made of the same earth with which he was formed, in order that we might realize that the physical nature of both man and woman is identical and that there was one source for the propagation of the human race. For that reason, neither was man created together with a woman, nor were two men and two women created at the beginning, but first a man and after that a woman. God willed it that human nature be established as one. Thus, from the very inception of



The creation of Eve from the rib of Adam.  
*Byzantine mosaic from the Palatine Chapel, Palermo, Sicily, 1140s.*



The creation of Eve from the rib of Adam.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

the human stock He eliminated the possibility that many disparate natures should arise.... Reflect on the fact that He did not take a part from Adam's soul but a rib from his body, that is to say, not soul from a soul, but "bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh" (Gen. 2:23) will this woman be called.<sup>28</sup>

St. Cyril of Jerusalem, trying to make beginning Christians understand the virgin birth of Christ, writes:

Of whom in the beginning was Eve begotten? What mother conceived her the motherless? But the Scripture saith that she was born out of Adam's side. Is Eve then born out of man's side without a mother, and is a child not to be born without a father, of a virgin's womb? This debt of gratitude was due to men from womankind: for

## PARADISE

Eve was begotten of Adam, and not conceived of a mother, but as it were brought forth of man alone.<sup>29</sup>

(We shall see later how the Church sees the parallel between Eve and the Virgin Mary, and between the miracles of the first creation and the miracles of the re-creation through Christ.)

St. John Chrysostom, while warning us that the word “took” must be understood in a way befitting God, Who has no “hands,” clearly indicates his literal interpretation of this passage:

Great are these words; they surpass every mind of man: their greatness can be understood in no other way than by beholding them with the eyes of faith.... “God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept.” This was not a simple ecstasy and not a usual sleep; but since the most wise and skilled Creator of our nature wished to take from Adam one of his ribs, therefore, so that he might not feel the pain and then be hostilely disposed to the one created from his rib, lest, remembering the pain, he hate the created being, God plunged Adam into a deep sleep and, as it were commanding him to be embraced by a kind of numbness, brought upon him such a sleep that he did not feel in the least what happened.... Taking a certain small part from an already prepared creation, from this part He made a whole living being. What power does the Highest Artist, God, have to produce from this small part the composition of so many members, to arrange so many organs of sense and form a whole, perfect and complete being which could converse and, because of its oneness of nature, furnish the man great consolation!<sup>30</sup>

In another treatise the same Father writes:

How did Adam not feel pain? How did he not suffer? One hair is torn out of the body, and we experience pain, and even if one is immersed in a deep sleep he wakes up from the pain. Moreover, such a large member is taken out, a rib is torn out, and the sleeping one



The creation of Eve from the rib of Adam.  
*Exterior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

does not wake up? God removed the rib not violently, lest Adam wake up; He did not tear it out. The Scripture, desiring to show the speed of the Creator's act, says: "He took."<sup>31</sup>

And St. Ephraim writes:

The man who up to now had been awake and was enjoying the shining of the light and had not known what sleep was,\* is now stretched out naked on the earth and given over to sleep. Probably, Adam saw in sleep the very thing that was happening to him. When in the twinkling of an eye the rib was taken out, and likewise in an instant flesh took its place, and the bared bone took on the full appearance and all the beauty of a woman—then God brought and presented her to Adam.<sup>32</sup>

All this took place on the very day of man's creation, the Sixth Day. To our limited minds the creation of man and woman is just as inconceivable, as miraculous, as "spectacular" as all the other creations of God when they were made in the beginning.\*\*

---

\* In the original Syriac, the word used for "awake," *irâ*, is also the word for "angel, watcher," that is, one who is always awake and watchful. The idea implied here—that man did not require sleep in Paradise—is stated more explicitly in St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 13; and St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 9.—ED.

\*\* Together with St. Ambrose (pp. 240, 242 above), other Fathers compare Adam's miraculous creation from the dust with the miracle of Eve's creation from Adam's rib. Thus, for example, St. Chrysostom writes: "The first creation, that of Adam, was from earth; the next, that of the woman, from his rib; the next, that of Abel, from seed" (*Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 25.2, NPNF 1 14, p. 88); "We show again how man is from earth, and how woman is from man alone, and this without any intercourse whatever; how the earth itself is from nothing, the power of the Creator being everywhere sufficient for all things" (*Homilies on 1 Corinthians* 7.4, PG 61.59, NPNF 1 12, p. 37 [7.8]\*). In his *Hymns*, St. Ephraim sets forth this teaching in a poetic manner: "To Eve our mother a man gave birth, who himself had had no birth" (*Hymns on the Nativity* 1.15, NPNF 2 13, p. 223). St. John Damascene expresses it this way: "Man was formed of the virgin earth. Eve was created from Adam alone" (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.24, FC 37, p. 394).—ED.



The creation of Eve from the rib of Adam.  
*Interior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

2:23–24 *And Adam said, This is now bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife; and they shall be one flesh\** (KJV).

Here Adam names the first woman even as he had just named the animals, indicating at the same time her oneness in nature with him, owing to her literal origin from his body, and the institution of marriage, since in prophecy he foresaw that the marriage union would be necessary because of the fall.

Commenting on this passage, St. Ephraim writes:

“This now”: that is, the one who has come to me after the animals is not such as they; they came from the earth, but she is “bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh.” Adam said this either in a prophetic way or, as noted above, according to his vision in sleep. And just as on this day all the animals received from Adam their names according to their kinds, so also the bone, made into a woman, he called not by her proper name, Eve, but by the name of woman, the name belonging to the whole kind.<sup>33</sup>

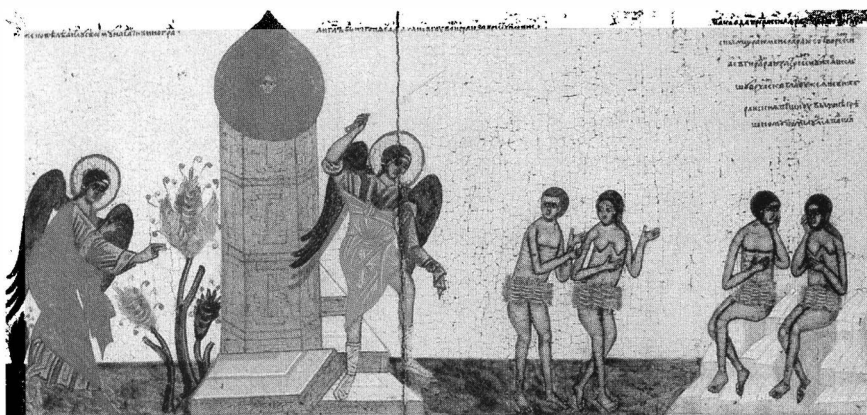
St. John Chrysostom says of the same passage:

How did it come to his mind to say this? How did he know the future, and the fact that the human race would multiply? How did it become known to him that there would be intercourse between man and wife? After all, this occurred after the fall; but before that they lived in Paradise like angels, were not aroused by the flesh, were not inflamed by other passions either, were not weighed down by bodily needs, but being created entirely incorrupt and immortal, did not even need the covering of clothing.... And so, tell me, from whence did the idea come for him to say this? Is it not clear that, since before the transgression he was a participant of the grace of prophecy, he saw all this with his spiritual eyes?<sup>34</sup>

---

\* In the Gospels, Christ quotes from this verse of the book of Genesis (see Matt. 19:5 and Mark 10:7–8), following it with the words: “What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.”—ED.





The creation of Adam and Eve, their temptation, their expulsion from Paradise,  
and their sorrow.

*Details of a Russian icon of the seventeenth century.*

Thus we see that Adam was not only a great intellect, a great seer of the reality of this world who was given the ability to name the animals; he was also a prophet who saw the future.

2:25 *And the man and his wife were both naked, and were not ashamed.\**

Adam and Eve were created, like the whole of the first creation, in the bloom of youth and beauty, and already possessing the sexual distinction that would be needed in their fallen states, yet there was no desire, no passionate thought between them. This, in the view of the Fathers, is the clearest indication of their dispassionateness before the fall, and of the fact that their minds were directed first of all to the glory of the heavenly world above. St. Ephraim writes:

They were not ashamed because they were clothed with glory.<sup>35</sup>

St. John Chrysostom teaches the same thing:

Before sin and disobedience occurred, they were clothed in the glory on high, and were not ashamed; but after the violation of the

---

\* St. Athanasius relates Adam's nakedness in Paradise with Christ's nakedness on the Cross: "He [Christ] went hastily to the place, and there it was necessary to ascend the Cross, in order to nail to the Cross the handwriting that was against us (cf. Col. 2:14)... And since He was going to do this, He took off His clothing (cf. John 19:23). For it was necessary for Him, when bringing man into Paradise, to be stripped bare of the garments which Adam received when he was cast out of Paradise [i.e., the "garments of skin"—Gen. 3:21]" (*On the Passion and Crucifixion of the Lord*, PG 28.221A).

St. Ambrose makes the same comparison: "It is important to consider what manner of Man ascends [the Cross]. I see Him naked.... Adam who desired clothing was conquered (cf. Gen. 3:7). He Who laid down His garments conquered. He ascended [the Cross] in like manner as nature formed us with God as Creator. In like manner as the first Adam had dwelt in Paradise, the Second Adam entered Paradise" (*Exposition of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke* 10.110, p. 424).

St. John Chrysostom likewise, in comparing the tree of the knowledge of good and evil with the tree of Christ's Cross, writes: "A tree cloaked the naked one in captivity, but now displays to all on high the Naked One as victorious" (*On the Name of the Cemetery and on the Cross*, PG 49.396).—ED.

commandment there came both shame and the awareness of their nakedness.<sup>36</sup>

And St. John Damascene writes:

God wanted us to be dispassionate like that, for that is passionlessness to the highest degree.<sup>37</sup>

Let us now sum up the state of Adam in Paradise in the words of a recent Father, St. Seraphim of Sarov:

Adam was created to such an extent immune to the action of every one of the elements created by God, that neither could water drown him, nor fire burn him, nor could the earth swallow him up in its abysses, nor could the air harm him by its action in any way whatsoever.\* Everything was subject to him as the beloved of God, as the king and lord of creation, and everything looked up to him, as the perfect crown of God's creatures. Adam was made so wise by this breath of life which was breathed into his face from the creative lips of God, the Creator and Ruler of all, that there never has been a man on earth wiser or more intelligent than he, and it is hardly likely that there ever will be. When the Lord commanded him to give names to all the creatures, he gave every creature a name which completely expressed all the qualities, powers and properties given it by God at its creation. Owing to this very gift of the supernatural grace of God which was infused into him by the breath of life, Adam could see and understand the Lord walking in Paradise, and comprehend His words, and the conversation of the holy Angels, and the language of all beasts, birds, and reptiles and all that is now hidden from us fallen and sinful creatures, but was so clear to Adam before his fall. To Eve also the Lord God gave the same wisdom, strength, and unlimited power, and all the other good and holy qualities.<sup>38</sup>

---

\* Similarly, St. Maximus wrote that "the first man [was] not subject to either cold or heat" (*Ambigua* 45, see p. 700 below), and St. Symeon the New Theologian stated that it was only after the fall that Adam and Eve "began ... to be cold and shiver" (*Catechetical Discourses* 5.7, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, p. 97).—ED.

To some extent man even today can return to something of this paradisaical state through the grace of God, as may be seen in the lives of many saints, which abound in miracles unbelievable to worldly men. The Life of St. George, for example (April 23), who was preserved unharmed in the midst of the cruelest tortures and even deaths, reminds us of Adam's invulnerability in Paradise.

Still, however, in his fallen state man can attain to no more than a glimpse of the state of Adam; only in the age to come will this Paradise be restored to us in its fullness, and then (if only we be among the saved) we will see what an angelic state it is (and was). St. Gregory of Nyssa writes:

The resurrection promises us nothing else than the restoration of the fallen to their ancient state; for the grace we look for is a certain return to the first life, bringing back again to Paradise him who was cast out from it. If then, the life of those restored is closely related to that of the angels, it is clear that the life before the transgression was a kind of angelic life, and hence also our return to the ancient condition of life is compared to the angels.<sup>39</sup>

In Orthodox ascetic literature, where the aim constantly kept in view is our restoration to Paradise, the unspoiled and dispassionate nature of Adam before the fall is held up as the model and goal of our ascetic struggle. St. Abba Dorotheus writes, in the very first words of his *Spiritual Instructions*:

In the beginning, when God created man, He placed him in Paradise and adorned him with every virtue, giving him the commandment not to taste of the tree which was in the midst of Paradise. And thus he remained there in the enjoyment of Paradise: in prayer, in vision, in every glory and honor, having sound senses and being in the same natural condition in which he was created. For God created man according to His own image, that is, immortal, master of himself, and adorned with every virtue. But when he transgressed the commandment, eating the fruit of the tree of which God had commanded him not to taste, then he was banished from Paradise, fell away from the

natural condition, and fell into a condition against nature, and then he remained in sin, in love of glory, in love of the enjoyments of this age, and of other passions, and he was mastered by them, for he became himself their slave through the transgression.<sup>40</sup>

The awareness that Adam's state in Paradise was the *natural* human condition, and the one to which we may hope to return by God's grace, is one of the greatest spurs to ascetic struggle. This awareness is thus of the most practical benefit to Orthodox Christians who hope to inherit God's Kingdom. With the fall of man, Paradise ceased to be a reality of this earth and was placed out of our reach; but through the grace of God made available to Christians through the Second Adam, Christ, we may still hope to attain it. Actually, through Christ we are able not only to gain back the state of Adam before the fall, but to attain a state even higher than that: the state which Adam would have attained had he not fallen.

Even in our fallen state, can we not be reminded of Paradise and our fall from it in the nature that surrounds us? In the animals it is not difficult to see the passions over which we should be masters, but which have largely taken possession of us; and in the peaceful murmur of the forests (where so many ascetic strugglers have taken refuge) can we not see a reminder of the Paradise of vegetation originally intended for our dwelling and food, and still existing for those able to ascend, with St. Paul, to behold it?

## CHAPTER SIX

### *The Fall of Man*

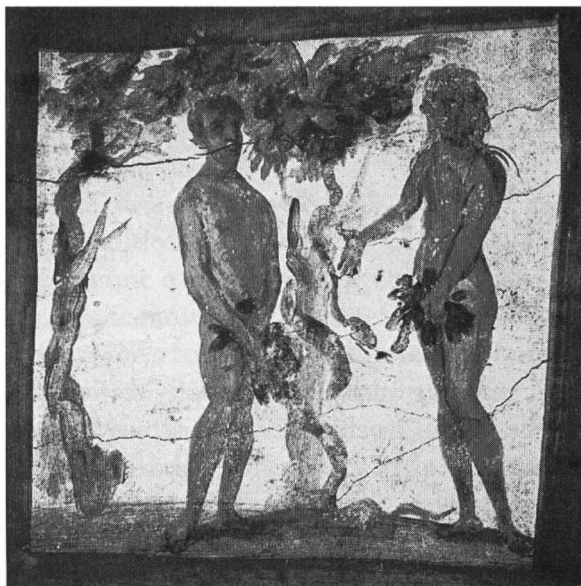
(Genesis 3:1–24)

PREPARED by the Patristic teaching on the Six Days of Creation, the creation of the first man and his dwelling in Paradise, we are now ready to understand the account of his fall in the third chapter of Genesis. It is clear that, like all else in this God-inspired book, this is an historical account, but one which must be understood, first and foremost, in a spiritual sense.

*3:1 Now the serpent was more subtle than any other wild creature that the Lord God had made.*

With the “serpent,” once again, we find an image that our modern rationalistic mind would like to understand allegorically. But here again, the Fathers are relentlessly realistic in their interpretation. St. John Chrysostom teaches:

Do not regard the present serpent; do not regard how we flee it and feel repulsion towards it. It was not such in the beginning. The serpent was the friend of man and the closest of those who served him. And who made it an enemy? The sentence of God: “Cursed are you above all the cattle, and above all wild animals.... I will put enmity between you and the woman” (Gen. 3:14–15). It was this enmity that destroyed the friendship. I mean not a rational friendship, but one of which an irrational creature is capable. Similar to the way that now the dog manifests friendship, not by word but by natural movements, just so did the serpent serve man. As a creature who enjoyed great closeness to man, the serpent seemed to the devil to be a convenient tool (for deception).... Thus, the devil spoke through the



The fall of Adam and Eve at the instigation of the devil, speaking through a serpent.

*Fresco from the Catacombs of Sts. Marcellinus and Peter in Rome, early fourth century.*

serpent, deceiving Adam.\* I beg your love to hear my words not carelessly. The question is not an easy one. Many ask: How did the serpent speak—with a human voice, or with a serpent’s hissing, and how did Eve understand? Before the transgression Adam was filled with wisdom, understanding, and the gift of prophecy.... The devil noticed both the wisdom of the serpent and Adam’s opinion of it—because the latter considered the serpent wise. And so he spoke through it, so that Adam might think that the serpent, being wise, was able to mimic the human voice also.<sup>1</sup>

To understand why the devil should want to tempt Adam, one must understand that the “warfare” in heaven (Apoc. 12:7) has already

---

\* St. John Damascene sets forth the same teaching: “The serpent was accustomed to man, and approached him more readily than it did other living creatures, and held intercourse with him with delightful motions. And hence it was through it that the devil, the prince of evil, made his most wicked suggestion to our first parents” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.10, NPNF 2 9, p. 28b). See also Blessed Theodoret, *Questions on Genesis* 32, LEC 1, pp. 72–73.—ED.

occurred, and that the devil and his angels have already been cast out of heaven into the lower realm of earth because of their pride. The motive of the devil is *envy* of man, who is called to the estate the devil has lost. St. Ambrose writes:

“Through the envy of the devil death came into the world” (Wisdom 2:24). The cause of envy was the happiness of man placed in Paradise, because the devil could not brook the favors received by man. His envy was aroused because man, though formed in slime, was chosen to be an inhabitant of Paradise. The devil began to reflect that man was an inferior creature, yet had hopes of an eternal life, whereas he, a creature of superior nature, had fallen and had become part of this mundane existence.<sup>2\*</sup>

3:1–6 *And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden; but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die; for God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat (KJV).*

The childlikeness of this dialogue, and the ease with which our

---

\* On the devil's tempting mankind out of envy, see also St. Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 5.24.4; idem, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 16; St. Basil the Great, *Homily Explaining That God Is Not the Cause of Evil* 8; St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 12.5; St. Gregory the Theologian, *Orations* 39.13, 45.28; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Catechetical Oration* 6; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 48.1; St. John Cassian, *Institutes* 4.30; Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *On the Incarnation of the Lord* 6; St. Barsanaphius the Great, *Letters of Sts. Barsanaphius and John* 69; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61; St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.30; St. Photius the Great, *Homilies* 9.8, 12.3; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.1.—ED.



first parents fell into a transgression of the only commandment that had been given them, indicate the untested nature of their virtue: everything had been given them by God's grace, but they were not yet skilled in "tilling and keeping" their inward state.

The temptation offered by the devil contains the same elements we fallen men know in our own fight against sin. He offers, first of all, not an obvious evil but something which seems good and true. Men were indeed created to be "gods and sons of the most high" (Ps. 81:6, 11th Kathisma), and were aware that from Paradise they were to ascend to a higher condition. The devil, therefore, as it were thought to himself (as St. Ambrose expresses it):

This, therefore, is my first approach, namely, to deceive him while he is desirous of improving his condition. In this way an attempt will be made to arouse his ambition.<sup>3</sup>

In causing our first ancestors to look at the good thing of becoming like gods, the devil hoped to cause them to forget the "small" commandment which was the way God ordained them to achieve this goal.

Again, the devil attacked not through the man, but through the woman—not because the woman was weaker or more passionate, because both Adam and Eve still preserved the dispassionateness of their original nature—but for the simple reason that Adam alone had heard the command of God, whereas Eve knew it only indirectly, and thereby might be considered more likely to disobey it. St. Ambrose writes of this:

[The devil] aimed to circumvent Adam by means of the woman. He did not accost the man who had in his presence received the heavenly command. He accosted her who had learned of it from her husband and who had not received from God the command which was to be observed. There is no statement that God spoke to the woman. We know that He spoke to Adam. Hence we must conclude that the command was communicated through Adam to the woman.<sup>4</sup>

The success of the devil's temptation, finally, was due to his knowledge (or guess) as to what is in the heart of man himself. It was not the devil who caused Adam's fall, but Adam's own desire. St. Ephraim writes:

The tempting word would not have led into sin those who were tempted if the tempter had not been guided by their own desire. Even if the tempter had not come, the tree itself by its beauty would have led their desire into battle. Although the first ancestors sought an excuse for themselves in the counsel of the serpent, they were harmed more by their own desire than by the counsel of the serpent.<sup>5\*</sup>

As a result of the temptation, as St. John Chrysostom describes it,

the devil led the woman into captivity, drew away her mind and caused her to think of herself above her worth, so that, being drawn away by empty hopes, she might lose even what had been given her.<sup>6\*\*</sup>

*3:7 And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons (KJV).*

---

\* St. Irenaeus contrasts Adam and Eve's succumbing to the devil's temptation with Christ's repulsing a similar temptation after fasting for forty days in the wilderness: "As at the beginning it was by means of food that [the enemy] persuaded man, although not suffering hunger, to transgress God's commandments, so in the end he did not succeed in persuading Him Who was hungry to take that food which proceeded from God. For, when tempting Him, he said, 'If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.' But the Lord repulsed him by the commandment of the law, saying, 'It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone' (Matt. 4:3-4)" (*Against Heresies* 5.21.2, ANF 1, p. 549).—ED.

\*\* St. Ephraim adds that part of Eve's sin lay in her trying to usurp Adam's headship and "seniority": "She hastened to eat before her husband that she might become head over her head, that she might become the one to give command to that one by whom she was to be commanded and that she might be older in divinity than the one who was older than she in humanity" (*Commentary on Genesis* 2.20, FC 91, p. 113).—ED.



“And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked.”  
*Fresco from the Christian catacombs in Rome, third century.*

## THE FALL OF MAN

On this passage St. John Chrysostom says:

It was not the eating of the tree that opened their eyes: they had seen even before eating. But since this eating served as an expression of disobedience and violation of the commandment given by God, and for this reason they were then deprived of the glory that clothed them, having become unworthy of such great honor, the Scripture says: They ate, and their eyes were opened, and they knew that they were naked. Being deprived of the grace from on high for the transgression of the commandment, they saw also their physical nakedness, so that from the shame that took hold of them they might understand into what an abyss they had been cast by the transgression of the Master's commandment.... When you hear, "their eyes were opened," understand this to mean that (God) gave them to feel their nakedness and the loss of the glory which they had enjoyed before the eating.... Do you see that the word "opened" refers not to the bodily eyes, but to mental vision?<sup>7</sup>

With the opening of their eyes through the transgression, Adam and Eve have already lost the life of Paradise, even though they have not yet been banished from it; from now on their eyes will be open to the lower things of this earth, and they will see only with difficulty the higher things of God. They are no longer dispassionate, but have begun the passionate earthly life we still know today.

*3:8 And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day;\* and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden (KJV).*

St. John Chrysostom writes of this:

What do you say? God walks? Are you going to ascribe feet to Him, and not understand anything higher? No, God does not walk—may this not be! In very fact, how can He Who is everywhere and fills all things, Whose throne is heaven and the earth His footstool—walk in Paradise? What sensible man would say this? Then what does it

---

\* LXX: "in the afternoon" or "in the evening."—ED.



Adam and Eve with the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.  
*Exterior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

## THE FALL OF MAN



Adam and Eve hiding themselves from the presence of the Lord.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

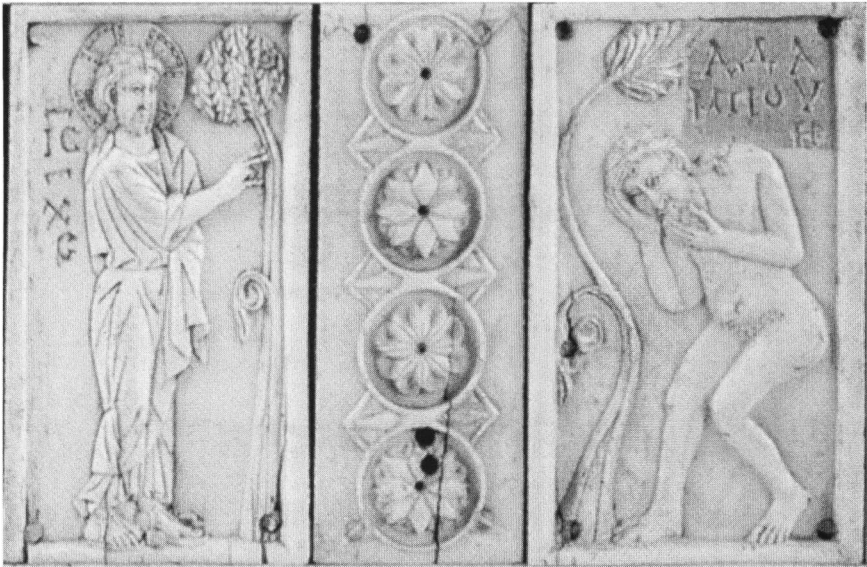
mean: “They heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the afternoon”? He wished to arouse in them such a feeling of God’s closeness that it would make them uneasy, which indeed happened: They felt this, and tried to hide themselves from God, Who was approaching them.<sup>8</sup>

And St. Ambrose writes:

In my opinion God may be said to walk wherever throughout Scripture the presence of God is implied.<sup>9</sup>

In the dialogue that follows, we see that God comes to Adam not to condemn him or banish him from Paradise, but to bring him to his senses. St. John Chrysostom writes:

He did not delay in the least, but as soon as He saw what had happened and the seriousness of the wound, He immediately hastened



“Adam, where art thou?”

*Ivory carving from a Byzantine casket, Constantinople, tenth century.*

with a treatment, so that the wound would not become inflamed and become incurable.... Pay heed to the Lord’s love of mankind and His extreme lack of ill will. He could, without even vouchsafing a reply to the one who had performed such a sin, have immediately subjected him to the punishment which He had already decreed beforehand for the transgression; but He is long-suffering, delays, asks and listens to the answer, and again asks, as if evoking the guilty one to justify himself in order that when the matter had been revealed He might show him His love of mankind even after such a transgression.<sup>10</sup>

3:9 *And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? (KJV).*

Of this St. Ambrose says:

What, then, does He mean by “Adam, where art thou?” Does He not mean “in what circumstances” are you; not, “in what place”? It is,

## THE FALL OF MAN

therefore, not a question, but a reproof. From what condition of goodness, beatitude, and grace, He means to say, have you fallen into this state of misery? You have forsaken eternal life. You have entombed yourself in the ways of sin and death.<sup>11\*</sup>

*3:10–13 And he said, I heard Thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And He said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom Thou gavest me to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat (KJV).*

In this dialogue the Fathers see God's call for man to repent. St. John Chrysostom writes:

[God] asks about this not because He did not know: He knew, and knew perfectly; but in order to show His love of mankind He condescends to their weakness and calls them to confess their sin.<sup>12</sup>

But man responds not with repentance, but with self-justification, thereby bringing punishment upon himself. St. Ephraim comments on this passage:

Instead of acknowledging what he had done himself, which acknowledgment would have been profitable for him, Adam retells what

---

\* St. Irenaeus draws a parallel between how the Word of God “searched out” Adam in the garden and how He later, when incarnated in Jesus Christ, came to search out fallen humanity: “So the Scripture, pointing out what would come to pass, reports that when Adam had hid himself on account of his disobedience, the Lord came to him in the evening, called him forth and said, ‘Where art thou?’ This means that in these last times [i.e., the New Testament era] the same Word of God has come to call man, reminding him of his deeds, living in which he had been hidden from the Lord. For just as at that time God spoke to Adam in the evening, searching him out, so in these last times, by means of the same voice, searching out his posterity, He has visited them” (*Against Heresies* 5.15.4, SC 153.212–13, ANF 1, p. 544\*).—ED.



happened to him, something that was profitless for him.... Adam does not confess his guilt, but accuses the woman.... And when Adam does not wish to confess his guilt, God addresses a question to Eve and says: "What is this that thou hast done?" And Eve, instead of entreating with tears and taking the guilt upon herself, as if she does not desire to obtain forgiveness for herself and her husband, does not mention the promise given her by the serpent and how he persuaded her.... When both had been questioned and it was revealed that they have neither repentance nor any true justification, God turns to the serpent, not with a question but with definite punishment. For where there was room for repentance, there was questioning; but one who is a stranger to repentance is simply given the judge's sentence.<sup>13</sup>

The same Father adds:

If our first ancestors had desired to repent even after the transgression of the commandment, then, even though they would not have restored to themselves what they had before the transgression of the commandment, at least they would have been delivered from the curses that were uttered to the earth and to themselves.<sup>14</sup>

So we cannot simply say that Adam and Eve sinned and then were condemned. They were given a chance to repent before they were condemned.

St. Abba Dorotheus takes this account from Genesis as the classic example of man's unwillingness to repent and his deep-seated desire to justify his own behavior even when it is exposed as sinful by God Himself:

After the fall, (God) gave (Adam) the opportunity to repent and be pardoned, but his neck remained unbending. For (God) came and said to him: "Adam, where art thou?" That is, from what glory into what shame have you come? And then, when He asked him why he sinned, why he transgressed, He prepared him especially so that he might say: "Forgive me." But there was no humility! Where was the word "forgive"? There was no repentance, but the complete opposite. For he contradicted and retorted: "The woman whom Thou

gavest me" (deceived me). He did not say, "My wife deceived me," but "the woman whom Thou gavest me," as if to say: "this misfortune which Thou hast brought on my head." For thus it always is, brethren: When a man does not wish to reproach himself, he does not hesitate to accuse God Himself. Then (God) came to the woman and said to her: And why did you not keep the commandment? As it were, He especially hinted to her: At least you say "forgive," so your soul might be humbled and you might be pardoned. But again He (did not hear) the word "forgive." For she also replied: "The serpent beguiled me," as if to say: The serpent sinned, and what is that to me? What are you doing, wretched ones? Repent, acknowledge your sin, have pity on your nakedness. But neither of them wished to accuse himself; neither had the least humility. And so you see now clearly to what our state has come, into what great misfortunes we have been led by the fact that we justify ourselves, that we hold to our own will and follow ourselves.<sup>15</sup>\*

*3:14–15 And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field;\*\* upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel\*\*\* (KJV).*

The Fathers, with the realism of their understanding of Genesis, interpret this punishment as applying first of all to the animal who was

---

\* Like St. Dorotheus, St. Symeon the New Theologian discusses at length the dialogue between God and Adam, and points out how the latter should have repentantly admitted his sin and asked for God's mercy: "He does not humble himself, he does not bend. The neck of his heart is like a sinew of iron (cf. Is. 48.4)!... For had he said this he might have stayed in Paradise. By this one word he might have spared himself that whole cycle of evils without number that he endured by his expulsion and in spending so many centuries in hell" (*Catechetical Discourses* 5.5, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, pp. 95–96).—ED.

\*\* LXX: "and all the brutes of the earth."—ED.

\*\*\* LXX: "He shall be on guard for thy head, and thou shalt be on guard for His heel."—ED.

the instrument of man's fall, but then also to the devil who used this creature. St. John Chrysostom writes:

But perhaps someone will say: If the counsel was given by the devil, using the serpent as an instrument, why is this animal subjected to such a punishment? This also was a work of God's unutterable love of mankind. As a loving father, in punishing the murderer of his son, breaks also the knife and sword by which he performed the murder, and breaks them into small pieces—in similar fashion the All-good God, when this animal, like a kind of sword, served as the instrument of the devil's malice, subjects it to a constant punishment, so that from this physical and visible manifestation we might conclude the dishonor in which it finds itself. And if the one who served as the instrument was subjected to such anger, what punishment must the other be undergoing?... \* The unquenchable fire awaits him (Matt. 25:41).<sup>16</sup>

St. John even speculates that before the curse the serpent, without having legs, went about in an upright position similar to the way it now stands up when ready to strike.<sup>17</sup>

Before Adam fell, he could be naked and not notice it; afterwards, this is impossible. Before the fall, Adam had friendship with the serpent like we have with dogs or cats or some domestic animal; afterwards we have an instinctive reaction against snakes—which everyone has probably experienced. This shows that our nature has somehow changed.

The "enmity" in our fallen life, of course, much more than between man and serpent, is between man and the devil; and in a special sense the "seed of the woman" is Christ. One nineteenth-century Orthodox commentary on this passage says:

The first woman in the world was the first to fall into the devil's net and easily gave herself into his power; but by her repentance she will shake off his power over her. Likewise, in many other women also, especially in the person of the most blessed woman, the Virgin Mary, he will meet a powerful resistance to his wiles.... By the seed of the

---

\* See p. 123 above and p. 712n below on how to understand Biblical and Patristic references to God's anger or wrath.—ED.

woman, which is hostile to the seed of the devil, one must understand in particular one person from among the posterity of the woman, namely, Him Who from eternity was predestined for the salvation of men and was born in time of a woman without a man's seed. He subsequently appeared to the world to "destroy the works of the devil" (1 John 3:8), that is, the kingdom of the devil, filled with his servants, with his seed.... The striking of the spiritual serpent in the head by the seed of the woman signifies that Christ will completely defeat the devil and take away from him all power to harm men.... Until the Second Coming the devil will have the opportunity to harm men, including Christ Himself; but his wounds will be easily healed, like wounds in the heel, which are not dangerous because in the heel, which is covered with hard skin, there is little blood. A wound in the heel was given by the powerless malice of the devil to Christ Himself, against Whom he aroused the unbelieving Jews who crucified Him. But this wound served only for the greater shame of the devil and the healing of mankind.<sup>18\*</sup>

---

\* This nineteenth-century commentary identifying the "seed of woman" (Gen. 3:15) with Christ is based on an early Patristic teaching. In the second century, St. Irenaeus of Lyons wrote: "He [Christ] has therefore, in His work of recapitulation, summed up all things, both waging war against our enemy, and crushing him who had at the beginning led us away captives in Adam, and trampled upon his head, as you can perceive in Genesis that God said to the serpent, 'And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; He shall be on guard for thy head, and thou shalt be on guard for His heel.' For from that time, He Who should be born of a woman, [namely] from the Virgin, after the likeness of Adam, was preached as keeping watch for the head of the serpent. This is the seed of which the Apostle says in the Epistle to the Galatians, that the law of works was established 'till the seed should come to whom the promise was made' (Gal. 3:19). This fact is exhibited in a still clearer light in the same Epistle, where he thus speaks: 'But when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman' (Gal. 4:4). For indeed the enemy would not have been fairly vanquished, unless it had been a man [born] of a woman who conquered him. For it was by means of a woman that he got the advantage over man at first, setting himself up as man's opponent (*Against Heresies* 5.21.1, ANF 1, pp. 548-49; see also 5.23.7, p. 457).

Likewise, St. Epiphanius of Salamis wrote in the fourth century: "Since Eve in Paradise fell into the sin of disobedience while still a virgin, the obedience of grace

Thus the “wound in the heel” represents the small amount that the devil is able to harm us since the coming of Christ.

*3:16 And to the woman He said, I will greatly multiply thy pains and thy groanings; in pain thou shalt bring forth children, and thy submission shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee (LXX).*

Even while cursing the serpent, God is awaiting the repentance of Adam and Eve. St. Ephraim writes:

God began with the despised [serpent] so that, while the anger of righteous judgment was directed against it alone, Adam and Eve might become terrified and repent, and thereby the opportunity would have been given to [God’s] goodness to deliver them from the curses of righteous judgment. But when the serpent had been cursed, and Adam and Eve did not hasten to entreaties, God uttered the punishment to them. He addressed Eve first, because by her hand sin was given to Adam.<sup>19</sup>

St. John Chrysostom writes of Eve’s punishment:

Behold the Lord’s goodness, and what meekness He shows after such a transgression. He says: I wished that you would lead a life without sorrow and pain, free of every grief and bitterness, and filled with every satisfaction; that, being clothed in a body, you might not feel anything bodily. But since you did not make fitting use of such

---

came in its turn through the Virgin, when she was told of the descent from heaven of Christ’s incarnation, and life immortal. For in Paradise God tells the serpent, ‘And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed.’ But there is no example of a woman’s seed, unless, as the obscure saying suggests, the ‘enmity’ is taken to mean Eve’s enmity towards the progeny of the snake itself, and of the devil who dwelt in the snake, and his envy. And in fact, the whole cannot have its complete fulfillment in Eve. But it will truly be fulfilled in the holy Seed, the elect Seed, the unique Seed, the Seed which originated from Mary alone, and not from union with a man. For He came to ‘destroy’ the ‘crooked dragon serpent that flees’ (cf. Is. 27:1, LXX).... And so the Only Begotten came from a woman for the destruction of the serpent—that is, of heresy, corruption and deceit, imposture and iniquity” (*Panarion* 78.18–19, GCS 37.469, trans. Frank Williams, vol. 2, p. 615\*).—ED.

happiness, but the abundance of good things brought you to such great ingratitude, therefore, so that you might not be given over to yet greater self-will, I am laying upon you a bridle, and I condemn you to sorrow and groaning. I shall arrange that your giving birth to children—a source of great consolation—will begin with sorrow, so that in daily grief and sorrow in giving birth you might have a constant reminder of how great was this sin and disobedience.... At first I created you equal in honor (to your husband) and wished that, being of one dignity with him, you might have communion in everything with him; and I entrusted to you, as to your husband, authority over all creatures. But since you did not make fitting use of the equality in honor, for this I am subjecting you to your husband.... I subject you to him and proclaim him your lord, so that you might acknowledge his authority; since you are unable to lead, therefore, learn to be a good subject.<sup>20</sup>

St. John Chrysostom provides the answer to the problem of “women’s liberation”: become saints and your problems are ended.

3:17–19 *And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife,\* and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life.\*\* Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee, and thou shalt eat of the herb of*

---

\* St. John Chrysostom writes that the equality of honor that existed between Adam and Eve before the fall did not exclude a certain order in which Adam even then was the head. Thus, he blames Adam for not guiding and correcting Eve: “After all, you are head of your wife, and she has been created for your sake; but you have inverted the proper order: not only have you failed to keep her on the straight and narrow but you have been dragged down with her, and whereas the rest of the body should follow the head, the contrary has in fact occurred, the head following the rest of the body, turning things upside down” (St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.4, FC 74, p. 231 [17.17]).—ED.

\*\* LXX: “cursed is the earth in thy labors; in pains shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life.” Here the Greek word for “pains,” *λύπαις*, is the same as that found in the sentence pronounced on Eve in Genesis 3:16.—ED.

*the field; in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken. For dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return (KJV).*

Here Adam is given an image of the trials and tribulations of simply living in this fallen world. First of all, the earth is cursed for his sake. St. John Chrysostom writes:

Behold the reminders of the curse! Thorns it will bring forth, He [God] says, and thistles. I will do this so that you will endure severe labor and cares and spend your whole life in sorrow, that this might be a restraint for you, that you might not dream that you are higher than your station; but that you might constantly remember your nature and might henceforth not allow yourself to come to a similar state of deception.

“Thou shalt eat of the herb of the field; in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread.” See how after his [Adam’s] disobedience everything was not as it had been before in his life! I, He says, bringing you into this world, wanted you to live without afflictions, without labors, without cares, without sorrows; to be in contentment and prosperity and not be subject to bodily needs, but to be a stranger to all this and enjoy perfect freedom. But since such freedom was not of benefit to you, I will curse the earth so that henceforth it will not be as it was formerly, giving forth fruit without sowing and cultivation, but will do so only with great labor, exertion and cares. I will subject you to constant afflictions and sorrows, and force you to do everything with exhausting efforts, that these tormenting labors might be for you a constant lesson to behave modestly and know your own nature.<sup>21</sup> \*

Secondly, Adam now becomes *mortal*. St. John Chrysostom writes that, even though Adam and Eve lived a long time after their fall,

nevertheless from the moment they heard, “Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return,” they received a death sentence, became mor-

---

\* I.e., so that Adam would recognize that he was a created being and not God, since he had succumbed to the devil’s temptation: “Ye shall be as gods.”—ED.

tals and, one may say, died. Indicating this, the Scripture said, “In the day that thou eatest of it [the tree] thou shalt surely die” (Gen. 2:17)—in other words, you shall receive a sentence; you shall now be mortals.<sup>22\*</sup>

In the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans there is a teaching about how the whole creation is “groaning” because it is subject to “futility,” that is, to the corruption (decay) that entered the world because of the pride of one man. The creation is waiting for man to be delivered so that it itself can be restored to the original state of incorruption—when the creatures will be wandering around the forest like they are now, but incorrupt like they were in the days of Adam.

In Romans 8:19–22 we read: “For the earnest expectation of the creation waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creation was made subject to futility, not willingly, but by reason of Him Who hath subjected it in hope. Because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.\*\* For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.”\*\*\*

The commentary of St. John Chrysostom on this passage makes the doctrine absolutely explicit:

What means “for the creation was made subject to futility”? It became corruptible. Why, and by what cause? By your fault, O man. Because

---

\* Sts. Gregory of Nyssa, Macarius the Great, Symeon the New Theologian and Gregory Palamas add to this teaching by saying that man’s subjection to physical death followed upon a spiritual death that occurred at the time of the fall. See pp. 716–18, 717–18n, 723 below.—ED.

\*\* Here as in other places in this book where Romans 8:19–21 is referenced, the King James Version’s “creature” for *ἡ κτίσις* and “vanity” for *ἡ ματαιότης* have been changed to the New King James and Revised Standard Versions’ “creation” and “futility,” respectively. The latter translations better render the original meaning in present-day English.—ED.

\*\*\* Earlier in the same Epistle (Rom. 5:12), St. Paul explains that “by one man sin entered the world, and death by sin.” See also the relevant passages from St. Paul’s Epistles quoted on pp. 395n, 733–34, 751–52, 777 below.—ED.



you received a body mortal and subject to sufferings, so the earth also was subject to a curse, and brought forth thorns and thistles.

And later in the same section:

Just as the creation became corruptible when your body became corruptible, so also when your body will be incorrupt, the creation also will follow after it and become corresponding to it.<sup>23</sup>\*

Here, it should be noted, the word “you” means the same thing as the word “I” often does in the Orthodox Divine services: Adam (because we are all one man). St. John makes this clear in another passage:

What armed death against the whole universe? The fact that only one man tasted of the tree (Commentary on Romans 5:15–21).<sup>24</sup>

St. Macarius the Great says the same thing:

Adam was placed as lord and king of all the creatures.... But after his captivity, there was taken captive together with him the creation which served him and submitted to him, because through him death came to reign over every soul.<sup>25</sup>

St. Symeon the New Theologian is also very explicit that the material creation—and not just Paradise—before Adam’s fall was incorrupt.\*\* As we saw earlier, he writes that Adam was originally “placed by the Creator God as an immortal king over an incorrupt world, not only over Paradise, but also over the whole of creation

---

\* Further Patristic commentary on Romans 8:19–23 is found on pp. 456, 727–33, 762–63, 772 below.—ED.

\*\* In his notes, Fr. Seraphim introduces this teaching with the following words about St. Symeon: “Let us now read and be inspired by this teaching as set forth in perfect and unequivocal form by one of the greatest Saints of the Orthodox Church, a late Father who stated the teaching of the Orthodox Church so divinely and clearly that he was the third and last, after St. John the Evangelist and St. Gregory Nazianzen, to be called ‘Theologian’ by the Church.”—ED.

which was under the heavens.” In the same Homily he goes on to say that, after Adam’s transgression,

God did not curse Paradise ... but He cursed only the whole rest of the earth, which also was incorrupt and brought forth everything by itself....

And thus it was fitting in all justice for the one who had become corrupt and mortal by reason of the transgression of the commandment, to live upon the corruptible earth and eat corruptible food.... Then also all creatures, when they saw that Adam was banished from Paradise, no longer wished to submit to him, the criminal.... But God restrained all these creatures by His power, and in His compassion and goodness He did not allow them immediately to strive against man, and He commanded that the creation should remain in submission to him, and having become corrupt, should serve corrupt man for whom it had been created....

Do you see that this whole creation in the beginning was incorrupt and was created by God in the manner of Paradise? But later it was subjected by God to corruption, and submitted to the futility of men.<sup>26</sup> \*

The Fathers also mention that the sentence of death, which took effect at the fall, was not just a punishment. It was also a good, because once man fell, if he were to still be immortal, there would be no way out for him. Imagine being in a state of being unable to redeem yourself, unable to get to Paradise, and then living and living and living, with no hope of getting out of this state. Death puts an end to sin. The fact that we are afraid of death already wakes us up to begin to struggle. Even if we forget about Paradise, we will be afraid of death and begin to struggle, to overcome our fallen nature.\*\*

---

\* On the original incorruption of the whole of creation, and on creation’s becoming corruptible through man’s fall, see also pp. 451–65, 547, 573, 649–51, 662, 669, and appendix 1 below.—ED.

\*\* On why God providentially allowed death (along with suffering, disease, etc.) to enter the world, see also pp. 743–46, 748 below.—ED.

Finally, St. Symeon the New Theologian writes of how, through the Crucifixion and Resurrection of Jesus Christ, the sentence of death is abolished:

The decree of God, "Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return," just like everything else laid upon mankind after the fall, will be in effect until the end of the age. But by God's mercy, through the power of the extraordinary sacrifice of Christ, in the future age it will no longer have any effect, when the general resurrection will occur, which resurrection could not possibly occur unless the Son of God Himself had risen from the dead, Who had died for the abolition of the above-mentioned decree and for the resurrection of the entire human nature.<sup>27</sup>

In the general resurrection, all of creation will be delivered from corruption together with man, just as it once became subject to corruption because of him. St. Symeon writes:

When man again will be renewed and become spiritual, incorrupt, and immortal, then also the whole creation, which had been subjected by God to man to serve him, will be delivered from this servitude, will be renewed together with him, and become incorrupt and as it were spiritual....

It is not fitting for the bodies of men to be clothed in the glory of resurrection and to become incorrupt before the renewal of all creatures. But just as in the beginning, first the whole creation was created incorrupt, and then from it man was taken and made, so also it is fitting that again first all the creation should become incorrupt, and then the corruptible bodies of men also should be renewed and become incorrupt, so that once more the whole man might be incorrupt and spiritual and that he might dwell in an incorruptible, eternal, and spiritual dwelling.<sup>28</sup>

*3:20 And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living (KJV).*

Eve means “life.” Adam now gives her a particular name in addition to the name Woman.

3:21 *Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them* (KJV).

St. Gregory of Nyssa says this means that they literally put on “coats of skins,” but it also means, figuratively, that they became clothed in a *different* kind of flesh; that is, their nature was changed.\*

---

\* In *On Virginity* 12, St. Gregory interprets the “coats (or garments) of skins” in a literal sense: “And after that [the fall], they covered themselves with the skins of dead animals” (NPNF 2 5, p. 358). In *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, he interprets them in a figurative sense, associating them with “such accretions [as] sexual intercourse, conception, parturition, impurities, suckling, feeding, evacuation, gradual growth to full size, prime of life, old age, disease, and death” (ibid., p. 465). In *On Those Who Have Fallen Asleep*, he relates the “garments of skin” to the passions: “The garments of skin have all the properties belonging to an irrational nature: pleasure, anger, gluttony, greed, and similar tendencies which allow man to choose between virtue and evil” (GNO 9.55, trans. Richard McCambly). Finally, in *Catechetical Oration* 8, he associates the “garments” specifically with physical mortality (NPNF 2 5, p. 483).

Both literal and figurative interpretations of the “garments of skin” are found in the writings of other Holy Fathers. St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 3.23.5), St. Athanasius (see p. 249n above and p. 276n below), St. Basil (*The Long Rules* 22), St. John Chrysostom (p. 720 below), St. Ephraim (p. 453 below), St. Ambrose (*Two Books concerning Repentance* 2.11.99), St. Epiphanius (*Panarion* 52.3, 64.66), and Blessed Theodoret (*Questions on Genesis* 39), for example, interpret them literally. St. Methodius of Olympus refers to them figuratively as “mortality” (*From the Discourse on the Resurrection* 1.4, ANF 6, p. 364), as does St. Athanasius (see below), and St. Maximus (p. 719 below). St. Gregory the Theologian says that they can perhaps represent “denser flesh, mortal and unyielding” (pp. 487, 693 below), St. John Damascene says that they denote “the mortality and material density of the flesh” (pp. 719–20 below), and St. Gregory Palamas associates them with “our infirm mortal bodies beset with pain” (*Homily* 31.1, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 243).

In light of Fr. Seraphim’s discussion of the different levels of Patristic interpretation of the Genesis account, the literal and figurative readings of the “garments of skin” may be regarded as complementary, not mutually exclusive. This is evidenced by the above-quoted passages of St. Gregory of Nyssa, in which the same Father offers both kinds of interpretations. Even more illustrative in this regard is the following quotation of St. Athanasius, in which the Saint sets forth both interpretations

3:22–23 *And the Lord God said, Behold the man is become as one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live forever, therefore, the Lord God sent him forth from the Garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken* (KJV).

The Lord says “as one of Us,” referring to Himself in plural: the Holy Trinity.\* He casts Adam out so that Adam would not eat of the tree of life, which we see also in the book of the Apocalypse: the tree of life in the center of Paradise (cf. Apoc. 2:7, 22:2, 14). Eating of this tree would make man immortal without being good, and God does not want that; therefore, He casts him out.\*\*

---

simultaneously: “When he [Adam] sinned, and hence was going to die, he received garments of skins, which were from dead animals, and which were a symbol of the mortality that through sin was added to him” (*On the Passion and Crucifixion of the Lord*, PG 28.221A).

It should be further noted that, when venturing to give figurative interpretations of the reception of “garments of skin,” the Holy Fathers never embraced the Gnostic notion that this could mean the reception of bodies, as though Adam and Eve were previously without bodies. This idea was explicitly rejected by St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 1.5.5), Clement of Alexandria (*Stromateis* 3.95), St. Methodius (*From the Discourse on the Resurrection* 1.2), St. Epiphanius (*Panarion* 64.4, 64.65), Blessed Jerome (*To Pammachius against John of Jerusalem*), and Blessed Theodoret (*Questions on Genesis* 39).—ED.

\* St. Ephraim writes: “By saying ‘He has become as one of Us,’ [God] symbolically reveals the Holy Trinity” (*Commentary on Genesis* 2.34.1, FC 91, p. 122).—ED.

\*\* Furthermore, as St. Ephraim points out, God in His mercy separated Adam and Eve from the tree of life so that they would not live forever in their new condition of pain and suffering: “If Adam had rashly eaten from the one tree he was commanded not to eat from, how much faster would he hasten to the one about which he had not been so commanded? But it was now decreed that they should live in toil, in sweat, in pains, and in pangs. Therefore, lest [Adam and Eve], having eaten of this tree, live forever and remain in eternal lives of suffering, [God] forbade them to eat, while they were clothed with a curse, that which He had been prepared to give them before they incurred the curse and when they were still clothed with glory. [God did this] lest this life-giving gift that they would receive through the tree of life become misery, and thus bring worse evil upon them than what they had already obtained from the tree of knowledge” (*Commentary on Genesis* 2.35.1–2, FC 91, p. 122).—ED.

## THE FALL OF MAN



Adam and Eve hiding themselves from the presence of the Lord,  
and being cast out of Paradise.

*Exterior fresco from Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1595–1596.*

*3:24 And He cast out Adam and caused him to dwell over against the Garden of Delight, and stationed the Cherubim and the fiery sword that turns about to keep the way of the tree of life (LXX).*

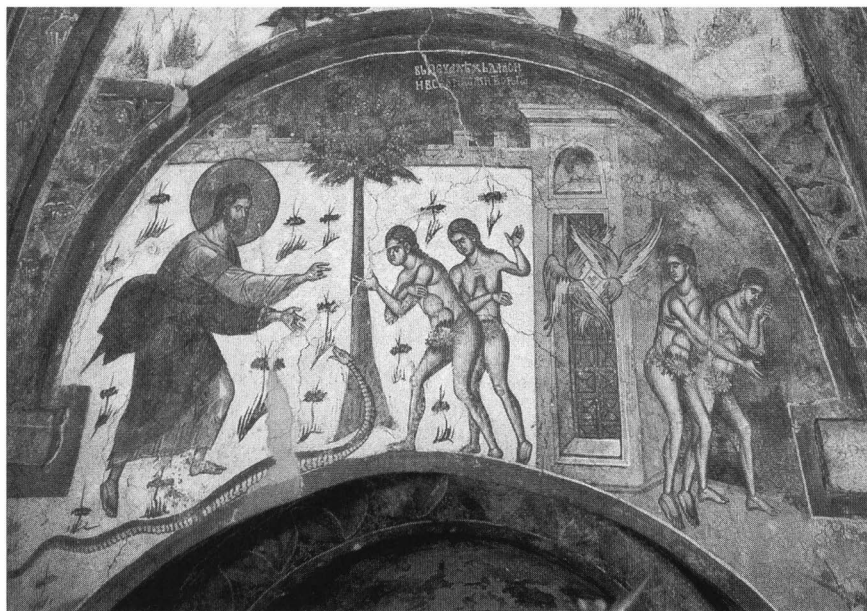
As we said in the first talk, St. Macarius of Egypt interprets this mystically, saying that this is what happens to every soul when Paradise is closed to it. But it also means exactly what it says: that there is a Cherubim with a flaming sword.

\*

\*

\*

We have now covered the first three chapters of Genesis, from which is taken the basic theology of the Church about the origin of man and, therefore, his goal. The services are filled with this theology, especially the services to the Cross. On September 14th, the Feast of the Exaltation of the Cross, there are a number of very good verses which show how the Church views what happened in Paradise and what happened when Christ came. They compare the tree of which Adam tasted with the Tree which was the Cross. One of the verses for Great Vespers says:



God pronouncing the sentence on Adam and Eve,  
and casting them out of Paradise.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

Come, O ye peoples, let us venerate the blessed Wood, through which the eternal justice has been brought to pass. For he who by a tree deceived our forefather Adam, is by the Cross himself deceived; and he who by tyranny gained possession of the creature endowed by God with royal dignity, is overthrown in headlong fall. By the Blood of God the poison of the serpent is washed away; and the curse of a just condemnation is loosed by the unjust punishment inflicted on the Just. For it was fitting that wood should be healed by wood, and that through the Passion of One Who knew not passion should be remitted all the sufferings of him who was condemned because of wood.<sup>29</sup>

It is very profound and moving when you read verses like this, knowing the theology of Paradise and the future age.

In the Sessional Hymn of Matins of that same service, we sing:

At right: The banishment of Adam and Eve from Paradise.

Below: Cain slaying Abel, Cain asking God for mercy, Adam and Eve weeping over Abel's death, Eve (with child) and Adam lamenting,

Adam tilling the ground. Here are shown some of the major consequences of the fall: an inclination toward sin (including murder), pain (including pain in childbirth), sorrow, hard labor, and death.

*Details of a Russian icon of the eighteenth century.*





In Paradise of old, the wood [i.e., of the tree] stripped me bare, for by giving its fruit to eat, the enemy brought in death. But now the wood of the Cross that clothes men with the garment of life has been set up in the midst of the earth, and the whole world is filled with boundless joy.<sup>30</sup>

Another canticle:

O thrice-blessed Tree, on which Christ the King and Lord was stretched! Through thee the beguiler fell, who tempted mankind with the tree. He was caught in the trap set by God, Who was crucified upon thee in the flesh, granting peace unto our souls.<sup>31</sup>

And the Ninth Song, Irmos:

Today the death that came to man through eating of the tree is made of no effect through the Cross. For the curse of our mother Eve that fell on all mankind is destroyed by the fruit of the pure Mother of God, whom all the powers of heaven magnify.<sup>32</sup>\*

---

\* This parallel between Eve and the Mother of God appears in Patristic literature as well as in liturgical hymns. The Fathers contrast the “two virgins,” Eve and Mary (the former having been a virgin at the time of the fall), speaking of the opposite consequences of the disobedience of the one and the obedience of the other. Thus, St. Justin Martyr writes: “Eve, who was a virgin and undefiled, having conceived the word of the serpent, brought forth disobedience and death. But the Virgin Mary received faith and joy, when the angel Gabriel announced the good tidings to her that the Spirit of the Lord would come upon her, and the power of the Highest would overshadow her: therefore also the Holy Thing born of her is the Son of God (cf. Luke 1:35); and she replied, ‘Be it unto me according to thy word’ (Luke 1:38). And by her has He been born, to Whom we have proved so many Scriptures refer, and by Whom God destroys both the serpent and those angels and men who are like him; but works deliverance from death to those who repent of their wickedness and believe upon Him” (*Dialogue with Trypho* 100, ANF 1, p. 249).

The same formulation is found in St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 3.22.4, 5.19.1, ANF 1, pp. 455, 547), St. Cyril of Jerusalem (*Catechetical Lectures* 12.15, NPNF 2 7, p. 75), St. Proclus of Constantinople (*Homily 4: On the Birth of Our Lord Jesus Christ*, PG 65.712A), and St. Photius the Great (*Homily 7: On the Annunciation* 5,

The Canon of the Feast of Epiphany, composed by St. John Damascene, tells us that the devil introduced death into the creation, but that Christ has overcome him:

He who once assumed the appearance of a malignant serpent and implanted death in the creation, is now cast into darkness by Christ's coming in the flesh.<sup>33\*</sup>

That is briefly the theology of the beginning of all things, Paradise, original Adam, his fall, and the state to which we have to try to get back by the Second Adam, Who is Christ.

If you interpret all these events in the early history of mankind as simply an allegory, as a pretty story which says something else entirely, you will be deprived of a true understanding of Paradise. For example, many Roman Catholic theologians say that the idea of Paradise does

---

trans. Cyril Mango, pp. 143–44). St. Cyril speaks further of how womankind owed a “debt of gratitude” to men because Eve was created out of Adam’s rib, without a mother (see pp. 242–43 above), and that this debt was paid back by the Mother of God when she gave birth to Jesus Christ by the power of God, without a man (*Catechetical Lectures* 12.29, p. 80).

Together with St. Cyril, St. Symeon the New Theologian compares Eve’s miraculous creation with the virginal birth-giving of the Mother of God: “Consider the parallelism of the things of old, with what balance they parallel the economy and covenant of God. Thus, first, Adam was introduced into Paradise and then Eve was brought forth [from him]. Even so, first the Son of God, Himself the Creator of Adam, came down and entered into the pure womb of the Virgin, and then received from her the rib of Adam, which is to say, her all-pure flesh, and became man, and, in place of Eve who had been deceived by the serpent, He went forth into the world as the new Adam come to slay the serpent, Eve’s seducer” (*Ethical Discourses* 2.7, PPS 14, p. 110). The same parallel is drawn by St. John Damascene; see p. 432 below.

On the comparison of Eve and the Mother of God, see also St. Sophronius of Jerusalem, *Oration 2: On the Annunciation of the Most Holy Theotokos* 22, PG 87c.3241BC; and the quotations from Sts. Irenaeus and Epiphanius on pp. 267–68n above.—ED.

\* Similarly, in the services of the *Octoechos*, we read: “The tree of disobedience brought death into the world, but the Tree of the Cross blossomed life and incorruption. Therefore, we worship Thee, the Crucified Lord; let the light of Thy countenance shine upon us” (Aposticha, Tone 3, Tuesday Vespers).—ED.

not fit in with the findings of modern anthropology; therefore, we have to reinterpret everything from the conclusion that man evolved from lower animals. Original sin, they say, must mean that as soon as man became sufficiently developed to become aware of himself, and therefore to become man, this *awareness* was like a fall. They cannot fit Paradise into this scheme, because in Paradise man was a being clothed in Divine glory.

It is very important for us to see these two entirely opposed conceptions. The first view is that man was created directly by God with a superhuman intelligence, with that original nature from which we fell away and to which we are called back. The other view is that man comes up from lower creatures. This second view, of course, leads to a philosophy of moral relativism, because if we were once something else, some kind of ape-like creature, then we are going to *be* something else—we are heading for Superman. (Most evolutionists say in so many words that collective humanity will become Superman.) This view also leads to religious ideas like those of Teilhard de Chardin, who says that the whole world is evolving into a higher state, that the world itself is like the bread which is being transmuted into the other world, and then it all becomes Christ. Of course, that is like pantheism, like some frightful heresy—which is exactly what Antichrist needs in order to come to reign. People will think they are gods while actually having this animalistic philosophy.

The first view—that of the Holy Fathers—is very realistic. Christ died on the Cross. This was a real, physical event, not an image or allegory; and through it comes an actual change in man's condition, both spiritual and bodily.\* It gives us salvation: not figurative salvation, but actual salvation. Likewise, Adam tasted of a tree and thereby lost Paradise. This, too, was a real, physical event, bringing about an actual change in man's spiritual and bodily condition.

---

\* That is, through Christ's death together with His bodily Resurrection which inevitably followed it, salvation is given to man's soul and ultimately (in the general resurrection) to his body. On the order of man's redemption, see pp. 753–61 below.—ED.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

### *Life outside Paradise*

(Genesis 4:1–6:5)

IN THE PRECEDING CHAPTER we examined the banishment of Adam from the point of view of Paradise; now we will look to see where he went. With Genesis chapter 4 begins earthly life as we know it now—but in many respects very different from our life now, as we shall see.

Unlike the first three chapters of Genesis, which have abundant Patristic commentaries, the later chapters have only a few. We will rely chiefly on the Genesis Commentaries of St. John Chrysostom and St. Ephraim the Syrian. In the West there are also the Commentaries of Blessed Augustine, which I have not seen, and a few others.

In the fourth and succeeding chapters we will be mainly following the Greek (Septuagint) text of Genesis, with a few variants from the King James Version, which is translated from the Hebrew.\*

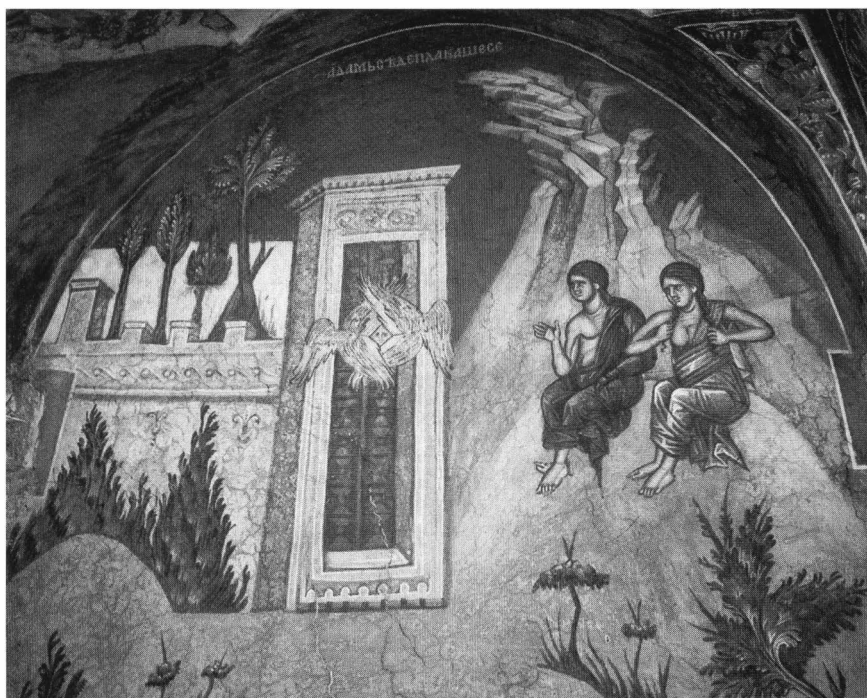
#### *1. The Banishment of Adam*

Chapter 4 begins with Adam in a state of banishment. To where was Adam banished? The Greek text of Genesis 3:24 reads: “The Lord God ... cast out Adam and caused him to dwell over against the Garden of Delight.”

Since, as we have seen, Paradise is an actual place, so also the earth to which Adam was banished was an actual place, near to Paradise. We saw in Genesis chapter 2 (v. 7–8) that Adam was created out of the earth and then led into Paradise; so now he is banished to the place where he was created. The Holy Fathers are surprisingly “geographical”

---

\* In these chapters, Fr. Seraphim follows the chapter and verse numbering found in Sir Lancelot C. L. Brenton’s translation of the Septuagint (London, 1851).—ED.

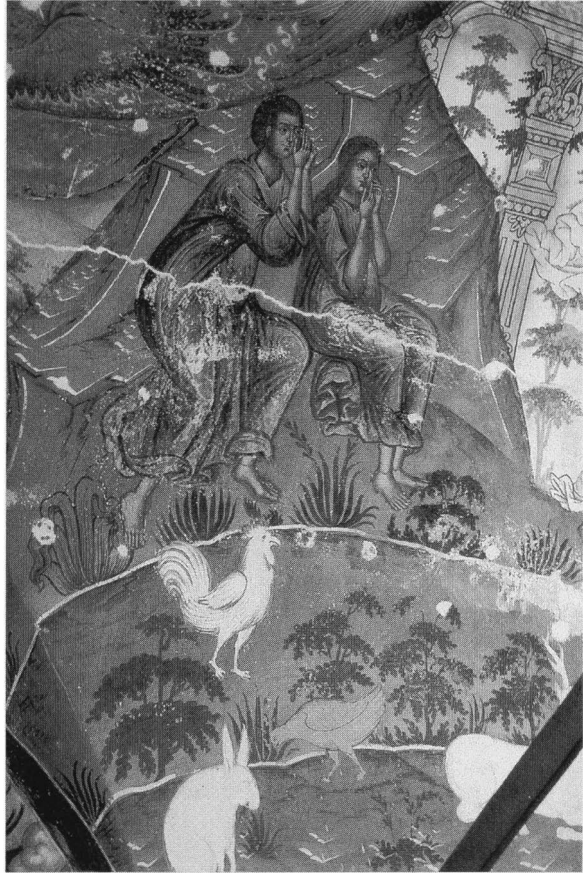


Adam and Eve lamenting outside Paradise.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

about this place, which they see as near Paradise, even within sight of it, and as offering spiritual opportunities which will be lost to later mankind. St. Ephraim the Syrian writes:

When Adam sinned, God banished him from Paradise, and in His goodness He gave him a dwelling outside the boundaries of Paradise; He settled him in a valley near Paradise. But men sinned there also, and for this they were scattered....

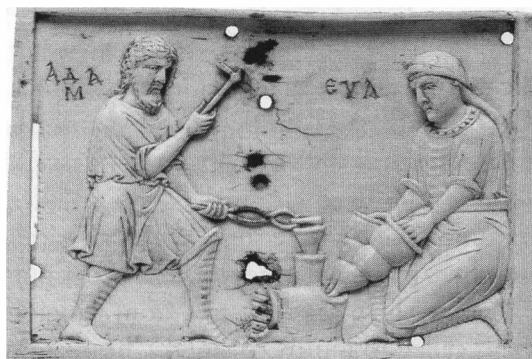
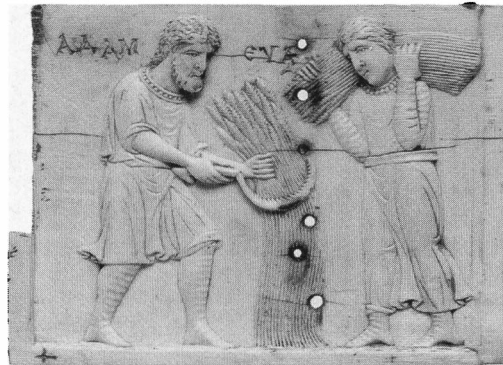
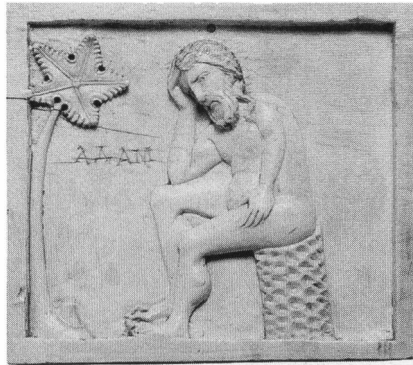
The family of the two brothers became divided: Cain went away and began to live in the land of Nod, lower than the places where the families of Seth and Enosh dwelt. But the descendants of those who dwelt above and were called the sons of God abandoned their land, went down and entered into marriage with the daughters of men, the daughters of those who dwelt below.<sup>1</sup>



Adam and Eve beholding  
Paradise from afar.  
*Russian fresco of the  
sixteenth century.*

We will take up this subject again in Genesis chapter 6; for now, let us only note that the state of Adam outside of Paradise—a state lasting at least for his long lifetime and perhaps in his descendants down to the Flood—was rather different from the state of fallen mankind to-day. We will examine in this course some of the physical characteristics of this difference; here let us note the *spiritual* benefit of being close to Paradise, of still seeing the place and state from which man had fallen and to which he is called to return. St. John Chrysostom writes:

The view (of Paradise), even if it aroused in Adam an unbearable grief, at the same time afforded him much profit: the constant



Scenes from the life of Adam and Eve after the fall: Adam sorrowing,  
 Adam and Eve harvesting, Adam and Eve at the forge.  
*Ivory carvings from a Byzantine casket, Constantinople, tenth century.*



Adam tilling the ground, after his banishment from Paradise.  
*Exterior fresco from Voronet Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1547.*



beholding (of Paradise) served for the grieving one as a warning for the future, so that he would not fall again into the same (transgression).<sup>2\*</sup>

Seeing Paradise still there, Adam is still somehow close to God; he is not nearly as far away from God as mankind became later on. Moreover, spiritually he can look and see what he lost. Therefore, you can imagine that Adam was in a state of repentance and struggle. He fell once and lost his original state, and now he is going to be less tempted by seeing the Paradise which he lost.

This teaching is set forth also in the Orthodox Church service for Forgiveness Sunday, when Orthodox Christians preparing to enter the struggle of Great Lent are given, as an inspiration to repentance, precisely the image of Adam sitting outside Paradise and beholding what he had lost:

Adam sat before Paradise and, lamenting his nakedness, he wept: "Woe is me! By evil deceit was I persuaded and led astray. Now I am an exile from glory ..." ("Glory" for "Lord, I Have Cried").<sup>3</sup>

## 2. Cain and Abel

*4:1 And Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and brought forth Cain and said, I have gained a man through God. And she again bore his brother Abel.*

(The name Cain means "gained.")

---

\* St. Cyril of Jerusalem likewise teaches: "Adam, God's first-formed man, transgressed: could He not at once have brought death upon him? But see what the Lord does in His great love toward man. He cast him [Adam] out from Paradise, for because of sin he was unworthy to live there; but He cast out Adam and 'caused him to dwell over against the Garden of Delight,' that seeing whence he had fallen, and from what and into what a state he was brought down, he might afterwards be saved by repentance" (*Catechetical Lectures* 2.7, NPNF 2 7, p. 9). Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus also writes that God ordered Adam "to live directly opposite the garden so that he would remember his trouble-free existence and hate sin for causing his life of hardship" (*Questions on Genesis* 40, LEC 1, p. 91).—ED.



At left: the conception of Cain. At right: the young Cain.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*



Adam and Eve in affliction, with Cain and Abel bearing their offerings.  
*Fresco from the Christian catacombs in Rome, third century.*

Chapter 4 begins with the first story of life after the fall, when Adam is living in his new place: the story of Cain and Abel.

Here we see the first difference in the life of Adam and Eve between their state in Paradise and their state outside of Paradise: it is only after their banishment that married life and the begetting of children begin. As we have seen, the Fathers are quite specific that, before the fall, Eve was a virgin. St. John Chrysostom writes of this:

After the disobedience, after the banishment from Paradise—then it was that married life began. Before the disobedience, the first people lived like angels and there was no talk of cohabitation.<sup>4</sup>

Of course, this does not deprive the institution of marriage of its honor and blessing from God. It simply shows that the original state of Adam was not married life as we know it. The original state was like

the state to which we will return, when there will be no marriage or giving in marriage (cf. Matt. 22:30), and everyone will be in the virginal state.

The Fathers do raise the question: how would children have been born if Adam had not fallen? They say that children would have been born in a way that God knew, but not according to this way we have now,\* which, as St. Gregory of Nyssa discusses, is bound up with our animal nature. This [the sexual mode of reproduction] will not be in the Paradise to come, and was not in the original Paradise.

4:2–5 *And Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. And it was so after some time that Cain brought of the fruits of the earth a sacrifice to the Lord. And Abel also brought of the firstborn of his sheep and of his fatlings. And God looked upon Abel and his gifts, but Cain and his sacrifices He regarded not. And Cain was exceedingly sorrowful, and his countenance fell.*

Where did Cain and Abel get the idea of sacrifice? The Fathers tell us that the idea of offering sacrifice to God, of returning to Him the best things of the earth, was placed in the conscience of man from the very beginning of his existence.<sup>5</sup> God made people to serve Him, and so the first thing they thought of was to offer thanksgiving to Him for what they had.

---

\* This teaching—that, if man had not fallen, God would have increased the human race by a means other than sexual reproduction—is found in the writings of Sts. Athanasius the Great, Gregory of Nyssa, John Chrysostom, Maximus the Confessor, John Damascene, and Symeon of Thessaloniki. (See references on pp. 721n, 722n below, and the quotation from St. John Damascene on p. 204 above.) St. Maximus observes that the virginal birth of Christ showed that “there was perhaps another way, foreknown to God, for human beings to increase, if the first human being had kept the commandment” (*Ambigua* 41, in [Fr.] Andrew Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 159), while St. Gregory of Nyssa suggests that if man had remained in his original, angel-like condition, God would have increased the human race according to the mode by which He multiplied the number of angels—a mode which is “unspeakable and inconceivable by human conjectures, except that it assuredly exists” (*On the Making of Man* 17.2, NPNF 2 5, p. 407).—ED.

But why did God look favorably on the sacrifice of Abel and not on that of Cain? Is He playing favorites? Even from the little text we have here, we see that Abel offered the best that he had, his “firstborn and fatlings” of the sheep; but Cain offered only some “fruits,” not caring to give the best he had. He had the idea of sacrifice, but he had the attitude: “Well, I’ll give some of this that I have.” He didn’t make a particularly important thing of it, whereas Abel was careful to give the best that he had. Cain had it in his nature to offer sacrifice, but he did not add from his own nature the willing thanksgiving of his heart; and Abel did. Therefore, God was pleased with Abel’s offering, and not with Cain’s.\*

St. Ephraim writes:

Abel offered a sacrifice of the choicest, but Cain without choice. Abel chose and offered the firstborn and fatlings, while Cain offered either the ears, or together with them the fruits which were there at that time. Although his sacrifice was poorer than the sacrifice of his brother, still if he had offered it not with disdain, his sacrifice also would have been pleasing, as was the sacrifice of his brother.... But he did not do this, even though it was easy to do so; he did not take care for the good ears or the best fruits. In the soul of the one offering sacrifice there was no love for the One Who received the offering. And because he offered sacrifice with disdain, God rejected it.<sup>6\*\*</sup>

Cain was sorrowful not merely because his sacrifice was rejected, but also because of a deep passion which is revealed here for the first

---

\* Two other places in Scripture speak of the sacrifices of Cain and Abel, but they speak only generally: 1 John 3:12 and Hebrews 11:4.—AUTH.

\*\* St. Macarius the Great makes the same observation and draws out from it a lesson for Christians: “I always remember that it was Abel who offered a sacrifice to God of the fat and firstlings of his flock, while Cain offered gifts of the fruits of the earth, but not of the firstfruits. It is said: ‘And God looked upon Abel and his gifts, but Cain and his sacrifices He regarded not’ (Gen. 4:4–5). This teaches us that everything that is done in fear and in faith is pleasing to God, and not that which is done for display and without love” (*The Great Letter*, trans. George A. Maloney, p. 265).—ED.



Cain harvesting grain and Abel tending sheep.  
*Exterior fresco from Voronet Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1547.*



Cain and Abel laboring, and offering their respective sacrifices to God.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*



Cain and Abel offering sacrifices to God, and Cain slaying Abel.  
*Fresco by the Cretan iconographer Tzortzis, Dionysiou Monastery,  
 Mount Athos, 1547.*

time in human history: envy. St. John Chrysostom says of this passage:

His sorrow proceeded from two reasons: not only from the fact that he himself was rejected, but also from the fact that the gift of his brother was accepted.<sup>7</sup>

St. Ephraim specifies that God's acceptance of Abel's gift was manifested by fire which came down from heaven to consume it, while Cain's offering remained without being consumed.<sup>8</sup>

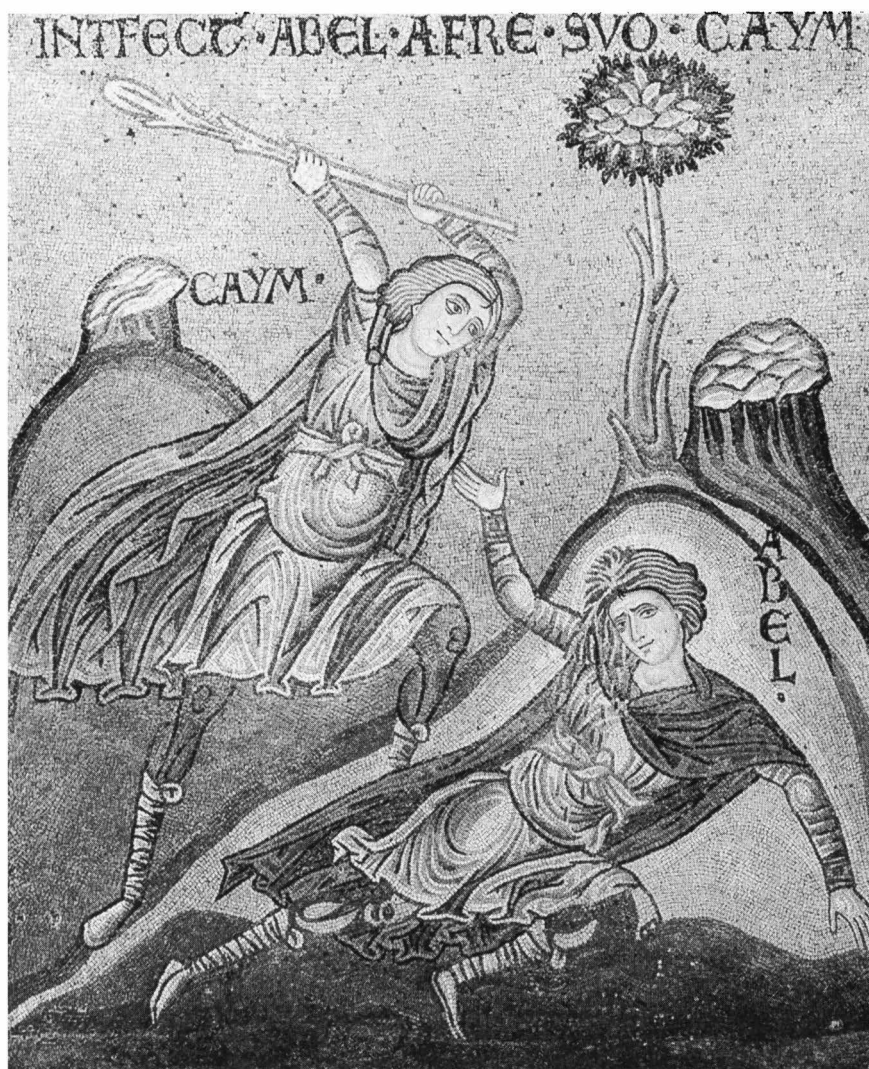
But here again God's mercy is shown. Just as He came to Adam after he sinned and asked him, "Where art thou?" giving him a chance to repent, so now He comes to Cain with the same opportunity:

*4:6-7 And the Lord God said to Cain, Why art thou become very sorrowful and why is thy countenance fallen? Hast thou not sinned if thou hast brought it rightly, but not rightly divided it? Be still, to thee shall be his submission, and thou shalt rule over him.*

St. John Chrysostom says of these verses:

Behold what an unutterable condescension of concern! God saw that Cain was possessed, so to speak, by the passion of envy; but see how, in His goodness, He applies to him a corresponding treatment so as to raise him immediately and not allow him to drown.... [God says to him,] Since you have sinned, "Be still," calm your thoughts, be delivered from the shock of the waves which besiege your soul; calm your agitation lest to your earlier sin you add another more serious.... God already knew in advance that (Cain) would rise up against his brother, and by these words He warns him.... He desires to meek the rage and fierceness of Cain and restrain him from rising up against his brother. Seeing the movements of his mind and knowing the cruelty of his murderous intent, God wishes beforehand to soften his heart and calm his mind, and for this purpose He subjects his brother to him and does not take away his authority over him. But even after such care and after





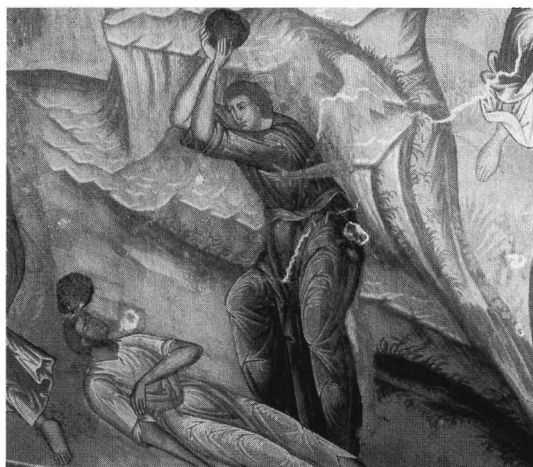
Cain slaying Abel.

*Byzantine mosaic from the Monreale Cathedral, Sicily, twelfth century.*



Above: Cain slaying Abel.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery,  
 Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

At right: Cain, instigated by  
 a demon, slaying Abel.  
*Russian fresco of the  
 sixteenth century.*



such treatment, Cain received no benefit. Such is the difference in the inward dispositions (of Cain and Abel); such is the power of evil!<sup>9</sup>

We see the same thing today, as indeed throughout the history of mankind: God chastises only after giving men abundant opportunity to repent and change their ways.

*4:8 And Cain said to Abel his brother, Let us go out into the plain; and it came to pass that when they were in the plain Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him.\**

In the early chapters of Genesis we see the beginnings of everything that is to be repeated later in human history.\*\* Here we see the first murder—and it is a fratricide, the killing of one's own brother.

But here again, as with Adam after his sin in Paradise, God shows first His concern that the guilty should *repent*, and then shows His mercy even when there is no repentance.

*4:9–16 And the Lord God said to Cain, Where is Abel thy brother?*

---

\* In Luke 11:50–51, Christ speaks of the murder of righteous Abel: “That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation: from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias.” By affirming that the murder of Abel occurred “from the foundation of the world,” the words of Christ again contradict the modern secular idea that there were billions of years of earth history before the appearance of man.—ED.

\*\* St. Irenaeus points out that Cain—who offered sacrifice merely for the sake of appearance and obligation, and who slew Abel out of envy—can be likened to the Pharisees in the time of Christ, who made offerings to God with the same unworthy motives and who slew the Lord out of the same passion of jealousy (*Against Heresies* 4.18.3, ANF 1, p. 485).

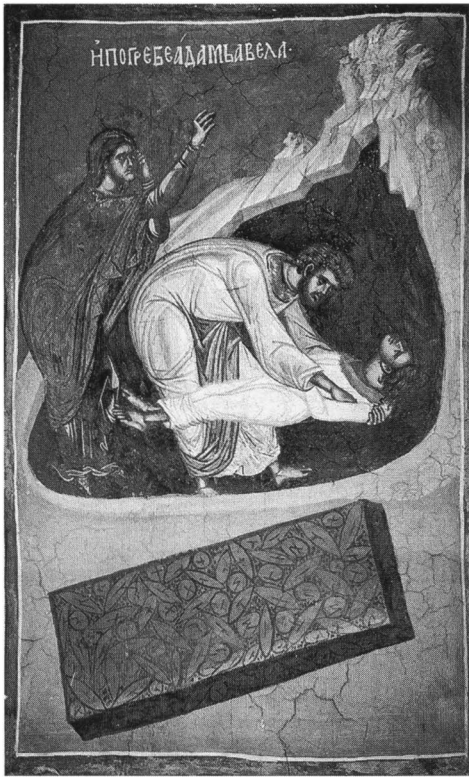
St. Bede the Venerable also writes of the connection between the murder of Abel and the passion and crucifixion of Christ: “[Some] understand the murderer Cain as the Jews’ lack of faith, the killing of Abel as the passion of the Lord and Savior, and the earth that opened its mouth and received Abel’s blood from Cain’s hand as the Church (which received, in the mystery of its renewal, the blood of Christ poured out by the Jews)” (*Homilies on the Gospels* 1.14, trans. L. T. Martin and D. Hurst, vol. 1, pp. 139–40).—ED.

## LIFE OUTSIDE PARADISE



The Lord God saying to Cain, "Where is Abel thy brother?"  
and Adam and Eve lamenting the slain Abel.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

*And he said, I know not, am I my brother's keeper? And the Lord said, What hast thou done? The voice of thy brother's blood cries to Me out of the ground. And now thou art cursed from the earth which has opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand. When thou tillest the earth, then it shall not continue to give its strength to thee: thou shalt be groaning and trembling on the earth. And Cain said to the Lord God, My crime is too great for me to be forgiven. If thou castest me out this day from the face of the earth, and I shall be hidden from Thy presence, and I shall be groaning and trembling upon the earth, then it will be that any one that finds me shall slay me. And the Lord God said to him, Not so, any one that slays Cain shall suffer sevenfold vengeance; and the Lord God set a mark upon Cain that no one that found him might slay him. So Cain went forth from the presence of God and dwelt in the land of Nod over against Eden.*



Adam and Eve placing Abel's body in the tomb.

*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

Here St. Ephraim says:

God appears to him without anger, so that if he repents, the prayer pronounced by his lips might wash away the sin of murder performed by his hands, but if he does not repent, then a heavy punishment might be assigned him such as the crime deserves. But Cain, instead of repentance, is filled with dissatisfaction, and to the All-knowing One Who asked of his brother in order to draw Cain to Himself, he answers with anger: “I know not. Am I my brother’s keeper?”<sup>10</sup>

St. John Chrysostom notes the difference between the curse pronounced on Adam and that pronounced on Cain:



Cain building a city, called Enoch.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

How far this sin (of Cain) was greater than the transgression of the first-created (Adam) may be seen in the difference in curses. There (the Lord) said: “Cursed is the earth in thy labors” (Gen. 3:17) and poured out the curse on the earth, showing care precisely for the man; but here ... since it is an unforgivable crime, he himself (the performer of it) is subjected to the curse: “Thou art cursed from the earth.” He (Cain) acted almost like the serpent who served as the implement of the devil’s plan; just as the former, through deception, introduced death, so the latter, having deceived his brother and led him out to the field, armed his hand against him and performed murder. Therefore, just as the Lord said to the serpent: “Thou art cursed above all the brutes of the earth” (Gen. 3:14), so also was it to Cain, because he acted similarly.<sup>11</sup>

After this, Cain finally did admit his guilt; but it was too late. St. John Chrysostom says:

He did confess (his sin), and confessed it with great precision. But there was no benefit from this at all, because he confessed at the wrong time. He should have done this at the right time, when he could have inclined the Judge to mercy.<sup>12</sup>

One should add to this that his confession is more an admission of fact than an indication of repentance; he regretted, but did not repent of his sin—a very common occurrence among men up to this day.

And so Cain went off to live in the land of Nod, a lower territory but still not far from Eden. At this time in human history man's geographical distribution is still very limited. From this time forth, as St. Ephraim states, there is no intermarriage between the offspring of Cain and those of the other children of Adam.<sup>13</sup> The mark was placed on Cain to prevent revenge from being taken against him by these his relatives.<sup>14</sup> And so there are two parallel lines of humanity: as it were images of the true followers of God and apostates from Him, or as Blessed Augustine later described it, the City of God and the City of Man.

*4:17–22 And Cain knew his wife, and having conceived she bore Enoch; and he built a city; and he named the city after the name of his son, Enoch. And to Enoch was born Gaidad; and Gaidad begot Maleleel; and Maleleel begot Methusalah; and Methusalah begot Lamech. And Lamech took to himself two wives; the name of the one was Ada, and the name of the second Sella. And Ada bore Jobel; he was the father of those that dwell in tents, feeding cattle. And the name of his brother was Jubal; he it was who invented the psaltery and harp. And Sella also bore Thobel; he was a smith, a manufacturer both of brass and iron; and the sister of Thobel was Noëma.*

From where did the wife of Cain come? She came from among the daughters of Adam. Adam is the one from whom everyone comes. The book of Genesis mentions as his children only Cain, Abel and Seth, but they were only the first ones; there were many others. Later, in Genesis 5:4–5, we read that Adam lived seven hundred years after begetting Seth, during which time “he begot sons and daughters.” Adam

was given the command to increase and multiply, and he lived for nine hundred and thirty years. Therefore, there must have been hundreds of children.

This leads to a second question: “How is it that Cain could marry his own sister? Isn’t this against the laws of the Orthodox Church?” Of course, this was at the beginning of time, so they had a different law; they were not living under the law we have now.\* In those days people lived to be nine hundred years old. Obviously

---

\* “You see,” explained St. John Chrysostom, “since it was in the beginning and the human race had to increase from then on, it was permissible to marry their own sisters” (*Homilies on Genesis* 20.1, FC 82, p. 37 [20.3]). Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus discussed this in more detail, elucidating God’s intentions: “Whom did Cain marry? His sister, of course. At that time, this was not an offense, no law forbidding it, especially since there was no other way to provide for the increase of the human race. God willed that all the nations of humanity be brought into being from one man and one woman: first, so that springing from one couple, they would perceive that they all possessed the same basic nature; second, so that growing from one root, they would be joined in harmony. If even after the God of the universe arranged things like this, they dare to commit countless murders, what would they stop at if they thought themselves descended from different parents? Therefore, He formed one man from the earth, created one woman from him, and filled the whole world with their offspring. To achieve this goal, He allowed intercourse of brother and sister in the beginning, but when the race had increased, he made this kind of marriage unlawful (cf. Lev. 18:9). Hence, in the Ark along with Noah and his sons he saved also the wives of his sons, so that the boys could be married to their cousins” (*Questions on Genesis* 43, LEC 1, p. 93). (See also St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 39.6, trans. Frank Williams, vol. 1, p. 259.)

The challenge “Where did Cain get his wife?” has often been raised by unbelievers in order to cast doubt on the historicity of Holy Scripture. His Holiness Patriarch Pavle of Serbia (1914–2009) answered this challenge by quoting the teaching of St. John Chrysostom and Blessed Theodoret cited above. “There is no doubt,” Patriarch Pavle wrote, “that God could have created a wife for Cain in the same way that he created Adam from earth and Eve from Adam, but He did not do that. Instead, He allowed that Cain and Seth take their sisters as wives” (Patriarch Pavle, *Clarifying Some Questions about Our Faith*, vol. 1 [in Serbian], p. 16). It is noteworthy that, in upholding the Scriptural-Patristic teaching that Adam and Eve were specially created by God and that all the people in the world are descended from them, Patriarch Pavle left no room for an evolutionary interpretation of human origins.—ED.



humanity was quite different from the way we know it today, even physically.\*

In Genesis 4:17–22 we see the beginnings of civilization as we know it: the first city, the first crafts, the first arts. It is obvious that what is given here is no more than a hint of all that went on then, but this is already enough to give us a picture quite different from that presented by the evolutionary view of man's origins. In the Biblical view, what one might call "advanced" characteristics of civilization come at the very beginning, and the first city is already founded by the son of the first man. Nothing is said of the population of the world in the generations of Adam, but it is obvious that, with the long life of the early Patriarchs and the command given them by God to increase and multiply, within a few generations there must have been many thousands if not millions of people.

(Rationalist Biblical scholars, seeing the beginnings of man in primitive, stone-age cave-dwellers, deny the very existence of Cain and Abel as historical persons. To them it is all a moral tale.)

Lamech is the first man of whom it is said that he had two wives. Apparently this custom, which appears more commonly after the Flood, was a rarity in the days of the first Patriarchs.

4:23–24 *And Lamech said to his wives, Ada and Sella, Hear my voice, ye wives of Lamech, consider my words, because I have slain a man*

---

\* The reason why union between siblings and cousins did not entail the risk of producing deformed offspring at the beginning of human history, but became increasingly hazardous later on, can be explained by the accumulation of genetic mistakes (recessive mutations) within the human genome over many generations. In mankind's current condition of genetic deterioration, the more closely related two people are, the more likely it is that they will have similar mistakes in their genes. Thus, if siblings or cousins have children together, recessive mutations are more likely to "pair" together and result in deformities.

There also appears to be a link between the accumulation of mistakes in the human genome and a reduction of life expectancy. Inbred children have a considerably reduced life expectancy, since inbreeding exposes acquired mistakes within the genome which have not yet had time to "come to the surface" in the human race as a whole. See Dr. J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, pp. 150–51, and Ken Ham, general ed., *The New Answers Book*, pp. 71–74.—ED.

Lamech in the presence of his wives, Ada and Sella, repenting of his sin of murder.

*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*



*to my sorrow and a youth to my grief. Because vengeance has been exacted seven times on Cain's behalf, on Lamech's it shall be seventy times seven.*

This passage has been interpreted in various ways, but the simplest explanation is that of St. John Chrysostom, who says that it indicates the voice of conscience in Lamech, who openly confessed his sin and declared himself worthy of greater punishment than Cain (for he had already seen Cain's punishment for the crime of murder).<sup>15</sup>

*4:25–26 And Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore a son, and called his name Seth, saying, For God has raised up to me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew. And Seth had a son, and he called his name Enosh: he hoped to call on the name of the Lord God.*

Here the text returns to the main line from Adam (through whom the Savior's genealogy will be traced). Seth means "substitute."

Verse 26 is different in Hebrew: "Then began men to call upon the name of the Lord." In either case it indicates apparently the beginning

of more formal worship of God, bound up with the name of Enosh;\* this is also why the descendants of Seth are called in chapter 6 the “sons of God.”

### 3. *The Genealogy from Adam through Seth to Noah*

5:1–21 *This is the genealogy of men in the day in which God made Adam; in the image of God He made him: male and female He made them, and blessed them; and He called his name Adam, in the day in which He made them. And Adam lived two hundred and thirty years, and begot a son after his own form, and after his own image, and he called his name Seth. And the days of Adam, which he lived after his begetting Seth, were seven hundred years; and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Adam which he lived were nine hundred and thirty years, and he died. Now Seth lived two hundred and five years, and begot Enosh. And Seth lived after his begetting Enosh, seven hundred and seven years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Seth were nine hundred and twelve years, and he died. And Enosh lived an hundred and ninety years, and begot Cainan. And Enosh lived after his begetting Cainan, seven hundred and fifteen years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Enosh were nine hundred and five years, and he died. And Cainan lived an hundred and seventy years, and he begot Maleleel. And Cainan lived after his begetting Maleleel, seven hundred and forty years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Cainan were nine hundred and ten years, and he died. And Maleleel lived an hundred and sixty and five years, and he begot Jared. And Maleleel lived after his begetting Jared, seven hundred and thirty years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Maleleel were eight hundred and ninety and five years, and he died. And Jared lived an hundred and sixty and two years, and begot Enoch: and Jared lived after his*

---

\* St. Cyril of Jerusalem counts Enosh among the “righteous men and prophets” of the Old Testament, upon whom the Holy Spirit came down (*Catechetical Lectures* 16.27, NPNF 2 7, p. 122). St. Gregory Palamas says of him: “Enosh lived in a way that pleased God more than anyone else in his day” (*Homily* 57.6, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 470).—ED.

*begetting Enoch, eight hundred years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Jared were nine hundred and sixty and two years, and he died. And Enoch lived an hundred and sixty and five years, and begat Methusalah.*

This passage has several questions for us.

1. All the early Patriarchs lived nine hundred years or so, something fantastic to us who attain eighty or ninety years with great difficulty, which has been the case with mankind since before the times of David the Psalmist. Here there is a temptation for rationalist criticism to “reinterpret” the text. But all the Holy Fathers accept it just as it is written:\* men at that time, in the first centuries after the creation, were really very different physically from us.\*\* In chapter 3

---

\* For example, St. Irenaeus writes: “[In order to learn] that bodies did continue in existence for a lengthened period, as long as it was God’s good pleasure that they should flourish, let [these heretics] read the Scriptures, and they will find that our predecessors advanced beyond seven hundred, eight hundred, and nine hundred years of age; and that their bodies kept pace with the protracted length of their days, and participated in life as long as God willed that they should live” (*Against Heresies* 5.5.1, ANF 1, p. 530).—ED.

\*\* As mentioned above (p. 304n), reduction of life expectancy over many generations can be linked to an accumulation of genetic mistakes. As Dr. J. C. Sanford, a professor of genetics at Cornell University, has written: “If the genome is deteriorating, our species is not evolving. There appears to be a close parallel between the aging of a species and the aging of an individual. Both seem to involve the progressive accumulation of mutations. Mutations accumulate both within our reproductive cell lines and our body cell lines. Either way, the misspellings accumulate until a threshold is reached when things rapidly start to fall apart. This results in a distinct upper range for life-span” (Sanford, *Genetic Entropy*, p. 150).

Dr. Sanford has also shown that the Biblical record of declining life-spans after Noah “clearly reveals an exponential decay curve. This curve can only be described as biological.... This unexpected trend in the Biblical data is amazing. We are forced to conclude that the writer of Genesis either faithfully recorded an exponential decay of human life-spans or fabricated the data using sophisticated mathematical modeling.... The most rational conclusion is that the data are real, and that human life expectancy was once hundreds of years, but has progressively declined to current values. The most obvious explanation for such declining life-spans, in light of all the above discussions, would be genetic deterioration due to mutation” (ibid., pp. 151–52).—ED.



At left: Righteous Seth. At right: Seth's son Righteous Enosh.  
*Frescos from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

we discussed a little of the climate of the world before the Flood, when there was no rainbow because of the firmament of vapor encircling the earth, giving a moderate climate and filtering out harmful radiation. Life was really quite different then (even Paradise was still visible, as we have seen), and if we put off our prejudices derived from pictures of crude stone-age cave-dwellers, there is no reason for us not to accept this fact.

2. The second question concerns the genealogy itself: why was this so important as to be recorded? Because the evolutionary theory requires some hundreds of thousands of years for the history of mankind, rationalist critics are forced to reinterpret this genealogy, stating either that there are gaps of thousands of years in it, or else that at least some of the Patriarchs were not real people at all, but simply names signifying vast epochs. If so, then of course there is no genealogy here at all.

But the Holy Fathers are unanimous in stating that this list of names *is* precisely a genealogy, and it is important not merely as preserving



Adam.

*Fresco by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration  
of the Savior, Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*



Abel (detail).





Seth (detail).

*Frescos by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration of the Savior, Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*





Above: Enosh, the son of Seth.  
*Fresco by Master Dionysius, Russia,  
 ca. 1500.*



At left: Jared, a descendant of  
 Enosh.  
*Russian icon of the sixteenth century.*



Enoch, the son of Jared (detail).  
*Fresco by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration  
of the Savior, Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*

details of the early history of mankind, but above all because it is the genealogy of *Christ*. The whole genealogy of Christ is given in Luke, chapter 3\* (Matthew, chapter 1 carries it only back to Abraham), and the Fathers are very careful to harmonize any seeming inconsistencies in the names (for example, St. Gregory the Theologian in his Homily on this subject) so as to preserve it as a precise genealogy. We have to choose: to be with the Scriptures and the Holy Fathers, or with the modern rationalist critics who take their wisdom from the speculations (not the facts) of modern scientists.

3. From the number of years indicated in this passage (and later passages in Genesis), it is possible to calculate the age of mankind. According to the numbers in the Septuagint text of the Old Testament, we are now in the year 7490 from the creation of Adam.\*\* The Hebrew text has somewhat different numbers, giving a total age of mankind over a thousand years less. The Fathers were never troubled over this difference (Blessed Augustine, for example, explains it in *The City of God* as a matter of secondary importance),\*\*\* but they accepted without question both the great age of the early Patriarchs and the approximate age of mankind as some four to five thousand years at the

---

\* On the genealogy of Christ given by St. Luke (Luke 3:23–38), see pp. 630–31, 631nn, 661, 672 below.—ED.

\*\* I.e., in 1982, during the second segment of Fr. Seraphim's Genesis course.—ED.

\*\*\* Discussing at length what he calls "that discrepancy of numbers which is found to exist between our own [Septuagint] and the Hebrew text," Blessed Augustine points out that this discrepancy "does not touch the longevity of the ancients"—the veracity of which he upholds and defends (*City of God* 15.9–15, NPNF 1 2, pp. 291–97; here, 15.14, p. 295; see also p. 387 below).

Elsewhere in *The City of God*, written in A.D. 413–426, Blessed Augustine argues against those chronologies, such as the Egyptian, which assign a greater age to the world than does the Biblical chronology: "Let us omit the conjectures of men who know not what they say, when they speak of the nature and origin of the human race.... They are deceived by those highly mendacious documents which profess to give the history of many thousands of years, though reckoning by the sacred writings we find that not 6,000 years have passed." Augustine goes on to say that the ancient Greek chronology "does not exceed the true account of the duration of the world as it is given in our documents [i.e., the Scriptures], which are truly sacred" (*City of God* 12.10, p. 232).—ED.

birth of Christ (actually, just over 5,500 according to the Septuagint text).\*

4. Beginning with Genesis chapter 5 we follow the history of what can already be called a “chosen people”: a people dedicated to God, handing down the traditions of true worship and piety, and preparing ultimately to give birth to the promised Messiah. Thus, little is said of the descendants of Cain; they are not the chosen people. The descendants of Seth are, and even they eventually become corrupt and are destroyed, save for one man (Noah) and his sons.

---

\* The earliest extant Christian writings on the age of the world according to the Biblical chronology are by St. Theophilus (ca. 115–181), the sixth bishop of Antioch from the Apostles, in his apologetic work *To Autolycus* 3.24–30 (ANF 2, pp. 118–21); by St. Hippolytus of Rome (ca. 170–236), a disciple of St. Irenaeus, in his *Chronicle* (ed. Adolf Bauer, pp. 194–200); and by Julius Africanus (ca. 160–ca. 240), in his *Five Books of Chronography* (ANF 6, pp. 130–38). All of these early Christian writers, following the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, determined the age of the world to have been approximately 5,500 years at the birth of Christ.

The common Byzantine Christian reckoning, also derived from the Septuagint, placed the date of creation at 5,509 B.C. This date underwent minor revisions before being finalized in the seventh century A.D., and served as the starting point of the Calendar of the Byzantine Empire and the Eastern Orthodox Church, known as the Imperial Creation Era of Constantinople. The Creation Era was referenced in Canon 3 of the Quinisext Council held in Constantinople in 692, which the Orthodox Church considers as ecumenical, its canons being added to the acts of the Fifth and Sixth Councils (*The Seven Ecumenical Councils*, NPNF 2 14, p. 362). The Eastern Church avoided the use of the Christian Era (B.C.–A.D.), since the date of Christ’s birth was debated in Constantinople as late as the fourteenth century (see E. J. Bickerman, *Chronology of the Ancient World*, p. 73 ; E. G. Richards, *Mapping Time*, p. 107; V. Grumel, *La Chronologie*, p. 62; and Jack Finegan, *Handbook of Biblical Chronology*, p. 108). When Russia received Orthodox Christianity from Byzantium, she inherited the Imperial Creation Era. The creation of the world was used as the starting point of the calendar of the Russian Empire until the Westernizing reforms of Peter I at the beginning of the eighteenth century (see Nicholas Riasanovsky, *A History of Russia*, p. 244), and it still forms the basis of traditional Orthodox calendars up to today.

Fr. Seraphim writes that “even the most mystical Fathers” accepted without question the common understanding of the Church that the world was created “more or less” in 5,500 B.C. See pp. 459, 642, 642n, 663 below.—Ed.

5:22–24 *And Enoch was well-pleasing to God after his begetting Methuselah, two hundred years, and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty and five years. And Enoch was well-pleasing to God, and was not found, because God translated him.*

Of Enoch St. Paul says precisely: “By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God” (Heb. 11:5).

According to Patristic tradition, Enoch, who so pleased God that he did not die but was translated, will return at the end of the world, together with Elias (Elijah) who was taken up alive “by a whirlwind as though into heaven” (IV Kingdoms [II Kings] 2:1, 11, LXX),\* to

---

\* St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 5.5.1) and St. Athanasius (*Defense of the Nicene Definition* 3.6) wrote that Enoch was translated to Paradise, and St. Ephraim expressed this idea conjecturally in two places (*Commentary on Genesis* 5.2.1; *Nisibene Hymns* 36.7). St. Gregory Palamas (*Homily* 53.31) rejects the idea that Enoch was translated into heaven (i.e., the Heavenly Kingdom), and cites the words of Christ in this regard: “No man hath ascended up to heaven, but He that came down from heaven, even the Son of Man Who is in heaven” (John 3:13). Elsewhere, speaking of such pre-Christ translations (Elijah, Habakkuk, Jeremiah), St. Gregory says: “The ascension of each of those mentioned was just a sort of movement lifting them up from the ground without taking them out of the area surrounding the earth” (*Homily* 21.2, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 171).

Other Holy Fathers who speak of Enoch’s translation (e.g., St. Cyprian of Carthage, *On Mortality* 23; St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 3.6; St. Gregory the Theologian, *Orations* 28.18, 41.4, 43.70; St. Ambrose, *Isaac, or the Soul* 1.1; idem, *On the Decease of His Brother Satyrus* 1.30; St. John Cassian, *Conferences* 3.7) do not venture to explain precisely where he went. St. John Chrysostom says it is best to leave as a mystery what happened to Enoch after he was translated: “If someone were anxious to be meddlesome and ask, ‘Where did He take him? Has he continued to live until the present?’ let that person learn not to follow human reasoning or to pry into God’s doings but to believe what is said. In other words, when God reveals anything, we shouldn’t question what is said but rather treat with the highest regard the words spoken by God, even if they do not correspond to the things that lie before us plain to see. I mean, the fact that God took him away to another place Sacred Scripture has told us, as well as the fact that God took him while living without his having experienced death.... But where he took him, or what kind of life he lives now, these further details were not given” (*Homilies on*

preach the Second Coming of Christ; they will die as martyrs at that time, being resurrected after three and a half days (Apoc. chap. 11).\*

5:25–32 *And Methusalah lived an hundred and sixty and seven years, and begot Lamech. And Methusalah lived after his begetting Lamech eight hundred and two years, and begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Methusalah which he lived, were nine hundred and sixty and nine years, and he died. And Lamech lived an hundred and eighty and eight years, and begot a son. And he called his name Noah, saying, this one will cause us to cease from our works, and from the toils of our hands, and from the earth, which the Lord God has cursed. And Lamech lived after his begetting Noah, five hundred and sixty and five years, and begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Lamech were seven hundred and fifty-three years, and he died. And Noah was five hundred years old, and he begot three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth.*

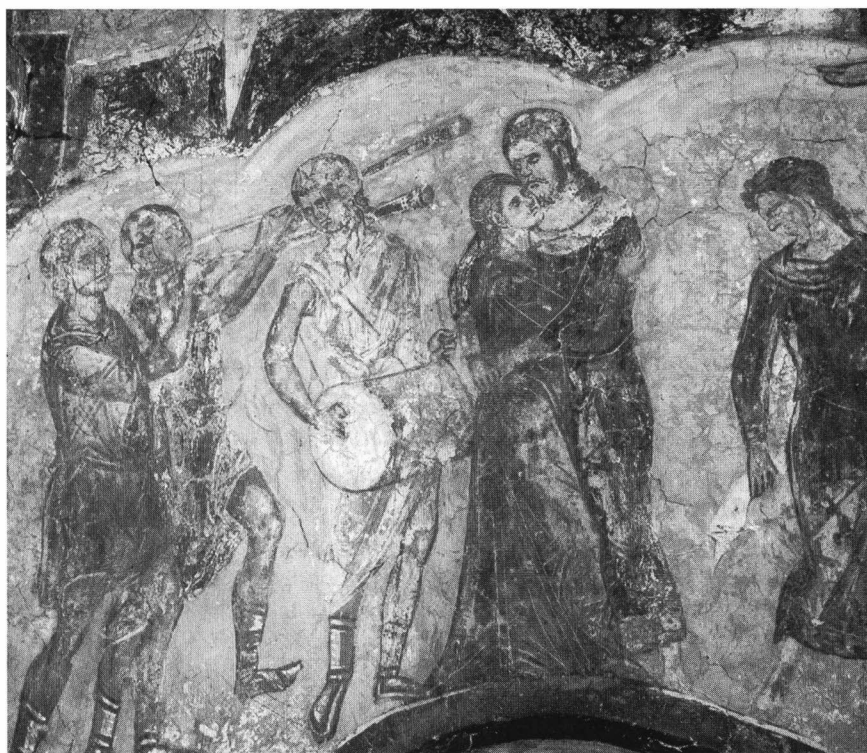
These verses contain the genealogy of mankind down to Noah—the whole of humanity down to the Flood, which occurred about two thousand years from the creation.

Lamech prophesied, giving his son the name Noah, which means “rest,” that in his days there would be an end to the sins of humanity—the Flood.

---

*Genesis* 21.4, PG 53.180–81, FC 82, pp. 60–61 [21.13–14]\*; see also idem, *Homilies on Hebrews* 22.5, NPNF 1 14, p. 467). In like manner Blessed Theodoret, responding to the question of where Enoch went, counsels his readers, “We should not pry into secrets but be grateful for what is written” (*Questions on Genesis* 45, LEC 1, p. 95).—ED.

\*The identification of the “two witnesses” mentioned in Apocalypse 11:3–12 with Enoch and Elias is found in the writings of St. Hippolytus (*On Christ and Antichrist* 43; *Commentary on Daniel* 4.35), Tertullian (*A Treatise on the Soul* 50), Lactantius (*The Manner in Which the Persecutors Died* 2), Blessed Augustine (*Letter* 193), Oecumenius (*Commentary on the Apocalypse* 11.3–6), Archbishop Andrew of Caesarea (*Commentary on the Apocalypse* 30), St. Bede the Venerable (*Explanation of the Apocalypse* 4), and St. John Damascene (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.26).—ED.



The “sons of God” and the “daughters of men” (detail).

*Fresco from Decani Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

#### *4. The Corruption of Mankind*

*6:1–4 And it came to pass when men began to be numerous upon the earth, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God, having seen the daughters of men that they were beautiful, took to themselves wives of all whom they chose. And the Lord God said, My Spirit shall certainly not remain among these men forever, because they are flesh, but their days shall be an hundred and twenty years.*

In the Patristic understanding, the “sons of God” were the offspring of Seth, the chosen people who were to preserve themselves in virtue. They were living in a higher place, along the boundary of Para-

dise. They were called “sons of God” because through them Christ was to come.

The “daughters of men” were the offspring of Cain. They were the forbidden people, the outcasts. The sons of God were supposed to keep themselves pure, and were not supposed to marry into the line of Cain. (Later on, this same idea was related to the Jews, who were supposed to keep themselves separate from everyone else.) The sons of God were to keep themselves separate so that they could become progenitors of the Savior.

St. Ephraim states that a preponderance of daughters were born to the offspring of Cain, indicating the dying out of Cain’s race and their desire to marry the sons of Seth so as to preserve their race.<sup>16</sup> The sons of God, being moved by carnal lust, departed from the command of God that they should be separate from all those who were of Cain. They fell into the trap, and the whole of mankind became corrupt—became “flesh” or fleshly.\* St. Paul says: “They that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Rom. 8:8).

The “hundred and twenty years” refer not to the life-span of man, but to the time given for repentance before the Flood—again indicating God’s mercifulness.\*\*

Some have speculated that the “sons of God” were heavenly beings or angels. The Holy Fathers were aware of this interpretation and they

\* St. Ephraim explains that “the daughters of Cain adorned themselves and became a snare to the eyes of the sons of Seth.... The entire tribe of Seth ... was stirred to a frenzy over them.... Because the sons of Seth were going in to the daughters of Cain, they turned away from their first wives whom they had previously taken. Then these wives, too, disdained their own continence and now, because of their husbands, quickly began to abandon their modesty which up until that time they had preserved for their husbands’ sake. It is because of this wantonness that assailed both the men and the women, that Scripture says, ‘all flesh had corrupted its way’ (Gen. 6:13)” (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.3.1–3, FC 91, p. 135).—ED.

\*\* St. Ephraim writes: “If they repent during this time they will be saved from the wrath that is about to come upon them. But if they do not repent, by their deeds they will call down [the wrath] upon themselves. Grace granted one hundred and twenty years for repentance to a generation that, according to Justice, was not worthy of repentance” (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.4.1, FC 91, p. 136).—ED.



refuted it, saying that angels cannot beget men.\* Ancient speculations about angels mating with men, and modern speculations of outer-space beings, are of course empty tales based on idle fantasies.

6:5 *Now the giants were upon the earth in those days; and after that when the sons of God were wont to go in to the daughters of men, they bore children to them, those were the giants of old, the men of renown.*

By “giants” here we do not need to understand enormous men. According to St. Ephraim, the offspring of Seth, the chosen race, were tall

---

\* The identification of the “sons of God” as angels or heavenly beings was based in part on the apocryphal book of Enoch. A common rabbinical interpretation of the first and second centuries A.D., it can be found in the Jewish writers Flavius Josephus (*The Antiquities of the Jews* 1.3) and Philo of Alexandria (*The Giants*), as well as in some Gnostic writings (e.g., the Valentinian Exposition). Some Holy Fathers and Christian writers of the second and third centuries A.D. accepted this interpretation: St. Justin Martyr (*Apology* 1.5), Athenagoras of Athens (*A Plea for the Christians* 24–25), St. Irenaeus of Lyons (*Against Heresies* 4.36.4; *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 18), Clement of Alexandria (*The Instructor* 3.2), Tertullian (*On Idolatry* 9; *On the Veiling of Virgins* 7; *On the Apparel of Women* 1.2), St. Cyprian of Carthage (*On the Dress of Virgins* 14), and Lactantius (*Divine Institutes* 2.15).

The first extant Christian reference to the “sons of God” as the descendants of Seth is in the *Five Books of Chronography* by the third-century Christian writer Julius Africanus (ca. 160–ca. 240) (Fragment 2, in ANF 6, p. 131). With the rejection of the canonicity of the book of Enoch at the Church Council of Laodicea in 364, the idea that the “sons of God” were angels began to pass away, and the view that they were the purely human descendants of Seth began to prevail. Except for St. Ambrose of Milan (*On Noah* 4.8), the Holy Fathers who wrote on this subject after the Council of Laodicea held that the “sons of God” were Sethites. These include: St. Ephraim the Syrian (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.3; *Hymns on the Nativity* 1.48; *Hymns on Faith* 46.9; *Hymns against Heresies* 19.1–8; *Hymns on Paradise* 1.11), St. John Chrysostom (*Homilies on Genesis* 22.2–3 [22.6–8]), St. Cyril of Alexandria (*Glaphyra on Genesis* 2.2), Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus (*Questions on Genesis* 47), Blessed Augustine (*City of God* 15.23), St. John Cassian (*Conferences* 8.20–21), and St. Gregory Palamas (*Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 62; *Homily* 57.5).

From the standpoint of Orthodox Christian faith, we can say that the “Sethite” interpretation prevailed in the Church under the guidance of the Holy Spirit because it is the true one, whereas the identification of the “sons of God” as angels runs counter to Orthodox doctrine. For further discussion concerning this matter of Scriptural interpretation, see pp. 412–13, 412n, 413n below.—ED.

and full in stature, while the offspring of Cain, the cursed one, were small.\* When these two races mixed, the tallness of the Sethites prevailed. The “giant” stature of the men—the descendants of Seth—before the Flood is apparently one of the attributes of humanity that was lost with the new climactic conditions of the post-Flood world.

Perhaps these “giants” with their mighty deeds of strength (manifest perhaps in wars with the offspring of Cain) were the origin of the “gods” of later legend in Greece and other lands.

---

\* St. Ephraim explains how this came to be: “The house of Cain, because the earth had been cursed so as not to give them its strength, produced small harvests, deprived of its strength, just as it is today that some seeds, fruits, and grasses give strength and some do not. Because, at that time, they were cursed and sons of the cursed and were dwelling in the land of curses, they would gather and eat produce that lacked nutrition, and those who ate these were without strength just like the food that they ate. As for the Sethites, on the other hand, because they were the descendants of the blessed [Seth] and were dwelling in the land along the boundary of the fence of Paradise, their produce was abundant and full of strength. So too were the bodies of those that ate that produce strong and powerful” (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.5.1, FC 91, p. 136).—ED.



Righteous Noah.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, Mount Athos,  
1545–1546.*

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### *The Flood*

(Genesis 6:6–8:22)

*6:6–8 And the Lord God having seen that the wicked actions of men were multiplied upon the earth, and that every one in his heart was intently brooding over evil continually, then God laid it to heart [Hebrew: repented] that He had made man upon the earth, and He pondered it deeply. And God said, I will blot out man whom I have made from the face of the earth, even man with cattle, and reptiles with flying creatures of the sky, for I am grieved that I have made them.*

Here the narrative emphasizes the universality of evil, affecting old and young alike (much as in our own days).

God, of course, does not “repent” that he made man—this is an adaptation to our earthly understanding.<sup>1</sup> He simply resolves to punish men and make a new beginning with his righteous man, Noah, who is to become like a new Adam.

Just as the whole of creation was made for man and is to be renewed with him at the end of this world, when there will be a new heaven and a new earth, so too the creation perishes together with the unrighteous men of Noah’s time.\*

---

\* St. Ambrose observes: “What transgression could the irrational creatures have ever committed? But since they had been created for the sake of man, after that for whom they had been created was wiped out, it was logical that they were destroyed too, because there was no one who could profit from them. This is also clear in a deeper sense. Man is a mind endowed with reason. Man is defined as a living, mortal and rational being. When he who is the principal element, disappears, every aspect of sensible life also disappears” (*On Noah* 4.10, ACCS: Old Testament 1, p. 128). St. John Chrysostom says the same: “You see, since human beings, for whom these creatures had been created, were due to perish and to disappear from sight, it was appropriate that they, too, should be affected by the punishment with them” (*Homilies on Genesis* 23.1, FC 82, p. 89 [23.3]).—ED.

**6:9–11** *But Noah found grace before the Lord God. And these are the generations of Noah. Noah was a just man; being perfect in his generation, Noah was well-pleasing to God. And Noah begot three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth.*

The Fathers emphasize how great was the virtue of Noah to be so perfect in the midst of a corrupt generation, and therefore how possible it is for us to be virtuous even when living in such corrupt times as our own.\*

In noting that Noah had only three children (while Adam and others of the Patriarchs possibly had hundreds), the Fathers point to the chastity of Noah, who abstained even from the lawful marriage bed.\*\*

**6:12–14** *The earth was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with iniquity. And the Lord God saw the earth, and it was corrupted; because all flesh had corrupted its way upon the earth. And the Lord God said to Noah, A period of all men is come before Me; because the earth has been filled with iniquity by them, and, behold, I destroy them and the earth.*

Here St. John Chrysostom emphasizes how God speaks to Noah face to face about this plan for mankind. He as it were says to Noah: “Men have performed so much evil that their impiety has poured out and covered the whole earth. Therefore I will destroy both them and the earth. Since they themselves have already destroyed themselves beforehand by their iniquities, I will bring complete perdition and exterminate them and the earth, so that the earth might be cleansed and delivered from the defilement of so many sins.”<sup>2</sup>

---

\* St. John Chrysostom devoted an entire homily to the righteousness of Noah: *Homilies on Genesis* 23, FC 82, pp. 87–103. On the same theme, see also St. Chrysostom’s *Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 71.3, NPNF 1 14, p. 262.—ED.

\*\* Citing Genesis 5:32—“And Noah was five hundred years old, and he begot three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth”—St. Ephraim the Syrian writes: “During this entire time Noah was an example to his sons by his virtue, for he had preserved his virginity for five hundred years among those of whom it was said, ‘All flesh had corrupted its way’ (Gen. 6:13)” (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.1.1, FC 91, p. 134). Elsewhere, in his *Hymns*, St. Ephraim expresses the same thought in a poetic manner: “For Noah overcame the waves of lust, which had drowned in his generation the sons of Seth” (*Nisibine Hymns* 1.4, NPNF 2 13, p. 167).—ED.

## THE FLOOD

Now God commands Noah to make an Ark:

*6:15–17 Make therefore for thyself an Ark of square timber. Thou shalt make the Ark in compartments, and thou shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And thus shalt thou make the Ark; three hundred cubits the length of the Ark, and fifty cubits the breadth, and thirty cubits the height of it. Thou shalt narrow the Ark in making it, and in a cubit above thou shalt finish it, and the door of the Ark thou shalt make on the side; with lower, second, and third stories thou shalt make it.*

A cubit is supposed to be the distance from the elbow to the end of the hand, roughly eighteen inches. Therefore the Ark, according to this, was approximately 450 feet long, 75 feet wide, and 45 feet high.\*

This shows that it was a very unusual type of structure, apparently like a big boat—a three-dimensional, rectangular boat—whose sole purpose was to keep Noah and his children and the animals floating through the course of the Flood. The idea is that there is going to be a flood which will obliterate *everything*, and only those who are left in the Ark will be delivered.

Of course, one can imagine how long it would take for Noah to build the Ark, living in the midst of a corrupt generation. All the people were settled in a fairly close area, so probably the whole world knew about it. One can imagine, too, their response when Noah started building a boat four hundred fifty feet long and saying, “Beware, there’s going to be a big flood.” They probably took their neighbors down, pointed out these “crazy” people, and laughed at them; and their children probably came and threw rocks. The righteous were obeying the will of God, and people were laughing.

So it must have been a very strange command for a righteous man to receive. It shows he was in close contact with God. Like Abraham who was later prepared even to kill his own son because he knew God had spoken to him, so Noah who was righteous, speaking directly to God, obeyed the command he was given. The very building of such an

---

\* These calculations are according to the “common cubit.” According to the “royal cubit” used in ancient architecture, the Ark would have been up to 515 feet long. See Tim Lovet, “Which Cubit for Noah’s Ark?,” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 20, no. 3 (2006), pp. 71–77.—Ed.



Above: Noah's sons preparing to build the Ark.

At left: Noah and his sons building the Ark.

*Frescos from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

## THE FLOOD

Coating the Ark  
with pitch.  
*Fresco from Decani  
Monastery, Kosovo,  
Serbia, 1338–1347.*



immense structure—which required a good part of that hundred and twenty years these people were given to repent—was to serve as a visible warning to mankind of impending disaster.\*

**6:18–19** *And behold I bring a flood of water upon the earth, to destroy all flesh in which is the breath of life under heaven, and whatsoever things are upon the earth shall die. And I will establish My covenant with thee, and thou shalt enter into the Ark, and thy sons and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee.*

God reveals what He is to do with mankind, and establishes a covenant with Noah—a constantly recurring theme throughout sacred history: God makes an agreement with His chosen ones. God does His

---

\* Christ spoke of the Flood of Noah's time when warning of His own Second Coming: "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days that were before the Flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the Ark, and knew not until the Flood came and took them away; so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be" (Matt. 24:37–39; see also Luke 17:26–27).—ED.





Noah receiving the command of God and calling the animals into the Ark.  
*Contemporary Greek icon by George Nikolacopoulos.*

will on earth not by His *fiat*, not by simply saying that is the way it has to be, but by finding a righteous man who will obey Him. God arranges that *men* will do His work on earth.

The sons of Noah were included in the Ark, says St. John Chrysostom, not because they were as virtuous as Noah (although they did avoid the evils of their time) but for the sake of Noah, just as St. Paul's companions were saved with him when he was shipwrecked (Acts 27:22–24).<sup>3</sup>

**6:20–23** *And of all cattle and of all reptiles and of all wild beasts, even of all flesh, thou shalt bring by pairs of all, into the Ark, that thou mayest feed them with thyself: male and female they shall be. Of all winged birds after their kind and of all cattle after their kind, and of all reptiles creeping upon the earth after their kind, pairs of all shall come in to thee, male and female to be fed with thee. And thou shalt take to thyself of all kinds of food which ye eat, and thou shalt gather them to thyself, and it*

## THE FLOOD

*shall be for thee and them to eat. And Noah did all things whatever the Lord God commanded him, so did he.*

Here Noah is to put food in the Ark: vegetable food, with which the animals also were to be fed. It was to be stored up in great compartments in the Ark.

Again, one can imagine the mockery to which his contemporaries must have subjected him for such a seemingly insane project—and yet Noah obeyed God without question: truly a righteous man for whom the things of God come first and the opinions of man last. This is an inspiring example for us in our own corrupt days.

*7:1–3 And the Lord God said to Noah, Enter thou and all thy family into the Ark, for thee have I seen righteous before Me in this generation. And of the clean cattle take in to thee sevens, male and female, and of the unclean cattle pairs male and female. And of clean flying creatures of the sky sevens, male and female, and of all unclean flying creatures pairs, male and female, to maintain seed on all the earth.*

St. John Chrysostom asks the question how Noah knew the difference between “clean” and “unclean” animals before the law of Moses, when this distinction was made; and he answers: from the wisdom of his own nature implanted by God.<sup>4</sup>

And why were there to be seven pairs of clean animals, and two pairs of everything else? St. John Chrysostom tells the obvious answer: so that Noah could offer sacrifice when the Flood was over, without destroying any of the pairs. This is indeed what he did (Gen. 8:20). He also had to have animals to eat because, right after the Flood, God gives the command to eat meat.

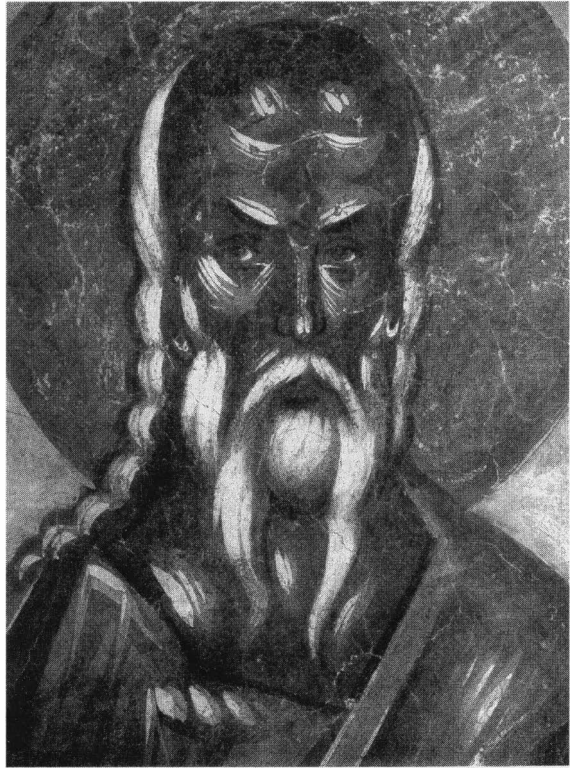
Perhaps one reason for eating meat was that, after the Flood, when the windows of heaven were opened, apparently a whole new atmospheric condition prevailed. Also, as the Fathers suggest, man had by this time become lower, more fallen.\*

---

\* Blessed Theodoret suggests that one of the reasons why God allowed man to eat meat after the Flood was to make people less inclined to worship animals, “since only the worst fools will worship what they eat” (*Questions on Genesis* 55, LEC 1, p. 117).—ED.



## THE FLOOD



Noah (detail).

*Fresco by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration, Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*

*7:4–9 For yet seven days having passed, I bring rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights, and I will blot out every offspring which I have made from the face of all the earth. And Noah did all things whatever the Lord God commanded him. And Noah was six hundred years old when the Flood of water was upon the earth. And then went in Noah and his sons and his wife, and his sons' wives with him into the Ark, because of the water of the Flood. And of clean flying creatures and of unclean flying creatures, and of clean cattle and of unclean cattle, and of all things that creep upon the earth, pairs went in to Noah into the Ark, male and female, as God commanded Noah.*

Modern rationalist critics, of course, have great problems with the whole story of Noah and the Ark. Could there have really been a vessel large enough to hold two of each type of creature (of course, excluding fish, insects and other creatures that might be able to survive on their

own), and how could they have been gathered together from all over the world?\*

Concerning the size of the Ark (which as we have said was roughly 450 feet long, 75 feet wide, and 45 feet high), one modern estimate has found that such a vessel, divided into several floors as the text states, could easily hold two of every kind of animal alive today, with room to spare.\*\*

Some rationalists object that the animals on other continents, for example America, could not have come to the Ark. However, if the Flood was really a worldwide catastrophe such as Genesis describes it in the verses that follow, we have no way of knowing what the earth looked like before it—the continents we know were formed by the Flood itself and geological processes that have operated since then. Perhaps there was only *one* continent then; we don't know.

How did the animals come? Of course, God sent them. The text does not describe Noah capturing and forcing them on board the Ark; they simply "went in."\*\*\* The Fathers understand this quite simply and realistically. St. Ephraim writes:

On this very day there begin to come from the east elephants, from the south apes and peacocks, other animals assemble from the west,

---

\* Such questions were raised by unbelievers even in ancient times. Blessed Augustine addresses them in *The City of God*, where, among other things, he points out that "it was not needful to preserve in the Ark the animals that can live in the water, whether the fishes that live submerged in it, or the sea-birds that swim on its surface" (*City of God* 15.27, NPNF 1 2, p. 307).—ED.

\*\* In light of what has been said earlier on the difference between the created "kinds" described in the Bible (Gen. chap. 1) and the modern idea of "species" (see pp. 181–85, 181n, 184n above), it may be noted that the Ark needed only to carry animals representing the broader category of "kinds." Also, large animals could have been represented on the Ark as juveniles rather than adults of full size.

The most thorough research into the question of how the Ark could have carried two of each "kind" has been conducted by John Woodmorappe; see his book *Noah's Ark: A Feasibility Study* (1996).—ED.

\*\*\* The Greeks have the tradition of the *semantron*, the wooden board that is beaten when calling people to Matins, which is like Noah going out and calling all the animals to the Ark.—AUTH.

## THE FLOOD

and still others hastened to come from the north. The lions left their thickets, fierce beasts came out of their dens, the deer and wild asses came out of their wildernesses, the animals of the mountains assembled from the mountains. The contemporaries of Noah flocked together to such a new spectacle, but not for repentance, but to enjoy seeing how before their eyes there entered into the Ark lions, and right after them, without fear, the oxen hastened, seeking shelter together with them, how wolves and sheep entered together, falcons and sparrows, eagles and doves.<sup>5</sup>

In other words, it must have been quite a spectacular event. People looking at it would marvel: what's going on? The thought did not occur to them that something supernatural was occurring, which might move them to repentance.

Rationalist scholars, of course, would reject this account as full of miracles; but why shouldn't there be miracles here, as there are in all of God's dealings with righteous men? Noah is like a second Adam, in whose presence the wild beasts become meek and obedient.

For the same reason, the animals did not attack each other. Just as Adam was a righteous man and therefore the animals were at peace with one another around him, so too with Noah. In Orthodoxy, there is the concept of a *prepodobny*: a saint who has become like unto the first-created Adam. In the presence of such a righteous person, animals which are natural enemies become in harmony. We see this in numerous Lives of Saints, right up to very recent times. St. Seraphim of Sarov and St. Paul of Obnora in Russia, and St. Herman in America, are a few examples.\* The Holy Fathers say that is exactly what happened with Noah. The lion would not eat the lamb because Noah was a righteous man. With a righteous man, the laws of nature change.\*\*

A big objection of rationalists is the *universality* of the Flood:

---

\* See *Animals and Man: A State of Blessedness* by Dr. Joanne Stefanatos (1992), p. 239 above, and p. 478 below.—Ed.

\*\* St. John Chrysostom writes: "Along with everybody else, I too am amazed at the just man's [Noah's] virtue, and the Lord's goodness and love beyond all telling when I think of how he managed to live among the wild animals, namely, lions, panthers, bears, and the other fierce and untamed animals. Call to mind in this connection, I

Many people say, "There are accounts of Babylonian floods in about 3000 B.C. It must have been a local flood in the Babylonian area. There *couldn't* have been a flood over the whole earth!"\* But why not? God made the whole earth; God can destroy the whole earth. Why shouldn't there be a flood over the whole earth? From the way it is described in the Scripture, it is quite clear that this is what is meant. The Flood described in the next verses, when "all the fountains of the abyss were broken up and the floodgates of heaven were opened" (we discussed this breaking of the firmament and the release of water above it in chapter 3), is a cosmic catastrophe of enormous proportions. At the same time, undoubtedly, there was volcanic activity, underground water was coming out, and all kinds of spectacular things were happening, which would account for the fact that there are high mountains now. The Flood was not necessarily over Mount Everest at thirty thousand feet; Mount Everest could have arisen after that. Before the Flood, it could have been that the mountains were fairly low, perhaps some few thousand feet high instead of thirty thousand feet high.\*\*

The Scripture describes the waters of the Flood as being twenty-

---

ask you, dearly beloved, the esteem enjoyed by the first-formed human being before the fall, and consider God's goodness: after his [Adam's] transgression undermined the authority given him, the good Lord by contrast found another man capable of correcting that original image by preserving the imprint of virtue and demonstrating strict obedience to law. So He placed him once more in his pristine position of esteem, as if to teach us through this procedure the extent of the authority Adam had before the fall. Accordingly, the good man's virtue profited from God's loving kindness to restore the former control, and once more the wild animals recognized their subordination" (*Homilies on Genesis* 25.5, FC 82, p. 136 [25.16]).—ED.

\* This is the claim both of "Christian evolutionists" and of most "old-earth/progressive creationists."—ED.

\*\* Commenting on 2 Peter 2:5—"And [God] spared not the ancient world, but saved Noah, one of eight people"—St. Bede the Venerable writes on the change in the earth's topography that occurred as a result of the Flood: "The world inhabited by those who existed before the Flood is the very same world in which the human race now lives, but it is nonetheless properly said to be the 'ancient world,' as if it were another, because, as is found written in the following parts of the Epistle, 'the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished' (2 Pet. 3:6), namely, both the heavens that existed formerly (cf. 2 Pet. 3:5) (that is, all the spaces of this present stormy atmosphere) were destroyed by the height of the increasing waters

two and a half feet above the highest mountain. If it was only a local flood, how could you have flood waters that high in the area of Babylonia, without having water covering the whole earth? And if it was only a local flood, why didn't God simply tell Noah to leave the area ahead of time? Why did He have him build this Ark? Noah could have gone away from the Flood area, as Lot fled Sodom.

Furthermore, at the end of the Flood, God promises He will never again allow such a universal catastrophe (Gen. 9:11). Of course, after that there have been many severe local floods, but never a universal flood.\*

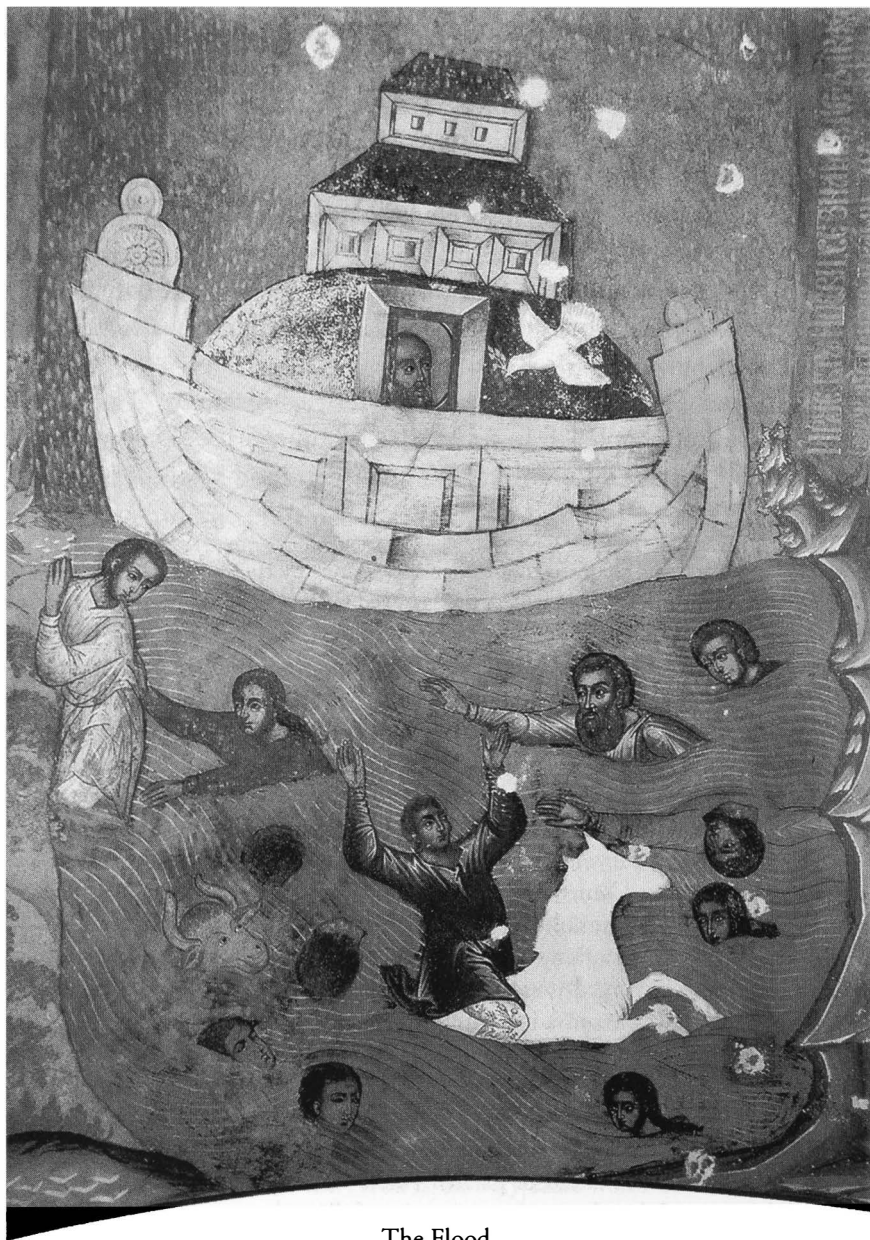
In Roman Catholic books, some modern scholars say, "There must have been other people left in other parts of the world. Noah was just a symbol of this stage of mankind." But if the Flood was not universal,

---

and the land, too, was changed to another appearance by the destructive waters. For although some mountains and valleys are believed to have been in existence from the beginning, yet they were not the same size as they are now seen to be throughout the entire world. Perhaps this could be denied, except that even now we see the appearance of the land changed every year by the eroding waters. This action is believed to have been all the greater then in proportion to the stronger and longer-lasting force of the waters that surged up over and washed away the land" (*Commentary on 2 Peter*, CCSL 121.270, in *Commentary on the Seven Catholic Epistles*, trans. Dom David Hurst, p. 137\*; see also p. 147).—ED.

\* As has been well known since the compilations made by secular historians Richard Andree, Hermann Usener, and James George Frazer, accounts of a great Deluge are to be found in ancient cultures all over the world, on all the continents. In the majority of these Flood stories, the Deluge results from the sins of a fallen humanity, the old world is submerged under the waters, only a few people and animals are saved, and a new world comes into being (cf. Mircea Eliade, *A History of Religious Ideas*, vol. 1, pp. 62–63). Among the most fascinating Flood stories are those of the Australian Aboriginal peoples, which are replete with striking similarities to the Genesis account (see Howard Coates, "Australian Aboriginal Flood Stories," and "Aboriginal Flood Legend," *Creation*, vol. 4 [1981], no. 3, and vol. 5 [1982], no. 1). The almost universal dissemination of parallel Flood stories points to the fact that the Flood did occur and that the common ancestor of all modern peoples is Noah. Of all these stories, the Genesis account is the most detailed and systematic. The second-century Church writer St. Theophilus of Antioch, in acknowledging the various Flood accounts of the ancient Greeks, affirmed that only the Biblical account is accurate in all its details, "relating no fable" (*To Autolytus* 3.18, ANF 2, p. 116).—ED.





The Flood.  
*Russian fresco of the sixteenth century.*

or at least if there were human survivors of it apart from Noah and his family, there is no point or meaning to this Biblical account of it. The whole point here is the totally new beginning of mankind that occurs with it.\*

In recent years creation scientists have made fruitful geological investigations that do indeed point to a universal Flood some five

---

\* Besides the verses of Genesis already quoted, the explicit, repeated statements in Genesis 7:21–23 about all of the earth's people, animals and birds dying in the Flood, with Noah and those with him on the Ark being left alone, make it clear that the destruction caused by the Flood was global, not local. In the New Testament, the universal nature of the Flood was affirmed by the Apostle Peter (2 Pet. 2:5, 3:6). St. Peter even predicted that, in the last times, people who ridicule the belief in Christ's Second Coming will at the same time be "willingly ignorant" that the whole world was destroyed by water: "There shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, 'Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.' For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water, whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished" (2 Pet. 3:3–6).

Following the unequivocal words of Holy Scripture, the Holy Fathers who wrote about the Flood spoke of it as a universal catastrophe; none referred to it as a regional event. In the second century, St. Theophilus of Antioch specifically refuted Plato's idea that the Flood "extended not over the whole earth, but only over the plains, and that those who fled to the highest hills saved themselves" (*To Autolycus* 3.18–19, ANF 2, p. 116). For other Patristic testimony on the Flood as a cause of universal destruction, see, for example, St. Justin Martyr, *Apology* 2.7; St. Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 5.29.2; idem, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 19; St. Gregory the Theologian, *Orations* 28.17; St. Ambrose, *On the Duties of the Clergy* 3.18.108; St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 4.22, 9.6; St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 1.39.7; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 25.2 (25.10), 25.6 (25.20) (see pp. 339–40 below); idem, *Homilies on the Gospel of St. Matthew* 6.9, 20.6; idem, *Homilies on 1 Corinthians* 37.4; Blessed Augustine, *City of God* 13.24, 15.27; St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Glaphyra on Genesis* 2.31; St. Bede the Venerable, *Commentary on 1 Peter* 3:20; idem, *Homilies on the Gospels* 1.14; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 2.4; St. Gregory Palamas, *Homilies* 4.6, 6.16; and Blessed Theophylact, *Commentary on 1 Peter* 3:20.

In addition to affirming that all the people and animals in the world except those in the Ark perished in the Flood, the Fathers refer in many places to Noah as the new progenitor of the human race, the father of a new world; see references on p. 347nn below.—Ed.

thousand or so years ago (see John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Flood*).\*

*7:10 And it came to pass after the seven days that the water of the Flood came upon the earth.*

During the seven days they are all getting into the Ark, adjusting themselves, finding their quarters, getting the people in charge of feeding set up, and dealing with other practical problems.

St. John Chrysostom describes this as a terrible experience: the smell of all the animals, with no windows looking out. Noah was supposed to take the food which was suitable for himself and feed it to the animals during that time. Undoubtedly it was a time of fasting and prayer and labor. They probably did not eat full meals.

Then the Flood is described:

*7:11–17 In the six hundredth year of the life of Noah, in the second month, on the twenty-seventh day of the month,\*\* on this day all the fountains of the abyss were broken up, and the floodgates of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights. On that very day entered Noah, Shem, Ham, Japheth, the sons of Noah, and the wife of Noah, and the three wives of his sons with him into the Ark. And all the wild beasts after their kind, and all cattle after their kind, and every reptile moving itself on the earth after its kind, and every flying bird after its kind, went in to Noah into the Ark, pairs, male and female of all flesh in which is the breath of life. And they that entered went in male and female of all flesh, as God commanded Noah. And the Lord God shut the Ark outside of him. And the Flood was upon the earth forty days and forty nights.*

As we have said, this was not just rain. Everything was coming down from the firmament, and everything was coming up from underneath, reducing the earth to the same state it was on the First Day of Creation—chaos.

---

\* An updated presentation of the same material may be found in the two-volume source book *Earth's Catastrophic Past* by Andrew A. Snelling (2009).—ED.

\*\* According to the Orthodox Christian Calendar, which begins on September 1, we calculate this as the twenty-seventh of October.—AUTH.

## THE FLOOD

7:17–24 *And the water abounded greatly and bore up the Ark, and it was lifted on high from off the earth. And the water prevailed and abounded exceedingly upon the earth, and the Ark was borne upon the water. And the water prevailed exceedingly upon the earth, and covered all the high mountains which were under heaven. Fifteen cubits upwards was the water raised,\* and it covered all the high mountains. And there died all flesh that moved upon the earth, of flying creatures and cattle, and of wild beasts, and every reptile moving upon the earth, and every man. And all things which have the breath of life, and whatever was on the dry land, died. And God blotted out every offspring which was upon the face of the earth, both man and beast, and reptiles, and birds of the sky, and they were blotted out from the earth, and Noah was left alone, and those with him in the Ark. And the water was raised over the earth an hundred and fifty days.*

Noah was six hundred years old at the time of the Flood; therefore God gave mankind only one hundred years and seven days, not one hundred and twenty years to repent as He had decreed. This is because, as St. John Chrysostom says, men had become unworthy of more time, being unmoved even when seeing the Ark and its animals miraculously assembled in it.<sup>6</sup> It was clear enough by then that people were not repenting.

The Flood covered even the highest mountains with fifteen cubits (twenty-two and a half feet) of water. St. John Chrysostom says of this:

Fifteen cubits upwards was the water raised above the mountains. Not without reason does the Scripture reveal this to us, but so that we might know that those who drowned were not only men and cattle and four-footed beasts and reptiles, but also the birds of the heavens and all the beasts and other irrational creatures which dwelt in the mountains.<sup>7</sup>

Again he says:

Behold how the Scripture once and twice and many times informs us that there occurred a universal destruction, that not a single

---

\* I.e., fifteen cubits above the top of the mountains.—AUTH.



Noah emerging from the Ark.  
*Fresco from the Christian catacombs in Rome, third century.*

creature was saved, but all drowned in the water—both men and animals.<sup>8</sup>

If people were so wicked then, did they all perish spiritually in the Flood? Were all of them condemned eternally for their sins or not?

In the Scriptures we are told specifically about those who were living at the time of Noah. In 1 Peter 3:18–20, the Apostle Peter describes how Christ descended to hades, and whom He saw there: “For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: by which also He went and preached unto the spirits in prison [that is, in hades], which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the Ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.” This

“salvation by water,” says St. Peter, is an image of Baptism.\* The Ark is an image of the Church, of being saved from the wicked world.\*\*

This quote of St. Peter says distinctly that Christ went to preach to those who had perished in the time of Noah. Therefore, they had a chance to believe in Christ, although physically they had all died. After death, they had the excuse that Noah was not Christ or God Himself,

---

\* St. Justin Martyr draws out both this and other typological connections between the Flood account and the salvation wrought by Christ: “Righteous Noah, along with the other mortals at the deluge, i.e., with his own wife, his three sons and their wives, being eight in number, were a symbol of the eighth day, wherein Christ appeared when He rose from the dead, for ever the first in power. For Christ, being ‘the firstborn of every creature’ (Col. 1:15), became again the chief of another race regenerated by Himself through water, and faith, and wood, containing the mystery of the Cross; even as Noah was saved by wood when he rode over the waters with his household” (*Dialogue with Trypho* 138, ANF 1, p. 268). St. Ambrose, too, calls forth Noah’s “salvation by water” as an image of Baptism, and the wood of the Ark as a prefiguration of the Cross (*On the Mysteries* 3.10–11, NPNF 2 10, p. 318). According to St. Symeon the New Theologian, “The Ark was a type of the Theotokos [Mother of God] and Noah of Christ, and the men with Noah were a first-fruit of the portion of the Jews, of those who would believe in Christ, while the wild beasts and the animals and birds and reptiles constituted a type of the Gentiles” (*Ethical Discourses* 2.4, PPS 14, p. 99). St. Gregory Palamas, who also presents Noah as a type of Christ, points out yet more parallels between the Old and New Testaments: “See how Noah clearly foreshadows Him Who was later to be born of the Virgin, for whose sake the election was made. For Noah was shown to be the savior, not of all the race of men in general, but of his own household, all of whom were saved through him. In the same way Christ, too, is the Savior of the race of men, not of all men in general, but of all His own household, that is of His Church; not, however, of the disobedient. Furthermore, the name Noah can be translated to mean ‘rest’ (cf. Gen. 5:29). But who is true ‘rest’ except the Virgin’s Son, Who says, ‘Come unto Me through repentance, all ye who labor and are heavy laden with sins, and I will give you rest’ (cf. Matt. 11:28), bestowing freedom, ease and eternal life upon you” (*Homily* 57.9, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 471–72). On the typological connection between Noah and Christ, see also St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Hymns on the Nativity* 1.22–23; St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 17.10; St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 32.6–8; Blessed Augustine, *Tractates on the Gospel of St. John* 9.11; St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Glaphyra on Genesis* 2.32, 2.36; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 57.10.—ED.

\*\* On the Ark as a type of the Church, see St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 17.10; Blessed Augustine, *Letters* 108, 164; St. Bede the Venerable, *Homilies on the Gospels* 1.12.—ED.

and now they had the chance to accept Christ. That, however, was up to each individual soul. Undoubtedly, some who had died in the Flood accepted Christ's preaching in hades, and some did not. Once one's heart grows hard, one does not accept Christ even though one knows that one should, that this is one's last chance. Pride gets in the way.\*

8:1–3 *And God remembered Noah, and all the wild beasts, and all the cattle, and all the birds, and all the reptiles that creep, as many as were with him in the Ark. And God brought a wind upon the earth, and the water stayed. And the fountains of the deep were closed up, and the flood-gates of heaven, and the rain from heaven was withheld. And the water subsided and went off the earth, and after an hundred and fifty days the water was diminished.*

"And God remembered Noah" does not mean that He had forgotten him in the meantime. It means that God kept him in mind to save him. Such expressions are anthropomorphic, so that we can understand.<sup>9</sup>

The Flood was a hundred and fifty days going up—almost half a year! All that time, Noah was in the Ark without any ventilation or sunshine. The whole sky was covered with darkness. Then the water went down for a hundred and fifty days. Altogether, the earth was covered with water for a year. At that time the land was rising up, tremendous underground reservoirs were being filled, and the whole geography that we now know was being formed.

---

\* St. Cyril of Alexandria writes of how Christ delivered from hell some but not all of those who had died before His coming: "Going in His soul, [Christ] preached to those who were in hell, appearing to them as one soul to other souls ... so that He might save all those who would believe in Him. For both those who were alive on earth during the time of His incarnation and those who were in hell had a chance to acknowledge Him.... While Christ was able to preach to all those who were alive at the time of His appearing and those who believed in Him were blessed, so too was He able to liberate those in hell who believed and acknowledged Him, by His descent there. However, the souls of those who practiced idolatry and outrageous ungodliness, as well as those who were blinded by fleshly lusts, did not have the power to see Him, and they were not delivered" (*Catena on 1 Peter 3:18–20*, ACCS: New Testament 11, pp. 107–8).—ED.

## THE FLOOD

*8:3 And the Ark rested in the seventh month, on the twenty-seventh day of the month, on the mountains of Ararat.*

It came finally to rest on the mountains of Ararat, that is, the region of Ararat. There are several peaks, but there are two main peaks of Ararat. It came to rest in the seventh month, the twenty-seventh day, exactly five months after it had begun to rain.

*8:4–5 And the water continued to decrease until the tenth month. And in the tenth month, on the first day of the month, the heads of the mountains were seen.*

That is, the Ark had already come to rest upon the high peak. Then the other peaks began to be seen.

*8:6–7 And it came to pass after forty days, Noah opened the window of the Ark which he had made. And he sent forth a raven; and it went forth and returned not until the water was dried from off the earth.*

This does not mean that it returned; it means that it never did come back.

*8:8–14 And he sent a dove after it to see if the water had ceased from off the earth. And the dove, not having found rest for her feet, returned to him into the Ark, because the water was on all the face of the earth. And he stretched out his hand and took her, and brought her to himself into the Ark. And having waited yet seven other days, he again sent forth the dove from the Ark. And the dove returned to him in the evening, and had a leaf of olive, a sprig in her mouth; and Noah knew that the water had ceased from off the earth. And having waited yet seven other days, he again sent forth the dove, and she did not return to him again any more. And it came to pass in the six hundred and first year of the life of Noah, in the first month, on the first day of the month, the water subsided from off the earth. And Noah opened the covering of the Ark which he had made, and he saw that the water had subsided from the face of the earth. And in the second month the earth was dried, on the twenty-seventh day of the month.*

Thus Noah was in the Ark for one year in all.

Noah sent out birds to scout around. First he sent the raven, which





The raven feeding on the corpses  
of animals and people.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

did not return because (according to St. John Chrysostom) it found the corpses of animals and people to eat.<sup>10\*</sup> It was still not safe to go out: the highest elevations were spoiled with these corpses on them.

Then Noah sent the dove. The first time the dove went out, she found no trees or vegetables to eat. The mountains were still covered with slime. The second time the dove found a branch, meaning that the trees were now out of the water and were beginning to grow, but still not enough to support life. The third time the dove did not return

---

\* St. Ambrose writes that “the raven is the figure of sin, which goes forth [from you] and does not return, if righteousness is preserved in you inwardly and outwardly” (*On the Mysteries* 3.11, SC 25bis.160–62, NPNF 2 10, p. 318\*). St. Bede the Venerable draws out another instructive image, saying that the raven “scorned to return to the Ark, signifying those who, although they have been cleansed by the waters of Baptism, nevertheless neglect putting off the very black dress of their old selves by living more faultlessly” (*Homilies on the Gospels* 1.12, trans. L. T. Martin and D. Hurst, vol. 1, p. 122).—ED.

## THE FLOOD



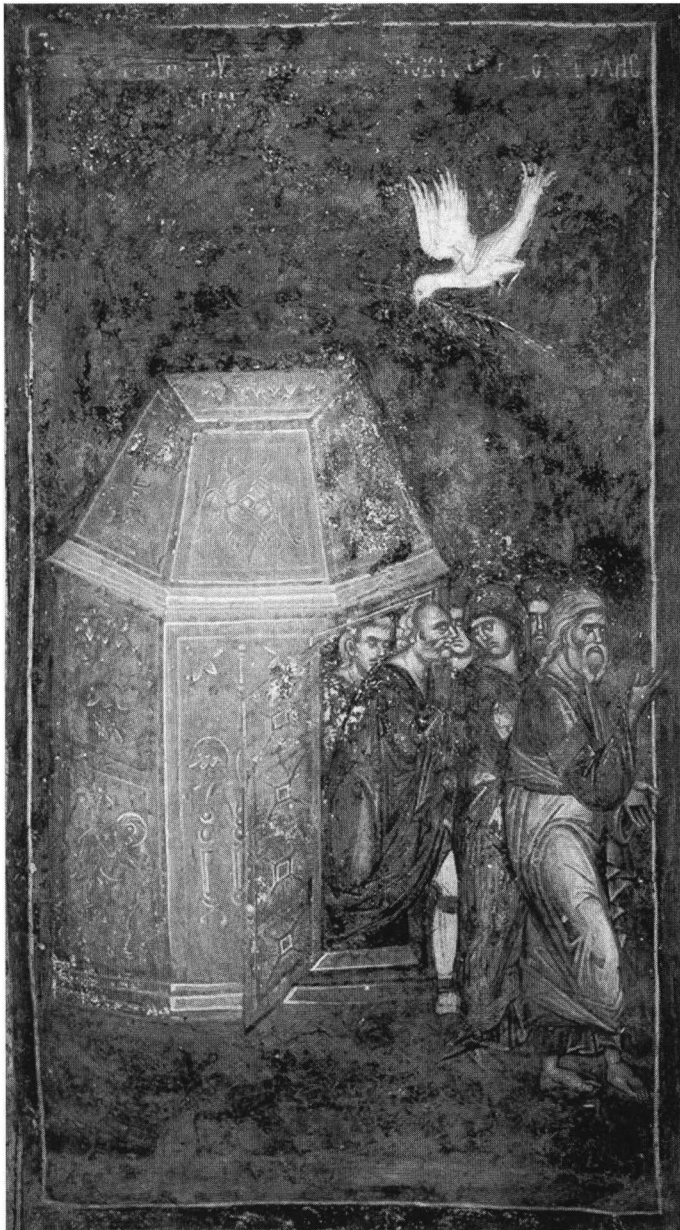
The dove bearing the olive branch.  
*Fresco from the Christian catacombs in Rome, third century.*

because she now found suitable living conditions. Therefore, Noah knew it was now time to come out.\*

**8:15–19** *And the Lord God spoke to Noah, saying, Come out from the Ark, thou and thy wife and thy sons, and thy sons' wives with thee. And all the wild beasts as many as are with thee, and all flesh both of birds and*

---

\* The Holy Fathers saw the dove sent by Noah as a foreshadowing of the descent of the Holy Spirit on Christ at His Baptism (cf. Matt. 3:16, Mark 1:10, Luke 3:22). Thus, St. Bede the Venerable writes: "The olive branch with green leaves is the grace of the Holy Spirit, rich in the words of life, the fullness of which rests upon Christ.... And by a most beautiful conjunction, the figure is in agreement with the fulfillment: a corporeal dove brought the olive branch to the Ark which was washed by the waters of the Flood; the Holy Spirit descended in the form of a corporeal dove upon the Lord when He was baptized in the waters of the Jordan" (*Homilies on the Gospels* 1.12, vol. 1, pp. 122–23). On Noah's dove as a type of the Holy Spirit, see also St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 17.10; and St. Ambrose of Milan, *Letter* 41.21, *On the Mysteries* 4.24.—ED.



Noah and his family coming out of the Ark, with the dove bearing the olive branch.

*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

*beasts, and every reptile moving upon the earth, bring forth with thee: and increase ye and multiply upon the earth. And Noah came forth, and his wife and his sons, and his sons' wives with him. And all the wild beasts and all the cattle and every bird, and every reptile creeping upon the earth after their kind, came forth out of the Ark.*

Here we see in Noah the image of Adam.\* He is the only one left, together with his family; he is to begin mankind over again.\*\* He is given the same command that Adam was given: "Increase and multiply." He becomes the father of all living after the Flood.

Notice how Noah—even though he knew it was probably safe to go out since the dove did not come back—waited until God spoke. The whole time he was patiently waiting on God.\*\*\*

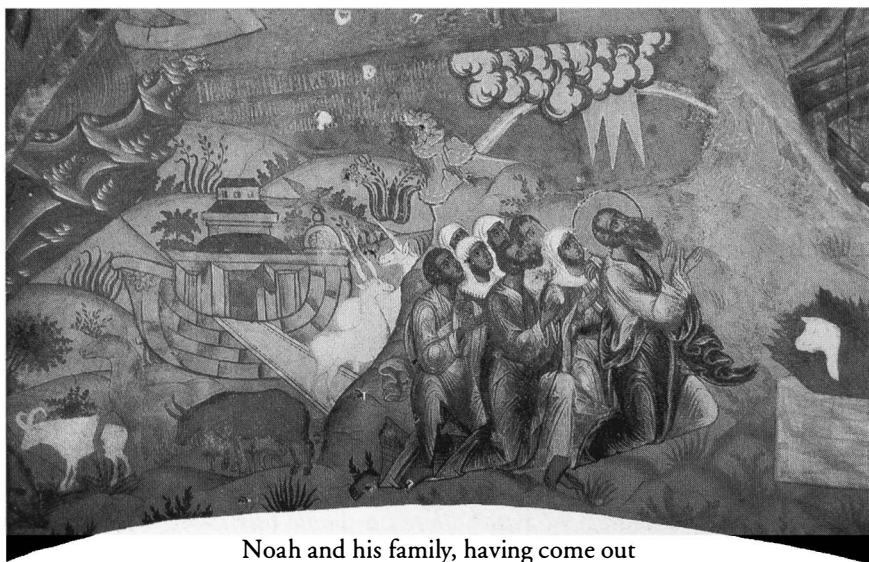
*8:20–22 And Noah built an altar to the Lord, and took of all clean beasts, and of all clean birds, and offered a whole burnt-offering upon the altar. And the Lord God smelled a smell of sweetness, and the Lord God*

---

\* Blessed Theodoret writes: "Since [Noah] was the seed of the race, the root of human nature, and a second Adam, God gave him the blessing which the first Adam had received immediately after his creation: 'Increase, multiply ...'" (*Questions on Genesis* 53, LEC 1, p. 113).—ED.

\*\* Although people commonly say that they are "related" to some people but not to others, all human beings are interrelated through Noah, who lived less than five thousand years ago according to the Biblical reckoning. Thus, St. John Chrysostom writes, "For of Adam we all sprung, and none can be more a relation than another, both as regards Adam and as regards Noah" (*Homilies on Romans* 19, NPNF 1 6, p. 494). On the fact that the whole human race derives from Noah, see also St. Justin Martyr, *Dialogue with Trypho* 19, 119; Lactantius, *Divine Institutes* 6.10; St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 18: *On the Death of His Father* 17; St. Ambrose, *On the Duties of the Clergy* 1.25.121; idem, *Paradise* 3; St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 39.4; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 26.5 (26.16); idem, *Homilies on 1 Corinthians* 34.7; Blessed Augustine, *Literal Meaning of Genesis* 9.19; Blessed Theodoret, *Letter* 181: *To Abundius, Bishop of Como*; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 2.7; and St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 22.7.—ED.

\*\*\* St. Ambrose writes of Noah's temperance during and after the Flood: "How brave he was to overcome the Flood! How temperate to endure it! When he had entered the Ark, with what moderation he passed the time! When he sent forth the raven and the dove, when he received them on their return, when he took the opportunity of leaving the Ark, with what moderation did he make use of these occasions!" (*On the Duties of the Clergy* 1.25.121, NPNF 2 10, p. 21).—ED.



Noah and his family, having come out of the Ark, offer a whole burnt-offering upon the altar.  
*Russian fresco of the sixteenth century.*

*having considered, said, I will not any more curse the earth, because of the works of men, because the imagination of man is intently bent upon evil things from his youth, I will not therefore any more smite all living flesh as I have done. All the days of the earth, seed and harvest, cold and heat, summer and spring, shall not cease by day or night.*

So we see that, first of all, Noah offers sacrifice, knowing like Abel in his heart that this is fitting to do in thanksgiving, after having been delivered. He offers the clean animals—both birds and beasts, such as doves and sheep.

Also, we see how God's mercy is shown. God sees that men will continue to be evil, and that is why He allows meat to be eaten, in accordance with the lower condition of post-Flood humanity. He promises, however, never again to curse the earth (as He did to Adam) or destroy mankind. The normal life of the fallen earth will continue to the end.

In the Flood, everything was killed; but at the end of the world, there will be a renewal of the earth. In fact, people living then will not even die. What we call the "end of the world," therefore, will not be the same as destroying it. It will be a transfiguration of the whole world.

## CHAPTER NINE

# *The Dispersion of the Peoples*

(Genesis 9:1–11:26)

### *1. Noah and God's New Covenant*

*9:1–2 God blessed Noah and his sons, and said to them, Increase and multiply, and fill the earth and have dominion over it. And the dread and the fear of you shall be upon all the wild beasts of the earth, on all the birds of the sky, and on all things moving upon the earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; I have placed them under your power.*

Noah is now given authority over creation such as was given to Adam at the very beginning (cf. Gen. 1:28).<sup>1</sup>

*9:3 And every moving thing that lives shall be to you for food.*

This is the first time God gives the command allowing people to eat meat.

*9:3–7 I have given all things to you as the green herbs. But flesh with blood of life ye shall not eat. For your blood of your lives will I require at the hand of all wild beasts, and I will require the life of man at the hand of his brother man. He that sheds man's blood, instead of that blood shall his own be shed, for in the image of God I made man. But do ye increase and multiply, and fill the earth, and have dominion over it.*

God has given the same commandment to Noah that He gave to Adam: to increase and multiply. He has given food as He gave to Adam, except that now He has also allowed meat to be eaten (corresponding to the new conditions of man after the Flood). And just like Adam was given one fasting commandment to keep—not to eat of the tree of the

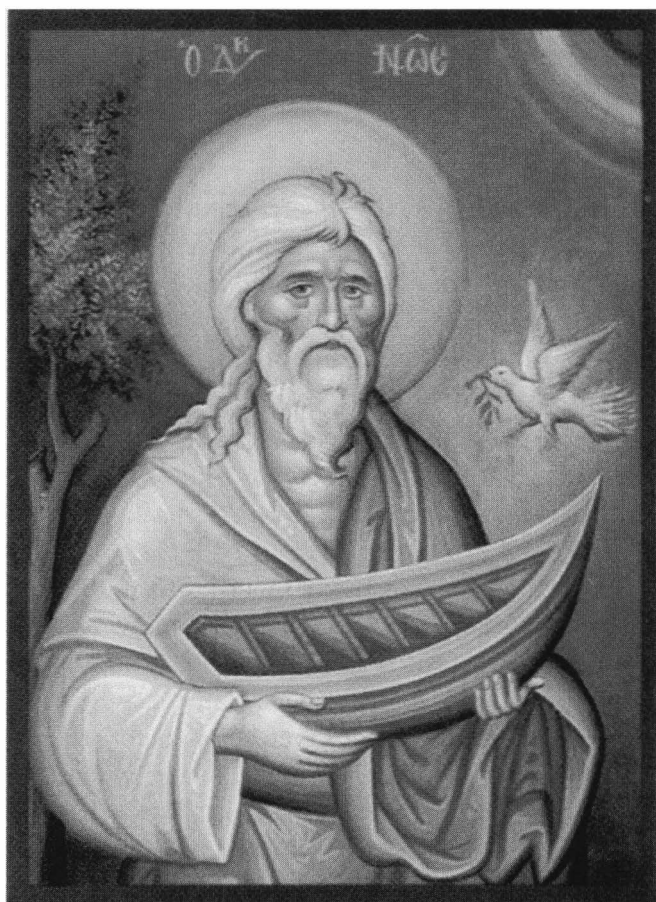
knowledge of good and evil—so Noah is given one command: not to eat blood. The blood belongs to God, the meat to man. That is why, according to Jewish food rules, you have to slaughter the animal with a sharp weapon, and not strangle it so that the blood remains inside. It is symbolical: the blood that comes out is offered to God.<sup>2</sup>

The commandment regarding blood, says St. John Chrysostom, was given to Noah to act against man's inclination to murder, to make him meek, even while allowing him to eat meat (which requires killing).<sup>3</sup>

Blood is, at it were, a symbol of life—and that belongs to God. This particular teaching was still in force in the Acts of the Apostles. In the teachings of the Apostles described in Acts, the one dietary command given to Gentile converts to Christianity was that they not eat strangled animals, from which the blood was not let out (cf. Acts 15:20, 29; 21:25).

*9:8–17 And God spoke to Noah and to his sons with him, saying, And behold I establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you, and with every living creature with you, of birds and of beasts, and with all the wild beasts of the earth, as many as are with you, of all that come out of the Ark. And I will establish my covenant with you, and all flesh shall not any more die by the water of the flood, and there shall no more be a flood of water to destroy all the earth. And the Lord God said to Noah, This is the sign of the covenant which I set between Me and you, and between every living creature which is with you for perpetual generations. I set my bow [rainbow] in the cloud, and it shall be for a sign of covenant between Me and the earth. And it shall be when I gather clouds upon the earth, that My bow shall be seen in the cloud. And I will remember My covenant, which is between Me and you, and between every living soul in all flesh, and there shall no longer be water for a deluge, so as to blot out all flesh. And My bow shall be in the cloud, and I will look to remember the everlasting covenant between Me and the earth, and between every living soul in all flesh, which is upon the earth. And God said to Noah, This is the sign of the covenant, which I have made between Me and all flesh, which is upon the earth.*

## THE DISPERSION OF THE PEOPLES



Noah with the  
dove and the  
sign of the rain-  
bow in the sky.

*Contemporary  
icon by T. Clark.*

Here God makes a covenant with mankind through Noah, just as years later He makes a covenant with Abraham, and still later with Moses.

The rainbow is an appropriate reminder that the rain is not perpetual, since it occurs only when the sun breaks through the clouds. It is very likely that rainbows were not seen before the Flood, since the sun did not shine directly then: there was a cloud layer across the firmament, causing a greenhouse effect over the earth. The rainbow, therefore, became another part of the new conditions of the world after the Flood, when there was no more cloud covering.



9:18–19 *Now the sons of Noah which came out of the Ark were Shem, Ham and Japheth. And Ham was the father of Canaan. These three are the sons of Noah; of these were men scattered over all the earth.*

This reemphasizes that Noah is like a new Adam. From him come all men after the Flood.

Ham is mentioned as the “father of Canaan” because, according to St. John Chrysostom,<sup>4</sup> Ham did not restrain his passion in the Ark but conceived a child when he should have been refraining like his father and brothers. In the Ark, the people were in a state of prayer and fasting. Men abstained from their wives, except for Ham.\* This sin against the law of prayer and fasting already reveals Ham’s character.

9:20–21 *And Noah began to be a husbandman, and he planted a vineyard. And he drank of the wine, and was drunk, and was naked in his house.*

Why did Noah, a righteous man, get drunk? Perhaps, as St. Ephraim suggests, it was because he had not drunk wine for many years; he had been a year in the Ark, and it takes several years to plant the vines and get grapes with which to make wine.<sup>5</sup> Or else, as St. John Chrysostom suggests, wine was actually not even drunk before the Flood. Noah was the first to cultivate vineyards. Therefore, he would not have known the power of wine; he drank it to see what it was like, and it overwhelmed him.<sup>6\*\*</sup> If this was the case, wine-drinking goes together with meat-eating as one of the new conditions of the post-Flood world.

---

\* St. John Damascene writes of the chastity that was supposed to be maintained by the people in the Ark: “When Noah was ordered to enter the Ark and was entrusted with the safeguarding of the seed of the earth, he was given this command, which reads: ‘Come into the Ark, you, your sons, your wife and your sons’ wives’ (cf. Gen. 6:19). He separated them from their wives, so that with the help of chastity they might escape the ocean’s depths and that worldwide destruction” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.25, FC 37, pp. 394–95).

According to St. Ephraim, not only the people but also the animals in the Ark were separated in order that they would preserve chastity (*Commentary on Genesis* 6.12.2, FC 91, p. 142).—ED.

\*\* The same explanation was brought forth by Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, in *Questions on Genesis* 56, LEC 1, p. 117.—ED.



Noah cultivating vineyards.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

9:22–25 *And Ham the father of Canaan saw the nakedness of his father, and he went out and told his two brothers without. And Shem and Japheth, having taken a garment, put it on both their backs and went backwards, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their face was backward and they saw not the nakedness of their father. And Noah recovered from the wine, and knew all that his younger son had done to him. And he said, Cursed be the servant Canaan, a slave shall he be to his brethren.*

Verse 22 again calls Ham “the father of Canaan” to remind us of his uncontrolled nature.

What was this sin of Ham? The sin was not so much that he saw his father naked, because then they were not nearly as fastidious about that kind of thing as we are now. Rather, his sin lay in the fact that he saw him in a shameful condition—drunk, all sprawled out—and therefore he *mocked* his father; he stared at the spectacle and went out and spread tales about his father’s sin.

In English, a “ham” is an actor who makes a big show of himself. In Russian, the word “ham” means something much worse. It refers to someone absolutely shameful, without any manners, politeness or decency (like the Soviets in modern times).

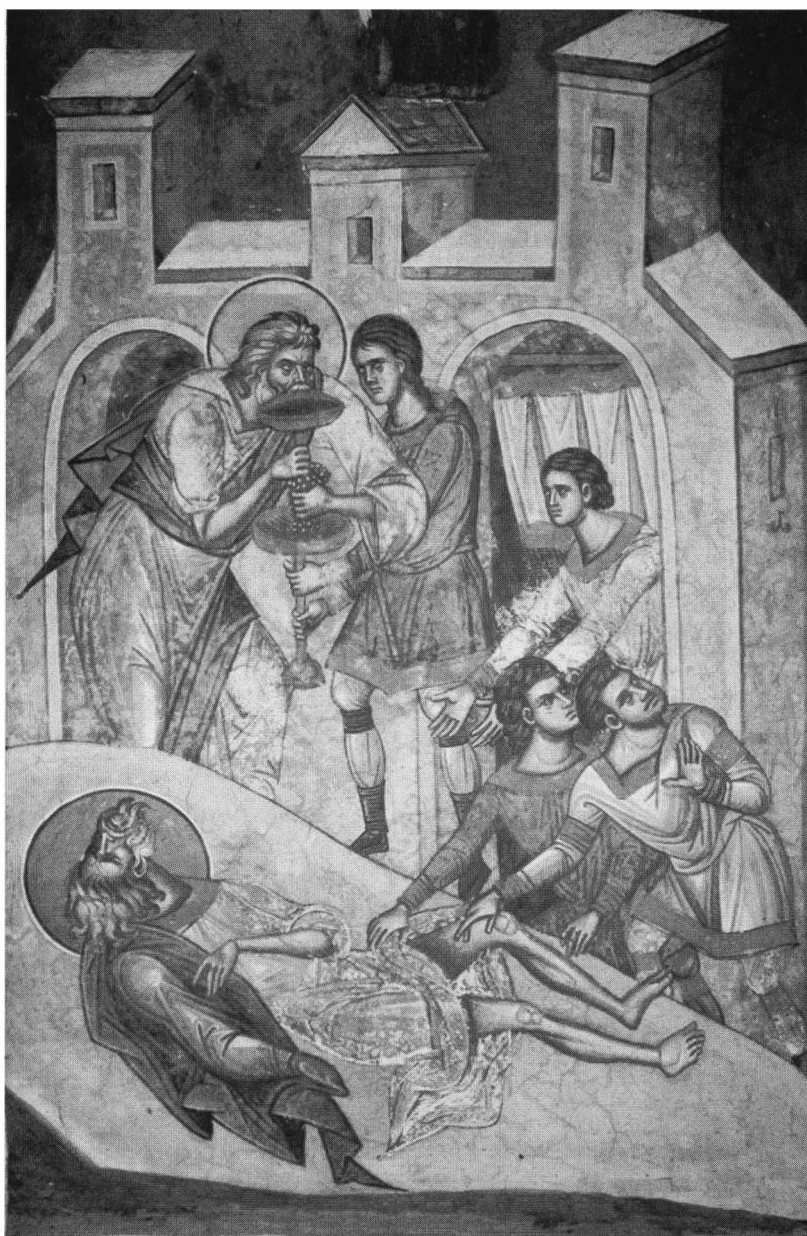
The sin of Ham was the sin of being totally shameless. His brothers, on the contrary, came in with respect, covered up their father, and thus covered up the whole thing before it could be spread about. Thus Ham, the second son, now became the *youngest*.

But why was Canaan cursed instead of Ham his father? St. John Chrysostom says it was because Ham once received God’s blessing,<sup>7\*</sup> and now the curse must be on his offspring, which hurts him, too.\*\* Moreover, Canaan probably also sinned. St. Ephraim suggests that it was actually Canaan, as a small boy, who went in and was the first to see Noah. He went out and told his father, so he himself was partly guilty.<sup>8</sup>

---

\* Cf. Genesis 9:1: “God blessed Noah and his sons.”—Ed.

\*\* St. John Chrysostom explains: “You know well, of course, how in many cases fathers have begged to endure punishment in place of their children, and how seeing their children bearing punishment proves a more grievous form of chastisement than being subject to it themselves” (*Homilies on Genesis* 29.6, FC 82, p. 213 [29.21]).—Ed.



Noah becoming drunk, and Shem and Japheth covering his nakedness.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

Now we will see the difference between the three sons of Noah.

9:26–27 *And he [Noah] said, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem, and Canaan shall be his bond servant. May God make room for Japheth, and let him dwell in the habitations of Shem, and let Canaan be his servant.*

Here Noah is making a prophecy, as all the Patriarchs did when they blessed their sons. He prophesies about these three sons from whom the whole population of the earth will come.

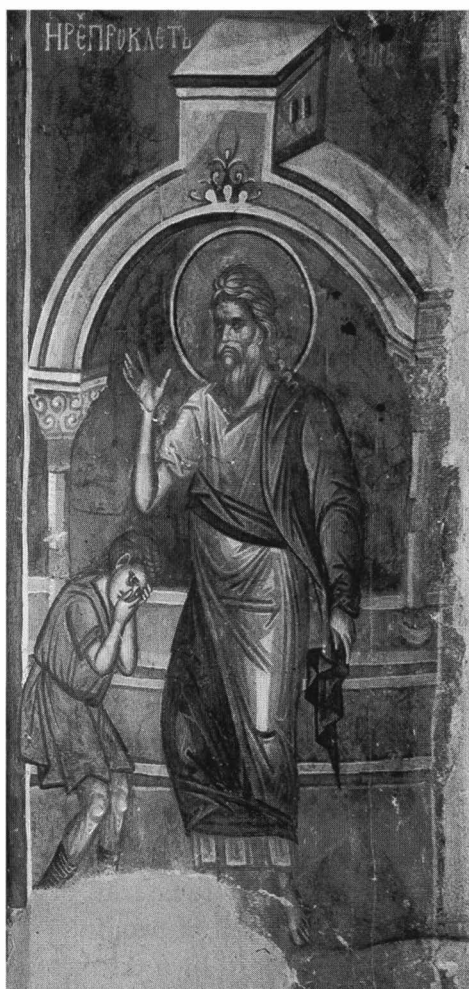
Shem is the blessed one, the ancestor of the Semitic tribes, especially the chosen people, the Jews. Japheth is the ancestor of Gentiles, who later accept the word of salvation which Christ revealed first of all to the Jews; they come to dwell in salvation (“the habitations of Shem”) after the coming of Christ and the teaching of the Apostles.<sup>9</sup>

Canaan and the offspring of Ham are to be the bond servants—but they are also given salvation.\* The Holy Fathers make a special point that, no matter who your ancestors are, you can still be saved. For example, in Genesis chapter 10 one of Ham’s descendants founded Nineveh, which pleased God by its repentance in the times of the Prophet Jonah. St. John Chrysostom says of this: “Notice how the impiety of one’s ancestors does not entirely put our nature into disorder.”<sup>10</sup> It does not make any difference if one’s ancestor is cursed. Any individual or people can repent and seek God’s grace, especially after

---

\* St. Ephraim says that Noah’s prophecy regarding the descendants of Canaan was fulfilled in the time of Joshua the son of Nun: “And God dwelt in the tent of Abraham, the descendant of Shem, and Canaan became their slave when, in the days of Joshua the son of Nun, the Israelites destroyed the dwelling-places of Canaan and pressed their leaders into bondage (cf. Josh. 17:13)” (*Commentary on Genesis* 7.4.1, FC 91, p. 146).

Blessed Theodoret offers the same interpretation: “Since Israel was destined to descend from Shem and take possession of Palestine, which the descendants of Canaan had long occupied, he [Noah] presented the prophecy as a curse so as both to foretell the future and discourage subsequent generations from sinning against their parents” (*Questions on Genesis* 58, LEC 1, p. 121). Both Blessed Theodoret (ibid.) and St. John Chrysostom (*Homilies on the Gospel of St. Matthew* 8.5) state that Noah’s prophecy about the servitude of Canaan was fulfilled in the Gibeonites—Gibeon being a Canaanite city north of Jerusalem that was conquered by Joshua (Josh. 9:3–27).—ED.



Noah cursing Canaan the son of Ham (left), and blessing Shem and Japheth (right).  
*Frescos from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

the coming of Christ. But even before Christ, the Ninevites, even though they were offspring of Canaan who was cursed, still came to repentance.

In the Gospel we read of the Canaanite woman who obtained grace; her daughter was healed through her faith. Christ said to her, "O woman, great is thy faith: be it done unto thee even as thou wilt" (Matt. 15:28). She was a direct offspring of Canaan, who was cursed. This shows that salvation is given to everyone.

*9:28–29 And Noah lived after the Flood three hundred and fifty years. And all the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years, and he died.*

Noah, the second progenitor of the human race, lived slightly longer than Adam.

## *2. The Generations of Noah*

*10:1–4 Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham, Japheth; and sons were born to them after the Flood. The sons of Japheth: Gomer, and Magog, and Madoi, and Jovan, and Elishah, and Thobel, and Mosoch, and Thiras. And the sons of Gomer: Aschanaz, and Riphath, and Thorgama. And the sons of Jovan: Elishah, and Tarshish, Cetians, Rhodians.\**

The tenth chapter goes into the generations of the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham and Japheth. Seventy-two offspring of the three sons of Noah are named, from whom come the different kinds of people.\*\* "Each of these nations," says St. Ephraim, "dwelt in its own distinct place, with its own people, and spoke its own tongue."<sup>11</sup> Some of these

---

\* We have replaced some of the names in this Septuagint translation with variant spellings from the King James Version, in those cases where the latter are more familiar to English readers.—ED.

\*\* Dr. William F. Albright, a leading twentieth-century authority on the archeology of the Near East, has said concerning the Table of Nations in the tenth chapter of Genesis: "It stands absolutely alone in ancient literature, without a remote parallel, even among the Greeks, where we find the closest approach to a distribution of peoples in genealogical framework" ("Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands," article appended to Robert Young's *Analytical Concordance to the Bible*, p. 25).—ED.



Shem.  
*Russian icon of the sixteenth century.*



kinds of people we can now identify fairly well; others are more difficult to identify.\*

**10:5** *From these were the islands of the Gentiles divided in their land, each according to his tongue, in their tribes and in their nations.*

This is a reference to what will occur after the fall of the Tower of Babel. Out of all the seventy-two basic types of people, there will be a dispersion of humanity throughout all the earth.

“Islands of the Gentiles” refers not necessarily to literal islands, but to the fact that the Gentiles formed separate peoples who were like islands of humanity.

**10:6–20** *And the sons of Ham: Cush, and Mizraim, Phud, and Canaan. And the sons of Cush: Saba, and Evila, and Sabatha, and Rhegma, and Sabathaca. And the sons of Rhegma: Saba, and Dadan. And Cush begot Nimrod: he began to be a giant upon the earth. He was a great hunter before the Lord God; therefore they say, As Nimrod the giant hunter before the Lord. And the beginning of his kingdom was Babylon, and Orech, and Archad, and Chalanne, in the land of Shinar. Out of that land came Ashur, and built Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Chalach. And Dase between Nineveh and Chalach: this is the great city. And Mizraim begot the Ludiim, and the Nephthalim, and the Enemetiim, and the Labiim, and the Patrosoniim, and the Chasmoniim (whence came forth Phylistiim) and the Gaphthoriim. And Canaan begot Sidon his firstborn, and the Hettite, and the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgashite, and the Evite, and the Arukite, and the Sinite, and the Aradian, and the Samarean, and the Amathite; and after this the tribes of the Canaanites*

---

\* One of the first attempts to assign known ethnicities to the names listed in Genesis chapter 10 was by the Roman-Jewish historian Flavius Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 1.6, written ca. A.D. 94). The first extant attempt by a Christian writer is that of St. Hippolytus of Rome (*Chronicle* 24–228, ca. 234); his version is similar to Josephus’ but also contains many differences. St. Epiphanius of Salamis (*Panarion* 39.8, ca. 375) and other later writers followed St. Hippolytus’ identifications. Blessed Jerome (*Hebrew Questions on Genesis* 10.2–29, ca. 390) rendered a listing that was closer to Josephus’, but still with some notable variations. St. Isidore of Seville (*Etymologies* 9.2, ca. 600) repeated most of the identifications made by Blessed Jerome.—ED.

## THE DISPERSION OF THE PEOPLES

*were dispersed. And the boundaries of the Canaanites were from Sidon till one comes to Gerara and Gaza, till one comes to Sodom and Gomorrah, Adama and Seboim, as far as Dasa. These were the sons of Ham in their tribes according to their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations.*

Here are named the offspring of Ham. Many of these are tribes the Hebrews later fought; but they include the Ninevites, who as we have said repented when the Prophet Jonah preached to them.

*10:21 And to Shem himself also were children born, the father of all the sons of Heber, the brother of Japheth the elder.*

Shem is the ancestor of Heber. Heber is where we get the name Hebrew.

*10:22–32 Sons of Shem, Elam, and Ashur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram, and Cainan. And sons of Aram, Uz, and Ul, and Gater, and Mosoch. And Arphaxad begot Cainan, and Cainan begot Sala. And Sala begot Heber. And to Heber were born two sons, the name of one, Peleg, because in his days the earth was divided, and the name of his brother Jektan. And Jektan begot Elmodad, and Saleth, and Sarmoth, and Jarach, and Odorrah, and Aibel, and Decla, and Eval, and Abimael, and Saba, and Uphir, and Evila, and Jobab, all these were the sons of Jektan. And their dwelling was from Masse, till one comes to Saphera, a mountain of the east. These were the sons of Shem in their tribes, according to their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations. These are the tribes of the sons of Noah, according to their generations, according to their nations: of them were the islands of the Gentiles scattered over the earth after the Flood.*

The islands of people shall now begin to lead their own individual lives.

Of the seventy-two different peoples named, fourteen are of Japheth, thirty-one are of Ham, and twenty-seven are of Shem.

### *3. The Tower of Babel*

*11:1–2 And all the earth was one lip, and there was one language to all. And it came to pass as they moved from the east, they found a plain in the land of Shinar, and they dwelt there.*

Evidently this was *before* all the descendants mentioned in chapter 10, when mankind was not yet so dispersed.\* The sons began to beget their offspring, but apparently mankind was still fairly concentrated in that area. They still had one language and were one in *mind*. Shinar is the plain of Babylon, of the Tigris and Euphrates.

11:3–4 *And a man said to his neighbor, Come, let us make bricks and bake them with fire. And the brick was to them for stone, and their mortar was bitumen. And they said, Come, let us build for ourselves a city and tower, whose top shall be to heaven, and let us make to ourselves a name, before we are scattered abroad upon the face of all the earth.*

They already knew the prophecy that man would be scattered over all the face of the earth. They made one more attempt to make a great name for themselves: a great tremendous project, which would prove that we are supreme beings. This is repeated throughout history—the empire of Alexander the Great, the Communist regime, Hitler’s Thousand-Year Reich, etc. The sin behind this is pride.

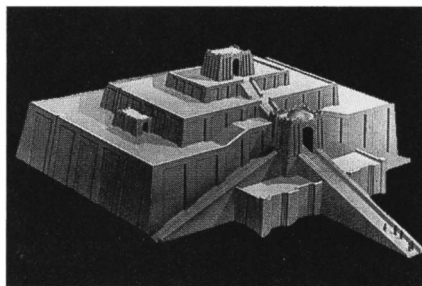
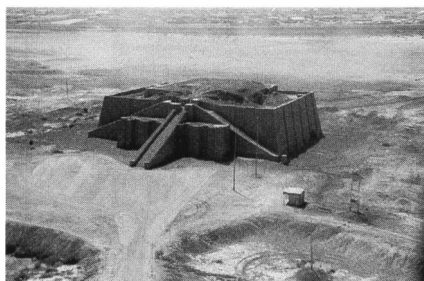
Such towers are known in Babylonian-Assyrian history, and some still survive. They are called ziggurats: temples with a shrine on top. These are a symbol that, as St. John Chrysostom says, man did not want to stay within the limits that God had given him.\*\* He wanted to make himself a god: self-deification. In our modern times, an image of this can be found in our skyscrapers. The idea is to build some-

---

\* As Blessed Augustine explains, when the Genesis narrative says that the descendants of Shem, Japheth and Ham had their own languages and “scattered over the earth” (Gen. 10:5, 20, 31–32), it is referring to the time after the dispersion from Babylon, whereas the subsequent section (Gen. 11:1–9) “goes back to tell how it came about that the one language common to all men was broken up into many tongues” (*Christian Instruction* 3.36.53, FC 2, pp. 163–64).—ED.

\*\* Commenting on Genesis 11:2, St. John Chrysostom writes: “Notice how the human race, instead of managing to keep to their own boundaries, always longs for more and reaches out for greater things. This is what the human race has lost in particular, not being prepared to recognize the limitations of their own condition, but always lusting after more and entertaining ambitions beyond their capacity” (*Homilies on Genesis* 30.2, FC 82, pp. 222–23 [30.5]).—ED.

## THE DISPERSION OF THE PEOPLES



The partially restored Ziggurat of Ur in present-day southern Iraq, one of the thirty-two ziggurats that have been found in the Mesopotamian area. At left: photograph taken in 2009. At right: an artist's reconstruction.

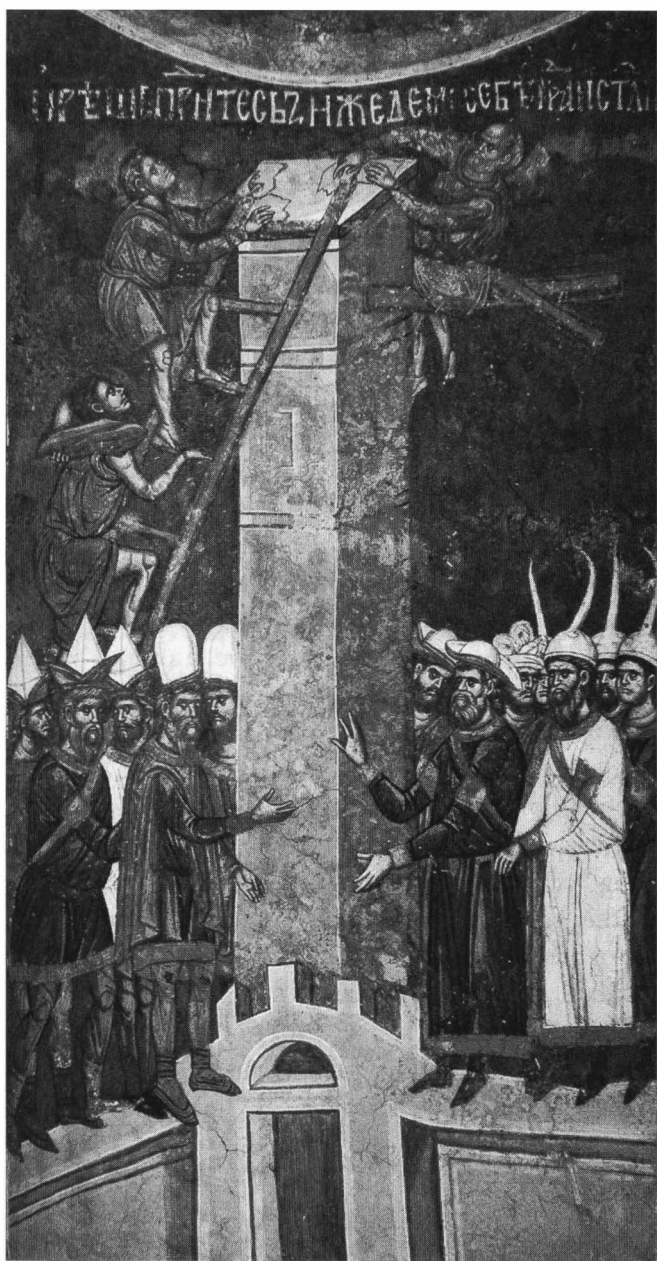
thing higher than anyone has ever built before. You can go to the top, and the climate is totally different from down below. It can be raining down below, and you can be on top above the clouds, in the sunshine.

In chapter 11 we see that, within five hundred years after the Flood, mankind had again become corrupt and proud. It says men were of one tongue, one voice. They all agreed on one thing: that they would become great.

It is like mankind today. There are a few exceptions—people who do not agree with what is going on—but for the most part, men are either agreeing with what is going on or else they are being dragged along with this great project to build Paradise on earth: the Communist society, or a comfortable reign of earthly values; but God is forgotten. Mankind is doing it again. And if man does that, what is God going to do? He promised that He will not destroy the earth like He did before; therefore, He will find various other ways to stop man: plagues, disasters, earthquakes, volcanoes. In this case, He confounds their tongues.

*11:5 And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the sons of men built.*

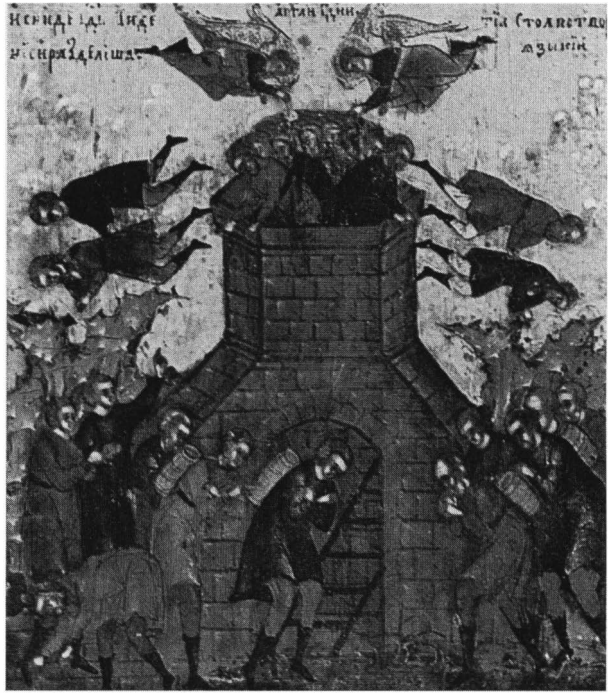
Of course, this does not mean that He did not “see” before; it



Building the Tower of Babel.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*

## THE DISPERSION OF THE PEOPLES

The Tower of Babel  
and the confusion of  
tongues.  
*Detail of a Russian icon  
of the seventeenth  
century.*



emphasizes that He was looking very carefully at what was going on. He does not chastise without knowing.\*

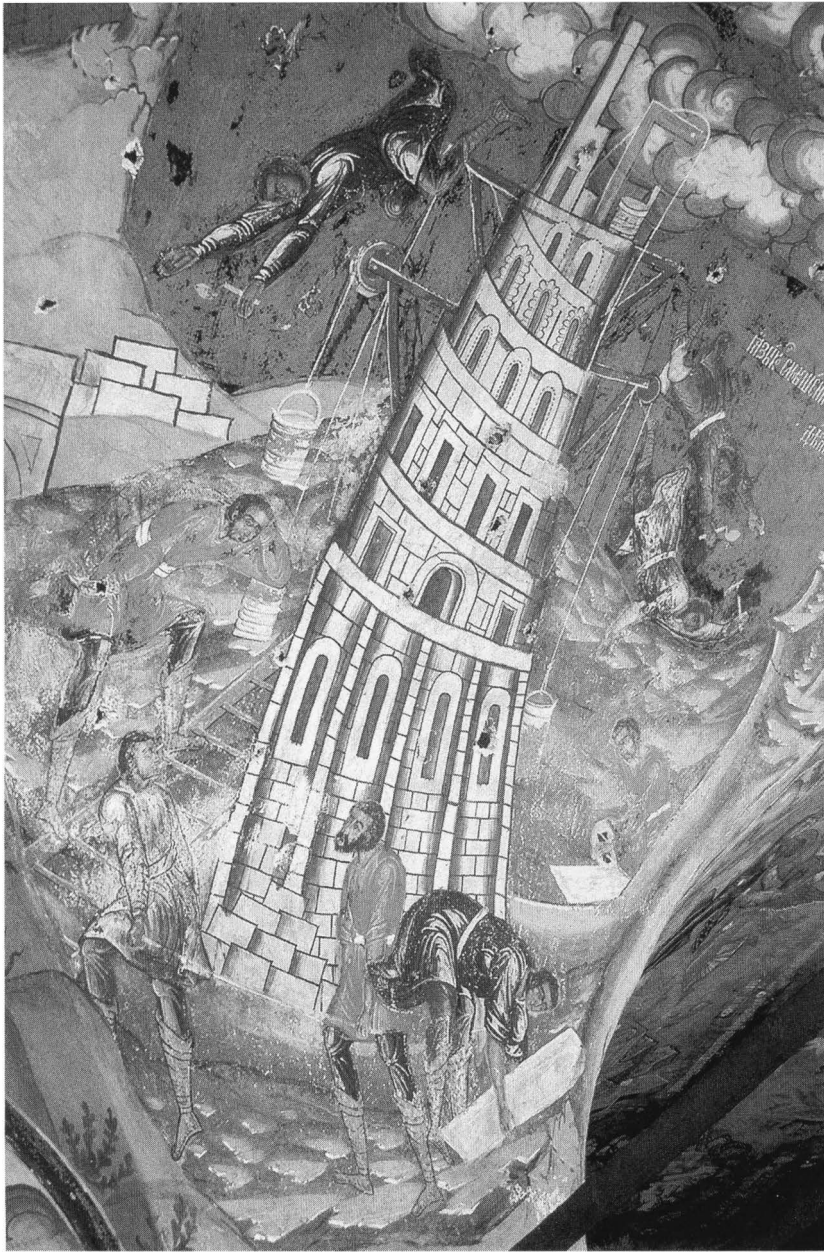
*11:6 And the Lord said, Behold, there is one race, and one lip of all, and they have begun to do this, and now nothing shall fail from them of all that they may have undertaken to do.*

In other words, they have continued to be proud, and have undertaken this tremendous project against God.

*11:7 Come, and having gone down let Us there confound their tongue, that they may not understand each the voice of his neighbor.*

---

\* St. John Chrysostom comments: “‘And the Lord came down,’ the text says—not for us to think in human fashion, but so that in this way we might be instructed never to condemn our brother idly nor convict him on hearsay” (*Homilies on Genesis* 30.3, FC 82, pp. 226–27 [30.10]).—ED.



The Tower of Babel and the confusion of tongues.  
*Russian fresco of the sixteenth century.*

When God says here, “Come,” to whom is He speaking? It is the same as in the beginning, when He created man, saying, “Let Us make man.” It is God talking to God in the Holy Trinity.

*11:8 And the Lord scattered them thence over the face of all the earth, and they left off building the city and the tower.*

St. John Chrysostom says about this:

If now, taking advantage of such oneness of ideas and language, men have fallen into such wildness, what might they not do that is worse with the passage of time? ... Nothing will be able to restrain their efforts; on the contrary, they will strive to fulfill all their intentions, if they do not immediately endure punishment for their brazen undertakings.<sup>12</sup>

That is why one expects *soon* this kind of thing to happen to the world today. Men are more and more inclined towards evil, and to tremendous projects of pride which leave God completely out.

*11:9 On this account, its name was called Confusion, because there the Lord confounded the languages of all the earth, and thence the Lord scattered them upon the face of all the earth.*

The name of the city was Babylon, which means “Confusion.”

This is the real beginning of the world as we know it: scattered over the face of the earth, each its own nation and language.

*11:10–26 And these are the generations of Shem: and Shem was an hundred years old when he begot Arphaxad, the second year after the Flood. And Shem lived, after he had begotten Arphaxad, five hundred years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Arphaxad lived an hundred and thirty-five years, and begot Cainan. And Arphaxad lived after he had begotten Cainan, four hundred years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Cainan lived an hundred and thirty years and begot Sala; and Cainan lived after he had begotten Sala, three hundred and thirty years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Sala lived an hundred and thirty years, and begot Heber. And Sala lived after he had*



*begotten Heber, three hundred and thirty years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Heber lived an hundred and thirty-four years, and begot Peleg. And Heber lived after he had begotten Peleg two hundred and seventy years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Peleg lived an hundred and thirty years, and begot Ragau. And Peleg lived after he had begotten Ragau, two hundred and nine years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Ragau lived an hundred thirty and two years, and begot Seruch. And Ragau lived after he had begotten Seruch, two hundred and seven years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Seruch lived an hundred and thirty years, and begot Nachor. And Seruch lived after he had begotten Nachor, two hundred years, and begot sons and daughters, and died. And Nachor lived an hundred and seventy-nine years, and begot Tharrha. And Nachor lived after he had begotten Tharrha, an hundred and twenty-five years, and begot sons and daughters, and he died. And Tharrha lived seventy years, and begot Abram, and Nachor, and Haran.*

These are the offspring of Shem, down to Abraham—the new chosen one, whose descendants were to be a great nation.



Patriarch Abraham.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the  
Cretan, Stavronikita Monastery,  
Mount Athos, 1545–1546.*

## CHAPTER TEN

### *Questions and Answers*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: This chapter has been compiled from tape-recorded question-and-answer sessions from Fr. Seraphim's entire course on Genesis, both the 1981 and the 1982 segments. Section titles have been added by the editor.*

#### *1. The Age of the Earth*

**S**TUDENT: According to Biblical chronology, the earth is about 7,500 years old. But according to the evolutionists, and even history as it is taught in high schools, the earth is billions of years old. How do you explain this?

**FR. SERAPHIM:** We have a few books on the subject which I will show you. There are a number of people in the last ten or twenty years who have begun to make a counterattack against people who are extremely sure about this theory. There is a group in San Diego called the Institute for Creation Research, and another up in Michigan called the Creation Research Society. They have come out with some quite scientific books, which go into this question: on what basis do people make their assumptions about these millions and billions of years? It turns out that there is a lot more hypothesis than fact in this theory.

There is a book by an evolutionist called *Growth of a Prehistoric Time Scale Based on Organic Evolution*,<sup>1</sup> in which the author [William B. N. Berry] admits that to interpret the millions and billions of years, it has to be assumed that the fossilized creatures in the lower levels of rocks are the evolutionary ancestors of those in the higher levels. But it

often happens that these layers are in the wrong order according to evolutionary theory: the layers with more primitive organisms are on top.

Therefore, it's like in the times of Copernicus. Then there was the Ptolemaic interpretation of the movement of the heavenly bodies, that the sun, planets and stars all go around the earth. The question arose: why don't the planets correspond to the stars? Some of the ancients said it is because they are on different spheres. That is, the stars are further away and the planets are closer; therefore, the planets appear to go faster. But then why do the planets sometimes go forward, and sometimes backwards? In order to explain how they moved, the Ptolemaic astronomers had to say that they go around each other somehow in a very complex movement of cycles and epicycles as they swing around the earth. Some are going backwards, others are performing figure eights. It became so complex to follow the movements of these planets according to this Ptolemaic model that Copernicus got the idea that maybe they were all wrong—maybe the earth and the planets were going around the sun. He began making calculations on the basis of this idea, and his theory was much simpler. Finally we came to accept that theory as the true one.

Like the Ptolemaic astronomers, evolutionists who study strata containing fossils often find that they are upside down, in the wrong order, or too close together according to evolutionary ideas. They call these “disconformities,” “paraconformities” or “pseudoconformities.”\* They have to make allowances for the fact that everything is in the wrong order. If you ask them how they know what is the right order, they will admit that the only reason they know the right order is that they know evolution is true.\*\* You see there is something funny about it. They are supposed to prove the theory, and to prove the theory they

---

\* See, for example, Ariel A. Roth, “‘Flat Gaps’ in Sedimentary Rock Layers Challenge Long Geologic Ages,” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 23, no. 2 (2009).—ED.

\*\* The role of evolutionary theory in interpreting strata is well established in uniformitarian geology. In the words of German paleontologist Otto Schindewolf: “The only chronometric scale applicable in geologic history for the stratigraphic classification of rocks and for dating geologic events exactly is furnished by the fossils. Owing to the irreversibility of evolution, they offer an unambiguous time scale for

have to start with the theory. Therefore it's not as factual as it's presented.

The scientific creationists, as they call themselves, have some interesting books about evidences of how old the earth is. It just depends on what kind of evidence you're using. It's a very hypothetical question. It's not nearly as definite as the book of Genesis.

## 2. Carbon-14 Dating

STUDENT: What about the carbon-14 dating system?

FR. SERAPHIM: Carbon dating is only used on organic substances. The half-life of carbon-14 is 5,700 years, so obviously this method can't go back too far. Some people think you can go back 20,000 years or more with it, but this involves so much guesswork that it cannot be accurate. Even people who defend it say that it is fairly reliable back to about 3,000 years ago, but if it goes back further than that it becomes more and more unreliable. The system is based on a whole set of assumptions.\*

According to the scientists, the most reliable dating system is not radiocarbon, but tree-ring dating [dendrochronology]. They were recently able to test a whole series of things, comparing radiocarbon dates with tree-ring dates, and they found out that the radiocarbon dating method was off more than they thought. The tree-ring counts have tended to give greater ages by several centuries than radiocarbon ages.

Other radiometric dating methods are used to get older ages of

---

relative age determinations and for worldwide correlation of rocks" ("Comments on Some Stratigraphic Terms," *American Journal of Science*, vol. 255 [June 1957], p. 394). More recently, this principle has been reiterated in the North American Stratigraphic Code: "Biological remains contained in, or forming, strata are uniquely important in stratigraphic practice. First, they provide the means of defining and recognizing material units based on fossil content.... Second, the irreversibility of organic evolution makes it possible to partition enclosing strata temporally" (North American Commission on Stratigraphic Nomenclature, "North American Stratigraphic Code," *AAPG Bulletin*, vol. 89, no. 11 [Nov. 2005], pp. 1557–58).

For critical analysis by Russian and American geologists of modern stratigraphy's reliance on evolutionary theory, see pp. 523n, 530n, 866–68, 878–80 below.—ED.

\* On carbon-14 dating, see also pp. 530–31, 531nn, 862, 894 below.—ED.

millions and billions of years: the potassium-argon method, etc. There are all kinds of assumptions involved in these methods, also; you have to accept these assumptions before the systems “work.” All of them go on the assumption that there was no contamination over the centuries between one element and the other, and that there was none of the end elements [“daughter” components] present at the beginning. The evolutionists don’t know that; they assume it was all uniformitarian, from zero to what we know now. If that’s true and the rate has been uniform, then we can calculate the age of the fossils somewhat accurately; but if it’s not true, the whole system could be very far off. And there have been notorious mistakes. People have done radiometric tests on rock which has just formed recently, and they have come up with ages of many millions of years.\*

### 3. *Geological Strata*

STUDENT: What about the different strata, like in the Grand Canyon, which are assumed to be deposited at a certain rate?

FR. SERAPHIM: There is a vast scientific question regarding these strata. The strata don’t have little signs that say, “I’m five million years old; I’m ten million years old.” There’s an excellent book on this subject, *The Genesis Flood*, by Henry Morris,<sup>2</sup> in which he interprets these strata in terms of a single universal catastrophe, that is, Noah’s Flood. It is presented scientifically. You can examine it and see whether it makes sense or not.\*\*

I think more people should look at both of these sides of the picture and see which model makes more sense. There are many respects in which the evolutionary model about these strata has holes in it; in fact, the evolutionists themselves will probably tell you that. The question is: does the other model make more sense?

When it comes to something like these strata, of course, it is a scientific question. The deposition of the strata is obviously a scientific

---

\* See pp. 529–32, 531–32nn, 862–71 below.—ED.

\*\* The Grand Canyon is discussed specifically in *The Genesis Flood* on pp. 151–52. A more extensive and up-to-date treatment can be found in *Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe* (1994), edited by geologist Steven A. Austin.—ED.

process that occurred *in time*.<sup>\*</sup> Therefore, it is different from the Six Days of Creation—it is a question of what happened *after* the Six Days. It is open to one's own scientific approach.

#### 4. *A Matter of Models*

FR. SERAPHIM: Scientists have what are called *models*. Yesterday we discussed the Ptolemaic model—that the earth is the center of the universe, and that all the stars and planets go around the earth. Since, according to what one can observe, the planets move around the earth at different speeds than the stars, the Ptolemaic astronomers had to have theories about how they went back and forth and formed figure eights, etc. Like right now you can see that, for the last six months or so, Saturn and Jupiter have been in the sky together. If you were observing, you could see that at first one went forward, then they both went backward, then Saturn became fainter and Jupiter became

---

<sup>\*</sup> Some of the most important research in this area has been done by French geologist Guy Berthault, first at the Institut de Mécanique des Fluides at Marseilles and later at the hydraulics laboratory of Colorado State University's Engineering Research Center. "Since 1985," writes Richard Milton, "Berthault has carried out a series of laboratory experiments involving pouring sediments into large tanks of moving water to study the internal structure of the strata, and how lamination takes place.... What Berthault found was that ... the sediments settled on the bottom more or less immediately, but the fine particles were separated from larger particles by current flow, giving the appearance of layers.... The results were published by the French Academy of Sciences in 1986 and 1988 and were presented to the National Congress of Sedimentologists at Brest in 1991.... The laboratory work has not been carried out in isolation but has been supplemented by field observations from natural disasters such as the Colorado 'Bijou Creek' flood of 1965, the formation of sediments following the Mount St. Helens eruption in 1980, and ocean drilling by the Glomar Challenger survey vessel in 1975.... According to Berthault, 'These experiments contradict the idea of the slow buildup of one layer followed by another. The time scale is reduced from hundreds of millions of years to one or more cataclysms producing almost instantaneous laminae' [Berthault, "Experiments on Lamination of Sediments," *Comptes-Rendus Académie des Sciences, Paris, Série II*, 303 (Dec. 3, 1986), pp. 1569–74; "Sedimentation of a Heterogranular Mixture," *ibid.*, Série II, 306 (Feb. 16, 1988), pp. 717–24]" (Milton, *Shattering the Myths of Darwinism*, pp. 77–78).—Ed.

brighter. According to the Copernican model, you can explain that this is because they are in different phases in their orbits as they go around the sun. From our point of view they seem to get closer together, when actually they are simply going around the sun. Another example is Venus. Right now Venus has become once more an evening star low on the horizon. A few months ago, it was a morning star—it was there already in the morning before the sun rose.

The Ptolemaic model was found to be lacking because it did not explain the facts as well as the Copernican model. Copernicus said that if we interpret the earth and the other planets as going around the sun, then all these motions make sense; that is, they are mathematically very simple to explain. Eventually that was accepted. Now, by calculating according to the Copernican model, we can send rocket ships quite close to Saturn and not miss; in fact, it is astonishingly accurate. So obviously it seems to be true that all the planets do indeed go around the sun, even though, according to our observation, the sun goes around the earth.

Therefore, it is very important what kind of models you have of things. In this course, we are going to study the Patristic model of the Six Days of Creation.

### *5. The Origin of the Heavenly Bodies (Patristic Cosmogony)*

FR. SERAPHIM: The Genesis account of the Fourth Day of Creation is very difficult to fit into the usual ideas of the evolution of the universe, because the Scriptures and the Holy Fathers state quite certainly that the sun was created on that Day, *after* the earth and the plants and the trees were already there. Furthermore, the Fathers say that the sun, the moon and the stars (and all the black holes and whatever is out there) were all *created* on the Fourth Day in one instant. God waved His hand and the whole thing came into being, trillions of miles away. Of course, God is bigger than the universe, so why wouldn't He be able to do that? He has no problem.

This gives you a totally different outlook on the world. It is a whole *cosmogony*—the explanation of the beginning of things.

The modern evolutionary cosmogony, popularized by people like



Carl Sagan, holds that there was a point which had a “big bang,” and then everything developed from that without any God.\* If you believe in that, it is natural to believe that the bigger body, the sun, came first, and that it somehow shot off the earth. There are all kinds of different theories about how it did that. Some think the sun was formed from a gas and dust cloud, and that its heat drove out the gas, leaving only the dust, which condensed and cooled down, forming the planets. Others think that the sun almost collided with a passing star, causing gasses to be torn off the solar surface, and that these gasses later formed into planets. These different theories are all speculation, because no one was around at that time, and those things are not happening now. They are perhaps in accordance with what we think *should* be true, because it seems the bigger bodies should be antecedent to the smaller bodies. But according to Genesis and the Holy Fathers, the earth—this small little thing, this speck in the universe—was first, and the tremendous sun came after it.

Nowadays atheist philosophers like to say that the relative size of the earth proves man is but a speck lost in the universe. They say, “The earth is so small, the universe is so big—so obviously the universe is more important than man, and God did not make everything for man.” But if you think in terms of what the Fathers say—that the sun was made after the earth had already been there—then it is clear that everything *was* made for man.

---

\* The man acknowledged as “the father of the big bang” cosmogony was Abbé Georges Lemaître (1894–1966), a Belgian Jesuit priest and physicist. One day in 1931, while reading an article on the idea of a slow and gradual “heat death” of the universe, Lemaître came up with the idea that the universe originally exploded and then evolved out of a “primeval atom.” His “primeval atom” is the cosmogonic equivalent of Darwinism’s “primeval soup,” out of which life is supposed to have emerged and evolved. “The idea of evolution,” wrote Lemaître, “has played an important role in the development of astrophysics.... The evolution of the world can be compared to a display of fireworks that has just ended” (Lemaître, *The Primeval Atom*, pp. 87, 78). Lemaître’s evolutionary cosmogony was quickly embraced by his contemporary and fellow Jesuit Teilhard de Chardin (see Michael Heller, *Creative Tension: Essays on Science and Religion*, pp. 59–60).

On the big bang theory, see also pp. 901–5 below.—ED.

## QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

STUDENT: In our galaxy there are so many other suns. Do the Holy Fathers say anything about those suns?

FR. SERAPHIM: No, because they knew less about the composition of the universe than we know now. And there is simply no practical reason to speak much about them, except to say that they are there and God created them. The only place we know man lives is right here.

STUDENT: Is there any conflict at all between the Orthodox understanding of the creation of the world and the fact that there is more than one sun?

FR. SERAPHIM: No, because there's only one sun for us.

STUDENT: The other suns are stars.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. For us they aren't suns. The sun is a particular thing which is the center of our life, which gives us light and warmth, around which we grow, and without which we can't live. The other stars aren't central to us like that. If there were other suns with other earths, it would make things more complicated. We have no information that such a thing is true.

The Scriptures and the Fathers always look upon things as seen from the earth. You can't place yourself in some hypothetical place, in some other galaxy, and look back on earth.\* That's a totally abstract way of looking at things, since we aren't there but right here. We're told what we need to save our souls, and we're not told a single thing about any of these other suns, planets, etc. If it were useful for us to know that, God would have told us.

In fact, it is a very interesting thing: from all the space probes to other planets so far, it looks as though there have been deliberate indications to show to us that the earth is the place where life is. Other places are dead bodies.\*\*

STUDENT: What about speculation concerning beings from other planets?

FR. SERAPHIM: People who look for beings on other planets get

---

\* As do science-fiction writers. For Fr. Seraphim's discussion of science fiction, see his book *Orthodoxy and the Religion of the Future*, 5th ed., pp. 72–77.—ED.

\*\* See pp. 901–2, 903n below for a list of resources on the sun, the moon, the planets, and other heavenly bodies as viewed according to the creation model.—ED.

bound up with a whole occult philosophy of life: that there are higher beings who are coming to rescue us and help us out; we just bow down to them and they will give us all the powers we need. Actually, all these myths about beings on other planets correspond to what we know about demons and how they operate. When you start speculating about them and get involved with ideas about higher races of extraterrestrials—it all comes down to demons. Besides angels, the only kind of intelligent beings we know of is demons.\*

### 6. *Creation Scientists*

FR. SERAPHIM: There is a lot of literature nowadays concerning the question of creation and evolution. It has become quite a vital question especially in the last ten or twenty years.

Recently there was a very one-sided article in *Time* magazine which made fun of people who are against evolution; it made them look like cuckoos—imbeciles who were going back to the time before the Scopes Monkey Trial, and so forth.<sup>3</sup> But if you read the literature of some of these creationist groups, it's very interesting. There is one group in San Diego called the Institute for Creation Research which puts out some very interesting books. One is called *Creation: Facts of Life*,<sup>4\*\*</sup> which goes into some of the scientific questions; another one is about fossils: *Evolution: The Fossils Say No!*<sup>5</sup> There is an excellent book called *Scientific Creationism*,<sup>6</sup> which is meant as a textbook for high schools. There is a good, sober book on dinosaurs which is not heavy-handed at all. It doesn't mention anything about evolution, but just gives the story of dinosaurs.\*\*\* It's for people who want to read without having all kinds of scientific hypotheses forced upon them.

This particular group is very good because they do not try to push the Bible; they have books (like *Scientific Creationism*) that present the

---

\* For a detailed discussion of UFOs by Fr. Seraphim, see *Orthodoxy and the Religion of the Future*, chap. 6.—ED.

\*\* On the updated edition of this book (2006), see p. 891 below.—ED.

\*\*\* For a list of materials on dinosaurs from a creationist perspective, see pp. 895–900, 898nn below.—ED.

material purely from the scientific point of view. And they present it not simply as anti-evolutionists. Instead, they present two models. Just like what we were saying about the Copernican model versus the Ptolemaic model, they present the creationist model versus the evolutionist model, and then they ask the question: which model better explains facts? The book *Scientific Creationism* gives you a whole series of facts, then gives you the explanation according to the creationist model and according to the evolutionist model. They think that the creationist model makes more sense because the evolutionists have to make all kinds of “cycles” and “epicycles” to explain all kinds of embarrassing things.\*

In 1960 the famous movie *Inherit the Wind*, about the Scopes Trial of 1925, greatly influenced how the general public regarded the creation/evolution debate. The movie depicted the famous atheist lawyer Clarence Darrow as a great hero because he stood for science, progress, the future of mankind, and so forth. It wasn't quite so simple as all that.\*\* But after the movie came out, many people who were dubious about evolution got rather scared because they didn't want to be accused of being anti-progress and anti-science.

Nevertheless, during the last twenty years there have been some very interesting scientific treatises written on the subject, bringing up the many “proofs” of evolution which are questionable. These proofs are often presented in high school textbooks as truth and fact, but when you look closely you find that they aren't facts. For example, they

---

\* In the years since Fr. Seraphim gave this appraisal of creation science, the number of scientists making contributions in this field has increased considerably, and new creation science organizations have been established. See p. 73n above and pp. 680–82, 680n, 681n, 682n, 888 below.—ED.

\*\* In fact, the movie (based on the play by Jerome Lawrence and Robert Edwin Lee) was a highly fictionalized account of the trial and the events surrounding it. In real life, the Scopes Trial was not a serious criminal prosecution but a mock trial used as a test case by the A.C.L.U. John T. Scopes was a volunteer defendant who was unsure if he had ever taught evolution, and who was never in danger of going to jail. See Phillip E. Johnson, *Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds*, pp. 24–32, and the video *Inherently Wind: A Hollywood History of the Scopes Trial*, with Dr. David Menton.—ED.

bring up the so-called fact that a human embryo recapitulates its evolutionary ancestry, that there are gill slits on the throat and so forth. However, if you read any evolutionary textbook now on embryology, it will say this is a myth. The “gill-slits” have nothing to do with evolution or recapitulation; that’s simply the way the embryo develops. In fact, the development of the brain, the nerves, the heart, etc., inside the embryo totally contradicts the way it should be if it is only recapitulating evolutionary ancestry.

There are a number of points about evolutionism which, even if you don’t want to believe right away in one or the other view, make you stop and question and think a little more about the evidence for and against. It is the same with radiometric dating systems and the evolutionary/uniformitarian interpretation of geological strata.

The Institute puts out a monthly newsletter called *Acts & Facts* which describes what they’re doing, and in every issue they have a little filler which deals with some aspect of evolution or creation. They have been having a great number of debates during the last five years at universities, which have been very well attended; sometimes thousands of students come. The creation scientists are very well prepared—they have read all the latest literature—while the evolutionist scientists often are so confident that they don’t particularly keep up with the latest events. Therefore, in the last issue of the magazine *Science*, which is very evolutionist, one article says that it has become so bad now—the evolutionist scientists are so ill-prepared and are teaching their students so poorly—that all you have to do is have a creationist scientist with three or four facts from the last five years, and he will spin circles around the evolutionists. So the evolutionists have been waking up and saying that they have been neglecting their duty to raise up their offspring in the right spirit. They are trying to educate them better now to get back to the original principles of evolution.

### *7. Various Evolutionary Ideas*

FR. SERAPHIM: There is so much interpretation involved in evolutionary theory that if you ask evolutionists to explain how evolution occurs, they cannot agree on an answer. They used to say it happens by

natural selection coupled with mutation: small changes which, after a certain number of generations, finally result in a new kind of creature. But it so happens that mutations are so universally harmful that you can't explain any kind of upward progress by mutations. Right now there's a big debate going on over whether to throw out Darwinian gradualism altogether and have some other theory. The latest idea they have gone back to—an idea devised forty years ago—is called the "hopeful monster" theory. The prominent geneticist Richard Goldschmidt [of the University of California at Berkeley] came up with this idea because he saw that the accumulation of natural selection and mutation could not produce complex structures.\* You cannot explain, for example, the eye by a series of gradual changes, because either you have an eye or you don't have an eye. The organism that suddenly gets a retina or some other part of an eye will have no use for it. It has to mate with a creature with the same characteristic, and then that characteristic must be preserved until it develops into a higher form and finally the whole eye develops. This simply can't happen; it doesn't make any sense. You have to have the eye *all of a sudden* come into existence.\*\* Therefore, Goldschmidt proposed that evolution occurs in jumps—large-scale mutations resulting in a "hopeful monster" that is able to survive and reproduce.

Goldschmidt invoked this theory to explain the origin of birds. A bird wing is a tremendous thing. If a reptile simply has a bone sticking out of its back, it is not very well adapted to survive. It must have two whole wings which work, and there must be a female and male with

---

\* This theory was rejected by Darwinists when Goldschmidt first propounded it in 1940, but in 1977 it was rehabilitated in qualified form by paleontologist and evolutionary biologist Stephen Jay Gould of Harvard University in his article "The Return of Hopeful Monsters" (*Natural History*, vol. 86, no. 6 [June–July, 1977], pp. 22–30; reprinted in Gould, *The Panda's Thumb*, pp. 186–93).—ED.

\*\* In his book *The Blind Watchmaker* (1985), neo-Darwinian apologist Richard Dawkins has tried to explain the evolution of an eye. Dawkins' arguments have been refuted on the evidence of biochemistry by Michael Behe in his seminal book *Darwin's Black Box* (1996), pp. 15–22, 36–39. As Phillip E. Johnson comments, "To move from Dawkins to Behe is like moving from the children's library to the laboratory" (Johnson, *Objections Sustained*, p. 54).—ED.

the same wings in order to reproduce them. Therefore, the “hopeful monster” idea proposed that a reptile laid an egg and out hatched a bird!\* People now are seriously returning to this idea and trying to find a balance between it and Darwinism, because they realize that small changes cannot produce these tremendously complex structures.\*\*

These ideas are for scientists to discuss, but it’s interesting for us to be aware of what they are discussing.

### 8. *The Limits of Biological Change*

FR. SERAPHIM: Whatever species is still around today comes down in an unbroken link from the same *kind* of creature in the past. There are many species that are no longer around; but until they became extinct they were the same kind of thing that they were from the beginning.

You can see great numbers of changes within each kind of creature. For example, the dachshund, the German shepherd, and so on, all come from the same kind, but they’re all dogs, and they can mate and reproduce. So too with the “races” of men: although they look quite different, they are all of the same kind.

Those who call themselves creationists do not say that there are no changes. There are lots of changes in nature, but they are all within certain limits. That’s what the whole debate over evolution and creation is all about: whether the limits are strictly defined according to “kinds”—which might not be quite the same as “species”—or whether everything comes from an original glob of organic matter which developed into all the different kinds of things. Everything we know now about the genetic code seems to be against the latter idea. An organism

---

\* Goldschmidt cited with approval this reptile-to-bird scenario as first suggested in the mid-1930s by the influential paleontologist Otto Schindewolf.—ED.

\*\* Another reason why Stephen Jay Gould wanted to rehabilitate the “hopeful monster” theory was to account for the lack of transitional forms in the fossil record. The revision of Goldschmidt’s theory proposed by Gould and fellow paleontologist Niles Eldredge—“punctuated equilibrium”—continues to be debated by evolutionists. See Johnson, *Darwin on Trial*, pp. 32–44; Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, pp. 192–95; as well as pp. 53, 53n, 96–97 above.—ED.

cannot “evolve” into something that is not in agreement with its genetic code.\* Much of the debate between evolutionists now centers on *how* this could be possible. We have not found out how.\*\*

### 9. “Human Evolution”

STUDENT: What do you think of the fossil men that have been discovered?

FR. SERAPHIM: Many theories have been coming out in recent years. The Leakeys in Africa have been making all kinds of discoveries each year. Of course, each person who is making discoveries wants his “man” to be the ancestor of all mankind; so he wants to overthrow all the previous ideas, come up with a new one, and claim he has found the “missing link.” So we always take with a grain of salt what these people say.

In 1959 Louis and Mary Leakey discovered a skull of an extinct ape, *Australopithecus* (“Southern Ape”), which was generally supposed to be the ape ancestor of all the fossil men—of *Homo erectus*, etc. The Leakeys later announced that they found *Homo erectus* fossils in the same bed as those of *Australopithecus*. This threw the whole scenario of human evolution back, because an evolutionary ancestor cannot be in the same bed as its descendant.\*\*\*

Of course, these are all guesses. There are so many holes and diffi-

\* I.e., that is outside the range of variation specified by the DNA for that particular organism.—ED.

\*\* See appendix 3, “Biological Evidence and the Neo-Darwinian Paradigm,” below, especially pp. 843–50, 854–57.—ED.

\*\*\* Based on fossil finds by other researchers, the status of *Australopithecus* as an extinct ape had been established as early as 1954 through the comparative anatomy studies of zoologist Solly Zuckerman; see p. 837 below for more recent analysis. On the truly human status of *Homo erectus*, see pp. 470n, 837–38 below.

In the same bed that the Leakeys found *Australopithecus* and *Homo erectus*—Bed II of Olduvai Gorge, Tanzania—they found fossils that they placed in the taxon *Homo habilis* (M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, p. 272; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Anthropology*, p. 221). This taxon has been a source of controversy among paleoanthropologists, some of whom regard it as invalid. Evolutionist Ian Tattersall has gone so far as to call it “a wastebasket taxon, little more than a convenient recipient for a motley assortment of hominid fossils from the latest Pliocene and earliest Pleistocene” (Tattersall, “The Many Faces of *Homo habilis*,” p. 34). In any event,



culties in the various theories, and there is so much that each evolutionist tries to push through his or her own claims.

There are even outright hoaxes. When I studied zoology in college in the 1950s, one of the proofs of the evolution of man was the “Piltdown Man.” From the 1890s onwards there had been a concerted search to find the missing link, which was expected to be half ape and half man. So in 1911 a very clever man in England named Charles Dawson took a human skull, combined it with the jawbone of an ape, and filed down the ape teeth. A year later Teilhard de Chardin discovered the missing canine tooth. With its very primitive jaw and very advanced skull, this “Piltdown Man” was taken to be an evolutionary ancestor of man. Some scientists did question it and had big discussions, but the vast majority accepted it.\* Finally in the 1950s, some scientists tested it by means of the carbon-14 method of dating, which gives fairly accurate results back to 2,000–3,000 years. They found that one part was more ancient, one part was more modern, and so it was obviously two different creatures.\*\* Therefore the whole thing was discredited.

STUDENT: What about the skulls they have found of Neanderthal Man?

---

many evolutionists have abandoned *Homo habilis* as an ancestor of modern humans, since according to the evolutionary chronology *Homo habilis* lived side-by-side with *Homo erectus* in the same lake basin for about a half-million years (F. Spoor, M. G. Leakey, et al., “Implications of New Early *Homo* Fossils from Ileret, East of Lake Turkana, Kenya,” *Nature*, vol. 448 [Aug. 9, 2007], pp. 688–91).

Interestingly, in reporting that fossils of *Australopithecus*, *Homo habilis*, and *Homo erectus* had been found in the same bed, Louis Leakey reported that at the bottom of a lower bed—Bed I of the Olduvai Gorge—he had found the remains of a circular stone structure (M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, p. 24; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Anthropology*, p. 221). The deliberate manufacture of such structures can only be attributed to true humans. Today, such shelters are constructed by the Okambambi tribesmen in southwest Africa and the Turkana tribesmen in Kenya.—ED.

\* More than five hundred doctoral dissertations were written on Piltdown Man.—ED.

\*\* In 1982, the year of Fr. Seraphim’s repose, the jawbone was conclusively found to be that of a female orangutan. (On Piltdown Man, see also pp. 469, 577, 577nn below.)—ED.

FR. SERAPHIM: The Neanderthal Man is now accepted as *Homo sapiens*: same species as man, different variety—no more different from man than Englishmen are different from the Chinese.\*

Actually, the fossil men are very few in number.\*\* And, of course, everything is based on your interpretation: is it an ape or a man? It is not particularly simple to find something in between both of them. In any fossil that you see, either of “primitive” men or “advanced” apes, it does not say, “I am the ancestor of people today.” So you cannot tell whether it is an ancestor, a cousin, or not related at all. It’s your interpretation. So far there is actually no persuasive ancient man that really looks as though it is halfway between man and ape. There are different kinds of fossil men, some “primitive,” some with large skulls, some with small skulls; but they are no more different from each other than are the different men who live today. So the burden of proof in this, I think, is still upon those who want to prove that one comes from the other.

Of course, this whole question of whether one comes from the other raises a whole lot of questions in the text of Genesis—about the

---

\* In the late 1980s some evolutionists suggested that Neanderthal Man once again be given his earlier designation, *Homo neanderthalensis*. However, even they admitted that Neanderthals were contemporary with modern humans and might have interbred with them. Today, evolutionists remain split on whether Neanderthal Man should be included within the species *Homo sapiens*, although a recent study of Neanderthal DNA (Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology, Leipzig, Germany, 2010) indicates that Neanderthals did in fact interbreed with modern people groups. See Marvin L. Lubenow, *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils* (2004), pp. 205–69; Paul Rincon, “Neanderthal Genes ‘Survive in Us,’” *BBC News*, May 6, 2010; and Richard E. Green et al., “A Draft Sequence of the Neanderthal Genome,” *Science*, vol. 328, no. 5979 (May 7, 2010), pp. 710–12.—ED.

\*\* Richard Leakey has quoted fellow paleontologist David Pilbeam as saying: “If you brought in a smart scientist from another discipline and showed him the meagre evidence we’ve got he’d surely say, ‘Forget it; there isn’t enough to go on.’” Neither David nor others involved in the search for mankind can take this advice, of course, but we remain fully aware of the dangers of drawing conclusions from evidence that is so incomplete” (Richard E. Leakey, *The Making of Mankind* [1981], p. 43).—ED.

genealogies, for example. If man is millions of years old, you have to make some big epicycles to account for the genealogies of the Patriarchs. In fact, some say that Patriarchs aren't really people: they're really just names for vast ages.

### *10. The Limits of Scientific Inquiry*

STUDENT: I'm not surprised when you say that ideas of human evolution are changing, as they find more things contributing to the theory of evolution. Ultimately, we will see the whole picture of evolution come to light.

FR. SERAPHIM: Well, it all depends on your presuppositions, because often those presuppositions are very strong.

STUDENT: What I'm saying is that generally what happens in science is that they are going along and they have a theory, and then they find that their suppositions are incorrect, as you said. And then they have to change their theory and there is a step, an improvement in knowledge, in science.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. And there are certain weak points in the theory of evolution itself as it is put forth now. Of course, we have to understand there are different meanings for that word. The evolution of a particular variety of finch or something—that's not what we are talking about. That's simply a change within a single nature. But evolution as a theory about the origin of the world—that's beyond the realm of science. That's speculation about the beginnings, just like the ancient Greek speculations about whether the world was infinite or always existed, etc.

In order to accept the evolutionary theory of origins as it is usually presented now, one has to accept that the Six Days of Creation are *not* a supernatural act, that is, an act that is different in kind from what is happening now. According to the interpretation of the Church, it is very distinct: there were Six Days of Creation in which God made the whole world, and He is not doing that any more. Therefore you cannot deduce what they were like. Maybe you can deduce back *almost* to that point, but you can't deduce what the actual beginning was. So I think in that respect scientists should be much less dogmatic in looking at and discussing the very beginning.

The text of Genesis is quite clear that these six acts were quite outside of our sphere of knowledge today. We can't know about them at all, except as God Himself has chosen to reveal them. That is why I would say that scientists are off if they try to deduce the beginning from what is happening now. You can take the idea of uniformitarianism (i.e., that everything has happened at the same rate as it is happening now) up to a certain point—a few thousand years perhaps. Before that it is very dubious that everything has been happening at the same rate.

### 11. *The Biblical Chronology*

STUDENT: Do we know *exactly* how old the earth is from the Biblical chronologies?

FR. SERAPHIM: There actually are questions about this. The Greek (Septuagint) and the Hebrew (Masoretic) texts of Genesis are different. According to the Septuagint, the world is about 7,500 years old;\* according to the Hebrew text, it's about 6,000 years old. It's an obvious discrepancy. How do we solve problems like that? The Fathers admit that there can be a little mistake that is handed down; there are simply miscopyings and so forth. In fact, Blessed Augustine has a whole chapter on this question.\*\* Perhaps some scribes added or subtracted a hundred years here and there when they were copying the text. There's no particular Patristic teaching that we have to define the world as being exactly 7,490 years old. It could be a little more or a little less: it's not an important question.

But whether Adam lived either seven or eight thousand years ago, or whether he lived millions of years ago—that *is* an important question. That is a big subject that affects the whole text of Genesis. We have to understand who Adam was—whether he was a person or not,

---

\* According to the traditional Orthodox Calendar established in Constantinople during the time of the Seven Ecumenical Councils (see p. 315n above), A.D. 2011 is the year 7518 from the creation of the world.—ED.

\*\* See Blessed Augustine, *City of God* 15.9–15, NPNF 1 2, pp. 291–97, especially 15.13–14, pp. 293–95. See also p. 314, 314n above.—ED.

and so forth. If he lived millions of years ago, there are a whole lot of questions that you have to ask about how tradition has interpreted mankind since that time.

*12. The Preexistence of Souls, "Reincarnation,"  
and Evolution*

STUDENT: Why did Origen believe that the soul came from the spiritual realm down into the body?

FR. SERAPHIM: He was under the influence of philosophies which said that matter is evil. People look around and see that sins come because of the flesh, and therefore the idea was developed, especially among the Manichaeans and similar teachers, that matter itself is evil and that the soul is a noble thing which is imprisoned in matter. From this they developed the idea that the soul has for aeons past been in some other realm.

STUDENT: Why were souls brought down into matter if matter is evil?

FR. SERAPHIM: According to Origen, it was because they sinned in that other realm.

This represents a dualistic view of the universe: there is one good aspect—the soul, and one evil aspect—matter, the body. The Christian view, on the other hand, sees the soul and the body together, with the knowledge that the body will actually be transformed. In fact, we will see in our study of Genesis that the body in the beginning was different from the way it was after the fall.

STUDENT: Was there any influence of Eastern ideas on Origen?

FR. SERAPHIM: Undoubtedly. People came from India to Alexandria, where Origen lived, and they taught there.

STUDENT: The idea of the preexistence of souls is similar to what Hinduism teaches on the transmigration of souls or "reincarnation."

FR. SERAPHIM: Right.

STUDENT: And how is that related to evolution?

FR. SERAPHIM: The idea behind the cosmogony of evolution is that everything comes from a single filament: in the beginning there was one blob, and from that comes all living things: animals, insects,

plants, etc. (Of course, there are immense difficulties in that theory because you have to show how within that original blob the genetic code and the means of translating it appeared simultaneously; then you have to show how the information was added to produce the genetic code for man and all the different creatures. This has never been done.)

The idea of “reincarnation” is similar in that, according to the ancient Buddhist, Hindu, Greek, and Roman understanding, it involved transmigration into different creatures: beasts, insects, and even plants. (In modern times people have changed that idea: they assume that in their “previous lives” they were human beings, because they don’t like the idea of having been a monkey or a tree or something. People like to think that they were Napoleon or Julius Caesar, but they don’t like to think that they were an oak beam in Rome someplace. They are flattering themselves.)

In general, we can say that this idea that everything is one—like one “Chain of Light” which can be divided into different kinds of beings—is not accepted at all by the Holy Fathers. They say that in the beginning all the different kinds of creatures were present, and that from them the seed produces the same kinds of creatures until the end of time.\*

### 13. *The Nature of Paradise*

FR. SERAPHIM: Before we begin a new chapter, can anyone give a résumé of what the earthly Paradise was?\*\*)

STUDENT: It’s not the material world as we know it, but then again it is not in the noetic realm, but somewhere in between. It is a more rarefied physical place.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. And was it on the earth or in heaven?

STUDENT: Neither. I thought it was elevated above the earth.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes, but actually in the beginning it was part of earth, even though it might have been in a higher place. And now?

---

\* A more extensive treatment of reincarnation may be found in Fr. Seraphim’s book *The Soul after Death*, 4th ed., pp. 121–27.—ED.

\*\*) Fr. Seraphim is here referring the students to his previous lecture, on Paradise, which is found in chapter 5 above.—ED.

STUDENT: It's actually a place, but you can't get there in a worldly geographical way.

FR. SERAPHIM: Has anyone been there in the last few thousand years?

STUDENT: The thief on the cross [cf. Luke 23:43].

FR. SERAPHIM: That's right, but he didn't come back to tell us. Did anyone come back?

STUDENT: St. Andrew the Fool for Christ of Constantinople.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. Who else?

STUDENT: There was a cook in a monastery.

FR. SERAPHIM: Right, St. Euphrosynus the Cook.

STUDENT: Are there any mentioned in the book *The Soul after Death*?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes, there are several mentioned there who came back to tell us. They always say, like St. Paul, that they can't really express what they saw [cf. 2 Cor. 12:2–4]. They do give some descriptions of Paradise (St. Andrew, for example, talks about the plants, a beautiful garden, and above that heaven itself), but this is so far outside of our normal experience that they can't talk about it very much. They saw the state in which we are to be in the age to come.

Paradise was a special place on this earth which was created, according to St. Ephraim, together with the plants on the Third Day. On the Sixth Day God placed man in it. It was originally a place of the earth, as if to show that man was meant to ascend from earth to heaven. It was not entirely material; it was of refined matter which we don't understand. But because of man's fall, it was as if this heavenly aspect of earth—a special part of the original earth—went up and out of our sight, though we are still able to get back to it. At the same time, after the fall, the original earth fell into corruption.

STUDENT: According to the Fathers, when was hell created? Was it created when the heavens were created, or when the earth was created?

FR. SERAPHIM: Hell wasn't really created, just like evil wasn't really created. Hell is simply the state and the place into which the fallen angels fell. In other words, in a sense, they made it themselves. The Scriptures speak of the place "prepared for the devil and his angels" [Matt.

25:41], but they do not mention how it came into being. We aren't told in detail about the angels either, nor about their fall; there are just brief references here and there. It's obvious that it happened before the serpent appears in Genesis.

Any other questions? Is it difficult to understand this concept of something which is not exactly material, not exactly spiritual?

STUDENT: We're very used to thinking dualistically: material vs. spiritual.

FR. SERAPHIM: That's right. In the future age we will have bodies, but the bodies will be spiritual. It will be a realm similar to the original Paradise, although Paradise was evidently "cruder," that is, comparatively material. The future realm will be a spiritual dwelling, but at the same time there will be bodies in it.\* What was the first example of such a body?

STUDENT: Christ resurrected.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes—the resurrected body of Christ, which was able to go through closed doors and walls. He was able to give the appearance of eating although He did not need to eat; He had wounds that could be touched, and yet He looked so different that the disciples did not recognize Him when they saw Him. It is a very mysterious kind of state. Nonetheless, it is bound up with the body.

STUDENT: If Adam and Eve had not fallen, could Adam have advanced to the state of perfection without Christ?

FR. SERAPHIM: Theoretically, you could think like that. Whether Christ would have come anyway is a different question. God knew what He wanted to do beforehand, and He knew the way things would be. And the way things *were* was that Christ did come. But He would not have needed to come to redeem us if Adam had not sinned.\*\*

Of course, this is all very deep and profound. Later I'll quote a few of the services which talk about these things. The theology of the Church is

---

\* For further discussion of this subject, see pp. 761–74 below.—ED.

\*\* Concerning this question, see the teaching of Sts. John Damascene, Maximus the Confessor, and Symeon the New Theologian on pp. 691, 702–3, 710–11, 763–65, 774 below.—ED.



constantly given to us in the services because that is what keeps us in remembrance of where we came from and where we are going.

14. *Free Will*

STUDENT: When Adam fell, did he realize at that point that he had free will?

FR. SERAPHIM: Once he disobeyed, he realized he was naked, he saw that he was running away from God, and he began to make excuses. In other words, the whole path which is the consequence of sin was opened up to him. So he saw this depth in himself—that he was able to choose evil even though he really did not intend to.

STUDENT: So he wasn't really conscious of his free will until that point?

FR. SERAPHIM: Well, the Fathers say that, although he was adult in body and very exalted in mind, he was still very simple because he was untested. He was in a state of goodness without being tested by evil.

STUDENT: So did Adam know what he was doing when he fell?

FR. SERAPHIM: He knew one thing: that there was a commandment. But he was not tested in obeying the commandments yet, and in his simplicity he fell.

STUDENT: Before he partook of the apple, was Adam at all aware of what evil was?

FR. SERAPHIM: I think that when he observed there were temptations, that would have been for him the opening of the awareness of evil.\* Had he not fallen, that awareness in itself could have been for him like tasting of the tree without falling. When he was mature and

---

\* In his *Eight Homilies on Genesis*, St. John Chrysostom writes: "Adam knew that obedience was a good and disobedience an evil. But he learned more clearly later, when after having tasted of the tree he was cast out of Paradise and fell from that blessedness" (*Eight Homilies on Genesis* 7, SC 433.318, trans. R. C. Hill, p. 118\*).

Elsewhere, in his *Homilies on Genesis*, St. John Chrysostom speaks at length on this question. He argues that Adam and Eve did have an understanding of good and evil prior to the fall, since Adam's ability to name the animals and to prophesy about Eve showed that he had been endowed with "prophetic grace along with ... ineffable intelligence," and since both he and Eve knew God's command not to eat

ready, he could have known the consequences of evil without falling into evil himself.

That, however, is *my* idea. The Fathers don't talk about that particular aspect [of the question], but they do say that the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is something which is only for *mature* people.\*

(None of the Holy Fathers say the fruit was an apple, by the way. Some people think it was a fig. It is a Western idea that it was an apple. We are not given particular information about that; it was just a tree with fruit.)

### 15. *The Creation of Adam and Eve*

STUDENT: Did God create one man and one woman? Or are Adam and Eve representative of a particular kind of person or group of persons?

---

of the tree lest they die. The knowledge they acquired at the fall was, specifically, an *experiential* awareness of sin and of shame. St. Chrysostom writes: "Because the transgression of the command happened to concern the tree, and from that event knowledge of sin then entered the scene, and shame as well—that was why the name ["the tree of the knowledge of good and evil"] was given. It is, after all, the way with Sacred Scripture to name places from the things that happen, wherever it is they happen. So on this basis Sacred Scripture also named the tree of the knowledge of good and evil since the transgression and observance of the command concerned the tree" (*Homilies on Genesis* 16.5, FC 74, pp. 218–19 [16.16–17]; see also 16.6 [16.18], pp. 219–20).

Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus sets forth the same interpretation. The tree of knowledge, he writes, received its name from "the sense of sin connected with it.... They [Adam and Eve] had no experience of sin, but afterwards, when they had partaken of the forbidden fruit, they suffered the pangs of conscience for breaking the commandment." Then, to the question, "So they did possess the knowledge of good and evil before partaking of the forbidden fruit?" Blessed Theodoret answers: "How could those endowed with reason and made in the divine image be unable to distinguish good and evil? How could the Depths of Righteousness impose a law on those who were naturally unprovided with this knowledge and unaware that it was good to keep the commandment and fatal to break it? So it follows that they had the knowledge, and what they lacked was the experience" (*Questions on Genesis* 27, LEC 1, p. 65; see also 26, pp. 63–65.)—ED.

\* See the quotations from Sts. Gregory the Theologian and John Damascene, and Fr. Seraphim's reflections on them, on pp. 230–34 above.—ED.

FR. SERAPHIM: He created the whole human nature in one man—the first man, Adam—and out of his flesh took the first woman. From them comes the rest of mankind.

STUDENT: When God created Eve out of the rib of Adam, did He take those qualities that are particular to womankind from Adam, or did He endow her with other, complementary qualities?

FR. SERAPHIM: We aren't told. He gave her whatever quality He needed to give her, starting from the rib. The rib of a man does not produce a woman; therefore, it's a miracle. God took the part from Adam simply to show that the origin of mankind is one.

The whole of mankind is already present in the original man. Everyone produced after that—from this one man—has the same nature, the same image of God, which is seen in the soul.

STUDENT: Were the body and soul of man originally meant to be separate?

FR. SERAPHIM: No. If Adam had not died, we would not need to talk about body and soul, because the body would itself become refined and soul-like. In the end we would have the state of the spiritual body.

STUDENT: Did God breathe a soul into Eve, too?

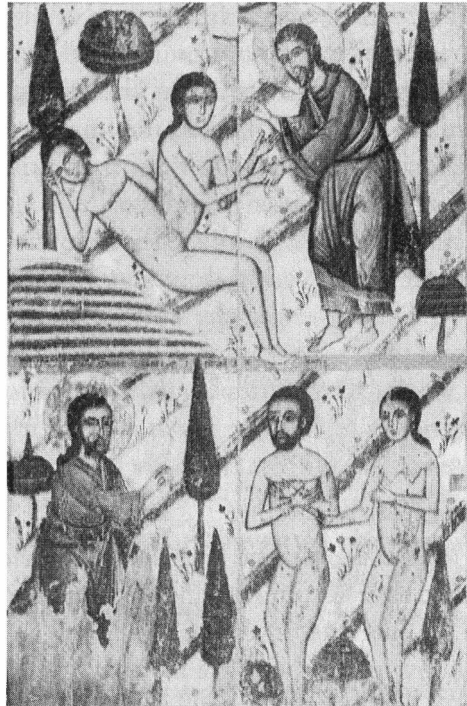
FR. SERAPHIM: In whatever way He knows, He gave her the same thing He gave Adam. We are not told details like that. The whole thing is simply a miracle of God.

STUDENT: Why is Christ called the Second Adam?

FR. SERAPHIM: We are the offspring of Adam. Even if Adam had not fallen and the animal mode of reproduction had not been instituted, there would have been some means of generation from this one man. All men come from Adam, and therefore Adam is like humanity. Adam *ruined* the whole plan for mankind, but God was “smarter” because He had already “figured out” how to bring this plan about without Adam. Therefore, the One through Whom man's original nature is restored, through Whom we have the opportunity to be in Paradise once more, is called the Second Adam.

STUDENT: Doesn't St. Paul say something about how death came to all through one man?

FR. SERAPHIM: That's right, death came from one man and life



The creation of Eve, and the blessing of Adam and Eve by God the Word.

*Icon from Troyan Monastery, Bulgaria, nineteenth century.*

comes from One Man.\* Because Adam tasted of the tree, our nature was changed. Therefore, when the Holy Fathers speak about the nature of man, sometimes they refer to the fallen, corrupted nature we have as a result of the fall; but sometimes they (for example, Abba Dorotheus) speak about the original nature of mankind, in order to give an image of what we are supposed to get back to.

The Roman Catholic idea, by the way, is different. They say that in the beginning man was “natural,” and that he had extra grace which made him supernatural; and then when he fell, he lost the grace and went back to the state he was made in. That is a whole different

---

\* “For if by one man’s offense death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by One, Jesus Christ” (Rom. 5:17); “For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive” (1 Cor. 15:21–22). These passages of the Pauline Epistles are discussed on p. 272 above and pp. 690, 733–34, 751–52, 777 below.—ED.

conception, and it fits in with evolution, because it sounds as though the whole creation was “natural” to begin with, and God didn’t create everything incorrupt. In the Roman Catholic view, Adam was not made immortal; he became immortal when God added grace to him. But in the Orthodox view, man was created immortal; his whole nature was different, and when he fell that nature was twisted and changed. We can still get back to the original state, of course, but only if the grace of God through Christ Himself raises us up.

STUDENT: But the state we’re striving for is not the state that Adam was in; it’s the state that Adam was *meant* to be in.

FR. SERAPHIM: Right. But the original state is an image of that other state, because it was close to it already.\*

### 16. *The Mind of Adam*

STUDENT: The knowledge that Adam had was a revelation. He did not have accumulated knowledge like we have now. Is that right?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. When the animals came before him he did not know about them. He instantly gave whatever God placed in his mind.

STUDENT: It was all spiritual.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. It was a very exalted thing. We have an image of that when a clairvoyant elder looks at somebody for the first time, tells his name, tells his sin, and tells him what to do to save his soul. It’s exactly the same kind of thing. It’s *his* doing, but only through God’s grace. His mind is giving this startling information, but it’s only because he is in direct contact with God that he can do it.

STUDENT: Do the Holy Fathers teach that imagination is part of our fallen nature?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes.

STUDENT: Imagination is so much a part of our thinking now.

FR. SERAPHIM: Right.

STUDENT: How did Adam think? What do the Fathers say his state of mind was?

FR. SERAPHIM: It was a state called sobriety: *nepsis* in Greek. In

---

\* On this subject, see pp. 83–86, 85n above, pp. 465, 472–89 below, and appendix 1 below.—ED.

other words, he looked at things and saw them the way they were. There was no “double thought.”\* In fact, he not only looked at them and saw them the way they were, but he also named all the creatures as they came before him.

STUDENT: But I’ve heard people say that imagination has to do with our creative powers, which are a reflection of God’s creative powers. That’s a good thing; that’s how we make beautiful things....

FR. SERAPHIM: That depends upon what you mean by the word “imagination.” There are several aspects of it. One aspect is the creative faculty, which is part of our original nature.

STUDENT: And it was with that faculty that Adam named the creatures?

FR. SERAPHIM: Right. But in our fallen state this creative talent becomes mixed up with double-thinking: looking at things and imagining something else. So the word “imagination” does have two meanings, but in our fallen state it is always bound up with double-thinking.\*\*

STUDENT: Why, according to the Holy Fathers, did imagination and double-thinking come in?

FR. SERAPHIM: That just seems to be a natural part of our fallen state. No longer do we look at things directly the way they are, for we are weak—we are, in a way, incapacitated. We look at things and don’t quite see the way they are. When we sober up, we do; but usually we are not in that state.

STUDENT: “Now we see through a glass, darkly” [1 Cor. 13:12].

FR. SERAPHIM: That’s right. Adam saw the whole creation clearly, both the creation below and the creation above. And, therefore, he was in full possession of the facts about everything, only he needed experience in order to be tested.

STUDENT: I read somewhere that imagination is used by people in their striving to regain that image of Paradise they lost.

\* See the quotations of Sts. Gregory the Sinaite and Diadochus of Photiki regarding man’s original, “one-pointed” memory and perceptive faculty, pp. 697–98 below.—ED.

\*\* On the Patristic teaching concerning man’s imagination vis-à-vis the fall, see pp. 698–99, 714 below.—ED.

FR. SERAPHIM: Well, you could say that, because it's obvious that man, once he fell, is striving for happiness. Even unbelievers and people who think they don't believe in God and wouldn't accept Paradise or anything like that—they are all striving for happiness. And of course, only in the Church do we receive the fullness of that happiness and find the way to it, which is through following Christ on the Cross. If you're just going to write poetry, you'll be very exalted for one day and the next day down in the dumps. You simply can't get beyond your nature that way. For you to get beyond your fallen nature, obviously Someone from above has to lift you up. The One Who made the nature Himself has to change you.

STUDENT: I'm interested to hear more about how Adam named the animals.

FR. SERAPHIM: Since Adam was originally in a state of *dispassion*, his mind was in an extremely exalted state when God brought the animals before him in Paradise in order for him to name them. Adam gave the animals names in accordance with their qualities. In other words, he had some kind of supernatural faculty; his mind was crystal-clear, so that he instantly saw what were the qualities of each creature and what name it should have. Of course, we have lost that language he spoke. We don't have that clarity of mind; it's totally beyond us.

St. Symeon the New Theologian says that Adam was "an immortal king over an incorrupt world, not only over Paradise, but also over the whole of creation which was under the heavens."<sup>7</sup> Of course, Paradise was made for his dwelling. He had been created outside of Paradise, on the earth, and then led into Paradise, his home. The animals were not directly in Paradise; they were "brought" there. To us they would look like paradisaal creatures, but they were actually outside the boundaries of Paradise and were brought into it when Adam named them.

When Adam fell, he went back to the earth from which he came. He was sent outside again to live on the earth by the sweat of his brow.

### *17. Paradise and Heaven*

STUDENT: In the next life man will be in Paradise or in heaven. Are Paradise and heaven not the same, or are they the same?

FR. SERAPHIM: From our point of view, who are so far away, it's all the same. If you get into one you should give thanks to God. But apparently there will be distinctions because there are "many mansions" [John 14:2], and different places; that is, some saints attain to great freedom, great familiarity with God, and others barely get in.

"The meek shall inherit the earth" [Ps. 36:11; cf. Matt. 5:5]. St. Symeon the New Theologian says this means the meek will inherit this very earth here.<sup>8</sup> So apparently some will be on earth with the ability to go up higher; others will be on higher levels. The whole thing is not revealed to us; we're just given a glimpse. If we enter into that state, then we will see exactly what happens.

This whole creation—what was meant in the beginning—will be again. Whether the same particular beasts will be there (since each individual creature has a different "personality")—we aren't told. But the same creatures will be there. Apparently, even that very serpent will be there, only now we will be friendly with him. Even the scorpions and everything else ... if they can't harm you, then there's no terror in all these animals.

STUDENT: The righteous people who have died already, like the New Martyrs—are they in Paradise, in heaven, or in a place that is separate? What do the Fathers teach about this?

FR. SERAPHIM: All we have to go on is the visions of various people, like St. Salvius [of Albi] who died and went to heaven. Usually when it is specifically Paradise, green growing things are seen. But St. Salvius went to some other place where there were no green growing things but just multitudes of people in white: saints, martyrs. In other words, they are in heaven. St. Andrew the Fool for Christ, when he went to Paradise, didn't see people there, but he saw people in heaven.\* We are not told in detail about things like that.\*\*

---

\* St. Salvius was a bishop in Gaul (France) in the sixth century. About St. Salvius and St. Andrew and their experience of heaven, see Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Soul after Death*, 4th ed., pp. 135–39.—ED.

\*\* On the distinction between Paradise and heaven, see also pp. 221–23, 222n above.—ED.



18. *The Devil*

STUDENT: About the enmity between Adam and the serpent: You said that the devil was envious of Adam before Adam fell because of the favor that was bestowed upon him. But you also said Adam was inferior to the serpent.

FR. SERAPHIM: The devil is superior because he is an intellectual being. He is not subject to the body. The body is a lower element; therefore, he is superior. But man is going to get that which the devil lost, that is, Paradise and heaven. And that is why, to this day, the devil is just plain angry.

Even according to human psychology, you can figure out the devil. Just think: you had immortal life and you knew that you were damned to hell. Then there is this other being who is lower than you, who is not worth even spitting on, and he is going to get that which you lost. Of course, you are going to be terribly envious, because there is no repentance for you.\* You are going to be trying every possible way to get him in the same state you are in.

STUDENT: You read in Genesis where it says the serpent will be bruising the heels [Gen. 3:15]. Is that how he is trying to get us back in the state where he is—completely hopeless? Would it be right to say that he tries to cripple our walk with God in this way?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. You can give many interpretations of that particular phrase. It means that the devil does not have power to do much.

---

\* The Holy Fathers teach that, since the devil is bodiless, the action of his free will in choosing evil was immutable; whereas human beings have a chance to repent while they are still in the body. St. John Damascene writes: "Although man, by reason of the infirmity of his body, is capable of repentance, the angel, because of his incorporeality, is not." Elsewhere the same Father states: "One should note that the fall is to the angels just what death is to men. For, just as there is no repentance for men after their death, so is there none for the angels after their fall.... It was by reason of his incorruptibility that the devil, after his fall by deliberate choice, became unrepentingly and immovably rooted in evil. In the same way again, after their deliberate election of virtue, the angels were immutably founded in good by grace" (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.3, 2.4, 2.30, FC 37, pp. 206, 210, 265).—ED.

If he were upright, then he would be a dangerous foe; he would be biting us in every place.

STUDENT: If he can't do much, how is it that he is able to snatch us from any given state and pull us down low?

FR. SERAPHIM: If we have the grace of God and are not cooperating with the devil, he can't. It's only when we ourselves allow our will to be drawn away by the devil.

Actually, we can allow ourselves to be drawn away just like Adam was, even without the devil. Adam could have sinned without Satan, because he saw the pleasant aspect of the forbidden fruit and there was already a temptation for him to want it for himself outside the commandment of God.

STUDENT: This may be an irrelevant question, but would you comment on Indian snake charmers? It is really weird how they make the snakes rise and stand up and so on.

FR. SERAPHIM: There is something very symptomatic in the fact that they are involved with that kind of a creature in the first place. It shows that there are demons at work somewhere there. Just in general, you can say that much about it.

STUDENT: Is Satan used as a tool by God?

FR. SERAPHIM: Whoa! That is a profound question.

STUDENT: You know how God let Satan tempt Job.

FR. SERAPHIM: That's right. We do not believe in a dualism: that there's a God and there's a devil, and they are fighting each other—like the Manichaeans believe. We believe that actually God is in charge of everything; and even when things go against Him, He uses that either for His greater glory or to bring men to salvation. So everything in the world happens either because God wills it that way or because He *allows* it that way due to the presence of freedom, in order to bring about a greater good.

Satan has an independent personality, but in the long run he loses out. Even when he causes some terrible thing like the Russian Revolution, out of it come the New Martyrs, a tremendous inspiration for men. You can imagine what would have happened to Russia without the Revolution, the way it was going. Probably it would have become a frightful place of worldliness, only pretending to be Orthodox—but

instead it was chastised. Therefore, a good thing actually came out of the Revolution despite the fact that the devil meant evil. The devil is independent, he can do evil, but God always brings good out of it *to those whose wills want good*.\*

STUDENT: The devil can't do anything without God allowing it, can he?

FR. SERAPHIM: No, he can't. When we say that the devil is bound for a thousand years—the whole time between the first and second comings of Christ\*\*—that doesn't mean that he can't do anything. It means he can do only what God allows. When a person is walking in the grace of Christ, then *only* if he himself falls away from that can the devil do anything to him at all. When we have temptations, they are exactly like the serpent bruising the heel: they are a small thing, and we should shake them off. Only if we allow ourselves to be overcome by them do we fall into despondency and anger and all kinds of sins. So the devil's power is very limited.

STUDENT: But it wasn't that way before Christ.

FR. SERAPHIM: Before the coming of Christ, Satan had much more

\* St. Peter Damascene writes: "There is nothing incidental or evil in creation, and even what takes place against God's will is miraculously changed by God into something good. For example, the fall of the devil was not God's will, yet it has been turned to the advantage of those being saved" (*A Treasury of Divine Knowledge*, book 1, *Philokalia* 3, p. 137).

Likewise, St. Macarius the Great (in the adaptation of his writings by St. Symeon Metaphrastes) teaches: "The lord of this world [the devil] is a rod of chastisement and a scourge to beginners in the spiritual life. Yet, as has been said, he brings them great glory and added honor because of the afflictions and trials they endure. In this way he helps them to attain the state of perfection, while he prepares even greater and harsher punishment for himself. In short, something most beneficial is brought about through him.... Evil, while intending what is not good, contributes to the good. For, in souls whose intention is sound, even that which appears harmful results in something good. As St. Paul says: 'All things work together for good to them that love God' (Rom. 8:28)" (*On Patient Endurance and Discrimination* 6 [38], *Philokalia* 3, pp. 300–301).—ED.

\*\* According to the Holy Fathers, the "thousand years" mentioned in Apocalypse 20:2 represents the period between the first and second comings of Christ. We are now in this period. See Archbishop Averky Taushev and Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Apocalypse in the Teachings of Ancient Christianity*, pp. 254–58.—ED.

power because everyone was bowing down to idols, which were demonic.

STUDENT: But in the whole scheme of things, it was all within God's plan.

FR. SERAPHIM: Well, yes, but it's a very mystical thing. Everything is within the plan, and yet each person freely does what he wants in that plan. And God brings goodness and good order out of the whole thing, no matter how many demons or men want to do evil.

### *19. Christ's Spiritual Body*

STUDENT: How does Christ fit in with the place where the saints are now, and with the state that you say Adam was meant to achieve?

FR. SERAPHIM: Jesus Christ is God.

STUDENT: Yes, and He's worshipped by the saints; but does He possess a spiritual body like the saints will have?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes, He still has His body. St. Andrew [the Fool for Christ], for example, saw Christ on the throne in heaven.

STUDENT: But He is the Essence of God, and we commune with Him spiritually.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes, God is everywhere. He is the Light. But Christ is also there in heaven in His resurrected body.

How it works in practice, we are not worthy of knowing; that is, whether we will be walking about and talking with Him. But just think—He walked about the earth with His disciples.

STUDENT: That explains it. He is the Essence of God, but ...

FR. SERAPHIM: But He took flesh. He became like us, and therefore that flesh is there in the other world. In heaven we will have contact with God spiritually, and also with Him in His body.

STUDENT: And we will commune with Him in His Essence?

FR. SERAPHIM: No. There is a teaching of St. Gregory Palamas on the Essence and Energies of God. We do not have any direct contact with God in His Essence, but we know Him in His Energies (grace).

STUDENT: So the saints don't have contact with the Essence?

FR. SERAPHIM: No, they have contact through the Energies, and so they are become participants in God. We can't think like God: we can't

think His thoughts or think what He was doing before the world was made, or anything like that. We can only participate according as He allows us, by His grace.

## *20. The Firmament*

STUDENT: What was the firmament?

FR. SERAPHIM: Very interesting question. Let me briefly summarize it. The text of Genesis said there was a firmament that “separated the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament” (Gen. 1:7). Later on, in ancient Greece, there arose the theory that the universe was composed of ten spheres, with the earth, the moon, and each planet occupying its own sphere.\* Some people, under the influence of this theory, thought that the text of Genesis taught there was a kind of glass bowl over the earth. St. Basil the Great specifically discussed this question, and he said there was no such thing: there was simply a force of nature which kept the waters above—that is, some kind of more rarefied waters—from the waters beneath.

In the time of Noah, when the Flood began, the windows of heaven were opened and the waters came in. In other words, it seems that the firmament “cracked,” so that power of nature holding those waters above was loosened somehow. That is one of the reasons why the Flood was a universal disaster. The waters from underneath the earth came up, and at the same time the waters which before had been above the firmament came down.

It is a very challenging theory that some people have put forward in connection with the fact that the rainbow was given to Noah as a sign there would be no more flood, suggesting that the rainbow was seen then for the first time. It is likely that the waters above the firmament were actually a cloud layer over the whole earth, which produced a greenhouse effect.\*\* Fossil remains everywhere in the world

---

\* The Prophet Moses, the author of Genesis, lived in the sixteenth century B.C. The Greek concept of a universe composed of spheres was first devised by Pythagoras in the sixth century B.C. and was revised by Eudoxus in the fourth century B.C.—ED.

\*\* This idea, commonly known as the water vapor canopy theory, has been subjected to extensive scientific testing and analysis by creationists since Fr. Seraphim

testify to the fact that in the past the earth had a universally warm climate, with ample moisture for abundant plant and animal life.\* Besides the fossil evidence, there is evidence from the fact that there are remnants of animals in frozen soils on the Arctic islands north of Siberia—areas that could never support such animals under present climatic conditions.\*\*

---

gave this talk. In recent years the most important work in this area has been done by Larry Vardiman, a doctor of Atmospheric Science who has conducted research in cloud physics and climate change for the U.S. Air Force and the U.S. Bureau of Reclamation. (See his book *Climates before and after the Genesis Flood* [2001], pp. 7–21, and his articles “Temperature Profiles for an Optimized Water Vapor Canopy” [2003], and [with Karen Bousset] “Sensitivity Studies on Vapor Canopy Temperature Profiles” [1998].) The research of Vardiman and others suggests that, while a pre-Flood vapor canopy would have produced very different atmospheric and climatic conditions from what is experienced today, the greater part of the Flood waters would have come not from such a canopy, but from underground.—ED.

\* According to E. H. Colbert, an evolutionist, “Many lines of dinosaurs evolved during the 100 million years or more of Mesozoic history in which they lived.... In those days the earth had a tropical or sub-tropical climate over much of its land surface, and in the widespread tropical lands there was an abundance of lush vegetation. The land was low and there were no high mountains forming physical or climactic barriers” (“Evolutionary Growth Rates in the Dinosaurs,” *Scientific Monthly*, Aug. 1949, p. 71). W. J. Arkell, in his book *Jurassic Geology of the World* (p. 615), writes: “A fairly rich flora of temperate facies flourished within or near both the Arctic and Antarctic Circles, in East Greenland and Grahamland.”

In 1991, the fossil remains of a plant-eating dinosaur, 25 to 30 feet long, were found in a small section of exposed rock in the interior of Antarctica, about 400 miles from the South Pole. Even closer to the Pole (about 250 miles), geologists found thousands of well-preserved leaves, retaining their original cellular structure and organic content. (See Raymond Chris, “Scientists Report Finding Fossils of Dinosaurs in Antarctica’s Interior,” “Discovery of Leaves in Antarctica,” *Chronicle of Higher Education*, March 20, 1991).—ED.

\*\* J. K. Charlesworth, in his book *The Quaternary Era* (vol. 2, p. 650), states: “Vast herds of mammoth and other animals (the New Siberian Islands in the far north of Asia have yielded mammoth, woolly rhinoceros, musk ox, saiga antelope, reindeer, tiger, arctic fox, glutton, bear and horse among the 66 animal species) required forests, meadows and steppes for their sustenance ... and could not have lived in a climate like the present, with its icy winds, snowy winters, frozen ground and tundra moss the year round.”—ED.

## 21. The “Location” of Paradise

FR. SERAPHIM: The connection between Paradise and our contemporary world is a very profound one because in the beginning Paradise was part of earth—an elevated place like a mountain. When Adam was cast out of Paradise he went lower down the slope and began living there. Then Cain had to go still lower down.

STUDENT: It says in Genesis that the river flowing out of Paradise parted and became the Euphrates and other rivers.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. Four rivers are mentioned, which are usually interpreted as the Tigris, the Euphrates, the Nile and the Ganges. There are various interpretations.

STUDENT: Is there still a mountain there?

FR. SERAPHIM: No. You see, what we have now is a different reality. For one thing, the Flood of Noah came, and apparently there were tremendous cataclysms during that time—probably volcanoes erupting, mountains rising up—of which we see the results now. It is very likely that before Noah there were not the five continents we know now—there was a tremendously *different* earth. Maybe there was one continent. We have no idea, actually; we are not told about that. The earth became so completely different that today we cannot say. Right now those four rivers do not come from the same source; they have been changed. Nevertheless, you can point and say that in that area is the cradle of ancient civilization; it is apparently where we all came from.

Now, of course, Paradise has been separated from the earth. But people still go to Paradise. We know of people who have been there, like St. Euphrosynus the Cook. He brought back apples, which people ate like holy bread. He actually experienced Paradise as if it was something physical, but it was different from our everyday material reality. You can only get there in a state of exaltation; you have to be out of yourself. Paradise is now gone from us, because Adam was originally different from what we are now. He was of a higher nature. In fact, the Fathers say that he was of flesh, but it was a flesh somehow halfway between what we know as flesh and spirit. It's a whole different thing.



St. Euphrosynus the Cook of Alexandria (ninth century, commemorated Sept. 11), who was granted access to Paradise. He gave to a priest of his monastery three apples from Paradise, which emitted an ineffable fragrance. The monastic brethren divided the apples among themselves and distributed pieces of them as a blessing to many, especially to those who were in need of healing. Whoever ate of these apples was healed of his infirmities. *Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan, Monastery of St. Nicholas Anapausas, Meteora, Greece, 1527.*



22. *Between the Fall and the Flood*

STUDENT: When Adam was thrown out from Paradise, what was that separation like?

FR. SERAPHIM: Adam was cast out from Paradise, but it says that he sat there looking at it. It was still visible, and even Cain could still see Paradise. One of the Fathers says that perhaps until the Flood people could still see Paradise.\* They could not get to it because there were two angels there guarding it, but we know they were somehow closer because God was constantly talking to the Patriarchs. Then there was a whole different state which is very difficult for us to imagine now, because after Noah this new period enters when we do not have contact with God that way. Before the Flood, God came and talked directly even to Cain, the sinner.

23. *The Flood*

STUDENT: Some say the Flood was only between the Tigris and the Euphrates.

FR. SERAPHIM: That would be a local flood. But what is described in Scripture is a universal Flood, over the whole earth.

STUDENT: Is that why shells are found on the tops of mountains?

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes. Of course, that is also due to the mountains rising up.\*\*

The question of what mountains were before the Flood and how

---

\* See St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Hymns on Paradise* 1.4, 1.10, PPS 10, pp. 78–79, 81.—ED.

\*\* That the Flood was universal is witnessed by the vast extent of sedimentary deposits (formed by aqueous action) over what is today dry land. O. D. von Engel and Kenneth E. Caster, in their book *Geology* (p. 129), write: “About three-fourths, perhaps more, of the land area of the earth, 55 million square miles, has sedimentary rock as the bedrock at the surface or directly under the cover of mantle-rock.... The thickness of the stratified rocks ranges from a few feet to 40,000 feet or more at any one place.... The vast bulk of the stratified rocks is composed of shallow-water deposits.”—ED.

high the Flood rose cannot be solved conclusively, because it is very likely the cataclysm was so extreme that the whole earth was quite different then. All the mountains may have risen up at that time. Entirely different geographical and geological features would have been created.\* Those people who accept the idea of the Flood in their studies of geology—like Henry Morris, in *The Genesis Flood*—say that most of the layers were formed during and right after the time of the Flood, not over millions of years. Read the book.

#### 24. *Patristic Interpretation vs. Modern "Higher" Criticism*

STUDENT: Did Moses write every word of the first five books of the Bible? And do we know when exactly they were written down?

FR. SERAPHIM: When it says at the beginning "the book of Moses," etc., it means "by Moses, in his tradition." One of the books (Deuteronomy) mentions Moses' death; therefore he did not write that part. In the same way, the Psalms of David were not written all by David. Maybe half were written by him, and others were written by other people. The Orthodox Church is not so concerned that every word is written by that person to whom it is ascribed. We are not that concerned because we have the idea of *tradition*; that is, this is the book of Moses, "in the tradition of" Moses. The basic part comes from the hand itself;\*\* other parts were added later, which are all in the tradition of Moses.

I can't give you exact details of when actually the books were written down. A lot was preserved in oral tradition. The basic text of Genesis was revealed to the Prophet Moses. We are not even concerned that every single word is actually correct according to the way he received it. The Protestants can become very upset about this question. It doesn't bother us because, if it is interpreted *in the Church*, the Church itself is

---

\* On this, see the quotation of St. Bede the Venerable, pp. 334–35n above.—ED.

\*\* In the Gospels, Christ says many times that the Prophet Moses gave the Jews the Law: Matt. 8:4, 19:7–8; Mark 1:44, 7:10, 10:3; Luke 5:14, 16:29–31, 20:37, 24:44; John 7:19, 22–23. In John 5:45–46, He speaks specifically of Moses as a *writer* of Scripture: "For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed Me: for he wrote of Me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe My words?"—ED.

the guarantee that it will be preserved in the right spirit. The Hebrew and Greek texts disagree in a lot of specific and small points—the ages of the Patriarchs, for example.

STUDENT: The first chapter of Genesis tells of the Six Days and the creation of man and woman. Then in the second chapter, the text seems to start over, telling of how man was formed of the dust of the ground and Eve was created from Adam's rib. It looks like it was two stories.

FR. SERAPHIM: No, it is simply a retelling of the story from a different point of view. One account concerns the origin of Man himself; the other concerns the specific origin of the first people, Adam and Eve.

Modern scholars like to say, "Aha! that means there were two different authors, and you have to separate them and examine the viewpoint of each one—what were they trying to say?" This is not required, because even if the text was handed down somehow in corrupt form, still the basic text has come to us and we know that it all relates to truth.

Therefore, the interpretation of the Church is our key to understanding how the two accounts fit together. When we come across things like this, we simply say that the same story is being told from two different points of view—of emphasis. There is actually no basic problem.\*

This idea that there must be two different authors or that there are three Isaiahs because there are three different periods spoken about—this is very childish. The modern scholars operate on the assumption that no one could talk about the future. Of course, with that idea you would have to cast out all the prophets.

---

\* St. John Chrysostom explains that God inspired the second creation narrative in Genesis in order to further describe the events of the first narrative and thereby forestall the development of false teachings in the Church: "In His foreknowledge of the future, to prevent anyone born in subsequent generations from defying Sacred Scripture and captiously setting his own notions against the dogmas of the Church, the Holy Spirit, after teaching us the order of created things, what was created first and what second ... once again goes over all the items one by one so as to stop the unbridled tongue of people spoiling to make a show of their impudence" (*Homilies on Genesis* 12.2, PG 53.100, FC 74, p. 159 [12.5]\*).—ED.

STUDENT: Sometimes we forget that there is a whole school of theology that is basically humanistic and goes under the assumption that a book that tells of something in the future obviously had to be written later so that it looked backwards.

FR. SERAPHIM: Yes, and that is purely their assumption. According to our faith, we simply cannot accept that because we believe that there are prophets. There is one book with prophecies which are not fulfilled yet: the book of the Apocalypse. According to some modern scholars, it does not talk about future events. We believe, however, that we are going to see the fulfillment of those events ahead of us, always in a form which is a little hidden. We cannot say precisely that the world is going to end in 2005 or some such date; but as we see the events being fulfilled, we see the profound meaning of this prophecy which was written ahead of the event.

Even if it could be that different parts of the book of Genesis were written down by different scribes at different times, that might account for some difference of language, but it is totally a secondary question which does not affect the main point. The main point is: What is the truth spoken about in these texts? That is the basic thing we have to keep in mind in interpreting any sacred text: *What is the text talking about*, what is the meaning of it? All these little questions of when it was written down and how many different ways it was written down (scholars even analyze it to figure how many times different words are used, separating out particular synonyms to show that there were different authors, etc.)—all that is a waste of time, actually. The main question is, again: What is the truth contained in it? And our key to understanding what is the truth in the book of Genesis or any of the books of Scripture is the teaching of the Church handed down from the Holy Fathers.

The important thing is that we accept that the text itself is a whole, and that it is speaking about truth; and we should have utmost respect for it as the word of God. When we come to something that seems to be a contradiction, we have to look deeper and see how the Holy Fathers resolved this contradiction. Once in a while we can come up with a little interpretation ourselves. For example, we discussed this idea about the firmament: no Holy Father talks specifically about this

theory. Modern people have thought about it, and it has weight as a theory, but it is not in the same category as a revealed truth. It is simply a help to interpret the text.

### *25. The Ages of the Patriarchs*

FR. SERAPHIM: In Genesis 47:9 we read: “And Jacob said to Pharaoh, The days and the years of my life ... are an hundred and thirty years. Few and evil have been the days of the years of my life; they have not attained to the days of the life of my fathers.”

Jacob lived to be a hundred thirty years old, yet he complained that he was not living very long, as did his forefathers. This is another indication that the earlier Patriarchs indeed lived a very long time. The later descendants were very aware of that.

### *26. Different Interpretations*

STUDENT: Who among the ancient writers held that the “sons of God” [Gen. 6:2–4] were angels?

FR. SERAPHIM: Tertullian, St. Justin Martyr, Athenagoras [of Athens], and Lactantius, the minor Latin writer. These are the earlier Fathers. Major Fathers such as St. John Chrysostom and St. Ephraim the Syrian\* say that the “sons of God” had bodies and that therefore they could not be angels.\*\*

This leads to the question of different interpretations of Scripture. In this course we are giving the standard interpretation of the Church Fathers, but of course there are different Fathers who might give differ-

---

\* See p. 320n above for a fuller listing of those who accepted and rejected the idea that the “sons of God” were angels.—ED.

\*\* As Blessed Theodoret (*Questions on Genesis* 47) and Blessed Augustine (*City of God* 15.23) point out, the fact that the “sons of God” mentioned in Genesis 6:2–4 were human beings with fleshly bodies is affirmed by the words of Genesis 6:3: “And the Lord God said, My Spirit shall certainly not remain among these men forever, because they are flesh.”—ED.

ent interpretations. The question is: What do we think of the various interpretations? Sometimes they might even seem to conflict.

We should keep in mind that the Scripture is a very rich source, which is not exhausted by one interpretation. Usually there are at least two interpretations: a literal interpretation and a figurative or allegorical one. Sometimes there is also a mystical interpretation.

Therefore, different interpretations are possible. But there are rules:

1) Where it is opinion, it should not be held dogmatically or used to fight another opinion.

2) This opinion must have a serious foundation, and not be simply based on the latest intellectual fashion. For example, we should not simply fall into the latest fashion of science fiction and come up with the idea that the “sons of God” could be outer-space beings; there is no serious foundation for that.

3) It must make sense with the rest of Scripture.

4) There are some opinions which are inadmissible; and there are certain interpretations which conflict with the teaching of the Church. For example, we know that the “sons of God” cannot be angels, for this goes against the Orthodox doctrine of angels.\*

At other times, there is simply no need to have a different interpretation. For example, we might be tempted to think, on the basis of our own opinion today, that the Patriarchs could not live nine hundred

---

\* The “sons of God” in Genesis 6:2-4 had sexual relations with women and begot offspring. St. John Chrysostom—who like most of the Fathers after the mid-fourth century taught that the “sons of God” were the human descendants of Seth—dismisses the idea of angels having sexual intercourse with humans: “Is it not a particular hallmark of folly to claim that angels descended to have intercourse with women, and that incorporeal nature of theirs was reduced to association with corporeal creatures?” (*Homilies on Genesis* 22.2, FC 82, p. 73 [22.7]).

St. John Cassian argues further against this notion: “By no means should it be believed that spiritual natures can have carnal relations with women. But if this could ever have happened in a literal sense, why does it not occur now, at least occasionally, and why do we not see some people born of women without sexual intercourse, having been conceived by demons? Since it is particularly clear that they take great delight in filthy wantonness, they would doubtless prefer to engage in this directly rather than through human beings if it were at all possible” (*Conferences* 8.21.1, ACW 57, p. 304).—ED.

years. We cannot reinterpret the Scripture that way, however, unless we have a substantial basis for this. We must be able to show, in Scripture or the writings of the Fathers, that it makes sense to have this interpretation. As for this particular opinion, the Fathers all agree that the Patriarchs did live nine hundred years. As we have seen, the Patriarch Jacob was aware that a hundred and thirty years was quite a young age compared to that of the fathers before him. The world was so different and so new then that it is quite plausible that people lived that long, though it is quite foreign to our experience. We cannot overturn what they said.

PART II

*The Patristic Doctrine  
of Creation*





Detail of the icon "The Symbol of Faith," showing Adam and Eve being cast out of Paradise, Cain slaying Abel, and Adam and Eve lamenting Abel's death.

*Russian icon of the second half of the seventeenth century,  
Kolomenskoye Museum, Moscow.*

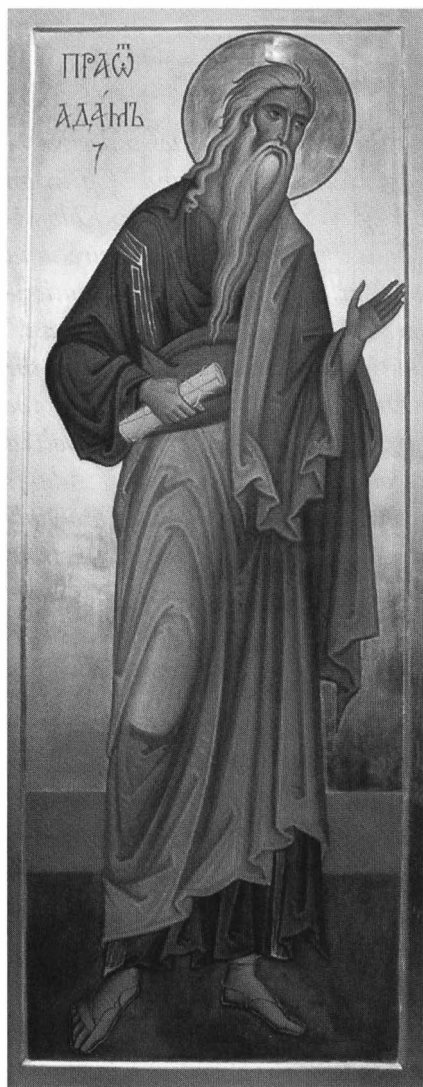
## EDITOR'S NOTE

*The following letter was written by Fr. Seraphim to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, a Greek Orthodox medical doctor, church writer, and "Christian evolutionist." Fr. Seraphim was responding to a letter from Dr. Kalomiros, in which the latter attempted to show that the Holy Scriptures and the teaching of the Holy Fathers were compatible with modern evolutionary theory. According to Dr. Kalomiros, Adam was an "evolved beast," who at the appropriate point in his evolutionary development received the grace of God and thus became man. Dr. Kalomiros wrote: "When the Lord God breathed into Adam's face the breath of life, then the evolved beast became a logical creature.... I would not be surprised if Adam's body had been in all respects the body of an ape.... Adam was probably biologically less evolved than man of present days.... He was taken from the top step of the evolutionary ladder of anthropoids. Man does not come from monkeys but from another branch of anthropoids with a parallel evolution. We have nothing by which to conclude in which stage of evolution the breath of God was given to the animal."*

*Fr. Seraphim's reply to Dr. Kalomiros was published posthumously in Epiphany Journal (Fall 1989–Winter 1990) and later in abridged form in The Christian Activist (Spring–Summer 1998). We present it here with section titles added by the editor.*

*Not intending this letter for publication, Fr. Seraphim underlined and capitalized certain portions of it for emphasis to a much greater extent than he was wont to do in his published writings. In order to preserve the spirit of the original we have retained this emphasis, indicating the underlined portions with italics. All emphasis within Patristic quotations has been added by Fr. Seraphim.*

*For more about Fr. Seraphim's correspondence with Dr. Kalomiros, see the editor's preface (pp. 44–47, 52, 63, 63n, 65), Fr. Seraphim's commentary on Genesis (pp. 117n, 155n), and selections from Fr. Seraphim's letters (pp. 605, 616–17, 624–30, 632–40, 642–46).*



Holy Forefather Adam and Holy Foremother Eve.  
*Icons by F. V. Strel'tsov, Moscow, 2007.*



Fifth Week of Great Lent, 1974

Dear Dr. Kalomiros,

Greetings in our Lord Jesus Christ.

At last I am writing my reply to your letter on "evolution." This reply expresses the view of our Brotherhood on this question. I will repeat to you that I have written this reply not as an "expert" on the Holy Fathers, but as a "lover" of the Holy Fathers, which I believe you are also. Most of the citations I have made here from the Holy Fathers I have translated from the Russian Patristic translations of the nineteenth century, with some also from the English translations of the nineteenth century which are printed in the "Eerdmans" Nicene Fathers Series. I have given the sources as fully as possible so that you can read them in Greek. If you have questions about these or any other Patristic citations I will be glad to discuss them further with you. I am not at all concerned merely to find citations that "prove my point," and in fact you will notice that I have also included some citations which do *not* seem to "prove my point"—for I am interested first and only in finding *how the Holy Fathers thought on these questions*, since I believe that is the way we should think also. May Christ our God bless me to speak truthfully.

\*

\*

\*

The question of "evolution" is an extremely important one for Orthodox Christians, for in it are involved many questions which directly affect our Orthodox doctrine and outlook: the relative worth of science and theology, of modern philosophy and Patristic teaching; the doctrine of man (anthropology); our attitude toward the writings of the Holy Fathers (do we really take seriously their writings and try to live by them, or do we believe first of all in modern "wisdom," the wisdom of this world, and accept the teaching of the Holy Fathers only if it harmonizes with this "wisdom"?); our interpretation of the Holy

Scriptures, and especially the book of Genesis. In what follows I will touch on all these subjects.

Before one begins to discuss the question of evolution, one must have a clear idea of what one is talking about. I say this because I have had very surprising experiences with very learned people who speak as if they knew all about this subject and yet they make very elementary mistakes which reveal that there is much that they do not know about it. In particular, almost everyone who writes about evolution *assumes* that he knows what “evolution” is—and yet what he says reveals that he has a very confused idea of it. The question of evolution is by no means a simple one, and there is so much confusion in people’s minds about it—including the minds of most Orthodox Christians—that we cannot even talk about it until we are *quite sure* that we know what we are talking about.

You have asked us, “Clear your mind very carefully of all Western conceptions, whether these are theological, philosophical, or scientific.” I assure you that I have tried to do this, and throughout this letter I will constantly be on the watch *not* to think in terms of Western conceptions, because I agree with you that these conceptions falsify the subject matter, and by means of them one *cannot* understand the question of evolution. But in turn I ask *you* to try very carefully to cleanse your mind of whatever preconceptions about the questions of evolution you may have—what you have learned in school, what you have read in scientific books, what you may think about “anti-evolutionists,” what Greek theologians may have said about the subject. Let us try to reason together, not in the manner of Western rationalists, but as Orthodox Christians who love the Holy Fathers and wish to understand their teaching, and also as rational beings who do not accept the teaching of any modern “wise men,” whether they be theologians or philosophers or scientists, *unless* that teaching accords with the Scriptural and Patristic teaching and does not come from some foreign philosophy.

### *1. Evolution as Philosophy*

First of all, I agree entirely with you when you say: “You must not confuse *pure science* with the different philosophical theories written *to*

*explain* the facts discovered by science. Facts are one thing (pure science) and explanations of facts is another (philosophy).”

I must tell you first of all that at one time I believed entirely in evolution. I believed not because I had thought very much about this question, but simply because “everyone believes it,” because it is a “fact,” and how can one deny “facts”? But then I began to think more deeply on this question. I began to see that very often what calls itself “science” is not *fact* at all, but *philosophy*, and I began very carefully to distinguish between *scientific facts* and *scientific philosophy*.<sup>\*</sup> After many years I came to the following conclusions:

- a. Evolution is *not* “scientific fact” at all, but philosophy.
- b. It is a *false* philosophy which was invented in the West as a reac-

---

<sup>\*</sup> As will be seen later in this book, by “scientific philosophy” Fr. Seraphim is not referring to the common usage of basic scientific concepts and laws (as the statement of Dr. Kalomiros quoted above would seem to indicate), but more specifically to the metaphysical/philosophical assumptions that serve to bring together these building blocks into a certain paradigm aimed at explaining the data.

Philosophical presuppositions especially undergird what has been called origins or historical science—as distinct from operational or observational science. While in operational science, which involves explaining repeatable, observable phenomena in today’s universe, the philosophical assumptions are testable at least indirectly, in origins science one deals with unique, unrepeatable, unobservable events and conditions of the past, about which one could make quite an array of conceivable assumptions, all beyond any possibility of serious experimental cross-examination. Hence, the only deciding factor in choosing among these decisively important alternatives is of a metaphysical/philosophical order, and it is philosophy at this level that Fr. Seraphim calls attention to here, while sticking to the terms chosen by Dr. Kalomiros.

As Fr. Seraphim notes a few pages ahead, by “pure science” (i.e. operational science) alone, one cannot prove or disprove the “fact” of evolution. By the same token, one cannot prove or disprove by science alone the fact of Creation. Neither can be proved apart from untestable assumptions of a metaphysical/philosophical character. Thus, conceptually speaking, both creation and evolution type theories are equally scientific, and are different only in adopting contrasting metaphysical, untestable assumptions.

As noted above (see especially pp. 21–28, 59, 73–74, 89–92, 98–102), modern evolutionary theory works from the philosophical assumption of naturalism. On the function of presuppositions in science, see also pp. 666, 666n, 683, 903–5 below.—ED.

tion against Roman Catholic–Protestant theology, and which *disguised* itself as “science” in order to make itself respectable and deceive people who are willing to accept scientific fact. (In the West almost all modern errors do this same thing; even “Christian Science” claims to be “scientific,” so also Spiritism, various Hindu cults, etc.)

c. It is contrary to the teaching of the Holy Fathers on very many points.

I have deliberately given you my conclusions before explaining them to you, in order to make you stop and think: are you *sure* that you have put away all your preconceptions about evolution and are prepared to think clearly and dispassionately on this subject? Are you willing to admit that there may be some truth in what I will now have to say on this subject? I must tell you frankly that most “evolutionists” will stop at this point and say: this man is crazy, he is denying facts. I am trusting that your mind is at least open enough to read the rest of what I will say, which I try to base entirely on the Holy Fathers. If I make mistakes, I hope that you will tell me.

## 2. A Clear Definition

Many of the arguments between “evolutionists” and “anti-evolutionists” are useless, for one basic reason: they are usually not arguing about the same thing. Each one of them means *one thing* when he hears the word “evolution,” and the other means *something else*; and they argue in vain because they are not even talking about the same thing. Therefore, in order to be precise, I will tell you *exactly* what I mean by the word “evolution,” which is the meaning it has in all textbooks of evolution. But first I must show you that in your letter you have used the word “evolution” to mean two entirely different things, but you write *as if they were the same thing*. You have failed here to distinguish between *scientific fact* and *philosophy*.

a. You write: “The first chapters of the Holy Bible are nothing else but the history of creation progressing and being completed *in time*.... Creation did not come into being instantly, but followed a sequence of appearances, a development in six different ‘days.’ How can we call this progress of Creation in time if not evolution?”

I answer: all that you say is true, and if you wish you can call this process of creation “evolution”—but *this is not what the controversy over evolution is about*. All scientific textbooks define evolution as a *specific theory concerning* HOW creatures came to be in time: BY MEANS OF THE TRANSFORMATION OF ONE KIND OF CREATURE INTO ANOTHER, COMPLEX FORMS BEING DERIVED FROM SIMPLER FORMS IN A NATURAL PROCESS TAKING COUNTLESS MILLIONS OF YEARS (Storer, *General Zoology*). Later on, when you talk about the “evolved beast” Adam, you reveal that you believe in this *specific scientific theory also*. I hope to show you that the Holy Fathers did *not* believe in this specific scientific theory, even though this is certainly not the most important aspect of the doctrine of evolution, which more fundamentally is in error concerning the *nature of man*, as I will show below.

b. You say: “We all came into being by evolution in time. In our mother’s uterus each one of us was at first one single-cell organism ... and finally a perfect man.” Of course *everyone* believes this, whether he is an “evolutionist” or an “anti-evolutionist.” But this has nothing to do with the *doctrine* of evolution which is being disputed.

c. Again you say: “Adam was of which race, white, negro, red, or yellow? How did we become so different from one another when we are descendants of one single couple? Is this differentiation of man in different races not a product of evolution?”

I answer again: No, this is *not* what the word “evolution” means! There are very many books in the English language which discuss the question of evolution from a *scientific* point of view. Perhaps you do not know that *many scientists deny the fact of evolution* (meaning the derivation of all existing creatures by transformation from other creatures), and very many scientists state that *it is impossible to know by science whether evolution is true or not, because there is no evidence whatever that can conclusively prove or disprove it*. If you wish, in another letter I can discuss with you the “scientific evidence” for evolution. I assure you that if you look at this evidence objectively, without any *preconceptions* about what you will find in it, you will discover that there is not one piece of evidence for evolution that cannot equally be explained by a theory of “special creation.”

Please be very clear that I am *not* telling you that I can *disprove* the



theory of evolution by science; I am only telling you that *the theory of evolution can neither be proved nor disproved by science*. Those scientists who say that evolution is a “fact” are actually *interpreting* the scientific facts *in accordance with a philosophical theory*; those who say that evolution is *not* a fact are likewise *interpreting* the evidence in accordance with a *different* philosophical theory. *By pure science alone* it is not possible conclusively to prove or disprove the “fact” of evolution.

You should also know that many books have likewise been written about “the difficulties of the evolutionary theory.” If you wish, I will be glad to discuss with you some of these difficulties, which seem to be totally unexplainable if evolution is a “fact.”

### 3. *Development, Not Evolution*

I wish to make very clear to you: I do not at all deny the fact of *change and development* in nature. That a full-grown man grows from an embryo; that a great tree grows from a small acorn; that new *varieties* of organisms are developed, whether the “races” of man or different types of cats and dogs and fruit trees—but all of this is *not evolution*: it is only variation *within* a definite kind or species;\* it does not prove or even suggest (unless you already *believe* this for non-scientific reasons) that one kind or species develops into another and that all present creatures are the product of such a development from one or a few primitive organisms. I believe that this is clearly the teaching of St. Basil the Great in the *Hexaemeron*, as I will now point out.

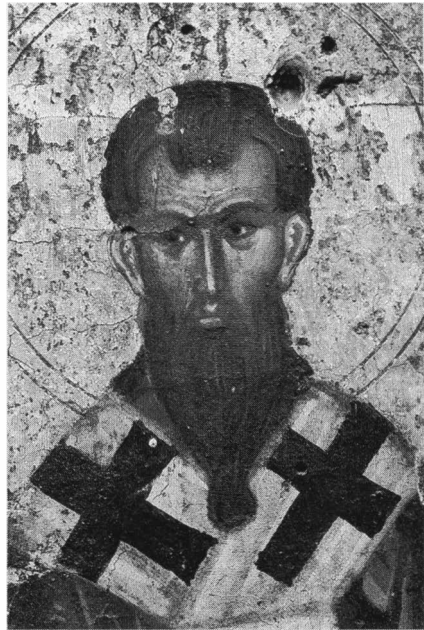
In Homily 5.7 of the *Hexaemeron*, St. Basil writes:

Let no one, therefore, who is living in vice despair of himself, knowing that, as agriculture changes the properties of plants, so the diligence of the soul in the pursuit of virtue can triumph over all sorts of infirmities.

No one, “evolutionist” or “anti-evolutionist,” will deny that the “prop-

---

\* On the difference between the Biblical “kinds” (Gen. chap. 1) and the modern definition of “species,” see pp. 181–86, 181n, 184n above.—ED.



St. Basil the Great (329–379).  
*Icon from Philotheou Monastery,  
Mount Athos, Greece.*

erties” of creatures can be changed; but this is not a proof of evolution *unless* it can be shown that *one kind or species can be changed into another*, and even more, that *every species changes into another in an uninterrupted chain back to the most primitive organism*. I will show below what St. Basil says on this subject.

Again St. Basil writes:

How then, they say, does the earth bring forth seeds of the particular kind, when, after sowing grain, we frequently gather this black wheat? This is not a change to another kind, but as it were some disease and defect of the seed. It has not ceased to be wheat, but has been made black by burning.<sup>1</sup>

This passage would *seem* to indicate that St. Basil does not believe in “a change to another kind”—but I do not accept this as conclusive proof, since I wish to know what St. Basil *really* teaches, and not make my own arbitrary interpretation of his words. All that can really be said of this passage is that St. Basil recognizes some kind of a “change” in the

wheat which is *not* a “change to another kind.” This kind of change is *not* evolution.

Again St. Basil writes:

Certain men have already observed that, if pines are cut down or burned, they are changed into oak forests.<sup>2</sup>

This quote really proves nothing, and I use it only because it has been used by others to show that St. Basil believed (1) that one kind of creature actually changes into another (but I will show below what St. Basil *actually* teaches on this subject); and (2) that St. Basil made scientific mistakes, since this statement is untrue. Here I should state an elementary truth: modern science, *when it deals with scientific facts*, does indeed usually know more than the Holy Fathers, and the Holy Fathers can easily make mistakes of scientific facts; *it is not scientific facts which we look for in the Holy Fathers*, but true theology and the true philosophy which is based on theology. Yet in this particular case it happens that St. Basil is *scientifically correct*, because it often in fact happens that in a pine forest there is a strong undergrowth of oak (the forest in which we live, in fact, is a similar kind of mixed pine-oak forest), and when the pine is removed by burning the oak grows rapidly and produces the change from a pine to an oak forest in ten or fifteen years. This is *not evolution*, but a different kind of change, and I will now show that St. Basil *could not* have believed that the pine is actually *transformed* or *evolved* into an oak.

Let us see now what St. Basil believed about the “evolution” or “fixity” of species. He writes:

There is nothing truer than this, that each plant either has seed or there exists in it some generative power. And this accounts for the expression “of its own kind.” For the shoot of the reed is not productive of an olive tree, but from the reed comes another reed; and from seeds spring plants related to the seeds sown. Thus, what was put forth by the earth in its first generation has been preserved until the present time, since the kinds persisted through constant reproduction.<sup>3</sup>

Again, St. Basil writes:

The nature of existing objects, set in motion by one command, passes through creation without change, by generation and destruction, preserving the succession of the kinds through resemblance, until it reaches the very end. It begets a horse as the successor of a horse, a lion of a lion, and an eagle of an eagle; and it continues to preserve each of the animals by uninterrupted successions until the consummation of the universe. No length of time causes the specific characteristics of the animals to be corrupted or effaced, but, as if established just recently, nature, ever fresh, moves along with time.<sup>4</sup>

It seems quite clear that St. Basil did *not* believe that one kind of creature is transformed into another, much less that *every* creature now existing was evolved from some other creature, and so on back to the most primitive organism. *This is a modern philosophical idea.*

I should tell you that I do *not* regard this question as being of particular importance in itself; I shall discuss below other much more important questions. If it were really a *scientific fact* that one kind of creature can be transformed into another kind, I would have no difficulty believing it, since God can do anything, and the transformations and developments we can see now in nature (an embryo becoming a man, an acorn becoming an oak tree, a caterpillar becoming a butterfly) are so astonishing that one could easily believe that one species *could* "evolve" into another.\* But there is no conclusive *scientific proof* that such a thing has *ever* happened, much less that this is the law of

---

\* Here Fr. Seraphim is saying that, if it were a conclusive finding of operational/observational science that one kind of creature can be transformed into another, he could believe in such transformations happening at the present time in certain organisms, just as he believes in the transformation of a caterpillar into a butterfly, etc. He is not saying that he would then, by necessity, believe that all living things originally came into being through such transformations, and that they can therefore be traced to a common ancestor. In the sentence that follows he distinguishes between the bare notion of the transformation of kinds and the much greater claim of evolutionary transformism as *universal law* and as *creation story*. Neither the lesser nor the greater claims, he says, are borne out by scientific evidence. But while he says he regards the notion of transformism as not being "of particular importance in itself," he goes on to show why evolutionary transformation as a creation story is of greater consequence. Whereas the former claim contradicts the teaching of St. Basil (and also Sts. Athanasius and

the universe, and everything now living derives ultimately from some primitive organism. The Holy Fathers quite clearly did not believe in any such theory—*because the theory of evolution was not invented until modern times*. It is a product of the modern Western mentality, and if you wish I can show you later how this theory developed *together with the course of modern philosophy from Descartes onward*, long before there was any “scientific proof” for it. The idea of evolution is entirely absent from the text of Genesis, according to which each creature is generated “according to its kind,” *not* “one changing into another.” And the Holy Fathers, as I will show below in detail, accepted the text of Genesis quite simply, without reading into it any “scientific theories” or allegories.

Now you will understand why I do not accept your quotations from St. Gregory of Nyssa about the “ascent of nature from the least to the perfect”<sup>\*</sup> as a proof of evolution. I believe, as the Sacred Scripture of Genesis relates, that there was indeed an orderly creation in steps; but *nowhere* in Genesis or in the writings of St. Gregory of Nyssa is it stated that one *kind* of creature was transformed into another kind, and that *all* creatures came to be in this manner! I quite disagree with you when you say: “Creation is described in the first chapter of Genesis exactly as modern science describes it.” If by “modern science” you mean *evolutionary* science, then I believe you are mistaken, as I have indicated. You have made a mistake by assuming that the kind of development described in Genesis, in St. Gregory of Nyssa, and in other Fathers is the *same* as that described by the doctrine of evolution; but such a thing *cannot* be assumed or taken for granted—you must *prove* it, and I will gladly discuss with you later the “scientific proof” for and

---

Ambrose; see pp. 183–86, 183–84n above) concerning the limits of change in living organisms, the latter goes against the entire Scriptural-Patristic testimony of the Orthodox Church concerning how God created all living things in the beginning. Moreover, the idea of transformism as creation story, which includes viewing man as an “evolved beast,” impinges on the Orthodox doctrine of the nature of man—and in particular the nature of first-created Adam—which as Fr. Seraphim later says (p. 465) is the “most important question ... raised for Orthodox theology by the modern theory of evolution.”—ED.

<sup>\*</sup> See p. 143 above and pp. 439–40 below.—ED.

against evolution, if you wish. The *development* of creation according to God's plan is one thing; the modern scientific (but actually philosophical) theory which *explains* this development by the transformation of one kind of creature into another, starting from one or a few primitive organisms, *is quite a different thing*. The Holy Fathers did *not* hold this modern theory; if you can show me that they *did* hold such a theory, I will be glad to listen to you.

If, on the other hand, by "modern science" you mean science which does *not* bind itself to the philosophical theory of evolution, I *still* disagree with you; and I will show below why I believe, according to the Holy Fathers, that modern science *cannot attain to any knowledge at all of the Six Days of Creation*. In any case, it is very arbitrary to identify the geological strata with "periods of creation."\* There are numerous difficulties in the way of this naive correspondence between Genesis and science. Does "modern science" really believe that the grass and trees of the earth existed in a long geological period *before the existence of the sun*, which was created only on the Fourth Day? I believe you are making a serious mistake in binding up your interpretation of Holy Scripture with a *particular scientific theory* (not at all a "fact"). I believe that our interpretation of Holy Scripture should be bound up with *no scientific theory*, neither "evolutionary" nor any other. Let us rather accept the Holy Scriptures *as the Holy Fathers teach us* (about which I will write below), and let us not speculate about the *how* of creation. The doctrine of evolution is a modern speculation about the *how* of creation, and in many respects it contradicts the teaching of the Holy Fathers, as I shall show below.

Of course I accept your quotations from St. Gregory of Nyssa; I have found others similar to them in other Holy Fathers. I will certainly not deny that our nature is partly an animal nature, nor that we are bound up with the whole of creation, which is indeed a marvelous unity. *But all this has nothing whatever to do with the doctrine of evolution*, that doctrine

---

\* Fr. Seraphim's comments here apply to the position of "old earth/progressive creationists," who, while not believing in evolutionary transformism and the descent of all organisms from a common ancestor, view the geological strata as a record of "periods of creation" spanning millions of years.—ED.

which is defined in all textbooks as the derivation of all presently existing creatures from one or more primitive creatures through a process of the transformation of one kind or species into another.

Further, you should realize (and now I begin to approach the important teachings of the Holy Fathers on this subject) that St. Gregory of Nyssa himself quite explicitly did *not* believe in anything like the modern doctrine of evolution, for he teaches that *the first man Adam was indeed created directly by God and was not generated like all other men*. In his book *Against Eunomius* he writes:

The first man, and the man born from him, received their being in a different way; the latter by copulation, *the former from the molding of Christ Himself*; and yet, though they are thus believed to be two, they are inseparable in the definition of their being, and are not considered as two beings.... The idea of humanity in Adam and Abel does not vary with the difference of their origin, neither the order nor the manner of their coming into existence making any difference in their nature.<sup>5</sup>

And again:

That which reasons, and is mortal, and is capable of thought and knowledge, is called "man" equally in the case of Adam and of Abel, and this name of the nature is not altered either by the fact that Abel passed into existence by generation, or by the fact that *Adam did so without generation*.<sup>6\*</sup>

Of course I agree with the teaching of St. Athanasius which you quote, that "the first-created man was made of dust like everyone, and the hand which created Adam then is creating now also and always those who come after him."<sup>\*\*</sup> How can anyone deny this obvious truth of God's continuous creative activity? But this general truth does not at all contradict the specific truth that the first man *was made in a way different from*

---

\* Similar statements by St. Gregory of Nyssa are quoted on p. 144n above.—ED.

\*\* On this quotation of St. Athanasius, see pp. 117–18, 117nn above.—ED.

*all other men*, as other Fathers also clearly teach. Thus, St. Cyril of Jerusalem calls Adam “God’s first-*formed* man,” but Cain “the first-*born* man.”<sup>7</sup> Again, he teaches clearly, discussing the creation of Adam, that *Adam was not conceived of another body*: “That of bodies bodies should be conceived, even if wonderful, is nevertheless possible; but that *the dust of the earth should become a man*, this is more wonderful.”<sup>8</sup>

Yet again, the divine Gregory the Theologian writes:

They who make “Unbegotten” and “Begotten” natures of equivocal Gods would perhaps make Adam and Seth differ in nature, since the former *was not born of flesh (for he was created)*, but the latter was born of Adam and Eve.<sup>9\*</sup>

And the same Father says even more explicitly:

What of Adam? *Was he not alone the direct creature of God?* Yes, you will say. Was he then the only human being? By no means. And why, but *because humanity does not consist in direct creation?* For that which is begotten is *also* human.<sup>10</sup>

And St. John Damascene, whose theology gives concisely the teaching of all the early Fathers, writes:

The earliest formation [of man] is called “creation” and not “genera-

---

\* Together with St. Gregory the Theologian (*Orations* 31.11, 39.12) and St. Gregory of Nyssa (*Against Eunomius* 1.34, 3.3–4; *Answer to Eunomius’ Second Book; On the Faith: To Simplicius*), St. John Damascene cited the example of the different modes of coming-into-being in the first human beings in order to explain that the Divine Persons of the Holy Trinity share the same nature: “Wherefore all the qualities the Father has are the Son’s, save that the Father is unbegotten, and this exception involves no difference in essence or dignity, but only a different mode of coming into existence. We have an analogy in Adam, who was not begotten (for God Himself molded him), and Seth, who was begotten (for he is Adam’s son), and Eve, who proceeded out of Adam’s rib (for she was not begotten). These do not differ from each other in nature, for they are human beings: but they differ in the mode of coming into existence” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 1.8, NPNF 2 9, p. 8b; cf. 4.24, p. 96b).—ED.



tion." For "*creation*" is the original formation at God's hands, while "generation" is the succession from each other made necessary by the sentence of death imposed on us on account of the transgression.<sup>11</sup> \*

And what of Eve? Do you not believe that, as the Scripture and Holy Fathers teach, she was made from Adam's rib and was not born of some other creature? But St. Cyril writes:

Eve was begotten of Adam, and not conceived of a mother, but as it were *brought forth of man alone*.<sup>12</sup>

And St. John Damascene, comparing the Most Holy Mother of God with Eve, writes:

Just as the latter *was formed from Adam without [carnal] conjunction*, so also did the former bring forth the new Adam, who was brought forth in accordance with the laws of parturition and above the nature of generation.<sup>13</sup> \*\*

---

\* In calling Adam the first-formed man and saying that he was specially created, not born, the Fathers also point out that he is the father of the human race. The following passages are representative of this teaching. St. Irenaeus: "But this is Adam, if the truth should be told, the first-formed man, of whom Scripture says that the Lord spoke, 'Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness'; and we are all from him" (*Against Heresies* 3.23.2, ANF 1, p. 456). Lactantius: "One man was formed by God, and from that one man all the earth was filled with the human race" (*Divine Institutes* 6.10, ANF 7, p. 173). St. Hilary of Poitiers: "Adam, the first parent of the human race, was formed from the earth, which was made out of nothing, . . . and began to be when he once had not been" (*On the Trinity* 12.16, NPNF 2 9, p. 222). St. Gregory of Nyssa: "Suppose someone were to state the right and sound view about Adam; namely, that it mattered not whether we called him 'father of mankind' or 'the first man formed by God' (for both mean the same thing)" (*Against Eunomius* 1.38, NPNF 2 5, p. 92). See also the quotation of St. Athanasius on p. 117 above.—ED.

\*\* While St. John Damascene compares the creation of Eve with the virginal birth of Christ (as do other Fathers; see pp. 242–43, 281n above), St. Photius the Great compares Adam and Eve's creation with the miraculous birth of the Virgin Mary from an aged and barren woman, St. Anna. To those who might doubt the latter, St. Photius rhetorically asks: "Do you accept Adam to have been molded out of clay and

It would be possible to quote other Holy Fathers on this subject, but I will not do so unless you question this point. But with all of this discussion I have not yet come to the most important questions raised by the theory of evolution, and so I shall now turn to some of them.

#### 4. *How Do the Holy Fathers Interpret Genesis?*

In what I have written about Adam and Eve, you will note that I quoted Holy Fathers who interpret the text of Genesis in a way that might be called rather "literal." Am I correct in supposing that you would like to interpret the text more "allegorically" when you say that to believe in the immediate creation of Adam by God is "a very narrow conception of the Sacred Scriptures"? This is an extremely important point, and I am truly astonished to find that "Orthodox evolutionists" *do not at all know how the Holy Fathers interpret the book of Genesis*. I am sure you will agree with me that *we are not free to interpret the Holy Scriptures as we please*, but we must interpret them *as the Holy Fathers teach us*. I am afraid that not all who speak about Genesis and evolution pay attention to this principle. Some people are so concerned to combat Protestant fundamentalism that they go to extreme lengths to refute anyone who wishes to interpret the sacred text of Genesis "literally"; but in so doing they never refer to St. Basil or other commentators on the book of Genesis, who state quite clearly the principles we are to follow in interpreting the sacred text. I am afraid that many of us who profess to follow the Patristic tradition are sometimes careless, and easily fall into accepting our own "wisdom" in place of the teaching of the Holy Fathers. I firmly believe that *the whole world outlook and philosophy of life for an Orthodox Christian may be found in the Holy Fathers*; if we will listen to their teaching instead of thinking we are wise enough to teach others from our own "wisdom," we will not go astray.

---

produced without birth; do you accept Eve to be the offspring not of intercourse but of a rib?" Christians, he argues, should "fittingly accord the same unhesitating faith" to the miraculous birth of the Virgin as they do to the "most unbelievable of things" that occurred at God's creation of Adam and Eve (St. Photius, *Homily 9: On the Nativity of the Most Holy Mother of God* 5, trans. Cyril Mango, pp. 167–68).—Ed.

And now I ask you to examine with me the very important and fundamental question: how do the Holy Fathers teach us to interpret the book of Genesis? Let us put away our preconceptions about “literal” or “allegorical” interpretations, and let us see what the *Holy Fathers* teach us about reading the text of Genesis.

We cannot do better than to begin with St. Basil himself, who has written so inspiringly of the Six Days of Creation. In the *Hexaemeron* he writes:

Those who do not admit the common meaning of the Scriptures say that water is not water, but some other nature, and they explain a plant and a fish according to their own opinion. They describe also the production of reptiles and wild animals, changing it according to their own notions, just like the dream interpreters, who interpret for their own ends the appearances seen in their dreams. When I hear “grass,” I think of grass, and in the same manner I understand everything as it is said, a plant, a fish, a wild animal, and an ox. Indeed, “I am not ashamed of the Gospel” (Rom. 1:16).... Since Moses left unsaid, as useless for us, things in no way pertaining to us, shall we for this reason believe that the words of the Spirit are of less value than the foolish wisdom [of those who have written about the world]? Or shall I rather give glory to Him Who has not kept our mind occupied with vanities but has ordained that all things be written for the edification and guidance of our souls? This is a thing of which they seem to me to have been unaware, who have attempted by false arguments and allegorical interpretations to bestow on the Scripture a dignity of their own imagining. But theirs is the attitude of one *who considers himself wiser than the revelations of the Spirit* and introduces his own ideas in pretense of an explanation. Therefore, *let it be understood as it has been written.*<sup>14</sup>

Clearly, St. Basil is warning us to beware of “explaining away” things in Genesis which are difficult for our common sense to understand; *it is very easy for the “enlightened” modern man to do this, even if he is an Orthodox Christian.* Let us therefore try all the harder to understand the Sacred Scripture *as the Fathers understand it*, and not accord-



St. Ephraim the Syrian  
(ca. 306–373).  
*Fresco from Meteora, Greece.*

ing to our modern “wisdom.” And let us not be satisfied with the views of one Holy Father; let us examine the views of other Holy Fathers as well.

One of the standard Patristic commentaries on the book of Genesis is that of St. Ephraim the Syrian. His views are all the more important for us in that he was an “Easterner” and knew the Hebrew language well. Modern scholars tell us that “Easterners” are given to “allegorical” interpretations, and that the book of Genesis likewise must be understood in this way. But let us see what St. Ephraim says in his commentary on Genesis:

No one should think that the Creation of Six Days is an allegory; it is likewise impermissible to say that what seems, according to the account, to have been created in the course of six days, was created in a single instant, and likewise that certain names presented in this account either signify nothing, or signify something else. On the contrary, one must know that just as the heaven and the earth which were created in the beginning are actually the heaven and the earth and not something else understood under the names of heaven and earth, so also *everything else that is spoken of as being created and brought into order after the creation of heaven and earth is not empty names*, but the very essence of the created natures corresponds to the force of these names.<sup>15</sup>

These are still, of course, general principles; let us look now at several specific applications by St. Ephraim of these principles.

Although both the light and the clouds were created *in the twinkling of an eye*, still both the day and the night of the First Day continued *for twelve hours each*.<sup>16</sup>

Again:

When *in the twinkling of an eye* [Adam's] rib was taken out, and likewise *in an instant* flesh took its place, and the bared bone took on the full appearance and all the beauty of a woman—then God brought and presented her to Adam.<sup>17</sup>

It is quite clear that St. Ephraim reads the book of Genesis “as it is written”; when he hears “the rib of Adam” he understands “the rib of Adam,” and does not understand this as an allegorical way of saying something else altogether. Likewise he quite explicitly understands the Six Days of Creation to be just six days, each with twenty-four hours, which he divides into an “evening” and “morning” of twelve hours each.

I have deliberately taken the “simple” commentary on Genesis of St. Ephraim the Syrian, before quoting other more “mystical” com-

mentaries, because this “simple” understanding of Genesis is the most offensive to the “enlightened” modern mind. I suspect that most Orthodox Christians who are not well read in the Holy Fathers will immediately say: “This is too simple! We know more than that now. Give us more sophisticated Fathers.” Alas for our modern “wisdom”—there are no more “sophisticated” Fathers, for *even the most “mystical” Fathers understand the text of Genesis in just the “simple” way St. Ephraim does!* Those who wish more “sophistication” in the Holy Fathers are under the influence of modern Western ideas which are entirely foreign to the Holy Fathers of the Orthodox Church. But I will have to show this by quoting many Holy Fathers.

Let us examine now specifically the question of the “length” of the Six Days of Creation. I believe that this is still a question of secondary importance among those raised by the theory of evolution, but it certainly will not hurt us to know what the Holy Fathers thought of this, all the more so because here we will begin to glimpse the great difference which exists between the modern Western idea of creation, and the Patristic idea of creation. No matter how we understand them, these “Days” are quite beyond the comprehension of us who know only the corrupt “days” of our fallen world; how can we even imagine those Days when God’s creative power was mightily at work?

The Holy Fathers themselves do not seem to speak much about this question, doubtless because *for them it was not a problem*. It is a problem for modern men chiefly *because they try to understand God’s creation by means of the laws of nature of our fallen world*. It seems to be assumed by the Fathers that those Days, in duration, were not unlike the days we know, and some of them indeed specify that they were twenty-four hours in length, as does St. Ephraim. But there is one thing about these Days which it is most important for us to understand, and that concerns what you have written about whether God created “instantly.”

You write: “Since God created time, to create something ‘instantly’ would be an act contrary to His own decision and will.... When we speak about the creation of stars, plants, animals, and man we do not speak about miracles—we do not speak about the extraordinary inter-

ventions of God in creation but about the ‘natural’ course of creation.” I wonder if you are not substituting here some “modern wisdom” for the teaching of the Holy Fathers? What is the *beginning* of all things but a *miracle*? I have already showed you that St. Gregory of Nyssa, St. Cyril of Jerusalem, St. Gregory the Theologian, and St. John Damascene (and indeed all the Fathers) teach that the first man Adam appeared in a way *different from the natural generation of all other men*; likewise the first creatures, according to the sacred text of Genesis, appeared in a way different from all their descendants: they *appeared not by natural generation but by the word of God*. The modern theory of evolution denies this, because *the theory of evolution was invented by unbelievers who wished to deny God’s action in creation and explain the creation by “natural” means alone*.<sup>\*</sup> Do you not see what *philosophy* is behind the theory of evolution?

*What do the Holy Fathers say about this?* I have already quoted St. Ephraim the Syrian, whose whole commentary on Genesis describes how *all God’s creative acts are done in an instant*, even though the whole “Days” of creation last for twenty-four hours each. Let us now see what St. Basil the Great says about God’s creative acts in the Six Days.

In speaking of the Third Day of Creation, St. Basil says:

At this saying all the dense woods appeared; all the trees shot up.... Likewise, all the shrubs were *immediately* thick with leaf and bushy; and the so-called garland plants ... all came into existence *in a moment of time, although they were not previously upon the earth*.<sup>18</sup>

Again, he says:

“Let the earth bring forth.” This brief command was *immediately* a mighty nature and an elaborate system which brought to perfection *more swiftly than our thought* the countless properties of plants.<sup>19</sup>

---

<sup>\*</sup> That this was Charles Darwin’s intention is evidenced by his notebook entries, in which he identified himself as a philosophical materialist prior to settling upon the theory of evolution for which he became known. See pp. 36–37n above.—ED.

Again, on the Fifth Day:

The command came. *Immediately* rivers were productive and marshy lakes were fruitful of kinds proper and natural to each.<sup>20</sup>

Likewise, St. John Chrysostom, in his commentary on Genesis, teaches:

Today God goes over to the waters and shows us that from them, by His word and command, there proceeded animate creatures.... What mind, tell me, can understand *this miracle*? What tongue will be able worthily to glorify the Creator? He said only: "Let the earth bring forth"—and *immediately* He aroused it to bear fruit.... Just as of the earth He said only: "Let it bring forth," and there appeared a great variety of flowers, herbs, and seeds, and everything occurred *by His word alone*, so also here He said: "Let the waters bring forth ..." and *suddenly* there appeared so many kinds of crawling things, such a variety of birds, that it is impossible even to enumerate them with words.<sup>21</sup>

Here I will repeat: I believe that modern science in most cases knows more than St. Basil, St. John Chrysostom, St. Ephraim, and other Fathers about the properties of fishes and such specific scientific facts; no one will deny this. *But who knows more about the way in which God acts*: modern science, which is not even sure that God exists, and in any case tries to explain everything without Him; or *these God-bearing Holy Fathers*? When you say that God does not create instantly, I believe that you are giving the teaching of modern "wisdom," *not* the teaching of the Holy Fathers.

Of course, there is a sense in which it is true that God's creation is not the work of an instant; but here also the Fathers are quite precise in their teaching. I have quoted St. Ephraim, who says: "It is likewise impermissible to say that what seems, according to the account, to have been created in the course of six days, was created in a single instant." With this in mind, let us look at the passage you have quoted from St. Gregory of Nyssa: "Man was created last after the plants and animals



because nature follows a path which leads gradually to perfection.”<sup>22</sup> \*  
 “It is as if by steps that nature makes its ascent in life properties from the least to the perfect.”<sup>23</sup> In quoting these passages, you have tried to understand them in the sense of the modern doctrine of evolution. But certainly it is not proper to read into these ancient texts the conclusions of modern philosophy! Here St. Gregory of Nyssa is surely teaching nothing different from what many other Fathers taught, based on a very “literal” understanding of Genesis.

Thus, St. Gregory the Theologian teaches, when he, like St. Ephraim, also states that the creation is not “instantaneous”:

To the days [of creation] is added a certain firstness, secondness, thirdness, and so on to the seventh day of rest from works, and by these days is divided all that is created, being brought into order by unutterable laws, *but not produced in an instant*, by the Almighty Word, for Whom to think or to speak means already to perform the deed. If man appeared in the world last, honored by the handiwork and image of God, this is not in the least surprising; since for him, as for a king, the royal dwelling had to be prepared and only then was the king to be led in, accompanied by all creatures.<sup>24</sup>

Again, St. John Chrysostom teaches:

The Almighty right hand of God and His limitless wisdom would have had no difficulty in creating everything in a single day. And what do I say, in a single day?—in a single instant. But since He created everything that exists not for His own benefit, because He needs nothing, being All-sufficient unto Himself, on the contrary He created everything in His love of mankind and goodness, and so He creates in parts and offers us by the mouth of the blessed Prophet a clear teaching of what is created so that we, having found out

---

\* The above quotation (as also the one that follows) was translated by Dr. Kalomiros from the Greek. A more accurate translation would be “On account of this, man was made last after the plants and animals, since nature advanced along the path to perfection successively.”—ED.



St. John Chrysostom (347–407) and St. Gregory the Theologian (ca. 329–389).  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan, Stavronikita Monastery,  
Mount Athos, 1545–1546.*

about this in detail, would not fall under the influence of those who are drawn away by human reasonings.... And why, you will say, was man created afterwards, if he surpassed all these creatures? For a good reason. When a king intends to enter a city, his armsbearers and others must go ahead, so that the king might enter chambers already prepared for him. Precisely thus did God now, intending to place as it were a king and master over everything earthly, at first arrange all this adornment, and only then did He create the master.<sup>25</sup>

Thus the Patristic teaching is clearly that God, although He *could* have created everything instantly, chose instead to create it in stages of increasing perfection, *each stage* being the work of an instant or a very short time, culminating in the creation of man, the king of creation; and the whole work is completed, neither in an instant nor in an indefinitely long time, but as it were a mean between these two extremes, *precisely in six days*.

St. Ephraim and St. John Chrysostom, in their commentaries on Genesis, clearly regard God's creation as being the work of six "literal" days, on each one of which God creates "immediately" and "instantly." And St. Basil the Great also, contrary to a widespread belief of "Christian evolutionists," viewing God's creations as "immediate" and "sudden," regarded the Six Days as being precisely of twenty-four hours' duration; for he says, regarding the First Day:

"There was evening and morning." *This means the space of a day and a night...* "And there was evening and morning, one day." Why did he say "one" and not "first"?... He said "one" because *he was defining the measure of day and night* and combining the time of a night and a day, *since the twenty-four hours fill up the interval of one day*, if, of course, night is understood with day.<sup>26</sup> \*

But even St. Gregory the Theologian, this most "contemplative" of Fathers, believed precisely the same thing, for he says:

*Just as the first creation begins with Sunday (and this is evident from the fact that the seventh day after it is Saturday, because it is the day of*

---

\* St. Ambrose, who read St. Basil's *Hexaemeron*, gave this same teaching in his own *Hexaemeron*. Concerning the close of the First Day of Creation, St. Ambrose wrote: "In notable fashion has Scripture spoken of a 'day,' not the 'first day.' Because a second, then a third, day, and finally the remaining days were to follow, a 'first day' could have been mentioned, following in this way the natural order. But Scripture established a law that twenty-four hours, including both day and night, should be given the name of day only, as if one were to say the length of one day is twenty-four hours in extent" (St. Ambrose, *Hexaemeron* 1.10, FC 42, p. 42).—ED.

## THE PATRISTIC DOCTRINE OF CREATION

repose from works), so also the second creation begins again with the same day [i.e., the day of Resurrection].<sup>27</sup>

And again the Theologian says, giving the Patristic view of the kind of world into which Adam was placed:

The Word ... having taken a part of *the newly created earth*, with His immortal hands formed my image....<sup>28</sup>

As I have said, I do not regard this question as one of the first importance in discussing the question of evolution; but it is nevertheless quite symptomatic of the influence of modern philosophy on them, that "Christian evolutionists" are so anxious to *reinterpret* these Six Days so as not to appear foolish before the "wise men" of this world, who have "proved scientifically" that whatever "creation" there was took place over countless millions of years. Most importantly, the reason why "Christian evolutionists" have such difficulty believing in the Six Days of Creation, which gave no problem to the Holy Fathers, is because *they do not understand what happened in those Six Days*: they believe that long natural processes of development were going on, according to the laws of our present corrupt world; but in actual fact, according to the Holy Fathers, *the nature of that first-created world was quite different from our world*, as I will show below.

Let us look now more closely at another basic Patristic commentary on the book of Genesis, that of St. John Chrysostom. You will note that I am not quoting obscure or dubious Fathers, but only the very pillars of Orthodoxy, in whom our whole Orthodox teaching is the most clearly and divinely expressed. In him once again we find no "allegory" at all, but only the strict interpretation of the text *as it is written*. Like the other Fathers, he tells us that Adam was formed *literally from dust*, and Eve *literally from Adam's rib*. He writes:

If the enemies of truth will insist that it is impossible to produce something from what is nonexistent, we will ask them: Was the first man created from earth, or not? Without doubt they will agree with us and say, Yes, from earth. Then let them tell us, how was flesh

formed from earth? From earth there can be dirt, bricks, clay, tile: but how was flesh produced? How were bones, nerves, sinews, fat, skin, nails, hair [produced]? How, from the single material at hand, are there so many things of different qualities? To this they cannot even open their mouths [to reply].<sup>29</sup>

And again St. John Chrysostom writes:

God took a single rib, it is said: but how from this single rib did He form a whole creature? Tell me, how did the taking of the rib occur? How did Adam not feel this taking? You can say nothing about this; this is known only by Him Who created.... God did not produce a new creation, but taking from an already existing creation a certain small part, from this part He made a whole creature. What power the Highest Artist God has, to produce from this small part (a rib) the composition of so many members, make so many organs of sense, and form a whole, perfect, and complete being!<sup>30</sup>

If you wish, I can quote many other passages from this work, showing that St. John Chrysostom—is he not the chief Orthodox interpreter of Sacred Scripture?—everywhere interprets the sacred text of Genesis *as it is written*, believing that it was nothing else than an actual *serpent* (through whom the devil spoke) who tempted our first parents in Paradise, that God actually brought all the animals before Adam for him to name, and “the names which Adam gave them remain until now.”<sup>31</sup> (But according to evolutionary doctrine, many animals were extinct by the time of Adam—must we then believe that Adam did not name “all the wild beasts” [Gen. 2:19] but only the *remnant* of them?) St. John Chrysostom says, when speaking of the rivers of Paradise:

Perhaps those who love to speak from *their own wisdom* here also will not allow that the rivers are actually rivers, nor that the waters are precisely waters, but will instill, in those who decide to listen to them, the idea that they (under the names of rivers and waters) represented something else. But I entreat you, *let us not pay heed to these*

## THE PATRISTIC DOCTRINE OF CREATION

*people, let us stop up our hearing against them, and let us believe the Divine Scripture, and following what is written in it, let us strive to preserve in our souls sound dogmas.*<sup>32</sup>

Is there need to quote more from this divine Father? Like St. Basil and St. Ephraim he warns us:

*Not to believe what is contained in the Divine Scripture, but to introduce something else from one's own mind—this, I believe, subjects those who hazard such a thing to great danger.*<sup>33</sup>

Before going on I will briefly answer one objection which I have heard from those who defend evolution: they say that if one reads all the Scripture “as it is written” one will only make oneself ridiculous. They say that if we must believe that Adam was actually made from dust and Eve from Adam’s rib, then must we not believe that God has “hands,” that He “walks” in Paradise, and the like absurdities? Such an objection could not be made by anyone who has read even a single commentary of the Holy Fathers on the book of Genesis. All the Holy Fathers distinguish between what is said about creation, which must be taken “as it is written” (unless it is an obvious metaphor or other figure of speech, such as “the sun knoweth his going down” of the Psalms; but this surely does not need to be explained to any but children), and what is said about God, which must be understood, as St. John Chrysostom says repeatedly, “in a God-befitting manner.” For example, St. John Chrysostom writes:

When you hear, beloved, that “God planted Paradise in Eden in the east,” understand the word “planted” befittingly of God: that is, that He commanded; but concerning the words that follow, *believe precisely that Paradise was created and in that very place where the Scripture has assigned it.*<sup>34</sup>

St. John of Damascus, in his work *On Heresies*, explicitly describes the allegorical interpretation of Paradise to be part of a heresy, that of the Origenists:

They explain Paradise, the heavens, and everything else in an allegorical sense.<sup>35</sup> \*

But what, then, are we to understand of those Holy Fathers of profound spiritual life who interpret the book of Genesis and other Holy Scriptures in a spiritual or mystical sense? *If we ourselves had not gone so far away from the Patristic understanding of Scripture, this would present no problem whatever to us.* The same text of Holy Scripture is true “as it is written,” and it *also* has a spiritual interpretation. Behold what the great Father of the desert, St. Macarius the Great, a clairvoyant Saint who raised the dead, says:

That Paradise was closed and that a Cherubim was commanded to prevent man from entering it by a flaming sword: of this we believe that *in visible fashion it was indeed just as it is written, and at the same time* we find that this occurs mystically in every soul.<sup>36</sup>

Our modern “Patristic scholars,” who approach the Holy Fathers not as living founts of tradition but only as dead “academic sources,” invariably misunderstand this very important point. Any Orthodox Christian who *lives* in the tradition of the Holy Fathers knows that when a Holy Father interprets a passage of Holy Scripture spiritually or allegorically, *he is not thereby denying its literal meaning, which he assumes the reader knows enough to accept.* I will give a clear example of this.

The divine Gregory the Theologian, in his Homily on the Theophany, writes concerning the tree of knowledge:

The tree was, according to my view, Contemplation, upon which it is only safe for those who have reached maturity of habit to enter.<sup>37</sup>

---

\* Part of St. John Damascene’s book *On Heresies*, including his refutation of Origenism, was based on the *Panarion* (*The Medicine Chest*), a much earlier work on heresies by St. Epiphanius of Salamis. St. Epiphanius wrote in the *Panarion*: “Finally, he [Origen] interprets whatever he can allegorically—Paradise, its waters, the waters above the heavens, the water under the earth. He never stops saying these ridiculous things and others like them” (*Panarion* 63.4.10). In his *Ancoratus* (*The Well-anchored Man*) (54–64), St. Epiphanius further argued, against Origen, that the trees mentioned in Genesis are real trees, the rivers are real rivers, the bodies of Adam and Eve were really created as stated in Genesis, etc.—ED.

This is a profound spiritual interpretation, and I do not know of any passage in this Father's writings where he says explicitly that this tree was also a literal tree, "as it is written." Is it therefore an "open question," as our academic scholars might tell us, whether he completely "allegorized" the story of Adam and Paradise?

Of course, we know from other writings of St. Gregory that he did *not* allegorize Adam and Paradise. But even more important, we have the direct testimony of another great Father concerning the very question of St. Gregory's interpretation of the tree of knowledge.

But before I give this testimony I must make sure you agree with me on a basic principle of interpreting the writings of the Holy Fathers. *When they are giving the teaching of the Church, the Holy Fathers* (if only they *are* genuine Holy Fathers and not merely ecclesiastical writers of uncertain authority) *do not contradict each other*, even if to our feeble understanding there *seem* to be contradictions between them. It is academic rationalism that pits one Father against another, traces their "influence" on each other, divides them into "schools" and "factions," and finds "contradictions" between them. All of this is foreign to the Orthodox Christian understanding of the Holy Fathers. For us the Orthodox teaching of the Holy Fathers is one single whole, and since the whole of Orthodox teaching is obviously not contained in any one Father (for all the Fathers are human and thus limited), we find parts of it in one Father and other parts in another Father, and one Father explains what is obscure in another Father; and it is not even of primary importance for us who said what, as long as it is Orthodox and in harmony with the whole Patristic teaching.\* I am sure that you agree with me on this principle and that you will not be surprised that I am now going to present an interpretation of the words of St. Gregory the Theologian by a great Holy Father who lived a thousand years after him: St. Gregory Palamas, Archbishop of Thessalonica.

Against St. Gregory Palamas and the other hesychast Fathers who taught the true Orthodox doctrine of the "Uncreated Light" of Mount Tabor, there rose up the Western rationalist Barlaam. Taking advantage

---

\* On this guiding principle, see the quotation of St. Barsanuphius the Great of Gaza on p. 31n above.—ED.



of the fact that St. Maximus the Confessor in one passage had called this Light of the Transfiguration a "symbol of theology," Barlaam taught that this Light was not a manifestation of the Divinity, but only something bodily, not "literally" Divine Light, but only a "symbol" of it. This led St. Gregory Palamas to make a reply which illuminates for us the relation between the "symbolical" and "literal" interpretation of Holy Scripture, particularly with regard to the passage from St. Gregory the Theologian which I have quoted above. He writes that Barlaam and others

do not see that Maximus, wise in Divine matters, has called the Light of the Lord's Transfiguration a "symbol of theology" only by analogy and in a spiritual sense. In fact, in a theology which is analogical and intended to elevate us, objects which have an existence of their own become themselves, in fact and in words, symbols by homonymy; it is in this sense that Maximus calls this Light a "symbol." ... Similarly, Gregory the Theologian has called the tree of the knowledge of good and evil "contemplation," having in his contemplation considered it as a symbol of this "contemplation" which is intended to elevate us; *but it does not follow that what is involved is an illusion or a symbol without existence of its own*. For the divine Maximus also makes Moses the symbol of judgment, and Elijah the symbol of foresight! *Are they too then supposed not to have really existed*, but to have been invented "symbolically"? And could not Peter, for one who would wish to elevate himself in contemplation, become a symbol of faith, James of hope, and John of love?<sup>38\*</sup>

---

\* In the same vein, St. Bede the Venerable speaks of the need to uphold the historical meaning of the Genesis narrative when a symbolic meaning is given. Having offered a symbolic interpretation of Genesis 1:1 at the beginning of his *Commentary on Genesis*, he adds: "But one must carefully contemplate lest he would so weigh down this study with the allegorical sense that he would then forsake the plainly faithful account of history with his allegorical approach" (*Commentary on Genesis* 1:1, ACT, p. 114).

On the relation between literal and symbolic interpretations of Scripture, see also pp. 39–43, 40–41nn, 42n, 78–79, 119–24, 121n, 122–23n, 275, 275–76n above.—ED.

It would be possible to multiply such quotations which show what the Holy Fathers actually taught about the interpretation of Holy Scripture, and in particular of the book of Genesis; but I have already presented enough to show that the genuine Patristic teaching on this subject presents grave difficulties for one who would like to interpret the book of Genesis in accordance with modern ideas and "wisdom," and indeed the Patristic interpretation makes it *quite impossible* to harmonize the account of Genesis with the theory of evolution, which requires an entirely "allegorical" interpretation of the text in many places where the Patristic interpretation will not allow this. The doctrine that Adam was created, not from the dust, but by development from some other creature, is a novel teaching which is entirely foreign to Orthodox Christianity.

At this point the "Orthodox evolutionist" might try to salvage his position (of believing *both* in the modern theory of evolution *and* in the teaching of the Holy Fathers) in one of two ways.

a. He may try to say that we now know more than the Holy Fathers about nature and therefore we really can interpret the book of Genesis better than they. But even the "Orthodox evolutionist" knows that the book of Genesis is *not a scientific treatise*, but a Divinely inspired work of cosmogony and theology. The interpretation of the Divinely inspired Scripture is clearly the work of God-bearing theologians, not of natural scientists, who ordinarily do not know the very first principles of such interpretation. It is true that in the book of Genesis many "facts" of nature are presented. But it must be carefully noted that these facts are not facts such as we can observe now, but an entirely special kind of facts: the creation of the heavens and the earth, of all animals and plants, of the first man. I have already pointed out that the Holy Fathers teach quite clearly that the creation of the first man Adam, for example, is *quite different* from the generation of men today; it is only the latter that science can observe, and about the creation of Adam it offers only *philosophical speculations*, not scientific knowledge.

According to the Holy Fathers, *it is possible for us to know something of this first-created world*, but this knowledge is *not* accessible to natural science. I will discuss this question further below.

b. Or again, the "Orthodox evolutionist," in order to preserve the

unquestioned Patristic interpretation of at least some of the facts described in Genesis, may begin to make arbitrary modifications of the theory of evolution itself, in order to make it "fit" the text of Genesis. Thus, one "Orthodox evolutionist" might decide that the creation of the first man must be a "special creation" which does not fit into the general pattern of the rest of creation, and thus he can believe the Scriptural account of the creation of Adam more or less "as it is written," while believing in the rest of the Six Days' Creation in accordance with "evolutionary science"; while another "Orthodox evolutionist" might accept the "evolution" of man himself from lower creatures, while specifying that Adam, the "first-evolved man," appeared only in very recent times (in the evolutionary time scale of "millions of years"), thus preserving at least the historical reality of Adam and the other Patriarchs as well as the universally held Patristic opinion (about which I can speak in another letter, if you wish) that Adam was created about 7,500 years ago. I am sure you will agree with me that such rationalistic devices are quite foolish and futile. If the universe "evolves," as modern philosophy teaches, then man "evolves" with it, and we must accept whatever all-knowing "science" tells us about the age of man; but if the Patristic teaching is correct, it is correct regarding *both* man and the rest of creation.

If you can explain to me how one can accept the Patristic interpretation of the book of Genesis and still believe in evolution, I will be glad to listen to you; but you will also have to give me better *scientific* evidence for evolution than that which so far exists, for to the objective and dispassionate observer the "scientific evidence" for evolution is extremely weak.

##### 5. *"The Bondage of Corruption" (Romans 8:21)*

Now I come at last to the two most important questions which are raised by the theory of evolution: the nature of the first-created world, and the nature of the first-created man Adam.

I believe you express correctly the Patristic teaching when you say: "The animals became corrupted because of man; the law of the jungle is a consequence of the fall of man." I also agree with you, as I have

already said, that man, on the side of his body, is bound together with and is an organic part of the whole of the visible creation, and this helps make it understandable how the whole creation fell together with him into death and corruption. But you think that this is a proof of evolution, a proof that man's body evolved from some other creature! Surely if this is the case, the God-inspired Fathers would have known about it, and we would not have had to wait for the atheist philosophers of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries to discover this and tell us about it!!

No, the Holy Fathers believed that the whole creation fell with Adam, but they did *not* believe that Adam "evolved" from some other creature; why should I believe differently from the Holy Fathers?

Now I come to a very important point. You ask: "How is it that the fall of Adam brought corruption and the law of the jungle to the animals, since animals have been created before Adam? We know that animals died, killed and devoured one another since their first appearance on earth and not only after the appearance of man."\*

*How do you know this? Are you sure that this is what the Holy Fathers teach?* You explain your point, not by quoting any Holy Fathers, but by

---

\* Not only "Christian evolutionists" such as Dr. Kalomiros, but also "old-earth/progressive creationists" (who as noted above do not believe in evolution *per se* but accept the evolutionary/uniformitarian schema of "millions of years") are forced by their position to conclude that there were millions of years of death and decay before the appearance of man. Here is one example from an old-earth/progressive creationist article intended as a catechesis for children:

"Starting about 2 to 4 million years ago God began creating man-like mammals or 'hominids.' These creatures stood on two feet, had large brains, and used tools. Some even buried their dead and painted on cave walls. However, they were very different from us. They had no spirit. They did not have consciences like we do. They did not worship God or establish religious practices.

"In time, all these man-like creatures went extinct. Then, about 10 to 25 thousand years ago, God replaced them with Adam and Eve" (Hugh Ross, "Genesis One, Dinosaurs, and Cavemen").

On the numerous problems and contradictions inherent in the "progressive creationist" position, see Jonathan Sarfati, *Refuting Compromise: A Biblical and Scientific Refutation of "Progressive Creationism,"* and Tim Chaffey & Jason Lisle, *Old-Earth Creationism on Trial.*—Ed.

giving a philosophy of “time.” I certainly agree with you that God is outside of time; to Him everything is present. But this fact is not a proof that animals, who died *because* of Adam, died *before* he fell.\*  
*What do the Holy Fathers say?*

It is true, of course, that most Holy Fathers speak about animals as already corruptible and mortal; but they are speaking about their fallen state. What about their state before the transgression of Adam?

There is a very significant hint about this in the commentary on Genesis of St. Ephraim the Syrian. When speaking of the “skins”

---

\* In his letter, Dr. Kalomiros had argued that, since God is outside time, Adam’s sin had a *retroactive* effect on all the other creatures: “The consequences of Adam’s fall have penetrated the whole universe in time as well as in space. Animals were in corruption long before the appearance of man on earth. Nevertheless, they were in corruption *because* of man.” This notion was first proposed by Protestant geologists J. Jay Dana and Edward Hitchcock in 1846 and 1851, respectively, after the uniformitarian idea of vast ages of earth history had taken hold—an idea which, as we have seen, inevitably entails millions of years of suffering and death before the appearance of man. Subsequently, the “retroactive” interpretation of the fall never caught on, undoubtedly due to the fact that it was deemed an obvious contrivance that did violence to the intended meaning of Scripture. In recent times, however, an attempt has been made to revive it by intelligent design theorist William A. Dembski in his book *The End of Christianity: Finding a Good God in an Evil World* (2009). Dana and Dembski argue (p. 110), as does Kalomiros in his letter to Fr. Seraphim, that the fall could have had a retroactive effect because Christ’s redemptive work also had such an effect. This argument, however, quickly falls apart upon examination. According to Scriptural-Patristic teaching, while it is true that Christ’s death was salvific for the souls of righteous ones who lived before Him, these souls were delivered from hades immediately *after* His death had been accomplished, not before (see pp. 340–42, 342n above and pp. 723, 753, 753n, 757–59 below); and while His rising from the dead is the cause of the incorruption of man and the cosmos, we still await that condition at the general resurrection, at a time posterior to that of His own Resurrection (see pp. 759–61 below). If the consequences of Christ’s redemptive work were indeed retroactive in the way that Kalomiros et al. propose in connection with the fall, then these consequences—the deliverance of the soul from hades, the body from death, and the cosmos from corruption—should have been tangibly seen from the beginning of the world and the dawn of man. On the contrary, according to the traditional Christian worldview, the cause-and-effect sequence of both the primordial transgression and Christ’s redemptive work is seen to exist within a linear temporal framework.—ED.

which God made for Adam and Eve after their transgression, St. Ephraim writes:

One may suppose that the first parents, touching their waists with their hands, found that they were clothed with garments made of animal skins—killed, it may be, before their very eyes, so that they might eat their meat, cover their nakedness with the skins, *and in their very death might see the death of their own body.*<sup>39</sup>

I will discuss below the Patristic teaching of the immortality of Adam before his transgression, but here I am only interested in the question of whether animals died before the fall. Why should St. Ephraim suggest that Adam would learn about death by seeing the death of animals—*if he had already seen the death of animals before his transgression* (which he certainly had according to the evolutionary view)? But this is only a suggestion; there are other Holy Fathers who speak quite definitely on this subject, as I will show in a moment.

But first I must ask you: if it is true as you say that animals died and the creation was corrupted *before* the transgression of Adam, then how can it be that God looked at His creation after every one of the Days of Creation and “saw that it was good,” and after creating the animals on the Fifth and Sixth Days He “saw that they were good,” and at the end of the Six Days, after the creation of man, “God saw all the things that He had made, and behold, they were very good.” How could they be “good” if they were already mortal and corruptible, contrary to God’s plan for them? The Divine services of the Orthodox Church contain many moving passages of *lamentation* about the “corrupted creation,” as well as expressions of joy that Christ by His Resurrection has “recalled the corrupted creation.” *How could God see this lamentable condition of the creation and say that it was “very good”?*

And again, we read in the sacred text of Genesis: “And God said, Behold, I have given to you every seed-bearing herb sowing seed which is upon all the earth, and every tree which has in itself the fruit of seed that is sown, to you it shall be for food. And to all the wild beasts of the earth, and to all the flying creatures of heaven, and to every reptile

creeping on the earth, which has in itself the breath of life, even *every green plant for food*; and it was so" (Gen. 1:29–30). Why, if the animals devoured each other before the fall, as you say, did God give them, *even "all the wild beasts and every reptile"* (many of which are now strictly carnivorous) only "green plants for food"? Only long after the transgression of Adam did God say to Noah: "And every moving thing that lives *shall be to you for food; I have given all things to you as the green herbs*" (Gen. 9:3). Do you not sense here the presence of a mystery which so far has escaped you because you insist on interpreting the sacred text of Genesis by means of modern evolutionary philosophy, which will not admit that animals could ever have been *of a nature different from that which they now possess*?

But the Holy Fathers clearly teach that the animals (as well as man) were *different* before the transgression of Adam! Thus St. John Chrysostom writes:

It is clear that man in the beginning had complete authority over the animals.... But that now we are afraid and terrified of beasts and do not have authority over them, this I do not deny.... *In the beginning it was not so, but the beasts feared and trembled and submitted to their master.* But when through disobedience he lost boldness, then also his authority was diminished. That all animals were subject to man, hear what the Scripture says: He brought the beasts and all irrational creatures "to Adam to see what he would call them" (Gen. 2:19). And he, seeing the beasts near him, did not run away, but like another lord he gives names to the slaves which are subject to him, since he gave names to all animals.... This is already sufficient as proof that beasts in the beginning were not frightful for man. But there is another proof not less powerful and even clearer. Which? The conversation of the serpent with the woman. If the beast had been frightful to man, then seeing the serpent the woman would not have stopped, would not have taken his advice, would not have conversed with him with such fearlessness, but immediately on seeing him would have been terrified and run away. But behold, she converses and is not afraid; *there was not yet then any fear.*<sup>40</sup>

Is it not clear that St. John Chrysostom reads the first part of the text of Genesis "as it is written," as an *historical* account of the state of man and creation before the transgression of Adam, when both man and animals were different from what they now are? Similarly, St. John Damascene tells us that

*at that time* the earth brought forth of itself *fruits* for the use of the animals that were subject to man, and there were neither violent rains upon the earth nor wintry storms. But after the fall, "when he was compared to senseless beasts and was become like to them" (Ps. 48:21) ... *then the creation subject to him rose up against this ruler appointed by the Creator.*<sup>41</sup>

Perhaps you will object that in the same place St. John Damascene also says, speaking of the creation of animals, "Everything was for the suitable use of man. Of the animals, *some were for food*, such as deer, sheep, gazelles, and the like." But you must read this passage *in context*; for at the end of this paragraph we read (just as you have noted that God created man male and female *foreknowing* Adam's transgression):

God knew all things before they were made and *He saw that man in his freedom would fall and be given over to corruption*; yet for man's suitable use He made all the things that are in the sky and on the earth and in the water.<sup>42</sup>

Do you not see from the Holy Scripture and the Holy Fathers that God creates creatures so that they will be useful to man *even in his corrupted state*; but *He does not create them already corrupted*, and they were not corrupted *until Adam sinned*.\*

But let us turn now to a Holy Father who speaks quite explicitly about *the incorruption of the creation before Adam's disobedience*: St. Gregory the Sinaite. He is a Holy Father of the highest spiritual life and theological soundness, who attained to the heights of Divine vision. In the Russian [edition of the] *Philokalia* he writes:

---

\* On the capacities and attributes with which animals were created in God's foreknowledge of man's fall, see p. 707n below.—ED.



*The presently existing creation was not originally created corruptible; but afterwards it fell under corruption, being "made subject to futility," according to the Scripture, "not willingly, but by reason of Him Who hath subjected it in hope" of the renewal of Adam who had become subject to corruption (Rom. 8:20). He Who renewed and sanctified Adam has renewed the creation also, but He has not yet delivered it from corruption.*<sup>43</sup>

Further, the same Father gives us remarkable details about the state of the creation (in particular, Paradise) before Adam's transgression:

Eden is a place in which there was planted by God every kind of fragrant plant. It is neither completely incorruptible, nor entirely corruptible. *Placed between corruption and incorruption*, it is always both abundant in fruits and blossoming with flowers, both mature and immature. The mature trees and fruits are converted into fragrant earth *which does not give off any odor of corruption, as do the trees of this world.* This is from the abundance of the grace of sanctification which is constantly poured forth there.<sup>44</sup>

(This passage is expressed in the present tense—*because the Paradise in which Adam was placed is still in existence*, but is not visible to our normal sense organs.)

What will you say of these passages? Will you still be so certain, as "uniformitarian" evolutionary philosophy teaches, that the creation *before* the fall was just the same as it is now after the fall? The Holy Scripture teaches us that "*God made not death*" (Wisdom 1:13), and St. John Chrysostom teaches that

just as the creation became corruptible *when your body became corruptible*, so also when your body will be incorrupt, the creation also will follow after it and become corresponding to it (*Homilies on Romans*).<sup>45</sup>

And St. Macarius the Great says:

Adam was placed as lord and king of all the creatures.... But *after his captivity*, there was taken captive together with him the creation

which served him and submitted to him, because through him death came to reign over every soul.<sup>46</sup>

The teaching of the Holy Fathers, if we accept it “as it is written” and do not try to reinterpret it by means of our human wisdom, is clearly that *the state of creatures before the transgression of Adam was quite different from their present state*.<sup>\*</sup> I am not trying to tell you that I know precisely what this state was; this state between corruption and incorruption is very mysterious to us who live entirely in corruption. Another great Orthodox Father, St. Symeon the New Theologian, teaches that *the law of nature we now know is different from the law of nature before Adam’s transgression*. He writes:

The words and decrees of God become the law of nature. Therefore also the decree of God, uttered by Him as a result of the disobedience of the first Adam—that is, the decree to him of death and corruption—*became the law of nature, eternal and unalterable*.<sup>47</sup>

What the “law of nature” was before Adam’s transgression, which of us sinful men can define? *Certainly natural science*, bound up entirely with its observation of the *present* state of creation, *cannot investigate it*.

*Then how do we know anything at all about it?* Obviously, because God has revealed something of it to us through the Sacred Scripture. But we know, also, from the writings of St. Gregory the Sinaite (and other writings which I shall quote below), that God has revealed something besides what is in the Scriptures. And this brings me to another extremely important question raised by evolution.

## 6. Divine Vision

*What is the source of our true knowledge of the first-created world, and how is it different from science?* How can St. Gregory the Sinaite know what happens to the ripe fruits of Paradise, and why can natural

---

<sup>\*</sup> For further elucidation of the Scriptural-Patristic teaching on the original incorruption of man and the cosmos, and on the entrance of death and corruption, see appendix 1, “Created in Incorruption,” below.—ED.

science not discover such a thing? Since you are a lover of the Holy Fathers, I believe you already know the answer to this question. Still, I will set forth the answer, based not on my own reasoning but on the authority of a Holy Father of the highest spiritual life, St. Isaac the Syrian, who spoke of the soul's ascent to God *based on his own experience of it*. In describing how the soul is enraptured at the thought of the future age of incorruption, St. Isaac writes:

And from this one is already exalted in his mind to that which preceded the composition of the world, when there was no creature, nor heaven, nor earth, nor angels, nothing of that which was brought into being, and to how God, solely by His good will, *suddenly brought everything from non-being into being, and everything stood before Him in perfection.*<sup>48</sup>

Do you see that St. Gregory the Sinaite and other Holy Fathers of the highest spiritual life beheld the first-created world *in the state of Divine vision*, which is beyond all natural knowledge? St. Gregory the Sinaite himself states that the "eight primary visions" of the state of perfect prayer are: (1) God, (2) the angelic powers, (3) *"the composition of visible things,"* (4) the condescension of the Word (the Incarnation), (5) the universal resurrection, (6) the Second Coming of Christ, (7) eternal torments, (8) the eternal Kingdom of Heaven.<sup>49</sup> Why should the "composition of visible things" be included together with the other objects of Divine vision which are all within the sphere of theological knowledge alone, and not scientific knowledge? Is it not because there is an aspect and state of creatures *beyond the sphere of scientific knowledge*, which can only be seen, as St. Isaac himself saw God's creation, in vision by God's grace? The objects of these visions, St. Gregory teaches, "are clearly beheld and known by those who have attained by grace complete purity of mind."<sup>50</sup>

In another place St. Isaac the Syrian clearly describes *the difference between natural knowledge and faith*, which leads to vision.

Knowledge is a rule of nature, and this rule preserves it in all its steps. But faith performs its journey *above nature*. Knowledge does not attempt to permit anything to come to it which is subversive of nature, but

avoids this; but faith permits this and says: "Thou shalt tread upon the asp and the basilisk, and thou shalt trample on the lion and the dragon" (Ps. 90:13)... Many by faith have entered flames, bridled the burning power of fire and passed unharmed through its midst, and walked on the surface of the sea as on dry land. But all this is above nature, contrary to the capabilities of knowledge, and it is shown that the latter is vain in all its capabilities and laws. *Do you see how knowledge preserves the bounds of nature? Do you see how faith goes above nature* and there traces the steps of its path? The capabilities of knowledge for 5,000 years, or a little more or less than this, governed the world, and man in no way could raise his head from the earth and acknowledge his Creator, until our faith shone forth and delivered us from the darkness of earthly doing and vain submission to the empty soaring of the mind. And even now, when we have found an imperturbable sea and an inexhaustible treasure, again we desire to turn away toward tiny springs. There is no knowledge that would not be poor, no matter how much it might be enriched. But the treasures of faith can be contained neither by the heaven nor by the earth.<sup>51</sup>

Do you now see what is at stake in the argument between the Patristic understanding of Genesis and the doctrine of evolution? The doctrine of evolution attempts to understand the mysteries of God's creation by means of natural knowledge and worldly philosophy, not even allowing the possibility that there is something in these mysteries which places them beyond its capabilities of knowing; while the book of Genesis is an account of God's creation *as seen in Divine vision by the God-seer Moses*, and this vision is confirmed also by the experience of later Holy Fathers. Now, even though revealed knowledge is higher than natural knowledge, still we know that there can be no conflict between *true* revelation and *true* natural knowledge. But there *can* be conflict between revelation and *human philosophy*, which is often in error. There is thus no conflict between the knowledge of creation contained in Genesis, as interpreted for us by the Holy Fathers, and the *true* knowledge of creatures which modern science has acquired by observation; but there most certainly is an irreconcilable conflict between the knowledge contained in Genesis *and the vain philosophical speculations of modern scien-*

*tists, unenlightened by faith, about the state of the world in the Six Days of Creation.\* Where there is a genuine conflict between Genesis and modern philosophy, if we wish to know the truth we must accept the teaching of the Holy Fathers and reject the false opinions of scientific philosophers. The world has now become so infected by vain modern philosophy posing as science that very few, even among Orthodox Christians, are willing or able to examine this question dispassionately and discover what the Holy Fathers really taught, and then accept the Patristic teaching even if it seems utter foolishness to the vain wisdom of this world.*

Concerning the true Patristic view of the first-created world, already I think I have indicated enough to you of the Patristic views which at first sight seem “surprising” to an Orthodox Christian whose understanding of Genesis has been obscured by modern scientific philosophy. Most “surprising” of all, perhaps, is the fact that the Holy Fathers understood the text of Genesis “as it is written,” and do not allow us to interpret it “freely” or allegorically. Many Orthodox Christians with a “modern education” have become accustomed to associating such an interpretation with Protestant fundamentalism, and they are afraid of being considered “naïve” by sophisticated scientific philosophers; but it is clear how much more profound is the true Patristic interpretation than that of the fundamentalists, on the one hand, who have never even heard of Divine vision and whose interpretation sometimes coincides with that of the Holy Fathers only by accident, as it were; and on the other hand, how much more profound is the Patristic interpretation than that of those who uncritically accept the speculations of modern philosophy as if they were true knowledge.

It may help the “modern” Orthodox Christian to understand how the incorruption of the first-created world is beyond the competence of science to investigate, if he would examine the fact of incorruption *as it has been manifested by God’s action even in our present corrupted world.* We can find no higher manifestation of this incorruption than in the Most Holy Mother of God, of Whom we sing: “Thee Who *without corruption* gavest birth to God the Word, true Mother of God, we magnify.” The Theotokia of our Orthodox Divine services are full

---

\* On this, see the teaching of St. Theophan the Recluse, pp. 789–94 below.—Ed.

of this doctrine. St. John Damascene points out that in two respects this "incorruption" is *beyond the laws of nature*. "So far as He had no father, [Christ's] birth was above the nature of generation," and "in that His birth was painless, it was above the laws of generation."<sup>52</sup> What does the Orthodox Christian say when a modern unbeliever, under the influence of modern naturalistic philosophy, insists that such "incorruption" is "impossible," and demands that Christians believe only what can be proved or observed by science? Does he not hold to his faith, which is a revealed knowledge, *in spite of "science" and its philosophy*? Does he not indeed tell this pseudoscientist that *he cannot possibly know or understand this fact of incorruption, inasmuch as the works of God are above nature*? Then why should we hesitate to believe the truth about the creation before Adam's fall, if we become convinced that the Holy Fathers indeed teach us that it is something quite beyond the competence of science to investigate or know? One who accepts the evolutionary philosophy of the creation before Adam's transgression, and thus rejects the Patristic teaching, only prepares the way in his own soul, and in the souls of others, to accept an evolutionary or other pseudoscientific view of many other Orthodox doctrines also. We hear today many Orthodox priests who tell us, "Our faith in Christ does not depend on how we interpret Genesis. You can believe as you wish." But how can it be that our negligence in understanding one part of God's revelation (which, by the way, is indeed closely bound up with Christ, the Second Adam, Who became incarnate *in order to restore us to our original state*) will not lead to negligence in understanding the whole doctrine of the Orthodox Church? It is not for nothing that St. John Chrysostom closely binds together *the correct and strict interpretation of Scripture (specifically Genesis) and the correct dogmas which are essential for our SALVATION*. Speaking of those who interpret the book of Genesis allegorically, he says:

Let us not pay heed to these people, let us stop up our hearing against them, and let us believe the Divine Scripture, and following what is written in it, let us strive to preserve in our souls sound dogmas, and at the same time to lead also a right life, so that our life would both testify of the dogmas, and the dogmas would give firm-

ness to our life.... If we live well but will be negligent over right dogmas, we can acquire nothing for our salvation. If we wish to be delivered from Gehenna and receive the Kingdom, we must be adorned both with the one and with the other—both with rightness of dogmas, and strictness of life.<sup>53</sup>

There is one other question regarding the state of the first-created world about which you may wonder: what about the “millions of years” of the world’s existence which science “knows to be a fact”? This letter is already too long and I cannot discuss this question here. But if you wish, in another letter I can discuss this question also, including the “radiocarbon” and other “absolute” dating systems, giving you *the views of reputable scientists* about them and showing you how these “millions of years” also are *not at all a fact* but only more “philosophy.” This very idea was never even thought of until men, *under the influence of naturalistic philosophy*, began already to *believe* in evolution and saw that if evolution is true, then the world *must* be millions of years old (since evolution *has never been observed*, it is conceivable *only* under the supposition of countless millions of years which can bring about those processes which are too “minute” for contemporary scientists to see).<sup>\*</sup> If you will examine this question objectively and dispassionately, *separating genuine evidence from suppositions and philosophy*, you will see, I

---

<sup>\*</sup> Ideas of biological evolution were being propagated from the first half of the eighteenth century by such writers as Charles de Montesquieu (1689–1755), Benoît de Maillet (1656–1738), Pierre Louis Maupertuis (1698–1759), Denis Diderot (1713–1784), and George Louis Buffon (1707–1788), before uniformitarian ideas of vast ages of natural history were popularized by James Hutton (1726–1797) and Charles Lyell (1797–1875). By the time Lyell’s seminal work, *Principles of Geology*, was published in 1830–1833, the evolutionary formulations of Erasmus Darwin (1731–1802) and Jean-Baptiste Lamarck (1744–1829) had also attracted considerable attention. Lyell was in fact heavily influenced by Lamarck. As noted elsewhere (pp. 517–18n below), Lyell in turn influenced Erasmus Darwin’s grandson Charles, whose theory of biological evolution through natural selection gained ascendancy after the publication of *The Origin of Species* in 1859. Thus, while it is true that the concept of biological evolution helped make way for the concept of millions of years of earth history (“deep time”), it is also true that the idea of a very old earth contributed to Charles Darwin’s formulation of evolutionary theory and to its widespread acceptance.—ED.

believe, that there is no genuine factual evidence which requires us to believe that the earth is more than 7,500 years old. What one believes about this is *entirely dependent on his philosophy of the creation.*

To sum up the Patristic teaching of the first-created world I can do no better than to copy out the divine words of a Holy Father who so shone forth in mental prayer that he was only the third Father to be called by the entire Orthodox Church "Theologian": I mean St. Symeon the New Theologian. In his 45th Homily (Russian edition), speaking from Patristic tradition and probably also from his own experience, he says:

God, in the beginning, before He planted Paradise and gave it over to the first-created ones, in five days set in order the earth and what is on it, and the heaven and what is in it. And on the sixth day He created Adam and placed him as lord and king of the whole visible creation. Then there was not yet Paradise. But this world was from God as a kind of Paradise, although it was material and sensuous. God gave it over to the authority of Adam and all his descendants.... "And God planted Paradise in Eden in the east.... And God made to spring up also out of the earth every tree beautiful to the eye and good for food" (Gen. 2:8-9), *with various fruits which never spoiled and never ceased, but were always fresh and sweet* and furnished for the first-created ones great satisfaction and pleasantness. For it was fitting to furnish also an incorruptible enjoyment for these bodies of the first-created ones, which were incorrupt.... *Adam was made with a body that was incorrupt*, although material and not yet spiritual, and was placed by the Creator God *as an immortal king over an incorrupt world, not only over Paradise, but also over the whole of creation* which was under the heavens....

[After Adam's transgression] God did not curse Paradise ... but He cursed only the whole rest of the earth, *which also was incorrupt* and brought forth everything by itself.... It was fitting in all justice for the one who had become corruptible and mortal by reason of the transgression of the commandment, to live upon the corruptible earth and be nourished with corruptible food.... Then also all creatures, when they saw that Adam had been banished from Para-



dise, no longer wished to submit to him, the criminal.... But God restrained all these creatures by His power, and in His compassion and goodness did not allow them immediately to strive against man, and commanded that the creation should remain in submission to him, and *having become corrupt*, should serve corrupt man for whom it had been created, with the aim that when man again should be renewed and become spiritual, incorrupt, and immortal, then also the whole creation, which had been subjected by God to man to serve him, might be delivered from this servitude, might be renewed together with him, and become incorrupt and as it were spiritual....

It is not fitting for the bodies of men to be clothed in the glory of the resurrection and to become incorrupt before the renewal of all creatures. But just as in the beginning, *first the whole creation was created incorrupt, and then from it man was taken and made*, so also it is fitting that again first all the creation should become incorrupt, and then the corruptible bodies of men also should be renewed and become incorrupt, so that once more the whole man might be incorrupt and spiritual and might dwell in an incorruptible, eternal, and spiritual dwelling.... Do you see that *this whole creation in the beginning was incorrupt and was created by God in the manner of Paradise? But later* it was subjected by God to corruption, and submitted to the futility of men.

You should know likewise what is to be the glory and the brightly shining state of the creation in the future age. For when it will be renewed, it will not again be the same as it was when it was created in the beginning. But it will be such as, according to the word of the divine Paul, our body will also be.... The whole creation, according to the commandment of God, is to be, after the general resurrection, not such as it was created, material and sensuous, but it is to be re-created and to become a certain immaterial and spiritual dwelling, surpassing every sense.<sup>54\*</sup>

---

\* We have conformed Fr. Seraphim's translation of this passage to a translation he later made of the same text and published in St. Symeon the New Theologian, *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption* (1979; republished as FCM, 1994).—Ed.

Could there be any clearer teaching of the state of the first-created world before the transgression of Adam?

### 7. *The Nature of Man*

And now I come to the final and most important question which is raised for Orthodox theology by the modern theory of evolution: *the nature of man*, and in particular *the nature of the first-created man Adam*. I say that this is the "most important question" raised by evolution because the doctrine of man, anthropology, touches most closely upon theology, and here, perhaps, it becomes most possible to identify theologically the error of evolutionism.\* It is well known that Orthodoxy teaches quite differently from Roman Catholicism regarding man's nature and Divine grace, and now I shall attempt to show that the theological view of man's nature which is implied in the theory of evolution, and which you have explicitly set forth in your letter, is *not* the Orthodox view of man, but is much closer to the *Roman Catholic* view; and this is only a confirmation of the fact that the theory of evolution, far from being taught by any Orthodox Father, is simply a product of the Western apostate mentality and even, despite the fact that it originally was a "reaction" against Roman Catholicism and Protestantism, has deep roots in the Roman Catholic scholastic tradition.

The view of human nature and the creation of Adam which you set forth in your letter is very much influenced by your opinion that Adam, in his body, was an "evolved beast." This opinion you have obtained, not from the Holy Fathers (for you cannot find one Father who believed this, and I have already showed you that the Fathers indeed believe quite "literally" that Adam was created from the dust and not from any other creature), but from modern science. Let us then look, first of all, at the Orthodox Patristic view of the nature and value of secular, scientific knowledge, particularly in relation to revealed, theological knowledge.

This Patristic view is very well set forth by the great hesychast Father

---

\* On this, see also the reflections of St. Justin of Celije, pp. 809–12 below.—Ed.

St. Gregory Palamas, who was forced to defend Orthodox theology and spiritual experience precisely against a Western rationalist, Barlaam, who wished to reduce the spiritual experience and knowledge of hesychasm to something attainable by science and philosophy. In answering him, St. Gregory set forth general principles which are well applicable in our own day when scientists and philosophers think they can understand the mysteries of creation and man's nature better than Orthodox theology. He writes:

The beginning of wisdom is to be sufficiently wise to distinguish and prefer to the wisdom which is low, terrestrial, and vain, that which is truly useful, heavenly, and spiritual, that which comes from God and conducts toward Him and which renders conformable to God those who acquire it.<sup>55</sup>

He teaches that the latter wisdom alone is good in itself, while the former is both good and evil:

The practice of the graces of different languages, the power of rhetoric, historical knowledge, the discovery of the mysteries of nature, the various methods of logic ... all these things are at the same time good and evil, not only *because they are manifested according to the idea of those who use them and easily take the form which is given them by the point of view of those who possess them*,\* but also because the study of them is a good thing only to the degree that it develops in the eye of the soul a penetrating view. But it is bad for one who gives himself over to this study in order to remain in it until old age.<sup>56</sup>

Further, even

If one of the Fathers says the same thing as do those from without, *the concordance is only verbal, the thought being quite different*. The former, in fact, have, according to Paul, "the mind of Christ" (1 Cor.

---

\* On the function of one's point of view in the acquisition of secular knowledge, see p. 666, 666n below.—ED.

2:16), while the latter express at best a human reasoning. "As the heaven is distant from the earth, so is My thought distant from your thought" (Is. 55:9), saith the Lord. Besides, even if the thinking of these men were at times the same as that of Moses, Solomon, or their imitators, what would it benefit them? What man of sound spirit and belonging to the Church could from this draw the conclusion that their teaching comes from God?<sup>57</sup>

From secular knowledge, St. Gregory writes,

*we absolutely forbid to expect any precision whatever in the knowledge of Divine things; for it is not possible to draw from it any certain teaching on the subject of God. For "God hath made it foolish" (cf. 1 Cor. 1:20).<sup>58</sup>*

And this knowledge can also be harmful and fight against true theology:

*The power of this reason which has been made foolish and nonexistent enters into battle against those who accept the traditions in simplicity of heart; it despises the writings of the Spirit, after the example of men who have treated them carelessly and have set up the creation against the Creator.<sup>59</sup> \**

There could hardly be a better account than this of what modern "Christian evolutionists" have tried to do by thinking themselves wiser

---

\* Later in the same work, speaking of the "wisdom of secular learning" (τῶν ἑξω μαθημάτων σοφία), St. Gregory writes: "Is not the truth that is found in it open to question and mixed with falsehood? That is why it is always contradicted, as its leaders themselves can testify, while the wisdom of God, in accordance with the divine saying of the Gospel, cannot be resisted by anyone (cf. Luke. 21:15), for it offers the plain truth, unadulterated with that which is opposed to it.... Thus it is shown that there are two kinds of truth: one is the result of inspired teaching; the other, which is sought though rarely found by secular philosophy, is not necessary and does not lead to salvation" (*In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts [The Triads]* 2.1.5, ed. and trans. [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, pp. 233–35).—Ed.

than the Holy Fathers, *using secular knowledge to reinterpret the teaching of the Sacred Scripture and the Holy Fathers*. Who can fail to see that the rationalistic, naturalistic spirit of Barlaam is quite close to that of modern evolutionism?

But notice that St. Gregory is speaking of scientific knowledge which, on its own level, is *true*; it becomes false only by warring against the higher knowledge of theology. Is the theory of evolution even *true* scientifically?

I have already spoken in this letter of the dubious nature of the scientific evidence for evolution in general, about which I would be glad to write you in another letter. Here I must say a word specifically about the scientific evidence for *human evolution*, since here we already begin to touch on the realm of Orthodox theology.

You say in your letter that you are happy not to have read the writings of Teilhard de Chardin and other exponents of evolution in the West; you approach this whole question “simply.” But I am afraid that this is where you have made a mistake. It is well and good to accept the writings of the Holy Scripture and the Holy Fathers *simply; that is the way they should be accepted*, and that is the way I try to accept them. But why should we accept the writings of modern scientists and philosophers “simply,” merely taking their word when they tell us that something is true—even if *this acceptance forces us to change our theological views*? On the contrary, *we must be very critical* when modern wise men tell us how we should interpret the Holy Scriptures. We must be critical not only with regard to their philosophy, but also with regard to the “scientific evidence” which they think supports this philosophy; for *often this “scientific evidence” is itself philosophy*.

This is especially true of the Jesuit scientist Teilhard de Chardin; for not only has he written the most thorough and influential philosophy and theology based on evolution, *but he was also closely connected with the discovery and interpretation of almost all the fossil evidence for the “evolution of man” that was discovered in his lifetime*.

And now I must ask you a very elementary scientific question: *what is the evidence for the “evolution of man”*? About this question too I cannot go into in detail in this letter, but I will discuss it briefly. I can write more in detail later, if you wish.

The scientific fossil evidence for the "evolution of man" consists of: Neanderthal Man (many specimens); Peking Man (several skulls); the "men" called Java, Heidelberg, Piltdown (until twenty years ago), and the recent finds in Africa: *all extremely fragmentary*; and a few other fragments. *The total fossil evidence for the "evolution of man" could be contained in a box the size of a coffin,\** and it is from widely separated parts of the earth, with no reliable indication of even *relative* (much less "absolute") age, and *with no indication whatever of how these different "men" were connected with each other*, whether by descent or kinship.

Further, one of these "evolutionary ancestors of man," "Piltdown Man," was discovered twenty years ago to have been a *deliberate fraud*. Now it is an interesting fact that Teilhard de Chardin was *one of the "discoverers" of "Piltdown Man"*—a fact which you will not find in most textbooks or in biographies of him. He "discovered" the canine tooth of this fabricated creature—a tooth which had already been dyed with the intent to cause deception regarding its age when he found it! I do not have the evidence to say that Teilhard de Chardin consciously participated in fraud; I think it more likely that he was the victim of the actual perpetrator of the fraud, and that *he was so anxious to find proof for the "evolution of man" in which he already believed* that he simply did not pay any attention to the anatomical difficulties which this crudely fabricated "man" presented to any objective observer. And yet in evolutionary textbooks printed before the discovery of the fraud, Piltdown Man is accepted as an evolutionary ancestor of man *without question*; his "skull" is even illustrated (even though only fragments of a cranium had been discovered); and it is confidently stated that "he combines human characteristics with others far retarded" (Tracy I. Storer, *General Zoology*, 1951). This, of course, is just what is required for a "missing link" between man and ape; and that is why the Piltdown fraud *was composed precisely of a mixture of human and ape bones*.

Some time later this same Teilhard de Chardin participated in the discovery, and above all in the "interpretation," of "Peking Man."

---

\* Fr. Seraphim was here referring to a statement made in *New Scientist* (March 25, 1965, p. 798), an international science magazine based in London. This statement is quoted on p. 578 below.—ED.

Thanks to his “interpretation” (for by then he had established a reputation as one of the world’s leading paleontologists), “Peking Man” also entered evolutionary textbooks as an ancestor of man.

Teilhard de Chardin was also connected with the discovery *and above all the interpretation* of some of the finds of “Java Man,” which were fragmentary.\* In fact, everywhere he went he found “evidence” *which exactly matched his expectations*—namely, that man has “evolved” from ape-like creatures.

If you will examine objectively all the fossil evidence for the “evolution of man,” I believe you will find that *there is no conclusive or even remotely reasonable evidence whatever for this “evolution.”* The evidence is believed to be proof for human evolution *because men want to believe this; they believe in a philosophy that requires that man evolved from ape-like creatures.* Neanderthal Man is simply “*Homo sapiens*,” no different from modern man than modern men are different from each other, a variation within one definite kind or species.\*\* Please note that the *pictures* of Neanderthal Man in evolutionary textbooks are the invention of artists *who have a preconceived idea of what “primitive man” must have looked like*, based on evolutionary philosophy!

I have said enough, I believe, not to show that I can “disprove” the “evolution of man” (for who can *prove or disprove anything* with such

---

\* Both “Peking Man” (*Sinanthropus pekinensis*) and “Java Man” (*Pithecanthropus erectus*) are considered examples of *Homo erectus*, and have been given the titles *Homo erectus pekinensis* and *Homo erectus erectus*, respectively.—ED.

\*\* Some evolutionists have concluded that *Homo erectus* also belongs within the species *Homo sapiens*. For example, William S. Laughlin (University of Connecticut), in studying the Eskimos and Aleuts, noted the many similarities between these peoples and the Asian *Homo erectus* people (*Sinanthropus*). He concludes his study: “When we find that significant differences have developed, over a short time span, between closely related and contiguous peoples, as in Alaska and Greenland, and when we consider the vast differences that exist between remote groups such as Eskimos and Bushmen, who are known to belong to the single species of *Homo sapiens*, it seems justifiable to conclude that *Sinanthropus* belongs within this same diverse species” (*Science*, vol. 142 [Nov. 8, 1963], p. 644).

According to the evolutionary time scale, both *Homo erectus* and Neanderthal Man lived contemporaneously with anatomically modern *Homo sapiens*. (See also pp. 383–84n, 385, 385n above and pp. 837–38 below.)—ED.

fragmentary evidence?!), but to indicate that we must be very critical indeed of the biased interpretations of such scanty evidence. Let us leave it to our modern pagans and their philosophers to become excited with the discovery of every new skull, bone, or even a single tooth, about which newspaper headlines declare: "New Ancestor of Man Found." This is not even the realm of vain knowledge; it is the realm of *modern fables and fairy tales*, of a wisdom which truly has become astonishingly foolish.

Where does the Orthodox Christian turn if he wishes to learn the true doctrine of the creation of the world and man? St. Basil tells us clearly:

Whence shall I begin my narration? Shall I refute the vanity of the heathens? Or shall I proclaim our truth? The wise men of the Greeks wrote many works about nature, but not one account among them remained unaltered and firmly established, for the later account always overthrew the preceding one. As a consequence, *there is no need for us to refute their words: they avail mutually for their own undoing.*<sup>60</sup> \*

Like St. Basil,

*let us leave the accounts of outsiders to those outside, and turn back to the explanation of the Church.*<sup>61</sup>

Let us, like him,

examine the structure of the world and contemplate the whole universe, *beginning, not from the wisdom of the world, but from what God taught His servant when He spoke to him in person and without riddles.*<sup>62</sup>

Now we shall see that the evolutionary view of man's origin not only teaches us nothing in reality of man's origin, but rather teaches a *false doctrine of man*, as you yourself prove when you are forced to express this doctrine in order to defend the idea of evolution.

When setting forth your view of man's nature, based on your ac-

---

\* See pp. 503–4n below, where this passage is quoted at greater length.—ED.



ceptance of the idea of evolution, you write: "Man is not *naturally* the image of God. Naturally he is an animal, an evolved beast, dust from the ground. He is the image of God supernaturally." And again: "We see that by himself man is nothing, and let us not be scandalized by his natural origin." "God's breath of life transformed the animal to man without changing a single anatomical feature of his body, without changing a single cell. I would not be surprised if Adam's body had been in all aspects the body of an ape." Again: "Man is what he is, not because of his *nature*, which is dust from the ground, but because of the supernatural grace given to him by the breath of God."

Now, before examining the Patristic teaching of man's nature, I will admit that this word "nature" can be a little ambiguous, and that one can find passages where the Holy Fathers use the expression "human nature" in the way it is used in common discourse, as referring to this fallen human nature whose effects we observe every day. *But there is a higher Patristic teaching of human nature, a specific doctrine of human nature, given by Divine revelation, which cannot be understood or accepted by one who believes in evolution.* The evolutionary doctrine of human nature, based on a "common sense" view of fallen human nature, is the *Roman Catholic*, not the Orthodox, teaching.

The Orthodox doctrine of human nature is set forth most concisely in the *Spiritual Instructions* of Abba Dorotheus. This book is accepted in the Orthodox Church as the "ABCs," the basic textbook of Orthodox spirituality; it is the first spiritual reading which an Orthodox monk is given, and it remains his constant companion for the rest of his life, to be read and reread. It is most significant that *the Orthodox doctrine of human nature is set forth in the very first page of this book, because this doctrine is the foundation of the entire Orthodox spiritual life.*

What is this doctrine? Abba Dorotheus writes in the very first words of his First Instruction:

In the beginning, when God created man, He placed him in Paradise and adorned him with every virtue, giving him the commandment not to taste of the tree which was in the midst of Paradise. And thus he remained there in the enjoyment of Paradise: in prayer, in vision, in every glory and honor, having sound senses and *being in the same*

*natural condition in which he was created.* For God created man according to His own image, that is, immortal, master of himself, and adorned with every virtue. But when he transgressed the commandment, eating the fruit of the tree of which God had commanded him not to taste, then he was banished from Paradise, *fell away from the natural condition, and fell into a condition against nature*, and then he remained in sin, in love of glory, in love of the enjoyments of this age, and of other passions, and he was mastered by them, for he became himself their slave through the transgression....

[The Lord Jesus Christ] accepted our very nature, the essence of our constitution, and became a new Adam in the image of God Who created the first Adam; *He renewed the natural condition* and made the senses again sound, as they were in the beginning....

The children of humility of wisdom are: self-reproach, not trusting one's own mind, hatred of one's own will; for through them a man is enabled to come to himself and *return to the natural condition* through purifying himself by the holy commandments of Christ.<sup>63</sup>

The same doctrine is set forth by other ascetic Fathers. Thus Abba Isaiah teaches:

In the beginning, when God created man, He placed him in Paradise, and he had then sound senses, *which stood in their natural order*; but when he obeyed the one who deceived him, all his senses were *changed into an unnatural state*, and he was then cast out from his glory.<sup>64</sup>

And the same Father continues:

And so, let him who desires *to come into his natural condition* cut off all his fleshly desires, so as to place himself in the condition *according to the nature of the (spiritual) mind*.<sup>65</sup> \*

The Holy Fathers clearly teach that, when Adam sinned, man did

---

\* On the restoration of man to his natural (original) condition, see also the Patristic quotations on pp. 85n, 235n above and pp. 755–56 below.—ED.

not merely lose something which had been *added to his nature*, but rather *human nature itself was changed, corrupted*, at the same time that man lost God's grace.\* The Divine services of the Orthodox Church also, which are a foundation of our Orthodox dogmatic teaching and spiritual life, clearly teach that the human nature which we now observe *is not natural to us*, but has been corrupted:

Healing *human nature, which had become corrupted by the ancient transgression*, without corruption a child is born anew (Menaion, Dec. 22, Matins, Theotokion of the Sixth Canticle of the Canon).

And again:

The Creator and Lord, desiring to save from corruption *the corrupted human nature*, having come to dwell in a womb cleansed by the Holy Spirit, is unutterably formed (Menaion, Jan. 23, Matins, Theotokion of the Fifth Canticle of the Canon).

It can be noted in such hymns also that our whole Orthodox conception of the Incarnation of Christ and our salvation through Him is bound up with *a proper understanding of human nature as it was in the beginning*, to which Christ has restored us. We believe that we will one day live with Him *in a world very much like the world that existed here on this earth, before the fall of Adam, and that our nature will then be the nature of Adam*—only even higher, because everything material and changeable will then be left behind, as the quote already given from St. Symeon the New Theologian clearly indicates.

And now I must show you further that even your doctrine of human nature *as it is now in this fallen world*, is incorrect, is not according to the teaching of the Holy Fathers. Perhaps it is a result of careless expression on your part—but I believe it is probably precisely because you have been led into error by believing the theory of evolution—that you write: "Apart from God man is from his nature nothing at all,

---

\* On the change or corruption of human nature that occurred at the fall, see also pp. 712–25, 715n, 734–41, 741n below.—ED.

because his nature is the dust from the ground, like the nature of the animals." Because you believe in the philosophy of evolution, you are forced either to believe that human nature is only a low, animal nature, as you indeed express by saying that "man is not *naturally* the image of God"; or at best (since I think that you do not really believe this, being Orthodox), you divide human nature artificially into two parts; that which is from "nature" and that which is from God. But the true Orthodox anthropology teaches that *human nature is one*, it is that which we have from God; *we do not have some nature "from the animals" or "from the dust" which is different from the nature with which God created us*. And therefore, *even the fallen, corrupted human nature which we have now is not "nothing at all,"* as you say, but it still preserves in some degree the "goodness" in which God created it. Behold what Abba Dorotheus writes of this doctrine:

*We have naturally the virtues given to us by God.* For when God created man, He sowed virtues in him, as also He said: "Let Us create man in Our image and likeness" (Gen. 1:26). It is said: "In Our image," inasmuch as God created the soul immortal and with authority over itself, and "in Our likeness," referring to virtues.... *By nature God gave us virtues. But passions do not belong to us by nature,* for they do not even have any substance or composition.... But the soul in its love of pleasure, having inclined away from virtues, instills the passions in itself and strengthens them against itself.<sup>66\*</sup>

Further, these God-given virtues still exercise themselves even in our fallen state. This is the extremely important Orthodox teaching of St. John Cassian, who thus refuted the error of Blessed Augustine, who

---

\* Compare the words of St. Maximus the Confessor, who writes that the passions "were not originally created together with human nature, for if they had been they would contribute to the definition of human nature. But following what the great Gregory of Nyssa taught [*On Virginity* 12; *On the Soul and the Resurrection*], I say that, on account of the fall from perfection, the passions were introduced and attached themselves to the more irrational part of human nature. As soon as man sinned, the divine and blessed image was displaced by the clear and obvious likeness to unreasoning animals" (*Ad Thalassium* 1, CCSG 7.47, PPS 25, p. 97\*).—Ed.

indeed believed that man apart from God's grace was "nothing at all." St. Cassian teaches in his Thirteenth Conference:

That the human race after the fall actually did not lose the knowledge of good is affirmed by the Apostle, who says: "When the Gentiles, who have not the law, *do by nature those things that are of the law*, these who have not the law are a law to themselves, who show the work of the law *written in their hearts*" (Rom. 2:14–15).

And again:

To the Pharisees He said that they can know the truth: "Why even of yourselves do ye not judge that which is just?" (Luke 12:57). He would not have said this if they could not have discerned what is just *by their natural reason*. Therefore one should not think that human nature is capable only of evil.<sup>67</sup>

Likewise, with regard to the righteous Job, St. Cassian asks whether "he conquered the various snares of the enemy in this battle apart from his own virtue, but only with the assistance of God's grace," and he answers:

*Job conquered him by his own power*. However, the grace of God also did not abandon Job; lest the tempter burden him with temptations above his strength, it [God's grace] allowed him to be tempted *as much as the virtue of the tempted one could bear*.<sup>68</sup>

Again, with regard to the Patriarch Abraham:

God's righteousness wished to test the faith of Abraham, *not that which the Lord had instilled in him, but that which he showed by his own freedom*.<sup>69</sup>

Of course, the reason why Augustine (and Roman Catholicism and Protestantism after him) believed that man was nothing without grace, was because *he had an incorrect conception of human nature*, based on a naturalistic view of man. The Orthodox doctrine, on the other hand, of

*human nature as it was created in the beginning by God and is even now preserved in part in our fallen state*, prevents us from falling into any such a false dualism between what is “man’s” and what is “God’s.” To be sure, *everything good that man has is from God, not the least his very nature*, for the Scripture says, “What hast thou that thou didst not receive?” (1 Cor. 4:7). Man has no “animal nature” as such and never did have; he has only the fully human nature which God gave him in the beginning, and which he has not entirely lost even now.

Is it necessary to quote for you the multitude of clear Patristic evidence that the “image of God,” which is to be found in the soul, *refers to man’s nature and is not something added from without*? Let it suffice to quote the marvellous testimony of St. Gregory the Theologian, showing how man *by his constitution* stands between two worlds, and is free to follow whichever side of his nature he will:

I do not understand how I became joined to the body and how, *being the image of God*, I became mixed with dirt.... What wisdom is revealed in me, and what a great mystery! Was it not for this that God led us into this warfare and battle with the body, that we, *being a part of Divinity* [how boldly the Theologian speaks of man’s nature, so boldly that we cannot take his words absolutely literally!],\* and proceeding from above, might not be haughty and exalt ourselves because of our dignity, and might not disdain the Creator, but might always direct our gaze toward Him, and so that our dignity

---

\* St. Maximus the Confessor wrote an entire essay—*Ambiguum* 7—on this passage of St. Gregory the Theologian, in order to show that St. Gregory was not literally claiming the human soul to be an Uncreated part of Divinity. As St. Maximus explains, the phrase “part of Divinity” (found also in St. Gregory’s *Dogmatic Poem* 8: *On the Soul*, line 77) refers to the fact that the Uncreated *logos* (“thought-will”) of man preexisted in God prior to man’s creation, and that man—although created and not Divine himself—can *participate* in God through the Divine Energies. (See St. Maximus, *Ambigua* 7, PPS 25, pp. 45–78, especially pp. 54–61).

In modern times, the Orthodox theological writer Vladimir Lossky made the same point regarding the above-quoted passage of St. Gregory the Theologian, and quoted another passage of St. Gregory (*Moral Poem* 14: *On Human Nature*, lines 76–84) to show that he did not believe the human soul itself to be Divine. (See Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, pp. 117–18; as well as pp. 216–17, 216–17n above.)—Ed.



St. Seraphim of Sarov, Russia (1754–1833).  
*Nineteenth-century Russian lithograph.*

might keep within bounds the infirmity joined to us?—So that we might know that at the same time we are both immensely great and immensely low, earthly and heavenly, temporal and immortal, inheritors of light and inheritors of fire or darkness, depending upon which side we incline towards? *So was our constitution established,* and this, as far as I can see, was in order that the earthly dust might humble us if we should imagine to exalt ourselves because of the image of God.<sup>70</sup>

This image of God which man possesses by his nature was not completely lost even among the pagans, as St. John Cassian teaches; it has not been lost *even today*, when man, under the influence of modern philosophy and evolutionism, is trying to turn himself into a

subhuman beast—for even now God awaits man's conversion, awaits his awakening *to the true human nature which he has within him*.

And this brings me to the very important point of your interpretation of the teaching of the God-bearing Father of almost our own times, St. Seraphim of Sarov, contained in his famous "Conversation with Motovilov."

St. Seraphim is my own patron Saint, and it was our Brotherhood of St. Herman that first published the complete text of this "Conversation" in the Russian language in which it was spoken (for the pre-revolutionary edition was incomplete), as well as other of his genuine words which had hitherto been unpublished. So you may be sure that we do not believe that he taught a false doctrine of the nature of man, one that contradicts that of other Holy Fathers. But let us examine what St. Seraphim himself says.

As you correctly quote him, St. Seraphim says:

Many explain that when it says in the Bible that God breathed the breath of life into the face of Adam the first-created, who was created by Him from the dust of the ground, it must mean that until then there was neither human soul nor spirit in Adam, but only the flesh created from the dust of the ground. This interpretation is wrong, for the Lord created Adam from the dust of the ground with the constitution which our dear father, the holy Apostle Paul describes: "May your spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" (1 Thes. 5:23). And all these three parts of our nature were created from the dust of the ground, and Adam was not created dead, but an active being like all the other animate creatures of God living on earth. The point is that if the Lord God had not then breathed into his face the breath of life (that is, the grace of our Lord God the Holy Spirit ...), Adam, however perfect he had been created and superior to all the other creatures of God as the crown of creation on earth, nevertheless would have been without the Holy Spirit within himself, like unto the other creatures, although he possessed flesh, soul, and spirit. But when the Lord God breathed into Adam's face the breath of life, then, according to Moses' expression, "Adam



became a living soul" (Gen. 2:7), that is, completely and in every way like God, and, like Him, forever immortal.<sup>71</sup> \*

This is the one Patristic quote you give which *seems* to support your view that *man was first a beast, and then (later in time) received the image of God and became man*. This is indeed what you *must* believe if you accept the theory of evolution, and I am glad to see that you have the courage to express clearly what all "Orthodox evolutionists" actually believe (even if in a rather confused manner) but are often afraid to express openly for fear of offending other Orthodox believers who are "naïve" and in their "simplicity" refuse to believe that man in actual fact is "descended from apes" or ape-like creatures.

But here let us remember the words of St. Gregory Palamas which I have already quoted:

*If one of the Fathers says the same thing as do those from without, the concordance is only verbal, the thought being quite different.* The former, in fact, have, according to Paul, "the mind of Christ" (1 Cor. 2:16), while the latter express at best a human reasoning.... What man of sound spirit and belonging to the Church could from this conclude that their teaching comes from God?<sup>72</sup>

And in fact, I must tell you that *you have completely misunderstood* the teaching of St. Seraphim, who is not at all teaching what the doctrine of evolution teaches. This I can show by quoting both the clear teaching of other Holy Fathers and that of St. Seraphim himself.

But first I must explain what might seem to a rationalist to be a "contradiction" between the teaching of St. Seraphim and that of other Fathers. First, we should be clear that when St. Seraphim speaks of man as being composed of "spirit and soul and body" he is *not* contradicting those many other Holy Fathers who speak of human nature as merely "soul and body"; he is merely making a distinction between dif-

---

\* Here we have corrected some mistakes in the English translation. (The translation that Dr. Kalomiros used as his source had not been done by Fr. Seraphim.)—ED.

ferent aspects of the soul and speaking of them separately, as many Holy Fathers also speak.\* Second, in saying that the “breath of life” which God breathed into the face of Adam is the grace of the Holy Spirit, he is not contradicting the very many Holy Fathers who teach that the “breath of life” is the *soul*, but is only giving a perhaps more profound and precise interpretation of this passage from Scripture. But is he actually making the rationalistic distinction which you make between the *nature* of man which existed “before” this breathing, and the *grace* which was communicated by it? Does Orthodox theology accept the rigid dichotomy which Roman Catholic teaching makes between “nature” and “grace,” as though men knew everything there is to know about these two great mysteries?

*No; Orthodox theology does not know such a rigid dichotomy*, and that is why rationalist scholars find so many “contradictions” between different Orthodox Fathers on this subject, as will be clear from a single example: Does immortality belong to the human soul *by nature or by grace*? Different Orthodox Fathers who are of equal authority *answer differently* on this question, *not because they teach differently about man* and thus “contradict” each other, but because *they approach the question from different sides*. Those who approach the question of man’s nature more from the side of the present corrupted human nature say that man’s soul is immortal by grace; while those (especially the ascetic and mystical Fathers) who begin with the view of man’s nature *as it was in the beginning*, view the soul rather as immortal by nature. It may even be that one and the same Father views the question now from one and now from the other side, as does St. Gregory of Nyssa when he says in one place: “That which reasons, *and is mortal*, and is capable of thought and knowledge, is called ‘man’”;<sup>73</sup> but in another place he

---

\* What St. Seraphim calls man’s “spirit,” духъ—*dukh*” in Russian, corresponds to the Greek νοῦς—*nous* (also translated as “mind” or “intellect”): the highest part of the human soul, and the faculty by which man knows God and enters into communion with Him. In the words of St. John Damascene, “The soul does not have the *nous* as something distinct from itself, but as its purest part, for as the eye is to the body, so is the *nous* to the soul” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.12, FC 37, p. 236). According to St. Diadochus of Photiki, the *nous* dwells “in the depths of the soul” (*On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination* 79, *Philokalia* 1, p. 280).—ED.

says: "Man *did not* in the course of his first production *have united to the very essence of his nature the liability to passion and to death.*"<sup>74</sup> Does this great Father "contradict" himself? Of course he does not.

*What belongs to first-created Adam by nature and what by grace?* Let us not make false rationalistic distinctions, but let us admit that *we do not fully understand this mystery.* Nature and grace *both come from God.*\* The nature of first-created Adam was so exalted that we can only faintly understand it now by our own experience of grace, which has been given to us by the Second Adam, our Lord Jesus Christ; but Adam's state was also higher than anything we can imagine even from our own experience of grace, for even his high nature was made yet more perfect by grace, and he was, as St. Seraphim says, "completely and in every way like God, and, like Him, forever immortal."<sup>\*\*</sup>

What is absolutely clear, and what is sufficient for us to know, is that the creation of man—of his spirit and soul and body, *in the Divine grace which perfected his nature—is a single act of creation,* and it cannot be artificially divided up, as though one part of it came "first," and another part "later." God created man *in grace*, but neither the Holy Scriptures nor the Holy Fathers teach us that this grace came *later in time* than the creation of man's nature. This teaching belongs to Medieval Latin scholasticism, as I will show below.

St. Seraphim only *appears* to teach this doctrine, because he speaks in terms of the simple narrative of the sacred text of Genesis. But it is clear enough, as St. Gregory Palamas says, that "*the concordance is only verbal, the thought being quite different.*" To be convinced of this we

---

\* Contrasting Eastern Orthodox theology with Roman Catholic teaching, Vladimir Lossky writes: "The Eastern tradition knows nothing of 'pure nature' to which grace is added as a supernatural gift. For it, there is no natural or 'normal' state, since grace is implied in the act of creation itself.... 'Pure nature,' for Eastern theology, would thus be a philosophical fiction corresponding neither to the original state of creation, nor to its present condition which is 'against nature,' nor to the state of deification which belongs to the age to come.... Nature and grace do not exist side by side, rather there is a mutual interpenetration of one another, the one exists in the other" (*Mystical Theology*, pp. 101, 126).—ED.

\*\* For further discussion of whether man was originally immortal by "nature" or by "grace," see pp. 736–41, 738–39nn, 740n below.—ED.

have only to examine *how the Holy Fathers instruct us to interpret the sacred narrative of Genesis at this point.*

Fortunately for us, *this very question was raised and answered by the Holy Fathers.* This answer is summed up for us by St. John Damascene:

From the earth [God] formed his body and by His own inbreathing gave him a rational and understanding soul, which last we say is the divine image.... *The body and the soul were formed at the same time—not one before and the other afterwards,* as the ravings of Origen would have it.<sup>75</sup>

Here let us be sure again that we understand that although St. John speaks of the inbreathing of God as the *soul*, he does not teach a doctrine different from St. Seraphim, who speaks of this inbreathing as the *grace of the Holy Spirit*.<sup>\*</sup> St. John in fact hardly speaks of grace at all in the creation of man, for *it is understood as being present in the whole process of creation*, above all in the creation of the image of God, the soul, which he teaches is part of our nature. St. Gregory of Nyssa likewise speaks of the creation of man without paying special attention to what comes from “nature” and what from “grace,” only ending his whole treatise with the words:

May we all return to that *Divine grace in which God at the first created man*, when He said, “Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness.”<sup>76</sup>

St. John Damascene and others who speak of the inbreathing of God

---

<sup>\*</sup> As noted above (p. 215n), St. Gregory Palamas affirms the inner harmony of these two views when he says that God breathed into Adam His Spirit at the same time He breathed into him a soul.

Summarizing the Patristic teaching on this subject, Vladimir Lossky writes of how God's grace was united with man's spirit (*nous*) at the moment of creation: “The ‘Divine breath’ points to a mode of creation, by virtue of which the human spirit is intimately connected with grace, and is produced by it in the same way as a movement of air is produced by the breath and is inseparable from it” (*Mystical Theology*, p. 118).—Ed.

as the soul view this matter from an aspect slightly different from that of St. Seraphim; but clearly *the teaching of all these Fathers regarding the whole creation of man*, and in particular regarding the question of *whether the narrative of Genesis indicates a difference in time between the "forming" and "inbreathing" of man—is the same*. St. John Damascene speaks for all the Holy Fathers when he says that they occurred "*at the same time—not one before and the other afterwards.*"

In saying this, St. John Damascene was refuting in particular the Origenist heresy of the "preexistence of souls." But *there was also a heresy opposed to this, which taught the "preexistence" of the human body, just as it is taught by modern "Christian evolutionists."* This heresy was specifically refuted by St. Gregory of Nyssa, whom I shall now quote.

After discussing the Origenist error of the "preexistence of souls," St. Gregory continues:

Others, on the contrary, marking the order of the creation of man as stated by Moses, say that *the soul is second to the body in order of time*, since God first took dust from the earth and formed man, and then animated the being thus formed by His breath. And by this argument they prove that the flesh is more noble than the soul, that which was previously formed [more noble] than that which was afterwards infused into it. For they say that the soul was made for the body, that the thing formed might not be without breath and motion, and that everything that is made for something else is surely less precious than that for which it is made.... *The doctrine of both is equally to be rejected.*<sup>77</sup>

Specifically refuting the doctrine of the "preexistence of the body," St. Gregory says:

Nor again are we in our doctrine to begin by making up man like a clay figure, and to say that the soul came into being for the sake of this; for surely in that case the intellectual nature would be shown to be less precious than the clay figure. *But as man is one, the being consisting of soul and body, we are to suppose that the beginning of his existence is one*, common to both parts, so that he should not be found

to be antecedent and posterior to himself, *as if the bodily element were first in point of time, and the other were a later addition....* For as our nature is conceived as twofold, according to the apostolic teaching, made up of the visible man and the hidden man, if the one came first and the other supervened, *the power of Him that made us will be shown to be in some way imperfect, as not being completely sufficient for the whole task at once*, but dividing the work, and busying itself with each of the halves in turn.<sup>78</sup>

Do I need to point out that the “God” of “Christian evolution” is *precisely this kind of God who is not “completely sufficient for the whole task at once”; and the very reason why the doctrine of evolution was invented* was to account for the universe on the assumption that *God either does not exist or is incapable of creating in six days or bringing the world into existence by His mere word?* EVOLUTION WOULD NEVER HAVE BEEN THOUGHT OF BY MEN WHO BELIEVE IN THE GOD WHOM ORTHODOX CHRISTIANS WORSHIP.

The account of the creation of man in the book of Genesis must be understood in a “God-befitting manner.” Here you have made the mistake of accepting a literal interpretation of the text *precisely where the Holy Fathers do not allow this!* How important it is for us to read the Holy Scriptures as the Holy Fathers instruct us, and not according to our own understanding!

It is quite clear that St. Seraphim did not understand the text of Genesis in the way in which you have interpreted it. Indeed, there are other passages in the same “Conversation with Motovilov” which reveal that St. Seraphim viewed the creation and nature of Adam *in precisely the same way as the whole Patristic tradition.*

Thus, immediately after the passage which you quote, and which I have reproduced above, there follow these words which you did not quote (the English translation here is not precise, and so I am translating directly from the Russian original):

*Adam was created to such an extent immune to the action of every one of the elements created by God, that neither could water drown him, nor fire burn him, nor could the earth swallow him up in its abysses, nor*

could the air harm him by its action in any way whatsoever.\* Everything was subject to him....

This is precisely a description of the incorruption of Adam's body in a creation subject to laws quite different from today's "laws of nature"—in which as an "evolutionist" you cannot believe, since you *must* believe with modern philosophy *that the material creation was "natural," that is, corrupted, even before the fall of Adam!*

Again, shortly after this passage, St. Seraphim says:

To Eve also the Lord God gave the same wisdom, strength, and unlimited power, and all the other good and holy qualities. And *He created her not from the dust of the ground but from Adam's rib* in the Eden of delight, in the Paradise which He had planted in the midst of the earth.<sup>79</sup>

Do you believe in this creation of Eve from Adam's rib as an historical fact, as all the Holy Fathers do? No, you cannot, because from the point of view of evolutionary philosophy it is quite absurd: why should "God" evolve Adam's body from beasts "naturally," and then create Eve miraculously? *The "God" of evolution does not perform such miracles!*

Let us look now specifically at the Orthodox Patristic view of the *body* of first-created Adam, which according to the evolutionary doctrine had to be corruptible like the corruptible world from which it "evolved," and might even have been, as you state, entirely that of an ape.

The Holy Scripture explicitly teaches: "*God created man incorruptible*" (Wisdom 2:23).

St. Gregory the Sinaite teaches:

*The body, theologians say, was created incorruptible, which is how it will arise, just as the soul was created passionless; but just as the soul*

---

\* Such a view is also found in the writings of Sts. Maximus the Confessor and Symeon the New Theologian; see p. 250n above.—ED.

had the freedom to sin, so *the body had the possibility to become subject to corruption*.<sup>80</sup>

And again:

The incorruptible body will be earthly, but without moisture and coarseness,\* having been unutterably changed from animate to spiritual, so that it will be both of the dust and heavenly. *Just as it was created in the beginning, so also will it arise, that it may be conformable to the image of the Son of Man by entire participation in deification*.<sup>81</sup>

Notice here that the body in the future age will still be “of the dust.” When looking at the corruptible dust of this fallen world, we are humbled to think of this side of our nature; but when we think of that *incorruptible dust of the first-created world out of which God made Adam*, how exalted we are by the grandeur of even this, the lowest part of God’s unutterable creation!

St. Gregory the Theologian suggests, giving a symbolical interpretation of the “garments of skins” with which God clothed Adam and Eve after their transgression, that *the flesh of our present human body is different from the flesh of first-created Adam*:

Adam “is clothed in garments of skin” (perhaps a coarser, mortal, and antagonistic flesh).<sup>82</sup> \*\*

Again, St. Gregory the Sinaite says:

Man was created incorruptible, as also he will arise; but not unchangeable, nor yet changeable, but having the power at his own desire to change or not.... Corruption is the offspring of flesh. To eat

---

\* Or “without humors and material density”; see p. 766, 766n below; cf. p. 693, 693n.—ED.

\*\* Or “perhaps a denser, mortal, and unyielding flesh”; see p. 693 below. The term here translated as “coarser” or “denser,” *παχυτέραν*, was later employed by other Holy Fathers to denote a quality that man’s body acquired at the fall, and that it will lose in the general resurrection; see pp. 693n, 700, 700n, 719–20, 720n, 766, 766n, 768, 768n.—ED.



food and excrete the excess, to hold the head proudly, and to lie down to sleep—are the natural attributes of beasts and cattle, *into which we also, having become like to the cattle through the transgression* (cf. Ps. 48:21), *fell away from the God-given good things natural to us*, and became from rational, cattle-like, and from divine, bestial.<sup>83</sup>

Concerning Adam's state in Paradise, St. John Chrysostom teaches:

Man lived on earth like an angel; he was in the body, but he had no bodily needs; like a king, adorned with purple and a diadem and clothed in royal garb, he took delight in the dwelling of Paradise, having an abundance in everything.... Before the fall men lived in Paradise like angels; they were not inflamed with lust, were not kindled by other passions either, were not burdened with bodily needs; but *being created entirely incorruptible and immortal*, they did not even need the covering of clothing.<sup>84</sup>

St. Symeon the New Theologian likewise speaks clearly of first-created Adam in Paradise, and his final state in the future age:

If now, after we transgressed the commandment and were condemned to die, people have so multiplied, then just imagine how many there would have been if all those born from the creation of the world had not died! And what kind of life they would have lived, *being immortal and incorrupt*, strangers to sin, sorrows, cares, and difficult necessities! And how, prospering in the keeping of the commandments and the good ordering of the dispositions of the heart, in time they would have ascended into the most perfect glory, and being changed, would have drawn near to God; and the soul of each one would have become light-bearing by reason of the illuminations which would have been poured out upon it from the Divinity! And this sensuous and crudely material body would have become as it were immaterial and spiritual, above all senses; and the joy and rejoicing with which we then would have been filled by fellowship one with the other, in truth would have been unutterable and beyond human thought.... Their life in Paradise was not burdened with

labors and not weighed down with misfortunes. *Adam was made with a body that was incorrupt, although material and not yet spiritual....* Concerning our body the Apostle says: "It is sown a natural body, but is raised" not as the body of the first-created one was before the transgression of the commandment, that is, material, sensuous, changeable, having need of sensuous food, but "it is raised a spiritual body" (1 Cor. 15:44) and unchanging, such as was the body of our Lord Jesus Christ, the second Adam, after the Resurrection, He being the firstborn from among the dead, which body was incomparably superior to the body of first-created Adam.<sup>85</sup> \*

From our experience of our own corruptible body it is not possible for us to understand the state of the incorruptible body of Adam, which had no natural needs as we know them, which ate of "every tree" of Paradise without excreting any excess, and which did not know sleep (until God's direct action caused him to sleep, so that Eve might be created from his rib). And how much less are we able to understand the even more exalted state of our bodies in the future age! But we know enough from the Church's teaching to refute those who think they can understand these mysteries by scientific knowledge and philosophy. *The state of Adam and the first-created world has been placed forever beyond the knowledge of science by the barrier of Adam's transgression, which changed the very nature of Adam and the creation, and indeed the nature of knowledge itself.* Modern science knows only what it observes and what may be *reasonably* inferred from observation; its guesses about the earliest creation have no more and no less validity than the myths and fables of the ancient pagans. *The true knowledge of Adam and the first-created world—as much as is useful for us to know—is accessible only in God's revelation and in the Divine vision of the saints.*

\*

\*

\*

All that I have said in this letter, derived strictly from the Holy Fathers, will come as a surprise to many Orthodox Christians. Those

---

\* Again, we have conformed Fr. Seraphim's translation to his later published one.—ED.

who have read some of the Holy Fathers will perhaps wonder why they “haven’t heard it before.” The answer is simple: if they have read many of the Holy Fathers, they *have* encountered the Orthodox doctrine of Adam and the creation; *but they have been interpreting the Patristic texts hitherto through the eyes of modern science and philosophy, and therefore they have been blinded to the true Patristic teaching.* It is also true that the doctrine of the *body* of Adam and the *material* nature of the first-created world is taught most clearly and explicitly in the later Fathers of exalted spiritual life such as St. Symeon the New Theologian and St. Gregory the Sinaite, and the writings of these Fathers are not widely read even today in Greek or Russian, and hardly any of them exist at all in other languages. (In fact, several of the passages I have quoted from St. Gregory the Sinaite have been mistranslated in the English *Philokalia*.)\*

I was very interested to read in your letter that you set forth the correct Patristic teaching that “the creation of God, even the angelic nature, has always been, in comparison with God, something material. Angels are incorporeal in comparison with us, biological men. But in comparison with God they are also material and bodily creatures.” This teaching, which is set forth most clearly in the ascetic Fathers,\*\* helps us to understand the “spiritual body” with which we shall be

---

\* Fr. Seraphim is referring here to a translation of St. Gregory’s *Commandments and Doctrines* found in the 1951 volume *Writings from the Philokalia on the Prayer of the Heart* (London: Faber and Faber). This translation was made from the same Russian version of the Greek *Philokalia* that Fr. Seraphim used, and did not always accurately convey the meaning of the Russian text or the Greek original. In 1995, a corrected version of the 1951 translation, revised according to the original Greek, was published in volume 4 of the complete English *Philokalia* (London: Faber and Faber).—ED.

\*\* St. John Damascene writes: “Compared with us, the angel is said to be incorporeal and immaterial, although in comparison with God, Who alone is incomparable, everything proves to be gross and material—for only the Divinity is truly immaterial and incorporeal.... The angels are circumscribed, because when they are in heaven they are not on earth, and when they are sent to earth by God they do not remain in heaven. However, they are not confined by walls or doors or bars or seals, because they are unbounded” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.3, FC 37, pp. 205–6; see also 1.13, pp. 197–99). Likewise, St. Basil the Great writes: “In the case of the heavenly powers,

clothed in the future age, which is in some way of the dust, earthly, but has no moisture or coarseness, as St. Gregory the Sinaite teaches; and it also helps us to understand that *third* state of our body, that which first-created Adam had before his transgression.\* Likewise, this doctrine is essential in our understanding of the activity of spiritual beings, angels and demons, even in the present corruptible world. The great Russian Orthodox Father of the nineteenth century, Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov, devotes an entire volume of his collected works (volume 3) to this subject, and to comparing the authentic Orthodox Patristic doctrine with the modern Roman Catholic doctrine, as set forth in nineteenth-century Latin sources. His conclusion is that the Orthodox doctrine on these matters—on angels and demons, heaven and hell, Paradise—even though it is given to us by sacred tradition only in part, nonetheless is quite precise in that part which we can know; but the Roman Catholic teaching is extremely indefinite and imprecise. The reason for this indefiniteness is not far to seek: from the time Papalism began to abandon the Patristic teaching, it gradually gave itself over to the influence of worldly knowledge and philosophy, first that of such philosophers as Barlaam, and then of modern science. Even by the nineteenth century Roman Catholicism no longer had a

---

they are in essence—if one may so speak—aerial spirits, composed of immaterial fire.... They exist in space, and become visible, and appear in their appropriate bodily form to those who are worthy" (*On the Holy Spirit* 16.38, SC 17.380, NPNF 2 8, p. 24\*). Again: "With regard to other [bodiless] powers [besides the Spirit of God], each is believed to be in a circumscribed place. The angel who stood by Cornelius was not at one and the same moment with Philip (Acts 10:3, 8:26); nor did the angel who spoke with Zachariah from the right side of the altar (Luke 1:11) at the same time occupy his own place in heaven" (ibid. 23.54, SC 17.444, NPNF 2 8, pp. 34–35\*). Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus says the same: "[Angels] require a place; only the Divinity, uncircumscribed in being, does not occupy a place" (*Questions on Genesis* 3, LEC 1, p. 15). St. Symeon the New Theologian also writes of the relative materiality of angels and on their being circumscribed, and then goes on to say that "the same reasoning holds for the [human] soul as well"; see pp. 770–771n below. For further elaboration from Patristic sources, see Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Soul after Death*, 4th ed., pp. 23–27.—ED.

\* This subject is discussed at greater length on pp. 761–74, 768n, 770–771nn below.—ED.

certain teaching of its own on these subjects, but had grown accustomed to accept whatever “science” and its philosophy say.

Alas, our present-day Orthodox Christians, and not least those who have been educated in “theological academies,” *have followed the Roman Catholics in this and have come to a similar state of ignorance of the Patristic teaching.* This is why even Orthodox priests are extremely vague about the Orthodox teaching of Adam and the first-created world and blindly accept whatever science says about these things.

The vague teaching on Paradise and creation of Roman Catholicism—and of those Orthodox Christians who are under Western influence in this matter—has deep roots in the past of Western Europe. The Roman Catholic scholastic tradition, even at the height of its Medieval glory, already taught a false doctrine of man, and one which doubtless paved the way for the later acceptance of evolutionism, first in the apostate West, and then in the minds of Orthodox Christians who are insufficiently aware of their Patristic tradition and so have fallen under foreign influences. In fact the teaching of Thomas Aquinas, unlike the Orthodox Patristic teaching, in its doctrine of man is quite compatible with the idea of evolution which you advocate.

Thomas Aquinas, in the *Summa Theologica*, teaches that,

in the state of innocence, *the human body was in itself corruptible*, but it could be preserved from corruption by the soul.

Again:

It belongs to man to beget offspring, *because of his naturally corruptible body.*<sup>86</sup>

Again:

In Paradise man would have been like an angel in his spirituality of mind, *yet with an animal life in his body.*<sup>87</sup> Man’s body was indissoluble, not by reason of any intrinsic vigor of immortality, *but by reason of a supernatural force given by God to the soul*, whereby it was enabled to preserve the body from all corruption so long as it itself remained

subject to God.... This power of preserving the body from corruption *was not natural to the soul*, but the gift of grace.<sup>88</sup> \* Now it is clear that such a subjection of the body to the soul and of the lower powers to reason (as Adam had in Paradise) *was not from nature*, or otherwise it would have remained after sin.<sup>89</sup>

This last quote shows clearly that Thomas Aquinas does not know that *man's nature was changed* after the transgression. Again:

The immortality of the first state was based on *a supernatural force in the soul*, and not on any intrinsic disposition of the body.<sup>90</sup>

So far is Thomas Aquinas from the true Orthodox vision of the first-created world that he understands it, as do modern "Christian evolutionists," solely from the viewpoint of this fallen world; and thus he is forced to believe, against the testimony of Orthodox Holy Fathers, that Adam naturally *slept* in Paradise,<sup>91</sup> and that he voided faecal matter, a sign of corruption:

Some say that in the state of innocence man would not have taken more than necessary food, so that there would have been nothing superfluous. This, however, is unreasonable to suppose, as implying that there would have been no faecal matter. Therefore there was need for voiding the surplus, yet so disposed by God as not to be unbefitting.<sup>92</sup>

How low is the view of those who try to understand God's creation and Paradise when their starting point is their everyday observation of this present fallen world! As against St. Seraphim's splendid vision of man's *invulnerability to the elements* in Paradise,\*\* behold Thomas Aquinas' purely mechanistic explanation of the rationalistic questions: what happened when a hard body came into contact with the soft body of Adam?

---

\* What Thomas Aquinas here calls variously "a supernatural force" and "grace" is not the same as what Orthodox theology knows as grace. On the distinction between the Roman Catholic teaching of supernatural (created) grace and the Orthodox teaching of grace as the Uncreated Energy of God, see p. 715n below.—ED.

\*\* See pp. 250, 485–86 above.—ED.

## THE PATRISTIC DOCTRINE OF CREATION

In the state of innocence, man's body could be preserved from suffering injury from a hard body, partly by the use of his reason, whereby he could avoid what was harmful; and partly also by Divine providence, which so preserved him, that nothing of a harmful nature could come upon him unawares.<sup>93</sup>

Finally, Thomas Aquinas himself does not teach, but other Medieval scholastics (William of Auxerre, Alexander of Hales, Bonaventure) did teach, the very foundation of present-day "Christian evolutionary" views of man's creation:

*Man was not created in grace, but grace was bestowed on him subsequently, before sin.*<sup>94</sup>

In a word: according to Orthodox doctrine, which comes from Divine vision, Adam's *nature* in Paradise was different from present human nature, both in body and soul, and this exalted nature was perfected by God's grace; but according to Latin doctrine, which is based on rationalistic deductions from the present fallen creation, man is *naturally corruptible and mortal*, just as he is now, and his state in Paradise was a special, supernatural gift.\*

I have quoted all these passages from a heterodox authority, not in

---

\* Some "Orthodox evolutionists" have tried to find a correspondence between the teaching of St. Athanasius the Great on prelapsarian humanity and the view of Thomas Aquinas detailed above: a view which, as Fr. Seraphim observed, might be seen to be compatible with evolutionism. Upon close examination, however, one finds that (in the above-quoted phrase of St. Gregory Palamas) "the concordance" between St. Athanasius and Aquinas, "is only verbal, the thought being quite different." While St. Athanasius did teach that man was originally mortal by nature and incorruptible by grace (see pp. 738–39, 738–39n below), it should be kept in mind that, as Fr. Seraphim noted earlier, the Orthodox Holy Fathers expressed themselves in various ways when speaking of what is of "grace" and what is of "nature," not seeing a rigid dichotomy between the two and viewing the same reality from complementary sides (see also pp. 724–25, 738–41, 739n, 740n, where this is discussed at length). That St. Athanasius' view of prelapsarian man does not in fact accord with that of Thomas Aquinas is seen most clearly when we compare their teachings on human sexual reproduction. According to Aquinas, sexual reproduction was "natural to

order to argue over details of Adam's life in Paradise, but merely to show how far one corrupts the marvelous Patristic vision of Adam and the first-created world when one approaches it with the wisdom of this fallen world. *Neither science nor logic can tell us a thing about Paradise;* and yet many Orthodox Christians are so cowed by modern science and its rationalistic philosophy that they are actually afraid to read seriously the first chapters of Genesis, knowing that modern "wise men" find so many things there that are "dubious" or "confused" or need to be "reinterpreted," or that one may obtain the reputation of being a "fundamentalist" if one dares to read the text simply, "as it is written," *as all the Holy Fathers read it.*

*The instinct of the simple Orthodox Christian is sound when he recoils from the "sophisticated," fashionable view that man is descended from an ape or any other lower creature, or even (as you say) that Adam might have had the very body of an ape. St. Nectarios of Pentapolis rightly expressed his righteous anger against those who try to "prove that man*

---

man" in his original condition, and would have been the means of generation even if the fall had not occurred. He categorically rejected as "unreasonable" the idea that, had man not fallen, God would have employed a means of increasing the human race other than sexual reproduction (*Summa Theologica*, part 1, question 98, article 2). Aquinas attributed this "unreasonable" idea specifically to St. Gregory of Nyssa, but it was actually the common teaching of the Eastern Holy Fathers, including St. Athanasius, who wrote in his Commentary on Psalm 50:5: "The original intention of God was for us to generate not by marriage and corruption. But the transgression of the commandment introduced marriage on account of the lawless act of Adam.... Thus the Psalmist shows, because from the beginning the nature of man had fallen under sin by the transgression in Eve, and under the curse did procreation come about" (PG 27.240CD; see p. 722 below). Since St. Athanasius held that the first humans were not intended to reproduce sexually, that this original state changed when "the nature of man had fallen under sin," and that sexual procreation is to be associated with "corruption" rather than incorruption, it is clear that he saw Adam and Eve as having been in a fundamentally different condition before the fall. Thus, his teaching is shown to be in harmony not with that of Thomas Aquinas—who believed that at his creation man was mentally and physically like people today, possessing bodily needs such as sleep, the voiding of excess, and sexual procreation—but rather with the common Patristic view on the exalted, angel-like state of prelapsarian man, both of soul and body.—ED.





Adam in Paradise (detail).  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan in the Catholicon of the  
Monastery of St. Nicholas Anapausas, Meteora, Greece, 1527.*

is an ape, from which they boast that they are descended.”\* *That is the view of Orthodox holiness*, which knows that creation is not as modern wise men describe it by their vain philosophy, but as God revealed it to Moses “not in riddles,” and as the Holy Fathers have seen it in vision. *Man’s nature is different from ape nature and has never been mixed with it.* If God, for the sake of our humility, had wished to make such a mixture, *the Holy Fathers, who saw the very “composition of visible things” in Divine vision, would have known it.*

HOW LONG WILL ORTHODOX CHRISTIANS REMAIN IN CAPTIVITY TO THIS VAIN WESTERN PHILOSOPHY? Much is said about the “Western captivity” of Orthodox theology in recent centuries; when will we realize that it is a far more drastic “Western captivity” in which every Orthodox Christian finds himself today, a helpless prisoner of the “spirit of the times,” of the dominating current of worldly philosophy which is absorbed in the very air we breathe in an apostate, God-hating society? An Orthodox Christian who is not consciously fighting against the vain philosophy of this age *simply accepts it into himself*, and is at peace with it because his own understanding of Orthodoxy is distorted, does not conform to the Patristic standard.

The sophisticated, worldly-wise laugh at those who call evolution a “heresy.” True, evolution is not *strictly speaking* a heresy; neither is Hinduism, *strictly speaking*, a heresy: but like Hinduism (with which it is indeed related, and which probably had an influence on its development)\*\* evolutionism is an ideology that is profoundly foreign to the teaching of Orthodox Christianity, and it involves one in so many wrong doctrines and attitudes that it would be far better if it were simply a heresy and could thus be easily identified and combatted. Evolu-

---

\* St. Nectarios (1846–1920), Metropolitan of Pentapolis and Wonderworker of Aegina, is one of the most beloved Greek Orthodox saints of modern times. The original context of the above quotation, as well as the Saint’s treatment of the evolutionary writings of Lamarck and Darwin, can be found on pp. 797–99 below.—ED.

\*\* The two Hindu teachers who most thoroughly articulated the concordance between modern evolutionism and Advaita Vedanta Hinduism are Swami Vivekananda (1863–1902) and Sri Aurobindo (1872–1950). See “Swami Vivekananda on Darwin, Evolution, and the Perfect Man,” *What Is Enlightenment?*, Spring/Summer 2002, pp. 58–63, 150–51; and Sri Aurobindo, *The Life Divine* (1985).—ED.

tionism is closely bound up with the whole apostate mentality of the rotten "Christianity" of the West; it is a vehicle of the whole "new spirituality" and "new Christianity" in which the devil is now striving to submerge the last true Christians. It offers an *alternative explanation* of creation to that of the Holy Fathers; it allows an Orthodox Christian under its influence *to read the Holy Scriptures and not understand them*, automatically "adjusting" the text to fit his preconceived philosophy of nature. Its acceptance cannot but involve the acceptance also of *alternative explanations* of other parts of Divine revelation, of an automatic "adjustment" of other Scriptural and Patristic texts to fit in with modern "wisdom."

*I believe that in your feeling for God's creation, as you describe it in your letter, you are Orthodox; but why do you feel that you must corrupt this feeling with modern wisdom and justify this new ideology which is so foreign to Orthodoxy? You have written most movingly "against false union"; how we wish that you would now become just as great a zealot "against false wisdom," and tell the Greek-speaking Orthodox Christians who have accepted this new doctrine much too uncritically that our only wisdom comes from the Holy Fathers, and all that contradicts it is a lie, even if it calls itself "science."*

I beg your forgiveness if anything that I have said seems harsh; I have tried only to speak the truth as I see it in the Holy Fathers. If I have made any mistakes in my citations from the Holy Fathers, I beg you to correct them, but not to let any small mistakes keep you from seeing what I have tried to say. There is much else that I could say on this subject, but I will wait for your reply before doing so. Above all, I have the heartfelt wish that both you and we might see *the true Patristic teaching* on this subject, which is so important for our whole Orthodox worldview. I ask your prayers for myself and our Brotherhood.

With love in Christ our Savior,  
Seraphim, monk

PART III

*The Philosophy of  
Evolution*



Ivan V. Kireyevsky, a Russian philosopher and disciple of the Holy Fathers (see pp. 505–6, 505n below).

## CHAPTER ONE

# *Science and the Holy Fathers*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: This chapter has been taken from among the miscellaneous notes of Fr. Seraphim found after his repose. Each section represents a separate set of notes. We have chosen and arranged those notes which provide the best introduction to the chapters that follow. Other miscellaneous notes of Fr. Seraphim may be found in part 5.*

### *1. True Theology and Secular Knowledge*

THE ATTACK of modern atheistic thought on Christianity has been so effective that many Orthodox Christians are defensive and feel inferior about their own Orthodox wisdom, and are very willing to admit that there is truth and wisdom to be found in modern secular knowledge about which Orthodoxy has “no opinion.” They thus undervalue the immeasurably rich tradition of the Holy Fathers, which gives us Christian wisdom not by any means only on narrow ecclesiastical or theological subjects, but on much else. Patristic wisdom comprises an Orthodox Christian’s whole philosophy of life, including his attitude toward modern conveniences, scientific knowledge, and other things which did not exist in their modern form in the lifetimes of the Holy Fathers of the past.

Roman Catholic theology long ago gave up trying to give the standard of wisdom to contemporary men, with the result that it is now “generally assumed” that answers to many modern questions are to be found in modern “wise men”—scientists and even philosophers.

Orthodox Christians know better than this, and must be quite careful in deciding how much to believe these “wise men.”

One area of common confusion is the interpretation of Genesis, especially in view of the “scientific” theory of evolution. It is no exaggeration to say that many even among Orthodox Christians assume that science has much to say in helping Christians to “interpret” the text of Genesis. Here we shall examine this assumption—not at first by examining directly the theory of evolution, about which of course the Holy Fathers did not speak directly, since it is a product of eighteenth and nineteenth century “Enlightenment” thought which was unheard of in earlier centuries—but chiefly by examining the attitude of the Holy Fathers toward secular knowledge on the one hand, and their principles for understanding and interpreting Genesis on the other hand (and also their *interpretation* of Genesis itself).

No one will dare to say that the Holy Fathers, and Orthodox Christians in general, are “against science,” that is, opposed to scientific knowledge insofar as it is actually knowledge of nature. As God is the author both of revelation and of nature, there can be no conflict whatever between theology and science, as long as each is true and remains in the sphere which belongs to it by nature. Further, those Holy Fathers who wrote commentaries on the book of Genesis did not hesitate to make use of the scientific knowledge of nature known at that time, insofar as it was applicable to the subject. Thus Fr. Michael Pomazansky,\* in a perceptive article comparing the *Hexaemeron* of St. Basil with the *Talks on the Days of Creation* of St. John of Kronstadt, notes that “the *Hexaemeron* of St. Basil to a certain degree is an encyclopedia of the knowledge of the natural sciences of his time in their positive attainments,” his intention being to show the greatness of God as it is still visible in the obvious kinds of creatures. The knowledge of the natural sciences, to be sure, is one that is constantly open to revision owing to new findings made by observation and experiment, and so it is that there one may find errors even in the writings of St. Basil and other Holy Fathers, just as there are errors in the works of every-

---

\* Fr. Michael Pomazansky (1888–1989), one of the last living graduates of a pre-revolutionary theological academy in Russia, was a theological writer for whom Fr. Seraphim had great respect. Fr. Seraphim translated and annotated the English edition of Fr. Michael’s major work, *Orthodox Dogmatic Theology*.—ED.

one who writes concerning scientific facts. These errors in no way detract from the overall value of such works as the *Hexaemeron*, wherein scientific facts are never used as more than illustrations of principles which derive, not from knowledge of nature, but from revelation. With regard to knowledge of the *facts* of nature, modern works of science are of course superior to the “scientific” part of the *Hexaemeron* and similar works of Holy Fathers, being based as they are on more precise observations of nature. This is the *one and only respect* in which science can be said to be superior to or “improve” on the writings of the Holy Fathers; but this is a point which in the Holy Fathers is quite incidental to other, theological and moral teachings.

But let us distinguish quite carefully between actual scientific facts and something quite different which is today, when different kinds of knowledge are not often carefully distinguished, often confused with “fact.” Fr. Michael Pomazansky continues:

St. Basil acknowledges all the scientific facts of natural science. But he does not accept the philosophical *conceptions*, or the interpretations of the facts, which were contemporary to him: the mechanistic theory of the origin of the world, the teaching of the eternity and unbeginningness of the natural world [and the like]....\* St. Basil the Great knew how to raise himself above the theories contemporary to

---

\* Refuting Greek philosophical-scientific theories of a materialistic, naturalistic origin of the world, St. Basil wrote: “The wise men of the Greeks wrote many works about nature, but not one account among them remained unaltered and firmly established, for the later account always overthrew the preceding one. As a consequence, there is no need for us to refute their words: they avail mutually for their own undoing. Those, in fact, who could not recognize God, did not concede that an intelligent cause was the author of the creation of the universe, but they drew their successive conclusions in a manner in keeping with their initial ignorance. For this reason some had recourse to material origins, referring the beginning of the universe to elements of the world; and others imagined that the nature of visible things consisted of atoms and invisible particles, of molecules and interstices; indeed, that, as the indivisible particles now united with each other and now separated, there were produced generations and deteriorations; and that the stronger union of the atoms of the more durable bodies was the cause of their permanence. Truly, it is a spider’s web that these writers weave, who suggest such weak and unsubstantial beginnings of the heavens and earth and sea. It is



him concerning the basic principles of the world, and his *Hexaemeron* stands out as a bright and exalted system which reveals the meaning of Genesis, and reigns above the former [theories] as a bird soars above the creatures which are able to move only along the earth.<sup>1</sup>

The conceptions and theories of present-day science (such as the “theory of evolution”) are clearly of the same order as was that part of the “science” contemporary to him which St. Basil did not accept, inasmuch as it was clearly opposed to Christian revelation. We shall see in what follows whether or not the theory of evolution is an exception to this general rule that the independent philosophical speculations of non-Christians (which always have a greater or lesser appearance of “scientific fact” to support them) have no part in the Orthodox Christian worldview, which is founded on Divine revelation as interpreted and handed down by the Holy Fathers.

One thing more should be said about the distinction in the very nature and quality of theological knowledge and scientific knowledge. The former proceeds from God’s revelation and is judged according to its faithfulness to that revelation, and it leads the soul up to its Source; while scientific knowledge proceeds from the facts of the physical world and it has no purpose but to be faithful to the facts. One need only read the commentaries on Genesis of St. Basil the Great, St. John Chrysostom, St. John of Kronstadt, or any of the Holy Fathers, to see how these Holy Fathers constantly use the knowledge which is available to them, whether theological knowledge of God’s doings or just scientific knowledge of God’s creatures—to draw the reader’s mental gaze up to the Creator, offer moral instruc-

---

because they did not know how to say: ‘In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.’ They were deceived by the godlessness present within them into thinking that the universe was without guide and without rule, as if borne around by chance” (*Hexaemeron* 1.2, FC 46, pp. 5–6). (See St. Athanasius’ refutation of the same type of philosophical-scientific notions, p. 132n above.)

As against the philosophical idea that matter is eternal, St. Basil wrote: “If matter itself is uncreated, it is, in the first place, of equal rank with God, worthy of the same honors. What could be more more impious than this ...?” (ibid. 2.2, p. 23). (On other Patristic writings against this idea, see pp. 156–57n above.)—ED.

tion, and the like: but *never* to rest content with the mere abstract knowledge of things....\*

We shall have occasion later on to remember the distinctions between secular and theological knowledge. For now let it be sufficient for us to know that secular knowledge can teach us nothing about God's revelation that is not contained in that revelation itself. If it attempts to do so it is trying to measure the Divine by human reasoning. In particular, those who think to "interpret" parts of Genesis by means of the evolutionary theory must be prepared to find clear, theological evidence of that theory in God's revelation.

## 2. *Science and Christian Philosophy*

The Russian philosopher Ivan V. Kireyevsky (1806–1856), a disciple of Elder Macarius of Optina, wrote:\*\*

---

\* Here Fr. Seraphim goes on to quote St. Gregory Palamas on the distinction between true theology and secular knowledge. We have omitted these passages here since they are quoted in part 2 (see pp. 466–67).—ED.

\*\* In his "Survival Course," Fr. Seraphim said of Kireyevsky: "Having himself been a son of the West and gone to Germany to study with the most advanced philosophers—Hegel and Schelling—he was thoroughly penetrated with the Western spirit and then became thoroughly converted to Orthodoxy. Therefore he saw that these two things could not be put together. He wanted to find out why they were different and what was the answer in one's soul, what one had to choose.... He did not come back to Orthodoxy in order to be against the world without understanding it. Rather, it was in Orthodoxy that he found the key to understanding the history of the Western world and what was happening there."

It is noteworthy that Kireyevsky's former teachers Georg Hegel (1770–1831) and Friedrich Schelling (1775–1854), with whom he was personally acquainted, were the first major philosophers in the West to propound a philosophy of "spiritual evolution." This was many years before Charles Darwin came out with his biological theory.

Besides writing philosophical works of his own, Kireyevsky was instrumental in helping his elder, St. Macarius of Optina, to edit and publish major Patristic works which were sent all over Russia. See Fr. Leonid Kavelin, *Elder Macarius of Optina*, pp. 287–307.

See also Fr. Alexey Young's book *A Man Is His Faith: Ivan Kireyevsky and Orthodox Christianity* (1980), for which Fr. Seraphim translated passages of Kireyevsky's writings.—ED.

The sciences in their essential part, i.e., as knowledge, belong equally to the pagan and Christian world and are distinguished only by their philosophical side. [Roman] Catholicism could not give them this philosophical side of Christianity because she did not possess it herself in pure form. And so we see that the sciences, as the inheritance of paganism, have flourished powerfully in Europe, but have ended in atheism, as an inevitable consequence of their one-sided development....

Christian philosophy alone can give to the sciences a correct foundation.<sup>2</sup>

In Russia (as opposed to the West),

all the Greek Holy Fathers, not excluding the most profound thinkers, were translated and read, and copied, and studied in the quiet of our monasteries, these holy embryos of the universities which did not exist. Isaac of Syria, the most profound thinker of all the philosophical writers, remains to this time in copies of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. And these monasteries were in living, unceasing contact with the people.<sup>3</sup>

This is the foundation of *true* enlightenment.

The sciences now have gone far astray, their knowledge twisted, because they have no *Christian* foundation; thinking to make their own foundation they have stumbled over their own unconscious presuppositions and have stupidly assumed the prejudices of the "spirit of the age." Present-day sciences exist in a state of "learned ignorance," a mass of details in a context of stupidity. Contemporary science exists in a state of philosophical barbarism, a true Dark Ages of knowledge. Only true Christianity can give it true philosophy.\*

---

\* See the observations of St. Theophan the Recluse and St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije on this topic, pp. 789–94, 809–10 below.—ED.

### 3. *Distinguishing Materialistic Fantasies from Scientific Truth*

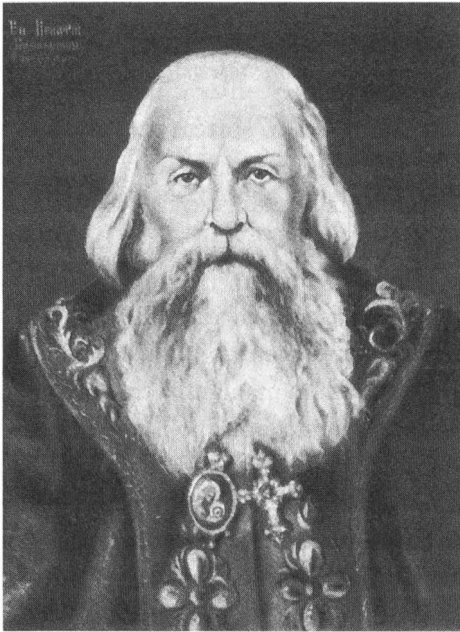
Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov (1807–1867)\* teaches that, for true philosophy today, one must know *both* true Christianity and true science; without this, one can't distinguish materialistic fantasies from scientific truth. He writes:

It is to be desired that some Orthodox Christian, having studied the applied sciences, would then study the fundamentals of the asceticism of the Orthodox Church, and bequeath to mankind a true philosophy, founded upon precise knowledge and not upon arbitrary hypotheses. The Greek sage Plato forbade the exercise of philosophy without the prerequisite study of mathematics. This is a true view of the matter. Without a prerequisite study of mathematics, together with the other sciences based upon it, and without the active and grace-filled knowledge of Christianity, it is impossible in our time to set forth a correct philosophical system. Many who consider themselves adepts in philosophy but are unacquainted with mathematics and the natural sciences, upon encountering arbitrary fantasies and

---

\* In his book *The Soul after Death*, Fr. Seraphim wrote of St. Ignatius Brianchaninov: "[He] was perhaps the first great Orthodox theologian to face squarely the very problem which has become so acute in our own days: how to preserve the authentic Christian tradition and teaching in a world that has become entirely foreign to Orthodoxy and strives either to overthrow and dismiss it or else 'reinterpret' it so that it can be made compatible with a worldly way of life and thinking. Acutely aware of the Roman Catholic and other Western influences which were striving to 'modernize' Orthodoxy even in his days, Bishop Ignatius prepared for the defense of Orthodoxy both by delving deeply into the authentic Orthodox sources (whose teaching he absorbed in some of the best Orthodox monastic centers of his time) and by familiarizing himself also with the scientific and literary culture of his century (he attended an engineering school, not a theological seminary). Armed thus with a knowledge both of Orthodox theology and of secular knowledge, he devoted his life to the defense of authentic Orthodoxy and to an exposure of the modern deviation from it. It is no exaggeration to say that no other Orthodox country in the nineteenth century possessed such a defender of Orthodoxy against the temptations and errors of modern times" (*The Soul after Death*, 4th ed., p. xiv).—ED.

## THE PHILOSOPHY OF EVOLUTION



Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov,  
glorified as a saint by the  
Russian Orthodox  
Church in 1988.

hypotheses in the works of materialists, will not be able in any way to differentiate them from knowledge derived from science itself, and will not be able in any way to give a satisfactory response to and evaluation of the most absurd ravings of any kind of dreamer. Very often they are attracted to these ravings to the point of delusion, having taken them as evident truth.<sup>4\*</sup>

### *4. Science as a Lower Form of Knowledge*

The Orthodox Christian is not “against science.” But he expects from science only that knowledge which it is capable of giving, by its

---

\* The above passage appeared in vol. 3 of St. Ignatius’ collected works, which was prepared by the author and published in 1866, a year before he reposed. This was four years after Charles Darwin’s *Origin of Species* had reached Russia, where it initially met with prolonged opposition. It is likely that, in speaking of the “arbitrary fantasies and hypotheses in the works of materialists,” St. Ignatius had Charles Darwin’s theory in mind, as well as the previous evolutionary ideas of Erasmus Darwin and Jean-Baptiste Lamarck.—ED.

very nature—not theology, not a philosophy of life. Yet in our time of intellectual confusion, when “science” has achieved such prestige in the popular mind as to be synonymous with knowledge itself, it happens all too often that scientists presume to teach that which they did not learn by means of science at all; such scientists, in fact, talk like theologians.

Modern science thinks it is “knowledge” par excellence, and before its prestige Orthodox believers waver, often apologizing for believing what seems “unscientific,” remaining content with the pietism or “religious feeling” which is the place where the scientific establishment allows faith today.

But true Orthodox Christianity is quite different. It is not bound up with any current of modern thought; it is a knowledge superior to science, and it certainly need not apologize to a lower form of knowledge.

We know God created the world in “measure, number, and weight” (Wisdom 11:20); but God has not revealed to man the details of His ordered creation, and those who pry into the “mystery of nature” find out only an infinitesimal part of the mysteries which come from God’s infinite wisdom. Modern science has proved that fallen man is not capable of using well what knowledge he has obtained.

But modern science is not only knowledge. It has divorced itself from revelation, and therefore placed itself at the disposal of heretical, un-Christian and anti-Christian theories and philosophies. Often these conflict with revelation because they enter the realm open only to theology.

So it is with the doctrine of the first man. God has not revealed many details of the first state of His creation, but [what He has revealed] is sufficient to judge the philosophical-religious speculations of evolutionists. The Orthodox doctrine of creation has not been known in the West; the Roman Catholic doctrine is quite different.

### *5. An Alien System of Thought*

There is much confusion about evolution. Some say, “Orthodox Christians have no quarrel with evolution,” or they use the one phrase “God-guided evolution.” This understanding of evolution is rather

primitive: assuming it is a "scientific fact" on the level of heliocentrism. In fact those opposed to evolution are often compared to the Roman Catholic Church against Galileo, and even Orthodox Christians are rather afraid to be found "naive" or be left behind the intellectual currents or fashions of the age.

But the whole doctrine of evolution is rather more complex than a single "scientific fact" or even "hypothesis." And it *is* a doctrine—a belief involving many spheres of thought and by no means just science; and it is sufficiently coherent to be able to speak of it as a more or less coherent doctrine. We shall find it to be a *whole distinctive approach to reality*, with its own distinctive philosophical and theological presuppositions and deductions. In theology, in particular, it offers a *conscious alternative* to Orthodox Christianity on a number of key dogmas.

#### 6. *The Lack of Philosophical Culture among Orthodox Christians*

The misunderstanding of evolution on the part of some Orthodox Christians comes from a want of philosophical culture:

1. They do not have a critical approach to scientific "findings" (although, in full harmony with the modern spirit, they do have a critical approach to Scripture) and do not understand the *nature* of scientific "evidence" which supposedly supports evolution, nor do they know how to distinguish between fact and *philosophy*. They are unnecessarily awed by scientific "experts" and do not take the necessary trouble to investigate the question themselves.

2. They do not understand the philosophical "spirit of the age" which gave rise to evolution, and therefore they naively accept the "scientific fact" of evolution, but reject the finished *philosophy* of evolution as in Teilhard de Chardin. They do not see that these are one whole; without the *philosophy*, there would never have been the "fact" of evolution.

3. They do not understand the *philosophy* of the Holy Fathers—their whole outlook on nature and on specific questions such as the natures of individual things.

7. *The Philosophy of the Holy Fathers*

“The Fathers said nothing about evolution”—this is used by many Orthodox as an excuse for actually *believing whatever one wants or whatever “science” says on this subject.*

But our attitude to the Fathers must be more serious and more profound than this. Being faithful to the Fathers does not mean merely being ready to quote them or feel “free” to think as one pleases if no quotes are available. Rather, it means entering into their thought, which is the thought of the Church of Christ, and having a coherent philosophy of life derived from our life in the Church in harmony with the thought of the Fathers.

And the Fathers did have a philosophy, indeed a theology, which encompasses the question of evolution and makes it absolutely clear what the Orthodox Christian must think about this question. “Evolution” is not a “heresy,” any more than Buddhism is a “heresy”; but it includes, implies and presupposes so many errors and false views as to be totally incompatible with Orthodox Christianity. Most Orthodox believers have not thought deeply on this question, and so in their carelessness they think it is somehow “possible” to accept evolution. The rest of this study will attempt to clarify this issue, to make Orthodox Christians aware of the implications of Orthodox theology and the philosophy of the Holy Fathers, which have a very clear view of the chief questions raised by evolution for Christian believers.



## CHAPTER TWO

# *A Brief Critique of the Evolutionary Model*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: This chapter has been transcribed from a taped lecture that Fr. Seraphim gave during his "Orthodox Survival Course" in the summer of 1975. The section titles and some additions to the text have been taken from his written outline of the course. Additions have also been taken from previous lectures in the same course, which provide necessary background to the present discussion.*

### *1. Introduction*

NOW WE COME to a key concept which is extremely important for understanding both the religious and the secular outlook of contemporary man. This idea is an extremely complex one, and here we can give only a sketchy outline of the problems involved in this question.

Charles Darwin's *Origin of Species* came out in 1859, was instantly accepted by many people, and soon became very popular. People such as T. H. Huxley and Herbert Spencer in England, together with Ernst Haeckel in Germany (author of *The Riddle of the Universe*, 1899) and others, popularized the ideas of Darwin and made evolution the very center of their philosophy. It seems to explain everything. Of course, people like Nietzsche picked it up and used it for their so-called spiritual prophecies.\* Thus, the people who were in the main school of Western thought—which was rationalism carried as far as you can take

---

\*Through the mouth of his "prophet" Zarathustra, Friedrich Nietzsche proclaimed: "Man is something to be surpassed.... What is the ape to man? A laughing-stock or a bitter shame. And just the same shall man be to the Superman: a laughingstock or a bitter shame. Ye have made your way from worm to man, and

it—accepted evolution. To the present day, one can say that evolution is a central dogma of “advanced” thinkers, of people who are in harmony with the times.

From the very beginning, however, there were people who were arguing about this. In the time of Darwin, there was a Catholic thinker, St. George Jackson Mivart (author of *On the Genesis of Species*, 1871), who believed in evolution but not in Darwin’s idea of natural selection. Especially in the last ten to thirty years, there have come out many critical accounts of evolution from an objective point of view. As these works demonstrate, most of the books supporting evolution begin with certain premises and assumptions arising from the naturalistic outlook.

Now there is even a society in San Diego called the Institute for Creation Research, which has come out with several good books. They themselves are religious, but they have several books which discuss evolution from a scientific, not a religious standpoint. They say there are two models for understanding the universe: one is the evolution model, and another is the creation model. They take the evidence of the history of the earth, for example—the geological layers and so forth—and they try to see which model it fits. They have discovered that fewer adjustments have to be made if one follows the model of creation—if there was a God Who created things in the beginning and if the earth is not billions of years old but only some thousands of years old. The evolutionary model, on the other hand, requires a good many corrections. In this regard, it can be compared to the old model of the Ptolemaic universe (vs. the Copernican model). Like the Ptolemaic model, the evolutionary model is now proving quite cumbersome.\*

Some members of this Institute travel around to various universi-

---

much in you is still worm. Once ye were apes, and even now man is more ape than any ape.... Behold, I preach to you the Superman. The Superman is the meaning of the earth” (Nietzsche, *Thus Spake Zarathustra*, Prologue 3). Elsewhere Nietzsche affirmed his belief in the central tenets of evolutionist philosophy: “[T]he doctrines of sovereign becoming, of the fluidity of all concepts, types and kinds, of the lack of any cardinal distinction between human and animal—[are] doctrines that I hold to be true but deadly” (Nietzsche, *Untimely Meditations* 2.9, quoted in John Richardson, *Nietzsche’s New Darwinism*, p. 14, n. 8).—ED.

\* Fr. Seraphim discusses this at greater length on pp. 371–72, 374–75 above.—ED.

ties. In the last year or two, they have held several debates before thousands of spectators at universities in Tennessee, Texas, etc. Interest has been quite high. Those defending evolution have not been able to give sound evidence in support of it and, in fact, on several points were caught on their ignorance of recent discoveries in paleontology.

There are very sophisticated and knowledgeable people defending both points of view. Here we will not even discuss the question of atheistic evolution because it is obviously a philosophy of fools,\* of people who can believe, as Huxley said, that if you put a group of monkeys together with typewriters they will eventually give you the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, given enough time—if not millions then billions of years, according to the laws of chance.\*\* Someone calculated evolutionary theory according to the laws of chance and found that in fact such a thing would never happen.\*\*\* Anyone who can believe that can believe anything.

The more serious dispute is between theistic evolution—that God created the world and then it evolved—and the Christian point of view. Here we must say that the fundamentalist point of view is incorrect in many instances because the fundamentalists do not know how to interpret Scripture. They say, for example, that the book of Genesis must be understood “literally,” and one cannot do this. The Holy Fathers tell us which parts are literal and which parts are not.

The first misunderstanding that must be cleared away before even discussing this question—one that causes many people to miss the point—centers on the failure to distinguish between *evolution* and *variation*. Variation is the process by which people make various hy-

---

\* Cf. Psalm 13:1: “The fool hath said in his heart: There is no God.”—ED.

\*\* This idea, now known as the “infinite monkey theorem,” was actually misattributed to T. H. Huxley by the English scientist James Jeans in 1931. Nevertheless, the typing monkey concept is employed by evolutionists today in their arguments for Darwinian gradualism; see, for example, Richard Dawkins, *The Blind Watchmaker* (1986), pp. 141–42.—ED.

\*\*\* See, for example, Paul S. Moorhead and Martin M. Kaplan, eds., *Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution*, Witmar Institute Symposium Monograph, no. 5 (1967); and Lee Spetner, *Not by Chance!* (1997), chap. 4, pp. 85–124.—ED.

brids of peas, different breeds of cats, etc. After fifty years of experimentation, for example, they came up with a new breed of cat: a combination of Siamese and Persian, called the Himalayan cat, which has long hair like a Persian with the coloring of a Siamese. At first this had happened accidentally, but the cat was never able to reproduce itself purely; and only now after all these years of experimentation have they come up with a new breed which breeds true. Likewise, there are different breeds of dogs, different varieties of plants, and the very “races” of men are all quite different: Pygmies, Hottentots, Chinese, Northern Europeans—all different types of human beings who came from one ancestor. Therefore, the question of variation is one thing, and must be distinguished from evolution.\*

There are undoubtedly many variations within one kind of creature, but these variations never produce anything new; they only produce a different *variety* of dog or cat or bean or people. In fact, this is more of a proof *against* evolution than for it because no one has ever been able to come up with a new kind of creature. The different “species”—and this term is itself quite arbitrary—for the most part are not able to bear offspring with each other; and, in the few cases where they can, the offspring is not able to reproduce itself. Thus, St. Ambrose of Milan says: This is an example to you, O man, to stop meddling in the ways of God. God means for each creature to be separate.\*\*

## 2. Historical Background

During the period of the Enlightenment, the worldview was quite stable. Just before this time, the Anglican Archbishop Ussher of Armagh

---

\* In his notes, Fr. Seraphim writes: “The popular mind accepts mere ‘variation’ as proof of a much bigger question of ‘evolution.’ We leave it to scientists to define the limits of change observable to them. By its grandiose conception, evolution as such cannot be *proved* by the small variations observable by science today...”

“Let scientists define the limits of variation, and let them use the word and concept of ‘evolution’ in explaining change—but let them abandon metaphysical schemes which strive to extrapolate small changes into an all-encompassing principle. If this latter is true, let it come naturally from the data without forcing an interpretation on facts.”—ED.

\*\* See p. 185 above.—ED.

calculated all the years given in the Old Testament genealogies and came up with the idea that the world was created in the year 4004 B.C.\* Newton believed this, and the Enlightenment worldview was in favor of the idea that God created the world in six days and then left it to develop itself, and that all the species were just as we see them today. The scientists of that time accepted that.

At the end of the period of Enlightenment, however, as the revolutionary fever began to come on, this very stable worldview began to break down, and already some scientists were coming up with more radical theories. At the end of the eighteenth century, Erasmus Darwin, the grandfather of Charles Darwin, had already come up with the hypothesis that all of life comes from one primordial filament—which is exactly what is meant today by the theory of evolution. His theory did not concern only one species or kind of creature, but proposed that a primordial blob or filament developed into all the different kinds of creatures by transmutations.\*\*

This new explanation of Erasmus Darwin was an attempt to continue in the spirit of the Enlightenment: a spirit marked by utter

---

\* The Archbishop's finding was published in 1650 and was soon added as a marginal notation to the book of Genesis in the Authorized Version of the Bible. His calculation was based on the Masoretic (Hebrew) Text of the Old Testament. According to the Old Testament chronology in the Septuagint (Greek) text, which is used by Orthodox Christians, the earth is approximately 1,500 years older than Archbishop Ussher's calculation; see pp. 314–15, 314n, 315n, 387, 387nn above.—ED.

\*\* Erasmus Darwin's book *Zoonomia*, in which he proposed this theory, was first published in London in 1794. In it he wrote: "From thus meditating on the great similarity of the structure of the warm-blooded animals, and at the same time on the great changes they undergo both before and after their nativity; and by considering in how minute a portion of time many of the changes of animals above described have been produced; would it be too bold to imagine, that in the great length of time, since the earth began to exist, perhaps millions of ages before the commencement of the history of mankind, would it be too bold to imagine, that all warm-blooded animals have arisen from one living filament, which the Great First Cause endued with animality, with the power of acquiring new parts attended with new propensities, directed by irritations, sensations, volitions, and associations; and thus possessing the faculty of continuing to improve by its own inherent activity, and of delivering down those improvements by generation to its posterity, world without end?" (p. 572).—ED.

rationalism and simplicity. As rationalism entered deeper into the mind, it was simpler (he thought) to explain life as coming from a single living filament than to give the more “complicated” explanation that God gave being all at once to all different kinds of creatures.

There was one naturalist, Chevalier de Lamarck (author of *Philosophie zoologique*, 1809), who had a definite evolutionary theory just after this, but he had the idea that the changes necessary to account for the evolving of one species into another were due to the inheritance of acquired characteristics. This could never be proved, and has in fact been quite disproved. Hence, the idea of evolution did not take hold.

There was, however, one important geologist at this period of the early nineteenth century who gave a great impetus towards the acceptance of this idea of evolution. This was Charles Lyell, who in 1830 came up with the theory of uniformitarianism, that is, that all we see in the earth today is due not to catastrophes—to a sudden flood or something similar—but rather to the fact that the processes operating today have been operating in past ages, from the beginning of the world, as far back as we can see. Therefore, if we look at the Grand Canyon, we see that the river has been eating away the canyon, and we can calculate—by taking into account how fast the water flows, how much water there is in it now, the quality of the soil and so on—how long it must have taken to wear away the canyon. Lyell thought that if we assume that these processes were always going on at the same rate—this being very rational and given to calculation—we can come up with a uniform explanation of things.\* Of course, there is no proof of this; this is merely his hypothesis.

This idea, together with the idea which was now gaining sympa-

---

\* In 1829, Lyell wrote: “My work [*Principles of Geology*] will endeavor to establish the principle of reasoning in the science ... that no causes whatever have from the earliest time to which we can look back, to the present, ever acted, but those now acting; and they have never acted with different degrees of energy from that which they now exert” (quoted in Stephen J. Gould, *Ever Since Darwin*, p. 192).

In 1831, a year after Lyell’s *Principles of Geology* was published, Darwin read it during his voyage on the *Beagle*. After the voyage, Lyell became Darwin’s mentor,

thy—that species evolve into each other—led to another idea. If you put these two ideas together, you get the idea that most likely the world is not just a few thousand years old like the Christians seem to say, but that it must be very many thousands or millions of years old, or even more. Thus arose the idea of the greater and greater age of the earth. But again this belief (that the world must be very old) was only a presupposition; it was not proved.

Already this idea was sinking into the minds of men when in 1859 Charles Darwin came out with his book propounding the idea of natural selection. Darwin's idea was opposed to that of Lamarck, who said that the giraffe evolved because a short-necked creature stretched its neck to eat the higher leaves, its offspring had a neck an inch longer, the next one stretched a little more, and gradually it became what we know today as a giraffe. This is against all scientific laws, because such things don't happen. An acquired characteristic cannot be inherited. For example, when Chinese women had their feet bound, their daughters were always born with normal feet.

Darwin, on the other hand, came up with the idea that there were perhaps two longer-necked creatures which survived because they had longer necks; they were joined together because all the rest died off due to adverse circumstances or disaster; and their offspring did have longer necks because a change had occurred within them: what scientists today call a "mutation." This might have been a chance thing at first, but once reproduction between two such creatures has taken place, it continues down through the ages.

Of course, this is a *guess* because no one has observed such a thing

---

and it is clear from Darwin's later statements that Lyell's ideas made him think of applying the principles of uniformitarianism to the past history of living creatures. In his private letters, Lyell made it clear that he was intent upon abolishing what he called "Mosaic geology," i.e., interpreting the geologic strata in terms of the Genesis Flood.

Paleontologist Stephen Jay Gould, one of the twentieth century's most prominent evolutionists, has accused Lyell of deception in his promotion of uniformitarianism: "Lyell relied upon true bits of cunning to establish his uniformitarian view as the only true geology.... Lyell imposed his imagination upon the evidence" (*Ever Since Darwin*, pp. 149–50).—ED.

happen.\* But this guess struck the consciousness of the people; they were like tinder, all ready for it, and this was the spark. The idea sounded so plausible; and the idea of evolution took hold—not because it was proved.

As a matter of fact, the speculations of Darwin were based almost entirely upon his observations, not of evolution, but of *variation*. When he was traveling in the Galápagos Islands, Darwin wondered why there were thirteen different varieties of one kind of finch, and thought that it was because there was one original variety which had developed according to its environment. This is not evolution but variation. From this, he jumped to the conclusion that if you keep making small changes like that, eventually you will have an absolutely different kind of creature. The problem in trying to prove this scientifically is that no one has ever observed these larger changes; they have only observed changes *within* a kind.\*\*

### 3. "Proofs" of Evolution

Let us look now at the so-called proofs of evolution to see what they are. We are not going to try to disprove evolution, but just to try to see the quality of the proofs that are used—what it is that seems convincing to people who believe in evolution.

1. There is a standard textbook of zoology used twenty years ago, *General Zoology* by Tracy I. Storer, which lists a number of proofs. The first proof in the book is called "*comparative morphology*," that is, a comparison of body structures. Man has arms, birds have wings, fish have flippers—the book has convincing diagrams which make them look

---

\*That is, no one has observed complex new creatures or organs come into being through such means.—ED.

\*\*This is because, as has now been shown through genetic research, the capacity for variation in a particular organism is limited by the inherent variability of that organism's gene pool. "In other words," writes Phillip E. Johnson, "the reason that dogs don't become as big as elephants, much less change into elephants, is not that we just haven't been breeding them long enough. Dogs do not have the genetic capacity for that degree of change, and they stop getting bigger when the genetic limit is reached" (*Darwin on Trial*, p. 18).—ED.



very much alike. The birds have claws and we have fingers—the book shows how one might have developed into the other.\* All creatures are shown to have a very similar structure, and the different structures are arranged according to different phyla and genera. Of course, this is not a proof. It is very logical, however, to one who believes in evolution.

On the other hand, the scientific creationists say that if you believe that God created the universe, He must have had a basic master-plan of creation; therefore, all kinds of creatures would have basic similarities. If you believe that God created all the creatures, these diagrams convince you that, yes, God created them according to a plan. If you believe that one creature evolved into the other, you look at the same diagrams and say, yes, one evolved into the other. But there is no proof either for or against evolution in this. In actual fact, people accept evolution on some other basis and then look at such diagrams, and the diagrams convince them even more.

2. Secondly, there is “*comparative physiology*.” The book *General Zoology* states: “The tissue and fluids of organisms show many basic similarities in physiological and chemical properties that parallel morphological features.”<sup>1</sup> For example,

from the hemoglobin in vertebrate blood, oxyhemoglobin crystals can be obtained; their crystalline structure ... parallels that of vertebrate classification based on body structure. Those of each species are distinct, but all from a genus have some common characteristic. Furthermore, those of all birds have certain resemblances but differ from crystals obtained from blood of mammals or reptiles.<sup>2</sup>

We can say the same thing here as we said of morphology. If you believe in creation, you say that God made similar creatures with similar blood, and there is no problem. If you believe in evolution, you say that one evolved into the other.

---

\* In this illustration, on p. 215 of *General Zoology*, a “hypothetical intermediate” (referred to as such in the caption) is shown between the fin of a fish and the limb of an amphibian. In other words, in the absence of an intermediate structure, the author had to invent one.—ED.

A dating system has been devised from precipitations from blood. Scientists see that the precipitations are similar in each species, that they have something in common within one genus, and that they are quite distinct in different genera: birds and monkeys, for example. From this they make certain calculations and decide how many years apart on the evolutionary scale these different creatures are. As it happens, their calculations throw everything else off. If this is to be accepted, other dating systems have to be changed; so it is still controversial. It actually proves nothing, because you can accept it as a proof either of evolution or of God's creation.

3. There is a third argument called "*comparative embryology*." Text-books like *General Zoology* used to have pictures that show an embryonic fish, salamander, turtle, chicken, pig, man, etc., demonstrating that they all look very much alike and saying that they gradually develop differently. You can see that man has so-called "gill-slits" in the embryo. Therefore, this is supposed to be a remembrance of his ancestry.\* Ernst Haeckel, in his "theory of recapitulation" and "biogenetic law," stated that "an individual organism in its development (ontogeny) tends to recapitulate the stages passed through by its ancestors (phylogeny)." <sup>3</sup> Today this theory is no longer accepted by evolutionists.\*\* Scientists have found that the "gill-slits" are not gill-slits at all, but are just preparing for what is to be developed in the neck of the hu-

---

\* That is, a proof that man evolved from aquatic animals with gills.—ED.

\*\* Evolutionists now acknowledge that Haeckel faked his famous drawings of embryonic development in order to prove his (and Darwin's) theory. Stephen Jay Gould wrote that "Haeckel had exaggerated the similarities [between embryos] by idealizations and omissions. He also, in some cases—in a procedure that can only be called fraudulent—simply copied the same figure over and over again" (*Natural History*, March 2000, pp. 42–49). British embryologist Michael Richardson, interviewed for *The Times* (London) after he and his colleagues published comparisons between Haeckel's drawings and actual embryos, was even stronger in his criticism: "This is one of the worst cases of scientific fraud. It's shocking to find that somebody one thought was a great scientist was deliberately misleading. It makes me angry.... What he [Haeckel] did was to take a human embryo and copy it, pretending that the salamander and the pig and all the others looked the same at the same stage of development. They don't.... These are fakes" (*The Times* [Aug. 1997], pp. 14, 11). On the history of Haeckel's "biogenetic law," see Jonathan Wells, *Icons of Evolution*, chap. 5.—ED.

man being. So this proof has been pretty well discarded. Again, they used the argument that similarity means proof, which in fact it does not.

4. Another proof, which used to be more powerful than it is today, is that of "*vestigial*" organs. Evolutionists claimed that there are certain organs, like the appendix in man, which seem to have no function now and therefore must be left over from a previous stage of evolution, when a monkey or another of man's ancestors used these organs. But more and more these "vestigial" organs are found to have a certain use; the appendix, for example, is found to have some kind of glandular function, so this argument is also losing weight.\* And just because we do not know what a certain organ does, this does not mean that it is left over from some lower form of life.

5. Then there are the arguments from *paleontology*: the study of fossils. Of course, the first seemingly convincing proof is the geological strata, as, for example, in the Grand Canyon where you see all kinds of strata; and the lower you get the more primitive the creatures there seem to be. Scientists date the strata by what kind of creatures are found in them.

In the nineteenth century they discovered these strata and determined which were older and which were younger; and now they have a rather elaborate system by which to tell which strata are older and which younger. However, the whole dating system is rather circular. Since often these strata are "upside down" according to the evolutionary model, they have to make certain readjustments. Just like the Ptolemaic system needed certain adjustments (epicycles had to be devised, because the planets were not going around the earth uniformly), in the same way evolutionists must make adjustments when they find that, according to evolutionary theory, the strata are "upside down." They have to date them by the fossils in

---

\* In 1890, evolutionists claimed there were about 180 vestigial organs in man, but virtually none are claimed now. The organs once regarded as vestigial—including, the appendix, thyroid gland, thymus, coccyx, pineal gland, ear muscles and tonsils—are now known to have useful and often essential functions. For a detailed treatment of this subject, see the book "*Vestigial Organs*" *Are Fully Functional* by Dr. Jerry Bergman and Dr. George Howe (1990).—ED.

them. But how do they know that the fossils in them are in the right order? They know because somewhere else the fossils were in the "right" order according to the evolutionist model, and they got the system from that. If you look at it closely, you see that it is a circular system.\* One has to have *faith* that this actually corresponds to reality.

There are a number of flaws in this. For one thing, the creatures appear quite *suddenly* in each strata, with no intermediary types leading up to them. Besides this, as research continues, they are finding animals in the strata which are not supposed to be where they are. For example, now in the Precambrian level they are finding jellyfish-like creatures [*Tribrachidium*] and all kinds of complex animals, which should not be there because they supposedly should not have evolved until some hundred million years later.\*\* Either you have to change

---

\* Some evolutionary paleontologists have acknowledged the problem of this circular reasoning. Dr. Ronald R. West (Assistant Professor of Paleobiology, Kansas State University) writes: "Contrary to what most scientists write, the fossil record does not support the Darwinian theory of evolution because it is this theory (there are several) which we use to interpret the fossil record. By doing so, we are guilty of circular reasoning if we then say the fossil record supports this theory" ("Paleontology and Uniformitarianism," *Compass*, vol. 45 [May 1968], p. 216). Likewise, Dr. David G. Kitts (Head Curator, Department of Geology, Stovall Museum, University of Oklahoma) writes: "But the danger of circularity is still present. For most biologists, the strongest reason for accepting the evolutionary hypothesis is their acceptance of some theory that entails it. There is another difficulty. The temporal ordering of biological events beyond the local section may critically involve paleontological correlation, which necessarily presupposes the non-repeatability of organic events in geologic history. There are various justifications for this assumption, but for almost all contemporary paleontologists it rests upon the acceptance of the evolutionary hypothesis" ("Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory," *Evolution*, vol. 28 [Sept. 1974], p. 466).

For further discussion of the role of evolutionary theory in modern stratigraphy, see pp. 371–72, 371–72n above and pp. 530n, 866–68, 878–80 below.—ED.

\*\* These soft-bodied organisms found in Precambrian rocks are so unusual that some evolutionist paleontologists have concluded that they cannot be ancestral to Cambrian groups (see, for example, Stephen Jay Gould, "The Ediacaran Experiment," *Natural History*, vol. 93, no. 2 [1984], pp. 14–23; and Adolf Seilacher, "Vendobionta and Psammocorallia: Lost Constructions of Precambrian Evolution,"

your idea of the evolution of such creatures, or you have to say that these were exceptions.\*

In general, there is no proof that these strata were laid down over millions of years. The creationists who talk about the Flood of Noah say that it is equally conceivable that the Flood caused exactly the same thing. The simpler marine animals on the sea-bottoms would generally be the first to be buried, followed by fish and other organisms living nearer the ocean surface. The more advanced animals, including man, would be going on higher ground trying to get away from the Flood. There would be few remnants of man because man would be trying to get on ships and other things to get away.\*\*

---

*Journal of the Geological Society, London*, vol. 149, no. 4 [1992], pp. 607–13). The fact that these creatures have been found in Precambrian beds actually demolishes a standard Darwinian explanation for the absence of Precambrian ancestors: that soft-bodied creatures would not fossilize. Many soft-bodied fossils do exist in Precambrian rocks, but secular scientists have found it impossible to determine their evolutionary relationship to “later” creatures. See Johnson, *Darwin on Trial*, pp. 54–55, note 3.—ED.

\* See John Woodmorappe, “The Fossil Record: Becoming More Random All the Time,” *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 14, no. 1 (2000), pp. 110–16; and Brian Thomas, “Fossil Discoveries Disrupt Evolutionary Timescales,” Institute for Creation Research website, posted June 28, 2010 (<http://www.icr.org/article/5501/>).—ED.

\*\* For further discussion of this creationist model of interpreting fossil sequence, see Andrew A. Snelling, *Earth's Catastrophic Past*, vol. 2, pp. 727–44; idem, “Doesn't the Order of Fossils in the Rock Record Favor Long Ages?,” in *The New Answers Book 2*, ed. Ken Ham, chap. 31, pp. 341–54; idem, “Order in the Fossil Record,” *Answers*, Jan.–March 2010, pp. 64–68; Don Batten et al., *The Creation Answers Book*, chap. 15, pp. 193–200; Ariel A. Roth, *Origins: Linking Science and Scripture*, pp. 153–77; and Gary Parker, *Creation: Facts of Life*, pp. 191–213. For a more technical treatment, see John Woodmorappe, *Studies in Flood Geology*, pp. 23–75, 177–97.

Dr. David M. Raup, a world-renowned paleontologist who served as curator and Dean of Science at the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago (which houses the world's largest collection of fossils), has acknowledged that one could fit the fossil record into a variety of models, including one of random fossil deposition. He writes: “The fossil record is amenable to a wide variety of models ranging from completely deterministic [i.e., with sequences determined by the course of evolution] to com-

Moreover, there are only very particular conditions which cause a fossil to be left at all. A creature has to be buried suddenly in a certain kind of mud which allows it to be preserved.\* The whole idea of the gradualness of these phenomena is being called more and more into question. There is now proof that oil and coal and such things can be made in an extremely short time—in a matter of days or weeks.\*\* The formation of fossils itself is very much in favor of some catastrophe.

In the realm of paleontology, the most important argument against evolution is that it is hard to say that there has ever been found a single thing which can be called an intermediary species. In fact, Darwin was extremely worried about this. He wrote:

The number of intermediate varieties, which have formerly existed, [must] be truly enormous. Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links? Geology assuredly does not reveal any such finely-graduated organic chain; and this, perhaps, is the most obvious and serious objection which can be urged against the theory. The explanation lies, as I believe, in the extreme imperfection of the geological record.<sup>4</sup>

Today's scientists say that the fossil record is extremely abundant: there are more fossil species known than living species. Still, there

---

pletely stochastic [i.e., with sequences random in occurrence]" (Raup, "Probabilistic Models in Evolutionary Paleobiology," *American Scientist*, vol. 65, no. 1 [Jan.–Feb. 1977], p. 57). Raup, an evolutionist, even notes the ironic implications of this for creationists: "In the years after Darwin, his advocates hoped to find predictable progressions. In general, these have not been found—yet the optimism has died hard, and some pure fantasy has crept into the textbooks.... One of the ironies of the evolution-creation debate is that the creationists have accepted the mistaken notion that the fossil record shows a detailed and orderly progression and they have gone to great lengths to accommodate this 'fact' in their Flood geology" (Raup, "Evolution and the Fossil Record," *Science*, vol. 213, no. 4505 [July 17, 1981], p. 289).—ED.

\* I.e., to prevent decay by bacteria or assault by predators. Furthermore, this sediment must be of considerable depth to prevent the remains from being dispersed by natural processes.—ED.

\*\* See John Morris, *The Young Earth*, pp. 106–7.—ED.

have not been found more than a couple which might be interpreted as somehow being an intermediary species.\* They will tell you about the pterodactyl—a reptile with wings—and say that this reptile is becoming a bird. But why can't you simply say this is a reptile with wings?\*\*\*

There are certain fossils called "index fossils" which, when seen in a certain stratum, determine that that stratum cannot be any older or younger than a certain date because that animal supposedly became extinct at a certain period. They found a fish\*\*\* swimming around in the

---

\* Dr. David M. Raup, the leading paleontologist mentioned above, has said as much: "[Darwin] was embarrassed by the fossil record because it didn't look the way he predicted it would.... Well, we are now about 120 years after Darwin, and knowledge of the fossil record has been greatly expanded. We now have a quarter of a million fossil species but the situation hasn't changed much.... Ironically, we have even fewer examples of evolutionary transition than we had in Darwin's time. By this I mean that some of the classic cases of Darwinian change in the fossil record, such as the evolution of the horse in North America, have had to be discarded or modified as a result of more detailed information" (Raup, "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology," *Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin*, no. 50 [Jan. 1979], pp. 22–25). A similar admission has been made by paleontologists Niles Eldredge and Ian Tattersall, p. 838 below.—ED.

\*\* The animal that evolutionists have most often cited as a reptile-to-bird transition is actually not the pterodactyl but *Archaeopteryx*. Phillip E. Johnson questions whether *Archaeopteryx* "is just one of those odd variants, like the contemporary duckbilled platypus" (*Darwin on Trial*, p. 80); and even the evolutionists Stephen Jay Gould and Niles Eldredge acknowledge that "curious mosaics like *Archaeopteryx* do not count" as smooth intermediates in the fossil record ("Punctuated Equilibria: The Tempo and Mode of Evolution Reconsidered," *Paleobiology*, vol. 3 [Spring 1977], p. 147). Michael Denton notes that "there is no question that this archaic bird is not led up by a series of transitional forms from an ordinary terrestrial reptile through a number of gliding types with increasingly developed feathers until the avian condition is reached" (*Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, p. 176). For more on *Archaeopteryx*, see pp. 833–34 below.—ED.

\*\*\* The coelacanth, which was discovered in 1938 off the coast of Madagascar. The coelacanth was thought to be closely related to the immediate ancestors of the amphibians. When it was dissected, however, "its internal organs showed no signs of being preadapted for a land environment and gave no indication of how it might be possible for a fish to become an amphibian" (Johnson, *Darwin on Trial*, pp. 76–77; see also Denton, pp. 157, 179–80).—ED.

ocean which was supposed to be extinct seventy million years ago.\* Because it was thought to be an index fossil, it threw off the whole thing; and that particular layer which was dated according to this supposedly extinct fish was no longer correct.\*\*

Why is it that certain species evolve and others stay the same as they were? There are many species found in the “ancient” strata which are exactly the same as currently living species. Evolutionists have ideas that some are “reprobate” species that do not go anywhere for some reason, and others are more progressive species since they have the energy to go forward. But that is *faith*, not proof. The fossil species which have been preserved are just as distinct from each other as are living species.

6. Then there are the “*obvious*” *family proofs* of evolution. In most textbooks of evolution, there are artistic renderings tracing the evolution of the horse and the elephant.\*\*\* There is a great deal of subjectivity involved in this, just as when artists make Neanderthal Man look bent over to resemble an ape. This is not scientific proof but imagina-

---

\* I.e., at about the same time that dinosaurs were supposed to have become extinct.—ED.

\*\* There are many other organisms whose fossils had been found only in strata thought to be many millions of years old, and which were thus used as index fossils—until they were found still living in modern times. See Dr. Carl Werner, *Evolution: The Grand Experiment*, vol. 2—*Living Fossils* (2009).—ED.

\*\*\* Gene Edward Veith writes in *World* magazine about the once highly touted scenario of horse evolution: “The Field Museum [of Chicago] is the source of that oft-reprinted exhibit purportedly showing the evolution of the horse. Little skeletons are followed by slightly larger and ever more equine skeletons, smoothly mutating until we have the modern-day horse. On the face of it, this seems to provide a vivid visual proof of evolution, with no missing links from the tiny ferret-like creature to the magnificent stallion, and it has been used as such in countless science textbooks. It turns out, though, that the animals whose skeletons are so arranged have nothing to do with each other. They represent different species, different branches, and overlapping times, as even evolutionists—called on the matter by critics of Darwinism—have been forced to admit. The Field Museum, to its credit, has pulled the showcase, substituting a photo of the old exhibit, along with an account of the controversy” (“Admitting Its Mistakes,” *World*, vol. 14, no. 27 [July 17, 1999]).

On the supposed lines of evolutionary descent, see also Michael Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, pp. 182–86, 191, and Richard Milton, *Shattering the Myths of Darwinism*, pp. 102–5.—ED.



tion based on one's philosophical idea. There is quite a bit of evidence in the fossil record which is either against evolution or shows that there is no proof one way or the other; and there are some things which are quite remarkable and are unable to be explained by evolution.

7. The final so-called proof of evolution is *mutations*. As a matter of fact, the serious scientist will tell you that all the rest is not really proof, but the one proof is mutations.

There are some evolutionists, such as Theodosius Dobzhansky, who say, "I have proved evolution because I have made a new species in the laboratory." After thirty years of working on fruit flies, which multiply very quickly, you can get the generational equivalent of several hundred thousand years of human life in a few decades. Dobzhansky experimented by irradiating fruit flies and finally came up with two which had changes, and which no longer interbred with the other type of fruit fly. This is his definition of species—that they do not interbreed; therefore, he said, "I have evolved a new species."

In the first place, this was done under extremely artificial conditions, with radiation; and you have to come up with a new theory of radioactive waves from outer space in order to justify it. Secondly, it is still a fruit fly. So it has no wings or it is purple instead of yellow; it is still a fruit fly and is basically no different from any other fruit fly; it is simply another variety. So he has actually proved nothing.\*

Furthermore, mutations are 99 percent harmful. All experiments,

---

\* Phillip E. Johnson notes: "An experimenter can greatly increase or decrease the number of bristles in a fruit fly,... or greatly reduce the wing size, etc., but the fruit flies are still fruit flies, usually maladapted ones. Some accounts credit the fruit fly experiments with producing new species, in the sense of populations which do not interbreed with each other; others dispute that the species border has in reality been crossed. Apparently the question turns on how narrowly or broadly one defines a species, especially with respect to populations that are inhibited from interbreeding but not totally incapable of it. I am not interested in pursuing the question, because what is at issue here is the capacity to create new organs and organisms by this method, not the capacity to produce separated breeding populations. In any case, there is no reason to believe that the kind of selection used in the fruit fly experiments has anything to do with how fruit flies developed in the first place" (*Darwin on Trial*, p. 175).

On the changing definition of "species" in modern biology, see p. 181n above. On Dobzhansky's experiments with fruit flies, see p. 574, 574n below.—ED.

including those by evolutionists who have worked on them for many decades, have proved unsuccessful in showing any real change from one kind of creature to another, even the most primitive creature that reproduces itself every ten days. If anything, the evidence in that sphere is for the “fixity” of the kinds.\*

But in the end, we have to say that there is no conclusive scientific proof *for* evolution; and likewise there is no conclusive proof *against* evolution, because even though it might not seem too logical or too plausible according to the evidence, still there is no proof that given a billion or trillion years a monkey might not be produced from an amoeba. Who knows? If you don’t consider for a moment what the Holy Fathers say, you might think that perhaps it’s true, especially if there is a God. If you think it happened “by chance,” you have no argument at all.\*\* To believe it happened by chance requires much more faith than to believe in God. In any case, the evidence we have just examined will make sense to you according to what your philosophy is. The creationist philosophy requires less adjustment of the evidence, and so is more plausible.

8. There is one more thing that has been used as a kind of “proof of evolution,” and that is *radiometric dating*: radiocarbon, potassium-argon, uranium decay,\*\*\* and so on. These were all discovered in the present century, some of them just recently. It is said that these systems

---

\* In a synopsis of his groundbreaking book *Not by Chance!* (see p. 61 above and p. 889 below), biophysicist Dr. Lee Spetner has observed: “If random mutations could account for the evolution of life, then they must have added a lot of information to the genome from the time of the first putative organism until the appearance of all present life. If this vast amount of information was built up by an accumulation of a long series of random mutations and natural selection, then each of these many billions of mutations must have, on the average, added some information. Yet after all the molecular studies that have been done on mutations, not a single one has been found that adds any genetic information! They all lose information!”—ED.

\*\* In saying “by chance,” Fr. Seraphim means without an intentional Cause or an intelligent Designer. As mentioned above (p. 61), according to neo-Darwinian theory the fundamental mechanism of evolution is natural selection acting together with chance mutations.—ED.

\*\*\* The uranium decay system is the first radiometric method used historically, the method against which others have been calibrated, and the main support for the widely accepted idea that the earth is 4.6 billion years old.—ED.

prove the world is really very old. One textbook says they have brought about a revolution in dating, because before we had only relative ideas of age and now we have absolute ideas. One can test a certain rock according to the potassium-argon system and come up with the idea that the rock is two billion years old; they allow a margin of error of about ten percent.

The fact of the matter is that the great age of the earth was supposedly already “known” by scientists *before* these dating systems were developed.\* From their inception, the dating systems were based on the unproven uniformitarian presuppositions of Charles Lyell, which had led to the idea that the world was many millions if not billions of years old. Thus, they are not really revolutionary in dating; they simply fit into an already accepted view. If these new dating systems had said that the world was only five thousand years old, instead of three billion, scientists would not have accepted them so easily.

Secondly, there are certain basic assumptions which the radiometric dating systems must make. The systems, which trace the decay rate of radioactive minerals to “daughter” components, require: (1) that there is absolute uniformity—that the decay rate has always been the same for as long as the process has been going on; (2) that the thing being dated has been isolated, that there has been no contamination from outside sources—which they admit does happen; and finally, (3) that there was none of the daughter component in the first place, but only the “parent” component. All these things are assumptions; they are not proved.

Many people, even among non-evolutionists, will admit that carbon-14 is the most reliable of all the dating systems; even the scientific creationists admit that it has a fair accuracy back perhaps 3,000 years. It has been tested on certain articles whose age has been deter-

---

\* Also, the approximate ages of fossil-bearing strata were worked out according to evolutionary theory long before the advent of radiometric dating. For example, in the nineteenth century Charles Lyell attempted to date the end of the Cretaceous period by reference to how long he thought it would have taken the marine molluscs of this period to have evolved into their modern descendants. Lyell estimated that the Cretaceous ended 80 million years ago—not far from today’s accepted figure of 65 million (cf. Harold L. Levin, *The Earth through Time*, p. 475).—ED.

mined, and it has proved to be not too far off in many cases.\* But beyond 2,000 or 3,000 years it becomes extremely dubious. Even those who are adherents to this system admit that, because the half-life of carbon-14 is 5,700 years or so, it cannot be accurate beyond 25,000 or 35,000 years at the most.\*\* The other systems, such as potassium-argon, uranium decay, etc., claim to measure a half-life of 1.3 and 4.5 billion years respectively; and therefore when they talk about proving the age of old rocks they are using these systems.

The carbon-14 system is used only on organic matter; and the potassium-argon and uranium systems are used on rocks.\*\*\* In the latter, one must assume that there was a uniform decay rate not just for thousands but for billions of years, as well no contamination during that time and no daughter components initially. In the potassium-argon method, for example, you must assume that it was all potassium-40 in the beginning before it decayed to argon-40.\*\*\*\* All these things you have to take on faith. If you try to measure anything “recent,” say only

---

\* It should be added that, in many cases, carbon-14 dates do not agree with historically derived ages. For a discussion of the strengths and weaknesses of the carbon-14 dating method, see John Morris, *The Young Earth*, pp. 63–68.—ED.

\*\* An interesting development for creationists since the late 1970s—with the development of accelerator mass spectrometry (AMS)—has been the discovery of carbon-14 in fossil-bearing parts of the geologic record with presumed ages extending to hundreds of millions of years. Since the half-life of C-14 is only about 5,700 years, any carbon-containing materials that are truly older than 100,000 years should be “carbon-14 dead,” that is, with C-14 levels below detection limits. Thus, the presence of detectable amounts of C-14 in materials of allegedly great ages raises a major challenge to the long-age assumption. See Don DeYoung, *Thousands . . . Not Billions*, pp. 45–62; for a more thorough and technical treatment, see Larry Vardiman et al., *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, vol. 2, pp. 587–630 (these books are described on pp. 894–95 below). See also the comments of geologist Alexander Lalomov on the presence of C-14 in petroleum deposits presumed to be millions of years old, p. 878 below.—ED.

\*\*\* The only rocks that can normally be dated by radioisotope methods are igneous and metamorphic rocks. Since sedimentary rocks are made up of pieces of rock or other material that existed somewhere else, were eroded or dissolved, and were redeposited at their present location, no radioisotope dating of them could be considered accurate.—ED.

\*\*\*\* This is a big assumption. “Argon-40 is a very common isotope in the atmosphere and the rocks of the Earth’s crust. Indeed, argon is the twelfth most abundant chemical

a million years ago, and use this system with a half-life of over a billion years, it is like trying to measure a millimeter with a yardstick: it is not very accurate even assuming it is valid. There have been numerous cases when they have applied this system to new rocks and have come up with ages of millions of years.\* Therefore, the whole thing is very shaky. It requires that those millions of years exist in the first place.\*\*

There are other kinds of tests which have been used at various times as, for example, the rate at which sodium and various chemicals are discharged into the ocean. You measure the amount of the elements that are now in the ocean, measure approximately how much of it goes into the sea every year, and from that you come up with a guess of how old the ocean must be; and probably the ocean is as old as the world. They did this with sodium and discovered the world was no more than 260 million years old.\*\*\* But it was found that you get different answers depending on which element you use: lead gives an age of 2,000

---

element on Earth, and more than 99 percent of it is argon-40. There is no physical or chemical way to tell whether any given sample of argon-40 is the residue of radioactive decay or was present in the rocks when they were formed" (Richard Milton, *Shattering the Myths of Darwinism*, p. 47). See pp. 862–67, 869–70 below.—ED.

\* For example, igneous rocks known to have formed less than 200 years ago from the Kilauea Volcano in Hawaii were found to give potassium-argon ages of up to 21 million years, while rocks formed less than 1,000 years ago from the same volcano were dated at up to 43 million years (C. S. Noble and J. J. Naughton, "Deep Ocean Basalts: Inert Gas Content and Uncertainties in Age Dating," *Science*, vol. 162, no. 3850 [Oct. 11, 1968], p. 265; and G. B. Dalrymple and J. G. Moore, "Argon 40: Excess in Submarine Pillow Basalts from Kilauea Volcano, Hawaii," *Science*, vol. 161, no. 3846 [Sept. 13, 1968], pp. 1132–35). Fifty-year-old lava flows at Mount Ngauruhoe, New Zealand, produced model ages as high as 3.5 million years (see pp. 863–66, 870 below).—ED.

\*\* Dr. John D. Morris explains that radiometric dating (in this case the uranium decay method) is based on "the assumption that the earth is at least old enough for the present amount of radiogenic lead [i.e., the "daughter" component] in a specimen to have been produced by present rates of uranium decay. If we knew that the earth was old, the possibility exists that radioisotope dating could help to determine exactly how old, but it is useless in testing between old earth and young earth. It assumes an old earth" (John Morris, *The Young Earth*, p. 54).—ED.

\*\*\* More recent studies have indicated a maximum age of 62 million years. See Steven A. Austin and D. Russell Humphreys, "The Sea's Missing Salt: A Dilemma for

years, others give 8,000 years, some 18,000 years, some 11 million—there is absolutely no uniformity.<sup>5</sup>

There are other tests. For example, a test was done based on the rate at which helium is entering the atmosphere; this indicated that the atmosphere of the earth is but several thousand years old.<sup>6\*</sup>

Therefore, these tests are very unsure; and some of them make it very dubious that the world could be anything like 5 billion years old.

When it comes down to it, it depends what your faith is. Some scientists think the earth is very old because evolution is unthinkable unless the earth is very old. If you believe in evolution, you must believe the earth is very old, since it is obvious that evolution does not work on a short time scale. But as far as scientific proof goes, there is none whatsoever that the earth is 5 billion years old, or 7,500 years old—it could be either. It depends on what kind of suppositions you start with.

So evolution is not, in fact, a scientific problem; it is a *philosophical* question. We have to realize that the theory of evolution is acceptable to certain scientists, philosophers, and other people because they have been prepared for it.

#### *4. The Theory of Evolution Is Understandable Philosophically\*\**

[Let us look now at the philosophical antecedents of the theory of evolution in Western society. As we have seen, the idea of evolution

---

Evolutionists," *Proceedings of the Second International Conference on Creationism*, vol. 2 (1991), pp. 17–33.—ED.

\* Taking into account the rate of escape of helium from the atmosphere to space, more recent studies give two million years as an upper limit of the age of the atmosphere, which is still two thousand times shorter than the presumed age of the earth. In 1987, J. W. Chamberlain, a NASA astronomer and expert in planetary atmospheres, stated that this problem "will not go away, and it is unsolved" (Chamberlain and Hunten, *Theory of Planetary Atmospheres*, 2nd ed., p. 372). See Larry Vardiman, *The Age of the Earth's Atmosphere* (1990), and John Morris, *The Young Earth* (2007), pp. 87–89.—ED.

\*\* The following section, which provides historical background to the present discussion, has been condensed from previous lectures of Fr. Seraphim's "Survival Course." Some additions, indicated by brackets, have been made by the editor for the sake of clarity.—ED.

arose at the end of the eighteenth century, which was the end of the Enlightenment and the beginning of the Revolutionary Age—our own age. The Enlightenment was characterized by a stable worldview, but, as we shall see, that stability could not last, and had to give way to the evolutionary worldview.]

One of the classical works on the Enlightenment, *The European Mind* by Paul Hazard, states:

[In this period] a moral clash took place in Europe. The interval between the Renaissance, of which it is a lineal descendant, and the French Revolution, for which it was forging the weapons, constitutes an epoch which yields to none in historical importance.<sup>7</sup>

The Enlightenment was the classical age of modern Europe. This period between the Renaissance and modern times was the first real attempt to make a harmonious synthesis of the new forces let loose by the Middle Ages, Renaissance and Reformation,\* without losing the spiritual base of some kind of Christianity.

The first aspect of this new classical age, this new harmony, was *the dominance of the scientific worldview*, which took the form of the world-machine of Isaac Newton.\*\* The age of Newton, the early Enlightenment, was a time when science and rational religion seemed to agree that all was right with the world, and the arts flourished in a way in which they were never again to flourish in the West.

---

\*Fr. Seraphim showed in a previous lecture that, with the Schism of Western Christianity from the Orthodox Church, the Western tendency toward rationalism went unchecked. This was seen very soon after the Schism with the rise of Scholasticism.—ED.

\*\*Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727) professed belief in God as Lord and Creator of all, but, like later Enlightenment thinkers such as Thomas Jefferson, he sought to re-interpret the Christian Faith along rationalist lines. He rejected the doctrines of the Trinity and of Christ's Divine nature, and did not believe in the immortality of the soul or in the existence of a personal devil and actual demons. To the end of his life he kept his heretical views hidden so as to avoid public censure. (See Stephen D. Snobelen, "Isaac Newton, Heretic," *British Journal for the History of Science*, vol. 32 [1999], pp. 381–419.)—ED.

Before this time, the West had known several centuries of intellectual ferment and even chaos as the medieval Roman Catholic synthesis collapsed and new forces made themselves felt, leading to heated disputes and bloody warfare. The religious wars for all practical purposes ended with the close of the Thirty Years' War in 1648, which devastated Germany. Protestantism had rebelled against a complexity and corruption in Catholicism; there was a renaissance in ancient pagan thought and art; a new humanism had discovered the natural man, which pushed the idea of God ever more into the background; and, more significant for the future, science replaced theology as the standard of knowledge, and the study of nature and its laws came to seem the most important intellectual pursuit.

By the seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries, however, a certain equilibrium and harmony were reached in Western thought. Christianity was not, after all, overthrown by the new ideas, but rather adapted itself to the new spirit, and the difficulties and contradictions of modern naturalistic and rationalistic ideas had not yet made themselves felt. Particularly in the most enlightened part of Western Europe—England, France, and Germany—it almost seemed that a golden age had come, especially in contrast with the religious wars which had ravaged these countries up to the middle of the seventeenth century. The enlightened man believed in a God whose existence could be rationally demonstrated, was tolerant of the beliefs of others, and was convinced that everything in the world could be explained by modern science, whose latest advances he eagerly followed. The world seemed to be a vast machine in perpetual motion whose every movement could be described mathematically. It was one great harmonious universe, ordered as a uniform mathematical system. The classical work expressing these ideas, Newton's *Principia Mathematica*, was greeted with universal acclaim when it appeared in 1687, showing that the educated world at that time was thoroughly ripe for this new gospel.

In the new synthesis [of the Enlightenment], "Nature" replaced God as the central idea—even though God was not thrown out until the very end of this period. The age of the Newtonian system was also the age of the religion of Reason. Religion was now subjected to the same standard as was science: to the study of the outward world, that



is, the standard of reason. Thus continued the process which had begun with Scholasticism soon after the Schism, when reason was placed above faith and tradition. The Enlightenment was the time when men dreamed of a religion of reasonableness.

[In terms of religion,] deism was perhaps the most typical movement of the eighteenth century. The idea of deism is that God exists, but He's quite irrelevant; that is, He creates the world and steps back. Newton himself believed that he could not calculate quite everything correctly, as for instance the paths of comets; he had the idea that the universe was like a great watch which God made and then stepped back, and that once in a while He had to step in and correct it, wind it up again. But later astronomers said that no, this is not true; one can actually have a unified theory which explains everything including all irregular movements, and so God is necessary only at the beginning. God becomes extremely vague. Thus miracles and prophecy began to be called into question, and many writers already began to say that they were just superstition. In this the French became more radical than the English....

[Looking at the Enlightenment worldview,] one can see what a harmonious idea it appeared to be—of Nature ruling over everything, the mysteries of Nature being discovered, God still being in heaven (although not doing much), and scientific knowledge progressing over the whole world.

This brings us to the second main aspect of the Enlightenment, which was *a faith in human progress*. In his book *The Making of the Modern Mind*, J. H. Randall, Jr., writes:

It was from the spread of reason and science among individual men that the great apostles of the Enlightenment hoped to bring about the ideal society of mankind. And from there they hoped for a veritable millennium. From the beginning of the [eighteenth] century onward there arose one increasing pæan of progress through education. Locke, Helvétius, and Bentham laid the foundations for this generous dream; all men, of whatever school, save only those who clung ... to the Christian doctrine of original sin, believed with all their ardent natures in the perfectibility of the human race. At last

mankind held in its own hands the key to its destiny: it could make the future almost what it would. By destroying the foolish errors of the past and returning to a rational cultivation of nature, there were scarcely any limits to human welfare that might not be transcended.

It is difficult for us to realize how recent a thing is this faith in human progress. The ancient world seems to have had no conception of it; Greeks and Romans looked back rather to the Golden Age from which man had degenerated. The Middle Ages, of course, could brook no such thought. The Renaissance, which actually accomplished so much, could not imagine that man could ever rise again to the level of glorious antiquity; its thoughts were all on the past. Only with the growth of science in the seventeenth century could men dare to cherish such an overweening ambition.... All the scientists, from Descartes down, despised the ancients and carried the day for the faith in progress.<sup>8</sup>

Why did the Enlightenment worldview collapse? Its philosophy now seems hopelessly naive, its art a golden age impossible to revive.

There are several causes, and they all perhaps overlap each other. One cause is that which [the Russian philosopher] Ivan V. Kireyevsky spoke about: Once reason is exalted above faith and tradition, its critical approach produces its own destruction.\* The faith in human reason that first produced Scholasticism then produced the Reformation, because reason criticized religion itself. The Reformation was a criticism of medieval Catholicism, and then a criticism of Protestantism produced the atheist/agnostic philosophers of the nineteenth century. Finally, the critical approach of reason produced the actual suicide of reason. Once one trusts reason as the standard of truth, one must follow it all the way on its destructive course. One has no argument against it.

---

\* According to Orthodox Patristic teaching, the faculties of the human intellect have been corrupted since the fall (see pp. 472–73 above and pp. 697–99, 713–14 below); therefore, human reason must be submitted to faith and revelation and thus raised to a higher level. In a previous lecture of his “Survival Course,” Fr. Seraphim spoke about how the contrary occurred in the West after the Schism: human reason became autonomous and was exalted above Christian faith and tradition.—ED.

Since the Middle Ages, rationalism had reduced the sphere of knowledge as it criticized every tradition and the reality of the spiritual world—everything except the outward world. With the English philosopher David Hume in the latter part of the eighteenth century, autonomous reason finally went as far as it could go: it destroyed all certain knowledge, even of the outward world. Hume said we cannot know absolute truth through our reason; we can only know what we experience.... He wrote:

Reason is a subjective faculty which has no necessary relation with the “facts” we seek to know. It is limited to tracing the relations of our ideas, which themselves are already twice removed from “reality.” And our senses are equally subjective, for they can never know the “thing in itself,” but only an image of it which has in it no element of necessity and certainty—“the contrary of every matter of fact is still possible.”<sup>9</sup>

This, in fact, is a deep thing in our modern thinkers of the last two hundred years: this despair at never being able to know anything, which dissolves the very fabric of life. Believe in rationalistic philosophy and start thinking things through, and you come against Hume and other thinkers like him, and suddenly the whole world dissolves. Thus, with justice one writer on the philosophy of the Enlightenment has the following thing to say about Hume:

To read Hume’s dialogues after having read with sympathetic understanding the earnest deists and optimistic philosophers of the early part of the eighteenth century, is to experience a slight chill, a feeling of apprehension. It is as if at the high noon of the Enlightenment, at the hour of the siesta when everything seems to be quiet and secure all about, one was suddenly aware of the short, sharp slipping of the foundations, a faint far-off tremor running under the solid ground of common sense.<sup>10</sup>

(This, of course, later produced the great earthquakes of our own times.)

The experimental ideal in science had a function similar to that of reason in destroying the stability of the Enlightenment worldview. Being itself based in rationalism, this ideal is never satisfied; it never stops, but always waits to test its conclusions and come to new ones. That is why scientific ideas are constantly changing, and why the scientific synthesis at the time of Newton was overthrown.

Finally, the idea of progress helped to dissolve the old synthesis. In the Renaissance, as we have seen, the ancients were looked to as the true standard. It was thought that, if only we could get back to them and away from the Middle Ages and superstition, we would be fine. Then when the sciences became the dominant mode of thought, the scientific worldview arose. People began to see that anyone living today has more scientific knowledge than anyone living in antiquity. Now science for the first time has moved forward dramatically with its experiments, etc.

The very idea of progress—that the present is building upon the past, that the future generations will improve upon us, and that man will go constantly ahead—this obviously obliterates the idea that there is one constant standard.\* One's existing standard is left to the fate of the future people who are going to improve upon it. After a while, people begin to realize that this is a philosophy of constant change, constant movement. Then the soul begins to be upset. It senses there is no peace, no security. [By the end of the eighteenth century] this idea of progress had given birth to the "evolutionary" worldview, which was quite different from the stable worldview of Newton, and which rose to the fore in the nineteenth century.

And so the eighteenth century began with great optimism, but most people did not realize that by the end of the century the most advanced philosophers would destroy any possibility of any real knowledge of the external world and any constant standard of truth. It takes time for deep ideas like that to filter down to the people, but when they do they produce disastrous effects.

These disastrous effects were seen in the French Revolution of 1789, which was the revolutionary application of rationalistic ideas to

---

\* Just as in Hume's subjectivism, everything becomes relative.—AUTH.

the changing of society and the whole outward order of life. The end of the eighteenth century brought with it the end of the Old Order—the end of an age of stability when human institutions and art and culture were based on at least a remnant of Christianity and Christian feeling. The outbreak of the French Revolution coincided with the end of Christian civilization. Before 1789 it was still the “Old Regime”; after that, it is the age of Revolution, our own times.

In view of all this, the theory of evolution is understandable philosophically. It arose out of *a search for a scientific law of progress to justify the modern Revolutionary advance*.\*

### 5. Scientific Faith

J. H. Randall, Jr., who is himself an evolutionist, is sophisticated enough to admit that the theory of evolution is a faith, not a proven fact:

At present biologists admit that we do not, strictly speaking, know anything about the causes of the origins of new species; we must fall back upon the scientific faith that they occur because of chemical changes in the germ plasm.<sup>11</sup> \*\*

---

\* As noted above, Charles Darwin's grandfather Erasmus proposed his theory of evolution in 1794—only five years after the French Revolution. Many of Erasmus Darwin's friends and associates were sympathizers with the French revolutionaries. Erasmus was a founder of the Lunar Society, which included these revolutionary sympathizers, and whose membership overlapped that of the “Revolution Society” led by the radical Charles Stanhope (3rd Earl Stanhope). Erasmus especially admired Jean-Jacques Rousseau, the chief philosopher to pave the way for the Revolution. He was also a Freemason (member of the Canongate Kilwinning Lodge No. 2, Edinburgh, Scotland), as was his son Robert, Charles Darwin's father.—ED.

\*\* Randall wrote this in 1926, when the “germ plasm theory” of August Weismann (1834–1914) was the commonly accepted version of evolutionary theory. Since the modern evolutionary synthesis of 1937–1950 (see p. 823n below), the basic tenets of Weismann's theory have remained central to neo-Darwinism, though they are no longer expressed in the same terms.

The new synthesis notwithstanding, some thoughtful evolutionists since Randall's time have acknowledged along with him that evolution is a faith. In an

Evolutionists must fall back upon this faith because, as they say, “Anything else is unthinkable”—the “anything else” being that God created the world 7,000 or 8,000 years ago.

Randall continues, describing the effect of evolution on the world:

In spite of these difficulties, the beliefs of men today have become thoroughly permeated with the concept of evolution. The great underlying notions and concepts that meant so much to the eighteenth century, Nature and Reason and Utility, have largely given way to a new set better expressing the ultimate intellectual ideas of the Growing World. Many social factors conspired to popularize the idea of development and its corollaries....

Perhaps the fundamental emphasis brought by Evolution into men's minds has been upon the detailed causal analysis of the specific processes of change. Instead of seeking to discover the end or purpose of the world-process as a whole, or to discern the ultimate cause or ground of all existent things—the fundamental task of earlier science and philosophy—men have come to examine just what the process is and just what it does in its parts. They have rejected the ... contemplation of a fixed and static structure of Truth, and adopted instead the aim of investigating all the little truths which experimentation can reveal. Not that Truth which is the source of all truths, lifting man's soul above all human experiences to the realm of the eternal ... but the patient, tireless, and endless search after an infinity of finite truths in our experience—this is the present-day goal of all scientific and philosophical endeavor.<sup>12</sup>

Randall mentions how the changing human institutions—the different ideas of morality, etc.—enforce one's faith in evolution:

---

introduction to a 1971 edition of Charles Darwin's *Origin of Species*, for example, leading British evolutionary biologist Professor L. Harrison Matthews stated: “The fact of evolution is the backbone of biology, and biology is thus in the peculiar position of being a science founded on an unproven theory—is it then a science or a faith?... Belief in evolution is thus exactly parallel to belief in special creation—both are concepts which believers know to be true but neither, up to the present, has been capable of proof.”—ED.

The conception of man as an organism reacting to and acting upon a complex environment is now basic. All ideas and institutions are today thought of as primarily social products, functioning in social groups and springing from the necessity of effecting some kind of adaptation between human nature and its environment. All the fields of human interest today have undergone this general sociologizing and psychologizing tendency; the example of religion and theology will be a sufficient illustration. Whereas the eighteenth century thought of religion and theology as a deductive and demonstrative set of propositions, men now consider religion as primarily a social product, a way of life springing from the social organization of men's religious experiences, and theology as a rationalization of certain fundamental feelings and experiences of human nature.\* We no longer prove the existence of God, we talk of the "meaning of God in human experience"; we no longer demonstrate the future life, we investigate the effect of the belief in immortality upon human conduct.<sup>13</sup>

We see very clearly that this is the next stage beyond Hume, who destroyed all these things. You can no longer believe in those old ideas. This is the next stage, and it has nothing to do with the "scientific discovery" of evolution—it is simply what is in the air. Once reason continues its march, it will end in its own suicide.

Randall continues:

Evolution has introduced a whole new scale of values. Where for the eighteenth century the ideal was the rational, the natural, even the primitive and unspoiled, for us the desirable is identified rather with the latter end of the process of development, and our terms of praise are "modern," "up-to-date," "advanced," "progressive." Just as

---

\* Incidentally, this feature of the modern Western zeitgeist has exerted an influence on certain Orthodox writers from the late nineteenth century onwards, who have tended to rationalize theological dogmas in terms of human psychology, morals, feelings, and experiences. See a critique of this theological approach in [Fr.] Georges Florovsky, *Ways of Russian Theology*, part 2, chap. 11, "The Theology of 'Moral Monism,'" pp. 199–215.—Ed.

much as the Enlightenment we tend to identify what we approve with Nature, but for us it is not the rational order of nature, but the culmination of an evolutionary process, which we take for our leverage in existence. The eighteenth century could think of nothing worse to call a man than an “unnatural enthusiast”; we prefer to dub him an “antiquated and outgrown fossil.” That age believed a theory if it were called rational, useful, and natural; we favor it if it is “the most recent development.” We had rather be modernists and progressives than sound reasoners. It is perhaps an open question if in our new scale of values we have not lost as much as we have gained....

The idea of evolution, as it has finally come to be understood, has reinforced the humanistic and naturalistic attitude.<sup>14</sup>

#### *6. The Conflict between Christian Truth and Evolutionary Philosophy*

Now we must look to see what Orthodoxy says about the question of evolution, where it touches upon philosophy and theology.

According to the theory of evolution, man is coming up from savagery, and that is why books show Cro-Magnon Man, Neanderthal Man, etc., looking very savage, ready to beat someone over the head and take his meat. This is obviously someone’s imagination; it is not based upon the shape of the fossils or anything else.

If you believe that man came up from savagery, you will interpret all past history in those terms. But according to Orthodoxy, man fell from Paradise. In evolutionary philosophy there is no room for a supernatural state of Adam. These are obviously two different systems which cannot be mixed. Those who want to keep both Christianity and evolutionism are forced to stick an artificial Paradise onto an ape-like creature. What finally happens, however, is that the people who do this (including many Catholics in recent decades) see that it results in the two systems becoming muddled, and therefore they come to accept that evolution must be right and Christianity a myth. They begin to say that the fall of man is only a fall from cosmic immaturity: that when ape-like creatures, being in a state of naiveté, evolved into



human beings, they acquired a guilt complex—and that is the fall. Furthermore, they come to believe that originally there was not just one pair of human beings, but many. This is called polygenism—the idea that man came from many different pairs.

Once you give in to the idea that Genesis and the origin of man must be inspected rationalistically—on the basis of the naturalistic philosophy of modern thinkers—then Christianity has to be put away. Naturalistic philosophy is a realm of relative truths. In the teaching of the Holy Fathers, on the other hand, we have truths which are revealed and are given to us by God-inspired men.

In the writings of the Holy Fathers, there is a great deal of material about evolution, although one wouldn't think so. If one thinks through what evolution is philosophically and theologically and then looks up those questions in the Holy Fathers, there is a great deal of information to be found. We cannot go into much of it right now,\* but we will cover a few points in order to characterize evolution according to Patristic teaching.

First, we should note that, according to the Holy Fathers, creation is something quite different from the world we see today; an entirely different principle is involved. This goes against the thinking of modern "Christian evolutionists." One such evolutionist, the noted conservative Greek theologian Panagiotis Trempeles, writes that "it appears more glorious and divine-like and more in harmony with the regular methods of God which we daily see expressed in nature to have created the various forms by evolutionary methods."<sup>15</sup>

(We will note here that oftentimes theologians are quite behind the times. In order to apologize for the scientific dogma, they often come up with things which the scientists have already left behind, because the scientists are reading the literature. The theologians often are scared that they are going to be old-fashioned or say something which is not in accordance with scientific opinion. So, often they can quite unconsciously fall for an evolutionary idea by not thinking the whole thing through, by not having a thoroughgoing

---

\* A more thorough examination of this subject is found in parts 1 and 2 above.—ED.

philosophy, and not being aware of scientific evidence and scientific questions.)

The idea that Panagiotis Trempeles sets forth—that creation is supposed to be in accordance with the methods which God uses all the time—has certainly nothing Patristic about it, because creation is when the world came into being. Every Holy Father who writes about this will say that those first Six Days of Creation were quite different from anything else that ever happened in the history of the world.

Even Blessed Augustine says that the creation is a mystery. He says we really can't even talk about it because it's so different from our own experience: it's beyond us. We simply cannot project present-day laws of nature back into the past and come up with an understanding of the creation. Creation is something different; it's the *beginning* of all this, and *not* the way it is now.

Some rather naive theologians try to say that the Six Days of Creation can be indefinitely long periods, that they can correspond to the different geological strata. This, of course, is nonsense because the geological strata do not have six easily identifiable layers, or five or four or anything of the sort. There are many, many layers, and they do not correspond at all to the Six Days of Creation. So that is a very weak accommodation.

As a matter of fact—even though it looks as though it might be terribly fundamentalistic to say it—the Holy Fathers do say that those Days were twenty-four hours long. St. Ephraim the Syrian even divides them into two periods, twelve hours each. St. Basil the Great says that, in the book of Genesis, the First Day is called not the “first day” but “one day” because that is the one day by which God measured out the entire rest of the creation; that is, this First Day, which he says was twenty-four hours long, is exactly the same day which is repeated in the rest of creation.\*

If you think about it, there is nothing particularly difficult in that idea, since the creation of God is something totally outside our present knowledge. The accommodation of days to epochs does not make any

---

\* See pp. 138, 442, 442n above.—ED.

sense; you cannot fit them together. Therefore, why do you need to have a day that is a thousand or a million years long?\*

The Holy Fathers say again with one voice that the creative acts of God are *instantaneous*. St. Basil the Great, St. Ambrose the Great, St. Ephraim and many others say that, when God creates, He says the word and it *is*, faster than thought.

---

\* Some modern commentators, attempting to place the Genesis account within the evolutionary time scale, have tried unsuccessfully to attribute to the Holy Fathers the “Day-Age” theory that was first popularized in the nineteenth century: i.e., the idea that the Six Days of Creation are to be identified as vast ages. One of the passages these commentators most frequently cite in this regard is St. Basil the Great’s statement: “Whether you say ‘day’ or ‘age’ you will express the same idea” (*Hexaemeron* 2.8, FC 46, p. 35). An examination of the context of this quotation reveals that St. Basil was here speaking of the First Day of Creation as being an “image of eternity,” but not of its actually *being* eternity. In fact, it was shortly before the passage in question that St. Basil, far from equating a day with an age, laid out his teaching that the length of the First Day of Creation defined the measure of a twenty-four hour day, as Fr. Seraphim noted above.

Other attempts to attribute the modern “Day-Age” theory to the early Fathers focus on the teaching, found in various Patristic writings, that the days of the Creation Week are an image of “seven ages of the world.” The idea that world history is comprised of seven ages, corresponding to the seven days of the Creation Week, is an ancient one, found even in pre-Christian times (see Damian Thompson, *The End of Time*, pp. 7, 29, and Francis C. Haber, *The Age of the World*, pp. 19–21); but according to this idea the seven ages come *after* the Creation Week. St. Symeon the New Theologian makes this clear in his discussion of the Six Days of Creation and the Seventh Day of God’s rest: “God, Who knows everything beforehand, brought creation into being with order and harmony, and established the seven days as a type of the seven ages which would come later” (*Ethical Discourses* 1.1, PPS 14, p. 24).

Likewise, when St. John Damascene writes that “this world is said to have seven ages,” he makes clear that these “ages” refer to world history after the Creation Week, for he goes on to explain that “the seven ages of the present world include many ages in the sense of the generations of men” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.1, FC 37, p. 204). St. Damascene’s intended meaning becomes even more evident in a later chapter of the same work, in which he writes specifically about the Six Days of Creation, showing that he regards the length of these Days—even the first three Days, before the sun was made—as corresponding to the length of solar days, “365 and a quarter” of which make up “the twelve solar months” (*ibid.* 2.7, p. 221).

On the modern “Day-Age” theory, see pp. 663, 663–64n, 668–69, 668–69n below.—Ed.

There are many Patristic quotations about this, but we will not go into them here. None of the Holy Fathers say that the creation was slow. There are Six Days of Creation, and they describe this not as a long process. The idea that man has been evolving from something lower is totally foreign to any Holy Fathers. Rather, they say that the lower creatures came first in order to prepare the realm for the higher creature who is man, who must have his kingdom already created before he comes. St. Gregory the Theologian says that man was made by God on the Sixth Day and entered into the newly created earth.\*

There is a whole Patristic teaching concerning the state of the world and of Adam before the fall. Adam was potentially immortal. As Blessed Augustine says, he was created with the possibility of being either mortal or immortal in the body, and he chose by his fall to be mortal in the body.\*\*

The creation before the fall of Adam was in a different state. About this the Holy Fathers do not tell us very much; it is really beyond us. But certain Holy Fathers of the most contemplative sort, such as St. Gregory the Sinaite, do describe the state of Paradise. St. Gregory says that Paradise exists now in the same state it was in then, but that it has become invisible to us. It is placed between corruption and incorruption, so that when a tree falls in Paradise, it does not rot away, like we see around us, but is turned into the most fragrant substance. This is a hint which tells us that Paradise is beyond us, that some other law exists there.

We know of people who have been to Paradise, like St. Euphrosynus the Cook, who brought back three apples from there. These three apples were kept for a little while; the monks divided them up and ate them, and they were very sweet. The account says that they ate them like holy bread, which means this had something to do with *matter*, and yet it was something different from matter. Nowadays people are speculating about matter and antimatter,

---

\* See p. 440 above.—ED.

\*\* Blessed Augustine, *City of God* 13.1–2, NPNF 1 2, pp. 245–46. See also the citations by other Holy Fathers on pp. 692–93, 692n below.—ED.

about what is the source or root of matter—they don't know any more. So why should we be surprised that there is a different kind of matter?\*

We know also that there will be a different body, a spiritual body. Our resurrected body will be of a different kind of matter than we know now. St. Gregory the Sinaite says it will be like our present body, but without moisture and heaviness. What that is we do not know, because, unless one has seen an angel, one has not had experience of this.

We do not have to speculate about exactly what kind of matter this is, because that will be revealed to us when we need to know it, in the next life. It is enough for us to know that Paradise, and the state of the whole creation before the fall of Adam, was quite different from what we know now.

The law of nature we know now is the law of nature that God gave when Adam fell; that is, when He said, "Cursed is the ground for thy sake" (Gen. 3:17) and, "In pain thou shalt bring forth children" (Gen. 3:16). Adam brought death into the world, so it is very likely that no creature died before the fall. Before the fall, Eve was a virgin. God made male and female knowing man would fall and would need this means of reproducing.

There is an element of great mystery in the state of creation before the fall of Adam, which we do not need to pry into because we are not interested in the "how" of creation. We know that there was a creation of Six Days, and some Holy Fathers say they were twenty-four-hour days. There is nothing surprising about this—that the acts were instantaneous: God wills and it is done, He speaks and it is done. Since we believe in God Who is Almighty, there is no problem whatsoever. But how it looked, how many kinds of creatures there

---

\* Elsewhere Fr. Seraphim quoted Professor I. M. Andreyev of Holy Trinity Seminary on how matter changed at the fall: "Christianity has always viewed the present state of matter as being the result of a fall into sin.... The fall of man changed the whole of nature, including the nature of matter itself, which was *cursed* by God" (Gen. 3:17) (Andreyev, "Scientific Knowledge and Christian Truth" [in Russian], in *St. Vladimir National Calendar for 1974*, p. 69). See also Vladimir Lossky, *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*, pp. 103–4.—ED.

were—for example, whether there were all the different kinds of cats we see or whether there were five basic types—we don't know, and it's not important for us to know.\*

To add to the theory of evolution the idea of God, as some Christian evolutionists do, gives no help at all. Or rather, it gives only one help: it gets you out of the problem of finding out where everything came from in the first place. Instead of a great tapioca bowl of cosmic jelly, you have God. That is more clear; it is a straight idea. If you have the tapioca jelly in space somewhere, it is very mystical and difficult to understand. If you are a materialist, it makes sense to you, but that is purely on the basis of your prejudices.

But apart from this—the question of where everything came from to begin with—there is no particular help to be derived from adding God to the idea of evolution. The difficulties in the theory are still there, no matter if God is behind it or not.

The modern philosophy of evolution and Orthodox teaching differ in their understanding not only of the past of man, but also of man's future. If the creation is one great filament which evolves and is transmuted into new species, then we can expect the evolution of "Superman"—which we will discuss shortly.\*\* If, however, the creation is made up of distinct creatures, then we can expect something different. We do not have to expect creatures to change or to rise up from the lower to the higher.

Concerning the transmutability of "kinds" of creatures, the Holy Fathers have quite a definite teaching. (The Holy Fathers use the word "kinds," according to the word used in Genesis; "species" is a very arbitrary concept, and we do not have to take it as a limit.) Briefly we will quote a few Holy Fathers about this.

St. Gregory of Nyssa quotes his sister St. Macrina on her deathbed, when she was speaking about this very question, opposing the idea of

---

\* As Phillip E. Johnson points out, the understanding of creation scientists "has always been that God created basic kinds, or types, which subsequently diversified" (*Darwin on Trial*, p. 68). On the impossibility of knowing the exact biological limits of the original created kinds, see p. 184n above.—ED.

\*\* See the next chapter: "Christian Evolutionism."—ED.



St. Macrina the Younger  
(324–379) and her brother  
St. Gregory of Nyssa  
(ca. 335–394).

the preexistence and transmigration of souls, which was taught by Origen. She says, in the words of St. Gregory:

Those who would have it that the soul migrates into natures divergent from each other seem to me to obliterate all natural distinctions; to blend and confuse together, in every possible respect, the rational, the irrational, the sentient, and the insensate; if, that is, all these are to pass into each other, with no distinct natural order secluding them from mutual transition. To say that one and the same soul, on account of a particular environment of body, is at one time a rational and intellectual soul, and that then it is cavered along with the reptiles, or herds with the birds, or is a beast of burden, or a carnivorous one, or swims in the deep; or even drops down to an insensate thing, so as to strike out roots or become a complete tree,

producing buds on branches, and from those buds a flower, or a thorn, or a fruit edible or noxious—to say this, is nothing short of making all things the same and believing that one single nature runs through all beings; that there is a connection between them which blends and confuses hopelessly all the marks by which one could be distinguished from another.<sup>16</sup>

This shows very clearly that the Holy Fathers believed in an orderly arrangement of distinct creatures. There is not, as Erasmus Darwin would have it, a single filament which runs through all beings. Rather, there are distinct *natures*.

One of the basic works of Orthodox teaching is *The Fount of Knowledge* by St. John Damascene.\* This great work of the eighth century is divided into three parts. The first part is called *On Philosophy*;\*\* the second is *On Heresies*, which tells exactly what the heretics believed, and why we do not believe that; and the third part is *On the Orthodox Faith*, which is one of the standard books of Orthodox theology. In *On Philosophy*, St. John begins with chapters which go into such things as “what is knowledge?” “what is philosophy?” “what is being?” “what is substance?” “what is accident?” “what is species?” “what is genus?” “what are differences?” “what are properties, predicates?” The entire Orthodox philosophy he presents is based on the idea that reality is quite distinctly divided up into different beings, each of which has its own essence, its own nature, and not one of them is confused with another. St John Damascene meant that this part be read, and this philosophy understood, before one undertook to read his book of Orthodox theology, *On the Orthodox Faith*.

There are a number of basic books by Orthodox Fathers which deal with the kinds of creatures. There are books called *Hexaemeron*, which means “Six Days”: these are commentaries on the Six Days of Creation. There is one by St. Basil the Great in the East, one by St. Ambrose of Milan in the West, and other, lesser ones. There are commentaries on the book of Genesis by St. John Chrysostom and St.

---

\* This entire work is contained in St. John of Damascus, *Writings*, FC 37.—ED.

\*\* Or *Philosophical Chapters*.—ED.



Ephraim the Syrian, and there are many writings on these subjects scattered in the writings of many other Holy Fathers. The recent Holy Father St. John of Kronstadt also wrote a *Hexaemeron*.

These books are very inspiring, because they are not mere abstract knowledge; they are full of practical wisdom. The Holy Fathers use a love of nature and the splendor of God's creation to give examples for us human beings. There are many quaint little examples of how we should be like the dove in its love for its mate, how we should be like the wiser animals and not be like the dumber animals, etc. In our own monastery, we can take an example from our squirrels. They are very greedy. We are not supposed to be like that; we should be gentle like the deer. We have all around us examples like that.

In his *Hexaemeron*, St. Basil quotes God's words in Genesis, "Let the earth bring forth." "This brief command," says St. Basil, "was immediately a mighty nature and an elaborate system which brought to perfection more swiftly than our thought the countless properties of plants."<sup>17</sup> Elsewhere, about God's commandment, "Let the earth bring forth vegetation" (Gen. 1:11), St. Basil says, "At this saying all the dense woods appeared; all the trees shot up ... all the shrubs were immediately thick with leaf and bushy ... all came into existence in a moment of time."<sup>18</sup>

In the Ninth Homily of his *Hexaemeron*, St. Basil has a quote on the very question of the succession of creatures, one after the other. He quotes Genesis: "Let the earth bring forth living creatures according to their kinds: cattle and creeping things and beasts of the earth" (Gen 1:24). St. Basil says about this:

Consider the Word of God moving through all creation, having begun at that time, active up to the present, and efficacious until the end, even to the consummation of the world. As a ball, when pushed by someone and then meeting with a slope, is borne downward by its own shape and the inclination of the ground and does not stop before some level surface receives it, so too the nature of existing objects, set in motion by one command, passes through creation without change, by generation and destruction, preserving the succession of the kinds through resemblance, until it reaches the very end. It

begets a horse as the successor of a horse, a lion of a lion, and an eagle of an eagle; and it continues to preserve each of the animals by uninterrupted successions until the consummation of the universe. No length of time causes the specific characteristics of the animals to be corrupted or effaced, but, as if established just recently, nature, ever fresh, moves along with time.<sup>19</sup>

This is a statement not of science but of philosophy. This is the way God created creatures: each one has a certain seed, a certain nature, and transmits that to its offspring. When there is an exception, then it is a monstrosity; and this does not invalidate the principle of the natures of things, each one of which is quite distinct from the other. If we do not understand the whole variety of God's creation, that is our fault, not God's.

St. Ambrose has a number of quotations along the same line. His *Hexaemeron* is very close to St. Basil's in spirit.

We have other quotes from Holy Fathers which show us a very interesting thing: that they were combating in ancient times something akin to the modern theory of evolution. This was the heretical idea that the soul of man was created *after* his body. The same idea is taught today by "Christian evolutionists," although of course the ancient heresy is not the same as the modern theory. Those who taught the ancient heresy based their idea on a misinterpretation of Genesis 2:7: "And God formed man of the dust from the earth, and breathed into his face the breath of life; and man became a living soul." Even today, "Christian evolutionists" seize on this passage and say, "That means man was something else first, and then he became human."

In ancient times, this false idea (that the soul was created after the body) was contrasted by the opposite—and equally false—idea of the preexistence of souls. The Holy Fathers, in refuting both these theories, clearly stated that the soul and body of man were created *simultaneously*. Thus, St. John Damascene writes:

The body and the soul were formed at the same time—not one before and the other afterwards, as the ravings of Origen would have it.<sup>20</sup>

St. Gregory of Nyssa goes into greater detail in refuting both heresies. First, he describes Origen's idea of the preexistence of souls, that is, that souls "fell down" into our world:

Some of those before our time who have dealt with the question of "principles" think it right to say that souls have a previous existence as a people in a society of their own, and that among them also there are standards of vice and of virtue, and that the soul there, which abides in goodness, remains without experience of conjunction with the body; but if it does depart from its communion with good, it falls down to this lower life, and so comes to be in a body.<sup>21</sup>

Then St. Gregory describes the other heresy, which corresponds to the ideas of modern "Christian evolutionists":

Others, on the contrary, marking the order of the making of man as stated by Moses, say that the soul is second to the body in order of time, since God first took dust from the earth and formed man, and then animated the being thus formed by His breath. And by this argument they prove that the flesh is more noble than the soul, that which was previously formed [more noble] than that which was afterwards infused into it. For they say that the soul was made for the body, that the thing formed might not be without breath and motion, and that everything that is made for something else is surely less precious than that for which it is made.<sup>22</sup>

Surely this theory, although it is in a different climate of ideas, is very close to the modern evolutionists' idea that matter indeed is the *first* thing, and the soul is secondary.

St. Gregory of Nyssa refutes this theory as follows:

Nor again are we in our doctrine to begin by making up man like a clay figure, and to say that the soul came into being for the sake of this; for surely in that case the intellectual nature would be shown to be less precious than the clay figure. But as man is one, the being consisting of soul and body, we are to suppose that the beginning of

his existence is one, common to both parts, so that he should not be found to be antecedent and posterior to himself, as if the bodily element were first in point of time and the other were a later addition. For we are to say that in the power of God's foreknowledge (according to the doctrine laid down earlier in our discourse), all the fullness of human nature had preexistence. (And to this the prophetic writing bears witness, which says that God "knoweth all things before they be" [Susanna 42]). And in the creation of individuals, we are not to place the one element before the other: neither the soul before the body, nor the contrary, that man may not be at strife against himself by being divided by the difference in point of time. For as our nature is conceived as twofold, according to the apostolic teaching, made up of the visible man and the hidden man, if the one came first and the other supervened, the power of Him that made us will be shown to be in some way imperfect, as not being completely sufficient for the whole task at once, but dividing the work, and busying itself with each of the halves in turn.<sup>23</sup>

Of course, the whole basis for an idea of evolution is that you do *not* believe that God is powerful enough to create the whole world by His word. You are trying to help Him out by letting Nature do most of the creating.

The Holy Fathers also talk about what it means that Adam was created from the dust. Some people take the fact that St. Athanasius the Great says in his writings, "The first-created man was made of dust like everyone, and the hand which created Adam then is creating also and always those who come after him,"\* and they say, "That means Adam could have been descended from some other creature. He didn't need to be taken from literal dust. You don't have to take that part of Genesis literally." But it so happens this very point is discussed in great detail by many Holy Fathers. They come up with many different ways of expressing it, and make it absolutely clear that Adam and Cain are two different kinds of people. Cain was born of man, whereas Adam had

---

\* On the intended meaning of this passage, see pp. 117–18, 117nn above.—ED.

no father. Adam was created of the dust, directly by the hand of Christ. Many Fathers taught the same: St. Cyril of Jerusalem, St. John Damascene, and others.\*

When we come to the question of what is to be interpreted literally in Genesis and what is to be interpreted figuratively or allegorically, the Holy Fathers set forth for us very clear teachings. In his commentary, St. John Chrysostom even points out in certain passages exactly what is figurative and what is literal. He says those who try to make it all allegorical are trying to destroy our faith.\*\*

For the most part, the truths in the book of Genesis are on two levels: there are literal truths, and there are also—many times for our spiritual benefit—spiritual truths. In fact, there are systems of three or four levels of meaning; but it is sufficient for us to know that there are many deeper meanings in the Scriptures, and very seldom is the literal meaning destroyed. Only occasionally is the meaning entirely figurative.

In general, we can characterize evolution in its philosophical aspect as a naturalistic “heresy”\*\*\* which comes closest of all to being the opposite of the ancient heresy of the preexistence of souls. The “preexistence of souls” idea is that there is one kind of soul nature which runs throughout creation, while evolution is the idea there is one kind of material being which runs throughout creation. Both of these ideas destroy the idea of the distinct natures of created beings.

The idea of evolution was a heresy that was lacking in ancient times. Usually Orthodoxy is midway between two errors: for example,

---

\* See the passages of Sts. Cyril of Jerusalem, Gregory the Theologian, Gregory of Nyssa, and John Damascene on the two different types of coming-into-being in Adam and in his offspring, pp. 144n, 430–32, 431n above. The Fathers also point out that, while their modes of coming-into-being are different, Adam and his children share a common human nature (see pp. 430–31, 431n).—ED.

\*\* See pp. 122–24 above.—ED.

\*\*\* Fr. Seraphim was using this word loosely here. As he explains elsewhere (p. 497 above), “Evolution is not *strictly speaking* a heresy, but ... an ideology that is profoundly foreign to the teaching of Orthodox Christianity, and it involves one in so many wrong doctrines and attitudes that it would be far better if it were simply a heresy and could thus be easily identified and combatted.”—ED.

between the doing away with the Divine Nature by Arius, and the doing away with the human nature by Monophysitism. In this particular case, the other heresy (evolution) was not incarnated in ancient times.\* This heresy “waited” until modern times to make its appearance.

We will see much more clearly the philosophical side of evolutionism when we look at a few of the so-called Christian evolutionists.

---

\* While the modern theory of evolution did not exist in ancient times, as we have seen (pp. 132n, 503–4n above) some ancient Greek thinkers set forth naturalistic theories of origins which were later refuted by Orthodox Holy Fathers. Moreover, in modern times it has been alleged that ideas of a specifically evolutionary character can be found among the sayings of pre-Socratic Greek philosophers. For example, Anaximander of Miletus (ca. 610–ca. 546 B.C.) taught that human beings originally took form from fishes or fishlike animals. As the early Christian apologist St. Hippolytus (A.D. ca. 170–236) recorded, Anaximander “asserted ... that man was, originally, similar to a different animal, that is, a fish” (*The Refutation of All Heresies* 1.5, ANF 5, pp. 13–14). (See also the description of Anaximander’s teaching in *De Die Natali* 4.7, by the Roman writer Censorinus [third century A.D.].)

Another idea singled out as a forerunner of modern evolutionary theory was taught by Empedocles (ca. 490–430 B.C.). According to this Greek philosopher, body parts such as heads, arms, and eyes once existed in disembodied states, “separated by evil Strife”; but “as divinity was mingled yet more with divinity, these things kept coming together in whatever way each might chance.... Many creatures arose with double faces and double breasts, offspring of oxen with human faces, and again there sprang up children of men with oxen’s heads; creatures, too, in which were mixed some parts from men and some of the nature of women.” In Empedocles’ view, these chance combinations of body parts finally resulted in the formation in suitable human bodies, both male and female, as well as the bodies of the other creatures (Empedocles, *Fragments* 2.241–57).

While these pre-Socratic ideas do have notable similarities to today’s theory of evolution, the differences between the ancient and modern theories are just as obvious; hence Fr. Seraphim’s assertion that evolutionism is a truly modern error.—ED.

## CHAPTER THREE

### *“Christian Evolutionism”*

*EDITOR’S NOTE: This chapter is a composite drawn from three sources: (1) a transcription of a lecture that Fr. Seraphim gave during his “Orthodox Survival Course” in 1975 (a continuation of the lecture contained in the preceding chapter); (2) Fr. Seraphim’s writings for a chapter on “Christian Evolutionism” that he was working on with Alexey Young; and (3) Fr. Seraphim’s miscellaneous notes on Teilhard de Chardin. While giving his lecture for the “Orthodox Survival Course,” Fr. Seraphim relied heavily on Alexey Young’s contribution to the “Christian Evolutionism” chapter. In this regard, the present chapter may be seen as a collaborative effort of Fr. Seraphim and Alexey.*

#### *1. Introduction*

THERE ARE FORMS of evolutionary philosophy, most notably the Marxist,\* which loudly proclaim themselves to be an all-sufficient philosophy of life, replacing the “disproved” philosophy of Christianity. The arguments of these atheist evolutionists are naive in the extreme and full of self-contradictions, and there is no need to concern ourselves with them; even many contemporary atheists (outside the Soviet orbit) realize that belief in God can neither be “proved” or

---

\*Karl Marx was a devout Darwinist, who in *Das Kapital* called Darwin’s theory “epoch making.” He believed his reductionist, materialistic theories of the evolution of social organization to be deducible from Darwin’s discoveries, and thus proposed to dedicate his *Das Kapital* to Darwin. The funeral oration over Marx’s body, delivered by his collaborator Friedrich Engels, stressed the evolutionary basis of Communism: “Just as Darwin discovered the law of evolution in organic nature, so Marx discovered the law of evolution in human history.”—ED.

“disproved,” but is arrived at—or rejected—by means of a kind of evidence quite different from scientific proof.

However, there is nothing in the evolutionary view of the world in itself which requires it to be atheistic, and in fact the evolutionary theory makes much more sense to normal human reason if one has faith in at least some kind of God who puts the process in motion, guides it, etc. The philosophy of the world as a “chance” play of atoms, which themselves came into existence by “chance,” is satisfying only to the most limited and stunted minds.

The outlook of the Orthodox Christian toward evolution, therefore, is by no means the simple one of the rejection of a philosophy which is openly anti-religious or anti-Christian; the more sophisticated evolutionists are all “religious” to some degree, and there are many “Christian evolutionists,” some of them even having the reputation of being “Orthodox theologians.” Here we shall examine the views of some of these “Christian evolutionists,” all of them either claiming to be Orthodox Christians or at least having their evolutionary views recommended by Orthodox Christians. In this way we shall be able to see the evolutionary philosophy at its best, “reconciled” with Orthodox theology, as it were; and so we shall be able to begin to see whether the philosophy of evolution is really compatible with Orthodox Christianity. Here we shall not subject the views of these “Christian evolutionists” to detailed criticism, but will rather look to see what questions these views raise for Orthodox faith. These questions will then be examined in detail in our final section on the Orthodox Patristic view of creation.\*

In the last few years there have been articles—small articles, and some longer ones—in the Orthodox press on this very question of evolution. The official Greek Archdiocese newspaper, *The Orthodox Observer*, printed several articles which are quite surprising in that they are so far from Orthodoxy. One of these, “Evolution: A Heresy?,” quotes the “well-known Orthodox theologian, Panagiotis Trempeles”:

It appears more glorious and divine-like and more in harmony with the regular methods of God which we daily see expressed in nature

---

\* Parts 1 and 2 of the present book.—ED.



to have created the various forms by evolutionary methods, Himself remaining the first and supreme creative Cause of the secondary and immediate causes to which are owed the development of the variety of species.<sup>1</sup>

This is the view of all “Christian evolutionists,” and it raises the extremely important question of whether it is possible to attain knowledge of God’s creation by means of “the regular methods of God which we daily see expressed in nature”; this is by no means as simple a question as it might appear. And another, no less important question is raised by this view: What is it, then, that God created in the beginning (for evolution by definition is a process *in time*, and must have a beginning)? Did He create only the “cosmic blob” to which atheist philosophers reduce the origin of the evolutionary process? Or must we be totally agnostic about this “beginning,” as many atheist philosophers tell us we must be?

The article concludes:

As long as Christians recognize the creative power of God in the process of Evolution, it is both bold and hasty to call Evolution a heresy.

This conclusion reveals rather clearly the simple-minded approach to the whole question of the philosophy of evolution which prevails in “Christian evolutionists” who have not given serious and critical thought to the real problems which this philosophy presents for Orthodox faith. The whole point of this article, which seems to present the viewpoint of many of the Orthodox clergy in America (i.e., those who have been raised in an “evolutionary” atmosphere without giving much thought to it), is this: if “God” is added to the theory of evolution, it becomes acceptable to Orthodox Christians; we are only against evolution if it is atheistic. But this is surely a very naive answer to a rather complicated question! What of the philosophy of evolution itself? Is it compatible with Orthodox Christian theology and philosophy, even with “God” added to it? All of the great heretics of history have also believed in “God”: indeed, “the demons also believe, and tremble” (James 2:19). More rigorous thinking than this is re-

quired before an Orthodox Christian can know what to think of evolution.

The article in the Greek Archdiocese newspaper says that evolution cannot really be a heresy because there are many Christians who believe in it. Besides Trempeles, it refers to two other “Christian evolutionists”: Lecomte du Noüy and Teilhard de Chardin. Let us look for a moment at Lecomte du Noüy and his views.

## 2. *Pierre Lecomte du Noüy*

Pierre Lecomte du Noüy was born in Paris in 1883 and died in New York in 1947. A widely known and respected scientist, mathematician and physiologist, he wrote several books on scientific philosophy. His popular book, *Human Destiny*, sets forth his conclusions about evolution. It turns out he was not much of a Christian, for he believed that man created his own God, who is actually “a formidable fiction.”<sup>2</sup> He was very patronizing toward Christianity: he believed that Christianity has been misunderstood and misinterpreted, but it is still good for the masses, and is a useful tool for man’s continuing evolution on a moral and ethical plane. It has no objective, absolute truth. Christ is not God, but He’s perfect man. Christian tradition, however, somehow helps to educate the race toward further evolution. He says:

We are at the beginning of the transformations which will end in the superior race....<sup>3</sup> Evolution continues in our time, *no longer on the physiological or anatomical plane, but on the spiritual and moral plane.* We are at the dawn of a new phase of evolution.<sup>4</sup>

It is difficult enough to find scientific evidence for physical evolution, but it is impossible to find evidence for *spiritual* evolution. Nevertheless, he believes in it. He says:

Our conclusions are identical with those expressed in the second chapter of Genesis, provided that this chapter is interpreted in a new way and considered as the highly symbolical expression of a truth

which was intuitively perceived by its redactor or by the sages who communicated it to him.<sup>5</sup>

Of course, the book of Genesis was not written through mere human intuition. On the contrary, the Holy Fathers say that Moses heard from God the truths contained in it. St. John Chrysostom says the book of Genesis is a *prophecy of the past*; that is, Moses saw an exalted vision of what the world was in the beginning.

St. Isaac the Syrian describes how such a vision can take place: how the soul of a holy man can ascend to a vision of the beginning of things. Describing how such a soul is enraptured at the thought of the future age of incorruption, St. Isaac writes:

And from this one is already exalted in his mind to that which preceded the composition (making) of the world, when there was no creature, nor heaven, nor earth, nor angels, nothing of that which was brought into being, and to how God, solely by His good will, suddenly brought everything from non-being into being, and everything stood before Him in perfection.<sup>6</sup>

Monsieur Lecomte du Noüy continues:

Let us try ... to analyze the sacred text as though it were a highly symbolical and cryptic description of scientific truths.<sup>7</sup>

This, of course, is extremely patronizing—as if poor Moses tried his best to get a scientific picture of the way things were, and all he came up with were these images.

Lecomte du Noüy explains:

The omnipotence of God is manifested by the fact that man, descended from the marine worms, is today capable of conceiving the future existence of a superior being and of wanting to be his ancestor. Christ brings us the proof that this is not an unrealizable dream but an accessible ideal.<sup>8</sup>

That is, Christ is some kind of Superman, and this is the ideal to which man is now evolving.

Lecomte du Noüy gives us a new “criterion of good and evil” which he says is “absolute with respect to Man”:

Good is that which contributes to the course of ascending evolution.... Evil is that which opposes evolution.... The respect of human personality is based on the recognition of man’s dignity as a worker for evolution, as a collaborator with God....<sup>9</sup> The only goal of man should be the attainment of human dignity with all its implications.<sup>10</sup>

He goes on to say that there are “thinking men” in all religions, and therefore all religions have a “unique inspiration,” a “spiritual kinship,” an “original identity.” He says:

The unity of religions must be sought in that which is divine, namely universal, in man....<sup>11</sup> No matter what our religion, we are all like people at the bottom of a valley who seek to climb a snowy peak that dominates the others. We all have our eyes fixed on the same goal.... Unfortunately we differ on what road to take.... One day, provided they never stop ascending, they must all meet at the top of the mountain ... the road to it matters little.<sup>12</sup>

Of course, the top of the mountain is not the salvation of the soul; it is not the Kingdom of Heaven, but is precisely the chiliastic New Age.

It may be seen with little difficulty that Lecomte du Noüy’s views are not at all Orthodox, or even vaguely Christian, but deistic. It is useful for us to know these views, however, because, behind the surface of a religious relativism which no Orthodox Christian can accept, du Noüy’s “evolutionary” views are by no means untypical of contemporary “Christian evolutionists,” including many Orthodox Christians, and they raise philosophical and religious questions which any thinking Orthodox Christian must be prepared to answer. Let us mention here two groups of these questions.

1. As a corollary to the universality of evolution, which all evolutionists accept (everything in the world evolves, nothing is excepted

from this natural process), he sees in the future of human evolution the coming of a "Superman" or "superior race." Also, he speaks of the future of human evolution as on the "moral and spiritual" plane. Can an Orthodox Christian believe in such things? If not, what reason does he have to exempt man from the otherwise universal natural process?

2. The book of Genesis, Lecomte du Noüy believes, must be "interpreted in a new way," symbolically. Specifically, the transgression of Adam was not an historical event, but simply "the symbol of the dawn of human consciousness." Can an Orthodox Christian believe this? How does Orthodox Christianity understand the book of Genesis?

### 3. *Fr. Anthony Kosturos*

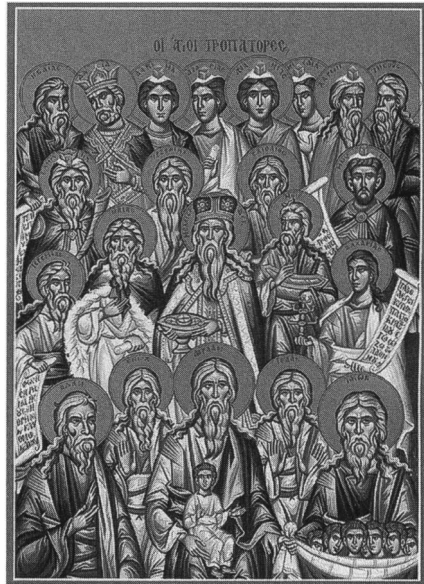
Let us return now to the views on evolution of other Orthodox Christians. In another article of the Greek Archdiocese's *Orthodox Observer* (Feb. 6, 1974), Fr. Anthony Kosturos answers a question sent in by a reader: "If Adam and Eve were the first humans, where did their son Cain get his wife? Does our Church shed any light on this question?" Fr. Kosturos replies:

Man's origin is too far back in history for any person or group to know how man began. [What, then, is the book of Genesis for?] Science is still groping for answers. The word Adam denotes earth. The word Eve, life. Generally, and only generally, our traditional theologians take the view that all of us stem from one male and one female.... There are others who feel that humankind appeared in clusters, a few here and a few there.... No theologian has the definitive answer on the subject of man's origin and his development.... The dawn of human history is a mystery.<sup>13</sup>

According to Fr. Kosturos, it is "science" that is trying to find the answer to this question. Evidently, the Orthodox interpretation of Genesis is quite symbolical and allegorical; we do not really know whether such a person as "Adam" ever existed. This is the view presented by the official Greek Archdiocese newspaper.

And what of the Orthodox theology of Adam the first-created

Contemporary Greek icon of the Feast of the Holy Forefathers. Front row, left to right: Adam, Enoch, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Second row: Jeremiah, Elijah, Melchizedek, Noah, and Zachariah. Third row: Samuel, Ezekiel, Elisha, and Moses. Fourth row: Isaiah, David, Daniel, Azarias, Ananias, Misael, Aaron, and Joshua.



man? What of the Orthodox feast devoted to Adam and the other Forefathers? What of those who have Adam for their patron Saint? Is it a matter of indifference to an Orthodox Christian that the Church, if the “Christian evolutionists” are correct, may have been mistaken all these centuries in her teaching on this subject, and that this teaching may now have to be revised if “science,” after all, does come up with the answer to the question of man’s origin? Is it an exaggeration to say that *it is extremely important for an Orthodox Christian to have a very*

---

\* The Feast of the Holy Forefathers of the Old Testament, beginning with Adam, is celebrated by the Orthodox Church on the Sunday that falls between December 11 and 17: the second Sunday before the Feast of the Nativity of Christ. In the Orthodox service for this feast, the Church sings: “Adam the first let us revere, who was honored by the hand of the Creator and was the forefather of us all” (Canon, Canticle 1).

In addition, on Cheese-fare (Forgiveness) Sunday—the Sunday immediately preceding Great Lent—the Church commemorates the falling away of first-created Adam from the food of Paradise. On March 20 the Church commemorates Adam and Eve’s son Abel, the first martyr in the history of mankind.—ED.



Holy Forefather  
Adam.  
*Russian fresco of the  
eighteenth century.*

*clear view of the Church's teaching on the origin of man, as well as a clear understanding of the limits of science in exploring this question?*

Later, in another answer to a reader's question, Fr. Kosturos says:

Perhaps there are many Adams and Eves who appeared concurrently in different areas, and then met. How man was created and how man procreated initially is a mystery. Don't let anyone tell you otherwise. Our Church gives you the opportunity to ponder the subjects you mention and come up with your own speculation about them.<sup>14</sup>

(The Orthodox answer to the question, "Where did Cain get his wife?" is actually very easy: Adam and Eve had many children who are not mentioned by name in Genesis.\* The account in Genesis is only the basic outline of the story.)

---

\* On this question, see pp. 302–4, 303n, 304n above.—ED.

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”



Adam and Abel. *Russian icons of the seventeenth century.*

### 4. Karl Rahner

Fr. Kosturos mentions the possibility that “humankind appeared in clusters.”<sup>15</sup> This is a reference to the evolutionary theory of “polygenism.” The prominent Jesuit “theologian” Karl Rahner (who until recently was rather “conservative” in his views on evolution)\* has examined this question and has made a “reconciliation” of the evolu-

---

\* Karl Rahner (1904–1984) is widely considered to have been the leading Roman Catholic theologian of the twentieth century. He served as an official papal theological expert before and during the Second Vatican Council.—Ed.



tionary view with the Christian doctrine in a way that will doubtless be imitated by “Orthodox evolutionists” in the future. (In general, the Orthodox modernists are always one step behind the Roman Catholics in this process of “updating” the Church’s views.) In an article entitled “Original Sin, Polygenism, and Freedom” (summarized in *Theology Digest*, Spring 1973), Rahner posed two questions:

1. How is evolution compatible with the doctrine of Adam’s preternatural gifts?
2. Can we seriously think that the first man to evolve was capable of the first sin...?

He answers:

Scientists prefer to conceive hominization [i.e., the making of man] as having taken place in many individuals—a “population”—rather than in a single pair.

(Actually, some scientists think that and some don’t.) He says that it is the first group of recognizable men (“original man”) that committed the first transgression:

Grace could be offered to the original group and, upon being rejected by that group’s free and yet mutually influencing choice, be lost to the whole of succeeding humanity.

Rahner then asks:

In the *first* man or group such as paleontology reveals to us, how could there have been a degree of freedom sufficiently developed to have made possible such a fateful choice as original sin? How can we attempt to reconcile the supernatural or preternatural paradise-situation of “Adam” (individual or group) with what we know of the origins of the biological, anthropological, cultural world?

He answers his question by saying:

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”

It is not easy to determine precisely where and when an earthly creature actually became spirit and thus free.... We may serenely reckon with the fact that original sin really happened, but at a moment which cannot be more accurately determined. It was “sometime” within a fairly long time span during which many individuals may have been already existing and capable of performing the guilty act “simultaneously.”<sup>16</sup>

In other words, the whole thing becomes very vague. Obviously the next generation of thinkers is going to do away with some of this double-talk.

### 5. *Stephanus Trooster*

A recent book by another Jesuit sums up well the attitude of the “enlightened Christian” toward Adam and Paradise. Stephanus Trooster is a Dutch Jesuit who, in his book *Evolution and the Doctrine of Original Sin*, states forthrightly: “Those who take the scientific doctrine of evolution seriously can no longer accept [the] traditional presentation.” Therefore, we must find “an interpretation that is relevant to our times.”<sup>17</sup>

“The proponents of the doctrine of evolution,” he says,

visualize mankind as a reality which, in the course of history, only very gradually matured to achieve a degree of self-realization. Its earliest emergence must be conceived of as fumbling transitional forms appearing next to extremely primitive levels of human existence. Such primitive intermediate forms of human life still must have been intimately fused with their prehistoric animal state.... But in this evolutionary theory there is no room for a “paradisaical” existence of this prehistoric man. To place an extremely gifted and highly privileged spiritual man at the beginning of human life on earth appears in complete contradiction to modern scientific thought on this matter.<sup>18</sup>

This, of course, is true. Trooster continues:

Acceptance of the modern viewpoint, however, eliminates the possibility of accounting for the genesis of evil in the world on the basis of sin committed by the first man. After all, how could so primitive a human being have been in a position to refuse God's offer of salvation; how could such a primitive being have been capable of a breach of covenant with God?<sup>19</sup>

Since for Trooster the fall of Adam is not an historical event, he "explains" the existence of evil by giving it a new name: "the phenomenon of cosmic immaturity."<sup>20</sup> Adam actually is not one man; he is "Everyman."<sup>21</sup> And the book of Genesis is

an *idealized image* ... of a world without sin; the author [of Genesis] knows quite well it does not correspond to reality... He specifically did not mean to say that the original state of grace of Adam and Eve in all its purity was once upon a time an actual reality in the history of mankind.<sup>22</sup>

Of course, if you believe in evolution, it makes no sense to talk about Paradise. You're only fooling yourself if you try to combine these two different forms of thinking.

Since "Christian evolutionists" have thus far been fellow travelers with other modern evolutionists, Trooster doubtless represents the "next step" in the unfolding of "enlightened Christianity." Doubtless others will soon begin to proclaim (as does the dust jacket of Trooster's book) that "Eden did not exist and evolution proves it did not," that "evolution has utterly destroyed the Eden-myth and the Adam-myth," and that therefore man has not "fallen from perfection (Eden)" nor have "pain and death come into the world as the result of sin."

"Theologians" like Trooster have drawn thoroughgoing conclusions from the message of evolution; is it possible to believe in evolution and not draw these conclusions?

### 6. *The Roman Catholic View of Original Man*

The Roman Catholics in the past have had some problems about knowing when man began, if one accepts evolution. There are different theories depending on what one thinks. I don't know what is allowed now, but in the old days you were not allowed to believe that man's soul could evolve from matter. You had to believe that man was given a soul at a particular moment. At that moment he became man, and therefore he was no longer subject to all the laws of evolution.\*

Obviously, this attempt to make evolutionary theory correspond with Christian belief is another case of sticking in an “epicycle.” Such a reconciliation does not work. Either you believe in evolution—in which case man was once a very primitive creature and came from the beasts\*\*—or else you believe that man descended from a being who

---

\* Commenting on Pope John Paul II's statement to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences on October 22, 1996 ([http://www.newadvent.org/library/docs\\_jp02tc.htm](http://www.newadvent.org/library/docs_jp02tc.htm)), that “the theory of evolution is more than a hypothesis,” Cardinal Thomas J. Winning of Scotland summarized the Roman Catholic Church's position on evolution as follows: “The Church leaves the believer free to accept or reject the various evolutionary hypotheses so long as they do not insist that the mind and spirit of man simply emerged from the forces of living matter with no room for God” (*The Glasgow Herald*, Jan. 11, 1997, p. 19).

Despite the statement of Pope John Paul II and similar pronouncements by his successor, Pope Benedict XVI (see, for example, <http://cathnews.com/news/704/52.php>), there are many Roman Catholics who remain opposed to evolutionism, including accomplished scientists who have written books and papers against it. Among these are Guy Berthault (geology) and Dr. Jean de Pontcharra (physics) in France, Dr. Maciej Giertych (dendrology) in Poland, Dr. Roberto Fondi (paleontology) and Dr. Giuseppe Sermoniti (genetics) in Italy, Dr. Josef Holzschuh (geophysics) in Australia, and Dr. Dean Kenyon (biophysics) and Dr. Wolfgang Smith (physics, mathematics) in the United States. In 2000, the Kolbe Center for the Study of Creation was founded in order to defend the traditional Christian teaching on creation within the Roman Catholic Church. Located in Mount Jackson, Virginia, the Center has both scientists and theological scholars on its advisory council ([www.kolbecenter.org](http://www.kolbecenter.org)).—ED.

\*\* This is a definite view. The textbooks on evolution will tell you that man still has the savage inside of him, and all the pictures show him evolving from a monkey-like creature.—AUTH.

was greater than we are now, who was actually perfect man in his own way and was not subject to corruption. The Holy Fathers even tell us that Adam did not void faecal matter. He had the tree of life to eat from, but he did not eat as we do now.

In his "Conversation with Motovilov," St. Seraphim of Sarov has a whole section on the state of Adam: how he was not subject to being injured or hurt. He was quite invulnerable to the elements, he could not be drowned, etc.\*

It is interesting that, even in the Middle Ages, Thomas Aquinas asked precisely these questions and tried to solve them: What was the state of Adam, did he void faecal matter, how was it that he could not be harmed? He has elaborate explanations. First of all, he says that Adam did void faecal matter because we cannot believe that he would be of a different material than we are now. Secondly, he was never harmed and was impervious to drowning not because it was impossible, but because God arranged to take all the boulders out of the way, never to have the stream rise too high, etc. In other words, God arranged the world correctly so that Adam walked very carefully and never happened to get hurt.

The Roman Catholics teach that the state of man in Paradise was a *supernatural* state, that man actually was just like we know him today—mortal man—but God gave him an extra gift, a special state of grace. When he fell, he simply fell away from that extra grace which had been added to him; and therefore his nature was not changed.

The Orthodox Church, on the other hand, believes that man was originally incorrupt and immortal according to his *natural condition*. Abba Dorotheus says this in the very first chapter of his discourses, where he sets forth for us the image of Adam, the first man, to give us an inspiration of what we have to strive for and get back to.\*\* We are meant to live eternally in the body, and that is the way it was in the beginning. Only after falling did we lose that natural condition—that blessed state in which Adam was beholding God. Our very nature was

---

\* See pp. 250, 485–86 above.—ED.

\*\* See pp. 250–51, 472–73 above; see also p. 475.—ED.

changed and ruined at the fall.\* Christ is the new Adam; and in Him we are restored to our old nature.

Some Fathers, like St. Symeon the New Theologian, discussed the question: Why, then, did we not immediately become immortal when Christ died and resurrected? St. Symeon gave this answer: “It is not fitting for the bodies of men to be clothed in the glory of the resurrection and to become incorrupt before the renewal of all creatures.”<sup>23</sup> The creation is waiting for us to achieve our salvation, when it too will rise up to the state in which it was before the fall—in fact, even to a higher state.

All this is filled with mysteries; it’s beyond us, but still we know enough of it from the Holy Fathers. St. Symeon has a long passage on the state of man before the fall.\*\* The whole of creation, he says, was incorrupt just like man, and only after the fall did the creatures begin to die. When the new world comes, “the new heaven and the new earth” (Apoc. 21:1), then “the meek ... will inherit the earth” (Matt. 5:5). What earth is that? It is this earth you see right here, only it will be burned up and restored so that all the creatures now will be incorruptible. That is what the whole creation is striving for, what the creatures are groaning after. When St. Paul said they “were subject to futility” (Rom. 8:20), this means they were subject to corruption, through the fall of man.

### 7. *Theodosius Dobzhansky*

Let us turn now to an “Orthodox Christian evolutionist” whose ideas are quite in harmony with recent Roman Catholic thought on the subject of evolution, and who brings up still other implications of the evolutionary theory which any Orthodox Christian must study closely.

---

\* See pp. 472–97, 475n, 482n, 494–95n above and pp. 712–25, 715n, 734–41, 741n below on the change in human nature that occurred at the fall. Although the Orthodox Holy Fathers employed the word “nature” in various ways when referring to man, they shared the same teaching that man’s physical condition—including his bodily functions and processes—was fundamentally altered at the fall. This teaching, as Fr. Seraphim points out, contrasts with the Roman Catholic view that it was not man’s intrinsic bodily condition but only certain outward effects that changed at the fall.—ED.

\*\* See pp. 463–64 above.—ED.

Theodosius Dobzhansky is a Russian Orthodox scientist who is often quoted by other "Christian evolutionists." A well-known geneticist, he is presently professor of genetics at the University of California at Davis. I think he still has his fruit flies, and is continuing to make experiments on them to prove evolution.\* He was born in Russia in the year of the canonization of St. Theodosius of Chernigov [1900], in answer to prayer from his parents; and that is why he was called Theodosius. He came to America in the twenties and has been an American since that time.\*\*

He has been absolutely prohibited in Soviet Russia, although the Soviet scientists know about him. Once when a film was accidentally presented at one scientific meeting in Russia which showed him in it, all the scientists cheered; but the film was withdrawn. He is considered nonexistent, a non-person because he left Russia.

Although he was baptized Orthodox, when his wife died he had her cremated, took the ashes and scattered them in the Sierras.\*\*\* As far as one can see, he never goes to church; he's quite beyond religion. Nevertheless, for his Christian evolutionist views he was granted an honorary doctorate of theology by St. Vladimir's Orthodox Seminary in New York in 1972. At the same time, he gave an address to the Second International Theological Conference of the Orthodox Theological Society of America, which was attended by all the renowned theologians of the various Orthodox bodies. His ideas on evolution, from what he and many official representatives of Orthodoxy in America apparently be-

---

\* Fr. Seraphim is referring to Dobzhansky's attempt to create a new species by exposing fruit flies to radiation so as to cause mutant offspring. Ian Taylor, in his book *In the Minds of Men*, writes about such attempts: "Experimentation with fruit flies began in the 1920s with Thomas Hunt Morgan and today is still a minor 'industry' among researchers. The stubborn fruit fly has endured every genetic indignity possible, but so far not one has ever produced anything except another fruit fly" (*In the Minds of Men*, p. 158). See p. 528, 528n above.—ED.

\*\* One of the principal architects of the modern evolutionary synthesis, Dobzhansky was hailed by Stephen Jay Gould as "the greatest evolutionist of our [twentieth] century" (Gould, "Darwinism Defined," *Discover*, Jan. 1987, p. 65). Dobzhansky reposed in 1975, the same year that Fr. Seraphim gave the lecture from which this chapter has been taken.—ED.

\*\*\* Cremation is forbidden in the Orthodox Church.—ED.

lieve to be an Orthodox viewpoint, are set forth in two Orthodox periodicals, *St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly*, and *Concern*.\*

In an article which was well publicized and summarized without comment in many Orthodox periodicals in America, “Evolution: God’s Method of Creation” (*Concern*, Spring 1973), Dobzhansky says that opposition to the theory of evolution is blasphemous, since evolution is the way God brought everything into being. He says in this article:

Natural selection is a blind and a creative process.... Natural selection does *not* work according to a foreordained plan.

Dobzhansky notes the extraordinary variety of life on the earth, and calls it “whimsical and superfluous.” He says:

---

\* Although Dobzhansky has been held up as a shining example of a “Christian evolutionist” both by Christians (Orthodox and non-Orthodox) and by atheist evolutionists (e.g., Ernst Mayr and Stephen Jay Gould) trying to placate religious believers, it is doubtful that he could be called a Christian in any real sense. His student and most prominent successor in the field of evolutionary biology, Francisco J. Ayala (a former Dominican priest), said in a eulogy: “Dobzhansky was a religious man, although he apparently rejected fundamental beliefs of traditional religion, such as the existence of a personal God and of life beyond physical death. His religiosity was grounded on the conviction that there is meaning in the universe. He saw that meaning in the fact that evolution has produced the stupendous diversity of the living world and has progressed from primitive forms of life to mankind. Dobzhansky held that, in man, biological evolution has transcended itself into the realm of self-awareness and culture. He believed that somehow mankind would eventually evolve into higher levels of harmony and creativity” (Ayala, “Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution: Theodosius Dobzhansky: 1900–1975” *The Journal of Heredity*, vol. 68 [Jan.–Feb. 1977], pp. 3, 9).

Ayala’s view that his teacher did not believe in a personal God finds corroboration in Dobzhansky’s published writings. When, for example, Dobzhansky stated that “evolution is God’s, or Nature’s, method of creation,” he was effectively indentifying his conception of God with Nature (Dobzhansky, “Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution, *American Biology Teacher*, vol. 35 [1973], p. 127). Elsewhere, Dobzhansky disavowed any claim that the “intervention of supernatural forces” was necessary in the process of human evolution (Dobzhansky, “Ethics and Values in Biological and Cultural Evolution,” *Zygon: Journal of Religion & Science*, vol. 8, nos. 3–4 [Sept.–Dec. 1973], p. 263).—Ed.



What a senseless operation to fabricate a multitude of species *ex nihilo* [from nothing], and then let most of them die out! ... What is the sense of having as many as two or three million species living on earth?... Was the Creator in a jocular mood? Is the Creator ... playing practical jokes?

No, Dobzhansky reasons:

The organic diversity becomes, however, reasonable and understandable if the Creator has created the living world, not by gratuitous caprice but by evolution propelled by natural selection. It is wrong to hold creation and evolution as mutually exclusive alternatives.

What he means by this is that it actually makes no difference whether you have a God or not. He says that God makes two or three million species by means of natural selection. Is that any less silly than saying He created the original kinds all at once?

According to Dobzhansky, there is no plan to it; it is all just a blind process. For an Orthodox Christian, this raises the question: Does God begin the process of evolution, and then have no control over its end? What of God's Providence, without which not a hair of our head falls (cf. Matt. 10:29–30; Luke 12:6–7, 21:18)?

In this point of "Christian evolutionary" philosophy we see how false is the very question which the evolutionist is striving to answer. The creative activity of God is *not a sufficient explanation* for him of the diversity of the visible creation;\* there must be a *better* explanation—one based on the clearly un-Christian presupposition that God is not in control of His own creation, that His Providence does not exist! The "God" of this kind of evolutionary philosophy is clearly *deistic*, and

---

\* Elsewhere Dobzhansky applied his evolutionary worldview to the origin of man, to human nature, and to moral law: "Man has evolved from ancestors that were not human.... There is no single human nature common to everybody but as many variant human natures as there are men.... Since the creation of God's image in man is not an event but a process, the moral law is a product of an evolutionary development" (Dobzhansky, "Ethics and Values in Biological and Cultural Evolution," *Zygon*, vol. 8, nos. 3–4 [Sept.–Dec. 1973], p. 261).—Ed.

the view of this “Christian evolutionist” is not to be distinguished from that of the “semi-Christian” (or non-Christian) Lecomte du Noüy.

Dobzhansky is filled with the usual liberal Christian ideas that Genesis is symbolical, that man’s awareness is the cause of the tragic meaninglessness in the world today, and that the only escape is for man to realize that he can cooperate with the enterprise of creation, for participation in this enterprise makes mortal man part of God’s eternal design. And he says:

The most gallant and by far the most nearly successful attempt to do this—cooperate with God’s eternal design—has been that of Teilhard de Chardin.<sup>24</sup>

#### 8. *Pierre Teilhard de Chardin*

We will now look into this last evolutionist, who is the great evolutionist “prophet” of our times: Teilhard de Chardin. He is obviously *the* “Christian evolutionist” of the twentieth century, widely revered by Orthodox, and considered by some “Orthodox theologians” (as we shall see) as being in the same spirit as the Orthodox Holy Fathers.

Pierre Teilhard de Chardin (1881–1955) was a French Jesuit priest, “theologian” and paleontologist, who was present at the discovery of many of the great fossil “men” of our century. He took part with two other people in the “discovery” of the fraudulent Piltdown Man.\* He discovered the tooth, which was dyed. It is not known whether he had a part in the fraud. One of the other men has been accused of being the one who fabricated the Piltdown Man; and it has been hushed up that Teilhard de Chardin had anything to do with it. But it is already known from the earlier books that he discovered the tooth.\*\*

Teilhard was present at the new discoveries of Java Man, and also at

---

\* In 1953 it was discovered that the skull of Piltdown Man skillfully combined the jaw of an ape with the skull of a modern man. See pp. 384, 384nn, 469 above.—ED.

\*\* Phillip E. Johnson notes: “Many persons familiar with the evidence (including [evolutionists] Stephen Jay Gould and Louis Leakey) have concluded that Teilhard was probably culpably involved in preparing the Piltdown fraud, although the evidence is not conclusive” (*Darwin on Trial*, p. 203). See pp. 384, 384nn, 469 above.—ED.

many discoveries of Peking Man, though not at the very beginning.\* He was also around when the fossils of Peking Man disappeared.\*\* We have no fossils of Peking Man left; only drawings and models exist.

Above all, Teilhard was the one who was chiefly responsible for the *interpretation* of all these findings. As he himself said,

I had the good fortune, unusual in a scientific career, of happening to be on the spot when ... cardinal finds in the history of fossil men had come to light!<sup>25</sup>

He fit these together into evidence for human evolution. We won't go into this evidence now, except to say that it is very shaky. One writer has said:

One of the prime difficulties is that really significant human fossil skulls are exceptionally rare: everything which has been found to date could be tucked away in a large coffin. All the rest must be referred to something else.<sup>26</sup>

And we just don't know what the relation is of these pieces to each other.

Teilhard de Chardin was both a scientist and a "mystic."\*\*\* The surprising thing is not so much that he was a combination of these two

---

\* On Java Man and Peking Man, see pp. 469–70, 470nn above.—ED.

\*\* In 1941 the Peking Man fossils disappeared in China, apparently en route from Beijing to the port city of Qinhuaogdao. Teilhard was in Beijing at the time.—ED.

\*\*\* In his spiritual autobiography, *The Heart of Matter*, written five years before his death, Teilhard endeavored to describe his "mystical" experience of the universe as Divine, of matter evolving into Spirit: "Crimson gleams of Matter, gliding imperceptibly into the gold of Spirit, ultimately to become transformed into the incandescence of a Universe that is Person—and through all this there blows, animating and spreading over it a fragrant balm, a zephyr of Union—and of the Feminine. The Diaphany of the Divine at the heart of a glowing Universe, as I have experienced it through contact with the Earth—the Divine radiating from the depths of a blazing Matter: this it is that I shall try to disclose and communicate in what follows."

At the end of the same work, Teilhard appended one of his early compositions, "The Spiritual Power of Matter" (dated Aug. 8, 1919), in order to "express more

(he was a Jesuit, after all), but rather that he is quite respected both by theologians—Roman Catholic theologians, and in fact many Orthodox so-called theologians—and by scientists. His book *The Phenomenon of Man* has an introduction by Julian Huxley, the grandson of Darwin's famous contemporary and proponent, T. H. Huxley. Julian Huxley is an absolute atheist evolutionist. He cannot fully agree with Teilhard's attempt to reconcile Catholicism and evolution, but basically he agrees with his philosophy.\*

---

successfully than I could today the heady emotion I experienced at that time from my contact with Matter." Evidently dramatizing a "mystical" experience through which he had recently passed, Teilhard writes of a man "walking in the desert, followed by his companion, when the Thing swooped down on him.... The man fell prostrate to the ground; and hiding his face in his hands he waited.... Then, suddenly, a breath of scorching air passed across his forehead, broke through the barrier of his closed eyelids, and penetrated his soul. The man felt he was ceasing to be merely himself; an irresistible rapture took possession of him as though all the sap of all living things, flowing at one and the same moment into the too narrow confines of his heart, was mightily refashioning the enfeebled fibers of his being. And at the same time the anguish of some superhuman peril oppressed him, a confused feeling that the force which had swept down upon him was equivocal, turbid, the combined essence of all evil and all goodness." The Thing spoke to him: "You called me, here I am.... You had need of me in order to grow; and I was waiting for you in order to be made holy. Always you have, without knowing it, desired me; and always I have been drawing you to me. And now I am established on you for life, or for death. You can never go back, never return to commonplace gratifications or untroubled worship. He who has once seen me can never forget me: he must either damn himself with me or save me with himself. Are you coming?" The man then asked the Thing, "O you who are divine and mighty, what is your name?" The Thing replied, "I am the fire that consumes and the water that overthrows ... power, experiment, progress—matter: all this am I." Teilhard ends his account with the man falling to his knees and raising up a "Hymn to Matter," in which he proclaims, "Blessed be you, mighty matter, irresistible march of evolution, reality ever new-born; you who, by constantly shattering our mental categories, force us to go ever further and further in our pursuit of the truth" (*The Heart of Matter*, pp. 16, 61, 67–69, 75).—ED.

\* In his introduction to Teilhard's book, Julian Huxley wrote: "As I discovered when I first met Père Teilhard in Paris in 1946, he and I were on the same quest, and had been pursuing parallel roads ever since we were young men in our twenties" (*The Phenomenon of Man*, p. 11).—ED.

This brings us to a subject we discussed earlier:\* man's expectation of the merging of religion and science. The earlier scientists in the West, at the birth of modern science during the Renaissance, were all mystically oriented. They were filled with Pythagorean philosophy. Giordano Bruno (1548–1600), who is considered a forerunner of modern science and philosophy, was a mystical pantheist. He believed that the whole world is God, that God is the soul of the world, and that "Nature is God in things." His philosophy combined religion and science in a single pantheistic vision.

In the nineteenth century, the socialist prophet Claude-Henri de Saint-Simon said the time is coming when not only will the social order be a religious institution, but science and religion will come together, and science will no longer be atheistic. Teilhard de Chardin was the kind of thinker he was looking for: one who would bring together science and religion.\*\*

Also in the nineteenth century, the American philosopher Ralph Waldo Emerson spoke about the very same thing. Since he faced a situation in which man's faith had been divorced from knowledge because of modern enlightenment, he called for the restoration of unity in man, and spoke of how we can get faith and knowledge back together. He says this in his essay "Nature":

The reason why the world lacks unity, and lies broken and in heaps, is because man is disunited with himself. He cannot be a naturalist until he satisfies all the demands of the spirit. Love is as much its demand as perception.... Deep calls unto deep. But in actual life, the marriage is

---

\* That is, in earlier sections of Fr. Seraphim's "Survival Course," from which this discourse has been taken.—ED.

\*\* In a letter, Fr. Seraphim commented further on how the "New Christianity" of Saint-Simon (the term comes from his 1825 book of that title) anticipated the thought of Teilhard de Chardin: "I think that S. has overestimated Teilhard's *direct* influence on the 'New Christianity.' That phrase was coined (I think) by Saint-Simon 150 years ago, and much preparation was made for it before Teilhard. Probably Teilhard appeared at just the right time to take advantage of the modernist current and make everyone start to think of it in connection with his name" (letter to Alexey Young, Feb. 15, 1974).—ED.

not celebrated. There are innocent men who worship God after the tradition of their fathers, but their sense of duty has not yet extended to the use of all their faculties. [That is, they are dutiful to their own religion, but they do not dutifully pursue science and philosophy.] And there are patient naturalists, but they freeze their subject under the wintry light of the understanding. [That is, they divorce philosophy from religion.] ... But when a faithful thinker, resolute to detach every object from personal relations and see it in the light of thought, shall, at the same time, kindle science with the fire of the holiest affections, then will God go forth anew into the creation.<sup>27</sup>

Again, Teilhard de Chardin is a “prophet” who promises to fulfill these expectations, who discovers that science and religion are once more compatible.

In *St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly* and *Concern*, Theodosius Dobzhansky summarizes what Teilhard de Chardin tried to do in his books. Teilhard, he says, describes three stages through which evolutionary development has passed, making use of his own technical terms:

First, there is cosmogenesis, the evolution of inanimate nature; second, biogenesis, biological evolution; and, third, noogenesis, the development of human thought.

Teilhard also speaks of “spheres”: the “biosphere,” the sphere of life; and the “noosphere,” the sphere of thought. He says the whole of the globe now is being penetrated by a web of thought which he calls the “noosphere.”\*

“Up to here,” continues Dobzhansky,

---

\* Again recalling his “mystical” experiences, Teilhard wrote of how he discovered this “noosphere”: “There was something more: around this sentient protoplasmic layer [i.e., the biosphere], an ultimate envelope was beginning to become apparent to me, taking on its own individuality and gradually detaching itself like a luminous *aura*. This envelope was not only conscious, but thinking, and from the time when I first became aware of it, it was always there that I found concentrated, in an ever more dazzling and consistent form, the essence or rather the very Soul of the Earth” (*The Heart of Matter*, p. 32).—ED.

Teilhard stands firmly on a foundation of demonstrable facts. To complete his theology of nature he then embarks on *prophecy based on his religious faith*. He speaks of his “conviction, strictly undemonstrable to science, that the universe has a direction and that it could—indeed, if we are faithful, it should—result in some sort of irreversible perfection.”<sup>28</sup>

Dobzhansky quotes with approval the following statement of Teilhard de Chardin about what evolution is:

Is evolution a theory, a system, or a hypothesis? It is much more—it is a general postulate to which all theories, all hypotheses, all systems must henceforward bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true. Evolution is a light which illuminates all facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow—this is what evolution is.<sup>29</sup>\*

That is, evolution becomes in Teilhard’s thought—which many, many people follow, whether they’re Christian, atheist, or whatever—a kind of new universal revelation for mankind. And everything, including religion, must be understood in terms of evolution.\*\*

The writings of Teilhard de Chardin are so filled with a jargon of

---

\* Teilhard’s words “evolution is a light” were used by Dobzhansky as the basis for the title of an article he wrote in 1973, “Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution” (*American Biology Teacher*, vol. 35, pp. 125–29), in which he ridiculed creationists who did not believe in evolution and again claimed that their position leads to blasphemy. The phrase that forms the title is now commonly brought forth as a dictum by opponents of creationism, including apologists of atheism such as Richard Dawkins. Some evolutionists, however, have acknowledged that the dictum is misleading. In 2005 Dr. Marc Kirschner, head of the Department of Systems Biology at Harvard Medical School, repeated Dobzhansky’s phrase only to follow it with the frank admission that, “in fact, over the last hundred years, almost all of biology has proceeded independent of evolution, except evolutionary biology itself. Molecular biology, biochemistry, physiology, have not taken evolution into account at all” (Peter Dizikes, “Missing Links,” *The Boston Globe*, Oct. 23, 2005).—Ed.

\*\* In another article written in 1973, Dobzhansky echoed Teilhard’s pronouncement that evolution is a postulate of universal portent: “Evolution has taken place on

his own invention that it is easy to dismiss—or accept—him without understanding the full significance of his thought. Above all, one must understand what it is that has inspired his thought, for it is this basic inspiration and worldview that has captured the fancy of the modern intellectual, "Christian" and atheist alike, despite the difficulty of his language.

That which inspired Teilhard de Chardin, and inspires his followers, is a certain *unitary view* of reality, a joining of God and the world, of the spiritual and the secular, into a single harmonious and all-encompassing process which can not only be grasped by the modern intellectual, but can be *felt* by the sensitive soul that is in close contact with the spirit of modern life; indeed, the next step of the process can be *anticipated* by the "modern man," and that is why Teilhard de Chardin is so readily accepted as a "prophet" even by people who do not believe in God: he announces, in a very "mystical" way, the future which every thinking man today (save for conscious Orthodox Christians) hopes for.\*

There are two sides to this unitary thought of Teilhard de Chardin: the worldly (by which he attracts and holds even total atheists such as Julian Huxley), and the spiritual (by which he attracts "Christians" and gives a "religion" to unbelievers).

Teilhard's own words leave no doubt that first and foremost he was passionately in love with the world, with the earth:

The world (its value, its infallibility, and its goodness)—that, when all is said and done, is the first, the last, and the only thing in which I believe.<sup>30</sup>

Now the earth can certainly clasp me in her giant arms. She can swell me with her life, or take me back in to her dust. She can deck herself out for me with every charm, with every horror, with every

---

the cosmic, biological, and human levels, and these three kinds of evolution are parts of one grand process of universal evolution" (Dobzhansky, "Ethics and Values in Biological and Cultural Evolution," *Zygon*, vol. 8, nos. 3–4, p. 276).—ED.

\* That is, every person who is in the tradition of rationalism, coming from the age of the Enlightenment, and ultimately from the Middle Ages in the West after the Schism.—AUTH.



mystery. She can intoxicate me with her perfume of tangibility and unity.<sup>31</sup>

In this belief he certainly leaves Orthodox Christianity behind. He believed, as one of his biographers accurately reports, that “salvation was no longer to be sought in ‘abandoning the world,’ but in active ‘participation’ in building it up.”<sup>32</sup> He consciously abandoned the “old” forms of Christian spirituality in favor of new, secular ones. He disdained

all those goody-goody romances about the saints and the martyrs! Whatever normal child would want to spend an eternity in such boring company?<sup>33</sup>

He believed that “what we are all more or less lacking at this moment is a new definition of holiness.”<sup>34</sup> He wrote:

The modern world is a world in evolution; hence, the static concepts of the spiritual life must be rethought and the classical teachings of Christ must be reinterpreted.<sup>35</sup>

This is a reflection of the overthrowing of the old universe of Newton. Teilhard wants to put Christianity into the same category, because it also is bound up with the classical, static way of thinking. Now we have a new way of thinking; and therefore, just as we have a new physics, we must have a new Christianity.

But Teilhard’s philosophy is no mere secularization of Christianity; his most powerful and influential vision is that of the *spiritualization of the world* and worldly activity. Teilhard was not merely in love with the world and all “modern progress” and scientific development; his distinguishing mark was that he gave these things a distinctly “religious” significance. He wrote:

Then, is it really true, Lord? By helping on the spread of science and freedom, I can increase the density of the divine atmosphere, in itself as well as for me: that atmosphere in which it is always my one desire

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”

to be immersed? By laying hold of the earth I enable myself to cling closely to you....

May the world's energies, mastered by us, bow down before us and accept the yoke of our power.

May the race of men, grown to fuller consciousness and great strength, become grouped into rich and happy organisms in which life shall be put to better use and bring in a hundredfold return.<sup>36</sup>

“God,” for him, is to be found only in the midst of the world:

I am not speaking metaphorically when I say that it is throughout the length and breadth and depth of the world in movement that man can attain the experience and vision of his god.<sup>37</sup>\*

---

\* While Teilhard extolled what he called “Christian pantheism” (*Christianity and Evolution*, p. 171) (pantheism being the belief that there is no God outside the energy, matter, and laws of the existing universe), his doctrine could more precisely be termed panentheism (the belief that the Godhead includes the world as a part though not the whole of its being—see p. 60n above). That Teilhard’s teaching is better described by the latter term is clear from his statement that the world “is a part, an aspect, or a phase of God” (*Science and Christ*, p. 180). Speaking of the “part of God” which is the evolving cosmos, he says, “We must be careful to note that under this evolutive facet Omega only reveals *half of itself*” (*The Phenomenon of Man*, p. 270). Teilhard believed that, since the world is God, and since the world is evolving, God too is in a process of evolution—or at least that “part” of God which is the world. He wrote that “the World ... ‘endomorphizes’ God,” and that “God... ‘transforms himself’ as He incorporates us.... All around us and within our own selves, God is in the process of ‘changing’ ... his brilliance increases, and the glow of his coloring grows richer” (*The Heart of Matter*, pp. 52–53). Rejecting what he called “the earlier conception that God could create instantaneously,” Teilhard believed that God, as both the Evolver and the object of evolution, “cannot create except evolutively” (*Christianity and Evolution*, p. 179). As against the traditional Christian belief in an omnipotent, impassible God Who creates effortlessly, Teilhard wrote that “God’s power has not so free a field for its action as we assume: on the contrary,... it labors to produce,... it is always obliged, in the course of its creative effort, to pass through a whole series of intermediaries and to overcome a whole succession of inevitable risks” (ibid., p. 31). In the evolution of human consciousness, Teilhard asserted, the new “cosmogensis-God” he heralded would naturally replace “the Father-God of two thousand years ago” (ibid., p. 202).—ED.

In perfect harmony with his secular yet “searching” times, he declares that

the time has passed in which God could simply impose Himself on us from without, as master and owner of the estate. Henceforth the world will kneel down only before the organic center of its own evolution.<sup>38</sup>

“Evolution” for him is not an idea destructive to religion, but a religious idea in itself:

Christianity and evolution are not two irreconcilable visions, but two perspectives destined to fit together and complement each other.<sup>39</sup>

He ardently believed and taught that “evolution has come to infuse new blood, so to speak, into the perspectives and aspirations of Christianity.”<sup>40</sup> “Evolution,” indeed, according to Teilhard, is preparing the way for a new revelation of God:

The earth ... can cast me to my knees in expectation of what is maturing in her breast.... She has become for me, over and above herself, the body of him who is and of him who is coming.<sup>41</sup>

Evolution, for Teilhard, is a process which involves the “building of the cosmic body of Christ in which *all things* are united with God.”<sup>42</sup>

A faithful son of the Roman Catholic church, Teilhard expresses his vision of the union of God and the world in terms of Latin theology, offering a “new development” in Catholic thought in his striking idea of the “*Transubstantiation of the earth*.”\*

As our humanity assimilates the material world, and as the Host [i.e., the Roman Catholic eucharist] assimilates our humanity, the

---

\* Teilhard wrote about this while in China in 1926–1927, after having celebrated Mass in the Gobi Desert.—AUTH.

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”

eucharistic transformation goes beyond and completes the transubstantiation of the bread on the altar. Step by step it irresistibly invades the universe.... The sacramental Species are formed by the totality of the world, and the duration of the creation is the time needed for its consecration.<sup>43</sup>

In this process of evolution, the “Body of Christ” is being formed in the world—not the Christ of Orthodoxy, but the “universal Christ” or “Super-Christ,” which Teilhard defines as “a synthesis of Christ and the universe.”<sup>44</sup> \* This “evolving Christ” will bring about the unity of all religions:

A general convergence of religions upon a universal Christ who fundamentally satisfies them all: this seems to me the only possible conversion of the world, and the only form in which a religion of the future can be conceived.<sup>45</sup>

Christianity for him is not the unique Truth, but only “an emerging phylum of evolution,”<sup>46</sup> subject to change and transformation like everything else in the “evolving” world. Like recent popes, Teilhard does not wish to “convert” the world, but only to offer the papacy as a kind of mystical center of man’s religious quest, a super-denominational Delphic Oracle. As one of his admirers summarizes his view:

If Christianity ... is indeed to be the religion of tomorrow, there is only one way in which it can hope to come up to the measure of today’s great humanitarian trends and assimilate them; and that is

---

\* In an essay completed only a month before his death, Teilhard went so far as to make the blasphemous statement: “It is Christ, in very truth, who saves—but should we not immediately add that at the same time it is Christ who is saved by Evolution?” (“The Christic,” in *The Heart of Matter*, p. 92). Having examined this and other such proclamations by Teilhard, Dr. Wolfgang Smith has remarked in his valuable study *Teilhardism and the New Religion*: “It is literally true that Teilhard has deified evolution” (p. 219).—ED.

through the axis, living and organic, of its Catholicism centered on Rome.<sup>47</sup> \*

At the same time that the universe is “evolving” into the “Body of Christ,” man himself is reaching the pinnacle of his evolutionary development: “Super-humanity.” Teilhard writes:

Evidence obliges our reason to accept that something greater than the man of today is in gestation upon the earth.

Like Lecomte du Noüy, and indeed all thinkers who have a “religious” view of evolution, Teilhard identifies the evolving “Super-humanity” with Christ, and conversely, interprets Christ in terms of “Super-humanity”:

In order to be able to continue to worship as before we must be able to say to ourselves, as we look at the Son of man [not “*Apparuit humanitas*,” but] “*Apparuit Super-Humanitas*” [“Super-Humanity has appeared”].<sup>48</sup>

Here Teilhard’s thought becomes “mystical,” and he does not state clearly whether human personality is preserved in “Super-humanity,” or whether it is simply merged in the universal “Super-Christ.” In the words of his biographer:

Humanity would reach a point of development when it would detach itself altogether from the earth and unite with Omega.... “A phenomenon outwardly similar to death perhaps (writes Teilhard), but in reality, simple metamorphosis and accession to the supreme synthesis.”<sup>49</sup>

---

\* Teilhard himself wrote: “Everything goes to show that if Christianity is in truth destined to be, as it professes and as it is conscious of being, the religion of tomorrow, it is only through the living, organic axis of its Roman Catholicism that it can hope to measure up to the great modern humanist currents and become one with them” (*Christianity and Evolution*, p. 168).—ED.

The “supreme synthesis,” the pinnacle of this evolutionary-spiritual process, is what Teilhard called the “Point Omega”:

One day, the Gospel tells us, the tension gradually accumulating between humanity and God will touch the limits prescribed by the possibilities of the world. And then will come the end. Then the presence of Christ, which has been silently accruing in things, will suddenly be revealed—like a flash of light from pole to pole. The spiritual atoms of the world will be borne along by a force generated by the powers of cohesion proper to the universe itself, and will occupy, whether within Christ or without Christ (but always under the influence of Christ), the happiness or pain designated for them by the living structure of the Pleroma [the fullness of things].<sup>50</sup>

This “Point Omega” is not an otherworldly goal, but is only the end of “the movement of the universe to its evolutionary goal”; “the climax of evolution is identified ... with the risen Christ of the Parousia.”<sup>51</sup> All men, Teilhard believes, should desire this goal, for it “is an accumulation of desires that should cause the Pleroma to burst upon us.”<sup>52</sup> Again, he writes:

To cooperate in total cosmic evolution is the only deliberate act that can adequately express our devotion to an evolutive and universal Christ.<sup>53</sup>

Nevertheless, with or without man’s will, the Parousia will come, for it is the culmination of a *natural* process:

The unique business of the world is the physical incorporation of the faithful in Christ, who is of God. This major task is pursued with the rigor and harmony of a natural process of evolution.<sup>54</sup>

Of course, he is completely doing away with all ideas of Christianity which have existed hitherto. Christianity is not an individual trying to save his soul; it is everybody in the world evolving by a natural process up to the Omega Point.

Christians should not fear the natural process of evolution, Teilhard believes, because it only brings them inexorably to God:

Though frightened for a moment by evolution, the Christian now perceives that what it offers him is nothing but a magnificent means of feeling more at one with God and of giving himself more to him. In a pluralistic and static Nature, the universal domination of Christ could, strictly speaking, still be regarded as an extrinsic and superimposed power. In a spiritually converging world, this "Christic" energy acquires an urgency and intensity of another order altogether.<sup>55</sup>

### *9. The Chiliasm\* of Teilhard de Chardin*

There are a few more views of Teilhard de Chardin which we should mention. Interestingly, he looks for a state which will take us beyond the dead end of Communism. During World War II he wrote that Communism, fascism, and democracy were all fighting each other, and that we must go beyond that:

The great affair for modern mankind is to break its way out by forcing some threshold of greater consciousness. Whether Christians or not, the men who are animated by this conviction form a homogeneous category....

The great event which we are awaiting [is] the discovery of a synthetic act of adoration in which are allied and mutually exalted the passionate desire to conquer the World, and the passionate desire to unite ourselves with God; the vital act, specifically new, corresponding to a new age of Earth.<sup>56</sup>

One can see that, in Teilhard, chiliasm is very strong: the New Age emerges. He writes that

in Communism, at any rate in its origins, faith in a universal human organism reached a magnificent state of exaltation.... On the other

---

\* "Chiliasm," that is, in its more general sense. See p. 34n above.—ED.

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”

hand, in its unbalanced admiration for the tangible powers of the Universe, it has systematically excluded from its hopes the possibility of a spiritual metamorphosis of the Universe.<sup>57</sup>

In other words, if you add spirituality to Communism, you have the answer.\* Teilhard goes on to say:

We must unite. No more political fronts, but one great crusade for human advancement.... The democrat, the communist, and the fascist must jettison the deviations and limitations of their systems and pursue to the full the positive aspirations which inspire their enthusiasm, and then, quite naturally, the new spirit will burst the exclusive bonds which still imprison it; the three currents will find themselves merging in the conception of a common task; namely, to promote the spiritual future of the World.... The function of man is to build and direct the whole of the *Earth*.... We shall end by perceiving that the great object unconsciously pursued by science is nothing else than the discovery of God.<sup>58</sup>

That is how mysticism comes right into the middle of science. Science nowadays is losing all of its bearings; it has become indeterminate, positing a whole universe of antimatter, which mixes scientists up.\*\* It all ends in mysticism.

---

\* Commenting on the Jesuit and Dominican “worker priests” who in the 1940s and 1950s joined Communist and socialist parties (and most of whom subsequently left the priesthood), Teilhard wrote: “Priest-workers find in the face of a humane Marxism not only justice but hope and a feeling for the Earth which is stronger than ‘evangelical humanity’” (quoted in Malachi Martin, *The Jesuits*, p. 290). Elsewhere he said: “Marxists *believe* in the future of mankind while present-day Christians do not” (quoted in Joseph V. Kopp, *Teilhard de Chardin: A New Synthesis of Evolution*, p. 70).—ED.

\*\* According to naturalistic assumptions, the observable universe should have formed with equal parts of matter and antimatter; in fact, however, it is made up almost entirely of matter. In secular circles, the asymmetry of matter and antimatter is currently considered one of the greatest unsolved problems of physics. One solution



Teilhard writes:

*The only truly natural and real human Unity* is the Spirit of the Earth.... A conquering passion begins to show itself, which will sweep away or transform what has hitherto been the immaturity of the Earth.... The call towards the great Union [i.e., the universal unity of mankind] whose realization is the only business now afoot in Nature....—On this hypothesis, under which (in conformity with the findings of psychoanalysis) Love is the primitive and universal psychic energy, does not everything around us become clear?... The Sense of Earth is the irresistible pressure which will come at the right moment to unite them [all humanity] in a common passion....

*The Age of Nations is past. The task before us now, if we would not perish, is to shake off our ancient prejudices, and to build the Earth...*

The great conflict from which we shall have emerged will merely have consolidated in the World the need to believe. Having reached a higher degree of self-mastery, the Spirit of Earth will experience an increasingly vital need to adore; *out of universal evolution God emerges* in our consciousness as greater and more necessary than ever....

At what moment in the Noosphere has there been a more urgent

---

was posited in 1956 by the Austrian-American physicist Maurice Goldhaber. The universe, he speculated, divided into two parts after its formation: the universe that we live in, and an alternate universe of antimatter that cannot be observed by us.

Even more radical ideas of multiple universes—also known as “the multiverse”—include the “many-worlds interpretation of quantum mechanics” (which sees all possible alternate histories and futures as real, each representing an actual “world” or “universe”) and the “string theory landscape” (which posits  $10^{500}$  or more possible universes, each with a different collection of particles and forces). In recent years, the multiverse hypothesis has been brought up by opponents of intelligent design in order to account for the fact that our universe is marvelously fine-tuned for supporting conscious life on earth. According to the laws of chance, our universe should not be so fine-tuned, but given a large or even an infinite number of universes, the fine-tuning of our universe becomes more plausible to those who do not believe in an intelligent Creator.—ED.

## “CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM”

need to find a Faith, a Hope to give meaning and soul to the immense organism we are building?<sup>59</sup>

Here he means that the whole modern revolution has lost itself. When it tries to build a new Paradise, it destroys everything; therefore, it needs to have a religious meaning added to it; and this Teilhard provides. All the things in modern life, he says, are good. Only add to them this: the idea that they are all heading for a new, spiritual kingdom.

Teilhard says further:

In us the evolution of the World towards the spirit becomes conscious....\* We cannot yet understand exactly where it will lead us, but it would be absurd for us to doubt that it will lead us towards some end of supreme value.<sup>60</sup>

In this he is trying to be a prophet, but he is not really quite sure where it is all going.

The generating principle of our unification is not finally to be found in the single contemplation of the same Truth or in the single desire awakened by *Something*, but in the single attraction exercised by the same Someone....<sup>61</sup>

---

\* Elsewhere Teilhard writes: “Man discovers that *he is nothing else than evolution become conscious of itself*” (*The Phenomenon of Man*, p. 220). Here he acknowledges a debt to his friend Julian Huxley, who coined the expression and later used it in his famous speech at the Darwin Centennial in 1959 (see p. 23 above). The phrase would also be repeated by Teilhard’s admirer Theodosius Dobzhansky (Dobzhansky, “Changing Man,” *Science*, vol. 155, no. 3761 [Jan. 27, 1967], p. 409).

At around the same time Huxley began speaking about conscious evolution, the idea began to be propagated by others who would, along with Teilhard, come to be regarded as the forerunners of today’s New Age movement. In 1957, for example, the occultist Alice Bailey wrote that, “for the first time,” humanity is “intelligently participating in the evolutionary process” (*The Externalization of the Hierarchy*, p. 685). The idea continues to be very popular in New Age circles; see, for example, Andrew Cohen and Ken Wilber, “A Cosmic Roller-Coaster Ride,” *Enlightenment Next: The Magazine for Evolutionaries*, no. 40 (May–July, 2008).—ED.

In spite of all the apparent improbabilities, we are inevitably approaching a new age in which the World will cast off its chains, to give itself up at last to the power of its internal affinities....

With two thousand years of mystic experience [of Roman Catholicism] behind us, the contact which we can make with the personal Focus of the Universe has gained just as much explicit richness as the contact we can make, after two thousand years of Science, with the natural spheres of the World. Regarded as a "phylum" of love, Christianity is so living that, at this very moment, we can see it undergoing an extraordinary mutation by elevating itself to a firmer consciousness of its universal value.\*

Is there not now under way one further metamorphosis, the ultimate, the realization of God at the heart of the Noosphere [the mental world], the passage of the circles [i.e., of all the spheres] to their common Center, the apparition at last of the "Theosphere" [i.e., when man and the world become God]?<sup>62</sup>

This longing is very deep in modern man—this is what he wants. All modern philosophical, chiliastic, socialistic systems have as their end the idea that God is thrown out, Christianity is thrown out, and the world is Divine. The world is somehow the body of God, and man wants to be a god. Now man has lost God; God is dead; the Superman wants to be born. Teilhard expresses modern man's desire for what Dostoyevsky depicted in "The Grand Inquisitor." He tries to unite the

---

\* In a letter Teilhard spoke of his role in effecting this mutation of Christianity and thus bringing into being what he called a "new religion": "As you already know, what dominates my interest and my preoccupations is the effort to establish in myself and to spread around a new religion (you may call it a better Christianity) in which the personal God ceases to be the great neolithic proprietor of former times, in order to become the soul of the world; our religious and cultural stage calls for this" (*Letters to Leontine Zanta* [in French], p. 127). Elsewhere Teilhard exulted that this new religion "is burgeoning in the heart of modern man, from a seed sown by the idea of evolution" (*Activation of Energy*, p. 383). "A religion of the earth," he wrote, "is being mobilized against the religion of heaven" (*Science and Christ*, p. 120).—ED.

spiritual side with the scientific side, and with a New Order which will be political. He is a prophet of Antichrist.

And so with this, the modern rationalism in our time comes to an end. Reason finally comes to doubt or even to deny itself.\* Science is upset; it does not know what matter is, what it can know and what it cannot know. Relativism pervades all spheres. For some, this doubt and relativism lead to the philosophy of the absurd.\*\*

It turns out that, having gone through all these experiments of the apostasy, *man cannot develop anything more for himself*. He tried everything and each time he was confident that he had finally found the answer. As he did this, however, he overthrew more and more from the past. And always whatever he made was overthrown by the next generation. Now he comes finally to doubting even whether the world exists, and what he is. Many people commit suicide. Many destroy. What is left for man? There is nothing left except to *wait* for a new revelation. And modern man is in such a state—having no value system and no religion of his own—that he cannot but accept whatever comes as being this new revelation.

### *10. Teilhardism in the Light of Orthodoxy*

The evolutionary philosophy of Teilhard de Chardin is, strictly speaking, the product of the meeting of modern philosophy with Roman Catholicism. However strongly Teilhardism might seem to break with certain aspects of the ultramontane Roman Catholicism of yesterday, there can be no doubt that it is in profound harmony with and admirably expresses the deepest “spiritual” current of apostate Rome: the

---

\* Earlier in his “Survival Course,” Fr. Seraphim spoke of how faith in “pure reason” was undermined toward the end of the Enlightenment by the philosophers David Hume, Immanuel Kant, and others. Some of this discussion has been included in the previous chapter, pp. 537–43.—ED.

\*\* A reference to the writers Camus, Kafka, Ionesco, etc. In the early 1960s, Fr. Seraphim wrote an essay called “The Philosophy of the Absurd,” which was published posthumously in *The Orthodox Word* no. 106 (1982), and in Eugene (Fr. Seraphim) Rose, *Nihilism: The Root of the Revolution of the Modern Age* (2nd ed., 2001).—ED.

use of "otherworldliness" for a this-worldly, chiliastic end, or as recent popes have expressed it, the "sanctification of the world." Within Roman Catholicism, Teilhardism is a new "revelation" quite as justified and as "traditional" as the revelation of several centuries ago of the "Sacred Heart of Jesus," which itself inspired one of Teilhard's "mystical" meditations in a monologue with God:

Two centuries ago, your Church [Roman Catholicism] began to feel the particular power of your heart.... But now [we are becoming] aware that your main purpose in this revealing to us of your heart was to enable our love to escape from the constrictions of the too narrow, too precise, too limited image of you which we had fashioned for ourselves. What I discern in your breast is simply a furnace of fire; and the more I fix my gaze on its ardency the more it seems to me that all around it the contours of your body melt away and become enlarged beyond all measure, till the only features I can distinguish in you are those of the face of the world which has burst into flame.<sup>63</sup>\*

The "revelation" of the "Sacred Heart," in this view, is thus merely a preparation for the still more universal revelation of "evolution" in our own times. Even in the nineteenth century, the "reactionary" Pope Pius IX, far from condemning the evolutionary views of St. George Jackson Mivart, conferred on him an honorary doctorate of philosophy after their publication (1876).<sup>64</sup>

---

\* As Teilhard noted in his spiritual autobiography, devotion to the "Sacred Heart" in fact played a "central, seminal part" in his religious formation. Recalling the days of his youth, he wrote: "The moment I saw a mysterious patch of crimson and gold delineated in the very center of the Savior's breast, I found what I was looking for—a way of escaping from everything that so distressed me in the complicated, fragile and individual organization of the *Body* of Jesus. It was an astounding release!... The whole physical and spiritual reality of Christ was visibly condensed for me into a well-defined, compact object from which all accidental and restrictive particularity disappeared: the first approach of a Christic beyond Christ, disclosing a remarkable homology between this new 'milieu' and the Metallic or Mineral which, at the very same time, were dominant in me" (*The Heart of Matter*, p. 43).—ED.

In Teilhardism, Roman Catholicism has come virtually to the farthest limit of its blasphemy against the true teaching of the Church of Christ. That which is called “Christ” in this philosophy is precisely what the Orthodox Church knows as *Antichrist*: the “emerging” pseudo-Christ who promises mankind a “spiritual” *kingdom of this world*. In this philosophy the concept of and taste for the *other world*, the possession of which distinguishes Orthodox Christians from other men, is totally obliterated.

As we have seen, Teilhard is deeply in harmony *both* with the modern outlook *and* with Roman Catholicism, both of which are now “converging” in a new worldview. He rightly saw that evolution, if it is true, cannot be kept in one compartment of human thought, but profoundly affects the whole of thought. He was unconcerned to “reconcile” evolution with single points of Christian tradition and dogma, because he rightly saw that there is no possible reconciliation. Evolution is a “new revelation” to man, and it is the single most important part of the worldview of the “Third Age of the Holy Spirit” which is now coming upon the last humanity.\* In the light of evolution everything must change—not just the “static worldview” of Holy Scripture and the Holy Fathers, but one’s whole outlook toward life, God, and the Church.

The simple Orthodox believer who may accept the idea of “evolution” innocently because he has been told it is “scientific,” will doubtless be bewildered at the Teilhardian idea of “evolution” and wonder what possible connection it has with the “scientific facts” which “everyone accepts” today. It is time, then, finally, to approach the answers to the questions about evolution and Christian faith which this

---

\* A reference to the chiliastic prediction of Joachim of Fiore, the twelfth-century Latin abbot who saw the two ages of the Father (Old Testament) and the Son (New Testament) giving way to a final “Third Age of the Holy Spirit.” This teaching was taken up in the thirteenth century by the Franciscan Spirituals, who viewed Joachim as their prophet. In the nineteenth century it was revived by the un-Orthodox Russian thinker Nicholas Berdyaev, who predicted the advent of “a new and final Revelation”: “the New Age of the Holy Spirit” characterized by “a new spirituality and a new mysticism; in it there will be no more of the ascetic worldview.” See Fr. Seraphim Rose, *Orthodoxy and the Religion of the Future*, 5th ed., p. xxxiii.—ED.

study of "Christian evolutionism" has raised. Not everyone who believes in some form of evolution can accept the pseudo-mysticism of Teilhard de Chardin; but this blasphemous "mysticism" is only a most logical deduction from views whose full implications are entirely unrealized by those who accept evolution "in some form." Unknown to most Orthodox Christians, the Holy Fathers of the Orthodox Church have set forth a clear teaching on the nature of the world, God's creation, and the first-created man which answers all the questions that modernist Orthodox "theologians" think are so uncertain and difficult.

Teilhard's monstrous view of the "Omega" was made possible precisely because evolutionary philosophy first obscured the "Alpha"—that is, the Orthodox doctrine of the creation of the world and man. Orthodox theology in our own time has come so much under the influence of this modern philosophy that most "Orthodox theologians" no longer teach the Orthodox doctrine of God's creation. The ideas expressed in the official organ of the Greek Archdiocese of America, by the "conservative" theologian Panagiotis Trempeles (if he has been correctly quoted), and by Theodosius Dobzhansky and St. Vladimir's Theological Seminary which awarded him an honorary doctorate—are so far from Orthodoxy that one can only marvel at the "Western captivity" that has enchained these Orthodox Christians who are, after all, free to read the Holy Fathers and think for themselves.

Before approaching the teaching of the Holy Fathers themselves, let us examine briefly the views of "Orthodox theologians" who accept *even the teaching of Teilhard de Chardin himself as "Orthodox,"* and reveal thereby their captivity by a teaching totally and utterly foreign to Holy Orthodoxy.

### 11. "Orthodox" Followers of Teilhard de Chardin

Teilhardism seems to have made a deep impression on Russian Orthodox "liberals" after the translation and publication (significant in itself) of *The Phenomenon of Man* in Moscow in 1965—the first book of a "Christian thinker" (if one excepts the propaganda volume of Hewlett Johnson, the "Red Dean of Canterbury") to be published in the

USSR.\* After this publication, Fr. John Meyendorff of the American Metropolia [Orthodox Church in America] wrote:

The Christocentric understanding of man and the world which, according to Teilhard, are in a state of constant change and striving towards the “Omega Point,” that is, the highest point of being and evolution, which is identified by the author with God Himself, connects Teilhard with the profound intuition of the Orthodox Fathers of the Church.<sup>65</sup>

More specifically, the editor (presumably Nikita Struve) of the Orthodox periodical from Paris, *Messenger of the Russian Student Christian Movement*, writes: “It should be noted that the chief characteristic of Teilhardism is not at all the acceptance of evolution—this has been no novelty for a long time among theologians and religious philosophers. The soul of the teaching of the French thinker is a new approach to the problem of the world and creation.” In his teaching on this Teilhard “only sets forth in contemporary language the teaching of the Apostle Paul concerning nature, which is not excluded from the plan of Salvation.” When reflecting on “the Mass of the World” Teilhard’s experiences “were for him something like a cosmic Liturgy which is invisibly performed in the world. Here is the very heart of the Teilhardian proclamation, which restores to us the forgotten, immemorially Christian understanding of the universe and the Divine Incarnation. Precisely it illuminated for Teilhard the meaning of evolution as the movement of the whole cosmos toward the Kingdom of God and enabled him to overcome the negative approach to the world which is deeply rooted among Christians.”<sup>66</sup>

---

\* That this book was allowed to be published at the height of the Soviet regime should not be surprising in light of Teilhard’s favorable view of Marxism, noted above (p. 591n). In his book *The Jesuits* (1987), Fr. Malachi Martin comments: “For Teilhard, Marxism presented no real difficulty. ‘The Christian God on high,’ he wrote, ‘and the Marxist God of Progress are reconciled in Christ.’ Little wonder that Teilhard de Chardin is the only Roman Catholic author whose works are on public display with those of Marx and Lenin in Moscow’s Hall of Atheism” (*The Jesuits*, p. 290).—ED.



The *Messenger's* major "Orthodox" article on Teilhardism is by a Polish Orthodox priest, Fr. George Klinger, and is entitled "Fr. Teilhard de Chardin and Orthodox Tradition."<sup>67</sup> This author finds that Teilhard's "thought so often uncovers points of approach to the best traditions of Orthodoxy,"<sup>68</sup> and he then proceeds to quote these "best traditions of Orthodoxy," which are: the third-century heresy of Montanism ("the evolutionism of Eastern thought is confirmed in the study of Montanism, which saw the appearance of the three Hypostases of the Holy Trinity in three successive epochs of human history");<sup>69</sup> the twelfth-century Latin monk Joachim of Fiore, with his prophecy of the coming "Third Age of the Holy Spirit" to replace the ages of the Old and New Testaments; and the whole "Paris-modern" school of Bulgakov, Berdyaev, and their followers. (He does quote a few genuine Fathers also; but not one of these quotes is supportive of the idea of evolution.) Indeed, no one will doubt that there is a kinship between these sources and evolutionary philosophy, nor that the whole charismatic-ecumenical "new Christianity" of our own times has deep roots precisely in the doctrine of evolution—but *all this has nothing whatever to do with Orthodoxy and the Holy Fathers of the Church!* Fr. George Klinger is so far from Orthodoxy that he does not hesitate to follow Teilhard de Chardin into his dizzying vision of the "cosmic" or "super" Christ:

Fr. Teilhard speaks much on the cosmic role of Christ, of the Divine Milieu, and very little of the Church. In this case too he "converges" with tendencies akin to him in Orthodox theology... In Fr. Teilhard, the Church is identified with the working of Christ in the cosmos.<sup>70</sup>

And again:

According to Fr. Teilhard, through communion of the Holy Mysteries the world being sanctified becomes the Body of Christ.... These thoughts are possibly the profoundest that have been said in recent times on the question of the central sacrament of Christianity.<sup>71</sup>

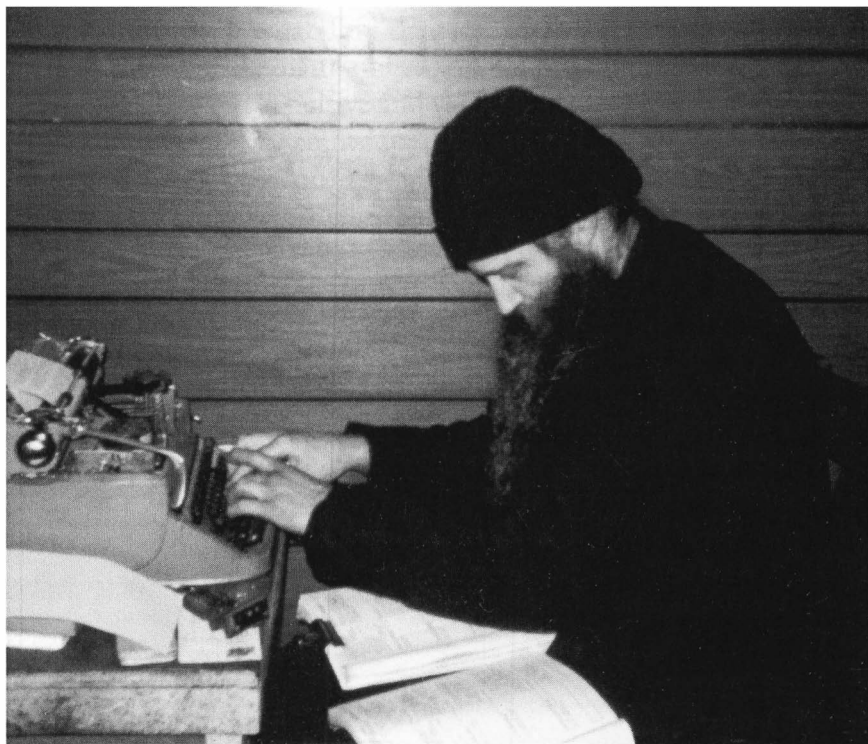
Enough has been said to show how far the “Orthodox” followers of Teilhard de Chardin wander from sound Orthodox doctrine. The Patristic illiteracy of our own day is so great that any “theologian” can say virtually anything and attribute it to a “Holy Father” and not be corrected. Particularly with regard to evolution it is allowed to make extremely vague statements which seem to give a “Patristic” justification for belief in this modern doctrine. “The Greek Fathers had a cosmic view”—which makes them akin to Teilhard de Chardin! “The Fathers didn’t interpret Genesis literally”—which means we are free to interpret it in terms of evolution! “Genesis lends itself to an evolutionary interpretation”—according to our modern wise men who do not know the Fathers! “The *Hexaemeron* of St. Basil is favorable to evolution.” One could multiply such examples of loose thinking.

We have seen enough of these feeble speculations of modern thinkers; it is time now to go to the Fathers themselves to reveal what they have to say on the questions affecting the doctrine and philosophy of evolution. What are the spheres of science and theology? How must an Orthodox Christian interpret the book of Genesis? Who was the first man, when did he live, what was his origin and nature? What was the state of the first-created world? Who is able to see things as they were “in the beginning”? We shall seek answers to such questions not of one or two of the Fathers only, not of dubious Fathers or in obscure works, not by taking quotes out of context so as to fit preconceived notions. Rather, we shall ask the Fathers of undisputed authority in the Orthodox Church and seek to find what the “Patristic mind” is on this question. We shall investigate the commentaries on Genesis of St. John Chrysostom and St. Ephraim the Syrian; the commentaries on the Six Days of Creation by St. Basil the Great and St. Ambrose of Milan; the catechetical works of St. Cyril of Jerusalem, St. Gregory of Nyssa, and St. John Damascene; the Homilies on Adam and the first-created world by St. Symeon the New Theologian and St. Gregory the Sinaite; the theological writings of St. Macarius the Great, St. Gregory the Theologian, St. Isaac the Syrian, St. Abba Dorotheus, St. Gregory Palamas, and other Fathers; as well as the witness of the Divine services of the Orthodox Church. We shall find there much that is new to many Orthodox Christians, especially since many of these writings

have not been translated into English. We shall find there not just many “details” concerning things which are beyond us, but a precise and coherent doctrine of that which we need to know. We shall find that the most pressing questions raised by the doctrine of evolution are answered for us. We shall find there the inspiring Patristic doctrine of the first creation, the nature of Adam, and the final state of all creatures—which makes repulsive and vain for us the “Omega” of Teilhard de Chardin and all the empty speculations of those who have not that *knowledge* of the first and last things which God has revealed to His chosen people, Orthodox Christians.

## PART IV

### *Selections from Letters*



Fr. Seraphim, during Great Lent of 1972, typing in the refectory of the  
St. Herman of Alaska Monastery, Platina, California.

## EDITOR'S NOTE

*For a background to these excerpts from Fr. Seraphim's letters, see the editor's preface as well as the editor's note on p. 417.*

*Section titles have been supplied by the editor. Names have been abbreviated to protect the privacy of living persons.*

*According to the style adopted by Fr. Seraphim, the letters are dated with the traditional Church (Julian) calendar date followed by the civil (Gregorian) calendar date.*

### *1. A Key in the Program of Anti-Christianity*

*(To Alexey Young, August 16/29, 1972)*

AS FOR EVOLUTION, which is a hoax and fraud if ever anything was, we have long wanted to have a good objective exposé (because of its devastating anti-Christian religious overtones and even foundation), but have never had the chance to go into it ourselves. The statements of Fr. L. which you quoted on it sound naive in the extreme. Over a year ago Fr. N. mentioned he was going to print an article on the subject by Kalomiros, but we assumed it would be entirely critical and expose the whole fraud of it. We know of no conceivable watering down or modification of the evolutionary hypothesis which would make it acceptable either to theology, philosophy, or science—certainly the more sophisticated scientists today no longer take it seriously, and recognize that it became popular solely by an act of faith and highly rigged evidence!...

Well, I think it's beyond us to start "interfering" with other fellow Orthodox publications and argue over what we think they should print, unless of course we have some facts or information they don't have, or unless they ask us to give our opinion. But surely we have the right to accept or reject what they do say, and even (if we feel it is necessary) to publish something that contradicts it—without, of

course, publicly “fighting” with them. I guess we’ll just have to wait and see (there’s usually more noise than ever comes out of the “grapevine” into public view). We can’t imagine that Fr. N. or Fr. P. would publish anything really pro-evolution, but even a vague middle-of-the-road article would be harmful enough, in view of the fact that evolution seems to be such a key in the whole program of anti-Christianity.

## 2. *Theistic Evolution*

(To Alexey Young, January 31/Feb. 13, 1973)

The “Evolution” article for the next issue looks very good to us, quite comprehensive and to the point, and also I don’t think there’s anything there to which Fr. P. and others could object (I’ll tell you what I gathered from them below). However, the article could be improved by expanding a little on several points:

1. At the bottom of p. 1 you mention “*any form of evolution*,” and at the end of that paragraph you specify: “atheistic physical evolution, or theistic physical evolution, or spiritual evolution.” However, your article is really addressed almost entirely against atheistic physical evolution and its absurdities, and some people might take advantage of this to say you haven’t really considered more “refined” forms of theistic or spiritual evolution. In such a short article, of course, it’s really not possible to go into them, but perhaps a sentence or two more on them will show *why* they can’t be taken seriously either and are not at all more “refined” (just more vague and confused!). Thus, “theistic” evolution, as I understand its motives, is the invention of men who, being *afraid* that physical evolution is really “scientific,” stick “God” in at various points of the evolutionary process in order not to be left out, in order to conform “theology” to the “latest scientific discoveries.” But this kind of artificial thinking is satisfactory only to the most vague and confused minds (for whom, apparently, “God” supplies the energy and order that can’t be explained according to the second law of thermodynamics): it is satisfactory neither for theology nor for science, but just mixes the two realms up. Again, “spiritual” evolution applies the “conclusions” of atheistic physical evolution to the “spiritual” realm

and comes to results which are monstrous and unacceptable either from the scientific or the theological point of view: a mix-up and confusion which can only disguise itself in fantastic jargon à la Teilhard de Chardin. Both these kinds of evolution depend entirely on acceptance of physical evolution, and if that is shown to be unsound they fall; and in addition they are self-contradictory because the whole purpose and intent of the theory of physical evolution is *to find an explanation of the world without God*; i.e., physical evolution is *by its nature atheistic*,\* and it's only ridiculous when "theologians" run after the latest "scientific" theory in order not to be left behind by the times.

I'm afraid I'm wasting too many words on this point, but you really should tell the reader a little more as to why other kinds of evolution are no more satisfactory. The central point, of course, is that evolution is not at all "scientific," but rather a kind of science-fiction theology, the product of *faith* (an atheistic faith, but nonetheless faith). That it is still so widely accepted surely shows how low not only theology, but just plain commonsense thinking have fallen today. (I still remember my freshman professor of zoology expatiating on the "great ideas of man": for him the greatest idea man ever invented was the idea of evolution; much greater, he believed, than the "idea of God.")

2. On Piltdown, Peking, Java Man, etc. on p. 3: Isn't Piltdown the only one that is universally accepted as a fraud? If so, it would be wisest to emphasize it (citing the book on the subject, if you have the reference at hand) and mention the great doubts and questions surrounding the others, so as not to be accused of racing ahead of the evidence!

3. The second law of thermodynamics:\*\* you'd better give a brief definition at the beginning (see also the enclosed clipping, showing what brought a Soviet scientist to God).

4. You end with a reference to the "Gospel of foolishness"—which

---

\* On the inherent godlessness of the theory of physical evolution, see pp. 36–37n, 100–101 above.—ED.

\*\* For a discussion of the second law of thermodynamics (the universal law of increasing entropy) relative to the theory of biological evolution, see chapters 7 and 8 of *The Mystery of Life's Origin* (1984) by Charles B. Thaxton, Walter L. Bradley and Roger L. Olsen.—ED.



might inadvertently lead some readers to think that, after all, you admit that evolution somehow makes sense and you have to be higher and more spiritual to see that it doesn't. No—on every level, from common sense on up, evolution is nonsense! Behold what real, unredeemed foolishness they fall into who try to do without God!

The article, though short, is excellent, with a very good use of quotes from Darwin and others. Probably you will get lots of discussion on this. Perhaps one day you could put together a longer, more detailed article on evolution, with ample citations both from evolutionists (showing their naive faith and sloppy thinking) and their sound critics (I recall a good book I read some years ago by an ornithologist: Douglas Dewar, *Difficulties of the Evolutionary Theory*),\* to serve as a reference source for those who care to think seriously on the subject. In general, people are so afraid of challenging scientists "on their own ground" that they're afraid to get into this subject; a little clear thinking such as your short article already reveals can dispel a lot of this fear and the fog that surrounds the question....

Fr. P. mentioned a little the question of evolution (I didn't mention your forthcoming article on the subject), enough for me to see his basic attitude and fears, I think. His concern about "fundamentalism" seems to stem from a fear that the Orthodox battle against evolutionism might get bogged down *on the same level* as the "supposed" scientific arguments for it, and there thus might be endless arguments on fossil evidence, the precise meaning of the "Six Days," etc. He is of course right that our Orthodox approach to the subject should not be on the scientific but rather on the theological level; but I also gathered that he is not fully aware of the flimsiness of the "scientific" evidence in favor of evolutionism, which makes him perhaps over-cautious and fearful on the whole subject. Yes, we should keep our basic approach high and theological; but we can also blow up that "scientific" evidence which

---

\* Douglas Dewar was a leader of the Evolution Protest Movement that began in England in 1932. His valuable contributions, contained in his books *Difficulties of the Evolutionary Theory* (1931) and *More Difficulties of the Evolutionary Theory* (1938), continue to be cited. His description of the hypothetical evolution of the whale is quoted in Michael Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis* (1986), pp. 217–18.—ED.

just doesn't make sense and which is really the result of blind prejudice and false theologizing in the guise of science.

3. *A Rival Thought-Pattern to Orthodoxy*

(To Fr. N., April 5/18, 1973)

The most important point, regarding evolution:

a. First of all, let us shock you right off by saying that we read the article before publication,\* made many suggestions (which were all incorporated into the article), and fully approved it; and now rereading it after receiving your letter we find nothing seriously wrong with it—except that it is much too short and concise. Of course, now with your letter it becomes obvious also that the approach was perhaps too abrupt and direct for many Orthodox readers today, and more preparation of them should perhaps be made.

b. Therefore, there is obviously some deep disagreement between your views and ours on this subject. I have always regarded evolution, in all its ramifications, as an important part of the “American modern” intellectual baggage which I left behind when I became Orthodox, and it never before occurred to me that any aware Orthodox Christian would regard it as unimportant, especially now when many scientists have abandoned it (purely on scientific grounds), when the pseudo-religious presuppositions of its supporters are so evident, and when it is so much bound up with Masonry-ecumenism and the whole pseudo-religious modern outlook.\*\*

---

\* The article on evolution by Alexey Young, which Fr. Seraphim speaks about in the previous letter.—ED.

\*\* As noted above, one of the fathers of modern evolutionary theory, Erasmus Darwin, was a Freemason, as was Charles Darwin's “bulldog,” T. H. Huxley (see Leonard Huxley, *Life and Letters of Thomas Henry Huxley*, vol. 3, p. 92). Nevertheless, Fr. Seraphim is referring here not necessarily to a *formal* connection between Freemasonry and ecumenism on the one hand and evolutionism on the other, but rather to the “universalist” character that these philosophies share (see his notes on this subject on pp. 654–55 below).

Also, as mentioned above (pp. 35–36), certain evolutionist thinkers and Christian ecumenists share a chiliastic belief that, in the inevitable course of progress, all

We were frankly astonished at your objection to the article, and have been thinking long and hard to try to find your thinking on this subject. Then it occurred to us: apparently you regard “modern” ideas as being of two types: those that directly attack the Church, which must be confronted and uprooted mercilessly (Masonry, ecumenism); and those which do not directly attack the Church and are not directly theological (evolution).

Is this true? Nonetheless, I don’t see how it can be denied that “modern” ideas are after all one whole: they are formed first outside the Church, develop in atheist-agnostic minds, and then move through the whole of society until they reach the Church, changing form in the meantime to fit in with each current of ideas. “Evolution” is one such idea (but it’s not really an “idea”—see below) that has not yet directly attacked Orthodoxy. But look what it has already done to Roman Catholicism: is it not true that the whole dissolution of Roman Catholicism in the last decade is directly bound up with the “unleashing” of Teilhardism (whose books were more or less banned up to then) in that same period, a process which was presented for popular consumption ten years ago in a rather cheap but symptomatic novel, *The Shoes of the Fisherman*? By this I do not mean that a certain number of Teilhardian theses were opposed to so many Roman Catholic theses and conquered them: for his evolution is not really a “heresy” (we will agree that this term applied to him, especially from the Orthodox side, is imprecise!), but rather a whole *rival thought-pattern* offering a whole different approach to life (and, consequently, religion); and being already so much a part of the “spirit of the age,” its approach was persuasive not by argument but by fitting in with unconscious attitudes of people who were outwardly Roman Catholic.

We were rather surprised when you (and Fr. E., too, as I recall) mentioned that you haven’t read Teilhard and weren’t familiar with

---

previous standards are subject to revision. In 1970, having read the pronouncements of prominent “Orthodox ecumenists,” Fr. Seraphim noted that they derived from “the concept that we are entering entirely new historical circumstances, an entirely new *kind* of time, in which the concepts of the past are no longer relevant” (letter to Fr. M., Sept. 2, 1970). Such an idea, of course, also forms the basis of modern evolutionary philosophies such as that of Teilhard de Chardin.—ED.

his ideas; i.e., you are waiting for the wave to hit Orthodoxy before you start thinking of the subject. But really, Teilhardism is the “Christianity” (and “Orthodoxy”) of the future, or rather its metaphysical foundation (it fits very nicely in with “charismatic” phenomena), and it is by no means too early to find out what is hitting us! Here it may well be that Alexey’s position (as a layman in the midst of the world, and having come from that which is outside of Orthodoxy and has already been completely captured by “evolutionary” spirituality and philosophy) has enabled him to be aware of something that the more “sheltered” Orthodox (clergy, monks, lifelong Orthodox) simply don’t see yet. How overjoyed I myself was to find this “shelteredness” when I became Orthodox, because I saw that in this “world-to-itself” I would be able to change completely my mental orientation (not to mention spiritual) and no longer think at all in terms of the reigning despotism of ideas (in which evolution has a key place). I did notice, however, that other converts didn’t seem to grasp this point, and some of them began to discuss how this or that modern current can be understood or accepted or criticized in terms of Orthodoxy—a false outlook, because there are two quite separate mental worlds involved, and the difference is rather greater than that between two totally unrelated languages....

We fully agree with Alexey that “evolution is one of the most dangerous concepts that faces the Orthodox Christian today”—perhaps it is the very key (intellectual) to the assault upon the Church, to the very “philosophy” (and there is such a thing!) of the coming Antichrist. If we understand you and Father E. aright, you regard it as merely an “idea” which one can take or leave, and which can involve one in endless modernist-fundamentalist discussions which are totally pointless (how many “hours” in the first “seven days”? etc.). We certainly agree on the pointlessness of such discussions, but now the issue is much deeper than that; “evolution” is a whole mind-set that is quite incompatible with Orthodoxy. But that is a treatise in itself. Alexey’s article, as I said, is much too brief, but perhaps it will have the good effect of inspiring a thorough treatment of the subject (*not* a “modernist-fundamentalist” fight, but also not what Fr. E. apparently wants to do, to stand so far above the issue that one can’t even discern that evolution

is a crucial question, and destructive of Orthodoxy not so much because of its theses as because of its intellectual-spiritual orientation).

Significantly, the same mail that brought your letter brought also *Concern*, with the article of Theodosius Dobzhansky (who just received a Doctorate honoris causa from St. Vladimir's Seminary) on "Evolution: God's Method of Creation." Well, here are the arguments of an "Orthodox evolutionist," and they are the same as all other evolutionary arguments, emotional faith with not one shred of genuine evidence to support it (although he presents material that *looks* very formidable and "scientific"). But more important: read between the lines and answer: does this man believe in God as a true Orthodox Christian believes in Him? He does not! He believes in Him as "modern" man believes; he is a deist. And very revealing is his conclusion: "One of the great thinkers of our age, Teilhard de Chardin, wrote the following: 'Is evolution a theory, a system, or a hypothesis? It is much more—it is a general postulate to which all theories, all hypotheses, all systems must henceforward bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true. Evolution is a light which illuminates all facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow—this is what evolution is.'"

This indeed is Teilhardism, and by "all theories and systems" he means in particular theology and spirituality, as being part of the highest evolutionary layer, the "noosphere," which is just now converging in the evolutionary apex called the "Omega Point" or "Super-Christ." I hate to appear "fundamentalist," but this mammoth structure rests on just a few little "fundamental" facts (or fabrications), which most people seem afraid to get near because they seem so "scientific," beginning with the transition of one species into another and so up the ladder.

To sum up: Whatever weaknesses Alexey's article on evolution may have, it is an attempt to answer a *real problem* which we cannot avoid: that ideological orientation and value-system which is taught in all public schools *as fact* and which poisons and stupefies Orthodox minds without ever attacking Orthodoxy *as such*. Alexey's response is sound, even if it is not (of course) perfect. We Orthodox are not afraid to be "narrow" on the question of ecumenism; why should we be afraid to be "narrow" on the question of evolution? The two issues, after all, are very closely bound up with each other.

*4. A Deep-Seated Primordial Force*

(To Alexey Young, April 5/18, 1973)

Just a note. We received Monday a rather shocking letter from Fr. N. expressing extreme displeasure with your “evolution” article. He apparently sent you a letter, too, a copy of which he said he was enclosing in his letter to us (but he didn’t).

After reading his letter, we read your article together once again—and neither of us find anything wrong with it, except that it is much too short and concise. After looking in vain for any other source of Fr. N.’s displeasure, we can only conclude that Fr. N. and Fr. E. apparently are just not aware of the whole issue of evolution, whether in its scientific side or in its religious-theological implications. Obviously your article has touched something very deep (frankly we are astonished that people so keen on ecclesiastical matters, ecumenism, etc., should seem never to have given much thought to such an important thing as evolution; apparently it is because it seems to be outside the Church sphere)....

We must be “wise as serpents and gentle as doves” in what we do and say now, and by no means must we allow ourselves to be dragged into an argument on “modernist-fundamentalist” lines. Maybe they are “modernists,” I don’t know; but we certainly are not fundamentalists. The truth lies much deeper than either of these merely rational positions, and it will not be easy to present it so that it will be properly understood, judging from Fr. N.’s first response. I don’t think either you or we should “argue” at all, but prepare for a more thorough presentation of the whole subject. Frankly, we want to really persuade them, and the way to do that is to go into the subject deeply, especially the spiritual implications.

What we must keep in mind and get across, I think, is not really evolution as a *heresy* or wrong idea, on the same level with other ideas, and therefore go out fighting with the ordinary weapons of polemics. Evolution is not *that* kind of idea—but rather a kind of deep-seated primordial force which seems to capture people quite apart from their conscious attitudes and reasoning. (There’s a good reason for that: it’s

been drilled into everyone from the cradle, and therefore is very hard to bring out and look at rationally.) It's a *rival thought-pattern* to Orthodoxy, not just another idea.

Your article, beyond any doubt, is going to make you "unpopular" in places. Do not let this discourage you, or force you into a "defensive" posture. Your article is probably going to do something very painful at first but ultimately positive: bring out into the open some attitudes which have long been hiding in the shadows.

5. *The Argument against Evolution Is Not Scientific  
but Theological*

(To Fr. N., Palm Sunday [April 9/22], 1973)

(By the way, in case I didn't make it clear in my last letter, the argument against the supposed "scientific" theory of evolution is not itself scientific, since "science" itself can neither prove nor disprove it, and for science it's only guesswork. The argument against it is theological: that it involves implications which are entirely unacceptable for Orthodoxy, and these implications can't be escaped, and every propounder of evolution uses them, the theists and spiritualists being worse than the atheists.)

6. *The Real Intellectual Problems of Today*

(To Alexey Young, June 29/July 12, 1973)

We received Fr. E.'s "Open Letter" today, together with your note. Yes, we found too that he completely missed the point, and all the very nice quotes from the Fathers on the different degrees of knowledge mean nothing when one stops to realize that you are not at all attacking scientific *knowledge*, but only pseudoscientific, pseudo-religious philosophy masquerading as science, and you are using scientific knowledge not to defend theology but only to destroy the self-contradictory theories of the pseudoscientists. Are these points really so difficult to understand or impossible to defend?

Unless we are crazy, Fr. E. has gone off somewhere in the clouds and is not at all in contact with what is going on in the world today,

intellectually—which is very much of concern to Orthodox Christians who live in this world. Fr. E., in trying to stand so far “above” the whole question, does *not* give the impression that he speaks from the heights of the third degree of knowledge (which seems to be what he is trying to hint at?), but rather uses this exalted knowledge for rather rationalistic purposes. We are very disappointed to see such narrowness. And the reply of the mother to the Orthodox “high school youth” (this apparently sums up his “answer” to the whole problem of evolution!)—how naive and spineless!\* Can Fr. E. really be so unaware of the anti-Christian purposes of such “scientific” education? His reply is an open invitation to the youth to accept whatever the school teaches him—because we poor Orthodox Christians, alas, having such high knowledge, can’t “know any better.” I’ll tell you frankly (but don’t quote me!)—this isn’t theology, it’s hogwash. There’s a real and pressing problem here, and you’ve attacked it honestly, freshly, and well (considering the short space you had); if there are deficiencies or mistakes in what you’ve said, they can be talked about in a friendly manner. But alas, his only aim is to discredit you and put you in your place....

Any reply you make to Fr. E. should be brief and to the point. He has obviously taken unfair advantage of you in order thoroughly to discredit you, based on the reputation of the monastery as against you, a “nobody.” He is riding on a current of intellectual fashion, and this will pass, and it will not be for the good of the monastery that it has allowed itself to do this and not face the *real* intellectual problems of the day....

It will not be easy to get the *point* of your longer study on evolution across to people who think like Fr. E., but with God’s help it can be done. There is something deep and important here—a rather “academic” approach to theology that does not come to grips with the *anti*-theology of our day.

---

\* Fr. E. had written that, if an Orthodox youth comes home from school telling his mother that he learned that man evolved from a lower species, the mother’s best reply would be, “My boy, God could have created us by any manner He wished, and no one will ever be able to explain or comprehend His ways. All we can do is thank Him for creating us.”—ED.



7. *Such "Theology" We Do Not Need*

(To Alexey Young, July 4/17, 1973)

Just a note. Fr. E.'s letter has sunk in a little deeper, and it makes us even more disturbed than at first. This is *not* an answer to *anything*, and is a disservice to English-speaking Orthodox Christians. Such "theology" we do not need. We thought of writing a note to him ourselves, but there is no point, since he already has read our letters to Fr. N. defending you and speaking of the need for all of us to get rid of our "American modern" intellectual baggage re: evolution, etc.

Without entering into a public debate with him, we should by all means try to present sound Orthodox views on those points where he is obviously off the beam. Your "evolution" booklet will be very important from this point of view, and we are writing out a number of points which we hope to see treated or mentioned there, and also some suggestions on how to avoid being placed into certain stereotyped categories, by which people can be persuaded not even to listen to what you say. Do you have a general outline of the article yet?

We've written Dr. Kalomiros a letter, and hope to receive confirmation of our suspicion that he is quite wrongly used as virtually a proponent of evolution.

8. *A Product of the "Spirit of the Times"*

(To Fr. N., August 19/September 1, 1973)

Thank you for your new letter. On "evolution": what can we say in reply? We will tell you just what we think: the "Exetastes"\* article by no means is an "objective Orthodox presentation on evolution"—it is rather a simple-minded "liberal" presentation, in no way different from what any Protestant or Catholic magazine might publish. The article does not even raise the most serious questions which

---

\* "Exetastes" (Greek for "Examiner") was the column title printed above the article "Evolution: A Heresy?" in the newspaper *Orthodox Observer* (Aug. 8, 1973), mentioned above, p. 559.—ED.

“evolution” poses, much less answer them. It is an absolutely typical product of the “spirit of the times.”

Apparently you think rather differently. But Father, let there be peace among us! “Evolution” is an extremely complicated question, all aspects of it considered, and not one of us is in a position to know “all about it” and give a definitive judgment on all its aspects. Calling it a “heresy,” of course, is a great simplification, for it is much more complex than that, and it is evident that different people have quite different things in mind when they hear the word “evolution,” which complicates matters even more. Alexey’s article was intended not for theologians but for simple people, and therefore its tone and presentation are admittedly somewhat simplistic and sharp. There are disadvantages to this, the first of which is that it obviously didn’t say anything to *you* and apparently others of a similar outlook. Obviously, for such people a much more thorough presentation should be made, and I think this would make it much easier for you to see how inadequate the “Exetastes” article is, as we think. If you had read the grotesque, satanic “theology” of Teilhard de Chardin, you would certainly get a funny feeling from an article in which he is held up as an example of a reasonable approach to this question.

### *9. Looking Forward with an Open Mind*

(To Alexey Young, September 8/21, 1973)

Yesterday we finally received a reply from Alexander Kalomiros to our letter inquiring as to his views on evolution—and he promises soon to send a detailed reply in English, with quotes from the Holy Fathers. We look forward to this with open mind and some expectation!

### *10. Quibbling over Words*

(To Alexey Young, Week of November 6/19, 1973)

Concerning evolution: Fr. E. is quibbling over words, because he simply does not understand the whole question. He obviously misun-

derstands both St. Nectarios (who certainly is not trying to make a “scientific” statement, but is only, quite properly, ridiculing the pseudoscientists who find man’s origins in the ape-kingdom)\* and St. Basil (who is scientifically *correct* in his statement on pines and oaks, and he certainly did not intend to say that the *seed* of one produces the other, since the whole *Hexaemeron* emphasizes that each kind of creature reproduces *only according to its kind*).\*\* But it is futile to make an answer to these points: rather, the whole discussion must be placed in a different, more serious context. Hopefully, this will be what your future article on evolution will do (whenever God wills!).

### 11. *The Holy Fathers as the Answer to Medieval Scholasticism*

(To Alexey Young, January 9/22, 1974)

Interestingly, just before receiving your letter I was reading and thinking about Khomiakov’s close friend Kireyevsky, who thought very similarly and is even better because of his close connection with Optina and the Holy Fathers.... Kireyevsky’s thoughts on the difference between the Catholic-Western mentality and Orthodoxy might well serve as an article or pamphlet also, which would be very instructive especially for converts today. The answer to Medieval scholasticism, he says, is the great Orthodox Fathers who lived at the same time—namely, St. Symeon the New Theologian, St. Gregory the Sinaite, St. Gregory Palamas.

And speaking of this contrast, my research into the Fathers concerning evolution has turned up something remarkable—the Catholic and Orthodox doctrines of Adam and creation are significantly different, and “evolution” can be fitted rather nicely precisely into the Catholic doctrine, but not at all into the Orthodox! This point can be made pretty well by comparing several passages of the *Summa Theologica* of Thomas Aquinas (I always wondered why I kept that book!) with the passage from St. Symeon which you have, and another from St. Gregory the Sinaite. The whole discussion of “evolution,” if it is

---

\* See pp. 495, 497 above and pp. 797–99 below.—ED.

\*\* See pp. 424–27 above.—ED.

presented just right, can be very important for giving our genuine Orthodox outlook on contemporary science and “wisdom.”

I’ve also found commentaries on Genesis by St. Ephraim the Syrian and St. John Chrysostom, and some more isolated statements in other Fathers. There can be no doubt at all how the Fathers understood Genesis—quite “literally”! I was at first a little uncertain about a quote from St. Gregory the Theologian, showing that he regarded the tree of the knowledge of good and evil as a symbol; and some Fathers, such as St. Gregory of Nyssa, are full of such symbols, leading a scholar like Florovsky to ask: does he understand the account of creation as entirely symbolic or not? And then, to resolve my uncertainty, leafing through a French translation we have of St. Gregory Palamas, I found that, in opposing those who say that the Uncreated Light of Mount Tabor is only a “symbol,” he cites the very passage from St. Gregory the Theologian about the tree of knowledge, and says that *of course* he also accepted it as having an existence of its own! All of these quotes put together should do much to give our Orthodox people the sound Orthodox approach to Genesis and creation, which I think many are now afraid of, due to the prestige of “science.”

### 12. *The Philosophy of the Age*

(To Alexey Young, January 24/February 6, 1974)

Here are some more notes on evolution, specifically your chapters which we are returning herewith....

Presumably your conclusion at the end of this chapter [on the popular science textbook *Early Man* by F. Clark Howell] will *not* be: “Evolution is proved false and special creation true,” but rather: evolution, presented popularly as “fact” and “truth,” has no coercive scientific evidence whatever to support it. All the supposed “proofs” of evolution can equally be used to “prove” another theory, depending on your presuppositions. Here you should set down in summary form all the major “proofs” of evolution (preferably quoting some major evolution textbook, or perhaps *Encyclopedia Britannica*—the eleventh edition lists eight evidences), showing that they presuppose a whole *philosophy*

of nature which is not at all derived from “proofs” but from the intellectual climate of the age. (See, for example, the enclosed booklet,\* p. 67.) Here you should also have some quotes from evolutionists themselves showing how they realize that there is no actual coercive *proof* of evolution; but that it “makes more sense,” or “the alternative is unthinkable”—i.e., God’s creation; or other similar quotes. And when you thus quote evolutionists “against themselves,” as it were, you should be careful not to “pounce” on them and say “Aha, they disprove themselves”—but rather continue in a serene tone, *not* taking maximum advantage of their admissions—because you are going to let all their self-incriminating evidence speak for itself, until it piles up and at the end becomes absolutely self-evident, and then your own summation of this evidence will be very powerful!

And then, *here* is where you should give the intellectual “context” of evolution.... It is too much for most readers to understand the whole movement of Humanism, etc.; besides which, they are still not disposed to think you are giving them the real story about it. It would be good to quote an authoritative, objective source at this point. So: enclosed find five pages of quotes from a good textbook on modern “intellectual history.”\*\* The author is himself “modern” and believes in evolution, and so does not have your “prejudices”; yet he is quite precise and aware on the whole. These excerpts show accurately the change from the Newtonian mechanistic universe\*\*\* to the evolutionary universe of our times. Some quotes like these, perhaps with a few comments in between, may be all you need to establish the “intellectual climate” in which evolution developed.

*Now* you are ready to enter the area of philosophy and theology: for the lack of strict *scientific proof* of evolution means that these questions basically are *not scientific*, but come from faith. At the same time you disengage yourself from the dead-end of trying to “disprove” evo-

---

\* Kenneth N. Taylor, comp. and ed., *Evolution and the High School Student* (1972).—ED.

\*\* John Herman Randall, Jr., *The Making of the Modern Mind: A Survey of the Intellectual Background of the Present Age* (1926).—ED.

\*\*\* On Isaac Newton and the Newtonian universe, see pp. 534–36, 534n, 539, 584 above.—ED.

lution: by science it can be neither proved nor disproved; it is a question of a different order than science.

I don't know what or how much you planned to write on "Orthodox evolutionists" and Teilhard, but I think it might be possible to combine them in a single chapter called "Christian evolutionism." (Rather in the same way that, in our "charismatic" article, we combined testimony from Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox charismatics—both because the testimony of all groups reinforce each other, and because there is really no difference between them; so also, "Orthodox evolutionism" is exactly the same as "Catholic evolutionism.") This also would give more punch to the section which I am compiling to follow the Patristic quotes, and which might be called, effectively I hope: "Latin Scholasticism: The Theological Foundation of 'Christian Evolutionism.'"

In such a chapter on "Christian evolutionism," a basic thing to show will be that adding "God" to evolution does not at all change its basic philosophical-theological outlook and intent. God becomes a *deus ex machina* for saving evolution when the absurdity of believing in it without God, as a pure chance process, becomes too evident. Thus, quoting Dobzhansky and others, you can show how they believe in the same *naturalistic* universe, without God's interference, as do the atheistic evolutionists: the denial of God's Providence, etc.

As the climax to this section: Teilhard de Chardin as extremely symptomatic of the "spirit of the age"—a "religious" thinker who has come into fashion, favored even by Julian Huxley and the Soviet Union! (I'll send some material from Russia on Teilhard.) You might look at Lecomte du Noüy also, since the Greek Archdiocese article mentions him together with Teilhard de Chardin....

An important part of this "Christian evolutionism" chapter: quote Teilhard de Chardin (the passage quoted by Dobzhansky at the end of his article) on evolution as absolutely "universal"—by this time the mere quoting of this passage will already show the reader how much such a view is dependent on simply absorbing the "spirit of the times." This quote shows the blind faith of some "religious" figures in the latest current of scientific faith; and it offers an exact parallel to the blind faith of Alexander Pope in a *different* scientific faith: his adoration of

Newton and his mechanical-deist universe of perfect order, which was mocked a century later by Voltaire in *Candide*, a satire on the “best of all possible worlds” (the phrase is Leibniz’s, but it sums up the faith of the whole seventeenth- to early eighteenth-century philosophical “establishment”). Pope’s words ... will perhaps make your readers begin to see that one should not place so much faith in *any* scientific philosophy-faith.

Alexander Pope, “Essay on Man”:

All are but parts of one stupendous whole,  
Whose body Nature is, and God the soul ...  
All Nature is but Art, unknown to thee;  
All chance, direction, which thou canst not see;  
All discord, harmony not understood;  
All partial evil, universal good:  
And, spite of pride, in erring reason’s spite,  
One truth is clear, whatever is, is right.

And in another place in Pope’s works:

Nature and Nature’s laws lay hid in night:  
God said, *Let Newton be!* and all was Light.

Voltaire mocked this philosophy because it had become *out of date*; and thus your reader is warned, the suggestion is made: maybe evolution too is such a passing faith that will become out of date one day, or is already becoming so! And this inevitably happens if Christian philosophy accepts the philosophy of the “spirit of the age,” which comes and goes. In general it will be a good idea to contrast the Newtonian universe with the evolutionary: this contrast will give the reader probably all the intellectual “context” of evolution he needs, and in a very painless way, without forcing him to understand the whole history of modern thought. Many people simply aren’t aware that there has ever been a “science” that wasn’t “evolutionary,” and the contrast between Newton and evolution shows how one scientific theory gives way to the next. Thus you will undermine the scientific “faith” of your readers! (In our theological section, we will also be quoting St. Basil the

Great and Fr. Michael Pomazansky on this subject.)... The climax of the whole article will then be in presenting the Orthodox theology of creation and of Adam, which is totally independent of all scientific fashions.

For Orthodoxy DOES NOT FOLLOW THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE AGE, because it has its own philosophy based on revelation. The Holy Fathers have a complete theology of the origin of man and creation which is not bound up with any intellectual fashion that passes away.\* This doctrine is not modified with every passing philosophy, is not bound up either with the static universe of perfect harmony of Newton (which departed from Orthodoxy by making the universe purely *naturalistic*—and evolution is actually just the present philosophy of the *naturalized* universe divorced from God and His action), or with the developing universe of Teilhard de Chardin and other fashionable thinkers today. Our philosophy is NOT OF THIS WORLD, and it is THE ANSWER to the vain speculations of modern man!

Above all, the whole study should be as simple and as much to the point and as “objective” as possible. If one accepts the principle of objectivity, and believes in the Holy Fathers—then the whole study, even in a very low key, should gradually build itself up to a devastating and convincing conclusion.

By the way, in your “scientific” chapters I hope you have a good account of the “carbon dating system” and whatever “evidence” there is for “millions of years”; also, you must be prepared for answers in several points of the “history of mankind”—how do you explain Neanderthal Man, for example?...\*\*

We’ve received Fr. N.’s newest comments on evolution, where he tries to identify anti-evolutionism with the sectarian fringe. Why such pointless comments? One senses that he somehow feels *unsafe* on evolution, is somehow *threatened* by anti-evolutionism. Actually, he only

---

\* See above (p. 467n), where St. Gregory Palamas contrasts secular wisdom, which is always subject to refutation, with the unconquerable truth of Divine revelation.—ED.

\*\* On Neanderthal Man, see pp. 385, 385n, 469–70, 470n, 527 above and p. 837 below.—ED.



confuses more those people who are already uncertain enough what to believe about evolution.

And then yesterday we received from the “Zion Orthodox Hermitage” a copy of the letter to Fr. N. which you had already showed us, together with an article which we hadn’t seen, called “The Creation Narrative.” Seeing the quote from St. Hippolytus on page 1, we looked forward to some Patristic documentation. But alas, the author doesn’t come through with this, and he turns out to be quite vague on the whole subject himself! In the next to last paragraph of p. 2 he quite loses himself in wild “speculations” which are not only unscriptural (I’ve never heard of *anyone* who threw *dinosaurs* in before the Six Days of Creation) but are also doctrinally unsound (the suggestion that there could have been evil in the visible creation before Adam’s transgression).<sup>\*</sup> In a word, the author is quite naive, and in his fear that “science might be right” about the “millions of years” he already has quite a lot in common with many present-day evolutionists.

### 13. *At Last the Real Battle Begins*

(To Alexey Young, February 25/March 10, Second Sunday  
of Great Lent, 1974)

We received yesterday the long-awaited epistle of Dr. Kalomiros on “evolution”—forty pages long! I must confess that it is shocking beyond our expectations—giving the “evolutionary” teaching quite unadorned and unqualified, complete with the “evolved beast Adam” and “he who denies evolution denies the Sacred Scriptures.” In a way, however, we are rather glad of this—because now *for the first time* we have found a reputable Orthodox “evolutionist” who is willing to be quite frank about matters which others, I believe, are afraid to speak up about for fear of offending “weak consciences” which are under “Western influences.”

I have written him a short letter saying I wish to make a long and detailed reply to him and to start a “dialogue” with him on this subject.

---

<sup>\*</sup> These ideas are actually derived from the “Gap” theory, which posits that there were billions of years of earth history before the Six Days. See p. 664, 664n below.—ED.

I believe that if we can answer him point by point, and raise the points he doesn't mention, we can make the forthcoming publication a very powerful one.

I must confess to being rather disappointed in the *tone* of his letter, which is somewhat in the "elevated" tone of Fr. E., with repeated comments about "Western rationalists," etc. However, he ends very nicely and begs us to tell him where he is wrong—*so we must do this*. Frankly, I would like to "convert" him completely. But God only knows what is possible, and how much his mind is still open. The most encouraging thing is that he, like us, regards the matter as *extremely important*, as opposed to those who think it's unimportant and that everyone can believe as he wishes. With Dr. Kalomiros at last the real battle begins.

You can read the letter on your next visit (I'm beginning now on my reply to it), but in general this is my feeling about it (Fr. Herman hasn't read it yet):

1. Patristically it is very weak. Very few Fathers are quoted, and the *only* really "evolutionary" quote is a passage from St. Gregory of Nyssa—a passage which I noted a few weeks ago, by the way, and thought at the time: "I'd better use this and explain it, because one who already *believes* in evolution will be sure to think it 'proves evolution.'" It does not, of course—it is merely a general statement of the orderly progression of God's creation from the lowest to the highest, with the most perfect creature, man, coming last. Nothing is said about man or any creature "evolving," and in another part of the same book (*On the Making of Man*) St. Gregory says explicitly that Adam was *ungenerated*, but was created directly by Christ.

2. There is a long "theological" discourse on man's nature, which is very partial and one-sided, but will require a solid answer with quotes from Holy Fathers—for evolution above all involves a false *anthropology*, doctrine of man.

3. It is quite obvious that Kalomiros has gone to the Fathers *already knowing* that evolution is a "fact." He obviously has *not* given deep thought to examining the presuppositions of the "fact" of evolution, so we will have to challenge him to start thinking and *not* bring to the Holy Fathers his preconceptions based on modern Western "wisdom."

4. He is *very* imprecise on the very meaning of the word “evolution”—he thinks the development from embryo to mature man is “evolution,” and that the existence of different races of men is due to “evolution.” Very naive.

5. The man is *not* a theologian, but reads the Fathers by hit and miss.

*14. Love for the Holy Fathers*

(To Dr. Alexander Kalomiros,

February 25/March 10, Second Sunday of Great Lent, 1974)

We have received your letter concerning “evolution,” for which we thank you very much. I have read it, trying, as you said, to remove all Western conceptions from my mind. I hope, if God gives me the strength, to study your points carefully and write you a very long and detailed reply before too long, but for the present I wish to say only a few things.

I myself have been searching the Holy Fathers for some time seeking to find out their teaching on the questions which are raised by “evolution.” I have been compiling a great many passages from their writings, including most of the passages which you quote in your letter. I have tried very hard not to project into these passages any “preconceived” opinions of my own, but I must acknowledge that my conclusions regarding the teaching of the Holy Fathers are quite different from yours. I believe that I can show you that some of your interpretations of the Holy Fathers are incomplete—that is, that you have presented only a part of their teaching and have overlooked other parts that are quite essential to the question. I would also like to present to you Patristic texts on questions which you do not raise in your letter, but which I believe are also quite essential for understanding the questions raised by evolution.

I note also in your letter that your use of the term “evolution” is somewhat imprecise, and I would like to discuss this question also in some detail.

I agree with you that this subject is vital and extremely important. We have found very few people who are willing or able to think clearly on this subject, with the result that there is much confusion in the

minds of Orthodox faithful concerning it. We are therefore very grateful to you for writing your views so clearly and outspokenly.

Like you, we also do not want to have merely “our own opinion” on this subject, but only wish to accept the teaching of the Holy Fathers. So far we have not found any “evolutionist” or “anti-evolutionist” who sets forth the real Orthodox teaching on this subject, and that is why we ourselves have been doing research on it. The Protestant fundamentalist objections to evolution are mostly superficial and rationalistic (as you yourself have noted), being based on an interpretation of the book of Genesis that comes from “common sense,” and not from the Holy Fathers.

We are not theologians (and I will tell you frankly that we distrust people who call themselves “theologians,” for almost all of them seem to us to be just academic rationalists) but we dearly *love* the Holy Fathers and wish to live by their teaching, and we sense that you do also. May it be that by this love, with the help of God and by the prayers of these Holy Fathers, we may now begin a “dialogue” with you that will bring us all to the true Patristic teaching and be of help also to others.

Everything that I write will be read and criticized by my co-laborer Fr. Herman, to whom I am in obedience, and we will try also to obtain the opinions of some of our Russian theologians whom we respect.

### *15. The Power of This World and Its Fashionable Ideas*

(To Alexey Young, March 2/15, 1974)

I have almost finished my “reply” to Dr. Kalomiros, and I think God has helped me to put all the Patristic material (or almost all) I have been collecting into a coherent presentation, and much more effectively than if I had gone ahead with the “sober and objective” presentation I had planned on. One of the Egyptian Elders once said to St. John Cassian (roughly!): “I’m glad you expressed this question so stupidly, because now I can clearly set forth the *true* doctrine.” Kalomiros has expressed “stupid evolutionism” so well (which others are afraid to do openly), that the reply to him almost writes itself! Although I know the Fathers only poorly, still their doctrine touching on

“evolution” is so clear once one puts it all together, that I am simply amazed at the power “evolution” has over even educated Orthodox minds. Such is the power of this world and its fashionable ideas. I will send you a copy of my letter and Kalomiros’ letter also when I finish typing it—it is almost *twice as long* as Kalomiros’ letter to us and will probably be forty printed pages!

Of course, now that I’ve done this I don’t quite know what relation this letter has to our projected book—which is absolutely necessary to get out! It may be that the book might be most effective precisely in this letter form, only somewhat revised and divided up into chapters, and with all your scientific and philosophical material entered at the appropriate places. (You will notice that I mention this material at various points of the letter without going into it, as the letter is almost entirely Patristic.) Anyway, see what you think once you read the letter, and we will also see what Kalomiros replies....

Of course, many people will be upset that the evolution question is “raised” again and not kept quiet—but we agree with Kalomiros that it *should* be raised and the true Patristic teaching set forth. There is something very unsound about wishing to keep “quiet” about a question which remains so confused in most Orthodox minds....

Pray for us. Today I hope to finish the last and most important section of the letter to Kalomiros, concerning the nature of man—on which Kalomiros has expressed something perilously close to Augustinianism, based on a very wrong interpretation of the words of St. Seraphim of Sarov!

### 16. *Unknowingly Harboring “Modern Ideas”*

(To Alexey Young, March 9/22, 1974)

The objective scientific approach is very necessary—not enough to get bogged down in “scientific proofs,” but just enough to show that the scientific proofs cancel each other out, as it were, leaving the question of evolution in its real sphere of philosophy and theology.... The weakness of evolution as science and philosophy will only serve to emphasize the importance of the Patristic view, which is so definite and really powerful....

By the way, I begin to see that I myself have been harboring some “modern ideas” on the Six Days of Creation. It’s true that this is not the most important question involved with evolution, but it’s not really a matter of indifference either; there is a profound Patristic teaching in this, as I indicate in my letter to Kalomiros. But it would be good to have further Patristic testimony on this—so please say if you know of any. We will continue to collect Patristic material for the final version of the book.

### 17. *Genuine Science*

(To Alexey Young, St. Thomas Tuesday, April 10/23, 1974)

For my own background I checked out two books from the Redding library: Raymond Dart’s *Adventures with the Missing Link*, which looks to be too popular to be of much use; and [Louis] Leakey’s *Adam’s Ancestors*, to which I find myself, after a few chapters, rather sympathetic, inasmuch as it seems to be rather careful and precise scientifically (of course, *if* one discounts the attempt to fit all the evidence into an “evolutionary” framework, which does indeed seem to be a philosophical intrusion)....

I’ve come across several references to the “fluorine dating system,” but no thorough discussion of it—Leakey mentions it as being in its infancy in the 1940s. It has to do apparently with the rate of absorption of fluorine, which seems to be vastly variant depending on moisture, etc. It would be good for us to give a kind of “philosophy” of the dating systems—i.e., showing that we do not reject them outright, but that their significance is relative and limited, somewhat helpful in the genuine study of paleontology (which we should also emphasize is a legitimate science), but not any absolute answer to anything. In general, we should communicate a very “friendly feeling” toward genuine science.

### 18. *Clearing Up Confusion*

(To Alexey Young, August 2/15, 1974)

I will be working on the final, Patristic section this fall, and God willing the whole study will be complete by the time Kalomiros sends

his promised reply, which should give us all the “Patristic arguments” of the supporters of evolution, making our study as complete as possible. I think the impact of this study will be considerable. I do not think most conscious Orthodox Christians are terribly prejudiced in favor of evolution; but they are somewhat confused as to what or how much to believe of what “science says.” Our study is supposed to give the “complete” picture, which hopefully will clarify many minds. It’s certainly clarified my own mind, since previously I hadn’t thought in detail on many aspects of the question.

### 19. *The Genealogy of Christ*

(To Alexey Young, September 22/October 5, 1974)

We received the two sections on Evolution. “Christian Evolution” I read over hastily, and it looks good—probably we can leave any final revisions until the whole article is ready for final form. The “scientific” part, however, Fr. Herman and I read together and found problems. Basically, everything we want to say is there, and the tone is good (it’s even a little *too* understated at times!); but the meaning doesn’t come through simple and clear, there being so many side questions—or rather, the side questions are not yet welded into the whole so as to leave one single, convincing impression: that evolution is philosophy, and science has nothing to do with it—with a strong hint (which comes from just presenting the evidence itself) that the scientific evidence if anything is *against* evolution. Therefore, I will try to rethink and re-outline and rearrange the material and see if the meaning can be made somehow more transparent.

As for the final Patristic section: I am still compiling citations and making notes, hoping to get as broad an attack as possible on the question. I seem to recall that in Fr. P.’s tape he mentions the fact that the Savior’s genealogy back to Adam might contain some “symbolical” names?—i.e., that there might be whole gaps of hundreds or thousands of years? That’s an important point. There is no doubt that the Holy Fathers regarded these names precisely as a list of *fathers*, but since no one ever doubted this before they don’t have many explicit

statements on the subject. Incidentally, the Fathers were very concerned to reconcile the genealogy in Luke with that of Matthew, and the answer of St. Gregory the Theologian\* and other Fathers is that the few differences in the two stem from the practice of the younger brother taking the older brother's wife to raise up offspring for him, if he was childless—and one genealogy calls the father the one who was the real father, and the other takes the one for whom he was a father, so to speak.\*\* You might look in the Scriptural index of any Fathers you have and see if anyone comments on Luke 3:23ff.\*\*\*

---

\* Fr. Seraphim is referring here to St. Gregory the Theologian, *Dogmatic Poem 8: The Genealogy of Christ*, rendered in prose form and presented as a homily in *The Works of Our Father Among the Saints Gregory the Theologian* (in Russian), vol. 2, pp. 298–300. The original Greek is found in PG 37.480A–487A.—ED.

\*\* The first extant source of this explanation is found in Julius Africanus (ca. 160–ca. 240), *Epistle to Aristides* 1–3. Besides St. Gregory the Theologian, other Holy Fathers who gave the same explanation include Blessed Augustine (*The Harmony of the Gospels* 2.3), St. Ambrose of Milan (*Exposition of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke* 3.15; *On the Harmony of Matthew and Luke in the Genealogy of Christ*), St. John Damascene (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.14), and Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria (*Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke* 3.23–28).—ED.

\*\*\* In his notes, Fr. Seraphim translated a passage by the eleventh-century Biblical commentator Blessed Theophylact concerning why St. Luke the Evangelist carried the genealogy of Christ all the way back to Adam: “The nativity of the Lord, as being without seed, encountered mistrust. Therefore the Evangelist, desiring to show that at another time also a man was produced without seed, ascends from the lower (descendants) up to Adam and God. As it were he speaks thus: If you do not believe that the second Adam [Christ] was born without seed, then I beg you to turn in mind to the first Adam, and you will find that he was created by God without seed, and after this you will not be unbelieving” (quoted in the *The Gospel of Luke* by Bishop Michael [in Russian, 1899], p. 308; alternate English translation in Blessed Theophylact, *The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*, trans. Fr. Christopher Stade [1997], p. 46).

After Fr. Seraphim's repose, an English translation of St. Ambrose's commentary on the Gospel of St. Luke was published; it contains an extensive discussion of the genealogy of Christ back to Adam (St. Ambrose of Milan, *Exposition of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*, trans. Theodosia Tomkinson [1998], pp. 81–111).—ED.



20. *The Larger Idea of Naturalism*

(To Alexey Young, February 14/27, 1976)

I myself would say ... that our basic *framework* of [making references to] popular and high school texts [on evolution] is the right one—for that is how it is taught and understood and where the evolutionary philosophy comes through loud and clear. But it would be good to strengthen our position with more reference to “sophisticated” scientific sources—to show we are aware that scientists don’t believe everything they give the high school student, and even realize that much there comes from “faith”—*but still have the basic evolutionary faith* that the universe “explains itself” and can be understood in “natural” terms. I don’t recall if we have made it clear anywhere yet that our argument is only secondarily against the particular theory of evolution, and primarily against the larger idea of *naturalism*—that the universe explains itself.

21. *Scientists Who Question Evolution*

(To Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, February 22/March 6, 1976)

We received your new letter on evolution....

Now I do not know if it is possible to continue this discussion or not. You have placed me in a “category”: I am a “fundamentalist,” a “literalist,” I am “against science” and under “Western influence.” I am afraid that anything I may now say, you will dismiss as of no value. If so, there is no point in my even replying to your letter; your mind is already made up about me and you will not listen to whatever I may say. *I hope that this is not so*, because you are the first Orthodox evolutionist I have found who is willing to discuss this question at all, and I think both of us could gain greatly by continuing this discussion. But I will have to tell you clearly that, despite your impression, I am *not* a fundamentalist, nor am I “against science”; quite the contrary.

But you are placing an impossible limitation to this discussion when you say: “I would discuss evolution with you from the scientific point of view only if you had some diploma of one of the biological or

geological branches of natural science." Since you wish it to be so, I of course can say nothing. But let me quote one of your scientific statements: "The stages of the embryo in the uterus are exactly the stages of life's evolution upon earth. This is so exact that even the gills of our ancient ancestors, the fishes, exist in the foetus of even the most perfected animals of the solid earth, the mammals." And now let me quote two statements made in scientific journals and textbooks by scientists possessing advanced degrees in their specialties:

1. "Haeckel's recapitulation theory (which is exactly what you have described to me as an unquestioned scientific fact) has been demonstrated to be wrong by numerous subsequent scholars." (Walter J. Boch, biologist of Columbia University, New York, in the article "Evolution by Orderly Law," in *Science*, vol. 164, May 4, 1969, p. 684.)

2. "The type of analogical thinking that leads to theories that development is based on the recapitulation of ancestral stages or the like no longer seems at all convincing or even very interesting to biologists." (Prof. C. H. Waddington, University of Edinburgh, in *Principles of Embryology*, 1965, p. 10.)

I do not bring these examples in order to debate this theory with you; I do so only in order to show you that something which you accept as undisputed scientific fact is not only disputed but even denied by reputable scientists, many of whom are themselves evolutionists!\* The same is true of some other "scientific facts" which you cite, and which you refuse to allow me to discuss with you.

Despite your accusation, *I am not "against science."* I do not have an advanced degree in science, but I have taken college courses in zoology and done considerable reading in scientific sources on the theory and facts of evolution. I have read the Life book on Evolution\*\* and found it very disappointing, because I hoped to find in it *demonstrations of facts* (because I am sincerely interested to know whether evolution is *true* or not!), and instead I found only diagrams and pictures and descriptions which are *not* convincing to anyone with an open mind, but

---

\* For more recent quotations by evolutionists on Haeckel's now-falsified theory of embryonic development, see p. 521n above.—ED.

\*\* Ruth Moore, *Evolution* (Life Nature Library, 1962).—ED.

only to someone who *already believes* in evolution *on other grounds*. Your mind is evidently closed on this subject, and you seem to be unaware of the great mass of *scientific literature* in recent years which is highly critical of the evolutionary theory, which talks about relegating it to poetry and metaphors instead of scientific theory (Prof. Constance, professor of botany at the University of California, Berkeley),\* or even deny its validity altogether. If you wish (but it is quite pointless!), I could indeed compile a list of *hundreds* (if not *thousands*) of reputable scientists who now either disbelieve in evolution entirely or state that it is highly questionable as a scientific theory. Many of them state quite openly that a “literal” creation in six twenty-four-hour days is *one possible interpretation of the scientific facts which we now have*. (Although you will recall that I wrote in my first letter that this question is not one of the first importance, in my opinion.) There is also now much *scientific* evidence that the world is no older than 8,000 to 10,000 years. (I do not say that this is “scientifically proved”—I say only what *scientists themselves* now say—that there are some undisputed scientific facts which make sense only if the world is very young.) Are you going to tell me that I am crazy or “against science” when I can quote doctors of *geological and biological sciences* (many of whom are not “fundamentalists”) who say things like this? If so, then there is no point discussing the issue further, because that would mean that *you yourself* are against science, are against an impartial and objective examination of scientific facts. I pray that this is not so...

I do not wish to discuss in detail with you any of the scientific evidence for or against evolution—there are others who can do this much better than I. I only ask, to begin with, that you allow me to send you one book, written by a scientific specialist (in geology, I believe), who has given his views at lectures to geological societies here in America, that contains, in a rather balanced discussion, criticisms of the many weak points of the evolutionary theory. I do not agree with everything written there (it is on a somewhat popular, college-age level), but it does give us a beginning for possible further discussion. Religion is not

---

\* Lincoln Constance, “Systematic Botany—An Unending Synthesis,” *Taxon*, vol. 13, no. 8 (Nov. 1964), pp. 262–63.—ED.

mentioned in this book, which discusses only scientific evidence. If you are willing to read this book, or at least some chapters of it which interest you, with a reasonably open “scientific” mind—then it will be possible to continue our discussion.

*22. Avoiding One-Sidedness*

(To Alexey Young, March 17/30, 1976)

I haven’t gone back to Kalomiros’ letter, and probably won’t attempt a reply before summer.\* The letter, although I find its tone distasteful, is helpful, because it shows the reaction that our “evolution book” would have had in some quarters if it hadn’t first been tested by this correspondence. This will help us to avoid “one-sidedness.” I have the impression Kalomiros demonstrates quite a bit of rationalism himself; he writes not as from within a tradition himself, but as one who is *striving* to get into the tradition. Our uninterrupted Russian tradition, for all its real and supposed Westernisms, has a strength and resiliency which the “rediscoverers of tradition” do not have. May God help us to express these things in a way that can be accepted and assimilated today.

*23. Three Axioms*

(To Fr. I., July 3/16, 1977)

About “evolution”—we were glad to have your comments. If you really want to see them so much, and Dr. Kalomiros has already distributed his letters, we could send you copies, after we’ve made our reply to his second letter. But really, this correspondence has not been very fruitful at all. At first we were encouraged by the fact that he was willing to discuss the matter at all (which few Orthodox seem to want to do), and we responded to him in a tone that we thought was roughly the same as his own, not fearing to be corrected on any mistakes we might make, but hoping that—although starting almost poles apart—we might in the end “work out” this question in friendly de-

---

\* I.e., a detailed reply in addition to the comparatively brief reply he had recently sent.—ED.

bate and come rather close together by the end of it. But we see now that our reply seems only to have offended him (perhaps most of all he disliked our strong implication that he is probably just as much under “Western influence” as the rest of us poor mortals!), and his second letter offers almost no chance for an extension of the debate. Our reply will probably be short (whenever we get a chance even for that!) and will have to begin by pointing out some of the contradictions he has fallen into himself, with little hope of even getting him interested in some of the more basic questions which (as I recall) haven’t even been mentioned yet by either of us.

But for now (leaping at the chance to chew this question a little more!) I will only give you a few of my own observations, not on “evolution” itself, but on the *approach* to it, which seems so difficult but is so essential.

First of all, we were very disappointed in all the three B—— letters on the subject which we have seen. There is very little there that we would *disagree* with—save for the flippant tone in some places—but they never really get to the question of evolution at all, and they are certainly not the Orthodox answer or approach to the question which Fr. E. had promised to give. In fact, these letters reveal a distinct attempt *not* to approach the question at all, but rather to stay above it, with a rather superior air. Symptomatic is Fr. E.’s confession (either there or elsewhere) that he has never read Teilhard de Chardin and doesn’t need to, as also his evident ignorance of the whole scientific side of the question. (The “funny cartoon” he included has nothing to do with any “new findings,” for example, but was old news eighty years ago.) Likewise with Dr. Kalomiros: he prides himself on knowing nothing at all of Western teachings on evolution (apart from what he regards as “scientific facts”) and insists that we pay attention only to what *he* teaches on the subject, which is “Patristic.”

1. This brings us to Axiom no. 1 in our approach to the question (not the most important one, but first in order of discussion): the question of evolution can’t be discussed at all if one doesn’t have a basic grasp of the scientific side of it (the “scientific proofs” of evolution) as well as the broader philosophy of evolution based on it (Teilhard de Chardin, etc.). This is precisely what the B—— Fathers seem to be afraid of, and

in general our Orthodox theologians also (including Fr. Michael Pomazansky if I'm not mistaken): once you get into "science," the theologian is out of his depth, there are endless fruitless debates, etc. I think this is why Dr. Kalomiros' evolution articles in the Greek religious press stirred up uneasiness but no distinct protests: because "theologians" in general just don't know how to handle the scientific side.

By this I don't mean that one has to be a scientific specialist in order to discuss the scientific side of the question—the scientific side is *not* the most important one, and specialists usually trip themselves up by concentrating too much on it; but if one isn't sufficiently aware of the scientific side one won't be able to grasp the question in its full scope. One can't say with assurance, for example, whether man has been on earth some seven or eight thousand years ("more or less," as the Fathers often say) if one is totally ignorant of the principles of radiometric dating, geologic strata, etc., which "prove" that man is "millions of years" old. And such knowledge is not esoteric at all—the basic principles of radiometric dating (enough to show its strong and weak points) can be explained in a rather short article. And the question of whether man has been on earth for some *thousands* of years or some *millions* of years is one that certainly touches on some basic Orthodox questions—whether the genealogies of the Scripture are actually genealogies (as all the Fathers certainly believed) or just sketchy lists with many long blanks in them; whether some of the Patriarchs of the Old Testament (if these are not genealogies) might not be "symbols" instead of concrete people; whether Adam himself ever existed (especially in view of what seems the prevailing theory now among evolutionists—"polygenism," that new species begin in many pairs simultaneously); etc. This is just a sample to show that to get anywhere in this question one must have a basic, layman's awareness of the scientific evidences for and against evolution. If one is reasonably objective and not out to "prove one's point" at any cost, such questions need not arouse passionate debates. As a basic principle, of course, we must assume that scientific *truth* (as opposed to various opinions and prejudices) cannot contradict revealed truth, *if* only we understand them both correctly.

Your point—to start with basic theological principles—I think is good, and these should always be fundamental. And one must always

be well aware of the different modes of knowledge and not mix them up. The trouble is, the question of evolution is so complex that one isn't always aware which aspect of it has ceased to be scientific and has intruded on theology or philosophy, or exactly where the real conflicts arise. Therefore, I think it is very important, as a second axiom:

2. To be aware of the basic *philosophies* underlying or derived from evolutionism and various other views of origins. The evolutionary philosophy of "up from the beasts" certainly seems irreconcilable with the Christian view of "fall from Paradise," and our whole view of history will certainly be determined by which way we believe! The Catholics used to solve this problem with a *deus ex machina*: when the body had evolved sufficiently, God "specially created" a soul for it—there evolution is correct, and so is Genesis, broadly interpreted. Kalomiros has basically the same view, though he has a more Patristic vocabulary to describe it—but such views are very artificial and contrived: the Christians wait for the latest evolutionary hypothesis and twist the text of Genesis to fit in with it. This won't do! An awareness of how evolutionary philosophers (such as Teilhard de Chardin) view the whole question of evolution, while it may not solve any specific question, will still give a broader view of the whole intellectual background behind evolution.

3. Axiom 3: The whole question of Genesis cannot be well approached by Orthodox people without appealing to the basic Orthodox sources: the Holy Fathers. Especially valuable: the *Hexaemera* of St. Basil and St. Ambrose; commentaries on Genesis by St. John Chrysostom and St. Ephraim the Syrian; homilies on Adam, Paradise, and the first-created world by St. Symeon the New Theologian (especially homily 45 in the Theophan the Recluse edition of 1892), St. Gregory the Sinaite (in the Russian *Philokalia*), St. Abba Dorotheus (Instruction I); commentaries of various Fathers on related passages of Scripture (for example, Romans 8:19–22 concerning the "futility" or "corruption" of the post-Adamic world, or St. Gregory the Theologian on the Genealogies of Christ); homilies on the subject of the Resurrection, or whenever the question of "seed" or "growth" is discussed; treatises on the origin of man (St. Gregory of Nyssa); Patristic discussions on reincarnation and the preexistence of souls (which are philosophically related to the question of evolution); etc.

About Dr. Kalomiros: our second reply to him will point out where we think he went astray in his Patristic interpretations. But our general impression of his two letters (which we won't write him directly for fear of offending him again) is this:

1. He is very unprepared to discuss the question either scientifically or philosophically. He is unaware of Western discussions of the subject and is only concerned to stand "superior" to them—which one can't do if one isn't aware of them. It is abundantly obvious from his two letters that he is far behind the West, and he is holding to scientific and philosophical positions long abandoned or in process of revision by Western scientists themselves. As one example: his defense of Haeckel's "recapitulation" theory of the human embryo: today's *evolutionary* textbooks of embryology dismiss it as a nineteenth-century fantasy, but Kalomiros not only clings to it as an "obvious proof" of evolution, but even forbids us to discuss any scientific questions with him until we get advanced degrees in the physical sciences (a typical refuge of someone who doesn't want a free discussion of the subject)! He is not aware, either, of the less dogmatic spirit which many evolutionary scientists now have, nor of the immense number of scientists (with advanced degrees!) who now have abandoned evolution entirely or are skeptical of it.

2. He is *theologically* unprepared for such a discussion—something which surprised us most of all. Even after promising us that he was going to reply only after reading all the basic Patristic texts on the subject, he still bases his whole argument on two or three Patristic texts, very one-sidedly interpreted, and does not even answer a number of our Patristic citations (which are only a small part of the Patristic passages we have found). His St. Gregory of Nyssa quote says nothing whatever of evolution unless you read it into the passage; and the St. Seraphim quote certainly does not sustain his interpretation, wherein he does precisely what he accused us of doing—taking "chronologically" words which are "ontological" in reference.

When I say that Dr. Kalomiros is "unprepared," I do not of course mean that he is *incapable* of discussing the question—merely that he is so prejudiced in advance (with a complex about being "inferior" to "Western wisdom") that he does not view the question at all objec-



tively.... I quoted St. Ephraim's very "fundamentalistic" view [that the Six Days were twenty-four hours long] without precisely agreeing with him—and Dr. Kalomiros dismissed it by saying "he was using the science of his time." But since the science of St. Ephraim's time most certainly did *not* teach that the world was created in six twenty-four-hour days (with twelve hours between each creative "moment"), I can only assume that Dr. Kalomiros is not prepared to examine Patristic evidence very objectively, using any excuse to dismiss whatever doesn't agree with his own views.

I would strongly suspect that Fr. Michael Pomazansky would prefer not to make any *general* comments on the question of evolution—however, if you gave him specific questions touching on theology, you might get answers. But then again, he might be so afraid of the scientific side that he might hesitate even here.

This letter is already too long. Unfortunately, I just won't have time for some while to set down the Patristic quotes I have found up to now. But some time perhaps I will get the time. You might be interested in some of the publications of the Institute for Creation Research in San Diego, especially books like *Scientific Creationism* (public school—i.e., non-religious edition) which present only scientific evidence without reference to religion. Their presentation of the "Creation Model" is a promising approach to a more objective view of the whole question. Their religious views, of course, suffer from the general shortsightedness of fundamentalism (in particular, their unawareness of the whole Patristic field of commentary on Genesis—but most Orthodox people have a similar lack of awareness!). I'm enclosing two of their pamphlets, with their address so you can order some of their books if you want.

I would like to keep up this discussion, a little at a time, if you wish to.

#### *24. Notes from a Dialogue on Evolution*

(To Fr. I., August 8/21, 1977)

A few notes on our continuing "dialogues on evolution." Many thanks for your two letters....

1. The question of the “age of the earth” is a question raised by science (which cannot give it a completely satisfactory answer) and touching on Revelation and certain theological questions. From the point of view of Biblical interpretation, this question is dependent on a more fundamental one: “the age of mankind.” Here the text of Genesis does not need to fear the evidence of science; and since modern science *does* talk about this, we have to have an intelligent answer to the opinion concerning the “millions of years” during which, supposedly, not merely “galaxies” have existed, but even man himself and his near “ancestors” have been walking on earth. One cannot escape the question of the existence of man in chronological time (since both Genesis with its Patristic interpreters and science seem to be talking about the same kind of “years” we know) by reference to the formation of galaxies and the relativity of time—the “primordial galaxies” themselves are a product of the scientific speculations of modern thinkers, and neither more nor less deserving of credence than ancient Greek speculations concerning the origin of the world.

2. This raises another fundamental question: how much should we use science in a commentary on Genesis? I would say, as a very minimum: we must know enough about science and its modern speculations to have an answer to those who use it to “disprove Genesis.” Thus its chief function today is perhaps negative. But beyond that, I think our attitude should be that of St. Basil in his *Hexaemeron*: the legitimate conclusions of science should be used whenever they help the task of interpreting the sacred text. The “science-phobia” which has been caused among some Orthodox Christians by the *false* use of science on the part of anti-Christians should be overcome. In the case of evolution, I don’t see how the question can be discussed at all without a basic knowledge of the “scientific proofs” for and against. I don’t mean we should become passionately *attached* to them or place them on the same level as theology—we should just be *aware* of them and know how to assess their relative value. The “scientific creationists” are very useful in this regard, because they have hunted up evidence which had been selectively disregarded by predisposed evolutionists (for example, the remarkable evidence of an earth “under 10,000 years old,” which must definitely be weighed against the evidence for an earth much older,... etc.)

3. But is the question of the age of the human race (some 7,000 or 8,000 years vs. a million or more years) really theological, or important? You doubt whether it is. I offer two observations:

a. The Holy Fathers (probably unanimously) certainly have no doubt that the chronology of the Old Testament, from Adam onwards, is to be accepted “literally.” They did not have the fundamentalist’s over-concern for chronological *precision*, but even the most mystical Fathers (St. Isaac the Syrian, St. Gregory Palamas, etc.) were quite certain that Adam lived literally some 900 years, that there were some 5,500 years (“more or less”) between the creation and the Birth of Christ, etc.\* (Blessed Augustine has a good discussion as to the differences between the Greek and Hebrew chronologies\*\*—the thousand years “more or less” didn’t bother him any more than it did other Fathers—but the assertion that Adam lived a million or more years ago, and that thus the Old [and New] Testament chronology is quite arbitrary or fanciful, could not but have evoked numerous Patristic discussions.) Can we be so trusting of the conclusions of modern science (especially if we have a basic knowledge of radiometric dating procedures and the philosophy underlying them!) as to totally overturn the Patristic opinion? Dr. Kalomiros and other Orthodox evolutionists say we should, without a second thought—I would say this is dangerous presumption, and an intrusion of dubious science into the realm of revealed truth. When Dr. Kalomiros dismisses the Patristic interpretation of the Old Testament chronology as “Jewish rationalism,” I even begin to wonder what his basic attitude to the Fathers is? It seems to have an element of disrespect, to say the least.

b. More important (more theological): one’s picture of reality, of

---

\* See the quotations of St. Isaac the Syrian on p. 459 above and p. 663 below. St. Isaac wrote also that, in his time (the seventh century A.D.), the demons were 6,000 years old, reckoning their age from the creation of the world (*Ascetical Homilies* 54, trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, p. 269): a teaching echoed by St. Macarius the Great, who stated that, in his time, Satan “is already 6,000 years old” (*Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 26.9, trans. George A. Maloney, p. 167). In *To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia* 9, St. Gregory Palamas wrote that “Adam continued to live after that time [i.e., after the transgression] even for 930 years” (*Philokalia* 4, p. 296).—Ed.

\*\* Blessed Augustine, *City of God* 15.13–14, NPNF 1 2, pp. 293–95.—Ed.

the world, definitely influences one's view of God. I offer you (very briefly) two pictures ("models") of man and his world:

(1) Man created some 7,000–8,000 years ago, separately from other creatures (not descended from others), dispassionate by *nature* (in soul and body), with Eve miraculously created from his rib (in a way we cannot describe with scientific precision, as St. John Chrysostom indicates), in a world of creatures with natures basically stable and not in process of becoming other natures. Much could be said on separate details of this picture, and knowledge of many of the details can never be *precise*; but basically: it does not contradict the text of Genesis and is harmonious with the Orthodox view of God.

(2) Man descended from lower creatures, passionate by his origin and nature, *becoming* dispassionate in Paradise (when grace brought him out of his bestial state, according to Kalomiros) at a moment very hazy both chronologically and theologically (today Roman Catholic evolutionists deny Paradise altogether because they can't reconcile it with evolutionary philosophy), existing in his fallen state perhaps a million or more years, during which time he gradually came up from savagery to civilization, the record of him in the Old Testament being extremely sketchy and not to be taken seriously when it speaks of "years"; the world around man being in a constant state of change and ascent from one nature to another, and this whole process being explainable ("more or less") by science, except for the original impulse of creation itself (which produced a rather undifferentiated mass with the "potentiality" of all future developments). (Kalomiros insists there is nothing "miraculous" about the Six Days of Creation—they all proceeded according to scientific laws!) This picture, that of "theistic" or "God-guided" evolution, can be reconciled with the text of Genesis and its Patristic interpretation only by means of many jumps and improvisations and wholesale disregard of Patristic evidence. The chief reason, I suspect, why it does not give the horrors to Orthodox believers in "God-guided evolution" (as, for example, Fr. N. professes himself to be)—is simply because they put their heads in the sand and don't bother to think about it at all, because of a very unhealthy science-phobia. But my point here is: is not one's view of God basically affected by such a picture of the world? For example, the view of an

“Orthodox evolutionist” like Theodosius Dobzhansky (in his address on receiving an honorary doctorate from St. Vladimir’s Seminary!) utterly denies the Providence of God in the world; his “God” is the deist God. St. John Damascene (following St. Gregory of Nyssa and others) states that it is unworthy of God to believe that He created man’s body and soul in separate moments, as if He did not have power for the whole act at once; this act of creation was simultaneous; here the text of Genesis is not to be interpreted literally or “chronologically” (Kalomiros specifically denies this—his interpretation of St. Seraphim’s words would collapse otherwise!). How much less worthy of God, then, to believe that He created only some kind of material ocean of potentiality and left everything to “evolve by itself” according to natural laws!

All this, as you can see, is an informal discussion presented for your reflection—precise citations will have to be given when I have time.

*25. Clergy in Greece against “Orthodox Evolutionism”*

(To Bishop Gregory,

November 22/December 5, 1980)

In the 1981 Conference in Pennsylvania I notice that Dr. Alexander Kalomiros will be speaking on “The Creation of Man and the World,” and I greatly fear that his talk and his very presence will only promote the spirit of “criticism” which is poisoning our Church so much. I myself had a lengthy correspondence with Dr. Kalomiros some years ago on the subject of “creation and evolution,” and I discovered to my astonishment that he is an adherent of the most naive kind of evolutionism (he wrote that Adam could well have had the face of an ape, because he was at first an ape-like creature to whom God gave His Spirit!), and that he is most doctrinaire and arrogant in upholding his opinions (he refused to discuss any scientific evidence with me because I have no doctor’s degree in science, and when I criticized some of his opinions and showed that some of his scientific “evidence” is outdated and is no longer accepted even by evolutionary textbooks in the West, he broke off the correspondence with me). Dr. Kalomiros’ opinions on creation have been greatly criticized by conservative clergy

in Greece,\* and theologically, in his correspondence with me, he had very shaky and superficial grounds for upholding his scientific evolutionism. In addition, Dr. Kalomiros has now made himself notorious in Greece for starting his own schism from the Old Calendarists over the issue of the Icon of the Trinity showing God the Father as an old man—he insists the icon is heretical and justifies the breaking of communion with those who venerate or even tolerate it.

### *26. People Are Ready to Hear This*

(To Fr. Alexey Young, Meat-fare Saturday, February 15/28, 1981)

Thinking about my Genesis course this summer, I was rereading part of Dr. Kalomiros' letters. How discouraging! One loses all inspiration to get tangled up in this subject, seeing how he handles it. And really, the tone is just like Deacon L.'s. I wondered why, and Fr. Herman answered me: They're trying to keep up with the "advanced" fashions in the universities; and I think that's probably really the answer. Especially Kalomiros' repeated insistence (Deacon L. says the same thing) over how many have "lost their souls" because of literal interpretations of Genesis—that is, we have to give them Genesis on *their* level, changing the truth if need be so as not to offend them or give them more than they can chew. But anyone who is really *converted* to Christianity will surely begin to rethink his whole intellectual outlook, won't he? Isn't the real problem that Dr. Kalomiros, Deacon L., and others are intellectuals who haven't been fully converted, or have brought their intellectual baggage with them into Orthodoxy—the same thing they accuse others of? This was the disease of the Russian intellectual converts earlier in this century, and I think our Greeks\*\* fall into the same category.

Therefore, I am plowing ahead with Genesis according to the Holy

---

\* In another letter (to Fr. D. S., Nov. 23/Dec. 6, 1980) Fr. Seraphim says further: "Conservative theologians in Greece regard him [Dr. Kalomiros] as a radical evolutionist."—ED.

\*\* Here Fr. Seraphim is referring specifically to the "traditionalist" Greek clergy who had joined the Russian Orthodox Church Outside of Russia: the Church to which Fr. Seraphim himself belonged.—ED.

Fathers, realizing that it may cause more waves among the Greeks (and name-calling—but I'm already a "theosophist" and can't get much worse than that!), especially since it will be "competition" to Dr. Kalomiros' talk in Pennsylvania.

Speaking of Genesis, I see no reason why this course on Genesis couldn't be turned into the main portion of our long-lost "evolution" book. The whole outline of it now becomes clear to me. It should be called something positive (no evolution in the title), such as "Genesis, Creation, and Early Man: An Orthodox View," and the first and main part should be simply an Orthodox interpretation (according to St. John Chrysostom, St. Ephraim, etc.) of the first chapters of Genesis, discussing "problems" raised by modern men in the course of the discussion. Then, as the secondary thought (less than half the book), a discussion of the whole question of evolution....

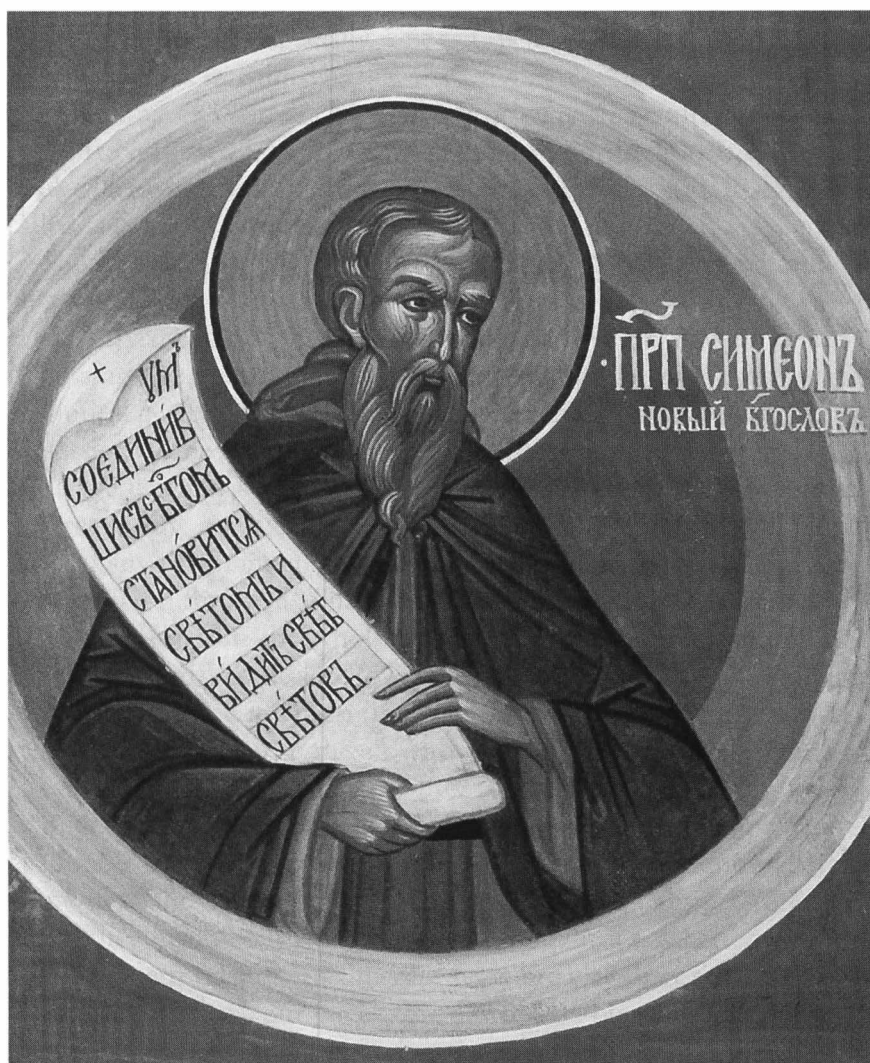
If we can carry it through, it should be a pioneering work which will make this question at least discussible among Orthodox Christians, many of whom are concerned but just don't know where to begin to think it through. What do you think? Any ideas or discussions? I will be working on the whole first part for the summer course, and maybe you and I could look over and organize the rest of it sometime this summer. Then it will be timely to print it, especially since the subject will be somewhat in the air with my and Kalomiros' talks.

Rereading Kalomiros' letters, I see that there is something quite basic at stake.... It is obvious that Kalomiros has no intention whatever to humble himself before the mind of the Fathers. He "knows better" than they, and therefore he easily categorizes as "absurd" opinions which they held because he himself has thought it out better, with the aid of modern science. In this case he is broader than the Fathers; in most cases, perhaps, our Greeks are narrower—but it is their own wisdom that they trust and which they wish to impose on others. Our key is—sticking to the wisdom of the Church, trusting our own Fathers and the Holy Fathers who lived before. People are ready to hear this.

# PART V

## *Notes and Outlines*





St. Symeon the New Theologian (949–1022).  
*Fresco from the Kazan Mother of God Cathedral,  
Optina Monastery, Russia, 2000.*

## CHAPTER ONE

# *Notes on Science, Evolution, and Christian Philosophy*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: These sections of Fr. Seraphim's notes were written over the course of several years. Sections 1 and 13 were written in 1974; the rest cannot be precisely dated. Titles for sections 3 and 9 were provided by Fr. Seraphim; the other titles have been added by the editor.*

### *1. The Incorruption of the First-Created World*

Vain are they who say that the Holy Fathers were “naive in science” and simply “didn’t know” about evolution (as if the Holy Spirit withheld this information from the Divinely inspired Fathers and Scriptures, and revealed it only to eighteenth-century Enlightenment man and his later descendants!). On the contrary, they knew quite well what was being said in Genesis. We know, therefore, that before the fall of Adam some 7,500 years ago, *no creature experienced corruption* [decay]; but the whole evidence for “evolution” lies precisely in the evidence of corruption which, supposedly, occurred before the “evolution of man”! Need we hesitate to know where the truth lies? If science finds that the Virgin Birth of Christ is outside the laws of nature as it knows them, we Orthodox Christians nonetheless believe it absolutely; in the same way, even if science finds the incorrupt creatures of the first period of the world’s existence “impossible” by the laws of nature it knows—we *still believe* as the Church and the Holy Fathers do.

And there is a specific reason why science cannot understand this mystery, which is set forth by the great Father St. Symeon the New Theologian in his 38th Homily:

The words and decrees of God become the law of nature. Therefore also the decree of God, uttered by Him as a result of the disobedi-

ence of the first Adam—that is, the decree to him of death and corruption—became the law of nature, eternal and unalterable. Therefore, in order to abrogate this decree, the Son of God, our Lord Jesus Christ, was crucified and died, offering Himself as a sacrifice for the redemption of man from death.<sup>1</sup>

That is to say: the law of nature before Adam's disobedience *is different from the law of nature now in force, and it is therefore totally unknowable by science....* Certain it is that science cannot, on the basis of observing a creation which is everywhere corruptible and mortal, make even the slightest inference about a creation not subject to these laws. What was before the disobedience of Adam, and what is beyond the end of this corruptible world (when the creation will not be destroyed but totally *transformed*)—*are totally outside the sphere of science* and may be known only through Orthodox theology in accordance with God's revelation to mankind....

At this point the sincere Orthodox believer who is confused because he has been taught "evolution" from his childhood and cannot force himself to disbelieve in it all at once—will ask: Is it not still possible somehow to "reinterpret" the incorruptibility of Adam and the first creation so as not to be too much outside the fashions of contemporary ideas? To which the answer is: If you wish to "reinterpret" the state *before* the corruptible, fallen world we know—then you must likewise "reinterpret" the state *after* this fallen world, the future bliss of heaven, for the two correspond and only differ, as St. Symeon has pointed out in the long passage quoted above,\* in that the future state of the world will be fully spiritual, corresponding to the "spiritual body" of the men who will dwell in it, and no longer will it be possible for its incorruptibility to be lost. Do we Orthodox Christians believe that we will *actually* be immortal and incorruptible in that next life—if God will only number us among the saved—or only metaphorically and allegorically so? If we believe and think as the Holy Fathers do, then our future incorruptibility will be *real*, as was that of the creation and of Adam before his disobedience.

---

\* See pp. 463–44 above.—ED.

It is vain for us to imagine that we are more “sophisticated” than the Holy Fathers, being made so wise by modern “enlightenment” and science that we know better than they how to read and interpret the Divinely inspired Scriptures (as St. Basil says, considering ourselves “wiser than the revelations of the Spirit”).<sup>2</sup> The superiority of modern knowledge over that of the Holy Fathers lies solely in one respect, which lies at the very bottom of the hierarchy of knowledge: in the quantity of scientific facts now available to us (but not everything that calls itself “scientific fact” *is* such!); in every other respect our knowledge is inferior to theirs. They knew far better than today’s scientists and philosophers the *place* of scientific knowledge in the whole hierarchy of knowledge; and they saw clearly that the proper interpretation of Genesis is the task of theology, not science, and it is facilitated, not at all by a knowledge of present-day scientific facts, but rather by advancement in spiritual life and understanding. That indeed is why the whole doctrine of creation is presented most clearly, precisely in the writings of a Father like St. Symeon the New Theologian, who attained the heights of spiritual life. The notion that we now, “enlightened” by science, can understand Genesis better than the Holy Fathers, is itself a result of that evolutionary philosophy which virtually everyone now holds quite unconsciously....

Thus the whole structure of evolutionary ideas and philosophy concerning the supposedly corruptible creation before Adam is seen to be an elaborate fable like unto those the ancients had about their “gods,” and which were so well refuted by the God-bearing Fathers of the first Christian centuries.... If the world is acknowledged to be incorrupt before the disobedience of Adam, the need of evolutionists for “millions of years” vanishes: there are then no fossils, no extinct species, no “survival of the fittest” [before the fall of man].\*

---

\* The incorrupt, “very good” condition of man and the rest of creation before the fall, as delineated in the Scriptural-Patristic teaching of the Church (see appendix 1), does not correspond to what natural scientists study in the fossil record, which is a record of violence and carnivory (e.g., creatures buried catastrophically while in the act of devouring each other, or with other animals in their intestines), including cannibalism (e.g., dinosaurs eating members of their own species—see pp. 895–96 below); of suffering (e.g., creatures writhing in agony while being buried alive); of diseases and afflictions (e.g., cancer, tuberculosis, gout, and abscesses); and of the death and

## 2. *Science and the Question of Incorruption*

Science is silent before evident miracles of incorruption in New Testament times: the Mother of God's painless birthgiving without a father;\* also Christ's Resurrection. Secondly, the incorruption of

---

corruption (decay) of all kinds of living things, including man. In keeping with the Scriptural-Patristic testimony on prelapsarian incorruption, then, the fossil record is to be placed, historically, *after* the fall of man.

This is one of the primary reasons why, from an Orthodox perspective, it is futile to interpret the Six Days as having lasted for millions of years. If the world was incorrupt before the fall, then, as Fr. Seraphim points out above, "the need of evolutionists for 'millions of years' vanishes." Furthermore, there is then not even a place in which to historically "fit" those millions of years, since according to the naturalistic worldview they represent aeons of corruption, most of which passed before man's evolutionary emergence. Thus, as Fr. Seraphim writes elsewhere, with the acceptance of the Orthodox teaching that the world was incorrupt before Adam's fall, "the greater part of evolution's schema of prehistory is thrown out" (see p. 669 below).—ED.

\* St. John Damascene writes of the Mother of God's virginal and painless birth-giving: "He Who is without a mother begotten of a Father was without a father born of a woman.... Because [this birth] was without father, it surpassed the nature of generation.... [And] because it was without pain, it surpassed the established order of birth—for, where pleasure had not preceded, pain did not follow, as the Prophet said: 'Before she travails in labor to give birth, before the pain of birth comes on, she escapes it and bears a male' (Is. 66:7)" (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.14, FC 37, pp. 364–65). St. Damascene then goes on to affirm that, when the Virgin gave birth to Christ, the seals of her virginity miraculously remained intact: "Just as at His conception He had kept her who conceived Him a virgin, so also at His birth did He maintain her virginity intact, because He alone passed through her and kept her shut.... For it was not impossible for Him to pass through the gate without breaking its seals (cf. Ezek. 44:2)" (*ibid.*). Again, in the Canon of Pascha (the Resurrection of Christ), St. Damascene writes: "Having kept the seals intact, Thou didst rise from the grave, O Christ, Who didst not violate the Virgin's womb by Thy birth, and Thou hast opened to us the gates of Paradise" (Canticle 6).

Concerning the miraculous birth of Christ from the Virgin, St. Cosmas of Maiuma writes in the Canon of the Nativity: "The Word, having dwelt in the Virgin and taken flesh, came forth from her yet kept her incorrupt. For being Himself not subject to decay, He preserved His Mother free from harm" (Canticle 6, *The Festal Menaion*, p. 276).—ED.

holy relics, also miracles of Christ and the saints. *The order of fallen creation is here interrupted by a higher law*—so too creation before the fall is unknowable because a different law prevailed.\*

### 3. *Evolution and “Cosmic Religion”*

1. One of the chief ideological-religious functions of “evolutionary” thought is to “broaden” one’s mental outlook, not necessarily directly attacking religious ideas (but sometimes this also), in order to make it impossible to think in “narrow” religious terms:

(a) The age of man and the universe is billions, not thousands of years. This weakens the “realistic” view of the Old Testament, Adam, the Patriarchs, Paradise.

(b) Man’s lifetime becomes less crucial. Sooner or later, it becomes impossible to continue to stress a “narrow” view of man’s lifetime (and

---

\* On this subject, St. Barsanuphius of Optina (1845–1913) copied the following illuminating passage in his cell-notes: “Certain people, even evident believers in God, not to mention overt atheists, say, ‘I admit that the laws of nature were set down by God, and therefore I cannot grant that they can be broken. God cannot break the order that He Himself has established.’ One could answer such crafty sophists thus: Amazing! It’s just as if God and man exist for your laws of nature, and not the laws of nature for the purposes of God and the good of man. This is the old leaven of the Pharisees, to which a worthy reply was given 1900 years ago: ‘The Son of Man is Lord even of the sabbath day’ (Matt. 12:8)! Our God is a God of order, and He directs the world by means of laws. The laws in and of themselves do not produce any manifestations in nature. They merely regulate and balance the powers of nature. In nature, in this visible world, various forces function, and the lowest of them yield to the higher: the physical yields to the chemical, the chemical to the organic, and finally, all of them together to the highest of all, the spiritual. Without the intervention of the highest forces, the lower forces would function in a homogenous, immutable order. But the higher forces alter, and sometimes even suspend the actions of the lower. In such a natural subordination of the lower forces to the higher, not one of the laws of nature is changed. Thus, for example, a physician changes the progression of a disease, a man changes the face of the earth by the digging of canals, and so on. Cannot God cause the same thing to a boundlessly greater extent?” (from *Soul-Profiting Reading* [in Russian], Aug. 1897, p. 671; quoted in St. Barsanuphius of Optina, *Cell-Notes 1892–1896* [in Russian], pp. 15–16).—Ed.

decision for eternity) if one believes in a “broad, evolving” universe, especially in connection with Christianity.

(c) The “broad” view of the natures of things must sooner or later involve the nature of man: if everything *changes its nature*, “evolves” from and to something else—then why not man? All evolutionists think so, and Christians who deny this while accepting the rest of evolutionary theory make fools of themselves, being “fundamentalists” in part, “evolutionists” in part.

2. Evolution is a “totalitarian” thought-form; it attempts to give a religious-philosophical outlook for the *whole* of life. As Teilhard de Chardin (quoted approvingly by Theodosius Dobzhansky) affirms: “Is evolution a theory, a system, or a hypothesis? It is much more—it is a general postulate to which all theories, all hypotheses, all systems must henceforward bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true. Evolution is a light which illuminates all facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow—this is what evolution is” (*Concern*, Spring, 1973).

Evolution is not partially true or false. It arose from—demands to be accepted as—a *whole* philosophy of the world and life. The scientific hypothesis is quite secondary.

3. A characteristic of modern currents of thought is “universalism”—the attempt to make a synthesis that will include all “partial” views: Masonry, ecumenism, Hegelianism, Baha’i, Unitarianism, unity of all religions. This is what “evolutionary” philosophy is—a “universal” theory to explain everything, and to justify everything the way it is—universal salvation, a cosmic view of everything entering into the universal harmony of things as they are.

4. As a consequence, harmony is found between evolution (and other universalist ideas) and “mystical” writers of the past, and an attempt is specifically made to show the harmony between Teilhardism and *Orthodox* “mystical” tradition, quoting St. Symeon the New Theologian, St. Isaac the Syrian, etc. Those who do not come up to mystical, universalist heights are dismissed as “legalistic,” “moralistic,” narrow, etc. But in this way the harmony of Orthodox tradition is destroyed: one part is turned against the other in order to make Orthodox fit into the harmony of modern universalistic ideas.

This is *very much in conformity with the pride of "modern" ideas*: We know better than the ancients; only the *most exalted* thought of the past compares with our thought. But this is directly against the Holy Fathers who warn against reaching too high, not recognizing one's subtle, hidden pride and passions. Specifically, ours is least of all a time to spread and popularize "mystical" ideas and writers, and drag them into the marketplace. It is far better to be humble, revere these exalted writers, and not presume that one can understand them. The writings of Theophan the Recluse are more suited to our condition.

#### 4. *The "Mysticism" of Teilhard de Chardin*

One can be sympathetic with Teilhard de Chardin's *intent* to reconcile science and Christianity, which spoke in two entirely different languages in his day. True, all that is *true* in science is not in conflict with Orthodox truth, and a fervent Christian can be a truthful scientist. But false theories, mistaken personal fancies and opinions—cannot serve as a basis for a true worldview, whether they come from science or religion. Teilhard de Chardin solved the dichotomy of science and Christianity by throwing up a vague "mysticism" between them; thus he was faithful neither to true science nor to true religion, but simply invented a new false teaching of his own—it is very attractive because it is in accord with "mystic" and "universalist" currents of our times. But to serious thought, to truth, his teaching is but another of the serious errors of our times, and a very fruitful one for the coming unified worldview of the last humanity. He is a predecessor of Antichrist.

#### 5. *Evolution as the Exact Opposite of Christianity*

The whole "evolutionary philosophy" which grasps people today leads them to believe, often unconsciously, in a view of creation and life which is just the opposite of what Christianity teaches: simple begets complex, savagery "evolves" to civilization, imperfect gives rise to perfect, "progress," etc. According to Orthodoxy, the perfect falls to the imperfect (Paradise to fallen world; and even historically, the Holy Fathers note the fall of mankind in general until the coming of



Christ—cf. St. Symeon the New Theologian and St. Gregory of Nyssa), and man in the last days will be much lower spiritually than in the early Church (cf. the prophecies of St. Nilus the Myrrh-gusher and St. Niphon of Constantia);\* incorruption and immortality precede corruption and mortality. The perfection and immortality of the coming age (heaven) are not a *development* or “evolution” from the present world (as Teilhard de Chardin would have it; actually, chiliasm is almost an inevitable deduction from evolution), but a radical transformation.

The whole aim of “evolutionary philosophy” is to upset this Christian outlook, based on God Who does everything as He wishes, and

---

\* St. Nilus the Myrrh-gusher of Mount Athos (†1651), appearing posthumously to the monk Theophanes on the Holy Mountain in the year 1817, prophesied about the state of humanity in the last times: “The world in those days will become unrecognizable. When the advent of Antichrist draws near, people’s reasoning will be obscured because of carnal passions, while profanity and indecency will prevail. People will become unrecognizable; people’s faces will be disfigured; men will not be distinguishable from women because of their shameless garments and the hair on their heads. Then they will become wild and will resemble the beasts.... Respect for parents and elders will be no more; love will perish; the Christians’ shepherds, bishops and priests, will be conceited and will no longer recognize the right path from the left. During those days the customs and the traditions of the Christians and the Church will change. Prudence will be lost and prodigality will prevail. Lies and the love of money will reach epidemic proportions.... Fornication, adultery, homosexuality, thefts, and murders will be an everyday occurrence during those days” (quoted in Monk Leontios of Dionysiou Monastery, *Prophecies* [in Greek], p. 96). See also the prophecies of St. Nilus concerning the degeneration of Orthodox monastic life, in *The Orthodox Word* no. 21 (1968), pp. 143–49.

The prophecy of St. Niphon, Bishop of Constantia on Cyprus (†before 367), is as follows: “To the very end of this age there shall not be lacking Prophets of the Lord God, as also servants of Satan. But in the last times those who truly will serve God will succeed in hiding themselves from men and will not perform in their midst signs and wonders as at the present time, but they will travel by a path of activity intermixed with humility, and in the Kingdom of Heaven they will be greater than the Fathers who have been glorified by signs. For at that time no one will perform before the eyes of men miracles which would inflame men and inspire them to strive with zeal for ascetic labors.... Many, being possessed by ignorance, will fall into the abyss, going astray in the breadth of the broad and spacious path” (quoted in Sts. Barsanuphius and John, *Guidance toward Spiritual Life* [in Russian], pp. 654–55).—Ed.

make instead something more “understandable” to fallen men—rationalism, humanism. That is why “evolution” was developed gradually by modern agnostic-atheistic-deistic philosophy before any “scientific” proof was ever found. The Orthodox Christian perspective (Paradise, the shortness of [time allotted to] this world, etc.) is a *whole new outlook* for those made stupid by modern “enlightenment” philosophy, of which evolution is a key product.

#### 6. *Why Orthodox Christians Should Not Be Indifferent to Evolution*

Some say that Orthodox Christians should pay no attention to “evolution”—that it is “science” and has nothing to do with theology. If evolution is taught in schools, our attitude should be one of indifference: God could create man in any way He chooses; our tradition does not tell us how or give us any teaching to oppose to evolution.

This argument is false because:

1. St. Peter says: “Be ready always to give a defense to everyone that asks you for an account of the hope that is in you” (1 Pet. 3:15). The question of evolution touches on Christian faith, specifically regarding creation and the nature of man. Even if the enemies of Christianity are very ridiculous in their arguments, our conscience demands that we have an answer to them, both for their sake (for they are also living souls whose error keeps them from God) and because there are simple souls who can be led away from God by ridiculous arguments. To the Soviet cosmonaut who “looked for God” in space and thought his failure to find Him disproved the existence of God\*—our answer is clear: we Christians have a teaching about whether God is located “in the sky” or not, and this atheist argument (which is taken seriously by some poor souls) is easily refuted by presenting the true doctrine of God Who is, in the words of St. John Damascene,

---

\* A reference to Yuri Gagarin, the first man to travel into space. The remark often attributed to him by Western sources, “I don’t see any god up here,” actually originated from a speech of Nikita Khrushchev, in which the Soviet leader said: “Gagarin flew into space, but didn’t see any god there.” Gagarin was a baptized Orthodox Christian.—ED.

without beginning and without end, everlasting and eternal, uncreated, unchangeable, unalterable, simple, uncompounded, incorporeal, invisible, impalpable, uncircumscribed, unlimited, incomprehensible, uncontained, unfathomable, good, just, the Maker of all created things, all-powerful, all-ruling, all-seeing, the Provider, the Sovereign, and the Judge of all.<sup>3</sup>

2. Many Orthodox Christians are not merely “indifferent” to evolution; they openly accept it, unaware that thereby they accept the Latin-Scholastic doctrine of creation and the first-created man, which is totally opposed to the Orthodox Christian doctrine as set forth clearly especially in the Holy Fathers of the highest spiritual life.

3. In general the question of “evolution” and “creation” has by now, after so many vain arguments brought forth by both sides in the past century, become so confused that even many very aware Orthodox Christians do not have a coherent view on the whole subject; and very few are those who know the Patristic teaching concerning the interpretation of the text of Genesis, all the more so in that few of the Patristic works on Genesis are to be found in English or other Western languages.\*

### *7. Paleontology and “Ivory-Tower Orthodoxy”*

Paleontology is an imprecise and very outward science. And evolution does *not* come from paleontology—it is a philosophy which many paleontologists accept.

Theology and paleontology are not two entirely independent spheres—that’s a modern rationalistic idea. They are different levels which *sometimes* overlap.\*\* And the basic *philosophies* of [Orthodox]

---

\* This situation has changed with the publication in English of more Patristic works pertaining to Genesis; see “Suggested Resources,” pp. 883–87 below.—ED.

\*\* Here as in other places (pp. 110, 118–19 above and pp. 673–74, 683 below), Fr. Seraphim counters a view that was later developed as a thesis by paleontologist and evolutionary biologist Stephen Jay Gould: that science and religion represent “non-overlapping magisteria.” (See Gould, “Non-overlapping Magisteria,” *Natural History*, vol. 106 [March 1997], pp. 16–22.)—ED.

theology and [evolutionist] paleontology are radically distinct: man as *fallen* from the angelic state, vs. man *rising* up from savagery. One can't hold *both* these ideas seriously.\*

The idea that paleontology can believe whatever it wants and Orthodox Christianity isn't affected—this is an ostrich mentality, which makes Orthodoxy either fairy tales or simply remote from life. On the contrary, Orthodoxy often impinges on everyday problems; and a lack of Orthodox *philosophy* to apply revelation to life, means we are *crippled* for ordinary life. This is *ivory-tower Orthodoxy*, not real Orthodoxy.

We must be precise about “science.” Most people *assume* “science” knows what it is talking about. *But there is no such thing as* “science”—there are different “sciences,” each one with a very different level of accuracy and preciseness. Paleontology is one of the *less* precise sciences, requiring much guesswork to fill vast gaps of time and knowledge. All the sciences connected with “proving” evolution are imprecise—prehistory, paleontology, geology. The more precise sciences whose testimony is called for to “prove” evolution—embryology, genetics, etc.—if anything give proof *against* evolution.\*\*

---

\* Furthermore, as noted above, Orthodox theology does not agree with the evolutionist view which places most of the fossil record (a record precisely of corruption) before the appearance of man.—ED.

\*\* In other notes, Fr. Seraphim put it somewhat differently: “The more precise the science (e.g., genetics), the less convincing proof [of evolution] there is; the less precise (paleontology, archeology, prehistory), the bolder the speculation at the expense of facts.”

Phillip E. Johnson, commenting on Michael H. Brown's *The Search for Eve* (1990), notes: “The book shows the contempt that ‘hard science’ molecular biologists have for the ‘softer’ paleontologists who base their theories about human evolution upon reconstructions from isolated teeth, shattered skullcaps, and fragmented jaws” (Johnson, *Darwin on Trial*, p. 194).

See *Not by Chance!* by Lee Spetner, *Genetic Entropy* by J. C. Sanford, and *Signature in the Cell* by Stephen C. Meyer for critiques of evolutionary theory based on recent discoveries in the “hard science” of molecular biology.—ED.

8. *Which Interpretation of the Fossil Record  
Makes God a Deceiver?*

Evolutionists (e.g., Dobzhansky) say that if evolution is not true, then God is playing “tricks” on man with fossils, etc. Not so—because evolutionists *read into* the fossils their own religious and philosophical beliefs. But indeed, if evolution be *true*, then God has “tricked” the writers of Holy Scripture and the Holy Fathers who have interpreted it!

9. *Man as Qualitatively Different from Animals*

According to evolutionism, Adam was born of carnal intercourse of non-human creatures. This is a “son of God”?!

To reconcile evolution and Orthodox teaching, one must say either:

(1) The difference between man and beasts is *quantitative* rather than qualitative: one last little mutation produced man. This is repugnant to theology, which holds that the image of God is qualitatively different from beasts—no beast is “almost man.”

Or: (2) Adam was born a beast, and became man only by a miracle of God’s “inbreathing.” This is repugnant to science, which seeks to explain everything by natural laws, and rejects miraculous explanations.

10. *The Roman Catholic Idea of the State of Adam  
(according to Fr. Michael Pomazansky)*

In the Roman Catholic view, the result of the fall is the loss by man of a *supernatural* state given by God’s grace (it is not the loss of his *natural* state, as in Orthodox theology), and after this man remains in his “*natural*” condition. His *nature* is not injured, but only placed in disorder—the flesh overweighs the spirit.

(The Protestant error is a little different: according to Luther and Calvin, human nature was *completely corrupted* by the fall and can do nothing to help itself.)

Blessed Augustine, in opposing Pelagianism, went to the opposite error and stated that in fallen man freedom to do good was *completely annihilated*; the grace of God is everything (cf. Protestantism).\*

Thus Catholicism underestimates the nature of man before the fall, and his nature after the fall (and so opposed St. John Cassian). The same error again appeared in Barlaam, who underestimated the state of Divine vision accessible to man in this life, and so he opposed St. Gregory Palamas.

The greatness of man and his origin and destiny are *not understood* by the Latins—they make him too small, obviously because they measure everything by a *this-worldly* standard. Their theology comes from *human wisdom*, not Divine revelation and Divine vision.

### 11. An “Inferiority Complex” among Christians

The prestige of science has produced an “inferiority complex” in Christians. Science produces “results,” as a result of what no one will deny is really knowledge; but this has produced in general an air of superstitious awe surrounding the pronouncements of “science” (or, rather, scientists) on many things which it is not competent to judge. And so when science touches on things mentioned in Scripture, for example, believers are much too quick to back off and defend their treasures by saying they are “metaphors” or do not mean *literally* what they say. This is nowhere clearer than in the first chapters of Genesis, which such believers hasten to interpret in a way acceptable to the latest “scientific opinion.”

### 12. What Kind of Simple-Minded Fools Are We?

Must we have a naive immigrant psychology in the West?—Chanting in our services and reading in Scripture that the genealogy of mankind starts with Adam, “who was [the son] of God” (Luke 3:38), and believing “in actual fact” that there were countless ages of Neander-

---

\* On this subject, see Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Place of Blessed Augustine in the Orthodox Church*, chap. 2.—ED.

thals, Java Man, etc., before Adam? What kind of simple-minded fools are we not to see that if we are speechless before the “scientific” wisdom of this world, our view of man and creation makes no sense at all and is only some kind of fairy tale—in which all the Holy Fathers believed, but we know better! Thus, science teaches us our “Orthodox theology”—and we are so under the fascination of modern Western ideas that we fall for it!

*13. For the “Orthodox Evolutionist,”  
Where Does History Begin and Fables Leave Off?*

How can Orthodox Christians reconcile [the evolutionist] view of creation and of early man with Orthodox doctrine? Some openly proclaim themselves “Orthodox evolutionists,” and many others, assuming that “science must know what it is talking about,” accept evolution in silence, even though they may feel uneasy or disturbed about some points.

Questions asked by simple believers actually raise very profound questions. The idea of the “evolution of species” is incidental and minor compared with fundamental questions concerning man: How can we believe that Adam was created “as an immortal king over an incorrupt world” (St. Symeon the New Theologian)<sup>4</sup> if he is descended from corruptible creatures? If “man” is hundreds of thousands or millions of years old, then how can Adam be an historical person? And if he is not historical, then is Cain or Abel, or Methusalah, or Noah?\* Where does history begin and fables leave off? And has the Orthodox Church then erred in always recognizing the forefathers as individuals, and indeed saints commemorated during her Divine services? And who was it that Christ raised from hell if Adam is not a real man and the ancestor of all men?\*\*

---

\* As noted above (pp. 298n, 327n), Christ Himself spoke of Abel and Noah as actual, historical persons.—ED.

\*\* On how belief in a real Adam as the ancestor of all men serves as a basis for the Pauline and Patristic exposition of the Orthodox doctrine of redemption, see pp. 41–43 above and pp. 751–53, 751–52nn, 774–78, 776n, 782–83nn below.—ED.

#### 14. *The Old Testament Chronology*

The time elapsed from Adam to the present day is no more than some 7,500 years, as the Holy Fathers never doubt. St. John Chrysostom says clearly that Christ “opened for us today Paradise, which had remained closed for some 5,000 years.”<sup>5</sup> And St. Isaac the Syrian: Before Christ “for five thousand five hundred and some years God left Adam (i.e., man) to labor on the earth.”<sup>6</sup>... But why needlessly quote the Fathers who all say the same thing, when every Orthodox Christian need only look at any Orthodox calendar to discover that we are now living in “the year 7482 from the Creation of the world,” according to the chronology that has come down to us from the earliest Christian times. (The Fathers, by the way, were well aware of the discrepancy of some hundreds of years between the Greek and Hebrew Old Testament chronology, and it did not bother them; they did not quibble over years or worry that the standard calendar was precise “to the very year”; it is sufficient that what is involved is beyond any doubt a matter of some few thousands of years, involving the lifetimes of specific men, and it can in no way be interpreted as millions of years or whole ages and races of men.)

#### 15. *The Missing Evidence*

All attempts to reconcile evolution and Christianity are artificial:

1. the Day-Age theory [i.e., the Six Days are actually periods of millions or billions of years];\*

---

\* The Day-Age theory was first promulgated by the Scottish stonemason, self-taught geologist, and popular author Hugh Miller in his book *The Testimony of the Rocks*, published in 1857. (The book was published shortly after his death: he committed suicide on the night he had finished checking the printers’ proofs. For his exposition of the Day-Age theory, see pp. 195–211 of the book; for an account of his life and death, see pp. 7–32.)

Today, the Day-Age theory is associated with both “theistic evolution” and “old earth/progressive creationism.” (Miller himself was an advocate of the latter view.) For



2. the “Gap” theory [i.e., there was a gap of billions of years between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2];\*
3. the body of Adam evolved and then his soul was created or grace was given to him.

The whole question of evolution has never been even *formulated* from an Orthodox point of view. The missing evidence is the Patristic evidence. The main purpose of this book is to present this—as an addition to the evidence for the creation “model.”

---

critiques of the Day-Age view, see Jonathan Sarfati, *Refuting Compromise*, pp. 67–93, and Henry M. Morris, *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science*, pp. 114–16.—ED.

\* The Gap theory was first proposed in 1814, in a lecture by the Protestant minister and theological writer Thomas Chalmers, who was later instrumental in founding the Free Church of Scotland. Beginning in 1909 the theory was endorsed in the footnotes to the popular Scofield Reference Bible.

The most thorough critique of the Gap theory is found in the book *Unformed and Unfilled* by Weston W. Fields. The Gap theory is also discussed in Jonathan Sarfati, *Refuting Compromise*, pp. 101–4, and Henry M. Morris, *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science*, pp. 121–25.—ED.

## CHAPTER TWO

# *Outlines of Proposed Studies*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: These two outlines were written by Fr. Seraphim at different times and represent separate attempts to summarize the points he wanted to cover. The first is dated September 1978; the second is undated.*

### *1. Evolution*

#### I. Introduction: approaches, methodology.

##### A. Evolution is a question that is controversial because of:

1. The *implication* for morality, worldview, etc., of one view or other.
2. The inherent complexity of the subject, and its vastness.

##### B. The main difficulty:

1. The reconciliation of the evolutionary theory's *physical* and *metaphysical* aspects.
2. Extremes:
  - a) Projection of physical theories onto the metaphysical dimension of beginnings. Many scientists have not properly appreciated the limitation of science in this realm, which can say nothing whatever of *beginnings*, which are not observable or repeatable or predictable, but are *miraculous* by their very nature.
  - b) Some fundamentalists have erred in the opposite direction, trying to dictate to physical science on the basis of *personal interpretation* of God's revelation.
  - c) *Respect for truth* in both physical (i.e., scientific) and metaphysical (i.e., religious revelation) realms is indis-

pensable. One truth cannot contradict the other—but their intertwining is a complex subject. No *fact*, whether physical (science) or spiritual (theology—where truth and not speculation is involved) can be denied.

## II. Critique of evolutionary theory.

- A. Evolutionary theory is overdone—it has dominated scientific thinking for a century and has had enormous influence in nonscientific realms (morality, education, religion) totally out of proportion to the actual nature and certainty of its knowledge.
- B. The history of it—the search for an explanation without God. This does not *entirely* discredit it, because actually almost all of our knowledge is distorted by biases and predispositions; but it already guarantees that the final outcome of this search will be one-sided and partial.\* Recent reaction against evolutionary theory among many scientists is a sign of this.
- C. Basic evolutionist arguments are all inconclusive; there is no *proof* for or against.
- D. History of the rise and decline of the evolutionary hypothesis (see [Henry] Morris, etc.)—the Scopes trial, fashions in thought, respectability. Many Orthodox people suffer from an “inferiority complex”; they want to be “up-to-date” and are

---

\*The late paleontologist and evolutionary biologist Stephen Jay Gould, who professed to have no religious beliefs, once made the following frank observation: “Our ways of learning about the world are strongly influenced by the social preconceptions and biased modes of thinking that each scientist must apply to any problem. The stereotype of a fully rational and objective ‘scientific method,’ with individual scientists as logical (and interchangeable) robots is self-serving mythology” (“In the Mind of the Beholder,” *Natural History*, vol. 103, no. 2 [Feb. 1994], p. 14).

From this consideration one is reminded of the statement of St. Gregory Palamas that Fr. Seraphim quoted above (p. 466). Speaking of various forms of secular knowledge, including “the discovery of the mysteries of nature,” St. Gregory wrote that “they are manifested according to the idea of those who use them and easily take the form which is given them by the point of view of those who possess them.” One’s point of view is crucial since, as St. Gregory says, it determines whether the fruits of one’s secular learning are good or evil.—ED.

fearful of being identified as “fundamentalists.”... We must be above this.

III. Answer:

- A. Not the “Bible”—it needs interpretation.\*
- B. Not “science”—it lacks the higher metaphysical dimension by its own nature.
- C. Not “agnosticism”: science and religion in airtight compartments; they must come together.
- D. Not “Christian evolutionism”: the false combination of “science” and “religion.” This means Christianity giving ground before evolutionism, allowing it to dictate dogma (Teilhard de Chardin, etc.)
- E. The answer: the Orthodox Patristic view (i.e., the Orthodox interpretation of Scripture), with awareness of science. This is what Kireyevsky called for. Science must be *enlightened and raised up in knowledge* by faith and revelation. But no one in all the evolution controversy has made more than a token use of the Fathers. What do the Fathers teach?
- F. The following is not “all the answer”; rather, it is an approach to the answers for Orthodox Christians by trying first of all to identify the *question*—where are the sources of harmony and conflict between contemporary science and the Holy Fathers?
- G. To be avoided: “proof texts,” out of context statements from the Fathers, picking and choosing.

IV. Patristic sources (list chief ones) and their principles of interpretation of Scripture (“literal” but also “befitting God”—cf. St. John Chrysostom).

V. The basic question:

- A. Beginnings.
  - 1. Science has been mistaken in treading on this ground: it is beyond its scope. The beginning of life or of the universe can only be the subject of the wildest guesses, unless it has

---

\* Here Fr. Seraphim means that the answer is not simply the Bible *by itself*, since the Bible can be misinterpreted. The answer is the Bible with the interpretation of the Holy Fathers (see below).—ED.

been revealed. Science has sought it because it threw out revelation—this was a fatal mistake which began the whole controversy. If society does not have a revelation or “model” of beginnings which scientists can accept, then scientists should be more humble in speculations and not try to supply this by means of groundless projections.

2. Beginnings by their very nature are *metaphysical*, miraculous. If we can know them at all, it is only by revelation. If we *can't* know them, then don't guess.
3. All “scientific” hypotheses about beginnings are only a cheap imitation of theology—no “God,” but a “cosmic tapioca” instead; no “creation,” but a “big bang” instead—this is ridiculous. Scientists don't realize the ridiculousness of it because they have no theological awareness. Beginnings are “off bounds” to scientists—they seek them only because of the crisis of religious *awareness* and knowledge in modern times, which has led the secular sciences to usurp the role of theology, [and] human guesses [to usurp] the role of revelation.
4. Once the miraculousness of beginnings is admitted, then other questions in evolution take on new light. The conflict between “gradual evolution” and “Six-Day creation” is seen in a new light—either one is equally thinkable (cf. Julian Huxley: “I can conceive of a six-day creation—but there is no God to do it!”). *Then* the question becomes, not whether one is *proved* by present scientific findings (*neither* one is—science can't do it!) but: how can I make the best whole picture, incorporating true scientific findings and true knowledge of revelation?

#### B. The Six Days.

1. False ideas of Day-Age: “1,000 years = 1 day.”\* This is too

---

\* Fr. Seraphim is speaking here of the extrapolation of 2 Peter 3:8 onto the Six Days of Creation described in Genesis. In other notes he writes: “St. Peter's words (‘One day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day’) is a general truth, not applicable to every use of the word ‘day’ in Scripture; we must examine the Genesis case individually.” Indeed, St. Peter's statement has nothing to do

low a level of “reconciliation”; it does not remove the main problem.

2. The Patristic view: the Holy Fathers didn’t really discuss the question as we see it because the evolutionary idea wasn’t present. It seems *assumed* that the days are very short—cf. Gregory the Theologian on the “newly created earth” for Adam, St. Ephraim the Syrian, etc.\*
  3. But a much more fundamental question is the *corruption* of the world in those Six Days—cf. St. Symeon the New Theologian. The most consistent interpretation of the Holy Fathers is that the world knew no corruption until Adam’s fall. If this is accepted, then the greater part of evolution’s schema of prehistory is thrown out. Some (e.g., Kalomiros) would elaborately justify the evolutionary view, taking St. Gregory of Nyssa’s “two creations,” etc., and showing the “full agreement” of the Fathers with the idea that the world was corrupt from the very beginning—this is obviously exaggerated.
  4. Science enlightened by faith does not need to *force* any interpretation on the Six Days which would contradict scientific uniformitarian assumptions—but at least it will withhold *certainly* of opinions in the face of the *possibility* of a radically different world before Adam’s fall. This is also bound up with the question of *beginnings*. Those Six Days are part of the *Creation* (i.e., the metaphysical realm, miraculous), and hence all the more unknowable in detail.
- C. “Fixity of Species”—“Special Creation.”
1. There has been much unnecessary controversy on this question. “Kinds” vs. “species.” The popular mind accepts mere “variation” as proof of a much bigger question of “evolu-

---

with the Six Days of Creation, nor is it meant to define the length of a day; rather, it is simile, drawn from Psalm 89:4, intended to illustrate the fact that God is outside of time. The application of St. Peter’s statement to the timespan of the Six Days of Creation is a modern conceit, not found in the writings of the Holy Fathers (see ACCS: New Testament 11, pp. 158–59).—ED.

\* See pp. 436, 442–43 above.—ED.

tion." We leave it to scientists to define the limits of change observable to them. By its grandiose conception, evolution as such cannot be *proved* by the small variations observable by science today.

2. But revelation and the Patristic witness definitely have something to say on this point: St. Basil (an "eagle always produces an eagle"), St. Ambrose (the mule, a donkey-horse hybrid, is infertile; this is a sign to man: "Man, don't interfere"). Science, of course, does not deny the stability and the fixity of kinds (and the sterility of hybrids) in *present experience*; but evolutionary belief requires that the ultimate ancestors of living creatures are not many but one. But why?—Because theology (the question of "beginnings" again!) has intruded into science. This is beyond proof. And science is faced with the fact that an immense number of "links" are missing between kinds, both today and in fossils.
3. A philosophical point: quote St. Gregory of Nyssa on the "confusion of natures" that occurs if reincarnation is accepted; it is the same if one accepts evolution.
4. Let scientists define the limits of variation, and let them use the word and concept of "evolution" in explaining change—but let them abandon metaphysical schemes which strive to extrapolate small changes into an all-encompassing principle. If this latter is true, let it come naturally from the data without forcing an interpretation on facts.

D. The "first-formed man."

1. Here a whole series of questions arise, and perhaps this is the one area where there is a serious clash between the evolutionary hypothesis and revealed knowledge. Let us carefully separate the different questions involved.
2. "From the dust."
  - a) There have been attempts to explain this by quoting St. Athanasius ("*all* men are from the dust")—i.e., there is "nothing special" about this creation.
  - b) But the Fathers precisely emphasize the *specialness* of

man's creation (cf. St. Basil)—of course, not by the literal *hand* of God, but separate from all other acts of creation; it is something higher.

3. Apology for evolution:

- a) The idea that Adam came last, and therefore “*descended*” from the rest of creation. Quote St. Gregory the Theologian on *why* he came last; St. Gregory of Nyssa. *Nothing* can be inferred from the Scriptures or the Fathers favoring the evolution of man—you must project this belief into the texts.
- b) The very narrative of Genesis says the body came first, then the soul—cf. St. John Chrysostom (Adam was first a “dummy”) and St. Seraphim (Adam was first a “living creature”—some base their whole evolutionist argument on this nineteenth-century Father!). But we must clearly distinguish between the truth and the way it is described owing to the limitations of human language. Sts. Chrysostom and Seraphim are not discussing the *chronological* creation of man, but the composite *nature* of man, on which they do not (incidentally) *disagree* but only have a different perspective. But quote St. John Damascene and St. Gregory of Nyssa on the *simultaneous* creation of man.
- c) Some, wishing to preserve both the Scripture and evolution, insert the “divine” act of man’s creation rather arbitrarily into the evolutionary history of man (as Teilhard de Chardin said might be done). Some would have man evolved from lower beasts, but with a separate “——”;\* others would have him a beast until God breathed in his “soul” or “grace.”—All such arguments are artificial: science does not need them to explain man as it thinks he is, and from the theological side it is arbitrary to stick a human soul into an otherwise “natural” process.

4. Can Adam have non-human ancestors?

- a) Evolution says yes—so much so that if you deny this

---

\* Fr. Seraphim’s handwriting is unclear here.—ED.



- point you really do away with evolution, which is nothing if it is not universal.
- b) Quote the Fathers on the first-*formed* man with no father or mother. The Fathers clearly believed him to have no ancestors of any kind.
5. A related question: the age of man, the antiquity of Adam.
- a) All the Fathers accept the Old Testament chronology, ca. 7,500 years. One writer [Dr. Kalomiros] says this is “Jewish rationalism”; others point out the discrepancy between the Greek and Hebrew texts. Quote Blessed Augustine on this point—the Fathers were not “literal,” but said “more or less.” Latest Protestant apologists also have become less literal on this, but point out the difference between a man *millions* of years old, and some 6,000–10,000 years.\*
  - b) Genealogies of Christ show that Adam is the “son of God.” The Fathers are very concerned to reconcile discrepancies and show that this is a literal genealogy, not a list of “symbolic ancestors.” Thus, man is some thousands of years old, not millions.
6. One Adam or many?
- a) “Polygenism”—commonly accepted in evolutionist circles—makes no sense for man. Adam is a person.
7. The creation of Eve.
- a) This is a stumbling block for evolutionists. If this is “literal,” then the evolutionary hypothesis does not apply to man; if he is “evolved” then he is already male and female like all the rest of “evolved” nature.
  - b) Quote the Fathers—Sts. John Chrysostom, Ephraim the Syrian, and others.
  - c) Again, it is a question of “beginnings” which science itself is unprepared to handle. If scientists regard it as “absurd,” it is primarily on nonscientific grounds.

---

\* See, for example, appendix 2 in John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Flood*.—ED.

## OUTLINES OF PROPOSED STUDIES

8. The *nature* of the first-formed man—Paradise.
  - a) A real place? or symbolism? All the Fathers assume Paradise is a reality. If Paradise is unreal, and Adam never had a state unfallen—then heaven itself becomes dubious, and the transfigured state of man is open to question.
9. The fall of man.
  - a) Again, let's not get bogged down in details.
  - b) Is it an historical act?
  - c) The consequences—sin and death are passed to us.

### VI. Conclusions.

- A. Give the Orthodox Patristic “model” of creation.
- B. Science is afraid of it because, under the influence not of purely scientific consideration but rather shaped by the modern *philosophic* mentality, it fears the metaphysical or supernatural. But its own speculations on beginnings are *also* metaphysical and supernatural.
- C. The weakness of the theory of evolution as a sweeping theory (as opposed to its applications on small areas) lies in the fact that it refuses to admit the metaphysical where it naturally belongs. If we can know beginnings, it is only through revelation. If not, it's all guesses. Here revelation and faith must come to the aid of science and *raise* it up to see better.

## 2. Patristic Section

### I. Introduction.

- A. This will not be only Patristic theology, but also Patristic *philosophy*: the views of the Fathers on questions that are not directly dogmatic. The disruption of knowledge brought about by a disproportionate emphasis on logic and science in the modern West has affected many Orthodox thinkers also. One effect has been to place “theology” and “philosophy” and “science” in watertight compartments. This results in the retreat of theology before science, which gives a large part of one's “worldview” now. This makes it possible for very fervent and zealous Orthodox Christians to think they can believe *both* in

the Patristic account of creation and in evolution—as if the two were entirely distinct. No, they overlap, and there is a place of conflict which can only be resolved by applying the Patristic *philosophy* to the whole of one's worldview.

- B. The distinction, of course, must be made between the realm of *facts* (and those views which depend on facts) and the realm of philosophy as such; quote Fr. Michael Pomazansky on St. Basil and St. John of Kronstadt. The Fathers to be sure can be mistaken in their views if these depend on facts which are wrong; we must read them with discernment and no preconceived notions.
- II. The question of “Nature” and “Seed.”
  - A. This is not a scientific but a philosophical question. Even the idea of “species” is arbitrary, as scientists admit. Philosophy, on the other hand, does not demand that we know all the *details* of the distinctions and similarities and categories of creatures, but it has a definite view about the idea of the “natures” of things.
  - B. The evolutionary view constitutes a philosophy in itself: that nature in principle is fluid, one kind of creature becoming another kind, and all creatures proceeding from one or a few primitive types. This is a sweeping philosophy for which, *of course*, there is no proof whatever...<sup>\*</sup> Since this vast view of evolution is *not* scientific but philosophical, we must criticize it on the basis of Patristic philosophy.
  - C. St. Gregory of Nyssa, in *On the Resurrection*, teaches that nature is not confused, and things are distinct, each with its own nature. The book of Genesis says “each according to its kind.” So also St. Basil and St. Ambrose.... The Patristic view is definitely that natures are distinct and don't mingle, and that this is the way God created them. “Freaks” are clearly exceptions. The evolutionary philosophy of “one nature” running through all creation is unfounded scientifically and un-Patristic philosophically, and is the

---

<sup>\*</sup> In another working outline, Fr. Seraphim elucidated this point: “‘Evolution’ is a *philosophical*, not a scientific question. It goes beyond all scientific facts, or rather jumps from the observable facts of variation to an all-encompassing philosophical theory which has no *proof* but only ‘semblances’ of proof.”—ED.

opposite of the heresy of the preexistence and transmigration of souls, about which more will be said below.

### III. The Creation of the Six Days.

- A. If the Patristic philosophy of “nature” is different from that of evolution, the Patristic idea of the *creation* of nature must likewise differ. Here we must think precisely on a number of points.
- B. Kalomiros: quote St. Gregory of Nyssa, and the popular idea that Genesis describes creation just like modern science. But this is very vague.
- C. Twenty-four-hour days: is this some kind of defect in the Fathers, a “fundamentalism” before its time, a captivity of pre-modern science?
- D. No: there is profound meaning in it.
  1. God’s omnipotence and *swift* action is emphasized, for one’s idea of nature is indeed dependent on one’s idea of God. We shall see later that the “God” of “evolutionists” is not at all the God of Christians.
  2. The Six Days are a mean between extremes,\* and define the nature of time.
  3. The nature of the creative process (and of the first-created world) is understood by the Fathers *quite differently* from evolutionism. Evolutionism merely *projects* present natural laws into the beginnings, without seeing that Genesis, the beginning of all things, is something quite distinct from the present state of things, and knowledge of it is not available to science but only through revelation. Which brings us to the key point:

### IV. The Patristic Interpretation of Genesis.

- A. Moses; Divine knowledge; the realism of the Fathers.
- B. The nature of our knowledge of the first-created world.

### V. The first-created world; the fall.

### VI. Adam and the nature of man.

---

\* By “extremes,” Fr. Seraphim is evidently referring to the idea of a totally instantaneous creation on the one hand (see pp. 121, 140–42, 140–41n, 436, 439–42 above), and the idea of evolution over vast periods of time on the other.—ED.



Fr. Seraphim talking with pilgrims during the St. Herman Summer Pilgrimage in August 1982, at which he began the second segment of his course on Genesis.  
St. Herman of Alaska Monastery, Platina, California.

## AFTERWORD

### *Fr. Seraphim's Last Talk on Creation and Evolution*

*EDITOR'S NOTE: The following talk, taken entirely from a tape transcription, was given as an introduction to the second segment of Fr. Seraphim's course on Genesis, August 9, 1982. Several of his students were new, not having attended the first segment in August 1981. Therefore, before providing a Patristic commentary on the fourth to eleventh chapters of Genesis (from Cain and Abel to the Tower of Babel), Fr. Seraphim recapped what he had said during the first segment about science as it relates to Scripture and the Holy Fathers. A few weeks after giving this talk, he was taken to the hospital, and on September 2 he reposed in the Lord.*

THE QUESTION of how we approach the book of Genesis is bound up with our modern outlook on life. We have all been brainwashed. Whoever watches television or goes to school hears certain ideas put across in the name of science, some of which are scientific and some of which are not scientific—they are speculations. Some of what is put across is philosophy, and some of it even comes close to a kind of religion.

This is especially strong in the Soviet Union, where they teach that man has descended from monkeys. The Soviet state pushes this idea as a kind of dogma. Therefore, when people become Christian, they throw off this idea that had been forced upon them. Here in the West, on the other hand, it is not quite so easy to see it as dogma, because here we are free; science is supposed to be free and have its own theo-

ries and its own reasons for having these theories. Therefore, often we think something is a scientific truth when it is not so at all, but rather is open to speculation and to discussion. Unfortunately, this very subject of evolutionism is very emotion-charged, and therefore a lot of people are not willing to discuss it. They would rather accept whatever is in the air, whatever is taught in the science class, without thinking too much.

Another reason why people do not want to think about or discuss this issue is because it is very complicated. You can get involved in all kinds of complex questions which are totally irrelevant. For example, you tell somebody, "I don't believe that man comes from a monkey"; and he says, "But science doesn't teach that man comes from a monkey."

"Well, I don't believe that he comes from an ape."

"But science doesn't teach he comes from an ape. Science teaches he comes from a lower creature which is not an ape, but something else."\*

In fact, nowadays some evolutionists say that some of the apes descended from men, instead of vice versa.\*\* There are all kinds of evidence you can add up on whatever side you want to take. All these details aside, however, there are certain basic questions one can ask. "Does man come directly from the hand of God, or does he come from some lower creature?"—That is a very basic question which should be

---

\* Apologists for evolutionism have often used this argument—that man did not descend from an ape but from an earlier common ancestor—to show that their opponents do not properly understand evolution. However, a leading atheistic evolutionary paleontologist, the late George Gaylord Simpson, called this sort of argument "pussyfooting." He wrote: "In fact, that earlier ancestor would certainly be called an ape or monkey in popular speech by anyone who saw it. Since the terms ape and monkey are defined by popular usage, man's ancestors were apes or monkeys (or successively both). It is pusillanimous if not dishonest for an informed investigator to say otherwise" (Simpson, "The World into Which Darwin Led Us," *Science*, vol. 131, no. 3405 [April 1, 1960], p. 966).—ED.

\*\* John Gribbin and Jeremy Cherfas, in their article "Descent of Man—or Ascent of Ape?," write: "To translate our suggestion into that form of speech, we think that the chimp is descended from man, that the common ancestor of the two was more man-like than ape-like" (*New Scientist*, vol. 91 [Sept. 3, 1981], p. 592).—ED.

open to discussion. And there are two ways of approaching the discussion: one from the side of Genesis (and we have to know how to understand what the book of Genesis says), the other from the side of science.

It so happens that science is not at all as certain about this question as some people claim it is. The Soviets say that everything is quite certain and dogmatic about it, and you simply accept what the scientists tell you and that is the truth. In the West, fortunately, there has been a lot of criticism and discussion of this matter.

When Darwin's theory first came out in the late nineteenth century, there was a lot of discussion, most of it not on a very high level. People in the Church of England, for example, were very upset by the whole idea that man came from a lower creature, but they did not have any really scientific preparation to discuss the question; therefore, they became "fundamental" about it. In fact, up to this day, there are fundamentalists who get up in arms whenever you mention the subject. They say everything is absolutely literal in the book of Genesis; they go to the opposite extreme and make it very difficult to have a rational discussion on the subject.

On the whole, the scientific discussion was still not on a very high level when, in 1925, there occurred the famous "Scopes Monkey Trial," which you have all heard about. In Tennessee there was a law\* against the teaching of evolution, and a teacher volunteered to be a nominal defendant in a test case. Actually the state won that case; but the famous lawyer Clarence Darrow made such a case for how ridiculous it is to stand by these old Biblical ideas—which are not "scientific," and so forth—that from that time everybody became scared to be against evolution. Thus, those who were against it just remained quiet and did not have any particular argument. (There were actually some good books in that period which criticized the theory of evolution, but they were outside the main trend.) Even very fundamentalist people often would give way on various points about the theory of evolution, or else they would not want to discuss evolution because it

---

\* Actually it was merely a symbolic measure. The governor signed the bill only with the explicit understanding that it would not be enforced.—ED.



was too difficult. And there are so many complex issues involved that it *is* a very difficult subject to discuss rationally unless you are prepared.

However, in the last twenty years or so there have been a number of people who have been looking at this whole question a little more objectively, criticizing and discussing sometimes various small points, sometimes the whole theory. This has been a very good thing. Science should welcome it. Unfortunately, it has not been too well received in scientific circles.

I've become acquainted with these people. There is one group in San Diego called the Institute for Creation Research; they put out a monthly newsletter called *Acts & Facts* which discusses what is happening in their research. Usually it has an insert which goes into a specific scientific question. For example, one is on the law of entropy and creationism, another one is on experimental psychology, and so forth; there are often quite sophisticated discussions. They discuss the age of the earth, the age of the solar system, and all those questions which you have to know about if you are going into the scientific side of this issue.

These people are very good. Their Institute is a Protestant religious school, but they are operating purely on the basis of scientific criticism.\* They put out a number of textbooks, including a very good one called *Scientific Creationism*, in which they discuss all the various points about evolution and creation without mentioning anything religious, because if they were to start mentioning religious things, of course, their textbook could never be used in a high school or a college. In the last few years especially, they have gotten quite a bit of impetus behind them. They have been having a number of debates in big universities all over the country, and there has been great

---

\*The Institute currently has some forty Ph.D. scientists on its resident faculty, adjunct faculty, and advisory board. A number of Ph.D. scientists are also employed by creationist organizations that have been established since Fr. Seraphim's repose, most notably Creation Ministries International (centered in Queensland, Australia, with offices in the United States and other countries) and Answers in Genesis (centered in Kentucky, with offices in the United Kingdom).—ED.

interest—students come out by the thousands.\* The student response depends on where the debate takes place. If it occurs in a university in California, the students will be more against creationist ideas. In the South, the students are more in favor of them. In fact, in one place the evolutionists who were debating said they felt like they were a lion in a den of Daniels: everything was reversed.

The discussions of the creation scientists are very interesting. They are quite up on the latest literature and discoveries. On the other hand, recently some of the evolutionists have stopped debating creation/evolution because they generally are not prepared. A number of them recently admitted that, since these creationists are so up on their details and so sharp in debate, they are putting the evolutionists to shame.\*\* It is time, they say, that evolutionists go back and begin to find out what their arguments are, because through all these years they have been taking for granted that everyone thinks like they do. They were not ready for all the criticism from the side of creationism, which goes into quite specific points which are very dubious according to the evolutionist interpretation.

The Creation Research Society in Michigan now has a voting membership of well over six hundred scientists, all of whom signed a statement that they were in favor of the creationist interpretation of

---

\* Scientists from the Institute for Creation Research have participated in hundreds of formal creation/evolution debates, usually held on university campuses and opposing faculty evolutionary scientists. The foremost debater has been Dr. Duane Gish, who received his Ph.D. in biochemistry from U.C. Berkeley and held key positions at Berkeley, Cornell University Medical College, and the Upjohn Company before joining the Institute for Creation Research in 1971. When he retired in 2005 at the age of eighty-four, Gish had conducted over 350 debates with evolutionist professors, attended by large numbers of students. He never lost a debate.—ED.

\*\* In 1996 Dr. Eugenie Scott, executive director of the National Center for Science Education (a private organization dedicated to protecting the teaching of evolution from creationist challenges), warned her fellow evolutionists: *"Avoid debates.* If your local campus Christian fellowship asks you to 'defend evolution,' please decline ... you will probably get beaten" (Eugenie C. Scott, "Monkey Business," *The Sciences*, Jan.–Feb. 1996, p. 21).—ED.

origins.\* Therefore, if someone tells you that evolution is the only scientific interpretation, you should be aware that there are at least six hundred scientists who say no. There are thousands more who, although they would not make that actual statement, nevertheless sympathize and are willing to discuss the issue. In fact, one of our friends who is a scientist told us that more and more people in the scientific world, although they still stick to the evolution model, do not even insist that it is truth; it is for them a *model* that helps to explain how things came to be, how they are now developing, and so forth.

The creationists offer a visual presentation of two models—the creationist and the evolutionist—by which you can see what should happen according to the former and what should happen according to the latter. They say that the situation now is like it was in the time of Copernicus. Before Copernicus there was the geocentric model: that the sun, planets, and stars go around the earth. In order to explain how the planets move according to this interpretation, it was necessary to make so-called cycles and epicycles. For example, astronomers noticed that Mars appeared to go faster than the stars for a while, and then it suddenly went backwards. They had to figure out what kind of movement it needed to have in order to make it do this. If it was simply going around the earth, it was a very strange thing that it should be suddenly going backwards. Therefore, they had to make all kinds of adjustments in the sky to account for the fact that it did not follow a regular movement. Finally these movements and adjustments became so complicated that Copernicus said it was much easier to explain everything as if the earth and the planets went around the sun. The stars out there are comparatively fixed; they are further away than the plan-

---

\* Each of these voting members has one or more post-graduate degrees in science. The statement that they signed affirms that “all basic types of living things, including man, were made by God during the Creation Week described in Genesis,” and that “the great Flood described in Genesis ... was an historic event worldwide in its extent and effect.” Although voting members of the Society must have post-graduate science degrees, those without such degrees can be sustaining or student members. The Society publishes a peer-reviewed journal, *Creation Research Society Quarterly*; it is now centered in Missouri, and has an experiment station in north-central Arizona.—ED.

ets. According to this concept, you have to make fewer epicycles and fewer adjustments in the calculations.

The creation scientists say that this is exactly what is happening with the evolutionary theory. Whenever something comes up which goes against the evolutionary theory, the evolutionists put in another cycle or epicycle. They explain that it cannot really be that way because it goes against the theory, and that is why they have to make an adjustment for this particular exception. The creationists say, why not change the theory and make it more simple?

Unfortunately, there is a lot of prejudice in this area because people say that if you talk about creation, you're talking about religion. Actually, every scientific theory has to have something which is assumed on faith. The evolutionists assume their belief on faith. The really rigorous ones insist that once there was nothing or there was a point of tremendous energy which suddenly exploded and produced the universe. It requires a great amount of faith to believe that. If you believe in God, you have a whole different approach. Of course, if you believe in God, then, since He is infinite, He can do whatever He wants. Then you can be free to see what fits the scientific facts and what fits the text of Genesis.

One common mistake in approaching the book of Genesis is to say that it is something religious, maybe even myth, while science treats the factual aspect. That is an oversimplified view, because Genesis talks about truth, and thus there will be an overlapping between what science talks about—because science is trying to get to truth—and what Genesis talks about. We have to be aware that we cannot put them in two different categories. When people try to separate them in this way (which they very frequently do as an answer to the question) they do not treat Genesis as a serious text. They say Genesis is not to be interpreted as a text that actually talks about the origins of nature, except as a kind of speculation or as a handing down of ancient myths, Babylonian creation tales, or something like that.

Therefore, the question is: how are we going to approach this whole text of Genesis? I think we have only one answer. We have to understand how this text has been understood by the Church over the past two thousand years, because it is a text which comes from God—a

revealed text—and the Church which has preserved the revelation of God must have the way to understand it. Therefore, you cannot trust someone who simply opens up the text, in the English translation he has, and gives what seems to him to be a very basic interpretation. Furthermore, you cannot trust your own interpretation, because you are going to put your modern ideas into it. You are going to make it evolutionist or anti-evolutionist, according to your prejudice. That does not tell us what the text of Genesis says. To understand what it says, we have to understand how the Church understands it. In other words, what is the Patristic reading of it, how do the Fathers understand the text? That is what this course is about.

We discussed in the last year's course the first three chapters of Genesis, which are of course the "thickest" ones, requiring the most interpretation. These chapters discuss the whole Six Days of Creation, the creation of man, the fall of man, the state of Paradise, and man's banishment from Paradise.

Last year we saw that the interpretation of the Holy Fathers is not exactly what the Protestants would be satisfied with because it is not "fundamental" enough in some respects; and the people who want to combine Genesis with the modern theory of evolution would also not be satisfied with it because it is much too "fundamental" for them. Actually, if you want one word to describe how the Fathers interpret Genesis, I think you can say they interpret it very *realistically*. That is, first of all, they accept that (and this is a very basic point) the text is *Divinely inspired*. In fact, St. John Chrysostom says that it is a book of *prophecy*.\* Some books prophesy the future, but the book of Genesis is a *prophecy of the past*. This is necessary because, when the world was created, there was no witness. You cannot possibly have someone give you a firsthand account of what happened at the beginning of the world, because there was no one there. Therefore, unless the One Who made the world Himself tells you, you will never know—all you will have will be guesses.

According to the Holy Fathers, however, we *do* have this knowledge because God revealed it to the prophet Moses. Moses was in a

---

\* See p. 131 above.—ED.

state of ecstasy when he received this text about the beginnings of the world; therefore, we have to read Genesis rather as we would read the book of the Apocalypse, the last book of the Bible, which deals with prophecies which have not been fulfilled yet and so is rather difficult to understand.

Genesis, then, should be understood as prophecy, according to the Holy Fathers, according to the rest of the Holy Scripture, and according to our own experience in the Church. A lot of it, of course, is beyond us; therefore we can say only a few things about some parts of the text.

So we approach this text as Divinely revealed, realizing that we will obtain a basic understanding of it not through our common sense, nor through science (although of course we have to use common sense also, and we can use science where it applies to a given text), but through the Holy Fathers.

This raises another question. People who are scientifically aware will say the Fathers made mistakes in science. For example, St. Basil the Great, in his writings on the Six Days of Creation, states that there are some creatures, such as certain frogs, which spontaneously come from the dust.<sup>1</sup> This was according to the science of his day. Knowing this isn't true, people in modern times say that the man made a mistake, since the science of his day, through which he was interpreting the scientific aspect, was wrong. And it is true that, in this respect, when there are scientific facts, we can correct the writings of the Holy Fathers. Some people, however, think this means we can correct the text of Genesis. But if you look at the text of Genesis, you will see that whenever the Fathers make these misinterpretations because of their knowledge of the science of their day, it is not because the text of Genesis says that. It is because that is the most logical way to read it on the basis of the scientific knowledge. Today we would have a little different way of reading it, and we might be more correct. The text remains the same.

Actually there is not a single statement in the text of Genesis which commits one either to the idea that the sun is going around the earth or the earth around the sun, or anything of the sort. That is all a matter of later interpretation, dependent upon our scientific awareness. Thus the text of Genesis is not open to this criticism of science.

We might correct the interpretation of the Fathers if it deals with specific scientific questions like where frogs come from or something like that.

By the way, we should also not be afraid of science in interpreting the book of Genesis because all the writings of the Holy Fathers about the Six Days of Creation are *filled* with scientific facts, based on the science of their day. For example, when St. Basil discusses the creation of the birds, fish, or land animals, he goes into all the different kinds and explains their customs. He then tells how we can draw examples of moral life from them, like a bird that is faithful to its mate. That is all very nice and interesting, but the text of Genesis does not stand or fall on that. This is explanatory material. Actually, someone today could go into the scientific facts we have about creation, using these as explanatory material, and could write a tremendous book on this very subject of the Six Days of Creation. Unfortunately, people tend to be too narrow-minded nowadays; the scientists will not broaden their horizon enough to take in the whole aspect of Genesis. The ones who read Genesis usually are not prepared enough for the scientific side. Nevertheless, we can keep this possibility in mind; the subject is a very fruitful area for discussion.

Also, we are not to be afraid of science because science cannot possibly contradict revealed truth. If it's truth, it's truth. There's one kind revealed from God, and one kind revealed in nature. The kind revealed from God is absolute, we say, because it comes directly from God. But its interpretation relies upon our wisdom, which we obtain from the Church and the Holy Fathers as we go. When we have understood that, then we can even make our own speculations, as long as we do not say that those speculations are on the same level as the text itself. Science is much more speculative, especially when it comes to these very early things like the creation of the world, since no one was there to see it.

I should mention also a basic fact about the first Six Days of Creation that we discussed last year: those Six Days are quite different from what is going on now. The Holy Fathers make it quite clear that you cannot make deductions based upon what is happening now and derive an understanding of the first Six Days of Creation, because what

was happening then was the creation of the world *out of nothing*. That is not happening today. Now we have the continuous creative activity of God. St. John Chrysostom discusses this very matter in his commentary on Genesis.\* As he points out, in Genesis it is said that God rested from His works (cf. Gen. 2:2), that is, ceased to create, but our Lord in the Gospel of John says that the Father continues to work (cf. John 5:17), and therefore He must still be creating. So these are two different things. What was in the beginning was the creation of God, from which He rested. That is no longer taking place. What happens after that is His continuous Providence over the world, which is actually a continuous creation, because without the living Word of God, how could a seed become an individual person or plant or animal? It is all very miraculous and a work of creation, but it's *different* from the creation which was at the beginning, in the first Six Days. If you do not see that, you will make a lot of mistakes.

We will see in our reading of the next chapters of Genesis—four through eleven—that there is even a basic difference between the way men were before the Flood and the way they were after the Flood. There are a number of things which changed with the Flood. But it was in the Six Days that everything we know now came to be, and after that is simply the continuation of those things which were already created, according to the laws which God made and gave to nature.

---

\* See p. 192 above.—ED.





St. Maximus the Confessor (580–662) and  
 St. Symeon the New Theologian (949–1022).  
*Fresco from the Trinity–Sypanov St. Pachomius of Nerekhta Convent of the  
 Kostroma Diocese, Russia. A. V. Alyoshin School of Iconography, 2005.*

## APPENDIX ONE

### *Created in Incorruption*

THE ORTHODOX PATRISTIC UNDERSTANDING  
OF MAN AND THE COSMOS IN THEIR ORIGINAL,  
FALLEN, AND REDEEMED STATES

By the editor

*Adapted from a talk given at the conference on “Orthodoxy and the Natural Environment,” St. Nicholas Ranch, Dunlap, California, October 27, 2007, and again at the International Nativity Educational Readings of the Moscow Patriarchate, in the section “The Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science,” held at the Moscow State University of Railway Engineering, January 30, 2008.*

*Through sin, this cosmos became a place of death and corruption.*

—St. Maximus the Confessor<sup>1</sup>

#### I. INTRODUCTION

THE consensus of the Holy Fathers of the Orthodox Church holds that man and the rest of the visible creation were physically *incorrupt* (ἄφθαρτος, without decay) before the fall of man, and that death and corruption entered the world only at the fall. This doctrine is based on a common interpretation of both the Old and New Testaments. In the book of Genesis we learn that man was made subject to death and that the earth was “cursed” at the fall (Gen. 3:17–19). In the Wisdom of Solomon it is said that God did not make death and did not create living things for destruction (Wis. 1:13–14), and further

that man was created to be incorruptible (Wis. 2:23–24). This teaching is repeated in the New Testament by St. Paul, where he affirms that death came into the world through man's sin (Rom. 5:12, 17; 1 Cor. 15:21–22), that because of man the creation was made subject to "futility" (Rom. 8:20), and that the creation and man himself await deliverance from the "bondage of corruption" (Rom. 8:19, 21–23) at the general resurrection.

The common Patristic interpretation of this Scriptural teaching finds concise expression in the theology of St. Symeon the New Theologian, who writes as follows on the incorruption of man and the world in the beginning, and on their fall into corruption:

Adam was created with an incorruptible body, though one which was material and on the whole not yet spiritual, and was established by God the Creator as the immortal king of an incorrupt world, and I mean by the latter everything under heaven and not just Paradise....<sup>2</sup>

You see then that not unreasonably do we say that all the creation was also incorrupt from the beginning, and was furnished by God after the order of Paradise, but was cursed with corruption and led into bondage when it was subjected to the futility of men (cf. Rom. 8:20–21).<sup>3</sup>

This Scriptural-Patristic teaching, that death and corruption entered the cosmos only at the fall, is a basic tenet of the Orthodox Christian worldview. It is tied to, and indeed forms an integral part of, Orthodox anthropology, soteriology, and eschatology. Because this teaching is such a crucial one, and because today's secular worldview militates against it, it is worthy to be examined in depth. In this article we will attempt to present it in a generally chronological manner, outlining first the incorrupt state of man and the cosmos before the fall; then the death and corruption that entered at the fall; and finally the redemption and salvation of man and the cosmos by the incarnate Son of God, culminating in their final, perfected state after the general resurrection, when death and corruption will be permanently overcome. We will then discuss how, specifically, the Orthodox Church's teaching on prelapsarian incorruption relates to her teaching on the redemption of

man and the cosmos, and on their final, redeemed condition. Further, we will contrast this teaching and its theological corollaries with the modern secular worldview of evolutionism. In conclusion, we will consider how the Orthodox understanding of the first-created world, the fall, and the future age can inform our faith as Orthodox Christians.

## II. THE ORIGINAL CONDITION OF MAN

### *1. Man's Spiritual Condition before the Fall*

Before examining the subject of the original incorruption of the entire cosmos, let us begin by looking specifically at the original state of man, who St. Symeon the New Theologian says was created as “lord and king of all the visible creation,”<sup>4</sup> and who, in the words of St. John Chrysostom, is “more precious to God than all creation.”<sup>5</sup>

According to the Orthodox Patristic worldview, the entire visible universe was made for the sake of man, and man was made for union with God. Man was created “in Divine grace,” as St. Gregory of Nyssa affirms.<sup>6</sup> St. John Chrysostom writes that “the glory from above garbed them [Adam and Eve] better than any garment.”<sup>7</sup> Likewise, St. John Damascene states that, in Paradise, Adam “had the indwelling God as a dwelling place and wore Him as a glorious garment. He was wrapped about with His grace.”<sup>8</sup>

The Orthodox Church understands grace to be the very Energy of God, distinct yet inseparable from the Divine Essence. God is wholly present in His Energies. Therefore, when man was created in grace, he had God Himself within him. He was meant to participate in God’s life through the Divine Energies, to be fully and perfectly penetrated by grace, and thus to attain to union with God—a union which the Holy Fathers do not hesitate to call deification (*θέωσις*).

St. John Damascene teaches that Adam was not deified at his creation, but was created *for* deification: he was “to complete the mystery by being deified through reversion to God—this, however, not by being transformed into the Divine Essence, but by participation in the Divine illumination.”<sup>9</sup>

## 2. Man's Physical Condition before the Fall

In the Wisdom of Solomon it is said: "God made man for incorruption, and made him to be an image of His own eternity. Nevertheless, through the envy of the devil death came into the world" (Wis. 2:23–24). It is the unquestionable testimony of the Church that Adam and Eve were created *conditionally* immortal; that is, if they had not sinned they could have lived forever in incorrupt bodies, partaking of the tree of life in Paradise, and eventually attaining to heaven as well. There was no necessity either in their remaining incorrupt or in their falling into corruption: their free will was the determining factor. In the words of St. Irenaeus of Lyons:

God placed certain limits upon man, so that, if he should keep the commandment of God, he would remain always as he was, that is, immortal. If, however, he should not keep it, he would become mortal, dissolving into the earth whence his frame was taken.<sup>10</sup>

Likewise, St. Athanasius the Great:

Knowing that the free will of man could incline to either side, in anticipation He [God] made secure the grace given them, by means of a law and a place. For, bringing them into His own Paradise [Garden], He gave them a law, so that, if they guarded the grace and remained good, they might possess the life in Paradise which is free of sorrow, pain or care, besides having the promise of incorruption in heaven.<sup>11</sup> \*

---

\* For further discussion of St. Athanasius' teaching on the immortality of man before the fall, see pp. 738–41, 738–39nn, 741n below. On our first parents' immortality and incorruption being dependent on the use of their free will, see also St. Justin Martyr, *Dialogue with Trypho* 124; St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.24, 2.27; St. Methodius of Olympus, *From the Discourse on the Resurrection* 1.13; St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 2.17.3; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 10; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61; St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.30; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.2; St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 8; St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 31; etc.

That the first man was granted conditional immortality at his creation was affirmed in a Canon approved at the Council of Carthage in 419 and ratified at the Quinisext Council (692)\* and the Seventh Ecumenical Council (787):

Whosoever says that Adam, the first man, was created mortal, so that whether he had sinned or not, he would have died in body—that is, he would have gone forth from the body, not because his sin merited this, but by natural necessity—let him be anathema.<sup>12</sup>

Originally, the incorrupt bodies of Adam and Eve did not have, in the phrase of St. Gregory the Theologian, the “denser flesh, mortal and unyielding,” that our bodies now have.<sup>13</sup> As St. Maximus the Confessor wrote in elucidating the Theologian’s words, “The human body in the forefather Adam before the transgression ... did not have the corruption that now whips him with its goads,” and was thus without a “constitution which makes the flesh denser,\*\* mortal, and unyielding.”<sup>14</sup>\*\*\* According to St. Gregory the Sinaite, when “man was created incorruptible,” he was “without bodily humors.”<sup>15</sup>\*\*\*\*

From the writings of many Holy Fathers—Sts. Irenaeus of Lyons,

---

\* The Quinisext Council in Trullo was held twelve years after the Sixth Ecumenical Council. As noted earlier, its decrees are accepted in the Orthodox Church as a continuation of the acts of the Fifth and Sixth Councils.

\*\* The word translated here as “denser,” *παχυτέραν*, denotes the qualities of grossness, materiality, denseness, coarseness, and earthliness. Together with Sts. Gregory the Theologian and Maximus the Confessor, other Holy Fathers (e.g., St. Sophronius of Jerusalem, St. John Damascene, St. Gregory the Sinaite, and Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria) used this term to describe a characteristic that the human body acquired at the fall and will lose in the resurrection; see the quotations on p. 487, 487n above and pp. 700, 700n, 719–20, 720n, 766, 766n, 768, 768n below.

\*\*\* The word translated as “unyielding,” *ἀντίτυπον*, could be variously rendered as “obstinate,” “resistant,” “rigid,” “contradictory,” or “opposing”; also, when referring (as in this case) to a body, it can mean “solid,” “firm,” or “tough.”

\*\*\*\* The word that St. Gregory the Sinaite employs here, *χυμοί*, denotes the liquid substances contained in the body. In the translations of this passage of St. Gregory found in the Slavonic and Russian versions of *The Philokalia* (*Dobrotolyubiye*)—the works of St. Paisius Velichkovsky and St. Theophan the Recluse respectively—*χυμοί* is rendered as *мокроты/мокрота*, which means “moistures.”

Ephraim the Syrian, Athanasius the Great, Gregory of Nyssa, John Chrysostom, Theodoret of Cyrus, John Damascene, Maximus the Confessor, Symeon the New Theologian, Gregory the Sinaite, and Gregory Palamas—we know that, before the fall, Adam and Eve were free from the bodily needs of shelter and clothing,<sup>16</sup> and even of sleep;<sup>17</sup> they had no sexual relations or even sexual passions;<sup>18</sup> there was no emission of seed;<sup>19</sup> their eyes did not produce tears;<sup>20</sup> they partook of incorruptible fruits, but did not void bodily waste;<sup>21</sup> \* they had no afflictions, infirmities, illness, disease, physical defects, or maimings of the body;<sup>22</sup> they knew no difficulties, sorrows, labors, sweat, hunger, or thirst;<sup>23</sup> they did not experience physical pain;<sup>24</sup> they were not subject to cold and heat, or to the elements.<sup>25</sup> Thus, writes St. John Chrysostom, before the fall man's existence was akin to that of the angels:

Up until that time [of the fall] they were living like angels in Paradise and so they were not burning with desire, not assaulted by other passions, not subject to the needs of nature, but on the contrary were created incorruptible and immortal, and on that account at any rate they had no need to wear clothes....

Consider, I ask you, the transcendence of their blessed condition, how they were superior to all bodily concerns, how they lived on earth as if they were in heaven, and though in fact possessing a body they did not feel the limitations of their bodies. After all, they had no need of shelter or habitation, clothing or anything of that kind....

Everything, you see, He [God] made and arranged so that this rational being [man] created by Him had the good fortune to be of

---

\* St. Symeon taught that man needed to eat incorrupt fruit before the fall (see pp. 704, 769 below), while St. Maximus taught that Adam would not have lost his immortality if he had obeyed God and been nourished from the tree of life (cf. Gen. 2:9). St. Gregory of Nyssa and St. Gregory the Sinaite listed feeding as a mark of the corruption that came into existence at the fall; however, both of them listed it together with the voiding of bodily waste. From the sum of the Patristic teaching on this subject, we can conclude that, while incorrupt man did eat incorrupt food before the fall, this eating was not the same as what we know today, when the food undergoes corruption and waste is excreted.

the greatest importance, and far from being inferior to the life of the angels, enjoyed in the body their immunity from suffering.<sup>26</sup>

Elsewhere St. John Chrysostom writes that, before the fall, Adam and Eve

lived in Paradise as in heaven and they enjoyed God's company. Desire for sexual intercourse, conception, labor, childbirth, and every form of corruption had been banished from their souls.... At that time there were no cities, crafts, or houses.... Nevertheless, nothing either thwarted or hindered that happy life, which was far better than this one.<sup>27</sup>

### *3. Desire and Pleasure before the Fall*

Describing man's original condition, St. Symeon the New Theologian writes that

fiery lust or movement, or the irrational madness and desire of the stomach, as yet did not at all exist, but in him [Adam] was life without internal discord, and his existence was free from pain.<sup>28</sup>

Elsewhere, the same Saint says that the fruits in Paradise afforded first-created man with "indescribable pleasure and enjoyment."\* From these two statements it may be concluded that, in experiencing "pleasure and enjoyment" in created things prior to the fall, the first humans did not experience irrational desire for them.

According to St. Maximus the Confessor, at his creation man was supposed to direct his desire and longing not to created things but to God, and to find his pleasure (ἡδονή) in Him:

When God created human nature, He did not create sensible pleasure and pain along with it; rather, He furnished it with a certain spiritual capacity for pleasure, a pleasure whereby human beings

---

\* See p. 704 below.



would be able to enjoy God ineffably. But together with coming-into-being, the first man, by use of his senses, squandered this spiritual capacity—the natural desire of the mind for God—on sensible things.<sup>29</sup>

For St. Maximus, “pleasure” in its fallen context is a combination of sensual feeling and a passionate desire for a sensible object:

Every forbidden pleasure has come to be through passion aroused through the senses by some object of sense.... For desire added to sensual feeling changes into pleasure, giving it a shape, and sensual feeling moved by desire produces pleasure when it is applied to some object of sense.<sup>30</sup>

In the writings of St. Symeon and St. Maximus on this subject, we see two Fathers viewing the same reality from different sides. St. Symeon, in saying that man experienced “pleasure” in partaking of the fruits of Eden, was speaking of pleasure in created things *without* irrational desire for them. St. Maximus, on the other hand, in saying that man was not originally created with “sensible pleasure,” was speaking precisely of pleasure *born of* desire. From the sum of the teachings of both Fathers, we arrive at the following: in experiencing pleasure in created things before the fall, man did not turn his desire toward them, but instead kept it directed toward God, the natural object of his desire.

Indeed, according to a passage attributed in *The Philokalia* to St. Theodore the Great Ascetic, man’s enjoyment of created things was one of the ways by which he could raise his mind to his Creator in Paradise:

The first man could indeed, without any hindrance, apprehend and enjoy sensory things by means of the senses and intelligible things with the *nous* (mind, intellect). But he should have given his attention to the higher rather than the lower, for he was as able to commune with intelligible things through the *nous*, as he was with sensory things through the senses. I do not say that Adam ought not to have used the senses, for it was not for nothing that he was in-

vested with a body. But he should not have indulged in sensory things. When perceiving the beauty of creatures, he should have referred it to its Source and as a consequence have found his enjoyment and his wonder fulfilled in that, thus giving himself a twofold reason for marvelling at the Creator. He should not have attached himself, as he did, to sensory things and have lost himself in wonder at them, neglecting the Creator of intelligible beauty.<sup>31</sup>

Thus, the pleasure in sensible things that man could experience before the fall was not a self-indulgent, egotistic pleasure, not an end in itself. Rather, it was one means by which man could, in the words of St. Maximus, exercise his “spiritual capacity for pleasure” and “enjoy God ineffably.”

As St. Maximus himself testified, God planned from the beginning that man’s mind would be raised to Himself by means of the sensible creation, for in all created things one can find “traces” of His majesty:

This was the peculiar plan of God’s consummate goodness: not only did the divine and incorporeal essences of intelligible things constitute representations of God’s ineffable glory, acquiring legitimately and proportionally within themselves the whole incomprehensible loveliness and inapproachable beauty, but, in addition, traces of God’s own majesty intermingled with sensible things, things that fall far short of intelligible essences. These traces of God’s majesty are able to transport the human *nous*, which uses them as a vehicle, infallibly to God.<sup>32</sup>

#### *4. The Condition of Man’s Mind before the Fall*

From St. John Chrysostom we learn that Adam was originally created with “ineffable intelligence,” which endowed him with the capability to name all the animals (Gen. 2:19–20), and with “prophetic grace,” which enabled him to prophesy about Eve after her creation (Gen. 2:23–24).<sup>33</sup>

St. Gregory the Sinaite speaks of man’s memory in its prelapsarian state, and compares this with what we experience after the fall:

The memory was originally simple and one-pointed, but as a result of the fall its natural powers have been perverted: it has lost its recollectedness in God and has become compound instead of simple, diversified instead of one-pointed.<sup>34</sup>

St. Diadochus of Photiki speaks in a similar way regarding man's perceptive faculty (*αἰσθησις*):

The exercise of holy knowledge teaches us that the perceptive faculty natural to us is single but is henceforth divided into two operations as a result of the disobedience of Adam.... Therefore, one part of the soul is carried away by our passionate part, whence we are pleasantly impressed with the good things of this life. But the other part of her often delights in rational and noetic activity, and thus our *nous* longs, when we practice self-restraint, to pursue the beauties of heaven.<sup>35</sup>

There is also Patristic testimony that, before the fall, the human mind was not held under the sway of the imagination. In Orthodox theology the imagination (*τὸ φανταστικόν*) is seen as "a faculty belonging to the irrational part of the soul" (St. John Damascene),<sup>36</sup> which "stores up [images] like treasures and brings them forth interiorly ... even when there is no corresponding body present" (St. Gregory Palamas).<sup>37</sup> \* From St. Maximus we learn something of this faculty in connection with man's original state, for he writes that before the primordial transgression Adam "was not by way of pleasure moved by the deceitful passions of the imagination."<sup>38</sup> \*\* This point was later elucidated by a Greek Holy Father of the eighteenth century, St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain. Basing himself, as he says, on St. Maximus, St. Nicodemus writes:

---

\* See Archimandrite Sophrony, *Saint Silouan the Athonite*, part 1, chap. 7, for a contemporary exposition on the imagination according to Orthodox hesychastic tradition.

\*\* See p. 700 below.

In the beginning, pleasure and pain were not created together with the flesh; nor forgetfulness and ignorance together with the soul; nor the ever changing impressions in the shape of events with the mind. All these things were brought about in man by his transgression.<sup>38</sup>

And elsewhere:

The first-formed man, Adam, was created by God without imagination. His mind, pure and unified, functioned as mind and so itself acquired no impression or form under the influence of the senses or from the images of sensory things. Making no use of this lower power of the imagination, he did not visualize the outline, color, shape, or dimensions of things, but with the higher power of the soul, that is the intellect, he contemplated immaterially, purely, and spiritually only the bare, simple inner principles [τὸς λόγους] of beings.<sup>39</sup>

### 5. St. Maximus on Man's Original Condition

A detailed description of man's existence before the fall has been provided by St. Maximus in his *Ambiguum* 45. Explaining a phrase of St. Gregory the Theologian's *Oration* 38—that the first-created man was, before the fall, “naked in his simplicity and [in his] life without arts and skills [ἀτέχνως], and without any covering or protection”<sup>40</sup>—St. Maximus writes:

So I suppose that the teacher said these things wanting to indicate the difference between the constitution of the human body in the forefather Adam before the transgression and that which in us is now seen and holds sway, because back then man clearly was not torn apart by qualities contrary to and corruptive of each other in their bodily mixture, but was accordingly without flux or efflux—and free of the constant alteration between them, depending on which quality predominates. For indeed man was not deprived of the immortality that is by grace, and did not have the corruption that now whips

him with its goads, but another constitution of the body manifestly befit him, a constitution held together by qualities that are simple and without strife.

By reason of this constitution was the first man naked, not as one fleshless or bodiless,\* but as one not having the constitution which makes the flesh denser, mortal, and unyielding.\*\* According to this great teacher, the first man both lived without arts and skills [ἀτέχνως] without dissipating the natural good health given him once for all in his essence, and was without need of protective covering, fearing no shame because of his innate dispassion, and not subject to either cold or heat—for which reasons especially the means of protective covering, both shelter and clothing, have been contrived for humans....

For being dispassionate by grace, he was not by way of pleasure moved by the deceitful passions of the imagination; and existing without any want, he was free of the obligation to use arts and skills because of necessity; and being wise, he had been by way of knowledge set above the study of nature.

Thus the first man had nothing between him and God which was obstructing his knowledge and was stopping his movement toward God, movement self-chosen out of love, from becoming a kinship. And because of this, he was called by the teacher, “naked in his simplicity,” as existing above all research into nature; and with a “life without arts and skills,” as being pure of all life in need of arts and skills; and “without any covering or protection,” since he was free of such impassioned intertwining of the senses with sensible things, to which things he was justly subjected later on, when he fell short through defect—when he of his own choice preferred to become

---

\* St. Maximus is here refuting a teaching of Origenism. The Origenists, believing that man was fleshless and bodiless before the fall (see p. 701n below), were apt to falsely interpret the above-quoted phrase of St. Gregory the Theologian to mean that man was originally “naked” of flesh.

\*\* As indicated above (p. 693, 693n), in the last phrase St. Maximus is repeating the words of St. Gregory the Theologian. These words are found in St. Gregory’s *Oration* 38, shortly after the above-quoted statement about the first-created man being “naked in his simplicity,” etc.

empty of everything rather than to be full, thus becoming inferior to those things to which he had naturally been superior.<sup>41</sup>

From this citation it is clearly seen that, for St. Maximus as for other Holy Fathers, man lived for a time in an unfallen state, without bodily corruption and without the passions, cares and necessities associated with human life as we know it.\*

---

\*Some contemporary scholars, citing the words of St. Maximus quoted earlier—that the first man misused his spiritual capacity “together with coming-into-being” (ἅμα τῷ γίνεσθαι; *Ad Thalassium* 61, see p. 696 above; see also *Ambigua* 42, PG 91.1321B)—have suggested that St. Maximus believed there was never a time when man was in an unfallen state. This interpretation, however, does not concur with other portions of the Saint’s teaching. In the lengthy passage from *Ambiguum* 45 that we have just quoted, St. Maximus speaks of Adam’s incorrupt, unfallen state as an actuality. Moreover, by saying that this state existed “before the transgression” and that Adam’s condition was changed “later on [ὑστερον], when he had fallen,” St. Maximus places his detailed portrayal of the prelapsarian state within a temporal framework and indicates a time lapse between man’s creation and his fall. Elsewhere, St. Maximus writes that God gave Adam a law “before the transgression, not to eat from the fruit of the tree” (*Questions and Doubts* 92, trans. Despina D. Prassas, p. 92), and that the devil “breathed onto the first-formed beings by [encouraging] disobedience” (ibid. I.28, p. 145). From these passages it can be seen that St. Maximus’ teaching does in fact agree with the common Patristic understanding of the Genesis account.

It is likely that St. Maximus said that man misused his spiritual capacity “together with coming-into-being” in order to rebut Origenist ideas of an extended prelapsarian state and of a “double-creation” of man. (According to Origen, intelligences [νόες] were created after eternal Divine forms and contemplated God until they became “sated” with Him, at which time they “cooled down” to become souls, and God created the material bodies and sensible world into which they fell [cf. Origen, *On First Principles* 2.8.3].) Viewing St. Maximus’ statement in this light, translator Paul M. Blowers has interpreted the Saint’s words to mean: “Falleness has been the dilemma of humankind *virtually from the beginning*” (St. Maximus, *On the Cosmic Mystery of Jesus Christ*, PPS 25, p. 85, note 10, emphasis in the original). St. Maximus’ words “together with coming-into-being,” then, are to be understood in a relative sense, as meaning “very close to the beginning.” To interpret them in an absolute sense, as denying the very existence of the prelapsarian state, makes no sense within the context of St. Maximus’ thought, let alone the wider Scriptural-Patristic context.

*6. St. Maximus and St. Symeon on What Might Have Been*

Such was the condition of man in the beginning. By drawing ever closer to God in love, by naturally directing his desire and longing to Him rather than unnaturally turning it aside to things of the senses, man was to become ever more holy and spiritual, ever more in the likeness of God, ever more transformed by the grace of God. Earlier we quoted the words of St. John Damascene that man was “to complete the mystery by being deified.” Expanding on this theme, St. Maximus states that man, by freely following God’s commandment in Eden, would have become a deified “son of God”—a god not by nature but by grace:

In the beginning man was created in the image of God for the undoubted purpose of being born of the Spirit by free choice, and of acquiring what was in the likeness of God through keeping the Divine commandment which had been laid upon him. In this way the same man would on the one hand be a creature of God by nature, and on the other a son of God and a god through the Spirit by grace. For it was not possible in any other way for man after his creation to be proved a son of God and a god through deification by grace, unless first by free choice he had been born of the Spirit through the self-moving and sovereign power which naturally unites him with God.<sup>42</sup>

St. Symeon the New Theologian provides us with an image of what life would have been like if the first people had fulfilled their original designation. “Imagine,” he writes,

... what sort of life and way of living we might have had if we had been preserved incorruptible and immortal in an incorrupt world, going through life manifestly without sin or sorrow, free of cares and untroubled. And imagine, too, how by progress in keeping God’s commandments and the putting into practice of our good intentions we would have been led up in due time to a more perfect glory and transformation, drawing nearer to God and to the rays which spring from His Divinity. The soul of each would have become brighter,

and the perceptible and material body of each altered and changed into an immaterial and spiritual one, into something beyond sense perception.<sup>43</sup>

### III. THE ORIGINAL CONDITION OF THE COSMOS

#### *1. Patristic Accounts of the Cosmos before the Fall*

We have already quoted briefly from St. Symeon's description of the cosmos that man originally inhabited. St. Symeon is quite explicit that the entire visible creation, and not only Paradise, was in a state of incorruption before the fall of man. He writes:

God did not, as some people think, just give Paradise to our ancestors at the beginning, nor did He make only Paradise incorruptible. No! Instead, He did much more. Before Paradise He made the whole earth, the one which we inhabit, and everything in it. Nor that alone, but He also in five days brought the heavens and all they contain into being. On the Sixth Day He made Adam and established him as lord and king of all the visible creation. Neither Eve nor Paradise were yet created, but the whole world had been brought into being by God as one thing, as a kind of paradise, at once incorruptible yet material and perceptible. It was this world, as we said, which was given to Adam and to his descendants for their enjoyment. Does this seem strange to you? It should not.<sup>44</sup>

Here St. Symeon is echoing the Wisdom of Solomon, in which it is declared: "God did not make death, neither does He take delight in the destruction of living things. God created all things that they might have their being; and the generations of the world were for preservation, and there is no poison of destruction in them" (Wis. 1:13–14).

As St. Symeon explains, before the original creation was "changed over to corruption" it did not "bear perishable fruits and ... sprout thorns and thistles" (cf. Gen. 3:18).<sup>45</sup> Elsewhere in the same work, he



affirms that God gave man in Paradise “every kind and variety of fruit, fruit which is never spoiled or lacking but always fresh, full of sweetness, and providing our ancestors with indescribable pleasure and enjoyment. For it was fitting that their incorruptible bodies be supplied with incorruptible food.”<sup>46</sup> In other words, it was appropriate for incorrupt first-created man to be given both an environment and a food that corresponded to his condition.

According to St. Bede the Venerable, “Before man’s transgression the earth brought forth nothing harmful, no poisonous plant, no unfruitful tree.”<sup>47</sup> St. Philaret of Moscow, a Holy Father of nineteenth-century Russia, says the same concerning the first-created plants:

Since God has approved of the whole kingdom of plants (cf. Gen. 1:12), man should not rebel against Him, seeing that some plants are poisonous or noxious. If the fall of man had not subjected the entire earth to corruption, we would find in them only good and useful properties.<sup>48</sup>

In Genesis 2:5–6 (LXX) we read that, in the beginning, “God had not sent rain on the earth ... but a spring came up from the ground and watered the whole face of the earth.” Commenting on this passage, St. Theophilus of Antioch states:

The whole earth was at that time watered by a divine spring, and had no need that man should till it; but the earth produced all things spontaneously by the command of God, that man might not be wearied by tilling it.<sup>49</sup>

St. John Damascene notes that, before Adam and Eve’s transgression, “there was neither rain nor tempest on the earth.”<sup>50</sup> St. Epiphanius of Salamis says further that

Adam and Eve had the purest air, temperately dispensed to them by God with all mildness, neither sharpened by the rigor of cold, nor enervated by the extremely unpleasant heat of summer. The land had been designed as an immortal abode very well made by God; it

was filled with gladness and well-being, and as I said, got neither cold nor hot.<sup>51</sup>

At the turn of the twentieth century, this Patristic teaching was reiterated by the holy Serbian-American Church writer and missionary Archimandrite Sebastian Dabovich.\* Had our first parents not broken the Divine commandment, Fr. Sebastian writes,

there would be no need of the plow and the laboring oxen, the planting of seed, the watering shower, the mutual change of the seasons of the year, the winter binding in fetters and the summer opening up all things.<sup>52</sup>

Further details about the state of the creation—in particular, Paradise—before the fall are provided by St. Gregory the Sinaite. Eden, he says, “has been planted by God with all sorts of the most fragrant plants.... It is always bursting with fruit, both ripe and unripe, and is continuously blossoming with flowers.” According to this Saint, Paradise has been “made between corruption and incorruption,” such that mature trees and fruit “turn into fragrant soil, and do not give off the odor of corruption as do plants of this world. This occurs because of the great richness and holiness of the grace ever abounding there.”<sup>53</sup> \*\*

## 2. *Animals before the Fall*

From St. Theophilus of Antioch we learn that animals were not venomous before the fall.<sup>54</sup> Both he and other Holy Fathers taught that beasts did not evoke fear in man in the prelapsarian world, but rather submitted to him. As St. John Chrysostom observes, when the animals came before Adam in order to receive names, “they came in complete

---

\* It was also expounded in the nineteenth century by St. Ignatius Brianchaninov (see p. 708 below).

\*\* In quoting these words of St. Gregory the Sinaite, Fr. Seraphim Rose notes: “This passage is expressed in the present tense—*because the Paradise in which Adam was placed is still in existence*, but is not visible to our normal sense organs” (see p. 456 above).

subjection to him as to a master and accepted the names, while Adam had no fear of these wild beasts.”<sup>55</sup> Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus notes further that, “in acknowledgment of their subservient state, the wild animals waited on Adam before his sin.”<sup>56</sup> “Before the fall,” writes St. John Damascene, “all things were subject to the control of man, because God had made him ruler over all the things on the earth and in the water.”<sup>57</sup>

As stated in Genesis 1:30, in the beginning God indicated that all the animals were to eat plants rather than each other: “And to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the air, and to every thing that creeps on the earth, everything that has the breath of life, I have given every green plant for food.” Following from these words of Scripture, the Holy Fathers consistently taught that animals were given plants to eat before the fall. Thus, St. Theophilus of Antioch wrote that animals were not predatory before the fall, and that after the general resurrection they will be “restored to their original gentleness.”<sup>58</sup> St. Irenaeus of Lyons taught the same: commenting on Isaiah’s prophecy that “the wolf shall feed with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the young goat ... and the lion and ox shall eat straw together” (Is. 11:6–7; see also Is. 11:8–9, 65:25), he affirmed that this can be seen to refer to the state of animals both before the fall and after the general resurrection:

It is right that when the creation is restored, all the animals should obey and be subject to man, and should revert to the food originally given by God (as they had been subject to Adam before the disobedience), that is, the productions of the earth.<sup>59</sup>\*\*

St. John Damascene likewise spoke of animals eating plants before

---

\* See the full quotation on pp. 731–32 below.

\*\* St. Irenaeus noted that, besides referring to the original and final states of animals, this prophecy of Isaiah 11:6–10 can also refer to the harmony between formerly fierce peoples and the righteous in the Church (*Against Heresies* 5.33.3–4). In the same vein, St. Cyril of Alexandria said that the prophecy in Isaiah 65:17–19 can refer both to the state of believers in the Church of Christ and to the state of the righteous beyond the general resurrection (*Commentary on the Prophet Isaiah* 5.6).

the fall, saying that then “the earth brought forth of itself fruits for the use of the animals that were subject to man.”<sup>60</sup> St. Gregory of Nyssa observed that plants were created before animals because they were to serve as food for the animals.<sup>61</sup> According to St. John Chrysostom, God told Adam that He had given plants for the animals to eat so that Adam, who had been placed as lord of the creation, would not be concerned about how to provide for the animals.<sup>62</sup>

The Fathers do not speak of any kind of carnivory existing before the fall. In the writings of St. Basil the Great, on the other hand, we find an explicit teaching that animals did not eat each other, and furthermore that they neither died nor decayed in the first-created world:

Doubtless indeed vultures did not look around the earth when living things came to be. For nothing yet died of these things given meaning or brought into being by God, so that vultures might eat it. Nature was not divided, for it was in its prime; nor did hunters kill, for that was not yet the custom of human beings; nor did wild beasts claw their prey, for they were not carnivores. And it is customary for vultures to feed on corpses, but since there were not yet corpses, nor yet their stench, so there was not yet such food for vultures. But all followed the diet of swans and all grazed the meadows.<sup>63\*</sup>

---

\* Here it may be noted that, when St. Basil's brother, St. Gregory of Nyssa, says that animals had “the potential of dying” (τὴν πρὸς τὸ νεκροῦσθαι δύναμιν), presumably at their creation (*Catechetical Oration* 8), he does not necessarily contradict St. Basil, for he does not say that animals actually died and decayed before the fall. In the context of the common Patristic teaching on the incorruption of the first-created world, and on death and corruption entering the cosmos only at the fall (of which more will be said below), St. Gregory's statement can be understood to refer to a potential that animals had before the fall, but that was not expressed in actual terms until after the fall. Similarly, when St. Gregory speaks of animals being endowed with attributes such as courage and fear “for self-preservation” (*On the Making of Man* 18.2), this can be seen to refer to qualities that God gave them in His foreknowledge, as a provision for the corrupted state of the cosmos after the fall. This interpretation of the statement is corroborated by the discussion preceding it, where St. Gregory is relating how God endowed man with the attributes of animals “by the exercise of His foreknowledge” of the fall (*ibid.* 17.4). See also the teaching of St. John Damascene on God's foreknowledge, p. 455 above.

### 3. *The Unknowability of the World before the Fall*

Drawing from the Scriptural-Patristic testimony on the incorrupt first-created world—its vegetation, animals, and climate—St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, another Holy Father of nineteenth-century Russia, provides us with a composite description that is remarkable in its details. At the same time, however, he points out that knowledge of the first-created world remains largely inaccessible to us who know the creation only in its corrupted state:

The earth, created, adorned, blessed by God, did not have any deficiencies. It was overflowing with refinement. “God saw,” after the completion of the whole creation of the world, “everything that He had made: and, behold, it was very good” (Gen. 1:31).

Now the earth is presented to our eyes in a completely different look. We do not know her condition in holy virginity; we know her in the condition of corruption and accursedness, we know her already sentenced to burning; she was created for eternity. The God-inspired writer of Genesis says that the earth in its original condition did not have need of tilling (Gen. 2:5): it brought forth by itself grains and other nourishing grasses, vegetables and fruits overabundantly and of superb worth. There were no harmful growths on it; plants were not subjected either to decay or to diseases; both decay and diseases, and the weeds themselves, appeared after the alteration of the earth following the fall of man, as one ought to conclude from the words of God to Adam as he was being exiled from Paradise: “Thorns also and thistles shall it [the ground] bring forth to thee” (Gen. 3:18). According to its creation, there was on it only the splendid, only the wholesome, there was only that which was suitable for the immortal and blessed life of its inhabitants. Changes in the weather did not exist: it was continually the same—the most clear and favorable. There were no rains. A spring came forth from the earth and watered its face (Gen. 2:5–6). The beasts and other animals lived in perfect harmony among themselves, nourishing themselves on plant life (Gen. 1:30).<sup>64</sup>

Fr. Seraphim Rose, who extensively researched the Patristic teaching on the condition of creation before the fall, stated along with St. Ignatius that we do not know “precisely what this state was” and that it is “very mysterious to us who live entirely in corruption.” “It is enough,” he wrote, “for us to know that Paradise, and the state of the whole creation before the fall of Adam, was quite different from what we know now.”\*

A similar observation was made earlier in the twentieth century by St. Barsanuphius of Optina Monastery in Russia. Once, when standing before a window at night, St. Barsanuphius pointed to the moon and said to his disciple (the future Elder Nikon):

Look—what a picture!... This is left to us as a consolation. It’s no wonder that the Prophet David said, “Thou hast gladdened me, O Lord, by Thy works” (Ps. 91:3). “Thou has gladdened me,” he says, although this is only a hint of that wondrous beauty, incomprehensible to human thought, which was originally created. We don’t know what kind of moon there was then, what kind of sun, what kind of light.... All of this changed after the fall.<sup>65</sup>

At another time St. Barsanuphius told his spiritual children that we see only “fragments” of the original, incorrupt cosmos—a cosmos that has been shattered because of man’s sin:

The earth is a place of banishment, of exile. For criminal acts people are condemned to hard labor—one for twelve years, one for fifteen years, and another permanently, until death. We too are guilty; we have sinned before the Lord, and we’re condemned to banishment, to hard labor. But the Lord is so endlessly loving that even in this place of banishment He has left us much beauty, many delights and consolations, which are especially understood by artistically sensitive temperaments. The beautiful things of this world are only hints of that beauty with which the first-created world was filled, as Adam and Eve saw it. That beauty was destroyed by the sin of the first people.

---

\* See pp. 457, 548 above.

Imagine a marvelous statue by a great master—and suddenly, like a thunderbolt, someone smashes it. What will remain of it? Fragments. We can pick them up; we can search out the neck, a portion of an arm, or the face. Indications of the beauty of the lines are preserved in these separate fragments, but they no longer produce for us the former harmony, the former wholeness and beauty. Thus also did the fall into sin of the first people destroy the beauty of God's world, and there remain to us only fragments of it by which we may judge concerning the primordial beauty.<sup>66</sup>

As Fr. Seraphim Rose pointed out, the nature of the first-created world cannot be investigated without the aid of Divine revelation, for a different “law of nature” (in the words of St. Symeon the New Theologian) existed before the fall, and it is very likely that even the nature of matter was different.\* “The incorruption of the first-created world,” he wrote,

is beyond the competence of [natural] science to investigate.... *Then how do we know anything at all about it?* Obviously, because God has revealed something of it to us through the Sacred Scripture. But we know, also,... that God has revealed something besides what is in the Scriptures.... St. Gregory the Sinaite and other Holy Fathers of the highest spiritual life beheld the first-created world *in the state of Divine vision* [θεωρία], which is beyond all natural knowledge.\*\*

#### 4. *Man's Calling to Deify the Cosmos*

Although the first-created world was made incorrupt in the beginning as was man, it was—again like man—not created in its final and perfected state. Since the visible creation was made for man, according to God's economy it was *through man* that the creation was to reach this final condition. Possessing both body and soul, man was the link between the originally incorrupt material world and the noetic,

---

\* See pp. 457, 547–48, 548n above.

\*\* See pp. 460, 457–58 above.

spiritual world of the angels. As he became spiritualized and divinized by drawing closer to God, man was to lead all of creation into such a condition as well. St. Maximus the Confessor writes concerning this original calling of man:

Through a life identical in every way through virtue with that of the angels, so far as that is possible to human beings, man unites heaven and earth, making the whole of sensible creation one with itself and undivided, not separated locally from him at all in any of its dimensions, since man becomes as subtle as spirit and is no longer tied to earth by any bodily weight.<sup>67\*</sup>

Having thus united the whole of creation, man was called “to unite, through love, created nature with Uncreated Nature ... showing them to be one and the same through the possession of grace, the whole [of creation] being wholly penetrated by the whole of God.”<sup>68</sup>

Summarizing this teaching of St. Maximus, Vladimir Lossky writes:

It was the Divinely appointed function of the first man, according to St. Maximus, to unite in himself the whole of created being; and at the same time to reach his perfect union with God and thus grant the state of deification to the whole creation.... Man had only to give himself to Him [God] in a complete abandonment of love, and thus return to Him the whole created universe gathered together in his own being. God Himself would then in His turn have given Himself to man, who would then, in virtue of this gift, that is to say by grace, possess all that God possesses by nature. The deification of man and of the whole created universe would thus be accomplished.<sup>69</sup>

---

\* It is clear from the context that St. Maximus is speaking here of the original calling of man, since this passage falls within an exposition on man's creation, intrinsic purpose, fallen state, and salvation by Christ. Such is the interpretation of this passage given by Vladimir Lossky in *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*, pp. 109–10, quoted in part below.



#### IV. THE EFFECTS OF THE FALL ON MAN

##### *1. The Corruption of Human Nature*

Such was man's lofty original calling. But as we all know and experience every day, the first man fell from this state and brought himself and all of creation into a state of corruption and death. In partaking of the fruit that God had forbidden him to eat, man acted in a way contrary to his own nature, which had been created "very good" by God. As St. Maximus writes:

But man did not move around the Unmoved—I mean God—as his own principle in the way that he was naturally created to do; but of his own free will, senselessly and in a manner contrary to nature, he moved around the things below him, over which he had been appointed by God to rule.<sup>70</sup>

With the entrance of sin through the free decision of Adam and Eve, human nature became corrupted. St. Cyril of Alexandria writes of this as follows:

The forefather [Adam], by neglecting the commandment given him, struck out against God and submitted himself to the effects of Divine wrath:\* for he slipped down into corruption. Then was sin also

---

\* Due to common misconceptions concerning the Biblical term "wrath of God" (John 3:36, Rom. 1:18, Eph. 5:6, etc.), a clarifying note may be in order here. According to the teaching of the Fathers, references to God's wrath should not be understood in an anthropomorphic sense. St. John Chrysostom explains: "When you hear words such as 'anger' and 'wrath' used in relation to God, do not suppose there is anything human meant in them.... Scripture says God gets angry, not attributing passion to Him, but expressing by this language His punishing action, and making an impression on dense man" (St. John Chrysostom, *Commentary on the Psalms* 6, 44, PG 55.71B, 190B, trans. Robert C. Hill, vol. 1, pp. 95, 266\*). See also p. 123 above.

driven into the nature of man; thus “many were made sinners” (Rom. 5:19), that is, those throughout all the earth.... Thenceforward pleasures and filthiness invaded the nature of the flesh, and there arose then the savage law in our members. Our nature thus became diseased by sin through the disobedience of one, that is, of Adam. Hence all were made sinners, not as co-transgressors with Adam (for they did not yet exist then), but because they were of his nature, which had fallen under the law of sin.... In Adam human nature became sick with corruption through disobedience, and therefore the passions entered in.<sup>71</sup>

St. Macarius the Great speaks of this corruption as a leaven:

From the time of Adam’s fall, the thoughts of the soul have been dispersed away from the love of God toward this world, because it is mingled with crass and earthly thoughts. Indeed, as Adam took into himself after his transgression a leaven of evil passions, so also ever since, those who were born of him and the whole race of Adam by participation shared in that leaven. And it has grown and increased so that in men the sinful passions have developed into fornications and debaucheries and idolatries and murders and other absurdities, until mankind is permeated with the leaven of evil.<sup>72</sup>

At the fall, Adam and Eve acquired a tendency or inclination toward sin, and all their descendants inherited that inclination. In the words of St. Gregory Palamas,

When Adam fell by turning aside from good to evil, no one remained [i.e., among his descendants] who was not inclined to evil.<sup>73</sup>

As mentioned earlier, man’s memory was also affected at the fall. According to St. Gregory the Sinaite, the memory then began to

act as a source of evil thoughts. For Adam’s disobedience has not only deformed into a weapon of evil the soul’s simple memory of

what is good; it has also corrupted all its powers and quenched its natural appetite for virtue.<sup>74</sup>

In man's now-corrupted state, his mind, while still possessed of the faculty of reason, fell under the sway of the imagination, which as we have seen is a lower, irrational power of the soul. About this St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain writes:

Just as the man-slaying devil fell through the imagination, so he caused Adam also to form in his mind that he was equal to God and to fall through this same imagination. And thus from that noetic, angel-like, unified, rational [λογικὴν] and formless life [of the mind] the wretched man was cast down to this sensory, many-sided, and multiform imagination and to the state of irrational animals. For imagination is a trait proper to irrational animals and not to rational beings.

After man through one act fell to such a state, who can tell to what passions, what evils, and what delusions he was cast down by means of the imagination?<sup>75</sup>

## *2. The Loss of Grace: Spiritual Death*

Because of the corruption of his nature at the fall, man lost the grace in which he had been created. He became separated from God. Grace was now foreign to his nature, and so it did not dwell within him as it had before. As Vladimir Lossky explains:

There is no longer a place for Uncreated grace in a perverted nature where, according to St. Gregory of Nyssa, the mind like a mirror turned about, instead of reflecting God, receives into itself the image of formless matter, where the passions overthrow the original hierarchy of the human being. The deprivation of grace is not the cause, but rather the consequence of the decadence of our nature. Man has obstructed the faculty in himself for communion with God, has

closed up the way by which grace should have poured out through Him into the whole creation.<sup>76\*</sup>

St. John Damascene, who as cited earlier said that man was “wrapped about” with God’s grace at his creation, says later in the same work that man was “stripped of grace” at the fall:

---

\* This points to a fundamental dissimilarity between Orthodox and Roman Catholic theology. While both Orthodox and Roman Catholics hold that man lost the grace of God when he fell, they understand this deprivation of grace in different ways.

First of all, in Roman Catholic teaching grace is a *created* phenomenon: “It is not a substance that exists by itself, or apart from the soul; therefore it is a physical accident inhering in the soul.... Sanctifying grace may be philosophically termed a ‘permanent, supernatural quality of the soul’” (*Catholic Encyclopedia*, 1911 ed., vol. 6, p. 705). This idea of supernatural (created) grace is to be distinguished from the Orthodox understanding of grace as the Uncreated Energy of God, through which man participates in God’s life. Vladimir Lossky comments on the distinction: “For Eastern [Orthodox] tradition the created supernatural has no existence. That which Western theology calls by the name *supernatural* signifies for the East *Uncreated*—the Divine Energies ineffably distinct from the Essence of God. The difference consists in the fact that the Western conception of grace implies the idea of causality, grace being represented as an effect of the Divine Cause, exactly as in the act of creation; while for Eastern theology there is a natural procreation, the Energies shining forth eternally from the Divine Essence. It is in the creation alone that God acts as cause, in producing a new subject called to participate in the Divine fullness; preserving it, saving it, *granting* grace to it, and guiding it towards its final goal. In the Energies *He is*, He exists, He eternally manifests Himself” (*Mystical Theology*, pp. 88–89).

Secondly, in Roman Catholic teaching “original sin” is identified with—as well as seen as the consequence of—the privation of sanctifying grace, which grace is also termed “original justice”: “Original sin is the privation of sanctifying grace” (*Catholic Encyclopedia*, vol. 11, p. 314); “Now the cause of ... original sin, is one only, viz. the privation of original justice” (Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica*, part 1 of part 2, question 82, article 2). In this view, the privation of grace *in itself* constitutes “a stain, a moral deformity” (*Catholic Encyclopedia*, vol. 11, p. 314). According to Orthodox theology, on the other hand, man’s nature was corrupted as a consequence of his free decision at the fall, and this corruption caused him to lose the indwelling of grace and deprived him of participation in God. It is for this reason that Vladimir Lossky, in explaining how Orthodox teaching on this matter runs counter to the Roman Catholic conception, says in the passage quoted above: “The deprivation of grace is not the *cause*, but rather the *consequence* of the decadence of our nature” (*Mystical Theology*, p. 132, emphasis added).

And so, man succumbed to the assault of the demon, the author of evil; he failed to keep the Creator's commandment and was stripped of grace and deprived of that familiarity which he had enjoyed with God.<sup>77</sup>

St. Gregory Palamas calls forth the same image:

Before the transgression, Adam shared in this Divine illumination and brilliance. He was clothed in the true robe of glory and was not naked, nor was he ugly in his nakedness, but was truly unspeakably better adorned than those who wear diadems embellished with much gold and precious stones.... Our human nature was stripped of this Divine illumination and radiance as a result of the ugly transgression.<sup>78</sup>\*

This "stripping of grace" constituted a kind of spiritual death in first-created man. In the book of Genesis, God told Adam: "Of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou shalt not eat: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die" (Gen. 2:17). In fact, Adam did not physically die on the day he ate from the tree. According to Patristic teaching, however, God's words were true: Adam *did* die on the day he ate the fruit. He experienced *spiritual* death: the death of his soul. As St. Gregory Palamas writes:

It was indeed Adam's soul that died by becoming through his transgression separated from God; for bodily he continued to live after that time, even for nine hundred and thirty years.<sup>79</sup>

Elsewhere St. Gregory Palamas expounds further on what is meant by the death of the soul:

The death of the soul is when God leaves the soul and is separated from it, although in another way, the soul remains immortal. Once separated from God it becomes more ugly and useless than a dead

---

\* See St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 16.5 (FC 74, p. 216 [16.14]), where it is also said that man was "stripped of grace" at the fall.

body, but unlike such a body it does not disintegrate after death since it is not composite.<sup>80</sup>

The death of the soul that man suffered at the fall did not, however, destroy the image of God in him. St. Gregory Palamas writes that the human soul

possesses the image of God inalienably, even if it does not recognize its own dignity, or think and live in a manner worthy of the Creator's image within it. After our forefather's transgression in Paradise through the tree, we suffered the death of our soul—which is the separation of the soul from God—prior to our bodily death; yet although we cast away our divine likeness, we did not lose our divine image.<sup>81</sup>

### *3. Physical Suffering, Death, and Decay*

At the fall, man's *spiritual* death—which is the separation of the soul from God—made him, in turn, subject to *physical* death—which is the separation of the soul from the body. St. Gregory Palamas writes of this as follows:

The death, however, that befell the soul because of the transgression not only crippled the soul and made man accursed; it also rendered the body itself subject to fatigue, suffering, and corruptibility, and finally handed it over to death.<sup>82</sup> \*

---

\* St. Gregory Palamas is here presenting a teaching found in the writings of earlier Fathers. Compare, for example, the following passage of St. Macarius the Great (adapted by St. Symeon Metaphrastes): "When the goodness of God condemned Adam to death for his transgression, it effected death first in the soul, the noetic senses having been extinguished by the deprivation of heavenly and spiritual enjoyment and becoming as if dead. Later, after thirty years beyond nine hundred, bodily death came upon him as well" (*On the Freedom of the Nous* 26, PG 34.957D–960A, *Philokalia* 3, p. 349\*). In the same vein, St. Gregory of Nyssa writes: "The Lord came 'to seek and to save that which was lost' (Luke 19:10). Now it was not the body merely, but the whole man, composed of soul and body, that was lost: indeed, if we are to speak more exactly, the soul was lost sooner than the body. For disobedience is

St. Symeon the New Theologian likewise draws the connection between the “stripping of grace” that occurred at the fall and man’s being made subject to bodily death. At the fall, he says,

immediately, he [Adam] was stripped of his incorruptible vesture and glory, and clothed with the nakedness of mortality. On seeing himself naked, he hid himself and sewed together fig leaves to wrap around his waist in order to hide his shame (Gen. 3:7).<sup>83</sup>

St. Maximus explicates this teaching as follows:

In not wishing to be nourished by Him [God], the first man rightly fell away from the Divine life, and took death as another parent. Accordingly he put on himself the irrational form, and blackened the inconceivable beauty of the Divine, and delivered over the whole of nature as food for death. Death is living on this through the whole of this temporal period, making us his food.<sup>84</sup>

As indicated in the passage of St. Gregory Palamas quoted above, physical pain and fatigue were introduced into human experience to-

---

a sin, not of the body, but of the will: and the will properly belongs to the soul, from which the whole disaster of our nature had its beginning, as the threat of God, that admits of no falsehood, testifies in the declaration that, in the day that they should eat of the forbidden fruit, death without respite would attach to the act. Now since the condemnation of man was twofold, death correspondingly effects in each part of our nature the deprivation of the twofold life that operates in him who is thus mortally stricken. For the death of the body consists in the extinction of the means of sensible perception, and in the dissolution of the body into its kindred elements: but ‘the soul that sinneth,’ he says, ‘it shall die’ (Ezek. 18:20). Now sin is nothing else than alienation from God, Who is the true and only life. Accordingly the first man lived many hundred years after his disobedience, and yet God lied not when He said, ‘In the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die’ (Gen. 2:17). For by the fact of his alienation from the true life, the sentence of death was ratified against him that selfsame day: and after this, at a much later time, there followed also the bodily death of Adam” (*Against Eunomius* 2.13, NPNF 2 5, pp. 126–27). See also the quotation of St. Symeon the New Theologian on p. 723 below, where this Saint, too, says that Adam and Eve suffered the death of their souls at the time of their fall, and then the death of their bodies many years later.

gether with bodily death. We find this expressed in the Genesis account, in the sentence that God pronounces on Adam and Eve after their fall. Addressing Eve, God says: "I will greatly multiply thy pain and thy groaning; in pain thou shalt bring forth children"; and to Adam He says: "Cursed is the earth in thy labors; in pains shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life.... In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the earth out of which thou wast taken: for earth thou art, and unto earth shalt thou return" (Gen. 3:16–17, 19).

It will be remembered that, before the fall, man was given to experience pleasure in God, even through sensory things, but his existence knew no pain. According to the teaching of St. Maximus, when man misused his capacity for pleasure by making sensible things the object of his desire, God providentially affixed physical pain to sensible pleasure:

Because irrational pleasure entered human nature, pain entered our nature opposite this pleasure in accordance with reason.... For every suffering, effectively having pleasure as its primary cause, is quite naturally, in view of its cause, a penalty exacted from all who share in human nature.<sup>85</sup>

Elsewhere, St. Maximus observes that, in being given over to physical pain and death, fallen man has also been given over to physical corruption or decay after death:

God, at the very moment humanity fell,... gave the body the capacity to suffer, undergo corruption, and be wholly dissolved—as was evinced when God covered the body with garments of skin.<sup>86</sup>

#### *4. The Change in Man's Physical Condition*

When man fell from his original state of incorruption, his body became more grossly material. In the words of St. John Damascene, after the primordial transgression

[man] was clothed with the roughness of this wretched life—for that is what the fig leaves signify—and put on death, that is to say, the



mortality and material density\* of the flesh—for this is what the garment of dead skins signifies;\*\* he was excluded from Paradise by the just judgment of God; and was condemned to death and made subject to corruption.<sup>87</sup> \*\*\*

In such a condition of bearing “denser” or “grosser” flesh, man became subject not only to pain, death, and corruption, but also to the bodily needs we know today. St. John Chrysostom writes:

The loving God, when they [Adam and Eve] rendered themselves unworthy of that gleaming and resplendent vesture in which they were adorned and which ensured them against bodily needs, stripped them of all that glory and enjoyment they were partakers of before that terrible fall. He showed them great pity and had mercy on their fall: seeing them covered in confusion and ignorant of what to do to avoid being naked and feeling ashamed, He makes garments of skin for them and clothes them in them.<sup>88</sup>

And again:

When He [God] rendered them liable to bodily necessities for the future, stripping them of the angelic way of life and its freedom from suffering, He later arranged for clothes for human beings out of sheep’s fleece.<sup>89</sup>

---

\* The word here translated as “material density,” *παχύτητα*, is a form of the same word that Sts. Gregory the Theologian and Maximus the Confessor had previously employed to describe man’s flesh after the fall; see pp. 693, 693n, 700, 700n above.

\*\* While St. John Damascene here gives a figurative interpretation of the fig leaves and garments of skin mentioned in Holy Scripture (Gen. 3:7, 21), other Holy Fathers give a literal interpretation of them (as in the above quotation of St. Symeon on the fig leaves, and in the quotation of St. John Chrysostom on the garments of skin which is below). On the literal and figurative interpretations of the garments of skin, see pp. 275–76n above.

\*\*\* Compare St. Diadochus of Photiki: “Now as a result of Adam’s fall, not only were the lineaments of the form imprinted on the soul befouled, but our body also became subject to corruption” (*On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination* 78, *Philokalia* 1, p. 280).

In another place St. Chrysostom goes so far as to say that God “re-fashioned” man’s body at the fall to accord with its new condition and needs:

From the [human] body it is easy to see much of the Divine Providence, not only because He made it at first better than it is at present, nor because even now He has refashioned [μετεσκεύασεν] it for a useful purpose, but also because He will raise it again to much greater glory.<sup>90</sup>

In the same homily, when discussing the workings of the human eye, St. Chrysostom writes that tears are a postlapsarian function.<sup>91</sup> From what has been said earlier, this may be seen to have parallels in other organs as well, for according to the Holy Fathers other bodily functions that are now considered “natural”—the emission of seed, the voiding of waste—were not exercised by man before the fall.

### 5. Sexual Procreation

In the prevailing view of the Holy Fathers, among the bodily needs that man acquired at the fall was the need to procreate sexually.\* Thus,

---

\* According to Sts. Athanasius the Great (*Commentary on the Psalms* [Psalm 50:5], see below), Gregory of Nyssa (*On the Making of Man* 17), John Chrysostom (*On Virginity* 14–15), Maximus the Confessor (*Ambigua* 41), John Damascene (*On the Orthodox Faith* 4.24), and Symeon of Thessaloniki (*On the Sacraments* 38), if man had not fallen, God would have employed a means of increasing the human race other than sexual reproduction. In the West, Blessed Augustine held a view contrary to this common teaching of the Eastern Holy Fathers. He did affirm along with all the other Fathers that Adam and Eve did not have sexual relations before the fall; however, according to him this was either because they did not have time or because they were waiting for a specific command from God (*Literal Meaning of Genesis* 9; *City of God* 14.26). Thomas Aquinas was later to refer to this teaching of Augustine when arguing for the idea that sexual reproduction was “natural to man” in his original condition (*Summa Theologica*, part 1, question 98, article 2; see pp. 494–95n above).

St. Athanasius the Great writes in his interpretation of Psalm 50:5 (“For, behold, I was conceived in iniquities, and in sins did my mother desire me”):

The original intention of God was for us to generate not by marriage and corruption. But the transgression of the commandment introduced marriage on account of the lawless act of Adam, that is, the rejection of the law given him by God. Therefore all of those born of Adam are “conceived in iniquities,” having fallen under the condemnation of the forefather.<sup>92\*</sup>

Likewise, St. John Chrysostom writes concerning Genesis 4:1:

“Now Adam knew Eve his wife.” Consider when this happened. After the disobedience, after their loss in the Garden, then it was that the practice of intercourse had its beginning. You see, before their disobedience they followed a life like that of the angels, and there was no mention of intercourse. How could there be, when they were not subject to the needs of the body?<sup>93</sup>

Elsewhere the same Saint elaborates on this teaching:

Why did marriage not appear before the disobedience? Why was there no intercourse in Paradise? Why not the pains of childbirth before the curse? Because at that time these things were superfluous. The necessity arose later because of our weakness, as did cities, arts and skills [αἱ τέχναι], the wearing of clothes, and all our other numerous needs.<sup>94</sup>

---

\* This teaching of St. Athanasius was later repeated verbatim by St. Maximus the Confessor in his *Questions and Doubts* I.3 (CCSG 10:138–39, trans. Despina D. Prassas, pp. 141–42).

### *6. The Condition of Man's Soul after Death*

In addition to changing his spiritual and physical condition and handing him over to physical death and decay, man's fall into corruption also determined the state of his soul after death, making it unable to partake of eternal union with God. Adam had been barred from Paradise during his earthly life, and he remained barred from both Paradise and heaven after death. After physical death, the souls of Adam, Eve, and all their posterity went down into hades, where they continued to exist in a state of spiritual death. In the words of St. Symeon the New Theologian, when Adam and Eve abandoned the keeping of the Divine commandment,

immediately they suffered the death of their souls and then later, after many years, bodily death, and so they were brought down to hades. They were not alone to suffer this. So, too, suffered all who were born to them up to the coming of Christ God, the New Adam, and His descent into hades and resurrection from the dead.<sup>95</sup>

St. Gregory Palamas also, in speaking about the effects of man's primordial transgression, writes:

Even after death, our souls, having been deserted by God, fell to his [the devil's] lot and he dragged them down to hades, and shut them up in seemingly inescapable prisons.<sup>96</sup>

### *7. The Change in Human Nature*

With man's change from incorruptibility to corruptibility at the fall, it may be said that a "mutation" occurred in his nature. As St. Maximus the Confessor writes:

In Adam, with his own act of freely choosing evil, the common glory of human nature, incorruption, was robbed—since God judged that it was not right for humanity, having abused free choice, to have an

immortal nature.... The deviance of free choice introduced passibility,\* corruptibility, and mortality in Adam's nature.... Hence the mutation of human nature over to passibility, corruption, and death is the condemnation of Adam's deliberate sin.<sup>97</sup>

In quoting St. Maximus on the change in man's nature, we should point out that the word "nature" takes on different meanings in his writings (as in the writings of other Fathers), depending on the context. In some places St. Maximus, when speaking of man, uses the word "nature" in the strict sense—that is (to quote St. John Damascene), as "that unchangeable and immutable principle and cause and power which has been implanted by the Creator in each kind [of being] for its activity."<sup>98</sup> Thus, in one place St. Maximus says that human nature does not change as a result of sin (including, presumably, the sin that occurred at the fall), since by definition it cannot change; rather, the mode or condition (τρόπος) of nature changes:

Our [nature] is manifestly merely human and in no way impeccable, because of its deviation to this side or that. This is not to say that the nature [φύσιν] is altered but that the movement has deviated; or, to speak more truthfully, that the nature has changed its mode.<sup>99</sup>

---

\* In this context, St. Maximus is speaking of "passibility" (πάθος) in the sense of suffering pain or undergoing change—particularly, degenerative change. Such passibility, being tied to corruption, came into being only at the fall. (See also p. 719 above, where St. Maximus says that, at the fall, the human body acquired "the capacity to suffer [τὸ πάσχειν], undergo corruption, and be wholly dissolved.") In other places, St. Maximus speaks of "passibility" in a different sense, as the state of being acted upon and being subject to movement. Passibility in this sense is without corruption and existed in creation even before the fall. Speaking of such passibility, which belongs to "whatever comes into being and is created," St. Maximus writes: "The passibility spoken of in this connection does not refer to change or corruption of one's power; passibility here indicates that which exists by nature in beings. For everything that comes into existence is subject to movement, since it is not self-moved or self-powered. If then rational beings come into being, surely they are also moved.... For God is the beginning and the end. From Him come both our moving in whatever way from a beginning and our moving in a certain way toward Him as an end" (*Ambigua* 7, PPS 25, pp. 50–51).

In other places, however, St. Maximus speaks of human nature in a broader sense, as including its mode or condition. In the passage quoted earlier, for example, he speaks of “the mutation [μεταποίησης] of human nature” at the fall. Earlier in the same work, he says that “through one man, who turned voluntarily from the good, human nature was changed from incorruption to corruption,” and that, because Christ “did not subvert the free choice” given to man, “God judged that it was right for man ... once again to recover an immortal nature [πάλιν ἀθάνατον ἀπολαβεῖν τὴν φύσιν].”<sup>100</sup> It is only in the broad sense of “human nature,” as including its mode or condition, that one can speak of human nature “changing” or “mutating” to corruption at the fall.

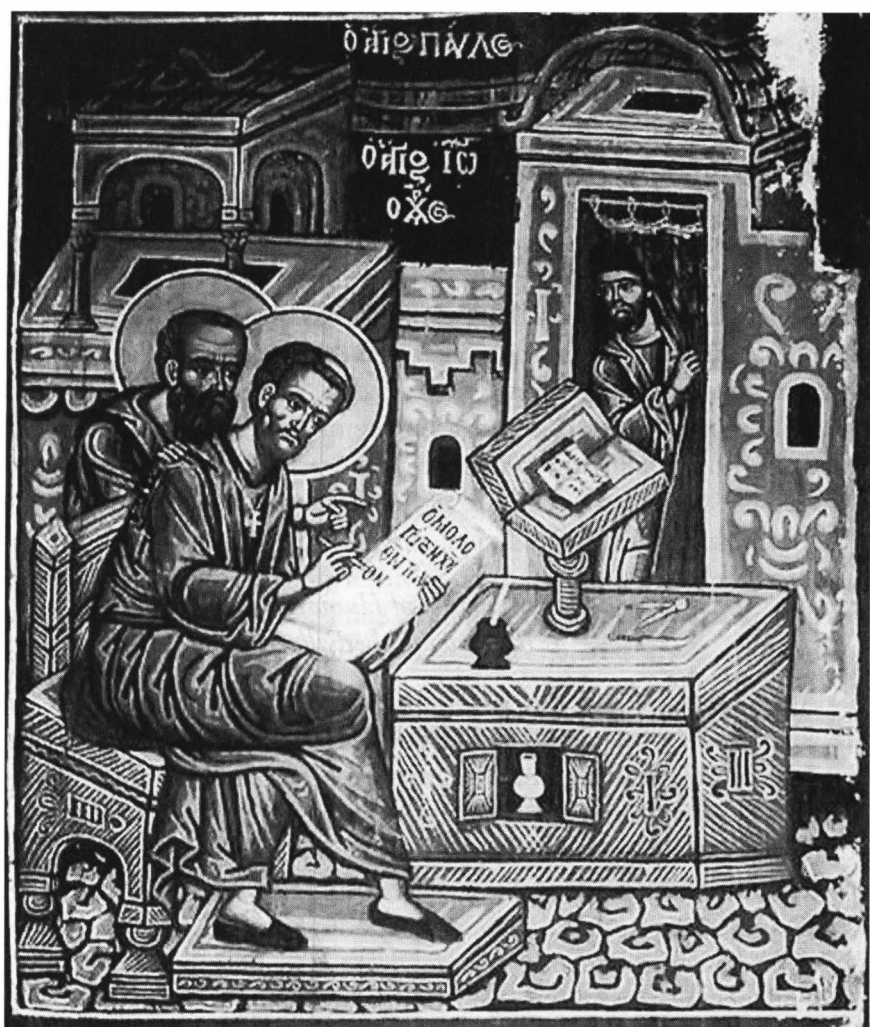
#### *8. The Commonality of Human Nature as It Relates to the Fall*

Although the Orthodox Church does not accept the idea that we are all born into this world sharing the *guilt* of the sin of Adam and Eve,\* according to the common Patristic teaching we are all born subject to the *consequences* of that sin. As we have seen, these include a corruption of human nature, which inclines man toward sin; an absence of the indwelling grace of God (i.e., spiritual death); the suffering, death, and corruption of the body; the bodily necessities that we know today; and a continuance of spiritual death after physical death. These consequences were passed down from the first man to his descendants because human nature is one: we are all of the family of Adam. As St. Gregory Palamas explains,

The same ancestral curse and condemnation poured out on all of us from our single forefather, as if it had sprung from the root of the human race and was the common lot of our nature.<sup>101</sup>

---

\* See, for example, the teaching of St. Cyril of Alexandria on pp. 712–13 above, where it is said that, at the fall, “all were made sinners, not as co-transgressors with Adam (for they did not yet exist then), but because they were of his nature.”



A Greek icon of St. John Chrysostom writing commentaries on St. Paul's Epistles, with St. Paul whispering into his ear. "No mortal," writes St. Nikolai Velimirovich of Zica, "has interpreted the Epistles of the Apostle Paul with greater love and depth than St. John Chrysostom. Had St. Paul himself interpreted them, he could not have interpreted them better. Behold, history tells us that it was Paul himself who interpreted them through the mind and the pen of Chrysostom." According to the Life of St. Chrysostom, the Saint's disciple and novice, St. Proclus (see p. 929 below), on three consecutive nights beheld the Apostle Paul bent over St. Chrysostom and whispering into his ear as the latter was writing his commentaries on the Pauline Epistles. "Therefore," concludes St. Nikolai Velimirovich in relating this account, "it was the Apostle Paul himself who was directing the mind and pen of his greatest interpreter" (St. Nikolai Velimirovich, *The Prologue of Ohrid*, trans. Fr. T. Timothy Tepsic, vol. 2, 2nd ed., entry for Nov. 20, pp. 540–41).

## V. THE EFFECTS OF THE FALL ON THE COSMOS

### 1. *The Dependence of the Cosmos on Man*

Man's fall had profound repercussions on the entire cosmos as well, bringing about what Patristic scholar Fr. Andrew Louth calls "a cosmic disaster."<sup>102</sup> When man fell, the rest of the visible creation fell into corruption along with him: death and decay were introduced into the cosmos. Thus, not only did man fail to fulfill his original designation of raising the creation to God, but he lowered the creation from incorruption to a state of corruption.

It will be remembered that, when God sentenced mankind to suffering and death after the fall, among His decrees was the statement: "Cursed is the earth" (Gen. 3:17).<sup>\*</sup> This account in the book of Genesis formed the historical-narrative background for the above-mentioned teachings in the Wisdom of Solomon and the Pauline Epistles. Following from these words of Scripture, and especially from St. Paul's teaching in Romans 8:19–23 on creation's "bondage of corruption," the Patristic corpus holds that, while Adam's continued incorruption was dependent on himself—that is, on his keeping the commandment of God—the continued incorruption of the rest of creation was dependent not on itself, but on Adam's incorruption. To put it another way, Adam was dependent on God, but the irrational creation was dependent on man (or on God *through* man) for its abiding in incorruption. It was for this reason that, when man became corruptible, the rest of the cosmos followed him.

In Romans 8:20, the Holy Apostle Paul writes: "For the creation was made subject to futility, not willingly, but by reason of Him Who hath subjected it in hope." St. John Chrysostom, in his commentary on this verse, explains:

---

<sup>\*</sup> In the Septuagint text, this is followed with the words "in thy labors"; in the Masoretic, it is followed with "for thy sake."



What is the meaning of “the creation was made subject to futility”? That it became corruptible. For what cause, and on what account? On account of you, O man. For since you took a body mortal and subject to suffering, so also the earth received a curse, and brought forth thorns and thistles.<sup>103</sup>

St. Gregory the Sinaite says the same:

It is said that when the world was first created it was not subject to flux and corruption. According to Scripture it was only later corrupted and “made subject to futility”—that is, to man—not by its own choice but by the will of Him to whom it is subject, the expectation being that Adam, who had fallen into corruption, would be restored to his original state.<sup>104</sup>

As St. Symeon the New Theologian teaches, God did not curse Paradise, but only the rest of the incorrupt earth:

[God] wills to hold it [Paradise] out to us as a type of the indissoluble life to come, an icon of the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. If this were not the case, then the Garden, too, would have had to be cursed, since it was the scene of the transgression. However, God does not do this, but instead curses the whole rest of the earth which, as we have said, was incorruptible just like Paradise, and produced fruit of its own accord.<sup>105</sup>

St. John Chrysostom explains that this was a fitting and just consequence of man’s sin, since the visible creation had been made for the sake of man:

He [the Apostle Paul] discourses concerning creation’s bondage [to corruption—cf. Rom. 8:21], and shows for whose sake such a thing has occurred—and he places the blame on us. What then? In suffering these things on account of another, has creation been maltreated? By no means, for it has come into being for my sake. So then, how

could that which has come into being for my sake be unjustly treated in suffering those things for my correction?<sup>106</sup> \*

Let us recall St. Symeon's teaching, quoted above, that it was fitting that the creation supply incorrupt man with incorruptible food in the beginning. Elsewhere St. Symeon affirms that, after the fall, it was fitting that creation be made corruptible along with man, so that it could furnish man, for whose sake it had been made, with corruptible food:

[God] subjected creation to him [man], and put it under a curse so that, having been created for the sake of man who had fallen into corruption, it should itself become corrupt and provide him annually with corrupted food.<sup>107</sup>

At the same time, however, it is precisely because the visible creation was made for the sake of man that it will again become incorruptible—for when the body of man is restored to a state of incorruption at the general resurrection, the rest of the visible creation will be restored to that state as well. St. Symeon writes:

[God] willed that creation serve man for whom it was made, and like him become corruptible, so that when again man is renewed and becomes spiritual, incorruptible, and immortal, then creation, too, now subjected to the rebel by God's command and made his slave, will be made new, and become incorruptible and wholly spiritual.<sup>108</sup>

## *2. Subjected in Hope*

To summarize this Patristic teaching: Since creation was made for the sake of man, it was necessary that it be created incorruptible along with man, that it fall into corruption along with man, and that in the future it be restored to incorruption along with man. It is by reason of

---

\* Following the same line of thought, Sts. Ambrose of Milan and John Chrysostom taught that animals perished in the global Flood along with man because they had been created for man's sake. See p. 323, 323n above.

its future restoration that St. Paul, in saying that “the creation was subject to futility,” added the words “in hope” (Rom. 8:20). St. John Chrysostom, in his commentary on these words of the Apostle, explains further why there was no injustice in the fact that creation was subjected to corruption on account of man. Addressing mankind, he says:

Because of you, it [the creation] suffered evils and became corruptible, but no injustice has been done, for because of you it will become incorruptible again. This is what “in hope” means.<sup>109</sup>

There is hope for the creation, St. Paul goes on to say in his Epistle to the Romans, “because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God” (Rom. 8:21). St. Chrysostom interprets this verse as follows:

What does “the creation itself also” mean? Not only you, but also that which is inferior to you, even that which partakes of neither reason nor sense perception—even this will share all good things in common with you. For “it shall be delivered,” he [St. Paul] says, “from the bondage of corruption,” which is to say, it will no longer be corruptible, but will correspond to the beauty given to your body. For just as when the body became corruptible, the creation itself also became corruptible, so likewise when the body will become incorruptible, the creation itself will again correspond and follow suit.<sup>110</sup>

Again emphasizing that the rest of creation follows man, St. Chrysostom explains why Christians should find consolation in St. Paul’s teaching that the creation was made corruptible for the sake of man, “in hope” of future incorruption:

Do you see how man leads the way in all things, and how everything has come about for his sake? Do you perceive how he [St. Paul] encourages those struggling, and lays bare God’s unspeakable love for mankind? Why do you grieve, he says, over trials? You are suffering on account of yourself—creation is suffering on account of you. Nor

does he encourage only, but he demonstrates what he says to be worthy of faith. For if creation, which came into being entirely for you, has hope, much more ought you to have hope, through whom creation will come to enjoy all those good things.<sup>111</sup>

St. John Chrysostom's commentary on this passage in Romans has served as a basis for subsequent Patristic commentaries, such as those of St. John Damascene in the eighth century, Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid in the eleventh century, and St. Theophan the Recluse in the nineteenth century.<sup>112</sup> St. Chrysostom was not, however, introducing a new interpretation of this passage, but only expressing what had been the common teaching of the Church. Two centuries before St. Chrysostom, for example, St. Irenaeus of Lyons set forth the same interpretation. Commenting on Romans 8:19–23, St. Irenaeus wrote that when “the commencement of incorruption” occurs at the general resurrection, “the creation itself” will be “restored to its primeval condition”—thus indicating both the original and the future incorruption of the cosmos.<sup>113</sup> \*\*

St. Irenaeus' contemporary, St. Theophilus of Antioch, elaborated on this theme. In the passage of his teaching mentioned earlier, he explained why it was fitting that animals were changed at the fall together with man, and how they would one day be restored to a condition without hunting and predation:

The animals are named wild beasts [*θηρία*] from their being hunted [*θηρεύεσθαι*], not as if they had been made evil or venomous from the first—for nothing was made evil by God, but all things good, yea, very good (Gen. 1:31)—but the sin in which man was concerned brought evil upon them. For when man transgressed, they also transgressed with him. For as, if the master of the house himself

---

\* St. John Damascene's and Blessed Theophylact's commentaries on this passage were condensed versions of St. John Chrysostom's commentary. St. Theophan used St. Chrysostom as his main source, but quoted also from the writings of other Fathers.

\*\* See also p. 706 above, where St. Irenaeus again says that, in the general resurrection, creation will be “restored” to its original condition.

acts rightly, the domestics also of necessity conduct themselves well, but if the master sins, the servants also sin with him, so in like manner it came to pass, that in the case of man's sin, he being master, all that was subject to him sinned with him. When, therefore, man again shall have made his way back to his natural condition, and no longer does evil, those also shall be restored to their original gentleness.<sup>114</sup>

Again, a century before St. John Chrysostom, St. Methodius of Olympus commented on Romans 8:18–21, saying that the creation fell into corruption for the sake of man, and that it will be restored to incorruption along with him:

For the creation was made subject to futility, [St. Paul] says, and he expects that it will be set free from such servitude, as he intends to call this world by the name of creation. For it is not what is unseen [the angelic world] but what is seen that is subject to corruption. The creation, then, after being restored to a better and more seemly state, remains, rejoicing and exulting over the children of God at the resurrection, for whose sake it now groans and travails, waiting itself also for our redemption from the corruption of the body, that, when we have risen and shaken off the mortality of the flesh ..., and have been set free from sin, it also shall be freed from corruption and be subject no longer to futility, but to righteousness (cf. 2 Pet. 3:13).<sup>115</sup>

In our own times, this common Patristic teaching has been expounded by a modern-day Holy Father, St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, Serbia. All of creation fell into corruption along with man, Fr. Justin says, not simply because the destiny of all creatures is linked to man's, but because their destiny is *dependent* on man's:

The fate of visible nature has, from the beginning of its existence, been under the power of the influence of man.... Organically and mystically connected with man as with a God-like creature of God, nature in the essence of its life depends upon man and always moves strictly commensurately with man. When man chose the path of sin

and death as his path through history, all of nature, as the result of its irresistible inner dependency on man, followed after him (cf. Rom. 8:19–23). The fall of man was at the same time the fall of nature, and the curse of man became the curse of nature (Gen. 3:17–18). And from that time man and nature, like two inseparable twins, blinded by one and the same darkness, deadened by one and the same death, burdened by one and the same curse, go hand in hand through history, through the abysmal wilderness of sin and evil. Together they stumble, together they fall, and together they arise, ceaselessly striving toward the distant conclusion of their sorrowful history.<sup>116</sup>

Elsewhere, in his essay “A Deer Lost in Paradise,” St. Justin expressed this teaching in poetic fashion, through the mouth of a deer who speaks on behalf of all God’s creatures:

You men consciously and voluntarily fabricated sin, evil, and death; and then without our consent you also pulled us into them through your malice and malevolence, because you had authority over us. Therefore, you shall also have to answer for us... On the day of Judgment men will have to give an answer for all the torments, for all the sufferings, for all the troubles, and for all the deaths of all earthly beings and creatures.<sup>117</sup>

## VI. “BY MAN CAME DEATH”

### *1. Death Is Not from God*

As our study thus far has shown, the Orthodox Church, through the Holy Scriptures and their interpretation by the Holy Fathers, confesses that death and corruption exist not because God made them in the beginning, but because man brought them into the world through his sin. Besides the verses in the eighth chapter of Romans that we have already examined, other passages in the Pauline Epistles express this Orthodox doctrine. In 1 Corinthians, the Holy Apostle writes that “by

man came death” (1 Cor. 15:21). Again, in Romans, chapter 5, he writes that “by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin” (Rom. 5:12), and further that “by one man’s offense death reigned by one” (Rom. 5:17).

Commenting on the latter verse, St. John Chrysostom writes:

What armed death against the cosmos? The fact that one man tasted of the tree only.<sup>118</sup>

St. Macarius the Great likewise teaches that

Adam was placed as lord and king of all the creatures.... And so, when he was taken captive, the creation which ministered to and served him was taken captive together with him. For through him death came to reign over every soul.<sup>119</sup>

St. John Damascene affirms the same:

The creation of all things is due to God, but corruption came in afterwards due to our wickedness and as a punishment and a help. “For God did not make death, neither does He take delight in the destruction of living things” (Wis. 1:13). But death is the work rather of man; that is, its origin is in Adam’s transgression, in like manner as all other punishments.<sup>120</sup>

Providing further insights into the causality of death, St. Maximus explains that, at the fall, sin was “nailed” or “attached” to the root of human nature, thus bringing not only man but also the entire visible creation into a state of death and corruption:

What I am saying is that in the beginning sin seduced Adam and persuaded him to transgress God’s commandment, whereby sin gave rise to pleasure and, by means of this pleasure, nailed itself in Adam to the very depths of our nature, thus condemning our whole human nature to death and, via humanity, pressing the nature of (all) created beings toward mortal extinction.<sup>121</sup>

Elsewhere St. Maximus sets forth the same teaching on how death and corruption entered the cosmos:

The true word mystically explains that man—who was allotted, by the grace of the God Who made him, to be master over the whole visible world—by way of misuse turned the motions of the innate faculties of his noetic essence toward that which is against nature; and as a result, according to the just judgment of God, man brought upon himself and this whole universe the change and corruption presently ruling over both him and it.<sup>122</sup>\*

## 2. *The Devil's Role*

St. Maximus also speaks of the devil's role in bringing sin, and thus death, into the creation:

Through man, [sin] impels all created things toward death. All this was contrived by the devil, that spawn of sin and father of iniquity who through pride expelled himself from Divine glory, and through envy of us and of God banished Adam from Paradise, in order to destroy the works of God and dissolve what had been brought into existence.<sup>123</sup>

It is in light of this explanation that we are to understand the words of Scripture quoted earlier, "Through the envy of the devil death came into the world" (Wis. 2:24), as well as the following verse from the

---

\* See also the quotation of St. Maximus on p. 689 above. In addition to the Patristic passages quoted elsewhere in this book, one finds other places where the Holy Fathers, following the teaching of the Apostle Paul (cf. Rom. 5:12, 8:20–21), affirm that "death entered the cosmos" at the fall of man. See, for example, St. Athanasius the Great, *Four Discourses against the Arians* 1.51, NPNF 2 4, p. 336; St. Photius the Great, quoted in a catena on Romans, PG 118.416B; Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid, *Commentary on Romans*, PG 124.404C, 448A; St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.1, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 180; St. Maximus the Greek, *Works* (in Russian), vol. 2, p. 331; and St. Theophan the Recluse, *Commentary on First Eight Chapters of the Epistle of the Holy Apostle Paul to the Romans* (in Russian), p. 308.



Canon of the Feast of Theophany, composed by St. John Damascene, which speaks of the devil “implanting” death in the creation:

He who once assumed the appearance of a malignant serpent and implanted death in the creation, is now cast into darkness by Christ’s coming in the flesh.<sup>124</sup>

### *3. Is Death “Natural”?*

The Scriptural-Patristic teaching we have recounted on the origin of death and corruption in the cosmos, and on the devil’s place in it, forms the basis of a poetic passage by another modern Holy Father from Serbia, St. Nikolai Velimirovich of Zica. In a work called “Death Is Unnatural,” St. Nikolai writes:

Death is not natural; rather it is unnatural.

And death is not from nature; rather it is against nature.\*

All of nature in horror cries out: “I do not know death! I do not wish death! I am afraid of death! I strive against death!”

Death is an uninvited stranger in nature.

All of nature bristles at this uninvited stranger and is afraid of it. For it is like a thief in somebody else’s garden, who does not just steal and eat the fruit, but who also tramples, spoils, breaks and uproots what was planted. And the more it ravages, the more it becomes satisfied.

Even when one hundred philosophies declare that “death is natural!” all of nature trembles in indignation and shouts: “No! I have no use for death! It is an uninvited stranger!”

And the voice of nature is not sophistry.

The protest of nature against death outweighs all excuses thought up to justify death.

And if there is something that nature struggles to express in its untouched harmony, doing so without exception in a unison of

---

\* As in the passages of St. Justin of Celije quoted above, “nature” (природа in Serbian) here refers to the created order or natural environment.

voices, then it is a protest against death. It is its unanimous, frantic, and heaven-shaking elegy to death.

If in fact death is unnatural, if it is not natural and is against nature, then a question arises: why is it so and whence does death enter nature?

Not a single kingdom of light and life accepts death as its native. It must have sneaked into the worlds of life secretly—crawling on its belly and staying out of sight so that it would not be spotted and exposed—from some bottomless abyss where even it was too cold and lonely.

When death was behind the fangs of a snake, it was dead unto itself.\* And no one in the world then knew about good and evil—only bliss existed; and nobody heard of knowledge and ignorance—there was only wisdom; and nobody knew of life and death—there was only the state of blissfully wise existence.

But because of an occasion, which is more dreadful than the most horrible nightmare, the mouth of the snake opened and the fangs full of venom appeared out of it—and death entered first-created nature.<sup>125</sup>

Elsewhere, in his *Homilies*, St. Nikolai Velimirovich offers another profound reflection on the same theme, indicating through observable examples that death is indeed an intruder in this world:

There is a mysterious feeling that takes hold of all who stand around a dead body, a feeling that is rarely expressed, and this is shame. Not only do men fear death, they are ashamed of it. This shame is a proof—an even stronger one than fear—that death is the consequence of man's sin. As a sick man is ashamed to show the doctor his hidden wound, so all who have a conscience are ashamed to show their mortality. This shame of death goes to prove our

---

\* A reference to the devil, who in St. John Chrysostom's words "employed [the serpent] like some convenient instrument" when tempting Eve (St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 16.2, FC 74, p. 209 [16.4]; see also pp. 253–54 above).

immortal origins and our immortal destiny. Animals hide themselves away when they are dying, as though they feel ashamed of their mortality. How great, then, is this shame on the part of the spiritually educated!<sup>126</sup>

When St. Nikolai says that death is “unnatural,” he is speaking from the perspective of God’s economy of His creation in its original state. Death was not part of God’s original, “very good” creation; therefore, when it entered the world, it was “unnatural.” This is not to say, however, that the creation was preserved in incorruption *strictly* according to its own nature, independent of God’s grace. As we have seen, the original incorruption of man was entirely dependent on God, while the incorruption of the rest of creation was dependent on God through man.

With regard to whether man was originally immortal by “nature” or by “grace,” various Holy Fathers express themselves differently. As we have said when discussing whether or not Adam’s nature “changed” at the fall, the Fathers sometimes employ the term “nature” in a strict sense, and sometimes in a broad sense. Thus, just as Adam’s nature may be said to have changed or to have remained unchanged, according to the sense given to the word “nature,” so also man’s original immortality may be said to have existed by “nature” or by “grace,” depending on how “nature” is viewed.

For example, in *On the Incarnation*, St. Athanasius the Great said that Adam was created mortal by nature but preserved in incorruption by grace,\* while St. Gregory of Nyssa, in *On Virginity*, said that man

---

\* “God has made man, and willed that he should abide in incorruption; but men, having despised and rejected the contemplation of God, and devised and contrived evil for themselves . . . , received the condemnation of death with which they had been threatened; and from thenceforth no longer remained as they were made.... For man is by nature mortal, inasmuch as he is made out of what is not; but by reason of his likeness to Him Who is (and if he still preserved this likeness by keeping Him in his knowledge) he would stay his natural corruption, and remain incorrupt; ... being incorrupt, he would live henceforth as God.... For God has not only made us out of nothing; but He gave us freely, by the grace of the Word, a life in correspondence with God. But men, having rejected things eternal, and, by counsel of the devil,

was not originally liable to death according to his nature.\* Here again we see two Fathers viewing the same reality from different sides. St. Athanasius, in saying that man in the beginning was mortal by nature, was looking at “nature” in an absolute sense, according to which God alone is immortal by nature because He alone is Uncreated, without beginning, and dependent on nothing for His unending life (cf. 1 Tim. 6:15–16: “the Lord of lords, Who alone hath immortality”).\*\* St. Gregory, in saying that man was not originally mortal by nature, was viewing “nature” in a relative sense, according to which humanity was, *conditionally and dependently*, granted the gift of immortality by God.

---

turned to the things of corruption, became the cause of their own corruption in death, being, as I said before, by nature corruptible, but destined, by the grace following from partaking of the Word, to have escaped their natural state, had they remained good. For because of the Word dwelling with them, even their natural corruption did not come near them, as Wisdom also says: ‘God made man for incorruption’” (St. Athanasius, *On the Incarnation of the Word* 4–5, NPNF 2 4, p. 38). A comparable teaching is found in St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Against Heresies* 3.20.1, ANF 1, p. 450.

\* “This reasoning and intelligent creature, man, at once the work and the likeness of the Divine and Imperishable Mind (for so in Genesis it is written of him that ‘God made man in His image’), this creature, I say, did not in the course of his first production have the liability to passion and death [τὸ παθητικὸν τε καὶ ἐπὶ κληρον] according to his nature or inherent in his essence” (St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On Virginity* 12, SC 119.398–400, NPNF 2 5, p. 357\*).

\*\* St. Athanasius taught that, since incorrupt first-created man was brought into being out of nothing, he would naturally undergo “corruption into nothing” if God did not preserve his life (*On the Incarnation of the Word* 4). This theology of created being—of creatures “naturally” having an end because they have a beginning—is taken up by other Fathers in other contexts. St. John Damascene, for example, writes that “angels are immortal, not by nature, but by grace; for, naturally, everything that has a beginning has an end” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.3, FC 37, p. 206). According to this sense of the word “nature,” then, even angels may be said to be “mortal by nature and immortal by grace.” As St. Maximus writes: “Creatures all exist through participation and grace.... Only the Divine Essence has no opposite, since it is eternal and infinite and bestows eternity on other things. The being of created things, on the other hand, has non-being as its opposite. Whether or not it exists eternally depends on the power of Him Who alone exists in the substantive sense” (*Four Hundred Texts on Love* 3.27–28, *Philokalia* 2, p. 87). Thus, in Orthodox theology, no created thing could *exist*, let alone possess immortality, without God’s grace.

In the writings of St. Maximus, we find this question viewed from both sides. In some places St. Maximus writes that Adam “was not deprived of the immortality that is by grace,”\* and that at the fall Adam lost “the incorruptibility which had been given by grace.”<sup>127</sup> As we have seen, however, in another place St. Maximus wrote that Christ has made it possible for man “once again to recover an immortal nature,”\*\* thus specifying that man had an “immortal nature” in the beginning.

Taken together, St. Maximus’ teachings lend themselves to the formulation that man’s body was originally possessed, *by grace*, of an immortal, incorrupt *nature*. Such an understanding is possible within Orthodox theology, which sees no rigid dichotomy between grace and nature. As Vladimir Lossky points out: “Grace is implied in the act of creation itself... Nature and grace do not exist side by side, rather there is a mutual interpenetration of one another, the one exists in the other.”<sup>128</sup> \*\*\*

In seeing the inner harmony of St. Maximus’ thought on man’s

---

\* See p. 699 above.

\*\* See p. 725 above.

\*\*\* The interpenetration of grace and nature is also expressed in the Patristic teaching on the human *soul*, which, as we have seen in the passage of St. Gregory Palamas quoted above (pp. 716–17), remained immortal even after man’s fall. Thus, St. John Damascene, after listing attributes of the human soul and including immortality among them, writes: “All these qualities according to nature [the soul] has received from the grace of the Creator, from which grace it has received both its being [τὸ εἶναι] and its being by nature such as it is [φύσει ὡτως εἶναι]” (*On the Orthodox Faith* 2.12, PTS 12.77, NPNF 2 9, p. 31b\*). Here St. John affirms that immortality is a quality with which God has endowed the *nature* of the soul by means of His *grace*, just as it is by grace that He has granted the soul its very existence. It is in this light that we are to understand, for example, the statement of St. Irenaeus that “the spirit and the soul and other such things ... are immortal by nature, to which things life is always present by their very nature” (*Against Heresies* 5.4.1, ANF 1, p. 530; see also 5.7.1, pp. 532–33), or St. Gregory Palamas’ affirmation that “by nature the soul is immortal” (*To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia* 8, *Philokalia* 4, p. 295). If the soul can be called immortal by nature, it is in the sense that the nature of the soul possesses immortality as a gift from God. In the concise phrase of St. Cyril of Jerusalem, the soul is “immortal because of God Who gives it immortality” (*Catechetical Lectures* 4.18, NPNF 2 7, p. 23).

original immortality, we can better appreciate the harmony between the theology of St. Athanasius and that of St. Gregory of Nyssa. St. Gregory, as we have quoted him earlier, wrote that man was created “in Divine grace”;\* and elsewhere he described man’s condition before the fall as a “pristine state of grace.”<sup>129</sup> Thus, while saying that man was not created liable to death according to his nature, he also affirmed that this incorrupt condition was a state of grace. Likewise, St. Athanasius, in saying that man was created mortal by nature, also affirmed that man was preserved in incorruption by grace. While employing the term “nature” in different ways with regard to man, both Fathers taught the same essential points: (1) that man was preserved in incorruption until the fall, (2) that this condition was a state of grace, and (3) that if man had not sinned he would not have died.\*\*

#### *4. St. Gregory Palamas on the Cause of Death and Illness*

As we have seen in the writings of several Fathers, it was in being “stripped of grace,” and thereby dying spiritually, that man was made subject to physical death. Perhaps no Father speaks at greater length and in more detail on this than does St. Gregory Palamas. In the following passage from his thirty-first homily, St. Gregory describes the whole process by which death, together with bodily diseases and infirmities, was introduced into the life of man:

We should inquire and learn about the origin of physical death. God, Who is Life-itself, fullness of life, and the Cause of all life in time and eternity, and indeed of the pre-eternal and Godlike life, neither gave us bodily death, nor created, nor commanded it to exist. If God did not make this death, He is also not responsible for physical diseases, so where do our bodily illnesses and maladies, as well as

---

\* See p. 691 above.

\*\* Moreover, as we have seen, both Sts. Athanasius and Gregory of Nyssa taught that human sexual procreation was a result of the fall, and that if man had not fallen God would have increased the human race by some other means. This further underlines their common vision of man’s original state of physical incorruption, and its fundamental difference from his condition after the fall. See pp. 494–95n, 722 above.

the death of our bodies, come from? Listen and understand what the source of this death is. The spiritual serpent and archetype of wickedness deserted to evil in the beginning and so was deprived of true, good life. He was justly driven away from the life from which he had already fled, and became a dead spirit, not dead in essence, for deadness has no essential existence, but dead through casting off true life. He was not satisfied, though, with hurtling towards evil, but also made himself a death-dealing spirit, deceitfully, alas, and persuading mankind to share in his own death.

Because our ancestors agreed with Satan against the Creator's will and stripped off the garments of life and heavenly radiance, they became, sad to say, spiritually dead like Satan. Satan is not just a dead spirit, but brings death upon all who draw near to him. Both of those who shared in his state of death [i.e., Adam and Eve] had bodies through which the deadening counsel which they had put into practice finished its work. Once their spirits had died and become sources of death they passed on their deadness to their bodies, which would have disintegrated immediately and returned to the earth, had they not been preserved by a higher providence and power to await the decision of Him Who upholds all things by His word alone (cf. Heb. 1:3). He ... held back the sentence of physical death and postponed it. When He did pronounce it, in His profound wisdom and great love for mankind, He refrained from putting it into effect until a future time. He did not say to Adam, "As you have eaten from the tree from which I told you not to eat, go back to whence you came." Instead, having first spoken of many things relevant to the course of human life on earth, He pronounced, "For dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return" (Gen. 3:19). For He did not utter these words as a commandment, but to foretell what was in all fairness to take place, with His permission and without Him preventing it. Notice that, like the death of the soul, physical death does not come from God but from transgression, as a result of the soul committing sin, and of the serpent deceitfully dragging man down with him into iniquity. Consequently, bodily ailments also found their way in as a result of sin.<sup>130</sup>

### *5. Why God Allowed the Entrance of Death and Suffering*

Although the Holy Fathers declare along with St. Paul that death is an “enemy” which is to be “destroyed” (1 Cor. 15:26), they also affirm that the introduction of death was allowed providentially by God. Death, as we have said, was not part of God’s economy of His creation in its original condition; however, after the fall God used death for the benefit of man. As St. John Chrysostom observes, in man’s fallen state death serves for the cutting off of sin:

Even though death entered as a result of sin, nevertheless such is the superiority of God, His loving-kindness and the excess of His care that He employs even this to the advantage of our race.... Is it not the final blow to evil? I mean, if someone is wicked, his practice of evil is felled at his death: “For he that is dead is freed from sin” (Rom. 6:7), that is, no longer continues sinning; if a person who is good passes on, all his works of virtue lie in safety and in a secure treasury. Does this not, tell me, render the living more temperate and circumspect?... You see, if despite death being what it is there is so much rapacity, so much avarice, the stronger preying on the weaker like fish, when would avarice ever come to an end if there were no death? I mean, if they are aware that they will not enjoy what they steal, but willy-nilly they will pass it over to others, and they so grieve and lament at this, when would the flames of evil desire ever be extinguished if they kept their ill-gotten gains without fear?<sup>131</sup>

St. Irenaeus likewise sees God’s love toward mankind in the fact that He allowed death to enter the world:

God also drove Adam out of Paradise, and placed him far from the tree of life, not because He envied him the tree of life, as some dare to claim, but because He pitied him and did not desire that he should persevere forever as a sinner, nor that the sin which surrounded him should be immortal, and evil interminable and irreme-



diable. But He set a bound to man's sin by interposing death, thus causing sin to cease.<sup>132</sup>

St. Gregory the Theologian says the same:

Yet here too he [Adam] makes a gain, namely death, and the cutting off of sin, in order that evil may not be immortal. Thus his punishment is changed into a mercy; for it is in mercy, I am persuaded, that God inflicts punishment.<sup>133</sup>

Just as God used death for the benefit of man in his fallen state, so also did He use the other physical consequences of the fall: suffering, bodily needs, labor, disease, etc. Like death itself, these other consequences serve to humble man and bring him to repentance.

At the fall, man succumbed to the temptation of pride, expressed in the serpent's words, "Ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil" (Gen. 3:5). All the physical consequences of the fall serve to remind man that he is not God but a created being who is dependent on God. St. John Chrysostom, in recounting the sentence imposed on Adam at the fall (Gen. 3:17–19), explains this as follows:

Behold the reminders of the curse! Thorns it will bring forth, He [God] says, and thistles, so as to give rise to great labor and discomfort, and I will ensure that you pass the whole time with pain, so that this experience may prove a brake on your getting ideas above your station, and you may instead have a thought of your own make-up and never again be deceived in these matters.... My intention in bringing you into the world ... was that you should live in a state of enjoyment and prosperity, and not be subject to the needs of the body but be free from all such and have the good fortune to experience complete freedom. Since, however, such indulgence was of no benefit to you, accordingly I curse the ground so that it will not in future yield its harvest as before without tilling and ploughing; instead, I invest you with great labor, toil and difficulty, and with unremitting pain and despair, and I am ensuring that everything you do is achieved only by sweat so that under pressure from these you may

have continual guidance in keeping to limits and recognizing your own make-up.<sup>134</sup>

Adam and Eve indeed succumbed to pride in partaking of the forbidden fruit, but that was not the only source of their fall. As will be recalled, in the primordial transgression they also turned their desire away from God and toward created things, seeking pleasure in them as an end in itself. This too is expressed in the Genesis narrative: "And ... the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and pleasant to the eyes, and a tree beautiful to contemplate" (Gen. 3:6).\*

Thus, the temptation that brought about man's fall was twofold. In the words of St. Mark the Ascetic: "All vice in the world is caused by self-esteem [pride] and sensual pleasure."<sup>135</sup> Because of this, God employed the physical consequences of the fall as a twofold remedy: not only to quell man's pride, but also to dampen his desire for created things and his pursuit of sensual pleasure for its own sake. As St. Maximus explains:

Being, in His Providence, concerned for our salvation, God therefore affixed pain alongside this sensual pleasure as a kind of punitive faculty, whereby the law of death was wisely implanted in our corporeal nature to curb the foolish mind in its desire to incline unnaturally toward sensible things.... Through the many sufferings in which and from which death occurs, pain uproots unnatural pleasure, but does not completely destroy it.<sup>136</sup>

Physical death, of course, puts an end to physical pain and labors. Here again we see God's mercy, for in allowing the entrance of physical death so as to prevent sin from being immortal, God also prevented bodily pain and labor from necessarily lasting forever. As Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus writes:

Death dissolves this living thing and on the one hand ceases the ac-

---

\* This is the Septuagint rendering. In the Masoretic Text, the last phrase reads "and a tree to be desired to make one wise."

tion of wickedness; on the other hand, it saves man from further anguish, liberates him from sweat, drives away pain and sorrow, and brings the body's sufferings to an end. The Judge mixed the punishment with such philanthropy!<sup>137</sup>

Furthermore, in His foreknowledge of man's eventual salvation through Christ, God allowed man's body to die so that it could be refashioned at the general resurrection. In the words of St. Gregory of Nyssa:

By Divine Providence death has been introduced as a dispensation into the nature of man, so that, sin having flowed away at the dissolution of the union of soul and body, man, through the resurrection, might be refashioned, sound, passionless, stainless, and removed from any touch of evil.<sup>138</sup> \*

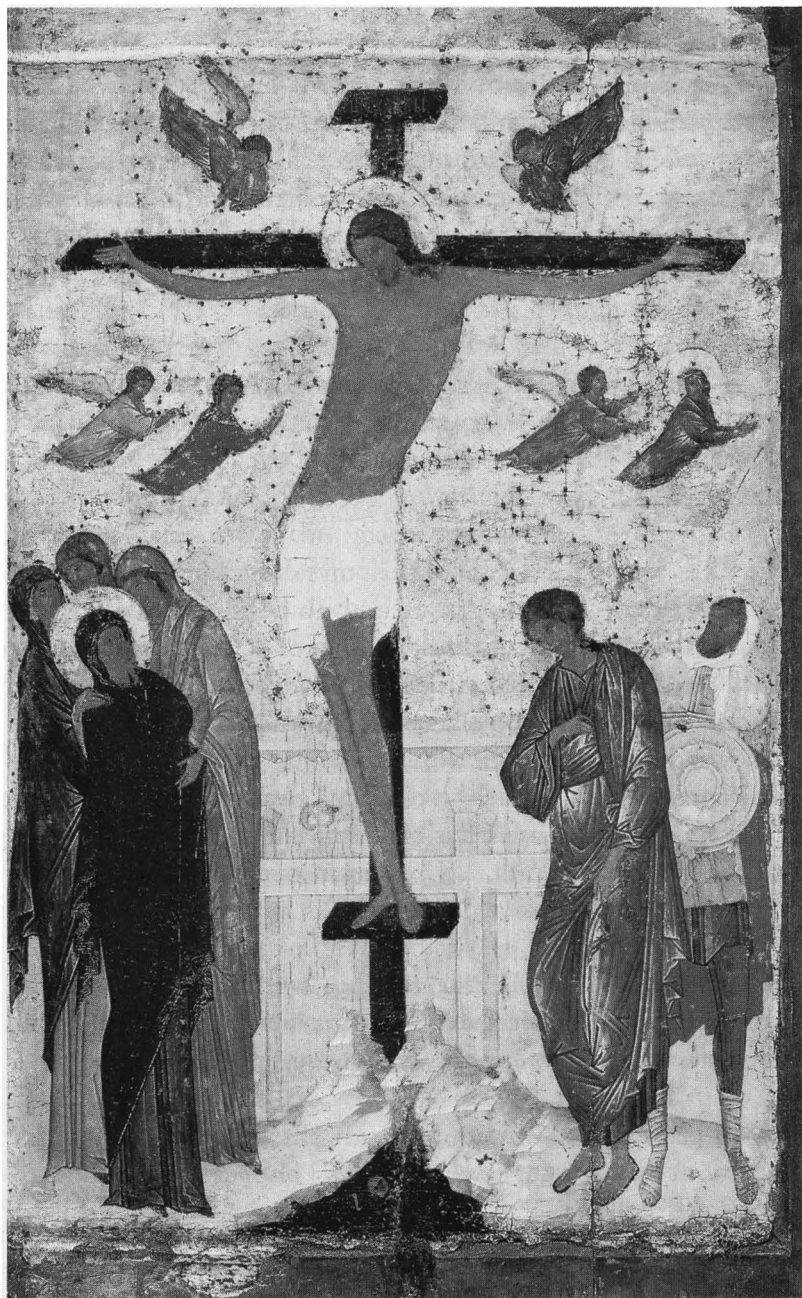
St. Basil the Great also points to this idea, drawing an analogy between a human body that has been rendered immune to death and a pot that has been fired in a kiln, i.e., has acquired its final state:

God did not create death, but we brought it upon ourselves by a wicked intention. To be sure ... He did not prevent our dissolution, so that our weakness might not remain immortal. It is like someone not allowing a leaky clay pot to be placed in fire [and hardened] until the weakness present in it has been completely mended through refashioning.<sup>139</sup>

Man's death, then, opened the way to his refashioning into a better state. The actual refashioning of man, however, would occur not through the death of sinful men but through the death and resurrection

---

\* Compare St. Maximus the Confessor, who writes that the soul and body are naturally united in man "until such time as pleases the One Who bound them together to separate them [i.e., in death], in view of a greater and more mystical arrangement [*οἰκονομίας*] in the time of the expected universal consummation [i.e., the general resurrection]" (*Mystagogy* 7, PG 91.685B, trans. George C. Berthold, p. 197).



The crucifixion of Christ.

*Icon by Master Dionysius, St. Paul of Obnora Monastery, Russia, 1500.*

of the sinless God-man, Jesus Christ. Death, the ultimate physical consequence of man's fall, would thus become a means by which God would redeem mankind from all the effects of the fall, spiritually and bodily. As we read in Holy Scripture: "He [Christ] is the mediator of the New Covenant, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first covenant, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance" (Heb. 9:15).

## VII. THE REDEMPTION AND DEIFICATION OF MAN AND THE COSMOS

### 1. *"Trampling Down Death by Death"*

How are we to understand this mystery of man's redemption through Christ's death and resurrection? To begin our examination of this question, let us return to the teaching of St. Gregory Palamas on man's fall. As will be recalled, St. Gregory taught that, through Adam's one spiritual death, both spiritual and physical death were passed on to all men. The same Saint, however, affirmed that it is by means of death—Christ's death—that the power of death is destroyed. He explains that, as spiritual and physical death entered the world through Adam's one *spiritual* death, so both kinds of death are overcome through Christ's one *physical* death and His subsequent resurrection:

Through the evil one's envy and the good Lord's just consent, death came into the world. Because of the devil's overwhelming evil, death became twofold, for he brought about not just physical but also eternal death....

Of necessity bodily death followed [Adam's] spiritual death, so the evil one caused our double death by his single death.... The good Lord healed this twofold death of ours through His single bodily death, and through the one resurrection of His body He gave us a twofold resurrection. By means of His bodily death He destroyed him [the evil one] who had the power over our souls and bodies in death, and rescued us from his tyranny over both.<sup>140</sup>

Out of His infinite love for us, Christ died on our behalf, that we could be given eternal life, both of soul and of body. In the words of St. Paul: "God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:8); and, "But we see Jesus, Who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that He by the grace of God should taste death for every man" (Heb. 2:9).

Speaking of the awesome mystery of His redemption of the world, Christ told His disciples: "The Son of Man came ... to give His life as a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28).<sup>\*</sup> This image of Christ giving up His life as a ransom was later taken up by the Apostle Paul (e.g., "Christ Jesus, Who gave Himself a ransom for all"—1 Tim. 2:5–6) and by the Orthodox Holy Fathers. In the following passage, St. John Damascene makes use of this image, adding to it the image of Christ's body as bait attached to the hook of Divinity:

Since our Lord Jesus Christ was without sin ("For He committed no sin, He Who took away the sin of the world, nor was there any deceit found in His mouth" [cf. Is. 53:9, John 1:29]), He was not subject to death, since death came into the world through sin (cf. Rom. 5:12). He dies, therefore, because He took on Himself death on our behalf, and He makes Himself an offering to the Father for our sakes. For we had sinned against Him, and it was meet that He should receive a ransom for us, and that we should thus be delivered from the condemnation. God forbid that the blood of the Lord should have been offered to the tyrant [i.e., the devil]. Wherefore death approaches, and swallowing up the body as a bait is transfixed on the hook of Divinity, and after tasting of a sinless and life-giving

---

<sup>\*</sup> Christ's Divine foreknowledge that His death would serve for man's salvation finds expression elsewhere in the Gospels. Speaking of His death on the Cross, Christ said: "But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how I am straitened till it be accomplished!" (Luke 12:50); "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have eternal life" (John 3:14–15); and, on the day before His crucifixion: "Now is My soul troubled; and what shall I say? 'Father, save Me from this hour'? But for this cause came I unto this hour" (John 12:27).

body, perishes, and brings up again all whom of old he had swallowed up. For just as darkness disappears on the introduction of light, so is death repulsed before the assault of life, and brings life to all, but death to the destroyer.<sup>141</sup>

In precisely the same vein, St. Gregory Palamas writes:

The Lord patiently endured for our sake a death He was not obliged to undergo, to redeem us, who were obliged to suffer death, from servitude to the devil and death, by which I mean death both of the soul and of the body, temporary and eternal. Since He gave His blood, which was sinless and therefore guiltless, as a ransom for us who were liable to punishment because of our sins, He redeemed us from our guilt. He forgave our sins, tore up the record of them on the Cross and delivered us from the devil's tyranny (cf. Col. 2:14–15). The devil was caught by the bait. It was as if he opened his mouth and hastened to pour out for himself our ransom, the Master's blood, which was not only guiltless but full of Divine power. Then instead of being enriched by it he was strongly bound and made an example in the Cross of Christ.<sup>142</sup>

St. John Chrysostom further highlights this teaching with an image of his own:

It is as if, at a session of a court of justice, the devil should be addressed as follows: "Granted that you destroyed all men because you found them guilty of sin; but why did you destroy Christ? Is it not very evident that you did so unjustly? Well then, through Him the whole world will be vindicated."<sup>143</sup> \*

---

\* Compare 1 Peter 3:18: "For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the Just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit," as well as the following verse from the service for the feast of the Exaltation of the Cross: "The curse of a just condemnation is loosed by the unjust punishment inflicted on the Just [i.e., Christ]" (sticheron on "Lord I have cried," in *The Festal Menaion*, p. 134).

From these and other Patristic expositions based in Scripture, the Orthodox doctrine of man's redemption through Christ's death and resurrection might be briefly stated as follows: Death is the consequence of sin. When Christ died on the Cross, He took upon Himself this consequence. However, since He was wholly without sin He was undeserving of death, and since He was Divine He was unable to be held in the bonds of death and hades. Thus, the spiritual and physical death that had entered the world through the primordial transgression were abolished through Christ's death and resurrection, and all mankind was given the possibility of being delivered from them.

## *2. The Commonality of Human Nature as It Relates to Redemption*

The consequences of Christ's redemptive work could pass to all men because—as we have noted concerning the consequences of the first Adam's sin—human nature is one. The Apostle Paul writes: "If by one man's offense death reigned by one [that is, Adam], much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by One, Jesus Christ" (Rom. 5:17). St. John Chrysostom comments on this verse and on those before and after it, explaining why St. Paul repeats the word "one" many times in his exposition of redemption:

How did death reign? "After the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is a type [τύπος] of Him Who was to come" (Rom. 5:14). Now this is why Adam is a type of Christ.\* "How a type?" it will be said. In that, as the former became to those who were sprung from him (al-

---

\* The fact that St. Paul, and after him St. John Chrysostom, saw Adam as a "type" (figure) of Christ does not of course imply that they did not also see him as a real person. The Orthodox Church has always viewed certain Old Testament figures and events as "types" of the New Testament dispensation while also affirming their historical reality. Thus, in another place, St. Paul wrote concerning certain events in the Old Testament: "Now all these things happened to them as types, and they were written for our admonition" (1 Cor. 10:11). In saying that these events *happened* as



though they had not eaten of the tree) the cause of that death which by his eating was introduced, thus also did Christ become to those sprung from Him (even though they had not wrought righteousness) the Provider of that righteousness which through His Cross He graciously bestowed on us all.\* For this reason, at every turn he keeps to the “one,” and is continually bringing it before us, when he says, “As by one man sin entered into the world” (Rom. 5:12); and, “If through the offense of one many be dead” (5:15); and, “Not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift”; and, “The judgment was by one to condemnation” (5:16); and again, “If by one (or, the one) man’s offense death reigned by one” (5:17); and “Therefore as by the offense of one” (5:18). And again, “As by one man’s disobedience many (or, the many) were made sinners” (5:19). And so he does not let go of the “one,” so that when the Jew says to you, “How came it that by the well-doing of this one Person, Christ, the world was saved?” you might be able to say to him, “How came it that by the disobedience of this one person, Adam, the world was condemned?”<sup>144</sup>

St. Cyril of Alexandria speaks specifically on how the consequences of Christ’s death on the Cross, like the consequences of Adam’s fall, were able to pass to all men due to the unity of human nature:

---

types and then were written down (rather than being merely “written down as types”), St. Paul is affirming that typology exists first of all in historical events, and then also in the written word.

The Holy Fathers saw “types” of Christ not only in Adam but also in Abel, Isaac, Joseph, Moses, Joshua the son of Nun, David, and others, at the same time regarding them as real people and the Old Testament accounts of them as historical. Some of these Fathers, including St. John Chrysostom, expressly wrote of the need to uphold the historical meaning of Scripture when a typological meaning is also given; see pp. 40–41, 122–23n above.

\* Compare St. Cyril of Alexandria: “It is therefore anything but a secret that even in the first Adam the mystery of Christ was already represented, though differently and in a contrary configuration, not by exactly figuring forth the same thing. For the one was the beginning of the race unto death, unto a curse, unto judgment. But the other, unto everything opposite: life, blessing, and justification” (*Glaphyra on Genesis* 1.12, PG 69.29CD).

We were crucified with Christ at the moment when His flesh was crucified, because it somehow included universal human nature in itself, just as universal human nature contracted the sickness of the curse in Adam at the same time that he incurred the curse.<sup>145</sup>

### 3. *The Order of Redemption (I): Spiritual Resurrection*

In Christ's incarnation, death and resurrection, *all* the consequences of the fall are overcome. These consequences, however, are not overcome all at once, but in a certain order, corresponding to the order in which man first experienced them. St. Symeon the New Theologian teaches that, just as Adam experienced first spiritual death and later physical death, so likewise Christ first overcame spiritual death in His own Person when He "resurrected up, brought to life, and deified" the human soul at His incarnation, and then He later overcame physical death in His Person at His resurrection.<sup>146</sup> St. Symeon goes on to say that the same order of redemption—first of the soul and then of the body—was observed in those who had died before Christ; for, immediately after Christ's death and while His body lay in the tomb, His soul "descended into hades, freed the souls of the saints held captive there in everlasting bonds, raised them up, and established them in a place of rest and of light without evening—but not yet their bodies, for those He allowed to remain in the grave until the general resurrection."<sup>147</sup> \*

Finally, St. Symeon teaches, this order of redemption is also observed in the life of each Christian. Man is first spiritually resurrected in the Church through the Holy Mysteries that have been made

---

\* This teaching is found in the Epistles of Sts. Peter and Paul (1 Pet. 3:18–19, 4:6; Eph. 4:8–10). St. John Damascene affirms that the Savior began His descent into hell as soon as He gave up the spirit at the ninth hour, while darkness still enveloped the earth (Matt. 27:45–50; Mark 15:33–37): "In that darkness the Divine and all-holy soul of the Lord, having been separated from His sacred and life-giving body, came to dwell in the heart of the earth" (St. John Damascene, *Homily on Holy Saturday* 26, PTS 29.135–36). As St. Cyril of Alexandria points out, Christ did not deliver from hell all those who had died before His coming, but only those who "believed and acknowledged Him" (see p. 342n above).

possible through Christ's redemptive work, and only later does he experience the physical resurrection that Christ has also made possible.

"The beginning of our renewal," writes St. Gregory Palamas, is the Mystery of Holy Baptism, wherein we are cleansed of sin through Christ's sacrifice on the Cross. St. Gregory writes:

Christ tore up the handwriting of our transgressions on the Cross and made all those who were buried with Him through Baptism guiltless.<sup>148</sup>

In Baptism, we die and are buried with Christ, thus partaking of the saving power of His death which frees us from sin. Thus, the Apostle Paul writes: "Know ye not, that as many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore we are buried with Him by Baptism into death.... Our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed" (Rom. 6:3–4, 6). As St. John Chrysostom explains:

Baptism is the Cross.\* What the Cross and burial is to Christ, Baptism has been to us, even if not in the same respects. For He died Himself and was buried in the flesh, but we have done both to sin.<sup>149</sup>

The Mystery of Baptism, however, does not only mean dying with Christ; it also means rising with Him and being given new life. The Apostle Paul affirms: "Therefore we are buried with him by Baptism into death, that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.... Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him" (Rom. 6:4, 8). And again: "Buried with Him in Baptism,... ye are risen with Him through faith in the operation of God, Who hath

---

\* Elsewhere St. John Chrysostom observes that "not only is Baptism called the Cross, but the Cross is called Baptism. 'With the Baptism that I am baptized with shall ye be baptized' (Mark 10:39), said Christ; and again: 'But I have a Baptism to be baptized with' (Luke 12:50), which ye know not" (*Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 25.2, PG 59.151, NPNF 1 14, p. 89\*).

raised Him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath He made alive together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses, having wiped out the handwriting of requirements that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His Cross" (Col. 2:12–14).

This spiritual resurrection in Christ is the uniting of man's soul once again with the grace of the Holy Spirit. Because man is cleansed of sin in Holy Baptism through Christ's redemptive sacrifice, grace is no longer foreign to his nature, and he becomes a fit receptacle of the Holy Spirit. Thus, in the Mystery of Baptism, together with the Mystery of Chrismation that follows upon it, man receives the grace of the Holy Spirit as he had it before the primordial fall. In the words of St. John Chrysostom:

This is the meaning of "the Spirit giveth life" (2 Cor. 3:6).... In Baptism the sins are buried, the former things are blotted out, and man is made alive, the entire grace written upon his heart as it were a tablet. Consider then how high is the dignity of the Spirit.<sup>150</sup>

St. Symeon the New Theologian explains how Baptism, together with Chrismation, is both a death and a resurrection for man, both granting man forgiveness of sins and imparting to him the grace of the Holy Spirit that he had lost at the fall:

The Son and Word of God, having become incarnate, offered Himself in the flesh as a sacrifice to the Divinity of the Father, and of the Son Himself, and of the Holy Spirit, in order that the first transgression of Adam might be benevolently forgiven for the sake of this great and fearful work, that is, for the sake of this sacrifice of Christ, and in order that by its power there might be performed another new birth and re-creation of man in Holy Baptism, in which we also are cleansed by water mingled with the Holy Spirit. From that time people are baptized in water, are immersed in it and taken out from it three times, in the image of the three-day burial of the Lord, and after they die in it to this whole evil world, in the third bringing out from it they are already alive, as if resurrected from the dead; that is,

their souls are brought to life and again receive the grace of the Holy Spirit as Adam had it before the transgression. Then they are anointed with Holy Myrrh, and by means of it are anointed with Jesus Christ, and are fragrant in a way above nature.<sup>151</sup>

St. Symeon then writes of how those who are baptized and chrismated into Christ's Church are united to God through the Holy Eucharist:

Having become in this way worthy of being associates of God, they taste His Flesh and drink His Blood, and by means of the sanctified bread and wine become of one Body and Blood with God Who was incarnate and offered Himself as a sacrifice.<sup>152</sup>

In a similar vein, St. Nicholas Cabasilas speaks of how we partake of Christ's redemptive sacrifice on the Cross when receiving Holy Communion:

Since, therefore, the Only Begotten Son has left nothing undone which pertains to the Father's glory, He alone "has broken down the middle wall of division" (Eph. 2:14) and clears man from his indictment.... Christ's Body then is the only medicine against sin and His Blood the only ransom from offenses.... This is the Body that was slain upon the Cross.... In its "witness before Pontius Pilate" it "made a good confession" (cf. 1 Tim. 6:13): it paid the penalty of death for this confession, and that upon the Cross.... The Blood springing out of the wounds darkened the sun and shook the earth; it hallowed the air and washed the whole world clean of the filth of sin.<sup>153</sup>

Therefore, concludes St. Nicholas,

the labors and tears of those who repent of sins after the baptismal washing and plead for grace stand in need of the Blood of the New Covenant and of the Body which was slain, since they [the labors and tears] are of no avail without them [the Body and Blood].<sup>154</sup>

Elsewhere St. Nicholas affirms that, in the Holy Eucharist, we also partake of Christ's resurrection, since "we receive the Risen One Himself ... the very Benefactor Himself, the very Temple whereon is founded the whole compass of graces."<sup>155</sup>

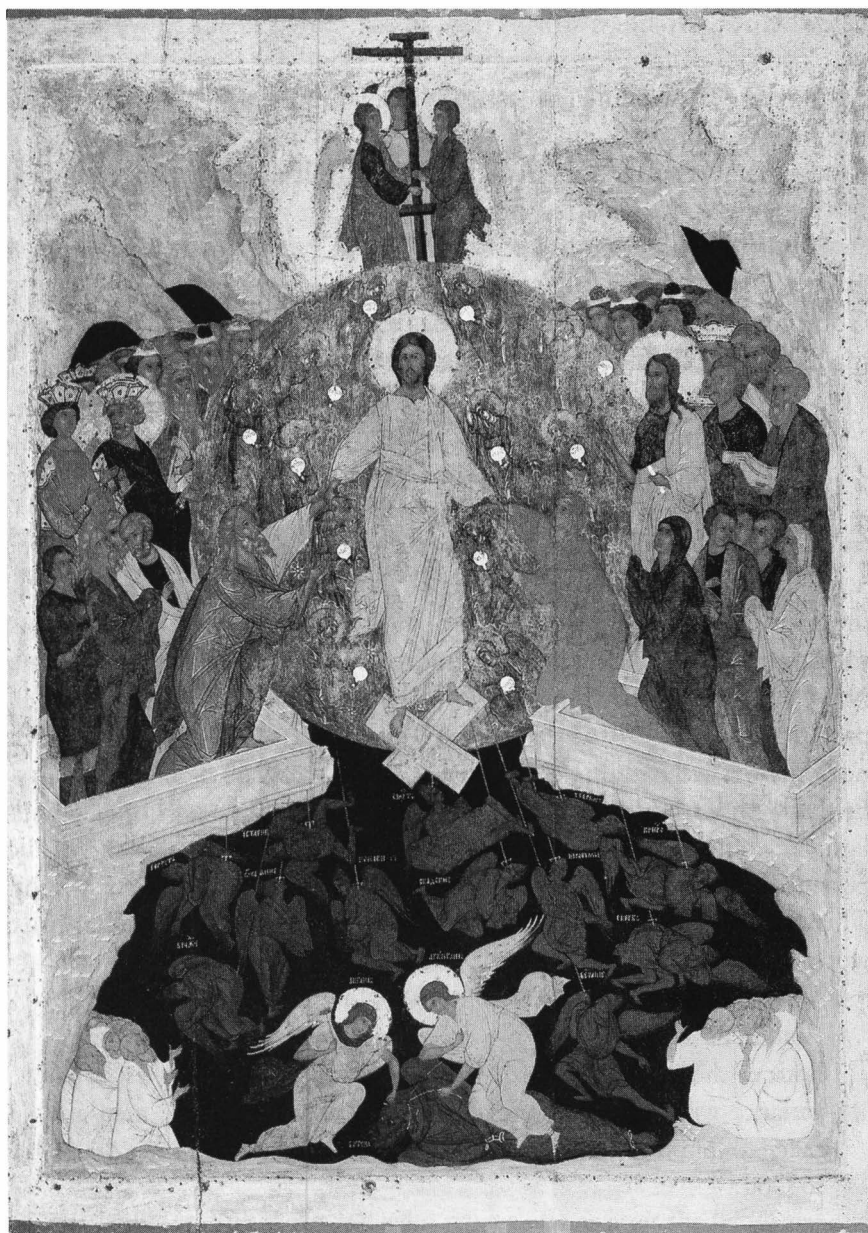
Spiritual resurrection in Christ—the uniting of man's soul with Divine grace—reopens the way to deification which had been closed to man at the fall. Throughout their lives, Orthodox Christians are to grow toward a more full deification, a more perfect participation in God's life. As St. Macarius the Great says, referring to what has been made possible by Christ:

By the power of the Spirit and the spiritual regeneration, man not only comes to the measure of the first Adam, but he also reaches a greater state than he possessed. For man is deified.<sup>156</sup>

This participation in God is never to end, but passes into everlasting spiritual life in the Kingdom of Heaven. As will be remembered, mankind had been cut off from both Paradise and heaven at the fall. Now, through Christ, both have been opened again to man. When parted from the body at death, the souls of those redeemed by Christ not only pass to Paradise, which St. John Damascene describes as "luxuriant with ever-blooming plants, filled with fragrance, flooded with light";<sup>157</sup> but they also pass to heaven, the place in which the angelic powers dwell,<sup>158</sup> and which is also described as a place filled with light. Thus, as St. Gregory of Nyssa proclaims, through Christ's redemptive work,

Paradise, even heaven itself, is accessible to man; and the creation, both of the world and above the world, which long ago was set at variance with itself, is fit together in friendship; and we men are made to join in the angels' song, offering the worship of their praise to God.<sup>159</sup>

These blessed realms were opened to man right after Christ's death and even before His bodily resurrection; for, as we have seen, it was then that Christ delivered the righteous from hades and raised them to



The resurrection of Christ (the harrowing of hell).  
*Icon by Master Dionysius, Nativity of the Mother of God–St. Therapont  
Monastery, Russia, 1502.*

“a place of rest and of light.”\* As St. Nicholas Cabasilas explains, He freed them from spiritual death by means of His bodily death:

When it was necessary that the captives of hades be set free, He [Christ] did not entrust this work to angels or archangels, but He Himself descended into that prison. Since it was fitting that the captives should not receive freedom gratuitously, but by being ransomed, He set them free by shedding His Blood.<sup>160</sup>

Thus, as St. John Damascene declares: “By nothing else except the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ has ... hades been plundered ... [and] the gates of Paradise opened.”<sup>161</sup> The same teaching is proclaimed in the Divine services of the Orthodox Church, as for example in the Kontakion for the Sunday of the Cross (the Third Sunday of Great Lent), composed by St. Theodore the Studite:

No longer does the flaming sword (cf. Gen. 3:24) guard the gate of Eden, for it has been miraculously quenched by the wood of the Cross. The sting of death and the victory of hades have been abolished, for Thou didst come, my Savior, crying to those in hades, “Enter again into Paradise.”<sup>162</sup>

One of the first to be raised to Paradise was a person who was clearly unworthy, but who nevertheless believed in Christ and was thereby redeemed through His death. This was the repentant thief crucified along with Christ, to whom Christ said, “Today shalt thou be with Me in Paradise” (Luke 23:43). Also among those who were brought to Paradise and heaven were Adam and Eve, who, in the Orthodox icon of the “harrowing of hell,” are depicted being pulled out of the dark regions by Christ.

#### *4. The Order of Redemption (II): Physical Resurrection*

What we have described is only the first kind of resurrection—spiritual resurrection—that has been made possible by Christ.

---

\* See p. 753 above.



The second kind—physical resurrection—will occur at the Second Coming through the saving power of Christ's resurrection.

This accords with the order of redemption outlined by St. Symeon above. As St. Symeon points out, while Christians are spiritually reborn and united with God in the Church, they still experience physical death and corruption. In the case of some saints, however, God grants a certain relative incorruption to their bodies after death:

Like iron burning in the fire partakes of the latter's brilliance and loses its dark coloring, then, when taken away from the forge, turns cold and dark again, so in fact do the bodies of the saints, by the grace united to their souls, partake of the Divine fire, and are sanctified, and burn incandescent, and become themselves translucent, and are restored as more excellent, more precious by far, than other bodies. When, though, the soul departs and is separated from the body of the saint, [his body] is immediately given over to corruption and begins shortly to dissolve. But still, such bodies may remain for many years, neither wholly incorrupt nor again quite corrupted, but keeping yet the indications each of corruption and incorruption, being preserved for the final resurrection when they shall be made perfectly new and incorruptible.<sup>163</sup>

St. Symeon then asks why this is: why, when the saints have already been granted spiritual resurrection by God, must they wait to be granted physical resurrection? In answering this question, St. Symeon harkens back to the original creation, when the incorrupt cosmos was made for incorrupt man to dwell in. Having already established that man's condition must correspond with that of his environment, St. Symeon observes that man cannot be restored to perfect physical incorruption until the rest of creation is raised to that state as well:

It was not fitting that men's bodies should be restored and made incorruptible before the renewal of all the creation. Instead, just as the created world was first brought into existence as incorrupt, and then later, man, so again it is creation which must first be transformed

from corruption into incorruption, changed, and then, together with it and at the same time, the corrupted bodies of men will be renewed.<sup>164</sup>

It is in the general resurrection that all the fruits of Christ's incarnation, death, and resurrection are to be fully revealed. At that time, because Christ arose from the dead, becoming the "firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep" (1 Cor. 15:20), the unnatural separation of the soul from the body at death, which began at the fall, will be overcome for all mankind, and man will experience everlasting physical life in bodies that have been made once again incorruptible.\* "The dead shall be raised incorruptible," writes the Apostle Paul, "and we shall be changed" (1 Cor. 15:52). Moreover, as we have discussed earlier, the entire visible creation will be re-created and become incorruptible along with man, since it exists for man's sake.

### *5. The Restoration of Incorruption*

Adam, it will be remembered, was supposed to raise the first-created world closer to God through his own spiritual ascent to God. Adam failed in this purpose. Not only did he fail to raise up the creation to God, but through his sin he also brought the incorrupt cre-

---

\* While all people will be raised in incorruptible and immortal bodies, not all will enjoy everlasting blessedness. As Christ says, those who receive His gift of salvation will be resurrected unto eternal life, while those who reject it will be resurrected unto damnation (cf. John 5:29). St. Nicholas Cabasilas elucidates this as follows: "The resurrection is the restoration of [human] nature. Such things God gives freely, for just as He forms us without us willing it, so He forms us anew though we have contributed nothing to it. On the other hand, the Kingdom and the vision of God and union with Christ are joys which depend on willingness. They are thus possible only for those who have been willing to receive them and have loved them and longed for them. For such it is fitting that they should enjoy the presence of the things for which they longed; for the unwilling it is impossible.... One need not therefore marvel that while all will live in immortality, it is not all who will live in blessedness" (St. Nicholas Cabasilas, *The Life in Christ* 2.[10], SC 355.180, trans. Carmino J. deCatanzaro, pp. 81-82\*).

ation down into corruption. Therefore, the Second Adam—Jesus Christ—came to restore what the first Adam had lost: He came to restore man to the communion with God and to the incorruption in which he had lived before the fall, and to restore the entire cosmos to its former state of incorruption.

In the passage from Romans we discussed earlier, St. Paul writes of the future age of the renewed, incorrupt creation that will come into being after the general resurrection: “I reckon that the sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God [i.e., those redeemed by Christ]. For the creation was made subject to futility, not willingly, but because of Him [God] Who subjected it [to futility] in hope [i.e., in hope of the general resurrection]. Because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only the creation, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, that is, the redemption of our body” (Rom. 8:18–23).

St. Justin of Celije, setting forth the common Patristic interpretation of these words of the Apostle Paul, asserts that the liberation of creation from corruption will mark the beginning of the new heaven and new earth spoken of by the Apostles Peter and John (cf. 2 Pet. 3:13, Apoc. 21:1):

By his primordial sin, man carried all of nature along after him, and surrendered it to slavery to sin and death, and the whole Divinely fashioned creation unceasingly sighs and mourns over this, awaiting its liberation from sin and death, which the Lord Jesus will grant on the last day, transforming it by His Divine-human economy of salvation into a new heaven and a new earth, “wherein dwelleth righteousness” (2 Pet. 3:13). The Christ-yearning seer of mysteries, the Apostle of the apocalyptic end of the world and of the transfiguration of creation, St. John the Theologian, was made worthy of a

special revelation of God to see the future new heaven and new earth.... "And I saw," he says, "a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away" (Apoc. 21:1; cf. Is. 65:17, 66:22).<sup>165</sup>

St. Justin further bears witness that the deliverance of the visible creation will mark its *restoration* to the incorruption and beauty that belonged to it before the fall, and that this will occur by reason of God's restoration of man to his primordial state:

Since on the last day sin and death will be abolished by the coming of Christ the Lord, all of nature will also be freed from slavery to sin and death; it will be transformed and will begin to shine with its primordial [or original], pleasing, sinless, and immortal beauty. The resurrection of the dead will be the end of death not only for people, but for all visible nature, which had been subjected to death and corruption due to the sin-loving will of its haughty lord, man (cf. Rom. 8:20). Sin, evil, sickness, death—all these are the fetid, alien sediments of man, with which he soiled and disfigured the sinless face of nature. But the Lord Jesus, by the light of His coming, will wash away all this from the beautiful face of God-created and Divinely woven nature, and it will again begin to shine in its sinless goodness and ineffable beauty (cf. Gen. 1:31). By His restoration of man to the primordial state, the Lord will also restore nature to its primordial, sinless state (Rom. 8:21). Then not only will Christ-yearning people be "restored to their ancient beauty" (*Evlogitaria* of the *Pannikhida*), but also all of nature—by the action of God's grace—will throw away and cast off from itself all sins, all evil, all consequences of sin and evil, and with them death itself.<sup>166</sup>

#### 6. *The Permanent Deification of Man and the Cosmos*

But it was not only to restore what the first Adam had ruined that the Second Adam, our Lord Jesus Christ, came upon this earth. Christ

also came to accomplish what the first Adam had failed to accomplish. Man, it will be remembered, had been created for deification. As St. Symeon the New Theologian writes, if Adam and Eve had not fallen, “the soul of each would have become brighter,” and man “would have been led up in due time to a more perfect glory and transformation, drawing nearer to God and to the rays which spring from His Divinity.”\* As we have seen, through His redemptive work Christ has already granted to man the possibility of experiencing such a deification of soul in and through His Church—a deification that is to grow and become more perfect in the life to come. In the general resurrection, however, He will do more than this: In reuniting man’s soul with his body, He will grant an everlasting deification to man’s body together with his soul, and along with man He will grant unending deification to the entire cosmos.

In the words of Scripture and their interpretation by the Fathers, we can find indications of how this will come to pass: The permanent deification of man’s body and the cosmos will occur together with their becoming not only incorrupt but also *spiritual*.

The Apostle Paul writes: “So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption.... It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.... Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I show you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality” (1 Cor. 15:42, 44, 50–53).

Explicating this Pauline teaching, St. Justin of Celije notes that the bodies of all people—both those that have died and those that are still alive at the Second Coming of Christ—will be changed in the same way. “Thus,” he says,

---

\* See p. 702 above.

all people will be made equal, all will acquire spiritual bodies, since natural bodies will be transformed into spiritual ones. And this transformation, this change of body, will occur “in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump.” How? By the power of the resurrected Lord Christ, for He by His almighty Divine power will lead out of death all the bodies of the dead, “and the dead shall be raised incorruptible”: that which has died, that is, the body, will rise incorrupt. That which comprises the essence of the body will rise incorrupt—that which makes my body mine, your body yours, his body his, each one’s body his own. Although these will be “spiritual bodies,” they will nevertheless be the same bodies that died and are now resurrected. The same thing will occur with those whom the general resurrection will find living on earth—they will remain the same bodies, but they will turn from being physical to being spiritual. All this will happen in such a way that Peter will remain Peter in his body, Paul—Paul in his body, and Mark—Mark, likewise in his body.<sup>167</sup>

How are we to understand the incorrupt and spiritual body of man beyond the general resurrection, particularly in light of our discussion of man’s incorrupt body before the fall? Earlier we quoted St. Symeon in saying that “Adam was created with an incorruptible body, though one which was material and on the whole not yet spiritual,” and that, if Adam had not fallen, his “perceptible and material body” would have become “altered and changed into an immaterial and spiritual one, into something beyond sense perception.”\* We also quoted St. Maximus as saying that first-created man was, through living a life of virtue like that of the angels, to “become as subtle as spirit” and “no longer tied to earth by any bodily weight.”\*\* Here Sts. Symeon and Maximus are speaking of relative degrees of corporeality, for as we have seen the bodies of Adam and Eve in their original, incorrupt state, even while not having yet been altered to become spiritual, did not have the grossly material or denser flesh that our bodies now have. St. Gregory

---

\* See pp. 690, 703 above.

\*\* See p. 711 above.

the Sinaite observes that our spiritual bodies after the general resurrection will in fact correspond with the incorrupt bodies of Adam and Eve before the fall:

The body in its incorruptible state will be earthy, but it will be without humors and material density,\* indescribably transmuted from an unspiritual body into a spiritual body (cf. 1 Cor. 15:44), so that it will be in its godlike refinement and subtleness both earthy and heavenly. Its state when it will be resurrected will be similar to that in which it was originally created—one in which it conforms to the image of the Son of Man (cf. Rom. 8:29; Phil. 3:21) through full participation in His Divinity.<sup>168</sup>

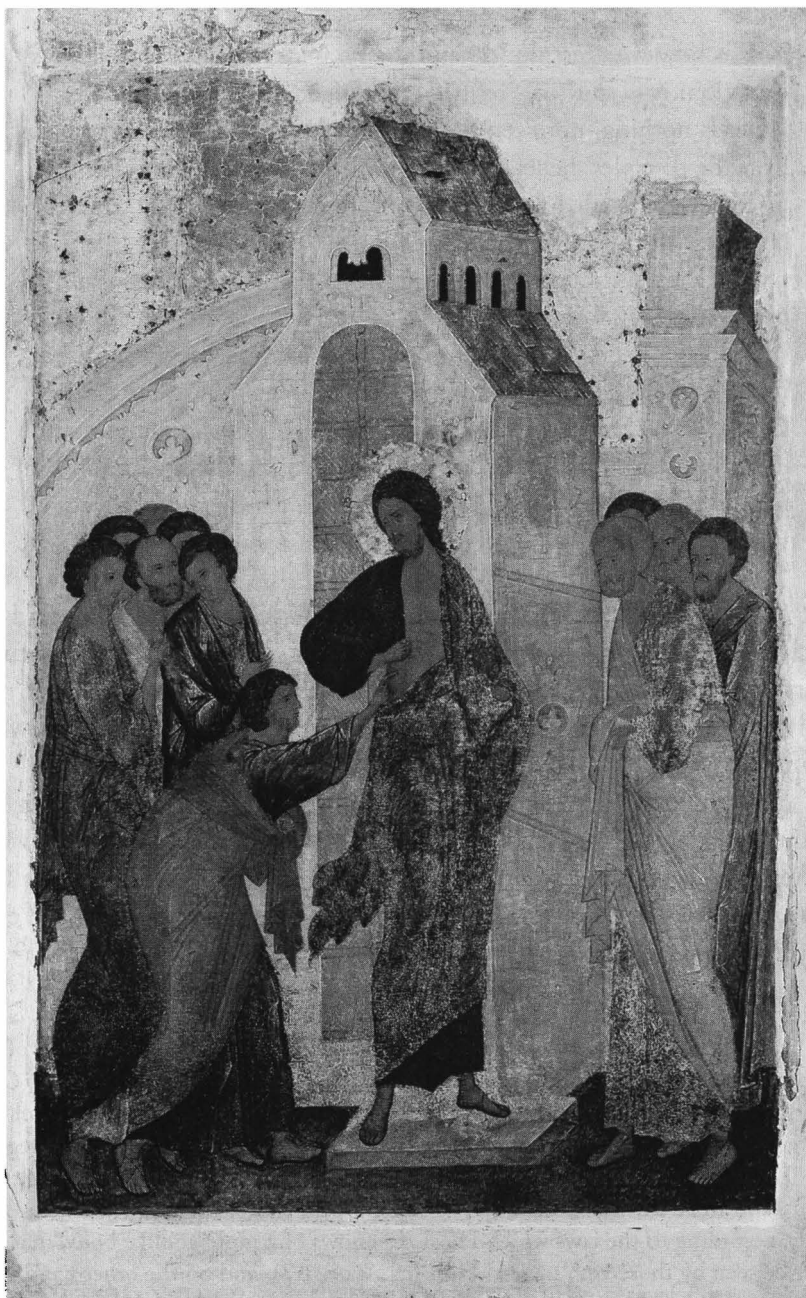
Man's body in the beginning, then, might be said to be "similar" to his body in the general resurrection, in that both share the quality of incorruption. Nevertheless, it is only in the general resurrection that human bodies will be perfectly and immutably spiritualized and divinized. The promise of this future condition is seen in the resurrected body of Christ.

When Christ rose from the dead, His body was in the condition of the spiritual body that Adam was *supposed* to attain by ascending to God in Paradise. As we know from Scripture, in His resurrected, spiritual body Christ left the tomb while a stone still sealed the door (cf. Matt. 28:2),\*\* He entered the room of the Apostles while the doors remained shut (cf. John 20:19), and He appeared and vanished at will (cf. Luke 24:31). Even so, in order to show His disciples that He was not merely a spirit but had risen in the same body that had been crucified, He permitted the Apostle Thomas to touch his wounds and He ate in the presence of His disciples (cf. Luke 24:43). Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid writes of this mystery as follows:

---

\* "Material density" is a translation of *παχύτης*: the same term that St. Gregory the Theologian, St. Maximus, and St. John Damascene had previously used to describe man's body after the fall.

\*\* As St. Matthew records, after Christ resurrected and left the tomb, an angel "rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it."



Christ appearing to His disciples after His resurrection;  
the assurance of the Apostle Thomas.  
*Icon by Master Dionysius, St. Paul of Obnora Monastery, Russia, 1500.*



This is how we must understand the body of the Lord after the resurrection: it is spiritual, refined, a stranger to all material density.\* It needs nothing, not even food, although the Lord did eat to confirm the disciples' belief. He ate, not because His resurrected body by its nature needed food, but by economy, to show that His risen body was the same which suffered on the Cross. For this is the nature of the Lord's body now: to enter where doors are shut and to pass effortlessly from one location to another. Because the disciples still did not believe and had not yet been convinced even by touching His hands and feet, He offers yet another proof, that of eating. But what He eats is consumed by some Divine power, for all that is eaten in a natural manner passes from the mouth to the drain. But what the Lord eats here is not according to nature, as we have said, but by economy.<sup>169</sup>

Since Christ arose in a spiritual body, He will raise mankind in such a body at the last day: a body both incorrupt and spiritual. Furthermore, since the rest of creation exists for man, He will not only restore it to incorruption but also make it spiritual together with man.

St. Symeon writes of this with illuminating precision. Having affirmed that all creation will be made incorrupt along with man in the general resurrection just as it was made incorrupt with him in the beginning,\*\* St. Symeon goes on to say that both man and the rest of creation will also be made spiritual:

---

\* Here again the word is *παχύτητος*. "The Word of God," as St. Sophronius of Jerusalem affirms, "took on material density [*παχύνεται*] while remaining God" (*Oration 2: On the Annunciation of the Most Holy Theotokos* 15, PG 87c.3233C), but He was without such density when He rose from the dead. In the words of St. Gregory the Theologian: "[Christ] will come again with His glorious Presence to judge the quick and the dead (cf. 2 Tim. 4:1, 1 Pet. 4:5); no longer flesh, nor yet without a body, according to the laws which He alone knows of a more godlike body, that He may be seen by those who pierced Him (cf. Apoc. 1:7), and on the other hand may remain as God without material density [*παχύτητος*]" (*Oration* 40.45, SC 358.306, NPNF 2 7, p. 377\*).

\*\* See pp. 729, 760–61 above.

Together with [the creation] and at the same time, the corrupted bodies of men will be renewed, such that, himself having become at once spiritual and immortal, man may have an incorrupt, and spiritual, and everlasting place in which to dwell. Listen to the Apostle Peter for the truth of this: "The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night ... wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat" (2 Pet. 3:10, 12). This does not mean that they shall be destroyed, but rather re-forged and transmuted into a greater and everlasting condition....

But now it is time for us to examine how creation shall be renewed and restored to its original beauty....

Just as our bodies, although they dissolve for a time, do not pass away forever, but will be renewed again at the resurrection, so, too, will heaven and earth and all that is within them—that is, all of creation—be made anew and liberated from the bondage of corruption. The elements themselves will share with us in that incandescence from above, and in the same way that we shall be tried by fire, so, according to the Apostle, shall all creation be renewed through fire....

Thus renewed, creation will not return to what it was created in the beginning. By no means. Rather, just as it is sown a "natural body," according to the saying (1 Cor. 15:44), so it is raised a body, not like the first man's before the transgression—i.e., material, perceptible, and mutable, needing moreover physical food—but instead a body wholly spiritual and immutable; such a body as that of our Master and God after His resurrection, the body of the Second Adam, Who is our "firstborn from the dead" (Col. 1:18). As His body was a far different thing than the old Adam's, so shall the whole creation, in the same way and at God's command, not become what it was before, material and perceptible, but be transformed in the re-birth into an immaterial, spiritual dwelling place, beyond any perception of the senses.<sup>170</sup>

When St. Symeon says that our bodies and the rest of creation will be "immaterial" (*ἄψυχον*) in the general resurrection, he is again speaking of immateriality in a relative sense. The renewed creation will



Adam and Eve at the Last Judgment.  
*Details of an exterior fresco of Humor Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, 1535.*

indeed be “immaterial” in comparison with its present state and even with its condition before the fall. However, it will not be entirely immaterial, since according to St. Symeon and other Holy Fathers only God Himself is wholly immaterial and uncircumscribed; in relation to Him, even angels and human souls possess a degree of materiality and are circumscribed by time and space.\* As we have seen, the resurrected, spiritual body of Christ, to which St. Symeon likens man’s body and

---

\* In discussing the renewed creation, St. Symeon takes pains to say that it will not be entirely immaterial and uncircumscribed: “Now, then, try to imagine with me a world which is spiritual and rises beyond our sense perception. But, what is beyond sensible perception and spiritual is quite incomprehensible for us, and invisible.... It is in this sense, therefore, that we can discourse about the angels, i.e., that they are also, in effect, somehow embodied and circumscribable, at least when compared to the absolutely immaterial and bodiless nature of Divinity.... The same reasoning holds for the soul as well. Compared to God Who is by nature bodiless, and to the angels, the soul is as it were somehow bodily and circumscribed, but it is such only

the whole cosmos after the general resurrection, was not entirely without corporeality.\*

Later in the same discourse, St. Symeon, having undoubtedly beheld something of the future age in prophetic Divine vision, speaks in more detail about the renewed creation as a spiritual dwelling place of man:

---

with respect to Him Who is able to bind it and Who has the authority to cast it together with the body into the hell of fire. For mortal perception, however, it is altogether bodiless and incomprehensible, nor is it possible to circumscribe it within any physical place or space whatsoever" (*Ethical Discourses* 1.5, PPS 14, pp. 39–40).

St. Symeon's mention (see below) of flowers and heavenly bodies in the renewed creation provides further clarification that he is not describing a realm without any degree of materiality. The Origenist idea that the creation after the general resurrection will be wholly immaterial was in fact condemned at the Fifth Ecumenical Council: "If anyone shall say that the Last Judgment signifies the complete destruction of the body and that the end of all things will be a non-material nature, and that in the future age there will be nothing material, but only naked spirit: let him be anathema" (eleventh article of the anathemas against Origen).

On the relative materiality of angels, and on their being circumscribed (requiring and occupying a place), see pp. 490, 490–91n above.

\* From St. Symeon's statement that the renewed creation will be "beyond any perception of the senses," it follows that Christ's resurrected body was and is "naturally" beyond sense perception also. It was by Divine dispensation that Christ made His body perceptible to the senses of the Apostles after His resurrection. As Blessed Theophylact points out in discussing Christ's appearance to Sts. Luke and Cleopas on the road to Emmaus (Luke 24:13–32): "They were not allowed to recognize Him by the features of the body in which the Savior then appeared to them. For, as Mark says, He appeared unto two of them 'in another form' (Mark 16:12), and with different features. He no longer conformed the actions of His body to natural laws, but instead acted in the body in a spiritual manner that was beyond nature. This is why their eyes were prevented from recognizing Him. Why did He appear to them in another form, and why were their eyes prevented from recognizing Him?... That they might believe all the more surely that His body is no longer a body that is clearly visible to everyone. Even though His resurrected body is the same body which suffered, He now appears only to those to whom He wills to reveal Himself.... He was seen by those to whom He wished to be visible" (*Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke* 24.13–24, trans. Fr. Christopher Stade, pp. 318–19). In same way, following His ascension into heaven, Christ has miraculously appeared to people in His resurrected body at various times throughout Christian history.

As I have said several times, all creation, too, once made new, will become wholly spiritual, and together with Paradise will be transformed into an immaterial, unchanging, eternal, and noetic dwelling place. The heavens on the one hand will be incomparably brighter, in a manner indeed quite new, different and more radiant than the visible heavens, while the earth on the other hand will take on a new and inexpressible beauty, an unfading verdure, ornamented by radiant flowers, varied and spiritual. It will be an earth in which, as the sacred word has it, righteousness will have its dwelling place (cf. 2 Pet. 3:13). The sun of righteousness will shine sevenfold more brightly, and the moon will gleam twice as bright as the sun which illumines it now (cf. Is. 30:26). The stars will be like our sun—if, indeed, these are the same stars as are spoken of in the sublime thoughts of the wise. All things there are beyond speech, transcend thought, save only that they are spiritual and divine, united to the intelligible world, and comprise another, noetic Paradise and heavenly Jerusalem, made like and united to the heavenly world, the inviolable inheritance of the sons of God (cf. Rom. 8:21).<sup>171</sup>

When St. Symeon says that all things in the cosmos, including man, will become “spiritual and divine,” he is referring to nothing less than their deification. Deified in both soul and body, man will freely experience God’s Uncreated Energy (grace) through his bodily senses. In the words of St. Gregory Palamas,

In the very blessed existence of the age to come, in “the sons of the resurrection” (Luke 20:36), who, according to the Gospel of Christ, will have received an angelic dignity, it will be the body which is as if hidden. With the victory of the *nous*, the body will become so subtle that it will no longer appear to be material, and it will no longer limit the activity of the *nous*. In this way, they will enjoy the Divine Light in their bodily senses.<sup>172</sup>

From this Patristic testimony we see how, through Christ, man and the rest of creation will not only be restored to their original



The general resurrection. At top: trumpeting angels. At bottom: righteous women.  
*Details of a fresco from the Cathedral of St. Dimitry, Vladimir, Russia, ca. 1195.*

incorruption; they will also become what they *would have become* if the first Adam had fulfilled his calling from God. It will be remembered that, according to St. Maximus, man's original designation was not only to become deified himself but also to bring the whole created universe into a state of deification, so that "the whole [would be] wholly penetrated by the whole of God."<sup>173</sup> Further expounding St. Maximus' teaching, Vladimir Lossky writes: "Since this task which was given to man was not fulfilled by Adam, it is in the work of Christ, the Second Adam, that we can see what it was meant to be."<sup>174</sup> Thus, as St. Maximus writes in discoursing on Christ's words "My Father is working even now, and I am working" (John 5:17), it is in the work of Christ that we behold "the grace effective to deify the universe."<sup>175</sup>

All that has been described here—the immutable glory of the future age—has been made possible by the incarnation, death, and resurrection of Christ. Through the totality of Christ's work of redemption, man is spiritually united with God and deified; man can attain to Paradise and heaven after death; and, at the general resurrection, man's body and the entire creation are to be renewed as an incorruptible, spiritual and divine dwelling place.

### VIII. THE ORTHODOX DOCTRINE OF PRELAPSARIAN INCORRUPTION AS IT RELATES TO ORTHODOX SOTERIOLOGY AND ESCHATOLOGY

From the foregoing discussion it can be seen how the Orthodox teaching on the original incorruption of the world has direct bearing on Orthodox soteriology. The Scriptural-Patristic doctrine that death entered the world as a consequence of man's sin forms a foundation for the doctrine that the sinless Savior innocently took upon Himself that consequence—that is, by dying on the Cross—in order to "put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself," to "bear the sins of many" (Heb. 9:26, 28), to *redeem* mankind from all the consequences of sin.

As we have seen, when Adam fell his corrupted nature, now diseased with sin, made him subject to physical death. All his descendants inherited that corrupted nature, and thus all were obliged to die. Christ alone, being totally sinless, was not obliged to suffer death; and

therefore, in His voluntary death and in His resurrection which inexorably succeeded it, He destroyed death both spiritual and bodily. Let us recall the words of St. John Damascene quoted earlier: “Since our Lord Jesus Christ was without sin ... He was not subject to death, since death came into the world through sin.” Yet “the Lord,” writes St. Gregory Palamas, “patiently endured for our sake a death He was not obliged to undergo, to redeem us, who were obliged to suffer death.”\*

Here we see clearly how the *physical, causal connection* between Adam’s act of sin and the presence of death in the world forms the basis for understanding the physical, causal connection between Christ’s undeserved death and the overcoming of the consequences of sin in the world. As Fr. Seraphim Rose pointed out,

Christ died on the Cross. This was a real, physical event, not an image or allegory; and through it comes an actual change in man’s condition, both spiritual and bodily. It gives us salvation: not figurative salvation, but actual salvation. Likewise, Adam tasted of a tree and thereby lost Paradise. This, too, was a real, physical event, bringing about an actual change in man’s spiritual and bodily condition.\*\*

The Orthodox teaching on prelapsarian incorruption is also foundational for understanding St. Paul’s oft-repeated teaching—which we have seen elucidated by St. John Chrysostom\*\*\*—of sin and death entering the world through *one* man and then being overcome by *One* Man. St. John Chrysostom said that the truth that our redemption could come from only One Man is evidenced by the fact that the consequences of sin came from only one man. In fact, St. Chrysostom states that, in the fifth chapter of Romans, St. Paul repeatedly juxtaposed the “one” Adam with the “One” Christ precisely in order to demonstrate the reality of the world’s redemption by Christ—particularly to those Jews who believed in the Genesis narrative but not (yet) in Christ. For St. Paul as for the Holy Fathers, faith in the real Second

---

\* See the full quotations on pp. 749–50 above.

\*\* See p. 282 above.

\*\*\* See pp. 751–52 above.



Adam as the Redeemer from ruin cannot be divorced from belief in the real first Adam as the cause of that ruin.\*

Certainly, the Orthodox teaching on the original incorruption of *man* (specifically) is most germane to the Orthodox doctrine of redemption, since it was a man (Adam) who brought sin and death into the world, and it was a Man (the God-man Jesus Christ) Who overcame them. At the same time, however, this Scriptural-Patristic teaching cannot be separated from that of the incorruption of the rest of the cosmos before the fall, since as we have seen the visible creation was made for the sake of man, is dependent on man, and must be in the same condition as man. The incorrupt and potentially immortal body of man before the fall, as described in detail in the Patristic writings, could not have existed in surroundings filled with death and corruption; and hence it is to be expected that the common vision of the Holy Fathers, in accordance with Holy Scripture, holds that the cosmos was originally incorrupt as well.

As the doctrine that man and the world were incorrupt before the fall is directly connected to Orthodox soteriology, so also is it connected

---

\* Besides the passages already quoted (Rom. 5:12–19, 1 Cor. 15:21–22), there are other places in the Pauline epistles where the Apostle writes of Adam and Eve, recounting the Biblical descriptions of their creation and fall: “The first man Adam was made a living soul” (1 Cor. 15:45; cf. Gen. 2:7); “The serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety” (2 Cor. 11:3; cf. Gen. 3:1–6); “Adam was formed first, then Eve; and Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression” (1 Tim. 2:13–14; cf. Gen. 2:21–3:6). Again, referring to the creation of Eve from Adam, St. Paul writes: “Man is not from woman, but woman from man; nor was the man created for the woman, but the woman for the man” (1 Cor. 11:8–9; cf. Gen. 2:18–22). In keeping with the plain meaning of these passages of St. Paul, the Patristic commentaries on them assume a belief in an actual, historical Adam and Eve. See, for example, St. John Chrysostom’s commentary on 1 Timothy 2:13–14 (*Homilies on Timothy* 9, NPNF 1 13, pp. 435–36), where the Saint affirms the existence of Eve as a singular person, distinguishing between her and the female sex generally.

That Adam and Eve were real persons was affirmed by Christ Himself, Who said that the “blood of Abel,” their second son, was shed “from the foundation of the world” (Luke 11:51, 50; cf. Gen. 4:8). Christ also spoke of the creation of Adam and Eve, quoting from the book of Genesis: “But from the beginning of the creation God ‘made them male and female’” (Mark 10:6; cf. Gen. 1:27).

to eschatology. It provides a basis for understanding the words of the Apostle Paul in the way that the Holy Fathers understood them: “For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection from the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.... The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death” (1 Cor. 15:21–22, 26). It underpins the doctrine that Christ came in order to *give back* to man what Adam had lost at the fall, physically as well as spiritually, and that, through Christ’s death and resurrection, there will be a restoration, perfection, and spiritualization of the incorrupt first-created world. From St. Irenaeus in the second century, who said that creation will be “restored to its primeval condition” at the general resurrection, to St. Justin of Celije in the twentieth century, who wrote that nature will then “begin to shine with its primordial sinless, immortal beauty, the same as it had before the fall,” we have seen the connection that the Fathers have drawn between the original and the final states of the creation. In the words of St. Gregory of Nyssa, the promise of the final state is predicated on belief in the original one, and vice versa:

Now the [general] resurrection promises us nothing else than the restoration of the fallen to their ancient state; for the grace we look for is a certain return to the first life, bringing back again to Paradise him who was cast out from it. If then the life of those restored is closely related to that of the angels, it is clear that the life before the transgression was a kind of angelic life, and hence also our return to the ancient condition of our life is compared to the angels.<sup>176</sup>

Highlighting this interrelationship between the original and final states of man and the cosmos, Fr. Seraphim pointed out that

the two correspond and only differ ... in that the future state of the world will be fully spiritual, corresponding to the “spiritual body” of the men who will dwell in it, and no longer will it be possible for its incorruptibility to be lost. Do we Orthodox Christians believe that we will *actually* be immortal and incorruptible in that next life—if God will only number us among the saved—or only metaphorically and allegorically so? If we believe and think as the Holy Fathers do,

then our future incorruptibility will be *real*, as was that of the creation and of Adam before his disobedience.\*

Thus we see how our *belief* as Orthodox Christians is all of one piece. Our belief that death came into the world through human sin (cf. Rom. 5:12) is linked with our belief that Christ the God-man has redeemed the world by means of His death (cf. Heb. 9:15). In the same way, our belief that man and the cosmos were incorrupt in the beginning is tied to our belief that they will be incorrupt in the future age.

#### IX. A COMPARISON OF THE ORTHODOX CHRISTIAN AND EVOLUTIONIST WORLDVIEWS

Having set before us the Scriptural-Patristic teaching on the original state of man and the cosmos, on their fall into a condition of death and corruption, and on their redemption through Jesus Christ, let us now contrast this integral Orthodox Christian worldview with evolutionism, which also stands on its own as an integral outlook on the world.

The first thing that becomes apparent in comparing these two worldviews is that the Scriptural-Patristic doctrine on the state of man and the world before the fall stands in conflict with evolutionary doctrine.

In the Orthodox view, man was created and first lived in incorruption, then fell into corruption; in the evolutionary view, man came into existence already in a state of corruption. In all its facets, the Orthodox Patristic teaching on the exalted condition of man before the fall—spiritual, mental, and physical—contrasts sharply with the evolutionary narrative of man’s origin and history. As Fr. Seraphim remarked in a letter:

The evolutionary philosophy of “up from the beasts” certainly seems irreconcilable with the Christian view of “fall from Paradise,” and

---

\* See p. 650 above.

our whole view of history will certainly be determined by which way we believe!\*

Like the Orthodox Church's teaching on the original state of man, her teaching on the incorrupt world that man first inhabited has no place within the evolutionary worldview. While we must acknowledge along with Fr. Seraphim that we do not know the precise nature of the world's incorruption before the fall, there can be no doubt that the condition of the "very good" (Gen. 1:31) first-created world as revealed in the Holy Scriptures and in the consensus of the Holy Fathers is *not* the same as the condition of the world out of which, according to evolutionism, man first emerged—that is, a world of suffering, violence, bloodshed, and carnivorous activity; of infirmities and disease; of poisonous plants and animals; of thorns and thistles; and, finally, of death and corruption (decay).

It is the Patristic view of the origin of death and corruption that is seen most glaringly—and most essentially—to stand in conflict with the evolutionary paradigm. According to the Orthodox Christian worldview outlined above, suffering, death, and corruption entered the world—not merely as a potentiality but as an actuality—when man committed his first act of disobedience to God. In the evolutionary worldview, on the other hand, death and corruption were present throughout the entire evolutionary process by which man came into existence. In the Orthodox worldview, death and corruption are seen as aberrant relative to the original, "very good" state of creation, including the original state of man. In the evolutionary worldview, on the contrary, not only is death a normal condition, but it is even *responsible* for the origin of all living things, including man.

In the concluding paragraph of *The Origin of Species*, Charles Darwin affirmed this idea of the creative power of death—a power which he saw manifested over aeons, as less fit organisms have died and more fit ones have survived:

Thus, from the war of nature, from famine and death, the most ex-

---

\* See p. 638 above.

alted object of which we are capable of conceiving, namely, the production of the higher animals [including man] directly follows.<sup>177</sup>

In more recent times, this idea was expressed in neo-Darwinian terms by a well-known proponent of evolutionism, Carl Sagan:

The secrets of evolution are death and time—the deaths of enormous numbers of life-forms that were imperfectly adapted to the environment; and time for a long succession of small mutations that were by *accident* adaptive, time for the slow accumulation of patterns of favorable mutations.<sup>178</sup>

Elsewhere Sagan was even more bold in asserting the role of death in the origin of man:

Only through an immense number of deaths of slightly maladapted organisms are you and I—brains and all—here today.<sup>179</sup>

Thus, just as the doctrine of death entering the world through man's sin forms an integral part of the Orthodox worldview, so the doctrine of death as a necessary agent in man's origin forms an integral part of the evolutionist worldview. Two more contradictory views can scarcely be conceived.

According to evolutionary doctrine, after millions of years of deaths of imperfectly adapted life-forms, including the deaths of our ape-like “ancestors,” pre-human hominids emerged into human beings. If one accepts this view, the Scriptural-Patristic teaching on the original, incorrupt state of man and the world and on man's fall and its consequence—death—cannot be accepted on its own terms. One must either discard this teaching or else reinterpret it in order to make it mean something other than what it says.\* All attempts to reinterpret this Scriptural-Patristic teaching in an evolutionist way—including the notion of Fr. Seraphim's interlocutor Dr. Kalomiros, that man's sin

---

\* Not only “Christian evolutionists” but also “old-earth/progressive creationists” have no choice but to conclude, contrary to traditional Christian teaching, that there were millions of years of death and decay before human sin. See p. 451n above.

brought death and corruption into the world *retroactively*\*—have shown themselves to be either fanciful or painfully contrived.

Earlier we presented the Patristic teaching that man's sin brought about his spiritual death, which is separation from God, and that this in turn brought about his physical death. If one attempts to combine this Orthodox teaching on the origin of death with the evolutionary understanding of the origin of man, one is led to the impossible conclusion that man's separation from God provided the mechanism that helped produce him.

The essential conflict between the Orthodox and evolutionist worldviews does not, however, stop with the question of the origin and original condition of man and the world. As we have shown in the

---

\* Dr. Kalomiros introduced this idea in a letter to Fr. Seraphim; see p. 452n above. In a subsequent letter, Kalomiros proposed yet another idea by which to reconcile the Orthodox and evolutionist worldviews. An incorruptible Paradise, he said, was made by God some time after the creation of the cosmos (which had been in a state of corruption from the beginning due to the retroactive effect of man's sin millions of years in the future), and this incorrupt realm was "superimposed on the fallen condition of creation, touching the earth partly and for a limited time." The first man, who "was not *man* when as an animal he was born from his animal mother," became both human and incorrupt when the grace of God was breathed into him; and as an incorrupt being he was led into Paradise, where he lived until he had to return to the already corruptible earth (letter of Dr. Kalomiros to Fr. Seraphim, Feb. 21, 1976).

In both these related notions, an inevitable arbitrariness is evident. Besides standing in opposition to the Scriptural-Patristic testimony that the first man was specially created, not born, Kalomiros' formulation and others like it run counter to the Orthodox teaching that death and corruption entered the entire visible creation at the fall. As we have seen, the Holy Fathers, following a straightforward reading of St. Paul, wrote that *when* man sinned (not before), "creation," "created beings," the "cosmos," etc., were delivered to death and corruption; e.g., St. John Chrysostom: "When [man's] body became corruptible, the creation itself also became corruptible" (*Homilies on Romans* 14). In speaking of the state of incorruption before the fall, the Fathers never said that it belonged exclusively to Paradise. As St. Symeon the New Theologian affirmed in the passage quoted earlier, "God did not ... just give Paradise to our ancestors at the beginning, nor did He make only Paradise incorruptible. No! ... The whole world had been brought into being by God as one thing, as a kind of paradise, at once incorruptible yet material and perceptible" (*Ethical Discourses* 1.1).

previous section, our understanding of the creation, the first-created world, Adam and the fall is inextricably linked with our understanding of our redemption and of the glory of the future age. Therefore, if our understanding of the original state of man and the world and of the primordial fall is compromised by an evolutionist outlook, then our belief in the redemption of man and the world through Christ's death and resurrection will be compromised as well.

How precisely does evolutionism undermine one's belief in the Orthodox doctrine of redemption? As we have seen, it is incongruous to believe in millions of years of evolution—through “death” and “time,” as Carl Sagan says—and at the same time to believe that the original creation was incorrupt, and that death entered the world as a result of man's sin. And if one does not believe, as did the Apostles and Holy Fathers, that death entered the world as a consequence of man's sin, it is a non sequitur to believe the Orthodox doctrine that Christ the God-man took upon Himself that ultimate physical consequence of sin while being Himself wholly sinless, in order to overcome all the consequences of sin. It is, further, a non sequitur to believe the doctrine that Christ came in order to return to man all that he had lost at the fall, both in body and in soul, and that, through Christ's redemptive work, man and the cosmos will be restored to their original state of incorruption, while at the same time being granted the spiritualization and deification that were originally intended for them.

Earlier we have shown how the physical, causal connection between man's first sin and the presence of death in the world underpins the same connection between Christ's death and the overcoming of all the consequences of sin. By eroding the first connection, the doctrine of evolutionism erodes the second as well.\* Therefore, if one does not believe in the historical link between sin and death, one's belief in the

---

\* Furthermore, evolutionism undermines the soteriological teaching of St. Paul—and, after him, of St. John Chrysostom—that, as sin and death entered the world through one man, so were they overcome by One Man (see pp. 751–52, 775–76 above). As we have seen in the writings of St. Chrysostom, the fact that the consequences of sin came from only one man demonstrates that our redemption from them could come from only One Man. If, however, one attempts to make Christianity compatible with the evolutionary narrative of human origins, one has little choice but

objective meaning of Christ's death for the cleansing of sin (cf. I John 1:7) is deprived of its foundation. The fact that sin causes death, and death only results *from sin*, is what makes the death of the only sinless One salvific and different from every other death, and reveals the unique mystery of His offering.\*

In Orthodox Christianity, a Savior is needed to intervene in history in order to reverse the fall into death and corruption. In evolutionism, by contrast, since death and corruption were part of the original, "normal" condition of the world—having been present for millions of years before human sin and having comprised one of the key mechanisms that brought man into existence—there is no place

---

to regard Adam the first-created man not as a real, historical person but only as a symbolic character representing an unspecified number of humans which at some point evolved from other hominids. In denying the existence of the "one" through whom sin and death entered the world, this compromised view removes the objective basis of St. Paul's explication of redemption by One, Jesus Christ.

\* This connection was not lost on the main public champion of Darwin's theory in the nineteenth century, T. H. Huxley, who dubbed himself "Darwin's bulldog" and was called by Darwin himself "my good and kind agent for the propagation of the Gospel—i.e., the devil's gospel" (letter of Darwin to Huxley, Aug. 8, 1860). Not many years after Darwin's death, Huxley called attention to what he termed the "hopelessly untenable" position of compromising "Christian evolutionists" who tried to salvage the Christian doctrine of salvation while denying the historicity of the fall and its consequences: "If one may play fast and loose with the story of the Fall as a 'type' or 'allegory,' what becomes of the foundation of Pauline theology?—'For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive' (1 Cor. 15:21–22). If Adam may be held to be no more real a personage than Prometheus, and if the story of the Fall is merely an instructive 'type,' comparable to the profound Promethean mythus, what value has Paul's dialectic?" (Huxley, "The Lights of the Church and the Light of Science" [1890], in *Science and Hebrew Tradition*, pp. 236).

In a yet more pointed fashion, the same observation has been made by today's most prominent advocate of evolutionism, Richard Dawkins. Deriding the compromises made by "Christian evolutionists," Dawkins has said: "Oh, but of course the story of Adam and Eve was only ever symbolic, wasn't it? Symbolic?! Jesus had himself tortured and executed for a symbolic sin by a nonexistent individual? Nobody not brought up in the faith could reach any verdict other than barking mad!" (from Dawkins' television documentary *The Root of All Evil?*, Channel 4 [U.K.], broadcast Jan. 2006).



for a sin-induced “fall” into death and corruption that would need reversing. Thus it is that evolutionism, which was first devised as a way to explain the origin of living things without recourse to a Divine agency, is seen to deny not only the need for a Creator, but also the need for a Savior.

This point has been stated clearly and profoundly by St. Justin of Celije:

In this earthly world of “evolution” everything is natural;\* there is no place for sin. That is why it is ridiculous to speak of the Savior and of salvation from sin. In the final analysis everything is natural: sin, evil, and death. For if everything comes and is given to man through evolution, then what is it that has to be saved in man, inasmuch as there is nothing immortal and intransitory in him, but all is from the earth, earthly, earthen, and as such is transitory, corruptible, and mortal? In such a world of “evolution” there is no place for the Church, which is the Body of the God-man Christ. That theology which bases its anthropology on the theory of “scientific” evolution is nothing but a contradiction in terms. In reality, it is a theology without God and an anthropology without man.<sup>180</sup> \*\*

#### **X. THE PERSONAL RELEVANCE AND APPLICATION OF THE ORTHODOX TEACHING**

Having examined in some depth the Orthodox teaching on the first-created world, the effects of the fall, and the redemption of man and the cosmos, we will now, in conclusion, consider how this teaching can inform our attitude and perception of ourselves, of our fellow human beings, and of our natural environment.

Without the Orthodox Christian understanding of the origin of death and corruption, those who believe in God may be inclined to

---

\* Here St. Justin is using the word “natural” in the same sense that St. Nikolai Velimirovich uses it in the above-quoted passage, “Death Is Unnatural”; see pp. 736–38 above.

\*\* See the letter from which this passage has been taken on pp. 810–12 below.

blame Him for the many forms of suffering that arise in this fallen world, as well as for the deaths of loved ones. On the other hand, those who do not believe in God may point to the broken aspects of creation as “proofs” that there is, in fact, no Creator. For us Orthodox Christians, however, the true reason for the corruption of creation has been explained long ago in the Bible and in the writings of the Fathers. We recognize that suffering, illness, death, and decay—together with all the other manifestations of corruption—were not part of God’s original “very good” creation. They are present because *man* brought them into the world through his sin.

An awareness of what was in the beginning and what occurred at the fall, then, can serve to uphold our faith in the face of both the hardships of life and the attacks of unbelievers. Far from blaming God or doubting His existence when confronted with suffering and death, we can see these realities as signs of God’s mercy. As we have seen from the Patristic writings, although God did not create man and the cosmos corruptible, when man sinned He *allowed* death and corruption to enter the world in order to serve for man’s benefit. Death prevents sin from being immortal, while the sufferings incurred in man’s corruptible state serve to blunt his pride and irrational love of sensual pleasure, and to point him back to the true Source of his life, which is God and not the world. Thus, the consequences of sin are at the same time therapeutic correctives against sin. Through hard experience coupled with faith, we can learn to accept these correctives with thankful hearts, realizing they are given to us for our healing and salvation.

Furthermore, understanding the full effects of the fall can help instill in us greater repentance for our sins and greater compassion for the creation. Although we do not bear the guilt of the fall of our first ancestors, still we participate in the sins of the family of Adam, having been born into this world with a corrupted nature that inclines us toward sin. Thus, when we see brokenness in our fellow human beings or in the material creation, we should recognize that we ourselves are enmeshed in that which, in the beginning, brought about this universal state of corruption. This realization can, in turn, inculcate in us compassion for God’s creation in its brokenness.

In contemplating the incorrupt cosmos that was in the beginning,

as well as its restored and perfected state beyond the general resurrection, we can also become aware of God's plan for His creation, His economy. In this way we can grow in spiritual knowledge of created things according to God's intentions for them, and at the same time harbor a more vibrant hope in the future renewal of the cosmos, when God's plan for it will have been fulfilled. As we have heard from the teachings of St. Barsanuphius of Optina, we can still find "delights and consolations" through beholding the "fragments" that remain of God's original handiwork.\* However, it is only by being cognizant of the original and final states of creation that we can appreciate the beauty that God created in the beginning, unmarred by human sin, and the corresponding yet even greater beauty that is to come. Such an appreciation can help us to apprehend spiritually what St. Maximus has called "traces" of God's majesty in the sensible creation,\*\* and through them be led to a deeper knowledge of our Creator.

Finally and most importantly, understanding what was in the beginning and what occurred at the fall can fill us with a more fervent gratitude toward our Lord Jesus Christ, Who both restores what the first man lost and brings into being what the first man was meant to attain. As we have seen, it is only by recognizing that death entered the world because of sin that we can fully appreciate why the sinless Christ *died* for the salvation of the world: why He undeservedly took upon Himself the final physical consequence of sin in order to overcome all the consequences of sin, "trampling down death by death"<sup>181</sup> and giving life to the world. In knowing *why* He did this, we can give more fitting glory to Him for having, with His death on the Cross, "offered one sacrifice for sins forever" (Heb. 10:12), and for becoming, in His resurrection, the "firstfruits" of our rising from the dead (1 Cor. 15:20, 23).

To Him—through Whom man and the visible creation were made incorrupt in the beginning and are to be immutably returned to incorruption, made spiritual, and deified—is due glory forever. For "Behold," He says, "I make all things new" (Apoc. 21:5).

---

\* See pp. 709–10 above.

\*\* See p. 697 above.

## APPENDIX TWO

# *Modern Saints and Elders on Evolutionism*

(Arranged by date of repose)

By the editor\*

### *1. St. Ambrose, Elder of Optina*

St. Ambrose (1812–1891) is considered the pinnacle of a century-long succession of holy elders of Optina Monastery, whose God-given clairvoyance and God-revealed counsels attracted spiritual seekers from throughout Russia. Elder Ambrose lived during the time when Darwinian ideas were first making themselves known in Russia. In an aphorism that has come down to us, he identifies as nonsense the evolutionary notions of the origin of living things and the descent of man:

“Don’t believe at face value all kinds of nonsense without investigation: that something can come into being [of itself] from dust, and that people used to be apes.”<sup>1</sup> \*\*

### *2. St. Theophan the Recluse, Bishop of Tambou*

St. Theophan the Recluse (1815–1894) was, together with St. Philaret (Drozdov) of Moscow and St. Ignatius (Brianchaninov) of the Caucasus, one of the great and holy transmitters of Patristic theology in nineteenth-century Russia. Steeped in the wisdom of the Fathers

---

\* General remarks about this material are found in the editor’s preface, pp. 80–82, 81n above.

\*\* In the original Russian, the second part of this saying forms a rhyming couplet.



St. Ambrose, Elder of Optina.



St. Theophan the Recluse.

not only on an intellectual but also on a profound experiential level, he wrote classic works on the spiritual life and commentaries on Holy Scripture, and translated many Patristic works into Russian, including the complete *Philokalia*. In order to help his fellow believers remain firm in the Orthodox Faith within the context of modernity, he read widely in the fields of philosophy and science, and stayed abreast of the latest intellectual currents.

Like his earlier contemporaries Sts. Philaret and Ignatius, St. Theophan transmitted the authentic Patristic teaching on the creation and original state of man and the universe. Unlike them, he lived to see the growing acceptance of the opposing worldview of Darwinism in the modern West.\* Realizing that this worldview was encroaching into Russia, he warned his contemporaries of it in no uncertain terms.

---

\* As noted above (p. 508n), however, it is likely that St. Ignatius did encounter the newly promulgated Darwinian theory four of five years before his repose in

In the following passage, St. Theophan compares the unbelief of the Sadducees in Christ's time with that of the evolutionists of his own:

"The Sadducees had a seemingly insoluble objection to the resurrection; but the Lord resolved it with a few words to them, and so clearly that everyone understood and acknowledged the Sadducees to have been beaten by the truth of His word. What the Sadducees were then, unbelievers of all sorts are now. They have heaped up a multitude of fanciful suppositions for themselves, elevated them to the status of irrefutable truths and plumed themselves on them, assuming that nothing can be said against them. In fact, they are so ungrounded that it is not even worthwhile speaking against them. All of their sophistry is a house of cards—blow on it and it flies apart. There is no need to refute it in its parts; it is enough to regard it as one regards dreams. When speaking against dreams, people do not prove the absurdity in their composition or in their individual parts, but only say, 'It's a dream,' and with that they resolve everything. It is the same with the theory of the formation of the world from a nebula and its supports,\* with the theory of abiogenesis\*\* and Darwin's origin of genera and species, and with his last dream about the descent of man.\*\*\* It is all like delirium. When you read them you are walking in the midst of shadows. And scientists? Well, what can you do with them? Their motto is 'If you don't like it, don't listen, but don't prevent me from lying.'"<sup>2</sup>

---

1867. At that time, speaking of the natural sciences, St. Ignatius commented on the "arbitrary fantasies and hypotheses in the works of materialists," and warned of the need to differentiate between these "absurd ravings" and the genuine findings of science.

\* A reference to the nebular hypothesis, according to which a nebula, left over from the sun's formation, contained dust particles that acted as supports for the gradual accumulation of matter, leading to the formation of the earth and the other planets in the solar system. Formulated in the eighteenth century by Emanuel Swedenborg, Immanuel Kant, and Pierre-Simon Laplace, the nebular hypothesis is today the predominant naturalistic explanation of the origin of the Solar System.

\*\* A reference to the modern naturalistic theory of how life on earth arose from inanimate matter.

\*\*\* A reference to Charles Darwin's books *The Origin of Species* (1859) and *The Descent of Man* (1871).

In the same work St. Theophan speaks again of naturalistic theories of origins that had made their appearance in his time: "The truth of God is simple; can a proud mind study it? Such a mind would rather think up its own things: sensational things, although empty and as weak as a spider's web. To see that this is so, look at the current theories of the creation of the world: they are like a somnambulistic or drunken delirium. And yet how good they seem to those who invented them! How much energy and time are wasted on this—and all in vain! The deed was accomplished simply: 'He spake, and they came to be. He commanded, and they were created' (Ps. 148:5). No one can think up anything better than this solution."<sup>3</sup>

The evolutionary theory of the descent of man from animals, wrote St. Theophan, is the consequence of man's running from God's authority and toward the unrestrained satisfaction of the passions. "What ought we to preach?" the Saint asked. "We should cry to all, 'Sons of the Kingdom [of Heaven]! Don't run from the Kingdom into bondage and slavery'—for they are in fact running. Some are captivated by freedom of mind. They say, 'We don't want the bonds of faith and the oppression of authority, even Divine authority; we'll figure things out and make up our minds for ourselves.' So they have made up their minds. They have built fables in which there is more childishness than in the mythology of the Greeks—and they magnify themselves.... Others are enticed by the broad path of the passions. They say, 'We don't want to know positive commandments or the demands of conscience—this is all abstract: we need tangible naturalness.' And they have gone after it. What has come of it? They have bowed down before dumb beasts. Has not the theory that man originated from animals arisen from this moral fall? This is where they have gone! And everyone runs from the Lord, everyone runs...."<sup>4</sup>

Elsewhere St. Theophan wrote that Darwinism, together with other godless philosophies from the West, is deserving of formal condemnation by the Orthodox Church: "These days many nihilists of both sexes, naturalists, Darwinists, Spiritists, and Westernizers in general have multiplied among us. All right, you're thinking—would the Church have been silent, would it not have proffered its voice, would it not have condemned or anathematized them if there had been some-

thing new in their teaching? To be sure—a council would have done so without doubt, and all of them, with their teachings, would have been given over to anathema. To the current Rite of Orthodoxy\* only the following item would have to be added: ‘To Büchner, Feuerbach, Darwin, Renan, Kardec,\*\* and all their followers—anathema!’ But there is no need, either for a special council or for any kind of addition. All of their false teachings were anathematized long ago. At the present time, not only in principal cities but in all places and churches the Rite of Orthodoxy ought to be brought in and celebrated, so that all the teachings contrary to the word of God might be collected and that it might be proclaimed to everyone what they must fear and from what teachings they must flee, and all might know. Many are seduced intellectually only through ignorance, and therefore a public condemnation of pernicious teachings would save them from destruction. If the action of an anathema is terrible to someone, then let him avoid the teachings that lead to it. Let him who is afraid of it for the sake of others bring them back to a healthy teaching. If you who are not favorably disposed to this action are Orthodox, then you are going against yourself; and if you have already lost sound teaching, then what business do you have concerning what is done in the Church that supports it? After all, you’ve already separated yourself from the Church and have your own convictions, your own way of looking at things—well, live with them then. It’s all the same whether or not your name and your teach-

---

\* The Rite of Orthodoxy is served in churches on the Sunday of Orthodoxy (the First Sunday of Great Lent), usually with a hierarch officiating. During the Rite, anathemas are pronounced on heresies condemned at the Seven Ecumenical Councils.

\*\* Ludwig Büchner (1824–1899), an avid proponent of Darwinism, was one of the main exponents of scientific materialism in the nineteenth century; he is considered the father of atheistic “evangelism” in Germany, the counterpart of Thomas Henry Huxley in England. Ludwig Andreas von Feuerbach (1804–1872), a German philosopher and anthropologist, taught that God was but a projection of man’s inner nature and needs; his materialism/atheism, though at times inconsistent, exerted a strong influence on the philosophy of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. Ernest Renan (1823–1892) was a French philosopher who submitted the Old Testament, the life of Christ, and Christian history to thoroughgoing rational analysis, removed from faith in the miraculous and the Divine. Allan Kardec (1804–1869) was the systematizer of Spiritism in France.



ing are uttered under the anathema: you are already under anathema if you philosophize against the Church and persist in this philosophizing.”<sup>5</sup>

St. Theophan predicted that, if naturalistic evolutionary notions of the world’s origin continued to be propagated, the resulting loss of faith among the Russian people would help pave the way for the overthrow of the Orthodox Christian government of Russia. Less than three decades later, his prediction would be fulfilled. As he observed:

“People have suddenly had a thought and have started to write about preserving faith. But they don’t want to block the source of unbelief. This source is the spread of the teaching that the world formed by itself, according to which there is no need for God and the soul does not exist—it’s all atoms and chemistry, nothing more. This is being preached at [university] rostrums and in literature. He who breathes these fumes is inescapably stupefied, and loses his sense and faith.... Until these books are destroyed; until professors and literary men are forced not only *not* to hold to this theory, but even to demolish it—until then—faithlessness will grow and grow, and with it, self-will and the destruction of the present government. That’s the way the French Revolution went.”<sup>6</sup>

Already in his time, St. Theophan saw that science was increasingly becoming a godless enterprise which worked from the assumption that “nature is all there is” and that therefore materialistic explanations can account for everything that exists.\* At the same time he saw that the natural sciences were being falsely held up as the most reliable and authoritative source of all knowledge. In various places he spoke of this increasingly pervasive problem:

“There is not a single science which could be established solidly on its own principles. Something can be obtained from all the sciences. But this is not something that gives one the right to cite science as a decisive authority. It is not science itself [that is the problem], but scientists who twist science however they want. Consequently, there are only the conjectures and inferences of scientists.”<sup>7</sup>

---

\* On this, see pp. 21–28, 89–91, 98–102, 462, 632 above.

“In vain do people think highly about the world and its laws, about nature and its forces, as if there were something untouchable, indisputable and inviolable in them. Under the appearance of science they are devising for themselves an idol-worship that is more destructive than the mythological idol-worship of the ancient Greeks. No, brethren—it is not by the laws and forces of nature that the life of each one of us is upheld, but by the power of God acting within us. The Lord, ‘upholding all things by the word of His power’ (Heb. 1:3), bears each one of us by the same word of His power.

“Let us maintain this thought in our mind and imprint it in our heart. The all-active power of God bears us over the abyss of nothingness, and ‘we live, and move, and have our being’ (Acts 17:28). If He takes away His Spirit, if He removes His hand, we will disappear and will no longer be remembered among the living. But if the Lord holds us, then He touches us. He does not merely see us mentally; no, He touches us, as one hand touches another or as the air touches one’s body. How consoling and awesome!”<sup>8</sup>

Elsewhere St. Theophan reflected on what can happen to a person’s outlook when he does not keep scientific knowledge in a position subordinate to his Christian faith:

“A pure spirit [*nous*] contemplates God and receives from Him knowledge of mysteries. But even the spirit, combined with the body, after the diversity of the creations of the visible world has been revealed to it through the senses, having been enlightened by the same inward illumination from above, must contemplate in these creations all the mysteries of the knowledge of God and the mysteries of God’s making and governing of the world, so that even when faced with this great amount of knowledge it can remain unperturbed in the same single Divine contemplation. But, having fallen, a person is captivated by the diversity of created things and even overwhelmed by impressions from them, which supplant within him the very thought of God. Studying created things, he goes no further than what he sees in them—their composition and interrelations—and, not receiving illumination from above, does not see in them the clear reflection of God and the Divine mysteries. The world has become for him a tarnished mirror, in which nothing can be seen but the mirror itself. Hence a great amount of

knowledge suppresses within him the knowledge of the one thing;\* it turns him away from it makes him cold toward it. Such is the price and such is the fruit of science in a fallen state.”<sup>9</sup>

Rather than let the materialist’s version of science modify the content of their Faith, Orthodox Christians should allow their Faith to inform their understanding of the natural world, for it is only this Faith that can provide the ultimate explanation for man and the cosmos. As St. Theophan affirms: “A believer has the full right to insinuate himself with spiritual things into the material realm, while materialists crawl with their matter, without a twinge of conscience, into the spiritual realm. Right-mindedness is on our side, while incoherence is on theirs. And this is not because every sandpiper praises its own swamp; rather, it is to the point. Matter cannot be either a power or a purpose. Both are outside of it. Matter can only be a means and a field for spiritual powers, in accordance with the spiritual origin (the Creator) of all things.”<sup>10</sup>

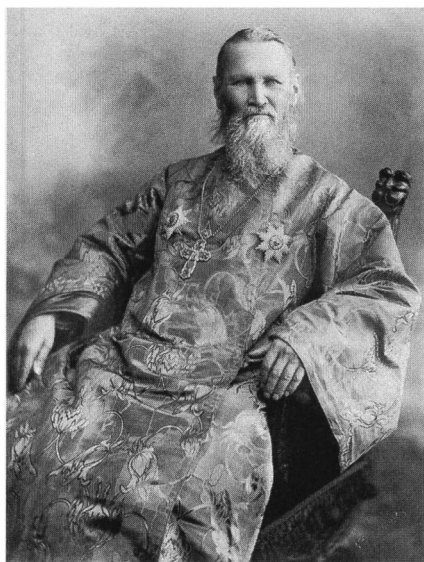
### 3. St. John of Kronstadt

A renowned miracle-worker, pastor, and preacher, St. John of Kronstadt (1829–1908) was very active in charitable and missionary work among the most destitute and disenfranchised segments of Russian society. He was the author of several works of basic Christian instruction, among which was his aforementioned *Talks on the Days of Creation*. When the theory of evolution began to spread throughout Western Europe and into Russia, he immediately recognized it for what it was: a philosophy resulting not from simple observation of the natural world, but from loss of faith in God. In his sermons he made the following incisive comments:

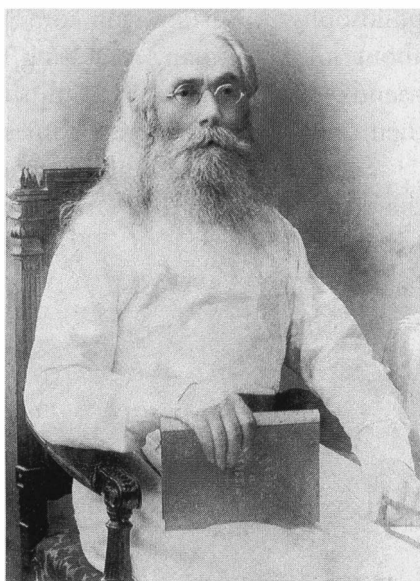
“Half-educated people and over-educated people do not believe in a personal, righteous, omnipotent, and unoriginate God, but believe in an impersonal origin and in some kind of evolution of the world and all beings ... and therefore they live and act as though they will not have to give an answer to anyone for their words and deeds, making

---

\* I.e., the “one thing ... needful” (Luke 10:42).



St. John of Kronstadt.



St. Barsanuphius, Elder of Optina.

gods of themselves, their reason, and their passions.... In their blindness they reach the point of insanity, deny the very existence of God, and maintain that everything stems from blind evolution (the teaching that everything comes into being of itself, without the participation of a Creative power). But he who has an intellect does not believe in such insane ravings.”<sup>11</sup>

#### *4. St. Barsanuphius, Elder of Optina*

St. Barsanuphius (1845–1913) was among the last of the long line of clairvoyant elders of Optina Monastery. Like his contemporary St. John of Kronstadt, he noted the moral ramifications of the acceptance of evolutionist philosophy. To his spiritual children he said: “The English philosopher Darwin created an entire system according to which life is a struggle for existence, a struggle of the strong against the weak, where those that are conquered are doomed to destruction and the conquerors are triumphant. This is already the beginning of a bestial

philosophy, and those who come to believe in it wouldn't think twice about killing a man, assaulting a woman, or robbing their closest friend—and they would do all this calmly, with a full recognition of their right to commit these crimes.”<sup>12</sup>

See also St. Barsanuphius' exposition of the Orthodox teaching on the creation's original incorruption, and on how the cosmos changed with the fall of man (pp. 709–10 above): a teaching clearly antithetical to the evolutionary origin story.

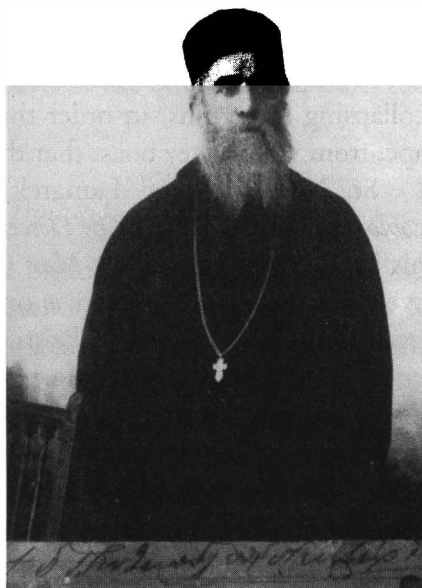
*5. Holy Hieromartyr Vladimir (Bogoyavlensky),  
Metropolitan of Kiev and Gallich*

Metropolitan Vladimir (1848–1918) was the first bishop to be martyred under the Communist yoke in Russia. He was shot and stabbed in Kiev by the Bolsheviks while the All-Russian Church Council was taking place in Moscow. On hearing of St. Vladimir's martyrdom, the Council, led by the holy Patriarch Tikhon, set aside the Sunday closest to his death (Jan. 25/Feb. 7) for the annual commemoration of all of the New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia. He was glorified as a saint by the Russian Orthodox Church in 1992.

Among St. Vladimir's writings one finds his thoughts on evolutionism. He, too, saw the rise of evolutionism as a symptom of modern society's loss of belief in the Christian God, and recognized it as being profoundly antithetical to traditional Christian anthropology. “Only at the present time,” he wrote, “has such an audacious philosophy found a place for itself, which overthrows human worth and tries to give its false teaching a wide dissemination.... Man did not originate from God's hands, it says; in an endless and gradual transition from imperfection to perfection he developed from the animal kingdom, and as little a soul as animals have, so little does man have.... How immeasurably deeply does all this degrade and insult man! From the highest step in the progression of creation he is reduced to the same level as the animals.... There is no need to refute such a teaching on a scientific basis, although it would not be difficult to do this, since unbelief has far from proved its position.... But if such a teaching finds more and more followers at the present time, this is not because the



Holy Hieromartyr Vladimir.



St. Nectarios of Pentapolis and Aegina.

teaching of unbelief has supposedly become inarguably true, but because it does not hinder a corrupt heart that is inclined to sin from giving itself over to its passions. For if man is not immortal, if he is nothing more than the attainment of the highest development of the animals, then he has no business with God.... Brethren, do not listen to the pernicious, poison-bearing teaching of unbelief, which lowers you to the level of animals and, depriving you of human worth, promises you nothing but despair and an inconsolable life.”<sup>13</sup>

*6. St. Nectarios (Kephalas), Metropolitan of Pentapolis  
and Wonderworker of Aegina*

St. Nectarios (1846–1920), a much-venerated miracle-worker, theologian, philosopher, and educator of modern Greece, wrote many books and pamphlets for the spiritual edification of the faithful. In his

*Study concerning the Immortality of the Soul and the Holy Memorial Services* (1901), he wrote of the moral implications of evolutionary theory: "Those who deny the immortality of the soul undermine both the moral law and the foundations of societies, which they want to see collapsing into ruins, in order that they might prove that man is an ape, from which they boast that they are descended."<sup>14</sup>

St. Nectarios read Lamarck's evolutionary treatise *Philosophie zoologique* and Darwin's *The Descent of Man*. Discussing these works in his book *Sketch concerning Man* (1893), St. Nectarios contrasted the evolutionary view that man is only *quantitatively* different from the beasts with the Orthodox Christian view that he is *qualitatively* different.\* The Saint wrote: "The two volumes of the work *Philosophie zoologique* are in their entirety intended to uphold the degrading evolutionary theory regarding man. The first volume seeks to prove that the human organism evolved from that of an ape, as a result of chance circumstances. And the second volume seeks to prove that the distinctive excellences of the human mind are nothing but an extension of a power which the animals have, differing only in degree. Having weak and badly set foundations ... Lamarck claims to prove that in earlier times nature produced through marvelous evolution one species from another, earlier one. He seeks to establish a gradual chain having successive (not contemporaneous) links and thus to produce finally the human species through a metamorphosis that is the reverse of the truth, and not less marvelous than the transformations one reads about in myth!...

"The Darwinian theories imagined that they arrived at the solution of the anthropological question by accepting the mode of evolution. These theories, not being based on sound foundations, instead of solving the problem rendered it more enigmatic, because they denied the validity of revealed truth, viewed man as belonging to the same order as the irrational animals, denied his spiritual origin and attributed to him a very lowly origin. Their failure had as its chief reason the negation of his lofty origin and of his spiritual nature, which is altogether alien to matter and to the physical world. In general, without the ac-

---

\* Fr. Seraphim would later make the same point; see pp. 219, 660 above.

ceptance of revealed truth, man will remain an insoluble problem. The acceptance of it is the firm and safe foundation upon which every inquirer about man must base himself. It is from this that he must begin in order to rightly solve the various parts of the question and learn the truth by means of true science.”<sup>15</sup>

### *7. Holy Hieromartyr Hilarion (Troitsky), Archbishop of Verey*

St. Hilarion (1886–1929) was a prominent hierarch, theological writer, apologist, and close co-worker of St. Tikhon, Patriarch of Moscow. After the Revolution of 1917, he defended the Orthodox Church from the incursions of the Soviet-supported “Living Church,”\* taking back and reconsecrating temples that had been confiscated by the schismatics, and exposing their deceptions in public debates. Because of this, the “Living Church” exerted its influence with the new regime to have St. Hilarion arrested. In 1923 he was sentenced to the Gulag, where he shone with sanctity amid great suffering and finally met his martyric end. He was among the 1,200 New Martyrs and Confessors glorified by the Russian Orthodox Church in 2000.

In his writings, St. Hilarion argued for the truth of the Orthodox Faith as against a diversity of heterodox Western ideas that had infiltrated Russian society. Among these ideas were evolution and its corollary, progress. In an essay published in 1913, “The Incarnation and Humility,” St. Hilarion explained how faith in evolution and progress feeds the pride of man. Soon afterward he would see this faith become a moving force behind the Communist regime and the modernist “Living Church,” both of which would embrace evolution as a cardinal doctrine. Such faith, he understood, is the antithesis of true faith in Christ, which inculcates only humility in the heart of man. As he wrote:

“Through the misuse of his freedom man has so corrupted his nature that he is only left to cry out: ‘Wretched am I, poor me! I cannot save myself.’ We require a new creation, we need an infusion of a new energy of grace. This is precisely what all mankind should say in order

---

\* On the “Living Church,” see pp. 64–65 above.





Holy Hieromartyr Hilarion.

to believe in the incarnate Son of God. Such a humble admission, such a lowly confession of one's frailness, of one's guilt before God's handiwork—is this in the spirit of the modern man? On the contrary, the contemporary conscience is saturated with the idea of evolution, the idea of progress, i.e., the very idea that nourishes human pride. Christianity demands a humble conscience. There was perfect Adam, my forefather; and I, mankind, have only been involved in sin and corruption. The Church calls us to humility when she calls Adam our ancestor. But evolution? Descent from a monkey? No matter how modestly someone may judge himself, still he cannot avoid thinking with some pride: at least I am not a monkey, at least some progress has been realized in me. This is how evolution, by calling a monkey our ancestor, feeds our pride. If a monkey is our benchmark then one can pride oneself in progress, but if we compare ourselves to the sinless Adam, this external progress will lose its value. The external progress is at the same time a refinement of sin. If humanity is moving forward in its development, then we can rely on ourselves. We can create ourselves. But the Church says the opposite. 'We could not become incorrupt and immortal if the Incorruptible and Immortal One had not first become

what we are now.’ To believe in the Incarnation means to confess that without God all of mankind is nothing.

“The Church through the ages carries the ideal of deification. This is a very high ideal, and it demands much from man. It is unthinkable without the Incarnation;\* it forces man to first of all be humbled. Humanity rejects this high ideal and it no longer needs the Incarnation of the Son of God. An infinitely lowered ideal of life allows mankind to speak about progress; it gives it the opportunity to feel proud about its achievements. Precisely these two thought-patterns comprise the two worldviews: the ecclesiastical and the secular. The ecclesiastical: the descent of perfect Adam, the fall, the need for the Incarnation—humility. The secular: the ascent from the monkey, progress, the needlessness and denial of the Incarnation—pride.”<sup>16</sup>

#### 8. *Holy Hieromartyr Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver*

Called a “holy man” and “rare luminary of the Church” by his patriarch, St. Tikhon of Moscow, St. Thaddeus (1872–1937) was an ascetic bishop and apostolic preacher who sacrificed himself entirely for the sake of his flock. Because he was so greatly loved by the faithful throughout his diocese and beyond, he was one of the first hierarchs to be arrested under the Soviet regime. He was imprisoned three times and exiled once during his episcopal service, and was finally executed in Tver in 1937. In 2000 he too was glorified as one of the New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia.

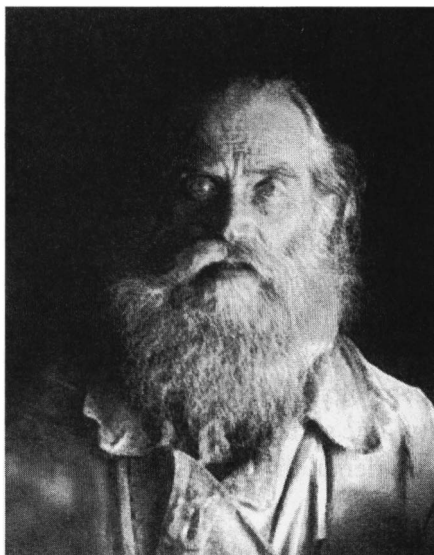
St. Thaddeus’ comments about evolutionary theory anticipate the most powerful argument against the theory in our own times, which centers on the origin of biological information. He wrote: “A man who does not believe in God wants to explain, from the gyrations of cosmic dust, the origin of the world, whereas in every blade of grass, in the structure and life of even the tiniest beings there is enclosed so much information [пазым: literally, reason, intellect, mind] that it is beyond human understanding. The many centuries of human wisdom have

---

\* Unthinkable, that is, for man in his fallen, corrupted state. On what might have been if man had not fallen, see pp. 691, 702–3, 710–11, 763–66, 774 above.



Holy Hieromartyr Thaddeus.



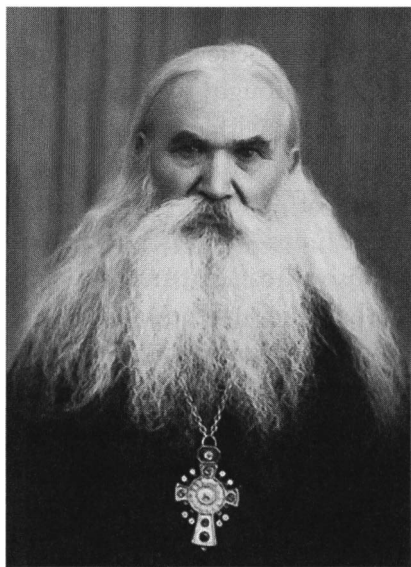
Holy Hieromartyr Varlaam.

not been able to create one living grain, and meanwhile unbelief tries to explain all the wondrous variety in the world by unconscious movements of matter.”<sup>17</sup>

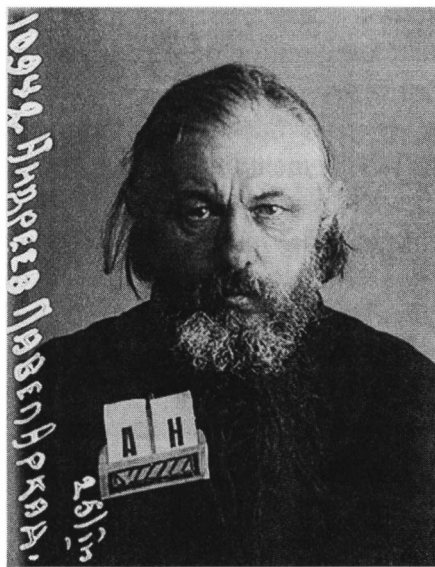
In one of his sermons, the holy hieromartyr made this observation: “Life, as they say, is an enormous, complex mechanical process, brought into being they know not when, by whom, or for what purpose.... But if life is a mechanical process, then one must renounce the soul, thought, will, and freedom.”<sup>18</sup>

*9. Holy Hieromartyr Varlaam (Nikol'sky), Holy Hieromartyr Nicholas Pokrovsky, Holy Hiero-confessor Gabriel (Igoshkin), and Holy Hieromartyr Paul Andreyev*

Since molecules-to-man was a dogma of the atheistic Soviet regime, citizens who disagreed with it were at times accused of “disagreement with science” and of “agitation against Soviet education.” Among the New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia glorified in 2000, there were



Holy Hiero-confessor Gabriel.



Holy Hieromartyr Paul Andreyev.

some whom the Soviet government found guilty of this “crime,” as shown in the KGB files that were released to the public after the fall of Communism.

For example, Hieromartyr Varlaam (Nikol’sky) (1872–1937), an abbot of the Moscow Diocese who had already endured three years of exile, was asked during the interrogation that led to his imprisonment and execution: “Did you try to conduct religious propaganda among schoolchildren? In particular, did you say that in the schools they do not correctly explain the origin of man?” To this the holy martyr replied: “Last year I was walking past a school, and a student of the school addressed me with the question of where man came from, saying that the teacher had said in the lesson that man originated from apes. He asked me what I thought, and I answered that man came from God.”<sup>19</sup>

Likewise, Hieromartyr Nicholas Pokrovsky (1895–1937), a priest of the Tikhvin region in northern Russia, said during an interrogation: “I am a religious man. I have never denied and never will deny my con-

victions, despite the fact that religion and science have parted ways. To take the question of the origin of man, I prove to believers and am myself convinced that man was created by God, [though] science says the opposite.”<sup>20</sup> St. Nicholas was thereafter executed with a group of other prisoners, including several clergymen and an abbe.

Whereas Hieromartyr Nicholas spoke of “science” in the sense that materialists had given to it in modern times—that is, as a branch of knowledge in the service of philosophical naturalism—the Hiero-confessor Archimandrite Gabriel (Igoshkin) of the Moscow Diocese (1888–1959) spoke of it according to its proper, more humble meaning—as simply a branch of knowledge concerned with the physical world. At the same time, St. Gabriel affirmed that which lies beyond the limits of scientific inquiry: the Christian revelation concerning the world’s creation. When he was accused during his interrogation of ignoring science, he answered: “That is not true. I love science. I have studied all my life and advise others to study, for knowledge is light and ignorance is darkness... [but] about the creation of life on earth and man I have said that it is as it is written in the Holy Scriptures, and I cannot say otherwise.”<sup>21</sup> Arrested three times, St. Gabriel endured a total of eighteen years in Soviet prison camps for his faith, surviving beatings and minus-forty-degree weather in the far north.

Disbelief in Darwinism was also among the accusations leveled against Hieromartyr Paul Andreyev (1880–1937), a protopresbyter who served parishes in Moscow and the Volokolamsk region. Hieromartyr Paul was arrested and imprisoned three times, and endured three years of exile in Kazakhstan. After his final arrest, while he was still in prison awaiting his sentence, a former cell-mate of his, then a free man, testified against him before the Soviet authorities. In listing instances of St. Paul’s “anti-Soviet” views, the witness related what he had heard in the prison cell: “The priest Andreyev ... said that the Soviet authorities preach the teaching of Darwin, that man proceeded from apes, but that this is a blasphemy and a lie.”<sup>22</sup> St. Paul was sentenced to death and shot along with two other priests from the Volokolamsk area.

*10. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich), Bishop of Zica*

Known as the “New Chrysostom,” St. Nikolai (1880–1956) was, together with his disciple St. Justin (Popovich) of Celiye, one of the great Holy Fathers of modern-day Serbia. Having earned a doctorate in England, he possessed a wide-ranging knowledge of European thought and life, which enabled him to appreciate what was still valuable in Western culture and at the same time to see the dangers of the West’s increasing godlessness. In a homily on Christ’s healing of the woman with a twisted spine, St. Nikolai observed that, while the Divinely revealed Faith of Christianity confesses God’s omnipotence, those who believe in the modern Western doctrine of evolution call this omnipotence into question, if they believe in God at all:

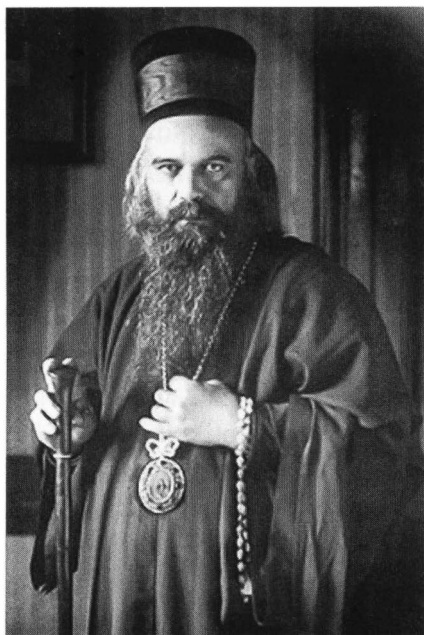
“How can a twisted spine be straightened without breaking? How can a stiffened neck move without remaining a source of pain? It takes a million years, say the ignorant minds of our day, for a monkey’s spine to become straight and a monkey to become a man. Thus they speak, not knowing the power and the might of the living God. It took just a second, at one word from the Lord Jesus, for the woman’s spine, which was much more bent than that of a monkey, to be straightened. But how is a spine straightened? How is a neck unstiffened?... Do not ask about all this, but thank God as this woman did.”<sup>23</sup>

In another place, imagining a dialogue between Christ and Western Europe, St. Nikolai summed up the whole project of modern Western society: to dethrone God and set up man in His place. The doctrine of evolution, St. Nikolai showed, is central to this project:

“If the history of the last three centuries—the eighteenth, nineteenth, and twentieth—could be given one true name, no name would be more suitable than the Proceedings of the Court Case between Europe and Christ. For nothing has occurred in Europe over the last three hundred years that has not had a significant connection with Christ our God.

“The case between Christ and Europe develops like this:

“... Christ asks sadly: ‘How can you men live by imperialism alone, that is, by material interests, by bestial greed for bodily food? I



St. Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica.



Schema-Abbot John, Elder of Valaam.

intended to make you gods and sons of God, but you resist and hurry to make yourselves equal to beasts of burden.’

“Europe replies: ‘You are outdated. In the place of your Gospel, we have discovered zoology and biology. Now we know that we are not descended from you or your Father in heaven, but from orangutans, gorillas, and monkeys. We are now grooming ourselves to be gods. We do not recognize any other gods but ourselves.’”<sup>24</sup>

In the same work St. Nikolai wrote again of how heretics and unbelievers, in viewing themselves as the descendants of apes, lower man to the level of beasts: “For this reason God has given them up to shameful pleasures [cf. Rom. 1:26], so that they find pleasure only in things of the earth and not in heaven, and only in what provokes laughter from the demons and tears from Christ’s angels. They take pleasure in looking after their bodies, in plundering the property of others, in stealing from the small and weak, in multiplying their earthly treasures and extending their states and their rule, in the

wicked usurpation of the homelands of others, in merriment and dancing, in the rejection of every faith as superstition, in the denying of God, in a totally biological life, in shamelessly calling monkeys their ancestors, in the drowning of anthropology in zoology.”<sup>25</sup>

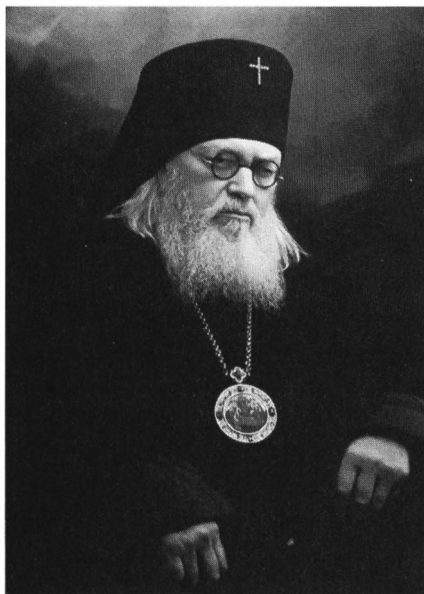
In yet other places, St. Nikolai sets forth the Orthodox teaching on the entrance of death and corruption into the creation through the fall of man (see pp. 736–38 above). Whereas St. Nikolai says that death is “unnatural” and “an uninvited stranger” with respect to the original state of man and the cosmos, evolutionism not only sees it as “natural” but even views it as a primary agent leading to the appearance of man. St. Nikolai’s disciple, St. Justin of Celije, would later underline this conflict between the Orthodox and the evolutionary worldviews (see below).

### *11. Schema-Abbot John (Alekseyev), Elder of Valaam*

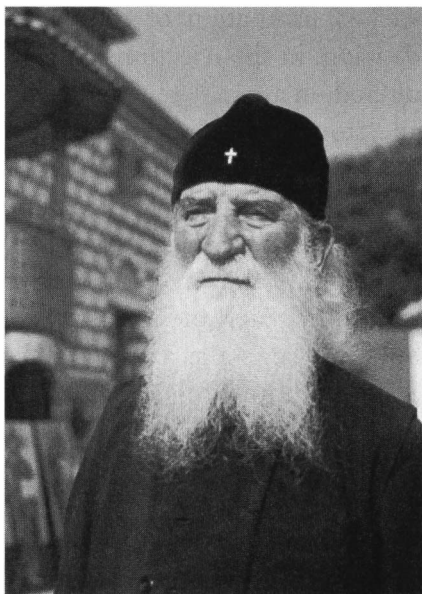
Schema-Abbot John (1873–1958), an elder of Valaam Monastery in northern Russia, was chosen as abbot of the community on the eve of the Winter War (1939–1940), when all the monks had to leave their monastery, never to return. The community established itself in Finland, where Elder John reposed two decades later. Some of his letters of spiritual direction have been translated into English under the title *Christ Is in Our Midst*.<sup>26</sup> In the following passage, translated from the more complete Russian edition of his collected letters, Elder John refutes modern secular notions of origins on the same grounds as did St. Nikolai of Zica, contrasting such notions with the traditional Christian belief in an omnipotent God and His manner of creation:

“An academy student and missionary said to me that by God’s creation in days one must understand millions of years. You poor missionary—you represent the omnipotent Creator as being very weak and attribute millions of years to Him. That’s how your reason speaks, but I believe that, as the Lord said, ‘And the evening and the morning were the first day,’ one must understand days and not millions of years. For the Lord said, ‘And it was so.’ With a word He divided the water from the land, and the water, with a noise, stood in its indicated places: there were seas, the rivers and streams began to flow, and across the





Holy Hiero-confessor Luke.



St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije.

whole earth there were warm waters and cold springs. The Lord said, 'Let there be forests,' and there were forests across the whole earth in perfect form—one kind in the north, and another kind in the south—and then they began to gradually grow. So also the birds were created by God's word: they immediately flew across the whole earth and were of various kinds; and all the rest of creation, as it is said in the Bible. The more I consider nature, the more I am amazed and come to know the omnipotence of the Creator."<sup>27</sup>

*12. Holy Hiero-confessor Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky),  
Archbishop of Simferopol*

A doctor of medicine, university professor, and world-famous pioneering surgeon, St. Luke (1877–1961) served the Church as an archbishop while conducting his surgical practice and writing books and articles on regional anesthesia and surgery. An outspoken confessor of

the Faith, he was exiled and tortured numerous times, and became widely known as a miracle-worker. With his background in the natural sciences, he critiqued the idea of grand-scale evolution both theologically and scientifically. In an article entitled "Science and Religion," he wrote:

"Darwinism, which declares that man, by means of evolution, has developed from the lower species of animals, and is not a product of the creative act of the Godhead, has turned out to be merely a supposition, a hypothesis, which has become obsolete even for science. This hypothesis has been acknowledged as contradictory not only to the Bible, but to nature itself, which jealously strives to preserve the purity of each species,\* and knows of no transition even from a sparrow to a swallow. There are no known facts of a transition of an ape into a man."<sup>28</sup>

### 13. *St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije*

An outstanding transmitter of Patristic teaching in twentieth-century Serbia, St. Justin (1894–1979) was a beloved spiritual father, fiery preacher, and prolific author. Bold in his confession of the Faith before the Communist authorities, he had no qualms about condemning Marxism's cherished doctrine of evolutionism. In his work *The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism*, he included the above-quoted passages of his spiritual father, St. Nikolai of Zica, about how sad and shameful it is for unbelievers to call apes their ancestors. In the same work he wrote—much in the spirit of St. Theophan the Recluse in the nineteenth century—concerning how people can be deceived while pursuing knowledge in the sciences, if they are not grounded in faith in God and do not submit their reason to such saving faith:

"The infallible Apostle advises and directs Christians: 'Be not carried about with diverse and strange doctrines, for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace' (Heb. 13:9). More often involuntarily than voluntarily, people deceive themselves with their various sciences. They deceive themselves by sin, which has become their intellectual power through habit, and has become so natural and

---

\* That is, species defined as a kind of organism that is able to interbreed. On the changing definition of "species" in modern science, see p. 181n above.

human that it is not felt or recognized by those guided and led by sin in their reasonings and sciences. Through sin we come to the creator of sin, the principal logic of sin: the devil. He has countless and very skillful and subtle ways of infiltrating his lies into the human sciences, alienating men from the only true God. Moreover, he introduces all his wiles by the logic of sin into these human sciences, artfully deceiving men with his blasphemy, so that they, in their self-delusion, deny God, reject God, are blind to God, or fence themselves off from Him.”<sup>29</sup>

In a letter to an Orthodox student of theology, St. Justin wrote at length on what he thought of the modern “scientific” theory of evolution. In answer to the student’s question on whether evolutionism is compatible with Orthodox theology, St. Justin immediately began by considering the soteriological implications. As in all his writings and sermons, he focused his attention on the central fact of human and cosmic existence: that “God became man so that man might become God.”\* To the student he explained that evolutionism undermines every aspect of the Orthodox doctrine of salvation: the original nature and calling of man, the corruption of human nature through sin, death as the consequence of sin, and the transformation, perfection and deification of man through the God-man Jesus Christ, which he calls the true “evolution.” Below we present his letter in full:

“My dearest child in God,

“You would like me to answer the question posed by the ‘Theological section’: Can the scientific understanding of the evolution of the world and man ever be reconciled with traditional Orthodox perception and knowledge? What is the judgment of the Holy Fathers in this regard? Is there a need at all for reconciliation?

“In short: the New Testament anthropology stands and falls with the Old Testament anthropology. The entire Gospel of the Old Testament: man—the icon of God; the entire Gospel of the New Testa-

---

\* This classic Patristic formulation is found in the writings of St. Irenaeus (*Against Heresies* 5.Preface), St. Athanasius (*On the Incarnation of the Word* 54), and St. Gregory of Nyssa (*Catechetical Orations* 25), and has been echoed in Orthodox theological writings throughout the centuries.

ment: the God-man—the icon of man. Heavenly, divine, immortal, everlasting, and unchangeably human is the icon of God in man: godlikeness. This godlikeness of the human being has been scarred by man's voluntary sin, his pact with the devil through sin, and death as the consequence of sin. For this reason, God became man 'to renew His image which had been corrupted through sin.'\* God became man, and remained in the human world as God-man, as the Church, in order to give man, the image of God, all the necessary means—the Holy Mysteries and holy virtues in the Divine-human Body of the Church—by which godlike man would be elevated. 'Unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ' [Eph. 4:13].—This is the divine-human evolution of man, this is the divine-human anthropology. The aim of man's godlike being: to gradually become 'perfect like God' the Father [cf. Matt. 5:48], to become 'god by grace,' god-man by grace; to become divine, to become divine-human, to become Christlike, to become triune. According to the Holy Fathers: 'God became man so that man might become God.'

"On the other hand, the so-called 'scientific' anthropologies do not recognize at all the godlikeness of the human being. Hence they deny *a priori* the divine-human evolution of man's being. If man is not the icon of God, then the God-man and His Gospel are unnatural for such a man, and also mechanical and unachievable. The God-man Christ is a robot and creates robots. The God-man is an oppressor, because he forcibly wants to transform man into a being 'perfect like God.' Actually, this is an unviable utopia, an illusion, and an unreachable 'ideal.' In the final instance, it is a fairy tale and a fable. Furthermore, if man is not a godlike being, then the God-man is superfluous. For scientific theories of evolution acknowledge neither sin nor the Savior from sin. In this earthly world of 'evolution' everything is natural; there is no place for sin. That is why it is ridiculous to speak of the Savior and of salvation from sin. In the final analysis everything is natural: sin, evil, and death. For if everything comes and is given to man through evolu-

---

\* Compare St. Gregory the Theologian: "To create anew the corrupted image, God came to be among us" (*Dogmatic Poem* 10: *Against Apollinarius*, line 20, PG 37.467A, PPS 21, p. 81\*).

tion, then what is it that has to be saved in man, inasmuch as there is nothing immortal and intransitory in him, but all is from the earth, earthly, earthen, and as such is transitory, corruptible, and mortal?\*

In such a world of 'evolution' there is no place for the Church, which is the Body of the God-man Christ. That theology which bases its anthropology on the theory of 'scientific' evolution is nothing but a contradiction in terms. In reality, it is a theology without God and an anthropology without man. If man is not immortal, everlasting, and a divine-human icon of God, then all theologies and all anthropologies are senseless farces and tragic comedies.

"Your father Justin."<sup>30</sup>

#### *14. Elder Paisius (Olaru) of Sihastria and Sihla*

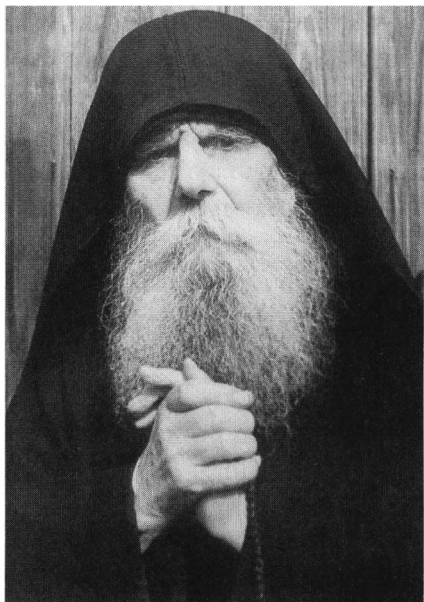
Serving as a priest-monk in the mountain monasteries of northern Romania, Elder Paisius (1897–1990) came to be known as a grace-filled father confessor, overflowing with self-sacrificing love for his spiritual children. During the dark years of Communism, thousands of Romanians flocked to him for advice, spiritual strength, and consolation, including many of the country's other great spiritual fathers.

In the following words of counsel, transcribed from a tape-recording, Elder Paisius is responding to a nun who said that she was having doubts concerning the Faith. The Elder speaks about the problem of unbelief generally, and then gives a specific example of an idea born of such unbelief: the notion of man's evolution from ape-like creatures:

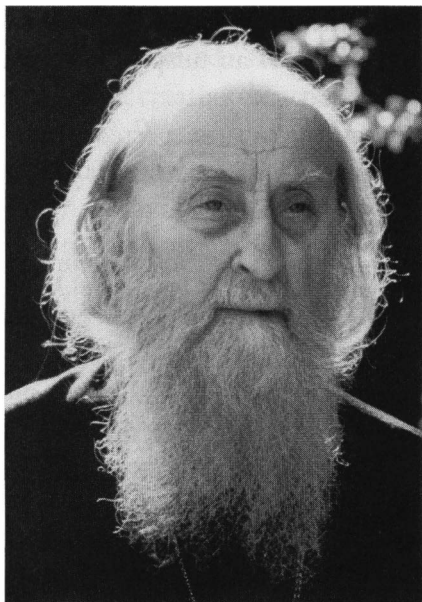
"What do you mean you don't believe? Hold your tongue! Who is it that brought you to the monastery? These are the thoughts of the devil. Why do you listen to what the enemy says? The devil's aim is to make people doubt and believe that there is no God. Because if there is no God, then neither is there any sin, and people can do anything. Doubt

---

\* It is noteworthy that, in saying that evolutionism denies the godlikeness of man, St. Justin is implicitly rejecting the theistic evolutionary notion that God made man into the image of God at some point in his ascent from the apes. Recognizing that evolutionism originated in a denial of Christian revelation, St. Justin did not even bother to consider such an artificial melding of two opposing worldviews.



Elder Paisius of Sihastria and Sihla.



Elder Sophrony of Essex.

is halfway to the renunciation of God; that is why the devil tempts us. The Savior says that the days will come—and, look, they have come (cf. Luke 18:8). Some people say that man was made from an ape. It was a madman who said this; man is the image and likeness of God.”<sup>31</sup>

### *15. Archimandrite Sophrony (Sakharov) of Essex*

Living as a hermit on Mount Athos, Greece, Elder Sophrony (1896–1993) was granted the gift of Divine illumination and became the spiritual heir of a monk of holy life, St. Silouan, whose life and teachings he passed on to the world. Later he founded the Monastery of St. John the Baptist in Essex, England, where he lived as a beacon of holiness and wisdom until his repose. In his spiritual autobiography, written toward the end of his life, Elder Sophrony had the following to say about the modern evolutionary theory of origins:

“For many of the representatives of modern science, ‘in the begin-

ning was a hydrogen atom,' and from it, by the path of evolution, over the course of an unspecified number of billions of years, arose everything that now exists.... The idea is absurd to us, that from 'accidental' combinations, unexpected by the first atom itself, could arise human thought, with its quests for THE ORIGIN."<sup>32</sup>

### *16. Elder Paisios (Eznepidis) of Mount Athos*

Elder Paisios (1924–1994) was one the most loved and revered Greek Orthodox elders of our times. Living as a monk in the ancient monastic republic of Mount Athos, he received many heavenly visitations and was granted the Divine gift of seeing into human hearts. He spent his nights in prayer and his entire days guiding, consoling, and healing the countless people who came to him.

Elder Paisios was the founder of the Holy Monastery of the Evangelist John the Theologian in Souroti, Thessaloniki, Greece, which he guided for twenty-eight years. After his repose, the abbess and sisters of the monastery published his letters and transcriptions of his spiritual talks. In the following conversation, Elder Paisios spoke with characteristic humor about the theory of man's evolution from microbes, explaining how it denies God's omnipotence even when God's role is somehow acknowledged in the process. Also, he pointed out a Christological implication of evolutionary theory that "Christian evolutionists" either fail to consider or choose to ignore. With his Christian conscience made sensitive through prayerful cooperation with God's grace, he saw the idea that the God-man Christ descended from a monkey as nothing less than a blasphemy:

"The nonsense we hear in school these days about Darwin's theory and the rest! Even the teachers themselves do not believe what they are teaching; but they go ahead, because they want to pollute the minds of our youth and take them away from the Church. This is what someone told me: 'Let's say that the soil contained various substances and microorganisms, and God took these and created man....' 'You mean,' I replied, 'that if those elements did not exist in the soil, God would not have been able to create man? It would have been really difficult for Him!' 'Well, let's say,' he continued, 'that He took

some things from the monkey and perfected them; couldn't that be how it happened?' 'Are you trying to say,' I answered, 'that God cannot create a perfect creature, that he cannot create a human being, even after dedicating a whole day to that? What should He have done? Go get spare parts? Why don't you read the prophecy of Job from the Scripture readings of Holy Thursday?\*' Now scientists do not accept all of their own claims about our kinship with monkeys. How long has it been since man went to the moon? In all these years, have monkeys evolved enough to build a bicycle or at least a skateboard? Have you ever seen a monkey on a skateboard? Of course you can teach him to do that, but that's not the same thing ...' But the man would not give up. He insisted, 'Let's assume this,' or 'Let's say that ...' 'Well, let's just say that you will not say a thing,' I finally told him. 'That way you'll find the certainty you want.'

"The theory of evolution was being taught by a professor I knew at the university. Once, I said to him, 'In time and with proper care a green bean plant will become a better green bean plant, the eggplant a better eggplant. If you feed and take care of a monkey, he will become a better monkey, but he will not turn into a human being....' And then, there's this to think about. Christ was born of a human being, the *Panagia*!\*\* Are we supposed to believe that His ancestors were monkeys? What blasphemy! And those who support this theory don't realize that they are blaspheming. They throw a stone and do not check to see how many heads they have cracked. All you will hear from them is, 'Mine went further than the other fellow's.' That's what they are all about these days; they marvel at who will throw a stone the furthest. But they care nothing about those who are passing by and the many heads their stones will crack."

Elder Paisios was then asked: "Geronda,\*\* some people think that these theories will help bring Marxists to church."

He replied: "Well, perhaps a few Marxists might come to church at

---

\* Job 38:14: "Or didst thou take clay of the ground, and form a living being, and set it with the power of speech upon the earth?"

\*\* *Panagia* (literally, "Most Holy"): the Most Holy Mother of God.

\*\*\* Geronda: elder.



first. But then they will want to organize as a party and start giving orders to others: 'Now you must go to church; now you may not. Now do this, now do that.' They will have rules for everything. And in the end, they will start telling people: 'Who told you that there is a God? There is no God! The priests are making it all up to deceive you.' This is what will happen; the Marxists will use these good-willed folks to achieve their goal. Marxists with a good will and disposition will come back to the Church, repent, and go to Confession. But those who have no good disposition, they will never change."<sup>33</sup>

At another time, the Elder was asked: "Geronda, some devout young men are troubled while serving their military duty by those who are abusive and curse. What should they do?" To which he replied: "This requires discernment and patience. God will help. The wireless operator that I worked with in the army was a blasphemous, unbelieving doctor. Every day he would come to the administrative unit to brainwash me with his ideas! He talked to me about Darwin's theory of evolution, and other such things; things entirely blasphemous."<sup>34</sup>

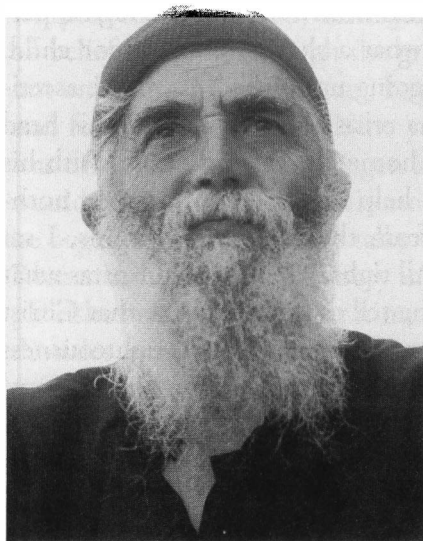
In yet another conversation, Elder Paisios spoke of how he was told of evolutionary theory as a boy, how it challenged his faith in Christ, and how he met the challenge with prayer, until Christ appeared to him. Here we may note that, like the Orthodox saints before him, Elder Paisios clearly associated evolutionism with *unbelief*—with loss of faith in the God of Christianity—due to which it had been devised in the first place.

"Geronda," he was asked. "I am troubled by the thoughts of unbelief that come to me."

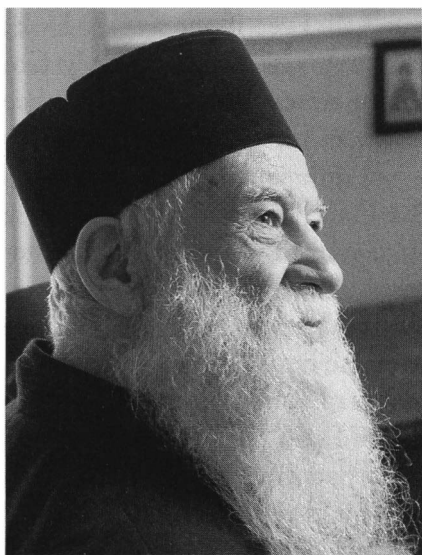
"The fact that you are troubled by them and do not accept them," he answered, "means that these thoughts come from the evil one.... I'm going to share something from my own life to help you...."

"When I was a young boy in Konitsa, I read about the lives of many saints, and sometimes I gave the books to the other boys to read, or I would gather them in one place and we would read them together. I marvelled at the great degree of asceticism and the fasting that the saints practiced, and tried to do the same. From fasting, my neck had become as thin as a cherry stem. The children teased me. 'Your head will fall off,' they would say to me. What I had to put up with! Well,

## MODERN SAINTS AND ELDERS ON EVOLUTIONISM



Elder Paisios of Mount Athos.



Fr. George Calciu.

never mind. In addition, because I often got sick from fasting, my older brother was afraid that I would not be able to finish school, so he would take and hide my little pamphlets with the Lives of the saints. After that, I started hiding them in the forest, at the country Chapel of St. Barbara, and would go there secretly to read them.

“One day a neighbor named Kostas said to my brother, ‘I will make him change his way of thinking, throw away those books he is reading, and give up his fasting and prayer.’ He found me—I was about fifteen years old then—and he started talking to me about Darwin’s theory. He started talking, and went on and on and was making my head spin. In my haze, I headed for the forest, to the Chapel of St. Barbara. I went in and began praying to Christ. ‘My Christ, if You exist, reveal Yourself to me in some way,’ I kept saying, while constantly doing prostrations for a long time. It was summer. The sweat was running down my body, and I was drenched and completely exhausted. But I didn’t hear or see anything. Nor did God help me in any way with even a small sign, some sound, some shadow; I was only a child,

after all. Even if one were to look at this from a human and logical perspective, one could say, ‘My God, what a shame for the poor child. From eleven years old, he has been going up to the hills to live ascetically, and now he is going through a crisis. That man made his head spin with some foolish theories. At home, he has difficulties with his brother. He ran to the forest to seek help from You ...’ And yet nothing, nothing, nothing! Exhausted from the many prostrations, I sat down for a while. Then I thought, ‘All right, when I asked Kostas what he thought about Christ, what did he tell me? He told me that Christ was the best, the most righteous man, Who proclaimed righteousness and had so offended the Pharisees that they crucified Him out of envy.’ Then I said, ‘If Christ was such a good man, so righteous, and no other man had ever appeared like Him, and others killed Him out of envy, then it is right of me to do for this man far more than I have done, even to die for him.’ As soon as I looked at it this way, Christ appeared to me in a great light—the chapel was full of light—and told me, ‘I am the Resurrection and the Life. He that believeth in Me, though he die, yet shall he live’ (John 11:25–26). These same words I could also read in the open Gospel which He held in one hand. There was such an inner transformation in me that I found myself saying constantly, ‘Come here now, Kosta, to discuss if there is or there isn’t a God.’ You see, for Christ to appear He waited for my *philotimo*-filled\* response. Now, if Christ requires such a response from even a young child, can you imagine how much more He would expect from a mature adult?”<sup>35</sup>

### 17. Fr. George Calciu

A holy confessor of our times, Fr. George (1925–2006) spent a total of twenty-one years in Romanian Communist prisons because of his Orthodox Christian faith. During his first incarceration, which lasted sixteen years, he was subjected to the scientific experiment of Pitesti: the most diabolical system of torture ever devised, which at-

---

\* *Philotimo*, according to Elder Paisios, is reverence, honor, goodness, and love, devoid of self-interest; it is a humble sense of gratitude toward God and one’s fellow man, and a corresponding desire to repay the slightest good that one has received.

tempted to methodically dismantle the human personality and destroy all belief in God. Through the grace of Christ, he survived this ordeal not only with his faith intact, but with the superhuman power to love and forgive his torturers. Nine years after his release from prison, he was ordained a priest and began a heroic public ministry that he knew would lead to another imprisonment and probably to death. In 1978 he began a series of weekly talks to young people at the church of the Romanian Orthodox seminary in Bucharest. Hundreds of young people risked their lives to hear him, climbing over the walls when the authorities tried to keep them away. Having been purified in a crucible of suffering, Fr. George's fiery soul cried out to them, calling them out of the atheism and materialism of Communist society, awakening them to the true meaning and purpose of their lives, and leading them to faith in Christ.

In denouncing the scientific materialism of Communist society, Fr. George struck at its very foundation: its story of origins. In his first homily to the youth of his country, he declared:

"You have been told that you descend from the apes, that you are a beast which must be trained; but now you discover an astonishing thing: that you are the temple of God and in you dwells the Spirit of God. You are being called, young friend, back to your dignity as a metaphysical being; you are raised up from the low place in which false education has sunk you to the sacred office of being the temple in which God dwells."<sup>36</sup>

Two weeks later, in his third homily, he asked:

"Tell me, young man, how much have you believed the statements which you have heard repeated to the point of obsession—at school, on the radio, on television, in the newspapers, and at young people's meetings—that you descend from apes? And how honored did this revelation make you feel?!...

"I know, friend, that you are tortured by questions concerning the meaning of your life in this world, and concerning the purpose of the world in general. Do the ready-made authoritarian statements in answer to your limited questions satisfy you; namely, that 'heaven is fiction, matter is everything, and it is matter speaking to you through your internal and external senses'? Matter organized its own structure

and evolution by certain laws of great complexity before even the slightest rudiment of the human brain was formed. Thus, once the higher brain of man appeared—the only means by which matter recognizes itself—it could no longer recognize itself. And from that time until now human intelligence has been struggling in a sterile and vain effort to discover laws which heedless matter fixed in a period when there was nothing but darkness and unconsciousness!

“What do you think of this game of non-intelligence which annuls all human intelligence, even the collective one? Do you not see that the most elementary logic obliges you to admit the presence of an intelligence outside of this world?”<sup>37</sup>

As a result of his bold confession of the Faith, Fr. George was again sent to prison, where he was granted to experience the grace of Divine illumination. With the help of political pressure from the free world, he was released in 1984 and exiled to America, where he became a beloved spiritual father to many souls. When he returned to Romania in 1989, ten thousand young people came to pray with him, despite concerted efforts by the authorities to stop this event.

On November 6, 1996, Fr. George was interviewed by an American Orthodox nun, Mother Nina. This was less than two weeks after Pope John Paul II had read a now-famous address expressing approval of the theory of evolution.\* Fr. George took the opportunity to refute the pope’s statement, and to affirm the proper order of theology and natural science in the Christian hierarchy of knowledge:

“I read in the newspapers just a few days ago that the pope made a statement [that evolution is ‘more than a hypothesis’].... He tried to justify this statement by saying that only the soul of man is made by God. But until the appearance of man, what did God do? Did He sleep? When did He start to make the soul of a man, and why? If you accept that the body of man and the body of animals are not created by God, that they are the result of evolution, then why did God begin to make the soul of man?...

“There was a professor of apologetics at the seminary [in Bucharest]. He said that now is the time for science to be in accord with

---

\* See p. 571n above.

theology—not theology with science. And that is right!... And the pope says that God has no role in the creation of the world? That matter created itself, without having any brain to organize the laws of the universe?\* And now human beings, who do have brains, are unable to discover the laws of the universe made by matter without a brain? And God only created the soul of man? If we accept the theory of evolution as the pope said we should, it would mean accepting that in the beginning was a cell, and only afterwards a man. When, then, did God decide to give man a soul? To Neanderthal Man or to modern man? Thus, it is absolutely stupid for a pope to say a thing like that.”<sup>38</sup>

---

\* In his address, the pope did not explicitly state that matter and the laws of the universe came into being of themselves; however, he gave credence to this naturalistic notion by endorsing evolutionism without any qualifications save for a pronouncement on the Divine creation of the human soul. As Fr. George commented in the above-mentioned interview, the pope was effectively “limiting God to a being that could only make a soul from time to time” (*Father George Calciu: Interviews, Homilies, and Talks*, p. 121).

## APPENDIX THREE

# *Biological Evidence and the Neo-Darwinian Paradigm*

By Yuri Zharikov, Ph.D.

*This general theory [neo-Darwinism] ... continues to cast a bright light on what may be called the modern synthesis.*

—Ulrich Kutschera and Karl J. Niklas<sup>1</sup>\*

*Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness.*

—Luke 11:35

*Woe unto them ... that put darkness for light, and light for darkness ... that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!*

—Isaiah 5:20–21

### *1. Two Models*

RECENT years have seen the re-emergence of public and scientific debate about the ways in which life, the Earth, and the universe at large have come to be.\*\* As is evident from the book by Fr. Seraphim Rose *Genesis, Creation, and Early Man*, two mutually exclusive models have been competing for human hearts and minds. One, held by the Church from the time of the Apostles until now, can be defined as the model of Creation. In its simplest form the model postulates the six-day Creation of a perfect (“very good”) world by the Eternal, All-righteous, Almighty, All-kind, Omniscient God, Who is Love, worshipped and

---

\* From a review of the state of evolutionary biology as of 2004.

\*\* See, for example, <http://www.intelligentdesign.org>.

glorified in the Holy Trinity. Today, we can still see an image of the originally created world, albeit much distorted and corrupted by the fall of the first people, Adam and Eve. An important characteristic of this fallen world is its gradual decay relative to the originally perfect state. The other model, whose origin is often ascribed to the ancient philosophers Empedocles and Anaximander\* and which from the early eighteenth century became ever increasingly adopted by secular Western societies, posits a progressive development of the world by purely material, naturalistic processes. This model can be defined as the evolutionary model. Although many versions of the evolutionary model exist, it is its currently most popularized form, known as Darwinism,\*\* that has captured the imagination of many people across the world. In a broad sense, the model of Darwinian evolution postulates gradual historical self-organization of living matter and development of more complex life-forms from simpler ones. This process is *hypothesized* to have led to the appearance and transformation of living species on earth.\*\*\*

---

\* See p. 557n above.

\*\* Charles Darwin (1809–1882) was among the first naturalists to conceptualize and publicize the idea of the naturalistic self-development and diversification of biological life. (See pp. 515–19 above for additional details on the development and popularization of Darwin’s theory.) The term *Darwinism* is used here inclusive of the Neo-Darwinian Theory (NDT). NDT (as identified in common usage with the modern evolutionary synthesis) is a modification of Charles Darwin’s theory of evolution, undertaken from 1937 to 1950. It holds that positive random mutations are able to take over a population through the process of natural selection, and that ultimately all variety and richness in nature is a manifestation of this mechanistic process accumulated over millions of years.

\*\*\* It should be noted that so-called theistic evolutionism sees no conflict between the two models. Proponents of theistic evolution equate the progressive historical self-organization of matter with the action of God, thus essentially confusing the Creator with His creation. Such confusion could be understood a hundred years ago, when the evolutionary theory was being tested, the organization of life on genetic and biochemical levels was largely a mystery, and knowledge of the paleontological record was still very incomplete. Today, when Darwinism and the idea of progressive evolution remain the principal scientific and societal paradigms not by the virtue of irrefutable facts but “by the default of all opposing theories” (Ernst Mayr, *Toward a New Philosophy of Biology* [1988], p. 192), acceptance of theistic evolution seems incomprehensible. See more on this on pp. 606–9 above.



When it comes to an open debate between the proponents of the two models, those who believe in the self-development of matter maintain that the truthfulness of their model has been established by purely scientific means (i.e., observation and experiment). At the same time they argue that the idea of a supernatural creation is an irrational religious belief. The logical consequence of this dichotomy is the presentation of the evolutionary model to society as the *scientifically proven way* by which our world, including ourselves, has come to be. It is treated not as a model but as a *fact*, as factual as gravity, the revolution of the Earth around the Sun and the formation of ozone in the stratosphere, which any intelligent person ought to accept. The model of Creation, on the other hand, is relegated to private opinion, and any attempts to present arguments supporting this model alongside the traditional Darwinist arguments are viciously resisted, and its proponents are scorned.\*

As evidenced by the examples of Isaac Newton, Louis Agassiz, Niels Bohr, Mikhail Lomonosov, James Clerk Maxwell, Gregor Mendel, Ivan Pavlov, Louis Pasteur, Blaise Pascal, Dimitry Mendeleev and a multitude of other scientists in modern and previous times, one can perceive Creation as a *fact* using the same observations that are currently used to defend the evolutionary model. In the eyes of a believer in God the tiniest living being loudly “declares the glory of God” and “proclaims His handiwork” (cf. Ps. 18:1). An unbeliever needs to explain how all this “handiwork” has come to be on its own. In doing so he may consciously (as in the case of Richard Dawkins)\*\* or unconsciously undermine the faith of those who believe. The result is a conflict, for, in the words of St. Hilarion Troitsky,\*\*\*

---

\* See, for example, a story about a failed attempt to introduce the mere mention of the possibility of a non-materialistic origin of life in a high school in Pennsylvania, USA (*Newsweek*, Nov. 28, 2005), and an open letter protesting a similar attempt in St. Petersburg, Russia, published by a group of Darwinists in a Russian newspaper (*Izvestiya*, March 20, 2006).

\*\* Richard Dawkins (born 1941), is a British ethologist, evolutionary theorist, popular science writer, and ardent proponent of atheism.

\*\*\* Holy Hieromartyr Hilarion, Archbishop of Verey (1886–1929). See pp. 799–801 above.

Unbelief wars against faith, or, it is better to say, these two faiths war relentlessly against each other—faith in Christ and faith in antichrist—and each of them appeals to science for help. When a man believes in Christ, then science together with him offers worship to Christ. When a man believes in antichrist, he puts the antichristian yoke on science as well.<sup>2</sup>

This conflict takes place both between individuals and within one's own soul. Its outcomes are often not in favor of believers, for, as noted by Colin Brown: "By far the most potent single factor to undermine popular belief in the existence of God in modern times is the evolutionary theory of Charles Darwin."<sup>3</sup> This factor was broadly, aggressively, and successfully used in Russia during Soviet times as a part of the anti-Church campaign.

While many Orthodox believers are comfortable with believing in Creation simply by "holding fast" to what they have been given by the Church (cf. 2 Thes. 2:15, 2 Tim. 1:13, Apoc. 2:25, 3:3, 3:11), those who decide to delve into the problem need to be equipped so that their faith is not challenged in the process. Material presented in *Genesis, Creation, and Early Man* asserts that the model of evolution according to Darwin can hardly be called a scientific theory but is rather a brand of materialistic philosophy. In the present appendix, some of the principal scientific arguments against Darwinism presented by Fr. Seraphim and Phillip Johnson earlier in the book are elaborated on and presented in greater detail (e.g., the lack of support for the evolutionary theory in the paleontological record). Other points, dealing with such well-known misconceptions of Darwinism as the "law of recapitulation," are only briefly mentioned. Issues covered only scantily or not at all elsewhere in this book, such as molecular and genetic evidence against evolution, are developed here in detail based on the current state of knowledge in the relevant fields of science.\*

---

\* The present article was completed in 2010 for inclusion in the second edition of this book, whereas Phillip Johnson's introduction was completed thirteen years earlier for the first edition. Thus, this article incorporates newer scientific findings.—ED.

## 2. *The Theory of Evolution*

The term “evolution”\* is often used with two prefixes: “micro” and “macro.” Microevolution refers to the expression of genetic diversity that occurs within populations, or more precisely genomes, and is manifest in small-scale phenotypic variation. Examples of microevolution are artificial selection, development of drug-resistance in bacteria, salt-tolerance in plants, and historical divergence of segregated populations into *ring species* or *sister species*.\*\* All known microevolutionary processes lead to partitioning, rearrangement, and/or *loss* of genetic information. They are directly observable and their mechanisms are studied by molecular and population geneticists. Macroevolution (sometimes called *aromorphosis*) refers to the hypothetical emergence of major morphological features and whole body plans that would require concurrent comprehensive reorganization of all functional systems of the organism. An example of macroevolution would be the transformation of fish into amphibians, reptiles into birds, or terrestrial mammals into cetaceans.

Drawing his analogy mostly from artificial selection, Darwin believed that entirely new body plans can emerge via “gradations in the perfection of any organ or instinct” acted upon by “a struggle for existence,”<sup>4</sup> i.e., natural selection. Inspired by such an idea, his followers infer macroevolution from microevolution. However, a clear mechanism that could link micro- and macroevolution has yet to be demon-

---

\* For an expanded definition of the term *evolution*, see the introduction by Phillip Johnson, pp. 91–92 above.

\*\* A *ring species* is a connected series of neighboring populations, often classified as species, that can interbreed, but for which there are at least two “end” populations too distant to interbreed. Often such genetically connected populations coexist in the same region, making thereby a “ring.” The best example of a ring species is the seven species of large gulls (genus *Larus*) that breed around the Arctic Circle, thus creating a “ring.” By *sister species* are understood morphologically and genetically very similar species with adjacent or slightly overlapping distributions that probably derive from a single stock population but no longer interbreed. Good example of sister species are flycatchers (birds) of the genera *Empidonax* and *Ficedula*.

strated. To use examples of observable microevolutionary processes as proofs of macroevolution simply confuses the two issues. To avoid any confusion in this appendix, the term *evolution* will mean strictly *macroevolution*. *Microevolution* will be more appropriately described by such terms as variation or adaptation.

### 3. What Is a Scientific Theory?

Although a clear demarcation line between science and pseudoscience remains to be found,<sup>5</sup> usually when we speak of a scientific theory we imply not a speculation but a logical system thoroughly grounded in empirical data. A scientific theory should also be able to generate falsifiable predictions, which can be tested through controlled experiments. To quote R. Feynman,\* “Experiment is the sole judge of scientific ‘truth.’”<sup>6</sup> Natural phenomena generally consist of *processes* and *patterns* linked by *mechanisms*. In a mountain stream the *process* of water flow will form a *pattern* of sediment, sand, and gravel on the stream bed such that, all else being equal, the size of sediment particles will be related to current velocity. One may observe that different streams have different sediment patterns. Knowing something about the law of gravity, one can formulate a simple theory describing this phenomenon: water flow forms a sediment pattern via the *mechanism* of current velocity. An experiment designed to test this relationship would start with a homogenous mixture of sediment particles of different sizes. Equal amounts of the sediment would be subjected to standing water, slow current, and fast current. If the average size of particles remaining in sediment increases with the increased water velocity, this will support the theory about the relationship between the *process* of water flow and the sediment *pattern* via the *mechanism* of current velocity. In the words of Karl Popper,\*\* “Every ‘good’ scientific theory is

---

\* Richard Phillips Feynman (1918–1988) was an influential American physicist known for his studies on the theory of quantum electrodynamics and particle theory.

\*\* Karl Raimund Popper (1902–1994) was a British philosopher best known for advancing empirical falsifiability as the criterion for distinguishing scientific theory from non-science.

a prohibition: it forbids certain things to happen. The more a theory forbids, the better it is.”<sup>7</sup>

In this example, the theory forbids small sediment particles to be unaffected by increased current velocity. Such prohibition is a cornerstone of scientific methodology, as it allows for falsification of alternative hypotheses (plausible theories). One can sum up all this by saying that the main, generally accepted criterion of the scientific status of a theory is its falsifiability or testability. It is precisely for this reason that empirical science has long prided itself on objectivity and immunity from subjective influences.

The diversity and organization of life we observe around us is a pattern. This pattern spans several levels of complexity, from molecules to genes to tissues and organs, and then to individuals, populations, species, and ecosystems. It is so marvellous, exquisite, and intricately interwoven that we have hardly made a beginning in properly describing, let alone understanding it. Defenders of Darwin’s theory proclaim that the diversity of life in itself proves the fact of evolution. However, as has been pointed out time and again (see the introduction by Phillip Johnson for more details), such statements are nothing but demagoguery reflecting a particular *belief*, unless it can be shown that the process of evolution can form the pattern of diversity of life via an explicit, observable mechanism.

Evolutionary biologists claim that the primary mechanism of evolution is natural selection acting upon random\* changes (mutation and recombination) in population genomes (or “descent with modification,” in Darwin’s original words). Thus, the same mechanism that brings out existing genotypic variation in the coloration of butterflies or the bill shape of finches is presented as if also explaining how the butterflies and finches have come to be in the first place.<sup>8</sup> It is rarely acknowledged that small-scale genetic and phenotypic variability does not make or break the theory of Darwin.<sup>9</sup> It is precisely the evidence for a mechanism that could effect *major* evolutionary changes that can do that. To this day, such evidence is nonexistent. As euphemistically expressed in scientific publications, “Mechanisms that account for the

---

\* *Random* means occurring strictly by chance.

transformation and diversification of species are still very much under investigation.”<sup>10</sup>

#### *4. What Does the Theory of Evolution Predict?*

Being a keen observer, Darwin recognized three fundamental properties of organisms. First, species are not immutable and can form *varieties*; second, species differ in the degrees of similarity among themselves; and third, in the fossil record there is a general pattern of increase in organism complexity from lower to upper sediment layers.

While he was trying to devise a theory that would account for these initial observations, Darwin's thinking was strongly influenced by observations of the relative ease with which domestic varieties of plants and animals could be developed under artificial selection. Assuming that, since small changes can emerge and be selected, so too can large changes, he stated:

There is no obvious reason why the principles which have acted so efficiently under domestication should not have acted under nature.... These individual differences are of the highest importance to us, for they are often inherited,... and they thus afford materials for natural selection to act on and accumulate, in the same manner as man accumulates in any given direction individual differences in his domesticated productions.<sup>11</sup>

Darwin believed that nature *creates* useful variability on which natural selection can act, advancing better adapted forms, and that this mechanism explains both the distribution of different life-forms in the fossils and the existing diversity of life. Darwin saw gradual differentiation among domestic varieties, and what he called natural varieties and subspecies, as a process that differed quantitatively but not qualitatively from the processes that could lead to the emergence of more complex forms of life from simpler ones. The same idea was reasserted by the founders of the Neo-Darwinian Theory (NDT):

The evolution of higher categories has been by means of the same

processes which have brought about the evolution of races and species.<sup>12</sup>

However, both Darwin and his followers have failed to understand and/or admit the critical difference—in fact, the unbridgeable gap—between variation within species and transformation from one life-form to another. The former is a manifestation of existing genetic variability in a species or population, and it is governed by the objective laws of molecular and population genetics. The latter requires the introduction of completely new genetic information, new blocks of genetic material, leading to increased complexity. The latter does not follow from the former.

The so-called *allopatric* and *sympatric* modes of *speciation*, whereby geographically or ecologically isolated populations with time become incapable of interbreeding, and thus are designated as separate species, do not lead to increased complexity. In fact, they decrease genetic diversity, due to fragmentation of the gene pool present in the original population.<sup>13</sup> Galápagos finches, studied by Darwin, are an example of allopatric speciation but not of an evolutionary event that involves the emergence of novel structures or functions. The same can be said about numerous other direct observations of speciation, such as those in plants and marine invertebrates.<sup>14</sup> Such observations are irrelevant when it comes to inferring origins of life-forms differing in degree of complexity.

While today it is becoming clear that Darwin's theory is unverifiable\* and extremely difficult to test directly,\*\* originally it could have been viewed as a genuine scientific theory, albeit a weak one because of

---

\* This means that we cannot directly reproduce and/or observe any of the events claimed by Darwinists to have occurred in the past.

\*\* To test the theory directly, we would need to make a prediction about the emergence of a novel trait in a population due to a particular selective pressure and then subject the population to the strong selective pressure. For example, a population of bacteria incapable of active motion could be subjected to selection in favor of active movement, i.e., flagellum development. If the population acquired the genetic material needed to support this new feature, the theory of Darwin would be unassailable. No such thing ever happens. However, it is always possible to say that more time is

its inherent difficulties in testing. This is because from it followed several important falsifiable predictions, which, if upheld, could provide circumstantial supporting evidence. They are

1. a common ancestor of all living things and common ancestors of major taxonomic groups, as well as innumerable transitional forms linking them to modern organisms, must have existed;
2. there should have been linear series demonstrating progressive development of complex biological features;
3. a random and spontaneous genetic mechanism capable of increasing the complexity of living organisms, i.e., of generating new genetic information, must exist;\*
4. since evolution is a blind, trial-and-error process, in genomes of living organisms there should have accumulated numerous errors that track their evolutionary history.

The first two of these predictions were formulated by Darwin when he wrote:

Lastly,... if my theory be true, numberless intermediate varieties, linking most closely all the species of the same group together, must assuredly have existed; but the very process of natural selection constantly tends ... to exterminate the parent forms and the intermediate links. Consequently, evidence of their former existence could be found only amongst fossil remains....

If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed, which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down.<sup>15</sup>

The last two predictions follow from the NDT,<sup>16</sup> since for natural

---

needed, thus making the theory almost impossible to test decisively. See Michael J. Behe, "Reply to My Critics: A Response to Reviews of *Darwin's Black Box: The Biochemical Challenge to Evolution*," *Biology and Philosophy*, no. 16 (2001), pp. 685–709.

\* For simplicity, we will define a unit of genetic information as a gene or a complex of genes that encodes a particular biochemical, physiological, anatomical, or morphological structure or function.



selection to cause an evolutionary change in a trait, variation in the trait must be genetically heritable. Also, among the natural properties of genomes there must be a capacity to generate, accommodate, and sustain both a functionally meaningful change and a benign error.

5. *"Facts" of Evolution; or, Can the Predictions Be Upheld?*

1. *Lack of clear common ancestors and transitional forms.* The first and most obvious place to look for facts supportive of the Darwinian view is the paleontological record. Darwin himself was keenly aware of this, and saw the absence of transitional forms in the paleontological data available at his time as "the most obvious and serious objection" to his theory.\* Yet, he believed that the problem was not fatal due to the imperfection of the fossil record. The general progression from less to more complex organisms in the fossil record was evident, and only forms linking these distinctly different organisms needed to be found.

As pointed out in the introduction (pp. 96–97 above), after 150 years of sifting through soil and cataloguing millions of fossil organisms, several persistent and striking properties of the paleontological record have emerged. One is the simultaneous appearance of nearly all known phyla (phyla represent major body plans), known as the Cambrian Explosion, which Darwinists estimate took place 540 million years ago. Others include the sudden as opposed to gradual appearance of most distinct life-forms, their temporal stasis (lack of change in any particular direction) over the period of their existence in the fossil record, and their sudden disappearance.<sup>17</sup> Referring to this pattern, Niles Eldredge\*\* once remarked: "It [evolution] never seems to happen."<sup>18</sup>

Essentially no new phyla have appeared in the purported half-billion years after the Cambrian Explosion. Those life-forms that have been found in the fossil record below the Cambrian layer—the so-called

---

\* See p. 525 above.

\*\* Niles Eldredge (born 1943) is a renowned American paleontologist, who, along with another prominent evolutionist, Stephen Jay Gould, proposed the theory of punctuated equilibrium in 1972. (See pp. 53, 53n, 96–97, 381–82, 381n, 382nn above.)

Ediacaran biota<sup>19</sup>—have little if anything in common with the Cambrian fossils, and their appearance and disappearance is likewise a mystery.<sup>20</sup> If we consider that the emergence of a body plan would represent a major evolutionary event, absence of transitional links between Ediacaran and Cambrian life-forms is inconsistent with gradual Darwinian evolution. With respect to the abrupt appearance of unique body plans during the Cambrian Explosion, it has been noted that

the traditional version of the theory of common descent apparently does not apply to kingdoms,... to many if not all phyla, and possibly also not to many classes within phyla.<sup>21</sup>\*

And that

microevolution provides no satisfactory explanation for the extraordinary burst of novelty during the late Neoproterozoic-Cambrian radiation ..., nor the rapid production of novel plant architectures ... during the Devonian ... followed by the origination of most major insect groups.<sup>22</sup>

Contrary to some claims,<sup>23</sup> at finer taxonomic levels the picture is no different. No unambiguous transitional forms are known for most classes of vertebrates. *Archaeopteryx*, for example, still touted as an important proof of evolution, has been long considered as an odd mosaic.<sup>24</sup>\*\* The reason for this is that its features are not truly transitional. Rather, the creature possessed perfectly developed feathers as do modern birds, along with such reptilian features as a long spinal tail and ribs without uncinat processes. Moreover, as Jeong Yul Kim and co-authors have reported, “a remarkably diverse avifauna,” including “shorebird-like” and “perching type” birds, has been found in geologi-

---

\* Our use of direct quotations from respected members of the scientific community here and below does not imply that the quoted authors necessarily reject the Neo-Darwinian Theory. Rather, it is to illustrate the sorts of problems that inevitably arise when evolutionary beliefs are forced upon observable data.

\*\* See p. 526n above.

cal layers classified as "lower Cretaceous," i.e., immediately adjacent to the layer with *Archaeopteryx* fossils (upper Jurassic).<sup>25</sup> There would have been no time for these birds to "evolve," had *Archaeopteryx* been indeed a transitional form.

Within orders of vertebrates, no clear transitional forms are evident either. In the amphibians there is "a lack of fossils that represent plausible ancestors" of the current three orders (Diego San Mauro et al.).<sup>26</sup> A similar picture is in the class of reptiles, where for example the order of turtles represents "a classic evolutionary problem: the appearance of a major structural adaptation [turtle shell]. The place of turtles amongst the other amniote groups is a classic question in systematics, due to the 'instantaneous' appearance of this evolutionary novelty" (S. F. Gilbert et al.).<sup>27</sup> A recent discovery in China of an ancient turtle named *Odontochelys*<sup>28</sup> only added to the confusion about the evolutionary origins of the order. The original authors interpreted their finding, which lacked the hard carapace, as an "intermediate step" toward the evolution of the modern turtle morphology. However, others<sup>29</sup> argued exactly the opposite, namely, that the *Odontochelys*' morphology "is not primitive but instead a specialized adaptation."<sup>30</sup>

Among the thirty-two orders of the class of mammals, none can be connected by undisputed transitional forms to a common ancestor. This means that the earliest fossils that can be unambiguously assigned to each order appear abruptly in the fossil record at the so-called Cretaceous-Tertiary boundary:<sup>31</sup> the time of the abrupt disappearance of most dinosaurs. The gradual evolution of such morphologically unique and structurally complex orders as chiropterans (bats) and cetaceans (whales and dolphins) would require a tremendous number of "steps" from a common ancestral form. Both were mentioned by Darwin in *The Origin of Species* as difficult questions. And both difficulties were discounted by him as having "very little weight."<sup>32</sup>\* Darwin simply used his imagination to concoct a series of fanciful steps by which each could have "evolved." Bats were supposed by Darwin to have

---

\* This is from the first and second editions of Darwin's *Origin of Species*, both published in 1859. The word "very" was removed by Darwin from later editions.—ED.

evolved from something akin to a flying squirrel. However, a century and a half later there is not a sign in the fossil record of the gradual development of the flying apparatus of bats, or, for that matter, of any flying animal: bird, reptile, or insect. In a review of bat "evolution," John R. Speakman wrote that, due to the sudden appearance of completely developed bats in the fossil record, "any attempts to reconstruct the manner by which their traits evolved are necessarily intellectual leaps in the dark."<sup>33</sup>

Similarly, speculating about whale evolution, Darwin wrote:

In North America the black bear was seen ... swimming for hours with widely open mouth, thus catching, like a whale, insects in the water. If the supply of insects were constant, and if better adapted competitors did not already exist in the country, I can see no difficulty in a race of bears being rendered, by natural selection, more and more aquatic in their structure and habits, with larger and larger mouths, till a creature was produced as monstrous as a whale.<sup>34\*</sup>

The story of whale "evolution" is another example of a series of intellectual leaps unsupported by convincing fossil evidence. Initially an extinct animal *Mesonyx*, thought to be a carnivore, was suggested as a terrestrial mammalian predecessor of whales. However, ancient whales\*\* were found in the same layers as *Mesonyx*, implying that the animal belonged to a "parallel line." More recently, however, it was reported that "paleontological information is grossly inconsistent with" molecular data,<sup>35</sup> and that the interpretation of the relationship between whales and *Mesonyx* is particularly unstable. Subsequently, supposed whale progenitors were assigned to the order of Artiodactyla (even-hoofed ungulates).<sup>36</sup> Presently two hypotheses on the relation-

---

\* This is from the 1859 editions of *The Origin of Species*. The text "If the supply ... as a whale" was removed by Darwin from later editions.—ED.

\*\* *Basilosaurus*—an extinct whale with miniature hind-legs that presumably functioned to support sexual organs—is presently the closest there is to a transitional form between whales and some other animal; for details, see J. Gatesy and M.O. O'Leary, "Deciphering Whale Origins with Molecules and Fossils," *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, 16 (2001), pp. 562–70.

ship between whales and ungulates prevail. The first hypothesis suggests that Artiodactyla is an independent evolutionary line parallel to that of whales (including ancient whales) and mesonychians. The second one suggests that Artiodactyla actually includes the whales and their sister-taxon of Hippopotamuses.<sup>37</sup> It is apparent that the “origin” of the cetaceans is far from being resolved.<sup>38</sup>

Darwin’s impression of differences among species as a sign of an actual evolutionary transition has both made a strong impression on generations of natural scientists and invoked vivid and persistent mental images. A great deal of effort has been invested into reconstructions of such transitions by looking for so-called missing links and evolutionary sequences leading up to modern taxa. However, since the Darwinian transition is unobservable in real time, the power of imagination has played a critical role in such reconstructions. By the admission of renowned anthropologist Ann Gibbons, nowhere has it had a bigger role than in devising the human ancestral tree, where just about every new fossil “shatters preconceived notions” of human “evolution.”<sup>39</sup>

One of the pioneers of such imaginative efforts was the German biologist and prominent fraud<sup>40</sup> Ernst Haeckel, whose drawings ostensibly illustrating parallels in embryonic development of major vertebrate classes have persisted in biology textbooks for over a century, despite having been exposed as fakes.<sup>41</sup> \* Being an avid supporter of Darwin and a believer in the evolution of humans from animals, Haeckel imagined a line of descent connecting humans with Asian apes via a missing link he called *Pithecanthropus*. He created the being—a hairy half-ape/half-man—on paper before any fossils were found. Subsequently the drawing literally became flesh on the handful of possibly unrelated bones found by Eugene Dubois in Indonesia in 1891.<sup>42</sup> From there, *Pithecanthropus* and other similar “creatures” walked into every biology textbook. The ensuing creation of the human ancestral tree (marred by several grand forgeries and deceptions: Piltown “Man,” Nebraska “Man”\*\*) produced a somewhat punctuated picture,<sup>43</sup> combining extinct apes (several species of *Australo-*

---

\* See pp. 92–93, 521–22, 521n, 633, 639 above.

\*\* See pp. 384, 384nn, 469, 577, 577nn above.

*pithecus*) and humans divided into four species. But it did not contain a clear line of descent, because of numerous overlaps among different hominid fossils in the fossil record.<sup>44</sup>

An anatomical feature that clearly separates humans from any mammal including apes is the ability to walk upright (bipedalism). This ability—along with the structure of feet, knees, and the base of the cranium—is correlated with the unique morphology of the vestibular (balance and orientation) system (inner ear). A careful analysis of fossil remains shows that the extinct apes, such as *Australopithecus*, even though some of them were labelled as *Homo*, walked on four limbs stooped forward in a manner similar to that of modern great apes. To put it simply, they had the skeleton of a modern ape. No forms with a transitional morphology of the vestibular apparatus are known.<sup>45</sup>

As regards the different “species” of *Homo*, one might first ask: How can one possibly define an ancient piece of bone as a species if (a) skeletal tissue responds plastically to the conditions under which an organism is developing (improved nourishment, for example, results in larger and thicker bones), and (b) the main defining feature of a species is its reproductive isolation? This difference between the biological and morphological definitions of a species is a classical conundrum of paleontology and one reason why molecular phylogenies are becoming the method of choice for studying “evolutionary relationships” (see below). Here at least one knows that molecular sequences do belong to distinct species. Evidence suggests that the so-called species of humans (*Homo erectus*, *H. neanderthalensis*, and *H. sapiens*) may be but variations and/or unique races. Such evidence comes from three directions. First, it is now acknowledged that people of modern and Neanderthal races interbred. The genetic difference between *H. neanderthalensis* and modern people, based on the analysis of sequences of nuclear DNA, is the same as, for example, that between the native inhabitants of Papua New Guinea and Thailand. Second, morphologically, *H. neanderthalensis* from Yugoslavia resemble Europeans, while *H. erectus* from China and Indonesia have commonalities with Asians and Australian aborigines respectively. Third, the period of coexistence of *H. erectus* and *H. neanderthalensis* with morphologically modern people ended only twenty thousand years ago according to the evolution-

ary/uniformitarian time scale.<sup>46</sup> Consequently, none of them is ancestral to another. Apes have always been apes and humans have always been humans.

Other evolutionary “lines of descent,” such as the sequence from Therapsid reptiles to mammals and the famous “horse series,” are simply series of animals with similar morphologies whose bones were found in different sedimentary layers that had nothing to do with each other either taxonomically or geographically.<sup>47</sup> Here similarity assumed to result from common descent is used to prove common descent. In fact, if one wished to show that bulldogs “evolved” from weasels it would be easy to do so by constructing an “evolutionary row” from a weasel to a stoat to a polecat to a cat to a bulldog. Likewise, had the platypus been found in sedimentary layers before its discovery in the wild (as did happen with the *coelacanth*—see p. 526n above), it could have been easily declared a missing link between birds and mammals. In this context it becomes clear why attempts to construct evolutionary rows leading to a turtle, bat, or whale have not worked so far. There are simply no animals living or extinct that would be structurally similar to these creatures, and consequently no evolutionary series can be created.

The current state of paleontological evidence relative to Darwin’s predictions about common ancestors and transitional forms can be summed up by quoting two prominent Darwinists, Eldredge and Tattersall:

That individual kinds of fossils remain recognizably the same throughout the length of their occurrence in the fossil record had been known to paleontologists long before Darwin published his *Origin*. Darwin himself ... prophesied that future generations of paleontologists would fill in these gaps by diligent search.... One hundred and twenty years of paleontological research later, it has become abundantly clear that the fossil record will not confirm this part of Darwin’s predictions. Nor is the problem a miserably poor record. The fossil record simply shows that this prediction is wrong.<sup>48\*</sup>

---

\* See also the statements by paleontologist David Raup on pp. 524–25n, 526n above.—ED.

Paleontological data are not the only source of evidence seriously undermining Darwin's theory. In recent years there has been a major upheaval and a great deal of confusion taking place in taxonomy and phylogenetics.\* The upheaval is connected to the advent of sophisticated techniques allowing for comparison of the molecular and genetic makeup of organisms. Some scientists have argued that paleontological data are too fragmentary and their taxonomic status is often too vague for the reconstruction of reliable "evolutionary" scenarios. It has been suggested that genetic data from living species are the only remaining and available evidence of the last common ancestor.<sup>49</sup>

It should be kept in mind that, in and of themselves, phylogenetic trees cannot prove biological evolution by descent because they assume it in the first place. Advancing them as "proofs" of evolution makes the reasoning perfectly circular, since an observable commonality of *design* in DNA (or morphology, behavior, or some other set of traits) is supplanted with the idea of the commonality of *descent*, which then is used as evidence of "evolutionary history." In other words, belief that commonality of design equals commonality of descent is deemed sufficient, and is the only "proof" of "evolution." Regarding such fallacious thinking, German paleontologist Oskar Kuhn wrote:

The similarity of forms is explained by evolution, and evolution in turn is proven through the grades of similarities. That here one has fallen victim to circular reasoning is hardly noticed; what one wants to prove, namely that similarity is based on evolution, is simply assumed, and then the different degrees in the gradation of the (typical) similarities are used as evidence for the truth of the idea of evolution.<sup>50</sup>

Nevertheless, biology textbooks often hail molecular evidence both as proof of evolution and as a line of evidence corroborating evolutionary scenarios inferred from paleontological data.<sup>51</sup> Such

---

\* *Phylogenetics* (Greek: *phylon* = tribe, race; and *genetikos* = relative to birth) is the study of similarity among various groups of organisms based on the assumption of evolutionary relatedness.



claims, however, are misleading because different molecular markers produce different “evolutionary trees” and contradict morphological and paleontological data.<sup>52</sup> For example, one molecular biologist wrote:

In another study, the mitochondrial cytochrome *b* gene implied a similarly absurd phylogeny of mammals, regardless of the method of tree construction. Cats and whales fell within primates, grouping with simians (monkeys and apes) and strepsirhines (lemurs, bush-babies and lorises) to the exclusion of tarsiers. Cytochrome *b* is probably the most commonly sequenced gene in vertebrates, making this surprising result even more disconcerting.<sup>53</sup>

The pattern of inconsistency among different phylogenetic trees is so widespread that among biologists one will say “true molecular phylogeny” only as a joke. The reason for this is that, as argued by Stadler and co-authors,<sup>54</sup> the Darwinian principle of gradual change, while applicable strictly to intra-specific variability, becomes fiction when one uses it to infer relationships among higher taxa.

Different molecular structures, just like different anatomical structures, simply display different degrees of similarity and thus project different phylogenetic relationships among taxonomic groups. Eugene Koonin writes about this phenomenon even more forcefully:

No intermediate grades or intermediate forms between different types are detectable.... The relationships between major groups within an emergent class of biological entities are hard to decipher and do not seem to fit the tree pattern that, following Darwin’s original proposal, remains the dominant description of biological evolution.... In each of [the] pivotal nexuses in life’s history the principal “types” seem to appear rapidly and fully equipped with the signature features of the respective new level of biological organization.<sup>55</sup>

2. *Irreducible complexity of complex biological systems.* When confronted with data, the first two predictions of classical Darwinism fail

miserably. There are a great deal of imaginary common ancestors and purported transitional forms but little conclusive evidence for real ones above the taxonomic levels of genus and family. One reason for this is that the anatomical, physiological, and biochemical complexity and complementarity we observe in living beings simply cannot develop gradually. Complex systems exist fully functional as complete packages of interdependent features. If any feature is missing from such systems, the systems cease to function and thus confer no survival advantage on the organism that bears them (see also p. 97 above). While Darwin thought that complex traits such as eyes might develop in a series of steps, he took this idea simply from the fact that different types of eyes exist in nature, each suitable for the environment inhabited by its owner.<sup>56</sup> In *The Origin of Species*, he identified a variety of animals known to have eyes ranging from a simple light-sensing spot to the vertebrate eye, and suggested that the evolution of the human eye might have proceeded in a similar manner. But human eyes consist of approximately forty basic anatomical components. Each of these components needs to be present at the same time and work together in a perfectly coordinated manner in order for us to see. This means that, anatomically, eyes are irreducibly complex.<sup>57</sup> They could not have “evolved” gradually by a tremendous number of transitional steps with dysfunctional “barely-eyes,” “quarter-eyes,” “half-eyes,” and “almost-eyes,” which would do no good to their owners. The fact that different types of simple and more complex eyes exist in nature cannot help explain away the issue of irreducible complexity for at least three reasons. First, it is believed that different types of eyes and even similar types of eyes in different taxonomic groups “evolved” independently (the same goes for many other complex structures: wings, echolocation apparatuses, etc.).\* That is, according to evolutionary constructs they are unrelated (analogous) traits, and each would have followed a unique and unknown “evolu-

---

\* Kenneth Weiss (professor of anthropology and genetics, Penn State University) writes: “There appear to be 65 or so phylogenetically independent forms of eyes” (Weiss, “How the Eye Got Its Brain,” *Evolutionary Anthropology*, no. 11 [2002], p. 215).

tionary” path.\* Second, even the simplest light-sensing organs are irreducibly complex in different ways. They are irreducibly complex not only anatomically, but—probably even more importantly—biochemically. Referring to the complicated sequence of biochemical reactions that must take place so that the light entering the eyes can become a nerve impulse, Michael Behe\*\* writes:

Now that the black box of vision has been opened, it is no longer enough for an evolutionary explanation of that power to consider only the *anatomical* structures of whole eyes, as Darwin did in the nineteenth century (and as popularizers of evolution continue to do today). Each of the anatomical steps and structures that Darwin thought were so simple actually involves staggeringly complicated biochemical processes that cannot be papered over with rhetoric.<sup>58</sup>

Other examples of irreducible complexity permeate every critical system and function of living creatures, including protein transport, blood clotting, the architecture and regulation of DNA, electron transport, telomeres, photosynthesis, joints, echolocation, and the flower anatomy of carnivorous plants.<sup>59</sup>

The universal unit of life, the cell, at its basic level of organization is itself irreducibly complex. All the parts of the cell are necessary to its functioning and replication. Nothing in a cell works until everything

---

\* In summarizing the findings of their study of arthropod compound eyes, Duke University biologists Todd H. Oakley and Clifford W. Cunningham write: “These results illustrate exactly why arthropod compound eye evolution has remained controversial, because one of two seemingly very unlikely evolutionary histories must be true. Either compound eyes with detailed similarities evolved multiple times in different arthropod groups or compound eyes have been lost in a seemingly inordinate number of arthropod lineages” (Oakley and Cunningham, “Molecular Phylogenetic Evidence for the Independent Evolutionary Origin of an Arthropod Compound Eye,” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 [2002], pp. 1426–30).

\*\* Michael J. Behe (born in 1952) is an American biochemist and intelligent design advocate. He is professor of biochemistry at Lehigh University in Pennsylvania and a senior fellow of the Discovery Institute’s Center for Science and Culture. He is noted for promoting the idea that many structures are too complex at the biochemical level to be adequately explained by mechanisms of population genetics.

works. The major macromolecules in living cells are proteins and nucleic acids. The main systems of a cell are the system of storage and transcription of information (DNA and RNA), the structural and maintenance system (enzymes and other proteins), the system of energy supply (ATP), and finally the system of homeostasis (cellular membrane). No biologically significant proteins or nucleic acids have been made by any experiments, such as those of Miller and Urey or others that followed.<sup>60</sup> In fact, instead of elucidating the initial steps of "prebiotic evolution," such experiments clearly demonstrated that biologically significant macromolecules cannot self-generate outside of a living cell.<sup>61</sup> The other critical implication of such experiments is that a cell or any of its constituent systems cannot evolve gradually. This is because, in order to work, each system of a cell requires other systems to be already present and functioning. DNA is replicated with the help of the very enzymes it encodes; proteins are encoded in DNA and are synthesised by protein complexes of ribosomes; membranes can only be synthesized on membranes, which again requires proteins and DNA encoding proteins; ATP is synthesized on membranes with the help of proteins, and its synthesis, as well as any other process taking place in a cell, requires ATP.<sup>62</sup> In the words of molecular biologist Michael Denton, "The complexity of the simplest known type of cell is so great that it is impossible to accept that such an object could have been thrown together suddenly by some kind of freakish, vastly improbable, event. Such an occurrence would be indistinguishable from a miracle."<sup>63</sup>

3. *Known genetic mechanisms do not lead to evolution.* The Neo-Darwinian Theory views an evolutionary change as resulting from the spontaneous generation of genetic variation via mutations and the fixation of variants in the population through natural selection and genetic drift. Before selection can determine the fate of a new phenotype, that phenotype must first be expressed.\* A heritable variation in a phenotype can only be achieved by a genetic mutation that has consequences on development. In principle, however, not

---

\* A *phenotype* is an observable feature or trait of an organism, which results from the expression of the organism's genes and the influence of environmental factors, and from interactions between the two.

just any mutation satisfies the requirements of the Neo-Darwinian Theory. To affect development in a progressive Darwinian way, mutations must be useful (positive) and they must introduce new functionally useful information into genomes. More specifically, they must produce or at least be capable of producing new functional genes. Mutations that simply reshuffle already existing genetic material (exon reshuffling, gene duplication, retroposition, mobile element insertion, lateral gene transfer, gene fusion, and back mutation) do not qualify as such because they only deal with genetic information that already exists. They produce nothing *de novo*. Moreover, in reality such perturbations of genomes are harmless only perhaps in bacteria. In organisms that are even slightly more complex, large-scale mutations or even point mutations occurring in critical genes are always deleterious and, as pointed out by Fr. Seraphim above (p. 528), often lethal. For example, duplication of chromosome 21 in humans causes Down syndrome. In vertebrates, point mutations in Hox genes\* lead to spontaneous abortions of embryos, while in arthropods mutations in these genes lead to growth abnormalities such as the famous phenomenon of antennopodia\*\* in fruit flies.

The objection can be raised here that, in fact, a few positive point mutations have been documented. The most commonly cited examples are the development of antibiotic resistance and ability to digest artificial substances in bacteria, development of insecticide resistance in insect pests, and the sickle-cell anemia mutation in the humans inhabiting equatorial Africa. These examples, however, are thoroughly irrelevant to the NDT, the main implication of which is a gradual

---

\* Hox genes are a particular group of genes, found in all multicellular organisms, which are responsible for patterning the body axis at the early stage of embryonic development. The Hox genes do not directly control the nature or shape of structures, but regulate the expression of a complex hierarchy of other genes that do so. By providing the identity of particular body regions, Hox genes determine where limbs and other body segments will grow in a developing foetus or larva. Although mutations in these genes are often invoked as a possible source of evolutionary novelty, in real terms mutations in Hox genes are very harmful.

\*\* Antennopodia is a mutation in fruit flies where, instead of the flies having antennae on their heads, they have legs.

increase in structural or functional complexity and the corresponding increase in the amount of information in the genome. These mutations, although positive under certain restrictive conditions, add nothing new to the genome. In fact they do the opposite. They damage the genome and, while providing a positive effect in one respect, they cripple the mutant forms in other important ways.

The development of drug and insecticide resistance in bacteria and insects and the emergence of the ability to subsist on new substrates in bacteria have common mechanisms. The mechanisms are DNA replication or transcription defects and loss of genetic information: something one might call *devolution* as opposed to *evolution*.

In the case of drug and insecticide resistance, genes coding for specific proteins—targets of the drug or insecticide agents—become damaged, leading to a simple amino-acid substitution in the respective proteins. The altered proteins lose their specificity, i.e., their ability to bind to a specific molecule. (As an analogy, if one were to file off the head of a Phillips screwdriver it would become less specific a tool.) As a result, the drug or insecticide molecules cannot attach themselves to their target protein. Consequently they can no longer disrupt the metabolism of organisms they have been designed to act against (i.e., the screwdriver head no longer fits the screw), and thus resistance emerges.

The consumption of new artificial substances (e.g., nylon) by bacteria works in a similar way. Point mutations may damage particular genes, with the effect that the enzymes these genes encode become less specific and thus capable of digesting a broader range of substances—albeit less efficiently. Alternatively, control proteins responsible for regulating the synthesis of enzymes or the transport of substances into the cell break down and the cell literally becomes flooded with either enzyme or substrate molecules. The lack of digestive efficiency is compensated for by the sheer volume of the enzyme or of the substrate it acts on. In laboratory conditions, such mutant bacterial cells can survive on the alien substrate by making the best of a bad job. Obviously this is a very wasteful process. It would be analogous to delivering a sample of merchandise to every house on the street just to hit the target house, because the street number in the address has been deleted. Cells of living organisms do not normally operate

this way. Because a fundamental function of most enzymes is to provide specificity by limiting the number of substrates they interact with, any loss of specificity in a real functioning organism does nothing but disrupt the operation of its systems. For example, drug-resistant bacteria have depressed growth rates, while insecticide resistant pests have acquired this resistance at the cost of a more sluggish nervous system.<sup>64</sup> Likewise, although humans suffering from sickle-cell anemia are resistant to malaria, they have this quality at the expense of a compromised integrity of their red blood cells.

Sickle-cell anemia is found in parts of Africa where malaria is also found. This genetic ailment is caused by a point mutation in the gene, which codes for the production of hemoglobin, the oxygen-carrying pigment in red blood cells. When these cells become distorted, they can no longer operate as normal red blood cells. Patients inheriting two copies of the defective gene usually die. In heterozygous patients—i.e., those who inherit the defect from only one parent—the healthy gene from the other parent enables the person to escape the more serious effects of this condition. People with sickle-cell anemia are resistant to malaria because, when invaded, their atypical blood cells collapse, destroying the developing parasite. There is good evidence that resistance to malaria increases the probability of survival and the propagation of one's genes in areas afflicted by this disease—that is, the trait is being selected for. Nevertheless, it is a defect, not an increase in complexity or an improvement in function.

These examples and the absence of examples to the contrary<sup>65</sup> suggest that random mutations cannot add novel information to a genome. A survey of publications in leading scientific journals over the past fifteen years by a Russian biochemist, A. N. Lunnyy, revealed that

in most cases genes that are called *new* are formed only from preexisting coding sequences ...; as an extremely rare exception, [they are formed] from non-[protein] coding sequences of coding genes.<sup>66</sup>\*

---

\* In some sense, the distinction between coding and non-coding sequences in the genome is becoming more and more irrelevant. This is evolutionist terminology,

This led the author to the following conclusion:

The emergence of ... complex and extensive genomes in the process of progressive macroevolution—accompanied by the spontaneous (although controlled by natural selection) augmentation of genetic information via the modification and amplification of already existing information—must, from the perspective of information theory and even simple logic, be deemed improbable.<sup>67</sup>

Not only do random mutations fail to add functional information in practice; they are also incapable of adding it in principle. This is illustrated by the simple analogy of a fully functional instruction manual or computer program, to which one cannot add information by randomly replacing letters, words, or pages in the text or computer code. Such additions will only make the manual confusing and cause the program to crash—as indeed happens with living organisms when their genetic code experiences mutations. Computer simulations also demonstrate that a simple genome cannot be made more complex via random mutations of nucleotides. German chemist and computer scientist Royal Truman ran computer simulations to test the possibility that random mutations can explain the emergence of novel information in a simple genome. He remarked:

Several factors would limit the possibility for random mutations in very small biological genomes to produce novel, complex functions.... Extrapolating to biologically reasonable settings suggests that Neo-Darwinian theory is incapable of explaining more than rather inconsequential changes in cellular processes.<sup>68</sup>

Examples of such “inconsequential changes in cellular processes” have been mentioned already: they include drug-resistance in bacteria

---

which is misleading because it implies that some (or in fact most) sequences in the genome serve no function, but are a by-product of evolution. The truth is that practically every sequence in the genome is *functional*, whether or not it expressly codes for proteins. See more on this on pp. 850–53, 852n below, where the problem of so-called junk DNA is discussed.



or malaria-resistance in people. Indeed, the only conceptually possible way to improve a perfectly functioning manual or program would be to add a subset of instructions in some coordinated fashion so that it would not interfere with already existing functional information. By analogy, the only way to “improve” a perfectly functioning organism would be to add a (modular) package of useful genes.<sup>69</sup> Obviously, such additions cannot work by single, random base-pair substitutions in the DNA, for they would have to perfectly match what is already in the genome. Such events would require a tightly coordinated coming into being of not one but dozens and hundreds of new functional genes, together with the genes coding for the associated biochemical infrastructure.

On the level of phenotypic expression, the changes would have to match the environment of the new organism. Considering the plethora of intricate and often mutualistic ways in which many species depend on each other in the real world,<sup>70</sup> if evolution were true, such additions would have occurred jointly among species locked in tight ecological relationships. Yet what we observe is the absence of gradual transitions not only among taxa but also among whole ecosystems.\*

In the face of these inescapable patterns, attempts have been made to explain the origins of complex organismal systems in such a way that bypasses point mutations altogether.<sup>71</sup> Suggestions have been made that major evolutionary events such as the Cambrian Explosion were achieved by large-scale genomic rearrangements such as the duplication of whole genomes (polyploidy) or of particular genes, especially those regulating development (Hox genes). These suggestions, however, are untenable. First, they do not address the cornerstone issue of how the purportedly duplicated genes emerged in the first place.

---

\* The authors of a recent publication on ancient ecosystems state that “studies of plant and animal assemblages from both the terrestrial and the marine fossil records reveal persistence for extensive periods of geological time, sometimes millions of years” (W. A. DiMichele, A. K. Behrensmeyer, T. D. Olszewski, C. C. Labandeira, J. M. Pandolfi, S. L. Wing, and R. Bobe, “Long-term Stasis in Ecological Assemblages: Evidence from the Fossil Record,” *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, no. 35 [2004], pp. 285–322).

(For example, describing the “evolution” of Hox genes, R. L. Carroll simply wrote that their origin was a unique phenomenon.) Second, genome duplication requires the preexistence of sophisticated biochemical pathways, which also have to appear somehow. Third, the pattern of hypothesized gene (genome) duplication does not match the pattern of morphological radiation. The authors of a recent article wrote:

Many have argued that genome duplication is a dominant factor in the evolution of complexity and diversity. However, a clear correlation between a genome duplication event and increased complexity and diversity is not apparent.... A causal link between any specific genome duplication event and increased species diversity remains elusive.<sup>72</sup>

The conclusion that random mutations cannot add functional genetic information is sound on empirical and theoretical grounds. As far as we can tell, genomes have always been degrading because of the accumulation of mutations. In humans, for example, due to the high rate and only very slightly deleterious effect of the majority of mutations, natural selection is incapable even of neutralizing the resultant degradation, let alone reversing it.<sup>73</sup> This process makes a major contribution to cancer, aging, and various heritable ailments.

Furthermore, it is a basic tenet of information theory that information only comes from an intelligent source. The existence of information implies both meaning and purpose. It implies that there is a source of information, a code, a language, and finally a receiver of information. This is the opposite of chance, which is the key underpinning assumption of naturalistic materialism in general and of Darwinism in particular.

Information is not the same as orderliness: a system may increase in order (such as in the transition from a liquid to a solid phase) but gain zero information. Although information, just like life in general, does not contradict physical and chemical laws, at the same time it cannot be deduced from them. The content of a book does not follow from the physical and chemical properties of the paper and ink. Likewise, the unique properties of DNA as a template of life do not follow

from the physical and chemical properties of its nucleotides. They follow exactly from the information-rich message it encodes.<sup>74</sup> The message written in the language of nucleotide sequences is so precise that it not only provides for a perfect co-functioning of all systems in the organism but also allows for a harmonious coexistence of multitudes of different organisms in biomes, ecosystems, and ultimately in the world at large. To quote the former director of the German Federal Physics and Technology Institute, Professor Werner Gitt:

A coding system always entails a nonmaterial intellectual process. Physical matter cannot produce an information code. All experiences show that every piece of creative information represents some mental effort and can be traced to a personal idea-giver who exercised his own free will, and who is endowed with an intelligent mind. *There is no known law of nature, no known process, and no known sequence of events which can cause information to originate by itself in matter.*<sup>75</sup>

If random mutations can only damage genomes, thereby increasing genetic entropy,<sup>76</sup> the inevitable conclusion is that evolution is not happening now and we are instead witnessing devolution and degradation, and that genomes as we see them now are not the product of the hypothesized mechanism of evolution. If evolution is not happening now, how can one infer its occurrence in the past? If its mechanism was different from what can be directly observed now, how can one invoke genetic mechanisms and processes observable in present-day populations to explain the emergence of new body plans or complex organs aeons ago?

Had the accumulation of functional complexity in living creatures been random, we would be witnessing around us a system in the state of flux and disarray. It would be nothing like the world most of us cherish so much: a masterpiece of harmonious, beautiful, and marvelously intricate interactions. Harmony and aesthetic beauty, just like information, cannot be produced by a random process.<sup>77</sup>

4. *"Junk DNA" is not junk.* Probably the strongest indirect argument presented by Darwinists in support of evolution, which until re-

cently appeared watertight, was the argument of non-coding DNA. Most eukaryotic (i.e., possessing a nucleus) genomes consist primarily of different types of repetitive DNA and so-called pseudogenes that do not code for proteins (up to 97% in humans). This DNA is often described as evolutionary junk: sequences that are hypothesized to have played a role in the “evolutionary” past of an organism but have lost their coding ability and thus their usefulness due to genetic damage. So-called junk DNA is also thought to include partially reproduced genes that were non-functional to begin with, i.e., copying errors. For example, in a recent apology for human evolution D. J. Fairbanks described “junk DNA” as follows:

Apparently they [repetitive DNA sequences] are just along for the ride, and most have been riding for a very long time. It is tempting to think of them as millions of ancient but now mostly benign parasites trapped within our genome. Some scientists have even called them “junk DNA,” implying that they are useless and, currently, harmless relics of evolution.<sup>78</sup>

How is “junk DNA” thought to have accumulated? Evolutionary scientists think of coding DNA as a document and “junk DNA” as marks left on the paper in the process of the document replication. Imagine a thousand photocopies of the original document, each taken from one another in sequence. Specks of dust, pieces of hair, and other neutral junk leave marks on photocopies and are transcribed in the process of multiplication. Once a piece of junk is photocopied, the mark becomes fixed on the copy and is passed along. These marks are not parts of the message, it is argued, for they code no information; but by looking at them one can tell the sequence in which the photocopies were produced.<sup>79</sup> Now, if this analogy is applied to living organisms—for example, humans and chimpanzees—that have similar non-coding DNA or “pseudogene” sequences in identical positions within their genome, one might assume that they have inherited them from a common ancestor. Thus, by comparing different pieces of this so-called evolutionary junk in genomes of modern organisms, it is argued, one can learn something about their evolutionary history. It can

also be reasonably argued that an organism loaded with various “useless and, currently, harmless relics of evolution” is unlikely to have been created by an intelligent agent.<sup>80</sup>

Recent research, however, demonstrates that the view of the repetitive DNA as “junk” is outdated and misguided, and that the photocopier analogy is most certainly false. What some evolutionary biologists refer to as “junk DNA” appears to be an integral and constituent part of the message encoded in the DNA and not something added by chance. After studying repetitive DNA in detail, one molecular biologist remarked:

Repetitive DNA acts like software insofar as it is encoded in the DNA sequence and is utilized by the cell many times to carry out defined routines.... Like software, repetitive DNA can control operations involving different data files. On the other hand, repetitive DNA also forms part of essential cellular machinery.... Indeed, we may come one day to regard erstwhile “junk DNA” as an integral part of cellular control regimes that can truly be called expert.... All structural varieties of repetitive DNA play significant roles in one or more categories of genomic tasks.<sup>81</sup> \*

Specifically, non-coding DNA plays numerous critical functions in genomic information management, organization, and architecture. This includes chromosome packaging and regulation of gene expression during embryonic development,<sup>82</sup> in which the non-coding DNA’s functions are in many ways analogous to the table of contents, page numbers, index, and bookmarks in a book.

Even more critically, “junk DNA” may be the key to encoding biological complexity.<sup>83</sup> Protein-encoding genes—which make up approximately equal amounts of DNA code in creatures as different as

---

\* More recent data indicate that the genome contains very little unused sequences and is, in fact, a complex, interwoven network. In this network, genes are just one of many types of DNA sequences that have a functional impact (“New Findings Challenge Established Views on Human Genome,” *NIH News*, June 13, 2007). See the ENCODE Project Consortium, <http://www.genome.gov/10005107>, and Jonathan Wells, *The Myth of Junk DNA* (2011).

humans, domestic chickens, pufferfish, mosquitoes, and the *Arabidopsis* plant—may not at all be what biologically differentiates humans from fish, and vertebrates from worms and mollusks. Rather, biological complexity increases with the amount of non-coding DNA in the total genome.<sup>84</sup> Upon closer examination, the “junk DNA” argument is nothing but a reenactment of the long-dead argument of vestigial organs. The question of how superbly intricate and complex arrangements of protein-coding and non-coding DNA—which translate into algae, flies, fish, and people—has emerged, and how it does what it does, remains unanswered. What does seem clear, however, is that “Darwinian evolution,” ostensibly driven by natural selection, has had little or nothing to do with it.\*

## 6. Conclusions

Summarizing the material presented above, three conclusions can be drawn:

1. Common ancestors and transitional forms between major taxonomic groups exist only on paper or in one’s imagination. Living creatures do not evolve in the Darwinian sense (gradually), nor is there a mechanism or even a plausible hypothesis describing how a major evolutionary transition could take place. In the absence of such understanding, writes professor of anthropology and genetics Kenneth M. Weiss, “any evolutionary reconstructions really are just-so stories in important ways,” since “we can always find a plausible adaptive explanation for any observation we make today.”<sup>85</sup>

2. The observation of similarity among living beings—genetic, biochemical, or morphological—is trivial. It would be difficult not to expect of creatures that breathe the same air, drink the same water, and consume the same basic nutrients to have a lesser or greater degree of similarity at all levels of biological organization. The pattern of this

---

\* Extended arguments about the impotency of natural selection are presented in David Berlinski, *The Devil’s Delusion: Atheism and Its Scientific Pretensions* (2008), pp. 193–98; and David Stove, *Darwinian Fairytales: Selfish Genes, Errors of Heredity, and Other Fables of Evolution* (2007), pp. 77–114.

similarity tells us nothing about their purported evolution if we do not assume evolution in the first place.\*

3. It is true that populations of species are not immutable: they indeed can and sometimes do change with time, adapting to environmental alterations. People have known about this plasticity of plants and animals for millennia and have utilized it in the process of artificial selection. Any such change, however, happens only to a limited degree, and this change involves a loss (not gain!) of genetic complexity. Genomes are not free to evolve (that is, degrade) endlessly. There are impregnable genetic constraints on the extent of changes that can occur in the genome and can be expressed phenotypically before the organism breaks down.<sup>86</sup>

Despite the glaring contradictions between the Neo-Darwinian Theory and empirical data,<sup>87</sup> Darwinism in its modern form continues to thrive, being presented to society and taught in schools and universities worldwide as the explanation of how this world has come to exist. The latest editions of biology textbooks and the latest reviews on the state of knowledge in the area of evolutionary synthesis claim that “the basic tenets” of Darwinism have not merely survived but “are as vibrant and robust as they ever were.”<sup>88</sup> This belief in Darwinian evolution does not seem to be shaken even by a number of recent discoveries which are bizarre and perplexing from the evolutionary perspective. For example, the age of the maternal line of humankind determined by *direct* calibration of a molecular clock appears to be only 6,500 years,<sup>89</sup> and dinosaur bones that are thought to be 70 million years old contain elastic soft tissue and remnants of blood vessels and cells.\*\* Such discoveries and numerous other disagreements of the theory with the data are simply

---

\* An excellent essay on this topic, “The Evolution of the Long-Necked Giraffe (*Giraffa camelopardalis* L.)—What Do We Really Know?,” has been written by W.-E. Lönnig (<http://www.weloennig.de/Giraffe.pdf>).

\*\* Mary Schweitzer and co-authors reported in a 2005 issue of *Science* that they have discovered well-preserved soft tissue in a 70 million-year-old *Tyrannosaurus rex* leg bone found in Montana. The researchers believe that this elastic soft tissue may contain remnants of blood vessels and cells. The fact that any soft tissue survived without becoming mineralized is attributed to an as-yet-unknown process of fossilization. (M. H. Schweitzer, J. L. Wittmeyer, J. R. Horner, and J. K. Toporski,

ignored,<sup>90</sup> explained away,<sup>91</sup> or, if that is not possible, labelled “problems” and “biological errors.”<sup>92</sup>

### 7. *Kicking against the Pricks\**

Israeli biophysicist Lee M. Spetner once remarked that Darwinists routinely postulate historical events that cannot possibly be verified. It seems, in fact, that all the key arguments that would prove their theory valid are based on postulating events that are inherently not observable. Such unique, once-in-history events include but are not limited to the very emergence of life (i.e., the formation of the first prokaryotes); the emergence of eukaryotes; the development of canonical and noncanonical genetic codes; the appearance of photosynthesis and mitochondria; the origin of vascular plants; the beginning of sexual reproduction; the appearance of Hox genes; the Cambrian Explosion of phyla; the radiation of all the major classes and even orders of the animal kingdom; and finally the phenomena of human morals, intelligence, and psychology. Because of their uniqueness, all these events—with their mechanisms and the conditions under which they took place—by default fall outside of the realm of science. This is because, to quote the judge in a recent evolution-versus-intelligent-design court trial in Pennsylvania,

science is limited to empirical, observable and ultimately testable data. Anything that can be observed or measured is amenable to scientific explanation.<sup>93\*\*</sup>

When it comes to ideas about the ultimate origins of living things

---

“Soft-tissue Vessels and Cellular Preservation in *Tyrannosaurus rex*,” *Science*, vol. 307, no. 5717 [March 25, 2005], pp. 1952–55).

\* Cf. Acts 9:5, 26:14.—ED.

\*\* Ironically, the quoted definition was used as a pretext to block an optional introduction to intelligent design from a high-school biology program on the grounds that the material was unscientific. At the same time, the judge and plaintiffs remained completely blind to the fact that the same definition also places evolutionism in general and Darwinism in particular outside of the field of scientific explanation.



on the planet, one can call them hypothetical, theoretical, probable, possible, or anything else, but that does not change the fact that they can be neither observed nor replicated. Empirical scientists, who are 100 percent committed to a naturalistic explanation of the origins of life in all its diversity, cannot but admit that anything we can now learn by trying to model major evolutionary events in the laboratory or on living species can be only *vaguely comparable* to what might have happened originally. Thus, any “knowledge” or “facts” about origins is necessarily a conjecture if not pure fantasy. In this context, the philosopher Eric Voegelin very pointedly observed:

Biological theorists don't know that Kant has analyzed why one cannot have an immanentist theory of evolution. One can have empirical observation but no general theory of evolution because the sequence of forms is a mystery; it just is there and you cannot explain it by any theory. The world cannot be explained. It is a mythical problem, so you have a strong element of myth in the theory of evolution.<sup>94</sup>\*

We can only study and explain phenomena which are either directly observable or for which a clear mechanism exists. Population genetics—which deals with changes in allele frequencies, gene flow, genetic drift, trait (gene) fixation, and point mutations in natural or laboratory populations of plants and animals—does just that. It has identified and studied in depth the mechanisms regulating how existing genetic diversity is doled out among populations, how it affects their fitness and adaptability to the environment, and how it gets degraded by mutations and lost as isolated populations decline in size. Molecular genetics has done the same by looking at the organization, maintenance, and expression of genetic information within individuals. However, these mechanisms have decidedly nothing to do with the origins of these organisms *per se*. One cannot explain the origin of a car

---

\* Eric Voegelin (1901–1985) was a German philosopher who subsequently immigrated to the United States. He worked in the areas of the philosophy of politics, history, and consciousness.

by investigating how fuel passes from the tank into the combustion chamber and what the molecular structure of the body paint is.

Trying to explain patterns that transcend the boundary of direct observation and experimentation, Darwinism in its current form has become a semi-religious, if not a fully religious, belief. Over the years it has been adjusted and readjusted so many times that it has reached the stage at which any—even diametrically opposed—observed patterns are touted in support of evolution.\*

As mathematician and philosopher David Berlinski has noted, the NDT has been made so bendable as to seem to be able “to confront any contingency with unflagging success.”<sup>95</sup> Indeed, to an evolutionist (in the words of evolutionary biologist Theodosius Dobzhansky), “Nothing in biology makes sense except in the light of evolution.”<sup>96</sup> The only unfortunate detail is that the emperor of evolution is naked, for it has no materialistic mechanism. Historically, having failed the original falsifiable predictions, the theory has been simply adjusted *ad hoc* to escape refutation as new observations have accumulated. Thus, evolution as a theory has become unfalsifiable at the expense of its scientific status, following in this respect in the footsteps of Marxism and Freudianism.<sup>97</sup>

“Evolution is a fact”: this mantra is repeated often enough to make one wonder if those who repeat it are actually trying to convince themselves.\*\* One can only wonder why this is done despite all the opposing evidence. The attractiveness of Darwinism as an explanatory framework has become so great that its ideas have penetrated virtually

---

\* For example, the universal genetic code once was presented as the best proof of evolution. Today, when it has become clear that other, so-called noncanonical codes exist, this too has been attributed to evolution. See details in R. D. Knight, S. J. Freeland, and L. F. Landweber, “Rewriting the Keyboard: Evolvability of the Genetic Code,” *Nature Reviews, Genetics*, 2001, no. 2, pp. 49–58.

\*\* A lot of such perplexingly self-delusional pomp, where critical questions are answered simply by rewriting them as statements, can be found in Richard Dawkins, *The God Delusion* (2006). For example: “Darwinian evolution proceeds merrily once life has originated. But how does life get started? The origin of life was a chemical event.... However improbable the origin of life might be, we know it happened on Earth because we are here” (2008 ed., pp. 164–65).

every branch of science, including sociology and psychology. An editorial in *The Economist*, covering the triumph of Darwinism, stated:

Of the three great secular faiths born in the nineteenth century—Darwinism, Marxism and Freudianism—the second died swiftly and painfully and the third is slipping peacefully away. But Darwinism goes from strength to strength.<sup>98</sup>

Commenting on the attempt to squeeze human origins into the Procrustean bed of neo-Darwinism, British moral philosopher Mary Midgley has written:

Evolution is the creation myth of our age. By telling us our origins it shapes our views of what we are. It influences not just our thought but also our feelings and actions in a way which goes far beyond its official function as a biological theory.<sup>99</sup>

One could think that this universal propagation of a clearly mythical idea is simply a classical situation between successive scientific paradigm shifts. After all, for a long time scientists believed that adult mice evolve from dirty laundry and wheat placed in a dark storeroom. According to Thomas Kuhn,\* contrary to popular conception, typical scientists are not objective and independent thinkers.<sup>100</sup> \*\* Rather, they are conservative individuals who accept what they have been taught and apply their knowledge to solving the problems that their theories dictate. Perhaps today individual scientists cannot extricate themselves from the prevailing evolutionist worldview (at least not without great personal difficulty and intellectual struggle), and so they continue in-

---

\* Thomas Samuel Kuhn (1922–1996) was an American intellectual who wrote extensively on the history of science and developed several important notions in the philosophy of science. He presented the idea that science does not progress via a linear accumulation of new knowledge, but instead undergoes periodic revolutions which he called “paradigm shifts,” in which the nature of scientific inquiry within a particular field is abruptly transformed.

\*\* On the role of biased modes of thinking in science, see p. 666n above.—ED.

interpreting everything within the established framework, despite the facts. However, considering the surge of excited tribute to Darwin in the mass media in recent years, together with successful attempts to thwart presentation of any opposing ideas in public education, the answer may lie not so much with the attitudes of the scientific community as with the condition of the society at large. As Mary Midgley has very perceptively noted:

In our own culture, where many people officially have no religion at all, and those who have can chop and change, new faiths have much more scope.... They are hungrily seized on by people whose lives lack meaning.<sup>101</sup>

To make sure that this meaning is never found in anything other than banal materialism, Darwinism is aggressively advertised and pushed down people's throats from the school bench without allowing for any alternatives. The geneticist Richard Lewontin has been extremely forthright about this faith in materialism:

Our willingness to accept scientific claims that are against common sense is the key to an understanding of the real struggle between science and the supernatural. We take the side of science *in spite* of the patent absurdity of some of its constructs ... *in spite* of the tolerance of the scientific community for unsubstantiated just-so stories, because we have a prior commitment, a commitment to materialism.... Moreover, that materialism is absolute, for we cannot allow a Divine Foot in the door.<sup>102</sup> \*

Putting a Christian perspective on societal attitudes toward “scientific knowledge”—or rather on attempts of the scientific establishment to monopolize the very meaning of life, man, and the world—St. Hilarion Troitsky, Archbishop of Verey, pointedly remarked:

When questions concerning our very life are dealt with, science can-

---

\* See more of this quotation on p. 101 above.—ED.

not be independent and free. It only gives people the answer they wish to hear.<sup>103</sup>

Apparently, today human society has reached a stage of moral “evolution” at which it wants to hear that it consists of mere intelligent animals, and consequently that it has the right to behave as such. How sad—for, indeed, “man, being in honor, did not understand; he is compared to the mindless cattle, and is become like unto them” (Ps. 48:21).

### Acknowledgments

Comments from Drs. Dean H. Kenyon and Anna Radovic greatly improved an initial version of this appendix.

Glory be to God for all things!

**Yuri Zharikov** has studied biology at four universities in Russia, Canada, and Australia, and has a Ph.D. in zoology from the University of Queensland in Brisbane, Australia. He currently works for the Federal Parks Canada Agency and is responsible for ecological monitoring and conservation in one of the Canadian national parks. He has authored and coauthored twenty scientific publications on bird behavior, ecology, and conservation.

## APPENDIX FOUR

# *The Age of the Earth and the Rate of Geological Processes*

By Alexander Lalomov, Ph.D.

### *1. Introduction*

FROM the middle of the nineteenth century, the Earth sciences came to be dominated by the opinion that geological processes have occurred at a very slow rate over long geological periods. The first estimations of the age of strata were obtained by dividing the visible thickness of strata by the sedimentation rate of modern analogues. By this method dates of millions of years were obtained, which was later confirmed with radioisotopic analyses.

Many people believe that all the available geological data unequivocally specify an ancient age for the rocks that compose the planet Earth. Hence, the position of evolutionist geology is considered singularly scientific and authentic, and the supporters of evolution try to present the geology of catastrophism and of a young Earth as the vestige of a pre-scientific period in geology.\* Does this point of view have a real basis in modern science?

Why, to begin with, must geological age be emphasized when considering evolution? Charles Darwin himself wrote: "The belief that species were immutable productions was almost unavoidable as long as the history of the world was thought to be of short duration."<sup>1</sup> In short, if Darwin's contemporary Charles Lyell had not advocated the

---

\* Although many geologists in recent decades have embraced neocatastrophism, the basic assumption of uniformitarianism, together with the evolutionary-uniformitarian time scale of billions of years, continues to prevail.—ED.

assumption of an Earth-age much greater than some thousands of years (as had previously been accepted), no one would have even begun to consider biological evolution. Thus, a great Earth-age is a prerequisite for entertaining the possibility of biological evolution. On the other hand, if the young-Earth theory is authenticated, the theory of biological evolution becomes nothing more than a series of speculative, theoretical constructions that have no relation to reality.

Have the conclusions of Charles Lyell been scientifically proved today, after geologists have collected many field and experimental data?

The conventional scientific view expressed today is that the Earth is close to 4.6 billion years old and the universe about 14 billion years old. These estimates are based primarily on the ratio of different radioisotopes in the Earth's rocks and in meteorites, and on the implications of stellar and cosmological models.

## *2. Radioisotope Dating*

For the purpose of dating rocks, geologists refer to the effect of the radioactive decay of unstable isotopes. What is the nature of this method?

Many chemical elements have two forms: stable and radioactive. The second form exists for a limited time and changes into another (stable) form. The time span during which half of the atoms change is called the "half-life period." The initial isotopes are called "parent," and the final ones "daughter."

There are two main methods of isotope dating. The first one is based on the transformation of the radiogenic isotope carbon-14 into stable nitrogen-14.  $^{14}\text{C}$  has a half-life period of about 5,500 years. The carbon-14 method, which is used for dating organic materials, cannot be applied to old samples (older than 50–60 thousand years), so it is not relevant to our subject of old-Earth dating.

The second set of methods is based on metal isotopes, such as uranium-thorium-lead, rubidium-strontium, rhenium-osmium, potassium-argon, and some other systems. These isotopes have very long half-life periods (up to billions of years); therefore, the dating of very old samples appears possible.

This set of methods is based on the following suppositions:

1. We know the initial value of the “parent” and “daughter” isotopes.
2. The rate of decay is known and constant during the period under consideration.
3. The minerals represent closed systems, i.e., no elements escaped or entered the minerals.

If all three conditions are taken into account and the present-day content of the “parent” and “daughter” isotopes is measured, it is possible to calculate the time that has passed from the formation of the mineral. In most cases, the results of such methods of dating rocks provide extremely long ages—millions or billions of years. Followers of evolutionary theory often invoke these methods as proving the ancient age of the Earth and its strata. But is the “radioisotope age” the same as the real age of the rocks? This depends on the correctness of the assumptions. How do we check the assumptions?

### *3. Checking Radioisotope Dating*

The best and most certain way of checking any instrumental method of measurement is to compare the results with samples whose values are known. For example, in checking scales we should put on them weights of known values. If we put on one gram but the scales show us one ton, we have grounds to think that something is wrong here in spite of guarantees from the producer of the scales.

Hence, for an indubitable check of radioisotope dating we need to test rocks whose age is known for certain. The problem, however, is that there are no such samples of rocks millions and billions of years old—the age of historically registered rocks (for example, the lavas and tuffs of the Vesuvius volcano that fill the ancient Roman cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum) does not exceed a few thousand years. Therefore, there is no possibility of directly checking radiometric dating within the million/billion-year time scale.

What about checking the method with young rocks of known ages? The conventional K-Ar (potassium-argon) dating method was applied to the 1986 dacite flow from the new lava dome at the Mount St. Helens



volcano. The different mineral concentrates of this 10-year-old rock gave "ages" of from 0.34 to 2.8 million years.<sup>2</sup> Apparently, the rock contains much more of the daughter isotope Ar than could have appeared as a result of radioactive decay during the span of 10 years. What is the reason for the excess Ar? The K-Ar method presupposes that the gas Ar evaporates from liquid lava (similar to bubbles in an opened bottle of mineral water); therefore, all the Ar that is found in the lava is supposed to be of radiogenic origin. Apparently, it is not a true assumption that there was a zero content of the daughter isotope Ar in the lava when it became solid. One is led to conclude that the initial content of Ar was not zero, but was dependent on the depth at which the minerals were formed. Thus, the real age of the lava is significantly younger, and the "radioisotope age" is a function not of age but of thermodynamic conditions. This fact should be taken into account with K-Ar dating, especially of recent volcanic rocks: samples with millions of years of "radioisotope age" could be tens or hundreds of years old in reality.

So we see that, at the very least, sometimes the assumption of a known initial value of isotopes is not true. This effect of excess Ar in modern volcanic rocks is forgotten, however, when great ages are necessary for the concept of evolution. For example, the dating of a skeleton of *Australopithecus afarensis* (an ancient ape which has been proposed as our ancestor) at about 3.5 million years by means of K-Ar dating of the overlying volcanic tuff layer is supposed to determine the real age of the fossil ape. If we take into account that this age could be overestimated by many orders of magnitude (as in the case of the lava dome of the Mount St. Helens Volcano), the ape could be seen to have lived hundreds or thousands of years ago, and the fanciful nature of the evolutionary conception of man descending from apes will be obvious even for laymen.

Sometimes we can check isotope dating when the real, absolute age is unknown but the relative age is obvious. For example, the Grand Canyon of the Colorado River has a complex of different rocks.\* Everyone agrees that the Precambrian metamorphic rocks buried below

---

\* See the figures in Steven A. Austin, ed., *Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe* (1994), pp. 13, 73, 126.

the Canyon floor are the oldest. Most conventional geologists believe that the Precambrian rocks are more than 600 million years old and are probably closer to 2,000 million years old. These rocks contain the diabase sills and Cardenas Basalts. The next rocks to be deposited were the Palaeozoic and Mesozoic sandstones, shales, and limestones that now compose the Canyon walls. Later (from 70 to 40 million years ago according to the conventional view) the Colorado Plateau rose and the present erosion period began; and about 1 million years ago the present depth of the Canyon was reached. The Quaternary lava flows of the Uinkaret Plateau constitute the youngest igneous deposit. They came from a volcano that erupted after the Canyon had acquired its modern appearance, spilling over the north rim of the Canyon and even blocking the Colorado River. This was not more than 5,000–10,000 years ago. Thus, by a comparison of the radioisotope ages of the oldest and youngest formations (Precambrian and Quaternary), we can test the reliability of radioisotope methods.

The diabase sills and Cardenas Basalts were dated by the K-Ar and Rb-Sr (rubidium-strontium) methods at 800–1,370 million years old, which roughly agrees with the supposed age (see Table). Most interesting is the dating of the basaltic rocks of the Uinkaret Plateau. While the K-Ar “age” varies from 0.01 to 117 million years, the Rb-Sr “age” is 1,270–1,390 million years. The “more accurate” isochron age was reported to be 1,340 million years by the Rb-Sr method and 2,600 million years by Pb-Pb (lead-lead) method.<sup>3</sup> So, the youngest Grand Canyon rocks (the Uinkaret basalts) and the oldest (the diabase sills) are of the same radioisotope “age.”

Conventional geologists explain these extremely old “ages” of recent lavas by appealing to the origin of the lavas, which were melted from the old magma source material. Hence, the assumption of a zero content of daughter isotopes at the moment of the formation of the studied rock is again incorrect. When the real (or relative) age of the rock is known, a reasonable explanation of the discrepancy will be proposed; however, if the isotope dating is the single source of information about the real age, it will be considered as reliable.

The special isochron method is called upon to eliminate errors of both the unknown initial content of the isotopes and the migration of

**Table. Checking radioisotope dating**

Rocks and minerals	Known or supposed age	Radioisotope age (million years)		
		K-Ar	Rb-Sr	Pb-Pb
Grand Canyon, Colorado (Austin, <i>Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe</i> , 1994)				
Quaternary basalts of Uinkaret Plateau	Not more than 10,000 years	0.01–117	1270–1390	2600
Precambrian Cardenas Basalt	More than 600 million years *	791–853	980–1100	
Precambrian diabase sills	More than 600 million years *	914–954	850–1370	
Lava Dome of Mount St. Helens Volcano (Austin, "Excess Argon within Mineral Concentrates from the New Dacite Lava Dome at Mount St. Helens Volcano," 1996)				
Porphyritic dacite	1986	0.35		
Feldspar-glass concentrate	1986	0.34		
Amphibole concentrate	1986	0.9		
Pyroxene concentrate	1986	2.8		
Lava flows of Mount Ngauruhoe, New Zealand (Snelling, "The Cause of Anomalous Potassium-Argon 'Ages' for Recent Andesite Flows at Mount Ngauruhoe," 1998)				
Andesite lava	1949, 1954	0.27–3.5		

\* According to the conventional geological time scale

chemical elements in the rock after their formation. But as we see in the case of Uinkaret basalts, this method can result in considerable errors.

Such discrepant data are widespread in geological research. Conventional geologists realize the defects in radioisotope dating. As the Russian geologists Khomichev and Sidoras observe:

The defects of isotopic-radiometric dating are clearly seen in the analysis of available dating of objects whose geological age is reliably established.... Geologists should not blindly trust results that are unfortunately widespread now. Geological supervision and rea-

soning should manage the process of the interpretation of isotope dating. A critical attitude to the results of isotopic-radiometric research is obligatory.<sup>4</sup>

What is implied by “geological supervision and reasoning”? Potassium-argon isotope dating of the Jurassic rocks of the Caucasus Mountains varies from 18 to 278 million years; the Rb-Sr isochron method provides ages of 18–55 million years,<sup>5</sup> but the “correct” age of these rocks, 170–205 million, years was determined on the basis of fossils found nearby. The conventional age of the fossils corresponds to the assumptions of evolution.\*

A reference cut (stratotype, sample slice) of Riphean strata in the Ural Mountains (the stratigraphic age of these rocks is about 1,500 million years) was dated with the K-Ar method at 400 million years. Because this “age” is too young for evolutionary theory (Riphean rocks contain fossils of unicellular organisms only, but evolutionists affirm that 400 million years ago fishes had already appeared), the K-Ar dating was considered wrong and was explained as the result of a metamorphic event that changed the ratio of the parent and daughter isotopes.<sup>6</sup> Thus, the concept of evolution is given much more significance than isotope dating.

The well-known Russian geologist Sergei V. Meien writes:

Quite often the radiometric “absolute” time scale is represented as an external scale in relation to a sequence of layers. It is impossible to agree with this ... not only because of the technical imperfections of “absolute” dating, but also because dates are considered only if they do not conflict with the temporal relations of actual geological bodies.<sup>7</sup>

Thus, radioisotope dates are considered “correct” only if they do not conflict with evolutionary paleontological dating or with the principle of superposition (in the case of inviolate strata, the lower layer is

---

\* On how evolutionary assumptions influence the dating of geological strata, see also pp. 371–72n, 523n, 530n above and pp. 878–80 below.—ED.

older than the overlying one). “Wrong” dates, on the other hand, usually fall outside the scope of even technical papers.

#### *4. Possible Reasons for Large Concentrations of Daughter Isotopes*

However, even if radioisotope dating very often looks like a “random-number generator,” in which anyone can find suitable data, the total quantity of daughter isotopes is too large for rocks which, according to the Biblical chronology, appeared only thousands of years ago—too large, that is, if one assumes (1) that there was a zero content of these daughter isotopes in the beginning, and (2) that the decay rates have been constant. An examination of these two assumptions can help us to explain the conflict between the Bible and the conventional geological chronology.

##### *Constancy of the decay rates*

Most scientists believe that decay rates did not change through the ages, in spite of the impossibility of knowing this for certain.

It is hypothesized by the RATE\* group that at some time in the past much higher rates of radioisotope decay have occurred, leading to the production of large quantities of daughter products in a short period of time. It has been suggested that these increased decay rates may have been associated with the rock-forming processes on the early Earth, and are possibly one of the results of God’s judgment upon man following Creation.<sup>8</sup>

In studying the diffusion of helium (He) that had been produced through nuclear decay in mineral zircon, the RATE scientists determined helium diffusion rates through minerals under various conditions. Their data indicated that the amount of helium in rocks today would not be as high as it is if the helium had been produced by nuclear decay over millions of years. If, on the other hand, the helium had been produced within the last several thousand years, it would be

---

\* RATE is an acronym applied to a research project investigating radioisotope dating, sponsored by the Institute for Creation Research and the Creation Research Society. It stands for Radioisotopes and the Age of The Earth.—ED.

expected to be retained in the rocks as observed. The high retention of helium suggests to us and many other creationists that the helium has not had time to diffuse out of the zircons—that accelerated nuclear decay produced over a billion years worth of helium only thousands of years ago. Such accelerated decay could reduce the radiometric time scale from gigayears down to months.

The RATE group also conducted a literature search for evidence and models of accelerated nuclear decay and adapted it to a creationist worldview when appropriate. They found increasing evidence that nuclear decay can vary radically in response to changes in cosmological “constants” and environmental effects. They associated other likely effects with Biblical statements and observational data.

When the RATE group studied isochron discordance, they found that, although significant discordance exists between the K-Ar, Rb-Sr, Sm-Nd, and Pb-Pb radioisotope methods, each method appears to yield concordant “ages” internally between whole rocks and minerals. It is argued, therefore, that only changing radioisotope decay rates in the past could account for these discordant isochron “ages” for the same geologic event.

The Ukrainian physicist Olkhovsky<sup>9</sup> has observed that values of 10–20 billion years for the age of the universe and of 5–10 billion years for the age of the Earth have been obtained by the nuclear-chronometry method with reference to long-living  $\alpha$  (alpha)- or  $\beta$  (beta)-radioactive nuclei-chronometers, considering the decay of radioactive nuclei only from their ground states. It is known, however, that during the nucleo-synthesis processes not only the ground states but also the excited states of nuclei-chronometers are being formed. From the excited states these radioactive nuclei are decaying by several ( $\alpha$ -,  $\beta$ -,  $\gamma$  [gamma]- etc) channels, and the half-life periods of any of them are by many orders of magnitude less than billions of years (up to  $10^{-13}$ – $10^{-9}$  sec). Therefore, consideration of only the ground states of radioactive nuclei in the nuclear-chronometry method gives only the upper limits of all possible measurements, which can be very far from the reality. More correct estimations of the age of the universe and the Earth (after the end of the formation of nuclei-chronometers) can perfectly well give more modest values (not even more than

around 10,000 years) instead of the usually cited values of several billion years.

*The initial content of parent and daughter isotopes*

When a parent isotope decays into a daughter isotope, the initial concentration of the daughter isotope may affect the estimate of time since the process started. As we see in dating the lava dome at the Mount St. Helens Volcano and the Uinkaret basalts, the assumption of a zero content of the daughter isotope at the time of the solidification of the rock is not true, so the age is overestimated by many orders of magnitude.

Snelling<sup>10</sup> reported on obtained K-Ar model ages for recent (less than 60-year-old) andesites collected from Mount Ngauruhoe in New Zealand.\* Dates younger than 0.27 to 3.5 million years could not be obtained, even from splits of the same samples from the same flow, the explanation being variations in the radiogenic <sup>40</sup>Ar content in excess of the "zero-age" amount. It was concluded that this excess <sup>40</sup>Ar had been inherited by these magmas during their genesis in the upper mantle.

From these studies it may be possible to infer how mixing occurs in a magma chamber, and to demonstrate that the radioisotopic composition of crustal rock may reflect characteristics of the magma sources in the mantle rather than the ages of the intrusion.

Very often the original isotopic content of the rock is determined according to the evolutionary model of the formation of the solar system and the Earth, which allegedly condensed from a primordial cloud. Hence, meteorites and cosmic dust are seen as examples of the makeup of the Earth's initial material. The difference in the isotopic content of meteorites and Earth rocks is considered to be the result of radioisotopic decay. For example, the method of radioisotope dating proposed by Holmes and Houtermans is based on the assumption that any lead (Pb) consists of the sum of the radiogenic and original isotopes. At the same time, the content of the original lead in Earth rocks

---

\* These andesites were formed from lava flows at Mount Ngauruhoe, which is an active volcano.—ED.

is believed to be equal to the lead content of iron meteorites—the least radioactive rock of the solar system.<sup>11</sup> Thus, the main assumption of the dating method is based on the evolutionary model. Therefore, it is no wonder that the dating does not contradict the concept of evolution.

If we propose that the solar system and the Earth are not of naturalistic origin, but were suddenly created with their present-day ratio of isotopes, any isotope dating would lose meaning. Thus, the basis of old-Earth dating is rooted in the fields of philosophy and worldview.

Do other geological data correspond to isotope dating?

### *5. The Rate of Sedimentation Processes*

Radioisotope dating provides very old ages of geological strata, measured in millions and billions of years. Very often it contradicts sedimentological data.

There are many facts about the speeds of sedimentation and other features of the deposition process in the monograph of the Russian geologist Sergei I. Romanovsky, *Physical Sedimentology*.<sup>12</sup> He writes that geologists try to resolve the controversy between “absolute dating” and sedimentological data with the hypothesis of latent gaps in sedimentation which did not make marks in the sedimentary sequence:

Even in monotonous limestone thickness there are latent gaps in sedimentation (diastremes). A significant part of the time responsible for the formation of the sequence belongs to these gaps. However, having no opportunity to give even approximate estimates of time for these gaps of sedimentation, geologists are compelled to shut their eyes to this problem.<sup>13</sup>

In oceans, the significant part of time belongs to gaps in sedimentation.... Erosion cannot be considered as the main reason for the incompleteness of the sequence, though other reasons cannot be determined either. Submarine geologists have thought up a successful detour around this difficult problem, having called these time gaps “non-sedimentation periods.” Thus the geological record ...



fixes short intervals of activity divided by considerably longer intervals of inactivity.<sup>14</sup>

Thus, the real time represented in the geological record, which can be the object of scientific research, is an insignificant part of the age interval attributed to the strata by a geochronological time scale. All the rest of the time consists of gaps in sedimentation. Moreover, sometimes geological evidence for the gaps is completely absent.

What is the quantitative estimate of the ratio of periods of gaps to periods of deposition? Romanovsky writes:

Let a series correspond with ... 3–3.5 million years. The series includes 1,000 elementary cycles of turbidites.... If the formation of one cycle takes 20–30 hours, the entire series is formed in 30–40 months. The pure time of sedimentation is only 0.0001% of the stratigraphical time for the formation of the series. It follows that the entire series was deposited, geologically speaking, instantly.<sup>15</sup>

The opinion of Romanovsky is corroborated by another well-known Russian geologist, the above-mentioned Sergei Meien:

Because of the wide development of latent gaps,... in conditions of shallow seas, for example, quite often an insignificant part of the total time of sedimentation (0.01–0.001%) is documented.... Huge latent gaps are also marked in deep-water ocean deposits.<sup>16</sup>

In short, the real features of sedimentary strata which are visible and available for research constitute evidence of brief and intensive deposition. Significant gaps in sedimentation, which exceed the duration of deposition by thousands and millions of times, are in a category of the invisible and intangible, and are beyond the limits of scientific research.

Using the inferred ratio of hiatuses to periods of deposition, we obtain the real time of sedimentation: the age of the Earth as documented in sedimentary layers. Inasmuch as the time of sedimentation is approximately one millionth (0.0001%) of the time represented by

the strata according to the uniformitarian time scale, we may infer that the real age is about one millionth of the uniformitarian age (i.e., a few thousand years). This is precisely what the Biblical chronology and young-Earth catastrophists affirm.

On the one hand, diligent and qualified researchers (Meien and Romanovsky being undoubtedly among of them) mark the fast, catastrophic character of observable sequences of sedimentary rocks. On the other hand, the duration of strata deposition according to the uniformitarian geological time scale is measured in many millions of years. Being strict adherents to an ancient age for the Earth and observing this discrepancy, modern geologists are compelled to resort to hypotheses about the existence of huge “non-sedimentation periods.” But how can something invisible and not observable, which has no marks in the geological record, be the object of scientific research?

There are numerous examples of the discrepancy between the actual sedimentation duration of deposition and the stratigraphic “age” based on radioisotope dating. Based on the analysis of tidal cycles, Kulyamin and Smirnov established that the pure deposition period of Cambrian-Ordovician sandstones in the Baltic region is surprisingly short (approximately 170 days), whereas the stratigraphic time interval of the sequence is believed to be 20–30 million years.<sup>17</sup> Study of analogous sediments in the adjoining St. Petersburg district also showed that the pure deposition time of the formation did not exceed 100–200 years.<sup>18</sup> The reconstruction of the paleohydraulic conditions of Jurassic conglomerates in the Crimean Peninsula (Black Sea) leads to the conclusion that the 800-meter sequence was deposited during a time interval not longer than 24 months.<sup>19</sup>

It is possible to continue to list such examples, but even these are enough to show that sedimentary data very often contradict radioisotopic “age.”

### *6. The Rate of Formation of Mineral Resources*

The basic applied task of geology is prospecting for mineral deposits; therefore, many theoretical constructions are most important from the perspective of their advantage for prospecting purposes. The au-

thentic reconstruction of geological history (and the definition of the velocities of geological processes in particular) allows the construction of a correct prospecting technique. Conversely, an incorrect representation of the history of the Earth can entail negative economic consequences.

Let us consider the rate of the formation of various types of mineral deposits in light of the latest scientific data.

### *Placer deposits*

Placer mineral deposits are concentrations of heavy minerals (gold, platinum, zircon, minerals of titanium, diamonds, etc.) in modern sediments and consolidated sedimentary rocks. Sometimes it is possible to calculate the time of the formation of the deposits on the basis of the rate of modern processes (the main principle of the modern geological method is "The present is key to the past"). This research demonstrates that the necessary time for the formation of the coastal marine placers (concentrations of heavy minerals in sedimentary rocks) of northeastern Asia is a few thousand years, which contradicts the evolutionary time scale but agrees with a post-Flood duration according to creationist dating.

In some cases there is an opportunity to study the quantity parameters of the placer-forming processes and to estimate the time of the placer's formation. Such work was done for the Val'kumei submarine tin placer.

The placer is located in the coastal zone of Chaun Bay—a shallow gulf of the East Siberian Sea, closed from three sides. The source of tin is confined to the Val'kumei granite intrusion, which is taking place directly in a coastal zone. According to the evolutionary time scale, the exposure of the granites on the surface and the erosion of the tin veins began in Miocene times (about 25 million years ago), and modern marine environments appeared about 5 million years ago. Knowing the volume of tin in the deposit, the rate of erosion and the content of tin within the source, and also making a correction for the crushing of particles and the dispersion of part of the metal from the zone of the placer (these losses are insignificant, as the reservoir has weak wave dynamics and practically a closed contour), we can calculate the time

necessary for the formation of the placer. Generally, this task is similar to defining the time needed to fill a pool, if the pool's volume and the flow-rate of water into the pool are known.

The calculations have shown that, according to modern parameters, the top (coastal submarine) part of the placer could have been generated in 2–4 thousand years rather than 5 million.<sup>20</sup> The specification of the data, entered into account, can entail some change in the received sizes, but the distinction (by three orders of magnitude) between the real and the stratigraphic age of the placer can hardly be overcome. The assumption that during the formation of the placer the velocity of the processes or the content of the tin in the source could have varied considerably does not find confirmation in actual geological material.<sup>21</sup>

### *Iron-manganese nodules (IMN)*

At the bottom of modern seas and oceans there are rounded balls or crusts composed of oxides of iron, manganese, and many other metals. Now the extraction of these minerals has only begun, but their overall volume is huge, and it is supposed that in the future IMN will have a considerable role in the economy of our planet.

The determination of the rate of IMN formation is interesting not only with regard to theoretical positions, but also from the practical point of view: the economic estimation depends on the rate of growth of the nodules. How it is possible to measure the velocity of their formation?

Frequently IMN are formed on fragments of shells, teeth of sharks, and microscopic particles of meteoric substance: these are the centers (nucleuses) on which layers of oxides and hydroxides of metals, contained in sea water, begin to accrue. If we determine the age of the nucleus of a nodule, and then divide the thickness into this age, we can estimate the rate of growth of the nodule (in cases where this process occurs continuously rather than at regular intervals).

Originally, estimations of the growth rate of IMN were made on the basis of the application of the isotope <sup>224</sup>Ra, which was contained in fragments of shells inside the nodules. Using this method, a growth rate of about 1 mm in 1,000 years (0.001 mm per year) to 1 mm per

100,000 years was obtained.<sup>22</sup> The application of paleontological data (the dating of teeth of sharks and other fossils contained in the nucleuses of the nodules) has given comparable results, as the data of the same radiometric analyses underlie the dating of fossils.

At the same time, due to rare and unique finds, the opportunity has arisen to measure the growth rates of the nodules not indirectly (through paleontological radiometric dating), but directly: during the study of bottom sediments nodules were found that had formed on splinters of artillery shells from the First and Second World Wars.<sup>23</sup> In these cases the growth rate was measured from 0.6 up to 1 mm per one year, that is, 3–5 orders of magnitude higher than the rate received by the indirect route.

Research by Russian geologists revealed nodules that had grown on a screw made of stainless steel or on a cap of a bottle of the Finnish beer "Karjala."<sup>24</sup>

All these data allow the determination of the real growth rate and correspondingly the age of IMN. Since the maximum size of the nodules usually does not exceed 30 cm in diameter, the real age is not more than few thousand years.

In the artificial reservoirs of Siberia the registered rate of IMN growth is not less than 1.7–1.8 mm per year; in the lakes of the Karelian Isthmus the rate is up to 5 mm per year. In laboratory experiments, iron bacteria form the micronodules during a few weeks.<sup>25</sup>

It is quite probable that the growth rate of IMN is not uniform everywhere in the world's oceans: in each case it depends on the basic nodule-forming components in the water above the floor or within the deposit, and also on the electrochemical and, probably, biological properties of the surfaces on which the deposition of oxides of iron and manganese occur. But thus it is necessary to note that the direct methods of measurement specify significant growth rates; indirect radiometric and paleontological methods essentially underestimated these parameters, which occurred owing to an overestimate of the age of the nodules.

This implies that the "absolute" geochronological scale constructed on radioisotope dating and associated paleontological data does not reflect the real age of the deposits and overestimates it by a few orders of

magnitude. It results not only in a wrong reconstruction of the geological history of our planet, but also in mistakes in the economic estimation of deposits: the new data allow us to assume that the deposits of IMN are dynamic and renewable resources, which can be formed or restored during a short time. The high rate of IMN formations and their limited distribution testify to the youth of these formations (no more than several thousand years) on the ocean floor.

### *Petrol and gas*

There is no need to explain the importance of issues related to petroleum. Both policies and economies in the second half of the twentieth and the beginning of the twenty-first century are defined by this word. As the technology of controlled nuclear fusion (thermonuclear synthesis) is now only in the developmental stage (in the opinion of Zhores Alferov, winner of the Nobel Prize in physics, industrial thermonuclear power stations could appear not earlier than in the middle of the century), and other alternative methods for energy production hardly play an essential role in the power balance, hydrocarbons will remain the main source of energy for our civilization for many years to come. In this light, it is clear that the question of the velocity of oil generation goes far beyond the limits of simple scientific curiosity.

The "organic" theory of the origin of petroleum now prevails. According to this point of view, petroleum and gas have a biogenic origin. They were formed from the remains of dead organisms which were subsumed through geological processes into Earth's crust. Subsequently, the formed fluid oil and gas moved and collected in geological structures called traps. According to this view, the formation of hydrocarbon deposits requires a time interval of millions of years or more.

The first problem with the theory of "ancient hydrocarbon deposits" is the presence of strata pressure in hydrocarbon-bearing deposits. In real conditions, practically all sedimentary rocks have porosity and fissuring. It is possible to assume that, over millions of years, even with the most insignificant allowance for the factor of filtration, hydrocarbon fluid and gas should have moved to overlying formations with smaller pressure by filtration. In natural conditions, oil and gas usually

are under high pressure right up to their intensive flowing from wells. This is an argument for the young age of hydrocarbon deposits.

Experts in petrol prospecting specify the impossibility of the creation of an effective search model under the assumption of the long and slow generation of oil over millions of years.<sup>26</sup> In their opinion, as long as we base models on the standard millions-of-years stratigraphic geochronological scale, we will search for petroleum by means of a random grid of wells. The creation of an effective model of hydrocarbon formation is possible only on the basis of the assumption of its fast and recent origin.

In recent years, facts have been amassed which put in doubt the great age of petroleum deposits. First of all, there are numerous examples of a high rate of natural renewal of stocks of petroleum and gas, in places where deposits have been exploited over the last 10–50 years.<sup>27</sup> Secondly, there is the presence in oil of the radioactive isotope  $^{14}\text{C}$ , which could not have been retained in detectable quantities longer than 60,000 years.<sup>28</sup>

If the formation of petroleum and gas deposits really occurred over tens or hundreds of millions of years, it would be impossible to notice the natural renewal of the extracted stocks during two or three decades, as takes place in practice. On the contrary, the fact of the increase of these stocks, and also the detection in the oil of short-lived cosmogenic isotopes, is evidence that the hydrocarbon deposits have begun to be formed rather recently (no more than 40,000 years ago), and continue to be formed now.

### *7. Paleontology and Stratigraphy*

The theory of evolution is so closely bound with paleontology and stratigraphy that quite often these disciplines support each other without any external criteria. Sometimes it is extremely difficult to understand: either the theory of evolution is based on the sequence of fossils fixed in the geological record, or the geological layers are dated on the basis of an evolutionary biostratigraphic time scale. Thus, it is necessary to define what is primary in science, and to what it testifies.

What does modern stratigraphy tell us? The geologist Sergei Meien comments:

Because of the latent gaps, there is a phenomenon of “stratigraphical condensation,” when one layer contains fossils of different stages.<sup>29</sup>

Comparison of local scales ... reveals identical events located in an identical sequence. The events forming ... different sequences are rejected.<sup>30</sup>

Depending on what stratigraphic features we involve in the analysis, we can find both convertibility and irreversibility in any sequence of events.<sup>31</sup>

Numerous cases are known when dating by means of ammonites has led to such contradictions relative to other groups of fossils that they were neglected completely.... Similar sins are behind every single large stratigraphic group of organisms.<sup>32</sup>

Thus, the paleontological data (as with “absolute” dating, as noted above) are taken into consideration only if they correspond to the theory of biological evolution or the principle of superposition. The data that contradict these criteria are ignored.

Many creation geologists believe there is an order to the fossils in the sedimentary sequence, but in contrast to evolutionists they attribute such distribution of fossils mainly to ecological factors. While opponents have made the accusation that such arguments are unscientific, modern stratigraphy has established that, in the words of Meien,

moments of occurrence and the disappearances of taxons in the history of the Earth are essentially imperceptible.... In fact, all paleontologically established borders cannot therefore be considered as “evolutionary.” Their paleontological substantiation is in fact ecological.<sup>33</sup>

In light of all of the above, the next conclusion is very logical:



It is especially surprising that its union with biology has not prevented stratigraphy from developing.... This union is the reason for the chaos in many stratigraphic conclusions, for, when the debatable rules of biology have been transferred to stratigraphy, they have usually been transformed into doctrines.<sup>34</sup>

We have no right to found the entire methodology of stratigraphy on such a shaky basis as the theory of evolution.<sup>35</sup>

It is remarkable that these words belong not to a creationist but to a well-known Russian uniformitarian geologist. Thus, since evolution without stratigraphy is an unscientific fiction, at present it is possible to conclude that the theory of evolution is based on an ideological foundation to an extreme degree.

In continuing to develop scientific ideas, the geologists Meien and Romanovsky go further and recognize the necessity to acknowledge (as a minimum) a right of existence to the creation-catastrophic approach in geology. Based on obvious evidence for extremely fast sedimentation in the geological history of the Earth, Romanovsky poses a question:

Does this mean the revival of the long-forgotten scientific theory of geological catastrophism? It is impossible to revive it in its previous form, but in any case we should recognize that the theory has a reasonable foundation.<sup>36</sup>

Professor Meien expresses his point of view even more categorically:

However, it is surprising but necessary to recognize that the creation-catastrophic doctrine\* did an absolutely helpful service for stratigraphy. It is difficult to imagine the way of development of stratigraphy if from the very beginning it had been based on Darwin's transformism.<sup>37</sup>

---

\* I.e., the creation-catastrophe model that prevailed before the general acceptance of the evolutionary-uniformitarian model of Darwin and Lyell.—ED.

Thus, conscientious investigation of sedimentary strata leads the researcher to recognize a foundation for a catastrophic history and young age of the Earth. Despite the fact that neither Meien nor Romanovsky reject the uniformitarian doctrine of an old Earth, their particular conclusions contradict their foundational assumptions.

### *8. Conclusion*

Summarizing all of the above, it is possible to say:

1. studies of the velocity of sedimentation and of the formation of mineral deposits provide evidence for a very fast (incompatible with millions and billions of years) deposition of layers;
2. "absolute" radioisotope dating does not give us authentic results;
3. old-age dating of the Earth and the universe is based on the philosophical assumptions of the concept of evolution.

Thus, numerous data on the velocity of the formation of sedimentary strata and mineral deposits indicate the discrepancy between the existing standard geochronological scale and the real results of the study of natural objects. Therefore, not only do we see a distorted picture of the past of our planet, but, in being tied to erroneous conclusions about the prevalence in the past of slow geological processes, the science of mineral deposits does not always have adequate models for carrying out its basic tasks.

The principles on which the modern stratigraphic scale was created, as has been shown by experimental research in sedimentology,<sup>38</sup> require essential reconsideration. They no longer answer a modern level of geological knowledge and are atavisms, introduced from the seventeenth to the nineteenth centuries. This conclusion follows both from the numerous sedimentological facts as a whole and from the science of mineral deposits in particular. The prevailing long-ages geochronological scale is closely connected with the evolutionary hypothesis concerning the origin of the universe, the solar system, and the life and biological variety on our planet. If the time scale is shortened, the hypothesis of evolution will lose a major factor: the millions

and billions of years that are so necessary for spontaneous transformations “from a molecule of hydrogen up to a man” to appear plausible.

**Alexander Lalomov** has a Ph.D. (*Kandidat nauk* degree) in geology from the Russian National Institute for Ocean Geology, St. Petersburg, and is director of the Geological Research Laboratory ARCTUR in Moscow, Russia. He has authored and coauthored fifteen scientific publications. He is executive secretary of the Moscow Society for Creation Science, and the publisher and senior editor of the Russian-language journal *Sotvoreniye* (Creation). He also coordinated the Russian-language creation video *The Stones Cry Out: Catastrophism in the Geology of Crimea*.

# *Suggested Resources*

By the editor

*Bibliographical information on all the materials listed below can be found in the bibliography. In cases where an article or book is available both in printed form and online, references to the printed version are listed below, while references to both versions appear in the bibliography. In cases where an article is available only online, references to the online version are to be found both below and in the bibliography.*

## I. PATRISTIC SOURCES

WHEN WRITING on the Patristic understanding of Genesis and creation, Fr. Seraphim had to translate many Patristic sources from existing Russian translations. Since his repose in 1982, several of these sources have been published in English translation, including the works on Genesis by Sts. Ephraim the Syrian and John Chrysostom. English-speaking disciples of the Holy Fathers now have at their disposal a wealth of material by which to deepen their understanding of the origin of man and the universe.

As initial reading, we would recommend the following Orthodox Patristic commentaries on Genesis, all of which are now available in English:

1. *Hexaemeron* by St. Basil the Great (FC, vol. 46; and NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 8);
2. *Hexaemeron* by St. Ambrose of Milan (FC, vol. 42; and NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10);
3. *Commentary on Genesis* by St. Ephraim the Syrian (FC, vol. 91); and
4. *Homilies on Genesis* by St. John Chrysostom (FC, vols. 74, 82, 87).

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

The continuation of St. Basil's *Hexaemeron*, entitled *On the Origin of Man*, has also been published in English translation since Fr. Seraphim's repose, and can be found in *St. Basil the Great: On the Human Condition* (St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, Popular Patristics Series, vol. 30, 2005). This work treats not only the creation of man, but also the condition of man and the world prior to the primordial fall.

Among other Patristic writings related to Genesis which have been published in English translation following Fr. Seraphim's repose, we cite the following as being especially pertinent:

1. *Genesis 1–11*, Ancient Christian Commentary on Scripture: Old Testament, vol. 1 (2001). A valuable contribution to the study of Patristic teaching on Genesis, this volume presents a verse-by-verse commentary on the first eleven chapters of Genesis, quoting passages of various Christian writings from the first ten centuries after Christ. Edited by an Orthodox priest and Patristic scholar, Fr. Andrew Louth, under the general editorship of Thomas C. Oden, the book quotes from many authors who are saints of the Orthodox Church, others who are respected Church writers but not venerated as saints, and yet others whose teachings have been condemned as heretical by the Church. (The Orthodox reader, of course, will do well to note these distinctions.) In the book's introduction, the editors acknowledge their debt of gratitude to the "massive labors" of Fr. Seraphim Rose in presenting the Patristic interpretation of Genesis, since his work directed them to Patristic passages they "otherwise would have bypassed" (p. lii).

2. St. John Chrysostom, *Eight Sermons on the Book of Genesis* (2004). This short work comprises the homilies that St. John Chrysostom gave on Genesis during Great Lent in A.D. 386. (The larger series of sixty-seven homilies—the *Homilies on Genesis* mentioned above—was delivered later, in 388 or 389.)

3. *Questions on Genesis* by Blessed Theodoret, in *Theodoret of Cyrus: The Questions on the Octateuch*, vol. 1 (2007). This work provides detailed answers to many questions related to the Genesis narrative.

4. *The Homilies* of St. Gregory Palamas (2009). Homilies 16 and

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

31 are of special interest to those studying the Patristic interpretation of Genesis, since they deal at length with the entrance of death (both spiritual and bodily) that resulted from the fall of man, and show the inextricable connection between this and the redemption of the world through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

5. *On the Cosmic Mystery of Jesus Christ: Selected Writings from St. Maximus the Confessor* (St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, Popular Patristics Series, vol. 25, 2003). This selection of chapters from St. Maximus' *Ambigua*, *Ad Thalassium*, and *Opuscula* contains reflections on the beginning and end of all things, as well as on the consequences of the fall of man.

6. St. John Chrysostom, *On Virginity*, in *On Virginity, Against Re-marriage* (1983). St. Chrysostom here provides further illumination on the state of mankind before the fall.

Many more Patristic writings related to Genesis, published both before and after Fr. Seraphim's repose, are listed in the bibliography of the present book, where the names of saints of the Church are highlighted in boldface type. Those wishing to undertake further study of the Patristic sources may also refer to the bibliography in *Genesis 1–11*: the aforementioned first volume of the Ancient Christian Commentary on Scripture series.

One important Patristic source related to Genesis was translated and compiled by Fr. Seraphim himself: *The First-Created Man* by St. Symeon the New Theologian (originally published in 1979 under the title *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption*). In his endeavor to confirm his contemporaries in the true teaching on the beginning and final aim of human existence, Fr. Seraphim included those writings of St. Symeon which dealt with the state of Adam in Paradise, his transgression, the redemption of mankind through Jesus Christ, and the future transfiguration of the world. As Fr. Seraphim pointed out in his introduction:

Orthodox Christians today all too often have rather vague notions of the future age of blessedness which is the goal of our Christian life on earth; various chiliastic heresies and ideas, promising some kind

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

of “paradise on earth,” are very much in the air today and exert much influence, often unconsciously, on Christians who are not fully aware of their Faith and its goal. Bound up with this, and often largely to blame for it, is a poor knowledge of the *beginnings of man* and the universe—the creation, the first-created world, Adam and his fall; the agnostic and atheistic philosophies of beginnings so common today have done much to confuse in this regard even well-meaning Orthodox Christians.

The authentic Orthodox Patristic view of man’s beginning and end is thus sorely needed to put in order the disarray of private opinions about these matters. St. Symeon’s Homilies are one of the primary sources of this view.

And yet, St. Symeon speaks with such boldness and assurance on these subjects that one may stop and ask: how does he know all this? We have become used to a “knowledge” based on speculation and guesses, particularly on subjects as remote from ordinary experience as the first-created world and the future age. Today’s scientists make their speculations on the beginnings of man and the universe based on uniformitarian projections from their present fragmentary discoveries and imperfect knowledge; today’s “theologians” (even many who are Orthodox) usually make just as speculative projections based on their imperfect reading of the book of Genesis and perhaps some Holy Fathers or some poorly assimilated scientific information. But this is all the sphere of imperfect human wisdom, a mixture of knowledge and ignorance; how, then, does St. Symeon give us the teaching which is authentically Christian, and not a mere result of speculation and guessing?

St. Symeon speaks from divine revelation. First, his basis is always scriptural—but we are astonished to see a depth of meaning in his use of scriptural quotations which we would never have seen by ourselves. And this is because, second, he speaks *from personal experience*.

After relating how Orthodox Holy Fathers such as St. Symeon were able to speak about the beginning and end of all things through prophetic Divine vision, Fr. Seraphim goes on:

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

St. Symeon is one of the Church's great seers of these treasures of faith; he speaks of them with such certainty precisely because he has seen them. His profound homilies on Adam and the future age are of special value to Orthodox Christians because they give the theological foundation of the Christian life of struggle: the original state of man from which Adam fell tells us of our deepest nature, of which our present fallen nature is a corruption that is to be overcome; and the future state of blessedness is the goal to which our Christian struggle is aimed, and to which we can attain, by God's grace, even despite our fallen state.

Fr. Seraphim's translation of St. Symeon's homilies might be regarded as a companion volume to the present book.\*

Together with the primary Patristic sources, we recommend the valuable study *Irenaeus on Creation: The Cosmic Christ and the Saga of Redemption* by Hieromonk Irenaeus (M. C. Steenberg) (2008). In a detailed, penetrating manner, this book explores the second-century teaching of St. Irenaeus of Lyons on creation and on the first eleven chapters of Genesis. The author reflects on St. Irenaeus' protology as an intrinsic part of his Christocentric vision, and at the same time discusses the teaching on creation of even earlier Fathers, such as St. Justin Martyr and St. Theophilus of Antioch.

For an overview of the Orthodox theology of creation, we recommend *Orthodox Dogmatic Theology* by Protopresbyter Michael Pomazansky (chapter 3, "God and the Creation"), and *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church* by Vladimir Lossky (chapter 5, "Created Being," and chapter 6, "Image and Likeness"). Both these books are noted for their faithful presentation of Patristic teaching.

---

\* Fr. Seraphim translated and made selections from the 1890–1892 Russian edition of St. Symeon's homilies, which in turn had been translated by St. Theophan the Recluse from the Greek edition of 1790. The latter is a compilation of passages by St. Symeon, primarily from his *Ethical Discourses* and *Catechetical Discourses*, sorted according to various themes and translated into eighteenth-century Greek by Hieromonk Dionysios Zagoraïos. Both the *Ethical Discourses* and *Catechetical Discourses* are now available in their entirety in the English language (see the bibliography).



## II. SCIENTIFIC SOURCES

The materials listed in this section are the work of scientists and thinkers associated with the intelligent design (ID) and creation science movements,\* as well as Orthodox Christian scientists and thinkers who adhere to the Scriptural-Patristic view of origins.

The most helpful intelligent design websites are those of the Access Research Network ([www.arn.org](http://www.arn.org)) and the Discovery Institute ([www.discovery.org](http://www.discovery.org)). Among the many creation science websites, those of Creation Ministries International ([www.creation.com](http://www.creation.com)) and the Institute for Creation Research ([www.icr.org](http://www.icr.org)) have the best selection of archival and up-to-date material. Many of the books and DVDs listed in this section are available from the above websites. On Russian websites, see pp. 894, 907–8 below.

### *1. Critiques of Biological Evolutionism*

1. *Biological Evolutionism* by Constantine Cavarnos (2nd edition, 1987). This book by a contemporary Greek Orthodox thinker places evolutionism in its historical context and includes a refutation of it by the twentieth-century luminary St. Nectarios of Pentapolis.

2. *Unlocking the Mystery of Life* (DVD, 2002). This hour-long film is highly recommended as an introduction to the scientific aspect of the creation/evolution debate. It chronicles the beginning of the ID movement, and also tells the revealing story of how Dr. Dean H. Kenyon of San Francisco State University—one of the world's leading chemical evolution theorists and co-author of a best-selling textbook on the chemical origin of life—came to disbelieve in evolutionary theory through an honest examination of mounting evidence from molecular genetics. With the help of computer animation, the film explores

---

\*The ID movement, as we have noted, limits its position to stating that living things show the empirical marks of intelligent design, while creation science takes the broader position of upholding the Biblical understanding of creation and history, including the age of the earth. See the editor's preface, pp. 47–49, 54–60, 59n, 62, 72–75, 73n above.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

the amazing inner workings of the living cell, and demonstrates unmistakable evidence of intelligent design in the densely packed and elaborately detailed assembly of information in the DNA molecule. It is truly awe-inspiring to contemplate in this way the wondrous biological machines and information processing systems that God has created within living creatures.

3. *Not by Chance! Shattering the Modern Theory of Evolution* by Lee Spetner (1997). This important work by an Israeli biophysicist presents powerful evidence against evolutionism from the hard science of molecular genetics. Dr. Spetner demonstrates that, contrary to neo-Darwinian claims, mutations acting together with natural selection cannot produce a man from a molecule over any length of time, since mutations do not increase functional genetic information but rather result in a loss of such information. He then goes on to posit that the variations which do occur within each kind of organism are the result of “triggers” or “cues” which a “biological Engineer” (i.e., God) built into organisms to enable them to adapt to different environments.

4. *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome* by J. C. Sanford (3rd edition, 2008). Dr. Sanford, professor of plant genetics at Cornell University, is one of the most accomplished geneticists in the world. His book takes up where Dr. Spetner’s leaves off. He shows that, not only is the neo-Darwinian mechanism of mutation and selection unable to create functional genetic information, but it is unable to stop the net loss of information. Having given evolutionary theory every benefit of the doubt in examining the genetic evidence, Sanford writes (p. 139):

We have reviewed compelling evidence that, even when ignoring deleterious mutations, mutation/selection cannot create a single gene within the human evolutionary time scale. When deleterious mutations are factored back in, we see that mutation/selection cannot create a single gene, *ever*. This is overwhelming evidence against the Primary Axiom [of neo-Darwinian theory]. *In my opinion, this constitutes what is essentially a formal proof that the Primary Axiom is false.*

By analyzing the rate of human genetic decline due to mutations,

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

Dr. Sanford not only refutes evolutionary theory, but also provides powerful evidence for the Bible's time scale of human history. His book comes highly recommended by an Orthodox Christian doctor of molecular biology, Anna Radovic, who presented his findings at the "Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science" conference in Moscow in 2008. Also of interest is the film *The Mystery of Our Declining Genes* (2009), in which Dr. Sanford summarizes the contents of his book and points to avenues of further research.

5. *Signature in the Cell: DNA and the Evidence for Intelligent Design* by Stephen C. Meyer (2009). This book by a leading ID theorist contains a thoroughgoing examination of how the immensely complex and exquisitely functional chemical structure of DNA might have originated. As the author points out (p. 14):

When Watson and Crick discovered [in 1953] the structure and information properties of DNA, they did indeed solve one mystery, namely, the secret of how the cell stores and transmits hereditary information. But they uncovered another mystery that remains with us to this day. This is the DNA enigma—the mystery of the origin of the information needed to build the first living organism.

Dr. Meyer points out the flaws in each of the competing naturalistic explanations for the origin of biological information that have been advanced thus far, and shows why intelligent design offers the best solution. Having won the praise of a number of professors of science and philosophy, *Signature in the Cell* was included among Britain's *Times Literary Supplement* Books of the Year for 2009. It comes recommended here by an Orthodox Christian doctor of zoology, Yuri Zharikov (see appendix 3). Also recommended is a follow-up book edited by David Klinghoffer, *Signature of Controversy*, which gathers essays written by scientists and philosophers in response to Meyer's evolutionist critics.

6. *Darwin on Trial* by Phillip E. Johnson (3rd [20th anniversary] edition, 2010). Although more scientific evidence against neo-Darwinism has been brought to light since it was first published in 1991, this book, with its careful reasoning and sober-minded logic, remains one of

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

the best refutations of evolutionism. Called “the book that makes evolutionists furious,” it helped catalyze the ID movement in the early 1990s. Molecular biologist Michael Denton, whose own writings on evolutionism inspired Professor Johnson to take up the subject, has called this book “unquestionably the best critique of Darwinism I have ever read.” The twentieth anniversary edition includes a new foreword by biochemist Michael Behe, which explains how scientific findings since the book’s first publication have only served to reinforce Johnson’s arguments. (Johnson has furthered his critique of evolutionary naturalism in his subsequent books: *Reason in the Balance* [1995], *Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds* [1997], *Objections Sustained* [1998], *The Wedge of Truth* [2000], *The Right Questions* [2002], and *Against All Gods* [with John Mark Reynolds] [2010].)

7. *Creation: Facts of Life* by Gary Parker (revised edition, 2006). While *Unlocking the Mystery of Life*, *Signature in the Cell*, and *Darwin on Trial* serve as a good introduction to the work of the ID movement, *Creation: Facts of Life* provides a helpful starting-point for understanding the work of the creation science movement. Gary Parker, who holds a doctorate in biology with a cognate in geology, presents a well-informed overview of many themes relevant to creation science, including the origin of the genetic code, mutations, biological variation, natural selection, fossils, and the geologic column. Fr. Seraphim read the first edition of this book, published in 1979, and recommended it (see p. 378 above). The new edition has been updated to take into account the latest scientific findings.

8. As of 2010, the most up-to-date defense of the Christian teaching of Divine creation against evolutionist claims is *The Greatest Hoax on Earth? Refuting Dawkins on Evolution* by Jonathan Sarfati (2010). This topical work is a rejoinder to the latest book by atheist apologist Richard Dawkins, *The Greatest Show on Earth: The Evidence for Evolution* (2009). In his previous works, Dawkins says, he had *assumed* evolution to be true; in his latest title he sets out to present the actual *evidence* for it. Creation scientist Jonathan Sarfati (PhD, physical chemistry) answers Dawkins’ challenge in a lucid, point by point manner. While Sarfati takes on the strongest arguments of the evolutionists (Dawkins’ book is purported to showcase the best that evolutionists can offer at the

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

present time), he demonstrates that Dawkins has not addressed head on the most informed position of the creationists whom he so vehemently opposes, but rather resorts to straw man arguments.

### 2. On “Human Evolution”

The most complete, accurate, and current critique of human evolution from a creation science perspective is *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils* by Dr. Marvin L. Lubenow (revised edition, 2004).<sup>\*</sup> The fruit of twenty-five years of research into human fossils, this book contains some of the most comprehensive human fossil charts to be found anywhere in the scientific literature, as well as descriptions of where and how these fossils were found, and the controversies involved in their dating and classification. Based entirely on fossils accepted unconditionally by evolutionists, it is heavily documented with recent scientific sources.

Creationist films on the alleged evolution of man include *The Image of God* (n.d.), featuring interviews with scientists on both sides of the creation/evolution debate, and *Apemen: “Missing Links” & the Bible* (2010).

A critique of the original Darwinian view of human “races” (according to which some “races” are considered more “highly evolved” than others) can be found in the book *One Blood: The Biblical Answer to Racism* by Ken Ham, Carl Wieland, and Don Batten (1999). The authors set forth the contrasting Biblical understanding of the *one* human race, and discuss the nature of biological variation within the human “kind.”

### 3. On the History of Darwinism

Helpful material on the philosophical and sociological roots of Darwinism can be found in *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis* by Michael Denton (1986), pp. 69–77; *In the Minds of Men* by Ian T. Taylor (6th

---

<sup>\*</sup> Not to be confused with *Bones of Contention* by Roger Lewin (1987), an evolutionist and literary colleague of Richard Leakey. Lewin’s book, incidentally, is a good evolutionist treatment of the subject, for it acknowledges the vast amount of speculation and subjectivity involved in the interpretation of “human ancestor” fossils.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

edition, 2008); *The Long War against God* by Henry M. Morris (1989); *Understanding the Times* by David A. Noebel (unabridged edition, 1991); and “Did Darwin Plagiarize His Evolution Theory?” by Jerry Bergman (*Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* [now *Journal of Creation*], vol. 16, no. 3 [2002]).

### 4. On the Age of the Earth

As the present book has shown, the age of the earth is relevant to a number of points of Christian doctrine. Probably the most important of these is the Scriptural-Patristic teaching that death and corruption entered the cosmos at the fall of man—a teaching which, as we have shown, has profound soteriological implications. This teaching fits only within the Biblical time frame of some thousands of years of earth history. Within the evolutionary/uniformitarian time frame of billions of years it is, on the contrary, not possible to temporally place an incorrupt condition of man and the cosmos (a condition which the Fathers saw as an actuality, existing *in time*, not merely as a potentiality), except by resorting to arbitrary and fanciful formulations.\*

Although, as Fr. Seraphim says, one cannot definitively prove that the cosmos is either thousands or billions of years old—since all historical time scales involve unprovable assumptions—the reader may be interested in looking at some of the evidence for a young age.

Dr. D. Russell Humphreys provides a brief description of several natural phenomena which conflict with the evolutionary idea that the universe is billions of years old; see his article “Evidence for a Young World” (Institute for Creation Research *Impact*, no. 384, June 2005), as well as his video-recorded lecture series *Cosmos: Created and Young* (2009). A more extensive list has been compiled by Dr. Don Batten in “Age of the Earth: 101 Evidences for a Young Age of the Earth and the Universe” (June 2009, <http://creation.com/age-of-the-earth>).

While other materials focus on the age of heavenly bodies and the cosmos as a whole (see section 7 below), the book *The Young Earth* by doctor of geology John D. Morris (revised and expanded edition, 2007)

---

\* See, for example, pp. 451n, 452n, 780–81, 781n above.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

provides the best introduction to the subject of the earth's age. Updated to include the latest geologic evidence for a young earth, the book discusses radiometric dating, archeological findings, and worldwide physical processes, and contains an illuminating account of the circular reasoning that evolutionists typically employ when dating fossils.

For further study, we recommend the writings of Dr. Alexander Lalomov, the Russian Orthodox geologist whose article is presented in appendix 4 above. Several of his valuable articles (both technical and non-technical) related to the age of the earth are available in English at [www.creation.webzone.ru](http://www.creation.webzone.ru), and at [www.creationism.org/arctur/index.htm](http://www.creationism.org/arctur/index.htm). Here one will also find Dr. Lalomov's answers to his evolutionist/uniformitarian critics.

Also recommended are books on the RATE (Radioisotopes and the Age of The Earth) project, an eight-year research initiative of the Institute for Creation Research. The RATE scientists—geologists, geochemists, geophysicists, and physicists—analyzed many rock units from around the world by radioisotope dating techniques, and showed how each of the assumptions made in these methods is subject to failure. Further, in measuring levels of carbon-14 in coal and diamonds, as well as helium in zircon crystals, they found evidence for a young age of materials thought by evolutionists to be millions or billions of years old. These findings provide strong reasons to doubt the evolutionary/uniformitarian idea of “deep time,” and also open up new avenues of research by creation scientists.

The book *Thousands ... Not Billions* by Dr. Don DeYoung (2005) gives a summary of the RATE project on a level clearly understandable to the non-scientist. The technical papers of the project are published in the two-volume set *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, edited by Drs. Larry Vardiman, Andrew A. Snelling, and Eugene F. Chaffin (2000–2005). Orthodox Christians studying these materials might well exercise caution when speculations are made about the formation of radioactive daughter products during the Creation Week, since the Orthodox Patristic view of the radically different nature of reality during the Six Days and before the fall would indicate that scientific inquiry must stop at the threshold of the fall. Such speculations, however, are only peripheral to the subject matter of the books on the RATE project,

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

and are accompanied by alternative ideas for consideration (see, for example, *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, vol. 2, pp. 759–61).

*Earth's Catastrophic Past* by doctor of geology Andrew A. Snelling (2009) contains a concise, up-to-date critique of radioactive dating methods (vol. 2, section 7). An earlier, more detailed critique is the technical monograph *The Mythology of Modern Dating Methods* by John Woodmorappe (1999), which cites nearly five hundred articles in the scientific literature, mostly by evolutionists who are specialists in the field.

Ian T. Taylor, in chapters 11 and 12 of his comprehensive book on Darwinism, *In the Minds of Men* (6th edition, 2008), provides a very readable overview of scientific data related to the age of the earth, and traces the historical development of the concept of “deep time.”

### 5. On the Dinosaurs

In discussions about the Biblical teaching on creation, one of the most frequently asked questions is “What about the dinosaurs?” As an introduction to dinosaurs from a Christian viewpoint, we recommend the book *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Dr. Mace Baker (1998), as well as the video *Dragons or Dinosaurs?* (2010), which includes interviews with a number of creation scientists.

Many considerations and little-known facts about dinosaurs are covered in creationist sources, most of which provide references to the primary scientific literature:

1. Like fossils of other animals, dinosaur fossils appear suddenly in the fossil record, without evolutionary ancestors or transitional forms between kinds of dinosaurs. See “Dinosaurs and Dragons: Stamping on the Legends” by Russell M. Grigg (*Creation*, vol. 14, no. 3 [June 1992]); and “Evolutionary Troubles with the Origin and Demise of Dinosaurs” by Michael J. Oard (*Journal of Creation*, vol. 25, no. 2 [2011], pp. 8–9).

2. There are several examples of dinosaur fossils being “out-of-place” according to the evolutionary scenario, that is, not fitting the progressive order of appearance claimed by evolutionists. See *The Creation Answers Book* by Don Batten et al. (2nd edition, 2008), pp. 251–54.



## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

3. The fossil record shows evidence of dinosaurs attacking and eating each other (including members of their own species), as well as suffering from diseases and afflictions (cancer, gout, parasites, abscesses, etc.). The frequent evidence of fossils scarred from violent encounters indicates that the lives of the fossilized dinosaurs were exceptionally bloody. For creation scientists, this underscores the conclusion that these particular dinosaurs lived not in the “very good” world as God created it in the beginning (Gen. 1:31), when He commanded animals and man to be vegetarian (Gen. 1:29–30, cf. 9:3), but rather in the world as it became after the fall of man, when God subjected it to “the bondage of corruption (decay)” (Rom. 8:19–22). (We would add that the first evidence for this conclusion is the fact that the fossils themselves are a record of decay.) See *The Fossil Record* by John D. Morris and Frank J. Sherwin (2010), pp. 88–91; *The Creation Answers Book* by Don Batten et al., pp. 256–57; and “T-rex with Gout” (*Creation*, vol. 19, no. 4 [Sept. 1997]).

4. Dinosaurs typically do not rest in the fossil record as if they had died of natural causes, but are most commonly found in positions that indicate sudden, often violent burial under layers of sediment. Many massive dinosaur graveyards, located throughout the world, have been formed by such catastrophic action. This is seen by creationists as evidence that the fossilized dinosaurs (and some unfossilized—see below) died during the Noahic Flood. For a presentation of this evidence, see *The Genesis Flood* by John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris (1961), pp. 279–81; *That Their Words May Be Used against Them* by Henry M. Morris (1997), pp. 266–72; *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Mace Baker, pp. 31–39; *Dinosaurs by Design* by Duane T. Gish (1992), pp. 8–9; *The Great Dinosaur Mystery Solved* by Ken Ham (paperback edition, 2000), pp. 65, 158–59; and the video *The Footsteps of Leviathan* (1996).

5. The discovery by Dr. Mary Schweitzer (North Carolina State University) of fresh (unfossilized) *Tyrannosaurus rex* and hadrosaur bones—with soft, pliable tissue, proteins, blood vessels, and red blood cells—provides strong evidence the dinosaurs could not have died out sixty-five million years ago, as evolutionists claim. See “Sensational Dinosaur Blood Report” by Carl Wieland (*Creation*, vol. 19, no. 4 [Sept. 1997]); “‘Schweitzer’s Dangerous Discovery’” by David Catchpoole

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

and Jonathan Sarfati (July 2006, <http://creation.com/schweitzers-dangerous-discovery>); “Hadrosaur Soft Tissues Another Blow to Long-Ages Myth” by Brian Thomas (May 2009, <http://www.icr.org/article/4621/>); “Dinosaur Soft Tissue and Protein—Even More Confirmation” by Carl Wieland (May 2009, <http://creation.com/dinosaur-soft-tissue-and-protein-even-more-confirmation>); and “Dinosaur Soft Tissues: They’re Real!” by Brian Thomas (Aug. 2009, <http://www.icr.org/article/4819>).

6. Since, according to the creationist view, the fossil record mostly represents creatures which died due to the Noahic Flood, the question of whether any dinosaurs survived the Flood via the Ark cannot be answered from a study of fossils. Rather, we must turn to ancient literature and the earliest accounts of human history after the Flood.

Since evolutionists believe that dinosaurs became extinct millions of years before the dawn of man, they do not have a plausible explanation for the records of “dragons” found in ancient cultures from all over the world, many of which describe specific features of animals we now know as dinosaurs. (Dinosaur fossils did not begin to be analyzed and pieced together until 1822, and the term “dinosaur” was not invented until 1841.) Creationists, who believe that dinosaurs have lived contemporaneously with man, explain that these accounts simply describe creatures that people have seen and encountered throughout history.

The Old Testament mentions dragons/dinosaurs (*tannim* in Hebrew, *drakon* in Greek) twenty-one times. The most important reference is in the book of Job, chapters 40–41, where one finds a detailed description of a great sauropod-like creature that “moves its tail like a cedar tree.” For a discussion of dinosaurs in the Bible, see *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Mace Baker, pp. 41–49; and *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science* by Henry M. Morris (1984), pp. 350–59.

Creationists have amassed a great deal of evidence from historical literature and art that indicates that dinosaurs have coexisted with humans. Unfortunately, all this material has not yet been anthologized in a single work, and so it must be gleaned from a number of sources. These include “Dinosaurs and Dragons” by D. L. Niermann (*Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* [now *Journal of Creation*], vol. 8, no. 1 [1994]); “Dinosaurs and Dragons: Stamping on the Legends” by Rus-

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

sell M. Grigg; *Dragons: Legends & Lore of Dinosaurs* by Bodie Hodge and Laura Welch (2011); *That Their Words May Be Used against Them* by Henry M. Morris, pp. 251–61; *After the Flood* by Bill Cooper (1995), pp. 130–61; “The Early History of Man, Part 1: Living Dinosaurs from Anglo-Saxon and Other Early Records” by Bill Cooper (*Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal*, vol. 6, no. 1 [April 1992]); *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Mace Baker, pp. 51–62, 86–88; *The Great Dinosaur Mystery Solved* by Ken Ham, pp. 31–39, 136–40, 161–62; “Messages on Stone” by Dennis L. Swift (*Creation*, vol. 19, no. 2 [March 1997]); *The Creation Answers Book* by Don Batten et al., pp. 244–46; “Angkor Saw a Stegosaur?” by David Catchpoole (*Creation*, vol. 29, no. 4 [Sept. 2007]); “Bishop Bell’s Brass Behemoths” by Philip Bell (*Creation*, vol. 25, no. 4 [Sept. 2003]); “Australia’s Aborigines ... Did They See Dinosaurs?” by Rebecca Driver (*Creation*, vol. 21, no. 1 [Dec. 1998]); “Thunderbirds” by Bill Johnson (*Creation*, vol. 24, no. 2 [March 2002]); the video *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*; and the web page [www.christiananswers.net/dinosaurs/questions.html](http://www.christiananswers.net/dinosaurs/questions.html).

Especially interesting for Orthodox readers is a treatise written by St. John Damascene in the eighth century, *On Dragons*.<sup>\*</sup> In this work St. Damascene affirmed that dragons are real, living creatures, having been among the animals named by Adam in Paradise; and at the same time he refuted various myths that had grown up around them. As evidence that they are real creatures, he cited a text from ancient history which recounts the killing of a 120-foot-long dragon by the Roman army. Although St. Damascene’s entire work has not been published in English, it is quoted at length in the online article “St. John Damascene on Dragons” by the Russian Orthodox priest Fr. Timofey Alferov (<http://www.creationism.org/crimea/engl/all.htm>).<sup>\*\*</sup> The same article appeared in slightly abridged form in *Creation* magazine under the title

---

<sup>\*</sup> The original Greek text of this treatise is found in *John Damascene: The Complete Works*, vol. 5, pp. 306–11, and in PG 94.1600–1601. A Russian translation by Priest Maxim Kozlov is found in *John Damascene: Works—Christological and Polemical Treatises* (Moscow, 1997).

<sup>\*\*</sup> The text for this article has been translated from Fr. Timofey Alferov’s Russian-language book *The Orthodox Worldview and Contemporary Natural Science*, pp. 344–48 (on this book, see p. 910 below).

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

“Dragons . . . Animals, Not Apparitions” (*Creation*, vol. 22, no. 3 [June 2000]).

In the early twentieth century, St. Barsanuphius of Optina also affirmed that dragons (dinosaurs) have lived contemporaneously with man. Among other things, St. Barsanuphius wrote: “The tales of the Chinese and Japanese about the existence of dragons are not at all fantasies or fables, although the learned European naturalists, and ours along with them, deny the existence of these monsters. But, after all, anything can be denied, simply because it does not measure up to our understanding.” See Victor Afanasiev, *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina* (2000), pp. 232–33.

As Fr. Seraphim Rose pointed out in a talk, accounts of dragons in the Orthodox Lives of Saints describe either apparitions of demons (which appear as other terrifying animals as well) or encounters with real creatures.\* In the latter category, of special interest is the Life of St. Donatus, Bishop of Euroea in Epirus (†387, commemorated April 30), which is contained in *The Ecclesiastical History* by the Church historian Sozomen (ca. 400–ca. 450). Sozomen describes “a dragon of enormous size,” which “devoured sheep, goats, oxen, horses, and men.” The dragon expired when St. Donatus made the sign of the Cross over it, after which “the people of the country yoked eight pair of oxen to transport the body to a neighboring field, where they burnt it, that it might not during the process of decomposition corrupt the air and generate disease” (*Ecclesiastical History* 7.26, NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 2, pp. 394–95).

7. The question of how dinosaurs (presumably young ones) could have been accommodated aboard the Ark has been answered by Russell M. Grigg in his article “Dinosaurs and dragons: Stamping on the Legends”; by John Woodmorappe in *Noah’s Ark: A Feasibility Study* (1996), pp. 4, 67–68; by Mace Baker in *The Real History of Dinosaurs*, pp. 28–29; and by Don Batten et al. in *The Creation Answers Book*, pp. 247–50.

8. Evolutionists have long debated the cause of the worldwide ex-

---

\* See Fr. Seraphim Rose, “The Theological Writings of Archbishop John,” *The Orthodox Word*, nos. 175–76 (1994), pp. 150–53.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

tinction of dinosaurs. Creation scientists generally agree that the primary cause of the dinosaurs' eventual extinction after the Flood was the drastic change between the pre-Flood and post-Flood environments. For a discussion of this and other causes, see *The Creation Answers Book* by Don Batten et al., pp. 252–54; *Dinosaurs by Design* by Duane T. Gish, pp. 76–77; *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Mace Baker, p. 57; *The Great Dinosaur Mystery Solved* by Ken Ham, pp. 67–68; and *Dinosaurs, the Lost World, and You* by John D. Morris (1999), pp. 33–34.

### 6. On the Flood

*The Genesis Flood* by Drs. John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris is the classic creation science textbook on the Flood. Called “the book that catalyzed the creation science movement,” it was studied, appreciated and recommended by Fr. Seraphim. Since this book came out in 1961, much more scientific investigation and research has been done in the field of Flood geology, and a number of books and videos are now available. The most up-to-date overviews can be found in *Earth's Catastrophic Past* by Dr. Andrew A. Snelling (2009) and *Flood by Design* by Michael J. Oard (2008).<sup>\*</sup> For further study we recommend the book *Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe* by doctor of geology Steven A. Austin (1994), together with the videos *Grand Canyon: Monument to the Flood* (2002) and *Geological Evidences* (2003), which explain the deposition of sediments and the erosion of the canyon according to the Flood model. Also recommended is the book *Footprints in the Ash* by John D. Morris and Steven A. Austin (2003), which describes the rapid formation of geologic structures such as rock layers, canyons, and log deposits during the 1980 eruption of Mount St. Helens, Washington, and explains the significance of this for understanding what occurred during the global Flood.

---

<sup>\*</sup> See also Oard's review of Snelling's book (“Excellent Summary of Scientific Evidence for Creation and the Flood, but Controversial in Some Areas,” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 25, no. 1 [2011], pp. 33–40), which discusses the healthy debate taking place among creation scientists concerning certain details of Flood geology.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

Several technical monographs on Flood geology are available from the Institute for Creation Research, including *The Frozen Record* by Michael J. Oard (2005), *Ice Cores and the Age of the Earth* (1993) and *Sea-Floor Sediments and the Age of the Earth* (1996) by Dr. Larry Vardiman, and *Studies in Flood Geology* by John Woodmorappe (1999). Other technical papers, covering some of the latest advances in Flood geology, are contained in *Proceedings of the International Conference on Creationism*, 1990, 1994, 1998, 2003, and 2008.

The following books will be of interest to those wishing to make a study of what happened after the Flood and the dispersion of the peoples: *After the Flood* by Bill Cooper (1995); *They Came from Babel* by S. A. Cranfill (1994); *The Puzzle of Ancient Man* by Donald E. Chittick (3rd edition, 2006); and *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science* by Henry M. Morris, chapters 15–16.

### 7. On Astronomy and Cosmology

The big bang theory, along with nebular accretion models of the origin of heavenly bodies, is today the standard naturalistic, evolutionary model by which to explain the beginning and history of the cosmos. This theory has a number of features which are at variance with the Scriptural-Patristic cosmogony. First of all, the evolutionary model runs counter to the Scriptural-Patristic view of God's instantaneous creation of the earth and the heavenly bodies; secondly, it contradicts the order of creation as described in the Bible and understood by the Holy Fathers, which has the earth and even its vegetation created before the heavenly lights;\* and finally, unlike the Bible and the Holy Fathers, it posits a vast age of the earth and the cosmos, which leaves no place for an original incorrupt condition of creation and thus has a corrosive effect on traditional Christian soteriology.

Creationist astronomers and physicists have provided a number of valuable resources which point out the known scientific problems connected with the reigning evolutionary cosmogony, highlight indicators of Divine creation and intelligent design in the universe, and discuss

---

\* See pp. 135, 135n, 167–73, 168n, 169n, 171n, 375–76 above.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

the many lines of evidence for a young universe (the “faint young sun paradox,” the recession of the moon from the earth, the magnetic fields of planets and moons in our solar system, the existence of short-period comets in the solar system, the spiral structure of galaxies, etc.). Of these resources, we would recommend the books *Taking Back Astronomy* (2006) by Jason Lisle (doctor of astrophysics), *Universe by Design* (2004) by Danny Faulkner (professor of astrophysics, University of South Carolina in Lancaster), and *Dismantling the Big Bang* (2005) by Alex Williams (former consultant to the United Nations’ International Atomic Energy Agency) and John Hartnett (professor of physics, University of Western Australia in Perth); the articles by D. Russell Humphreys (doctor of physics, researcher at Sandia National Laboratories) and Don Batten mentioned in section 4 above; and the videos *The Young Sun* (2009), *The Heavens Declare* (2009), *Created Cosmos* (2007), *Astronomy: What Do We Really Know?* (2005), *Big Problems with the Big Bang* (2005), *Creation & Cosmology* (2007), and *What You Aren’t Being Told about Astronomy*, vol. 1: *Our Created Solar System* (2009). The book *Dismantling the Big Bang* is notable for its valuable discussion of how belief systems shape scientific theories, including theories of cosmology (chap. 2). It concludes by reproducing an “Open Letter to the Scientific Community,” signed by over two hundred secular scientists who reject the big bang model based on its inability to account for many astronomical observations, and who object to the fact that research into alternative models is severely hindered by funding agencies which do not tolerate dissent from the reigning paradigm (the letter, first published in *New Scientist*, May 22–28, 2004, is posted with addenda at [www.cosmologystatement.org](http://www.cosmologystatement.org)).

For the Biblical model of a creation only thousands of years old, the question arises of how starlight from galaxies millions of light years away could have reached the earth. While creationists recognize this as a challenging question, sometimes referring to it as the “light travel-time problem,” they rightly point out that the big bang theory has the equivalent of a light travel-time problem of its own, known as the “horizon problem”—namely, that the temperature of the universe could not have reached its current homogeneity even within the approximately 14 billion years allowed by the big bang theory. To deal with this anomaly in

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

their model, big-bang theorists have introduced the concept of an early inflation of the cosmos at a rate much faster than the speed of light. This, however, is only a conjecture with no supporting evidence, and hence is referred to as a “hypothetical entity” and a “fudge factor” in the above-mentioned “Open Letter” from dissenting scientists.

In recent years, Protestant creationists have been working on a number of scientific cosmological models within the Biblical framework, the most prominent being those of the above-mentioned doctors of physics D. Russell Humphreys and John Hartnett.\* Starting with the theory of relativity and the concept of an expanding universe—both of which are accepted by evolutionists—Humphreys and Hartnett have also assumed a spherical universe with the earth near the

---

\* Dr. Humphreys presented his first attempt at a creationist cosmology in his 1994 book *Starlight and Time*, and subsequently developed a new cosmological model with many of the same features. His new cosmology is presented on a technical level in “New Time Dilation Helps Creation Cosmology” (*Journal of Creation*, vol. 22, no. 3 [2008], pp. 84–92), and on a popular level in Larry Vardiman and D. Russell Humphreys, “A New Creationist Cosmology: In No Time at All” (*Acts & Facts*, vol. 39, no. 11 [Nov. 2010], pp. 12–15; vol. 40, no. 1 [Jan. 2011], pp. 12–14; vol. 40, no. 2 [Feb. 2011], pp. 12–14), as well as in the video series *Cosmos: Created & Young*, disc 4. Dr. Hartnett has set forth his cosmology in the book *Starlight, Time and the New Physics* (2007) and in a video of the same title (2010). See also the video *Distant Starlight—A Forum* (2011), which features both physicists.

It is noteworthy that, before developing his cosmologies, Dr. Humphreys produced a theory of planetary magnetic fields which successfully predicted their present strengths based on the idea that the planets were created some thousands rather than billions of years ago. In 1984, knowing that the Voyager 2 spacecraft was expected to pass by Uranus and Neptune, Humphreys published predictions of the strengths of their magnetic fields, and pointed out that the Voyager’s measurements of these strengths would be a good test of the creationist vs. the evolutionist theories. When Voyager 2 passed by the two planets in 1986 and 1989 respectively, its measurements of their magnetic fields fell right in the middle of Humphreys’ predictions but were 100,000 times greater than evolutionist predictions. See Humphreys, “The Creation of Planetary Magnetic Fields,” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, vol. 21, no. 3 (Dec. 1984); Carl Wieland, “Creation in the Physics Lab: An Illuminating Interview with Physicist Dr. D. Russell Humphreys,” *Creation*, vol. 15, no. 3 (June 1993), pp. 20–23; and Humphreys, “Mercury’s Magnetic Field Is Young,” Aug. 2008, <http://creation.com/mercurys-magnetic-field-is-young>.



## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

center. This latter assumption is rejected by secular cosmologists not on experimental but on philosophical grounds, since, presupposing a naturalistic origin of the cosmos, they cannot regard the earth as having a “special” place and are thus obliged to believe that the universe has no edge and no center. Humphreys and Hartnett, having abandoned the evolutionists’ chosen starting point of an unbounded universe, have found solutions of the relativistic field equations which depict the mechanics of the cosmos quite differently from the big bang model and potentially solve the creationists’ “light travel-time problem.” Their models also provide possible answers to some of the problems that big bang theorists have not resolved; for example, both of them (especially Hartnett’s) obviate the need for invisible, undetectable “dark matter” and “dark energy”—two other “hypothetical entities” and “fudge factors” pointed out in the “Open Letter to the Scientific Community”—to account for astronomical data, and both offer a straightforward explanation for the observed anomaly known as the “Pioneer effect” (see D. Russell Humphreys, “Creationist Cosmologies Explain the Anomalous Acceleration of Pioneer Spacecraft,” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 21, no. 2 [Aug. 2007], pp. 61–70).

Admittedly, the creationist cosmologies have unverifiable “fudge factors” of their own. This, however, illustrates the nature of all scientific cosmological models, which, because they enter the realm of origins or historical science (as distinct from operational or observational science), are especially reliant on untestable assumptions and therefore must be regarded as, at best, merely tentative. Drs. Humphreys and Hartnett, as well as honest secular cosmologists, will readily admit this. As one of the leading secular theorists in cosmology, George F. R. Ellis, has said: “People need to be aware that there is a range of models that could explain the observations.... For instance, I can construct you a spherically symmetrical universe with Earth at its center, and you cannot disprove it based on observations.... You can only exclude it on philosophical grounds. In my view there is absolutely nothing wrong in that. What I want to bring into the open is the fact that we are using philosophical criteria in choosing our models. A lot of cosmology tries to hide that” (W. Wayt Gibbs, “Profile: George F. R. Ellis,” *Scientific American*, vol. 273, no. 4 [Oct. 1995], p. 55).

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

Although the work of Protestant creationists in the field of cosmology can be seen as nothing more than provisional, we, in agreement with several Orthodox Christians holding doctorates in mathematics and the natural sciences (physics, cosmology), find it to be of potential value to Orthodox believers, for it shows that astronomical data *can* be interpreted scientifically in a way which conforms to the Biblical time scale, and which at the same time fits some observations better than does the big bang model. This consideration underlines the fact that different cosmological models which are equally scientific can be derived on the basis of different belief systems or worldviews, and that the currently prevailing big bang model is by no means an inescapable construct dictated by observation and reason.\*

For the Orthodox Christian, however, a difficulty arises in accepting, even tentatively, *any* scientific model which includes speculations about what occurred at the creation of the cosmos. By virtue of being scientific, such models must apply the current laws of physics when trying to understand cosmological origins. The aforementioned models of Drs. Humphreys and Hartnett are no exception. In light of the Scriptural-Patristic teaching on the miraculous, supernatural events of the Six Days, Orthodox Christians are apt to have reservations when Protestant creationists attempt to describe, according to current laws, the fashioning of the universe with its heavenly lights. As Fr. Seraphim wrote, "By their very nature the events of these days are miraculous, are not subject to the laws of nature that now govern the world, and we cannot understand them by projections from our present experience."\*\* Not only can we not scientifically examine the creation of the heavenly bodies, which God made "to give light upon the earth" (Gen. 1:15), we cannot even know what they and their light were like between the time of their creation and the fall of man. In the words of St. Barsanuphius of Optina, "We don't know what kind of moon there

---

\* For these insights we are especially indebted to Silviu Podariu, a Romanian Orthodox doctor of cosmology. Dr. Podariu has researched the creationist cosmological models mentioned above as well as others, has discussed them with other Orthodox Christian scientists, and has provided us with helpful scientific evaluations of them.

\*\* See p. 138 above.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

was then, what kind of sun, what kind of light.... All of this changed after the fall.”\*

If, as Drs. Hartnett and Humphreys postulate in their models, the solution to the “light travel-time problem” lies in what occurred during the Six Days of Creation, for an Orthodox Christian this can only mean that it is ultimately beyond the scope of scientific inquiry. This conclusion has been at least partially acknowledged by the Protestant astrophysicists Danny Faulkner and Jason Lisle, who, while welcoming scientific attempts to solve the “light travel-time problem” such as those outlined above, say it is wrong to simply assume that a scientific solution can be found. As Dr. Faulkner observes: “Instead of majoring on the [light travel-time] problem, perhaps we should realize that only an unbelievably powerful Creator could make such a large universe while at the same time enabling us to see it all. Instead of a problem, it could be one of the most remarkable testaments of God’s creation” (Faulkner, *Universe by Design*, p. 104; see also Lisle, *Taking Back Astronomy*, pp. 46–48).

### 8. For the Education of Young People

A number of Orthodox Christian science textbooks for middle and high school students have been published in Russian, the most important of which is *General Biology* by Sergei Y. Vert’yanov (see p. 71 above and p. 909 below).

In the English language, a number of resources for young people—books and DVDs—have been produced by scientists associated both with the ID and creation science movements.

*Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds*, by ID founder Phillip E. Johnson, was written on a high school level with the specific purpose of teaching young people how to see through the deceptive arguments for Darwinian evolution, especially by focusing on the alleged mechanism for grand-scale biological change.

*Of Pandas and People* by Percival Davis and Dean H. Kenyon (2nd edition, 1993) is a biology textbook for high school students, written

---

\* See p. 709 above.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

and reviewed by scientists associated with the ID movement. Careful and restrained in its presentation of evidence for intelligent design, this book comes highly recommended by the above-mentioned zoologist, Dr. Yuri Zharikov.

Those parents and educators wishing to go beyond the limited scope of the ID position can make use of the many valuable creation science materials produced for young people from pre-school to high school. (See [www.creation.com](http://www.creation.com), [www.icr.org](http://www.icr.org), and [www.answersingenesis.com](http://www.answersingenesis.com) for a list of these materials.) In doing so, Orthodox parents and educators might keep in mind the caveat about Protestant creation science mentioned above, with regard to its tendency to view the creation events and prelapsarian world according to current natural laws. This tendency can sometimes be seen visually in Protestant creationist books for young people, where illustrations show a “this worldly” portrayal of Adam and Eve in Paradise that is quite different from what one finds in Orthodox icons.

The best dinosaur books for children from a creationist perspective are *Dinosaurs by Design* by Dr. Duane T. Gish, and *The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible* by Paul S. Taylor (revised edition, 1998). (The above-mentioned video by Paul Taylor, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*, is also suitable for children as well as adults.) Junior-high and high school students interested in dinosaurs can refer to *The Real History of Dinosaurs* by Mace Baker and *Dragons of the Deep: Ocean Monsters Past and Present* by Carl Wieland (2005).

Home-schooling parents are encouraged to look into Apologia Educational Ministries, a creation-based science curriculum specifically designed for the home school, kindergarten through grade 12 ([www.apologia.com](http://www.apologia.com)). Written by a former university professor and home-schooling parent, Apologia’s courses provide college-preparatory science, with clear, readable text and interesting experiments. Orthodox parents and young people who use this course speak very highly of it.

## III. SOURCES IN RUSSIAN

The website of the Russian Orthodox Missionary Center “Shestodnev” ([www.shestodnev.ru](http://www.shestodnev.ru)) features many scientific and theo-

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

logical articles in Russian, including translations of some of Fr. Seraphim's writings on creation and evolution. The websites of the Moscow Society of Creation Science ([www.creation.webzone.ru](http://www.creation.webzone.ru), [www.creatio.orthodoxy.ru](http://www.creatio.orthodoxy.ru)) have scientific articles in both Russian and English, by both Orthodox and non-Orthodox authors.

The following is a partial list of Russian-language books by Orthodox authors which discuss the creation/evolution issue from a Scriptural-Patristic perspective.\* Several of these books are available for download online (see the bibliography).

*The Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science*, edited by Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev. These proceedings from the annual conferences sponsored by the "Shestodnev" missionary center in Moscow form the most full and diverse compendium of contemporary theological and scientific articles on the subject in the Russian language (see pp. 67–70 above). Volumes have been published for the years 2005–2009.

*Orthodox Doctrine and the Theory of Evolution* by Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev (2003). An in-depth study of the Patristic doctrine of creation as it interfaces with the modern secular worldview. The author, who is the founder of "Shestodnev" and holds both theological and scientific degrees, considers this work to be a continuation of Fr. Seraphim's study. The book includes numerous quotations of the Holy Fathers, as well as critiques of various "Orthodox evolutionist" teachings in contemporary Russia.

*Chronicle of the Beginning* by Deacon Daniel Sysoyev (1999). This work by a well-known Russian Orthodox missionary and apologist deals with both theological and scientific issues related to the doctrine of creation.

*The Hexaemeron vs. Evolution*, edited by Deacon Daniel Sysoyev (2000). An important anthology of articles by Fr. Constantine Bufeyev, Fr. Daniel Sysoyev, and other authors.

*"Who Is Like God?" or, How Long Did a Day of Creation Last?* by Priest Daniel Sysoyev (2003). A theological investigation of creation and evolution, and an analysis of the attempts to reconcile them. Con-

---

\* Transliterated Russian titles are given in the bibliography.

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

tains many Patristic citations, from the first to the twentieth centuries, on the Six Days of creation.

*The Origin of Life: Facts, Hypotheses, Evidence* by Sergei Vert'yanov (4th edition, 2007). An introductory book covering a broad spectrum of scientific issues related to the creation/evolution debate, including biological variation, interpretation of the fossil record, and the age of the earth. At the end is a section of pertinent passages from the writings of the Fathers. This is the best-selling Orthodox book on the subject in Russia.

*General Biology* by Sergei Vert'yanov (2nd edition, 2006). Written as a high school textbook and conforming to Russian educational standards, this volume provides a much more extensive treatment of the material in *The Origin of Life*. Reviewed by a committee of scientists from Moscow State University, it presents an overview of the biological sciences while adhering to the Scriptural-Patristic view of creation and history (see p. 71 above.)

*The Law of God*, vol. 1: *The Biblical History of the Old Testament* by Sergei Vorob'yev (2009). Tracing the events of the Old Testament beginning with the creation of the world, the author is uncompromisingly faithful to the Patristic reading of Biblical history. He intersperses the teachings of the Fathers with findings of historical and scientific research which confirm and illuminate the Biblical record. (Not to be confused with works by other authors which also bear the title *The Law of God*.)

*Fundamentals of Contemporary Natural Science: An Orthodox View* by Vitaly Il'ich Nedel'ko and Andrei Giorgievich Khundzhua (2008). A scientific work intended for a wide readership, recommended by the Moscow Patriarchate's Department of Religious Education and Catechesis. Both authors are doctors of physics and mathematics.

*Orthodox Natural-Science Apologetics* by Priest Yevgeniy Porfir'yev (2006). A complex but rewarding examination of the findings of modern science in light of the Holy Scriptures and the writings of the Holy Fathers.

*Evolution or Corruption?* by Priest Timofey [Alferov] (1997). A theological/Patristic comparison of creation and evolution, this short study was the first traditional Orthodox book on the subject to appear

## SUGGESTED RESOURCES

in Russia after Fr. Seraphim's letter to Alexander Kalomiros was published in Russian translation. The author frequently refers to Fr. Seraphim's previous work.

*Natural History* by Priest Timofey [Alferov] (2001). A natural science textbook for children in Orthodox middle schools and Sunday schools.

*The Orthodox Worldview and Contemporary Natural Science* by Priest Timofey [Alferov] (2004). A scientific textbook for Orthodox high school students, covering a broad range of topics, from the origin of biological information to dinosaurs and Noah's Ark.

*Introduction to Natural Science* by Elena Morozova (2001). A textbook written by an Orthodox educator for use in middle schools and high schools, this historical/scientific study discusses the basic Christian approach to knowledge of the surrounding world.

*The World—God's Creation* by Nikolai Kolchurinsky (2000). This work by an Orthodox catechist consists of discussions between the author and young people at a monastery near Suzdal, Russia. The author answers science-related questions from an Orthodox Patristic perspective.

*Divine Revelation and Contemporary Science*, Almanac, vols. 1 and 2, edited by Priest Daniel Sysoyev and Nikolai Kolchurinsky (2004, 2005). An anthology of scientific and theological articles, including the writings of St. Theophan the Recluse and St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije.

*Creation*, Almanac of the Moscow Society of Creation Science, vols. 1 and 2, edited by Alexander Lalomov (2002, 2006). Includes scientific articles from many different disciplines.

# *Saints and Early Church Writers Cited in the Present Book*

(Arranged by date of repose)

*Entries not enclosed in brackets were written by Fr. Seraphim for an appendix to the English edition of Orthodox Dogmatic Theology by Protopresbyter Michael Pomazansky (1983).<sup>\*</sup> Entries enclosed in brackets have been added by the editor of the present book.*

**St. JUSTIN Martyr, the Philosopher** A.D. 103–165

The leading Christian apologist of the second century; his writings depict the conversion of the best representatives of the pagan world to Christ. He wrote two *Apologies* against the pagans and the *Dialogue with Trypho, a Jew*. An early account of his martyrdom (the official court proceedings) has survived; he is commemorated on June 1.

**ATHENAGORAS of Athens** †after 177

An eloquent Christian apologist, his attitude to pagan literature was similar to St. Justin's. He wrote *A Plea for the Christians* to Emperor Marcus Aurelius, defending from reason the Christian idea of the resurrection of the body.

**St. THEOPHILUS of Antioch<sup>\*\*</sup>** ca. 115–181

The sixth Bishop of Antioch, he was converted in mature years from paganism and wrote apologetic works defending Christianity against pagan objections. He used the New Testament Scriptures

---

<sup>\*</sup> Saints glorified by the Church after Fr. Seraphim wrote these entries have been designated as such in the present section.—ED.

<sup>\*\*</sup> He is absent from the Greek *Synaxaria* (Lives of Saints) but is commemorated as a saint in the Slav collections. His memory is celebrated on December 6.—ED.





St. Justin Martyr, the Philosopher.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, Mount Athos,  
1545–1546.*



St. Irenaeus of Lyons.  
*Wall painting from the Sts. Peter and Paul  
Church of the Optina Monastery  
Metochion in Moscow, 2004.*

much more than earlier apologists, and was the first to speak clearly of their Divine inspiration.\*

## St. IRENAEUS of Lyons

ca. 130–202

A disciple of St. Polycarp of Smyrna,\*\* he heard through him of St. John the Theologian, and thus was directly linked to the Apostolic age. Coming to the West, he succeeded St. Pothinus as Bishop of Lyons and

---

\* St. Theophilus' only surviving work, *To Autolytus*, contains an in-depth discussion of the early chapters of Genesis, as well as the first known attempt by a Christian writer to determine the age of the world and a chronology of events based on the Biblical account.—ED.

\*\* St. Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna (69–156), was a disciple of St. John the Theologian, and was placed in his see by the Apostles. His martyrdom is set forth in the earliest detailed account of a single martyr, giving an excellent picture of his noble Christian character. His *Epistle to the Philippians* describes the doctrine, organization, and Christian charity of the Church in about A.D. 130. Commemorated February 23.—AUTH.

gained a reputation as a peacemaker in the Church. His chief work is *Against Heresies*, a defense of Orthodox Christianity against the Gnostics, using both human reason and Sacred Scripture and Tradition. Although this book is marred by his chiliastic teaching,\* it is the most important Orthodox theological work of the second century and is an important witness of the Church traditions of that time. He is commemorated as a hieromartyr on August 23.

### CLEMENT of Alexandria

ca. 150–ca. 215

A convert from paganism, he traveled through many lands seeking instruction from Christian teachers. He finally became the disciple of the Christian philosopher Pantaenus in Alexandria and succeeded him as head of the school of catechumens there, being ordained presbyter. Together, they were the founders of the “Alexandrian” school of Christian theology, which emphasized a speculative and allegorical investigation of the Christian revelation. As distinct from earlier Christian writers, whose aim was chiefly to defend and justify Christianity, Clement was the first to try to systematize Christian knowledge and define its relation to ancient pagan culture, which he knew well. His chief work is a trilogy: *Exhortation to the Greeks* (aimed at converting pagans), *The Instructor* (giving instruction in Christian life), and the *Stromateis* (discussing mainly the relation of Christianity to secular learning).

### TERTULLIAN of Carthage

ca. 155/160–ca. 223

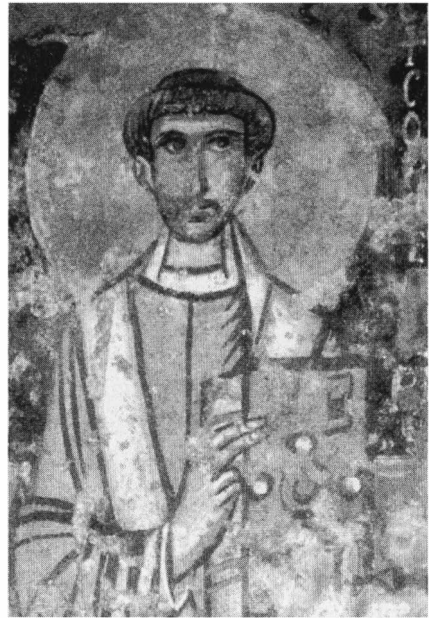
A pagan lawyer in Rome, after his conversion he used his talents to defend Christian faith, rites, and life against heretics (especially the Gnostics) and pagans. His early writings contain much information on early Christian teaching and practices, including the only detailed pre-Nicene work on a Christian Sacrament (*On Baptism*). He was very passionate by temperament, and all his writings are polemical in nature; he had little tolerance for pagan culture (“What has Athens to do with Jerusalem?”) and does not use it in defending the Faith (“I believe

---

\* As noted above (p. 34n), the error of chiliasm was formally condemned by the Church much later, at the Second Ecumenical Council in 381.—ED.



St. Hippolytus of Rome.  
*Fresco from Staro Nagoricane Monastery,  
Kumanovo, fourteenth century.*



St. Cyprian, Bishop of Carthage.  
*Fresco from the Catacomb of St. Callistus,  
Rome, sixth century.*

because it is absurd"). In his later years (after 207) he joined the Montanist heresy, which followed "spirit-filled prophets" rather than the Church hierarchy, and became extremely rigoristic and "sectarian" in his views (no forgiveness for sins after Baptism, against art, against remarriage, etc.). He also taught the chiliastic heresy.

[St. HIPPOLYTUS of Rome

ca. 170–236

A disciple of St. Irenaeus of Lyons, he was a priest in Rome renowned for his learning, eloquence, and zeal in defending the Faith. His major work, *The Refutation of All Heresies*, deals with a broad range of false systems, including those of pagan philosophers, magicians, astrologers, and Gnostics. Among his other surviving writings is an important treatise on the events preceding the end of the world, *On Christ and Antichrist*; as well as several exegetical works, the best pre-

served of which is his *Commentary on the Prophet Daniel*. His *Chronicle*, which treats the whole period from the creation of the world to his own time, formed the basis for many later works of chronography by Church writers. During the persecution of Emperor Maximinus, he was exiled to Sardinia and died as a martyr. Commemorated January 30.]

### [JULIUS AFRICANUS

ca. 160–ca. 240

At one time a soldier and a pagan, he studied at the Christian catechetical school in Alexandria. He knew Greek (in which he wrote), Latin, and Hebrew, and as a Christian produced works of Scriptural exegesis, history, science, and mathematics. According to the Church writer Eusebius, it was under Julius' direction that the city of Emmaus in Palestine was restored and called Nicopolis. Along with Sts. Theophilus and Hippolytus, Julius is considered a founding father of Christian chronography. His *Five Books of Chronography* trace the history of the world from its creation, assigning dates to both Biblical and extra-Biblical events.]

### ORIGEN of Alexandria

ca. 185–ca. 254

The son of Christian parents, he headed the catechetical school in Alexandria at the age of eighteen; in his last twenty years he founded and presided over the school of theology in Caesarea of Palestine. He suffered in the persecutions of Decius shortly before his death. A brilliant thinker who attracted many by his philosophy, he strove to harmonize Christian teaching with pagan Greek thought; the influence of Plato over him (especially in his teachings on the preexistence of human souls and universal salvation), together with his allegorical interpretations of Scripture, led to heated controversies over his teaching, ending in the condemnation of his errors by the Church in the sixth century. Because of his errors many of his works have not survived.

### St. CYPRIAN, Bishop of Carthage

†258

A convert from paganism, he was elected Bishop of Carthage shortly before the persecution of Decius (250), when he fled from Carthage. He



The Martyrdom of St. Methodius.  
*Fresco by the Cretan iconographer Tzortzis,  
Dionysiou Monastery, Mount Athos, 1547.*

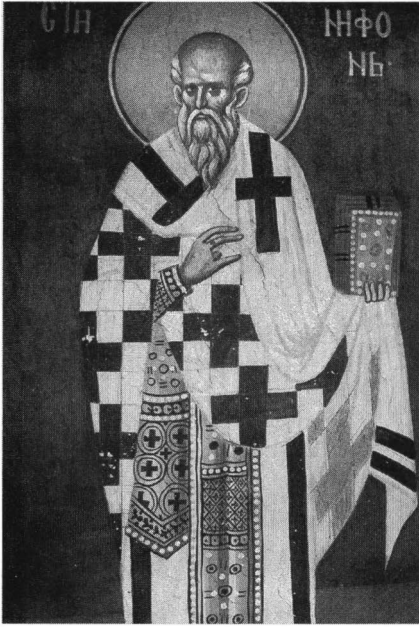


St. Alexander, Archbishop of Alexandria.  
*Fresco from Staro Nagoricane Monastery,  
Kumanovo, fourteenth century.*

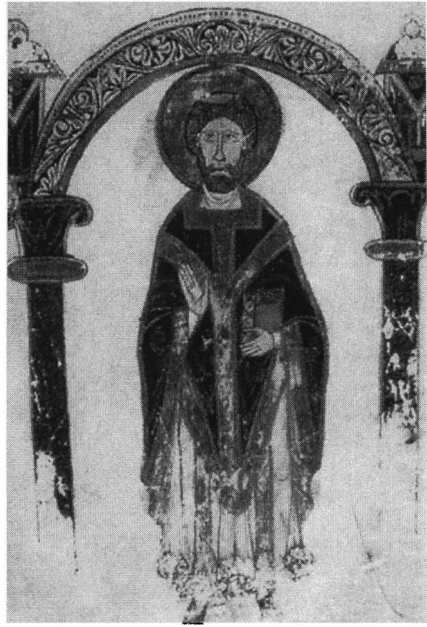
died a martyr, being beheaded for the Faith in 258, and is commemorated on August 31. The chief influence on his theology was the Orthodox writings of Tertullian. His own writings are all on practical subjects of Christian life and discipline: prayer, almsgiving, his own conversion, how to reconcile to the Church those who fell away during the persecutions, an *Exhortation to Martyrdom*, *On the Unity of the Church*. He is one of the most authoritative of the early Fathers of the Church.

**St. METHODIUS, Bishop of Olympus (or Patara) †ca. 311**

He died a martyr; commemorated June 20. A highly educated theologian, he refuted Origen's teaching of the preexistence of souls and his spiritualistic concept of the resurrection of the body. His chief remaining works are dialogues: *The Banquet* (on virginity) and *Discourse on the Resurrection* (against Origen).



St. Niphon, Bishop of Constantia  
on Cyprus.  
*Fresco from Gracanica Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1321–1322.*



St. Hilary of Poitiers.  
*Eleventh-century illumination for the Life  
of St. Hilary by St. Venantius Fortu-  
natus, Bishop of Poitiers (†ca. 605).*

## LACTANTIUS

†after 317

A native of Africa, he became a Christian and an apologist for the Faith, and was called in his old age (317) by Emperor Constantine to be the tutor of his son in Gaul. His *Divine Institutes* is the first Latin attempt at a summary of Christian teaching.

## St. ALEXANDER, Archbishop of Alexandria

ca. 250–328

Archbishop of Alexandria from 312; commemorated May 29. It was during his episcopate that the Arian controversy arose. He first tried fatherly persuasion on Arius, then called a council (321), where the heresy was condemned. His epistles were the only written protests against Arianism before the First Ecumenical Council (325), where he took a leading part. He died after many struggles in defending Orthodoxy.



St. Ephraim the Syrian.  
*Fresco from Vatopaidi Monastery,  
Mount Athos.*



St. Athanasius the Great.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, 1545–1546.*

[St. NIPHON, Bishop of Constantia on Cyprus †before 367

He was brought up in Constantinople at the court of a great commander, but renounced the world and became a monk. For four years he was tormented by the devil, who ceaselessly said to him, “There is no God!”—but Christ appeared to him in a vision and delivered him. He had many other visions of the heavenly world, conversed with angels, discerned the thoughts of men, and was granted knowledge of the future. According to a revelation from above, St. Alexander, Archbishop of Alexandria, consecrated him as bishop of Constantia.\* St. Niphon was visited by St. Athanasius the Great, then a deacon, and

---

\* Known from ancient times as Salamis, the city was destroyed by earthquakes and rebuilt under the reign of Emperor Constantius II (337–361), whence it was given the name Constantia.—ED.

after his repose he was seen by Athanasius, his face shining like the sun. Commemorated December 23.]

**St. HILARY, Bishop of Poitiers** ca. 315–ca. 367

A native of Gaul and a convert from paganism, he was one of the chief defenders of Orthodoxy in the West against the Arian heresy, for which he suffered exile. His chief work is *On the Trinity*. Commemorated January 13.

**St. EPHRAIM the Syrian** ca. 306–373

Repenting for the sins of his youth, he led a life of true Christian asceticism and love. He was ordained deacon by St. Basil the Great, but refused the rank of priest and (later) of bishop. Commemorated January 28. Praised by the Fathers of the fourth century for his erudition and wisdom, he was renowned especially for his commentaries on Scripture, his writings against heresies, his Church hymns, and above all for his writings on repentance, which (together with his famous Lenten prayer) are read in Orthodox churches during Great Lent.

**St. ATHANASIUS the Great** ca. 295–373

After a pious childhood, he was ordained deacon in 319 and accompanied St. Alexander to the Council of Nicaea in 325, succeeding him as Archbishop of Alexandria in 328. He was the great defender of the faith of Nicaea against the Arians, suffering exile five times for this. Commemorated January 18 and May 2. Besides his many anti-Arian writings, he wrote a classic exposition of the Christian doctrine of redemption (*On the Incarnation of the Word*) and a *Life of St. Anthony* that not only began a new genre of Christian literature, but was also a primary inspiration for the spread of the monastic ideal in the West as well as the East.

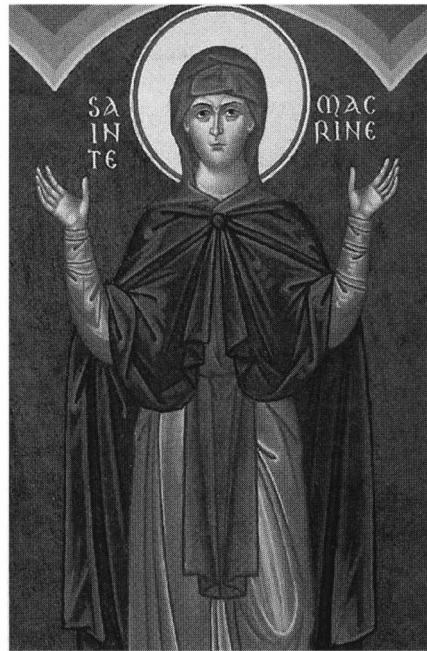
**St. BASIL the Great** 329–379

After receiving a brilliant classical education in Athens, he was baptized at about thirty years of age and then traveled to the East to see the monastic way of life. Returning to his home in Asia Minor, he retired to the desert and hoped to live there quietly. However, he was made Archbishop of Caesarea, where he became known for his works of





St. Basil the Great.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery,  
1545–1546.*



St. Macrina the Younger.  
*Wall painting from the Monastery of the  
Protection of the Mother of God,  
Bussy-en-Othe, France, 2004–2007.*

charity, and was placed in the center of the battle against Arianism and other heresies, suffering exile for his Orthodoxy. Commemorated on January 1 and (together with St. Gregory the Theologian and St. John Chrysostom) as one of the great “Three Hierarchs” of the Church on January 30. His writings include monastic rules and other ascetic texts, refutations of Arianism, homilies on Genesis (the *Hexaemeron*) and other books of Scripture, numerous letters, and the text of the Liturgy used even up to now in the Orthodox Church (together with the shorter version by St. John Chrysostom).

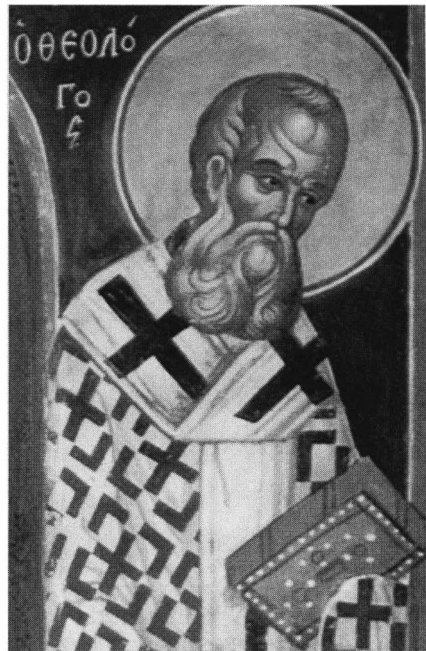
#### [St. MACRINA the Younger

324–379

The granddaughter of St. Macrina the Elder and the daughter of St. Emilia, she was the eldest of ten children, including five others who be-



St. Cyril, Archbishop of Jerusalem.  
*Fresco from the Church of the Mother of  
God, Skopje, fourteenth century.*



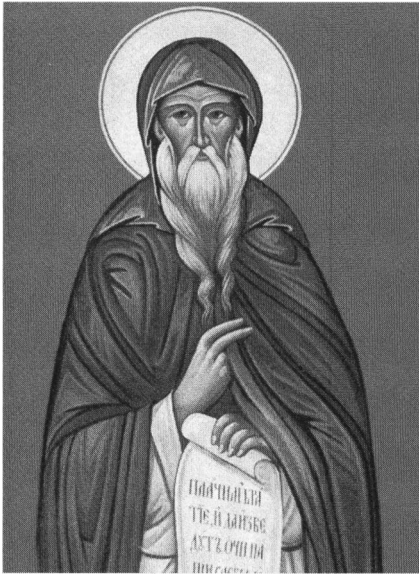
St. Gregory the Theologian.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, 1545–1546.*

came saints of the Church: Sts. Basil the Great, Naucratius, Peter of Sebaste, Gregory of Nyssa, and Thesebia. After her father died, she and her mother established a monastery at their family home in Cappadocia, where she was to all a model and teacher of the virtues. During a famine in the region, the monastery's grain reserves were miraculously replenished through her prayers and were distributed to the local inhabitants. St. Gregory of Nyssa went to visit her shortly after St. Basil's repose, only to find her near death herself. They conversed at length on the future life, and St. Gregory recorded her words in his treatise *On the Soul and the Resurrection*. Commemorated July 19.]

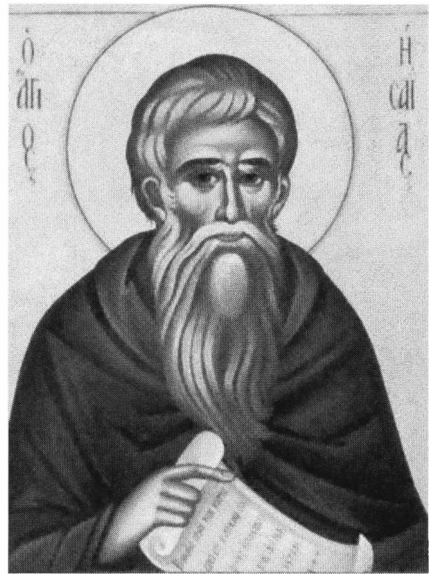
**St. CYRIL, Archbishop of Jerusalem**

**ca. 315–386**

Banished from his see three times for his confession of Orthodoxy against the Arians, he took an honored part in the Second Ecumenical



St. Macarius the Great.  
*Icon by Archimandrite Cyprian, Holy Trinity Monastery, Jordanville, New York.*



St. Isaiah the Solitary.  
*Contemporary Greek icon.*

Council (381). Commemorated March 18. He is chiefly known for his *Catechetical Lectures*, setting forth the Orthodox Faith for catechumens, and the *Mystagogical Lectures*, concerning the Holy Mysteries.

**St. GREGORY the Theologian (of Nazianzus) ca. 329–389**

A fellow student of St. Basil in Athens and his lifelong friend, he used his broad learning in the service of theology. He was one of the leaders in the Orthodox battle against Arianism, especially in the years he served as Archbishop of Constantinople (379–381), culminating in the Second Ecumenical Council (381), over part of which he presided. His *Five Theological Orations* delivered in these years gained him the title of “Theologian.” His other works include orations on feast days and saints, poems, and letters. With St. Basil and St. Gregory of Nyssa, he is one of the three great Cappadocian Fathers. Commemorated on January 25 and 30.

**St. MACARIUS the Great****300–390**

One of the great Egyptian desert fathers at the dawn of monasticism, he was famous for his spiritual wisdom as well as his many miracles. His *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* are a basic textbook of the principles of Orthodox spiritual and ascetic life. Commemorated January 19.

**[St. ISAIAH the Solitary****fourth century**

Egyptian by birth, he withdrew to the desert of Scetis in the time of St. Macarius the Great. Studying the Holy Scriptures day and night, he authored many profitable discourses on the spiritual life. Extracts from these discourses are found in the Greek *Philokalia*, and all his extant writings are included in the Russian *Philokalia* (*Dobrotolyubiye*). Commemorated July 3.]

**St. GREGORY, Bishop of Nyssa****ca. 335–394**

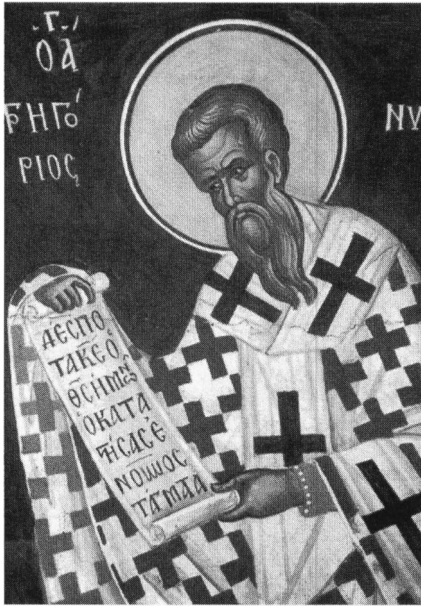
The younger brother of St. Basil the Great, he was educated chiefly by him and joined him in his monastery after giving up a worldly career. He took a prominent part in the Second Ecumenical Council. Commemorated January 10. He wrote dogmatic works (the *Great Catechism*), commentaries on Scripture (*The Making of Man*, *The Life of Moses*, etc.), ascetic treatises, apologetic works against the Arians and others, a *Life of Macrina* (his sister), orations, and letters. Known as a speculative theologian, he erred in accepting Origen's teaching of universal salvation\* (while rejecting Origen's other errors).

**St. AMBROSE, Bishop of Milan****ca. 333–397**

When still a provincial governor and catechumen, he was raised by popular acclaim in eight days to the rank of bishop. He was a leader in the West of the battle against Arianism and paganism. Commemorated December 7. One of the greatest Fathers of the Church, he wrote

---

\* This teaching—that every human being who ever lived, as well as the devil and all the demons, will eventually be saved—was formally condemned by the Church only after St. Gregory of Nyssa's repose: first at a local council in Constantinople in 543, and again at the Fifth Ecumenical Council, held in Constantinople in 553. See Richard Price, ed., *The Acts of the Council of Constantinople of 553*, vol. 1, p. 338; and vol. 2, pp. 123, 270–86.—ED.



St. Gregory of Nyssa.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery,  
1545–1546.*

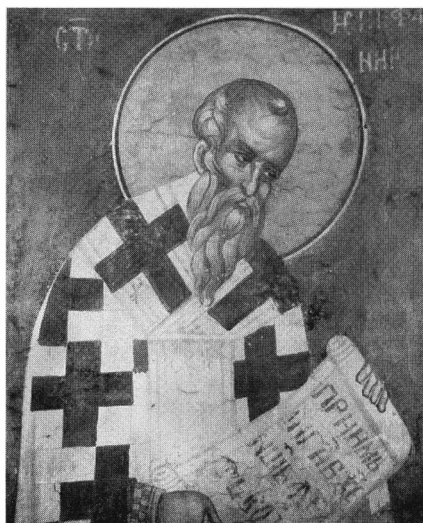


St. Ambrose, Bishop of Milan.  
*Mosaic from the Chapel of St. Victor  
"of the Golden Sky," Milan, Italy,  
fifth century.*

many commentaries on Scripture, dogmatic works, books on the Sacraments and the duties of the clergy, and writings on monastic and moral life. He introduced antiphonal singing and other liturgical influences from the East into the West, and himself wrote hymns.

### St. EPIPHANIUS of Salamis (Constantia) on Cyprus ca. 315–403

An enthusiastic supporter of monasticism, he founded a monastery near Gaza where he was abbot for thirty years, until being elected Metropolitan of Cyprus (367). He was suspicious of classical learning and was a special enemy of Origen. His chief works, *Ancoratus* (*The Well-anchored Man*) and *Panarion* (*The Medicine Chest*), are directed against heresies and contain the most detailed early description of them. Commemorated May 12.



St. Epiphanius of Salamis.  
*Fresco from Gracanica Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1321–1322.*

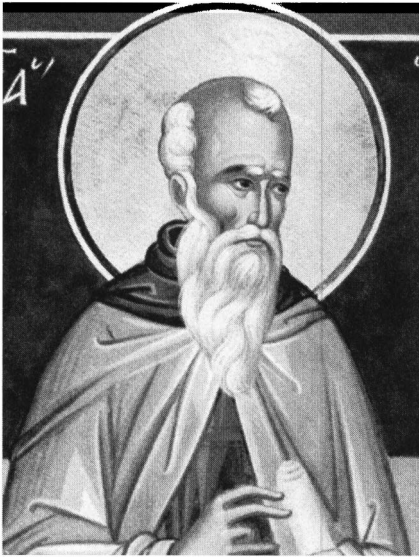


St. John Chrysostom.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, 1545–1546.*

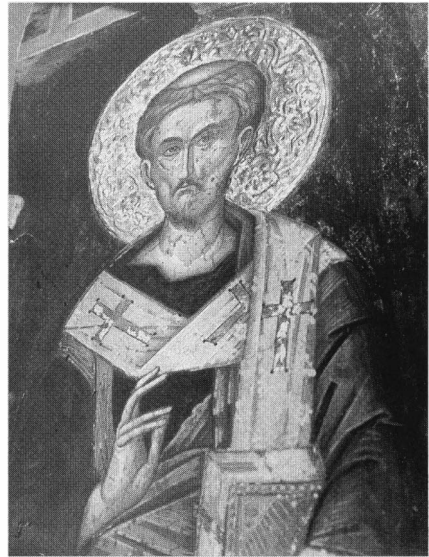
## St. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM

347–407

Born of Christian parents in Antioch, he received a good religious upbringing and secular education and began life as a lawyer. Being drawn by the monastic life (which he led for two years in a cave in the desert), he soon plunged into the study of Holy Scripture. After being ordained a priest, he attracted multitudes to hear his eloquent and inspired sermons, which gained for him the title of “Golden-mouth” (Chrysostom). In 398 he was raised to the post of Archbishop of Constantinople, where he was a zealous preacher of Orthodoxy and an accuser of the vices of those in high places, which led to his fall from imperial favor. On the way to his second place of exile he died. Commemorated November 13 and January 27 and 30. The largest part of his writings are sermons on Scripture, most notably the Epistles of St. Paul; his other works include *On the Priesthood*, writings on the ascetic and monastic life, and homilies on saints and feast days.



Blessed Jerome.  
*Contemporary fresco from Simonos Petra  
Monastery, Mount Athos.*



Blessed Augustine, Bishop of Hippo.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
from the Meteora Monastery of Varlaam,  
Greece, sixteenth century.*

### Blessed JEROME

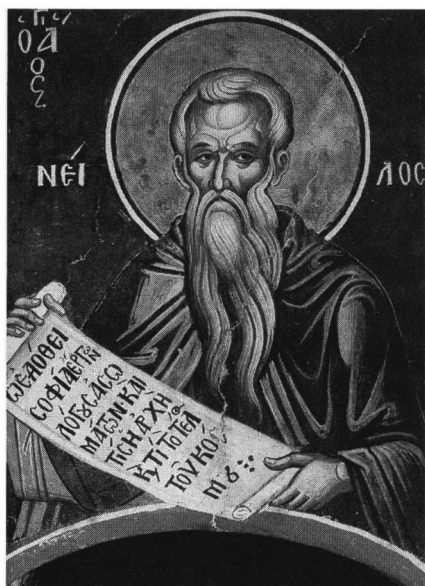
ca. 347–419

After being educated in Rome, he visited the East, where he met St. Gregory the Theologian and lived in monasteries. He returned to Rome as a priest and took part in church affairs, inspiring many of the noble Roman ladies to abandon the world. In 385 he retired to Bethlehem, where he ended his life in scholarly studies. Commemorated June 15. He translated the whole Bible into Latin (the “Vulgate”), wrote commentaries on many of its books, defended the monastic life and wrote Lives of desert fathers, and compiled brief biographies of the Christian teachers of the first four centuries.

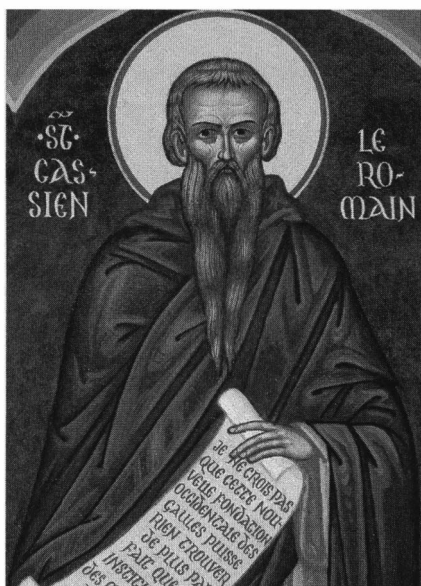
### Blessed AUGUSTINE, Bishop of Hippo

354–430

After a sinful youth, he was baptized after meeting St. Ambrose and became the most renowned Christian teacher in the West. An inspired preacher, he brought many to repentance. In the East he is re-



St. Nilus of Sinai.  
*Fresco by the Cretan iconographer  
Tzortzis, Dionysiou Monastery,  
Mount Athos, 1547.*



St. John Cassian.  
*Wall painting from the Monastery of the  
Protection of the Mother of God,  
Bussy-en-Othe, France, 2004–2007.*

spected more for his piety and moral writings than for his theology, where, especially in his teaching on grace, his exaggerations have given rise to controversy. His writings include *The City of God* (against the pagans), *The Confessions*, *The Soliloquies*, numerous sermons and letters, and polemical works against the Manichaeans, Donatists, and Pelagians. Commemorated June 15.

#### [St. NILUS of Sinai

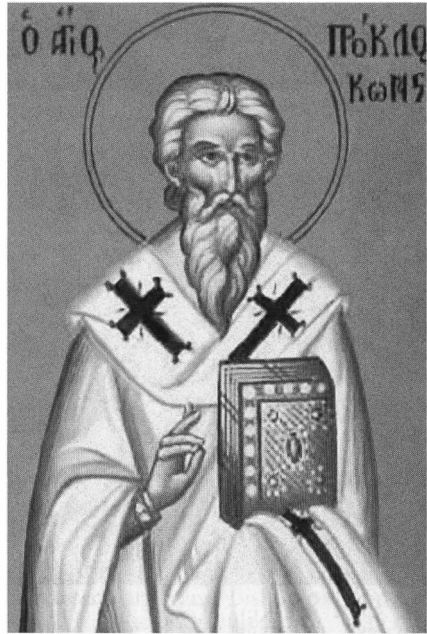
†ca. 430

Originally from Ancyra in Galatia, he was a disciple of St. John Chrysostom, who instructed him in the study of Holy Scripture and in works of piety. For a time he served as a prefect in Constantinople under Emperor Theodosius I (St. Theodosius the Great). Together with his family, he embraced the monastic life in Egypt: his wife and daughter in a convent in Egypt, and he and his son at Mount Sinai. He wrote





St. Cyril of Alexandria.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, 1545–1546.*



St. Proclus of  
Constantinople.  
*Contemporary Greek icon.*

discourses on the spiritual life (some of which have been included in *The Philokalia*), as well as many letters dealing with theological, apologetic, exegetical, and ascetic themes. As is known from his letters, he vigorously denounced the persecution of St. John Chrysostom both to Emperor Arcadius and to the imperial courtiers. Commemorated November 12.]

### St. JOHN CASSIAN, presbyter of Marseilles 360–435

A Westerner, he received a monastic formation in Egypt and Palestine and heard the sermons of St. John Chrysostom in Constantinople. He returned to the West and gave the first systematic presentation of the principles of Eastern monasticism in the West in his *Institutes* and *Conferences*; he also founded monasteries for men and women in Marseilles, and wrote a book *Against Nestorius*. Commemorated February 29.

**St. CYRIL of Alexandria****ca. 375–444**

Patriarch of Alexandria from 412, he was the leader in the defense of Orthodoxy and the title of “Theotokos” for the Virgin Mary against the Nestorian heresy at the Third Ecumenical Council (431) and in many writings. He also wrote works against the Arians and pagans, many commentaries on Scripture, and sermons and letters. Commemorated January 18 and June 9.

**[St. PROCLUS of Constantinople****†446**

He was a disciple and novice of St. John Chrysostom (see p. 726 above), and was ordained a deacon and priest by him. As Bishop of Cyzicus, he fought against the Nestorian heresy, delivering a sermon in the presence of Nestorius himself (then Archbishop of Constantinople), in which he defended the title of “Theotokos.” This sermon was later made part of the acts of the Third Ecumenical Council (431), at which Nestorius was deposed. In 435 St. Proclus was elected Archbishop of Constantinople; three years later he had the relics of his exiled teacher, St. John Chrysostom, translated back to Constantinople from Comana and interred with great honor in the Church of the Holy Apostles. His extant works include twenty-five sermons and several letters, including a celebrated letter known as the *Tome of Proclus* (436), in which he condemned propositions made by the Nestorians. Commemorated November 20.]

**[SOZOMEN (Salminius Hermias Sozomenus)****ca. 400–ca. 450**

He was born in southern Palestine into a Christian family. His grandfather, along with many others in the region, had converted to Christianity after witnessing a miracle performed by St. Hilarion the Great (293–371). St. Hilarion’s disciples became Sozomen’s first teachers, imparting to him a reverence for monasticism as well as a mastery of Greek. As an adult he went to Beirut to study law, and then to Constantinople to work as a lawyer. Beginning around 440, he undertook to write a history of the Church from the Ascension of Christ to his own times, dedicating it to the then-reigning emperor, Theodosius II. This work—of which the chapters covering the years 312 to 425 have



St. Diadochus of Photiki.  
*Fresco from Gracanica Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1321–1322.*



Sts. Barsanuphius and John.  
*Contemporary icon by Nun Katherine,  
St. Andrew School of Iconography,  
Indianapolis, Indiana.*

survived to the present day—is an important, painstakingly researched source of early Church history.]

### Blessed THEODORET of Cyrus

ca. 393–458

Bishop of Cyrus near Antioch, he received his education in Syrian monasteries. Involved in controversy because for a long time he refused to condemn Nestorius (fearing to go to an extreme), he later became a confessor of Orthodoxy against the heresy of Eutyches (Monophysitism)\* at the Fourth Ecumenical Council (451). His writings are quite various and include, apart from his polemical works, commentaries on Scripture, the last great refutation of paganism (which reveals his broad knowledge of pagan literature), an *Ecclesiastical History* that continues Eusebius' narrative to 428, a *History of the Lovers of God* (the Lives of thirty Syrian ascetics known to him), and many letters.

---

\* The idea that in Christ there is only one nature.—Ed.

[St. DIADOCHUS of Photiki

ca. 400–before 486

As Bishop of Photiki in Epirus (present-day northwestern Greece), he showed himself to be one of the chief opponents of the Monophysite heresy. In his treatise *On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination* (included in *The Philokalia*), he countered the false teaching of the Messalian (Euchite) sect that Baptism and the other Mysteries were powerless to drive the devil completely out of the soul. Commemorated March 29.]

[Sts. BARSANUPHIUS the Great and JOHN the Prophet

sixth century

St. Barsanuphius was an Egyptian who as a young man embraced the monastic life in Palestine. After years of coenobitic life, he went to the monastery of Abba Seridus near Gaza, built a cell a short distance away, and lived there in reclusion, seeing no one except St. Seridus. In his weekly visits to St. Barsanuphius, St. Seridus brought him questions from the monastery's monks and from laymen, and wrote down his answers of spiritual direction. After some years Barsanuphius left his cell to his disciple John and settled nearby. St. John conducted the same life of silence as did his elder, and like him was vouchsafed the gifts of clairvoyance and prophecy, so that he was able to communicate with his elder without having to see or write to him. He too would answer questions brought to him by Abba Seridus. A collection of over eight hundred answers from Sts. Barsanuphius and John has come down to us, touching upon topics as various as watchfulness and prayer, social relations, points of Scriptural interpretation, and Church doctrines. Commemorated February 6.]

[St. Abba DOROTHEUS of Gaza

sixth century

Originally from Antioch, he entered the monastery of Abba Seridus near Gaza, and gave himself with full trust to the direction of the holy Elders Barsanuphius and John. (About a hundred of his questions to the Elders, together with their answers to him, are included in the collection mentioned above.) After the deaths of Sts. John the Prophet and Seridus, and St. Barsanuphius' withdrawal into complete seclusion, St. Dorotheus went to found a monastery between Gaza and



St. Abba Dorotheus of Gaza.  
*Fresco from the Dousikon Monastery,  
Pyli, Trikala, Greece, sixteenth century.*



St. Isaac the Syrian.  
*Contemporary icon by Fr. Pachomios,  
Mount Athos.*

Maiuma. There he directed his disciples in the spirit he had received from Sts. Barsanuphius and John. His *Spiritual Instructions*, which he bequeathed to his monks, is considered one of the Church's main primers of monastic and spiritual life. Commemorated August 13.]

## [OECUMENIUS

late sixth century

He produced the first Greek commentary on the book of the Apocalypse (Revelation). From theological statements in this work, it appears that he embraced a non-Chalcedonian Christology,\* not accepting the formulation of the Fourth Ecumenical Council regarding

---

\* Specifically, the Christology of the heretic Severus of Antioch, who, while distancing himself from the expressions of the above-mentioned Eutyches, still held that Christ had only one nature at His Incarnation. See the evaluation of Oecumenius' theology in Eugenia Scarvelis Constantinou, *Andrew of Caesarea and the Apocalypse in the Ancient Church of the East*, part 1, pp. 14–27.—ED.

the two natures of Christ. It was probably due to this, combined with his sometimes fanciful interpretations of the book of the Apocalypse, that his commentary was not accepted by the Orthodox Church.

[ANDREW, Archbishop of Caesarea

late sixth—early seventh century

As a hierarch in Cappadocia, Archbishop Andrew was a well-known and respected exegete. At the request of a fellow bishop, he produced the second Greek commentary on the book of the Apocalypse—primarily, it appears, as an Orthodox alternative to Oecumenius' attempt. (He frequently cited Oecumenius' interpretations, usually to refute them, and sometimes to add to them.) This balanced, sober, and doctrinally sound commentary drew frequently on passages by earlier Fathers concerning the book of the Apocalypse. Translated into Georgian, Slavonic, and Latin, it became the standard and authoritative commentary on the Apocalypse for the Eastern Orthodox Church. Of Archbishop Andrew's other works, only a series of answers to exegetical questions, known as the *Therapeutike*, has come down to us.]

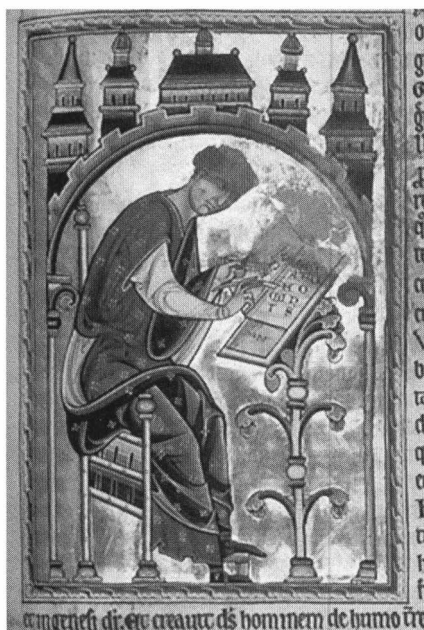
[St. ISAAC the Syrian

seventh century

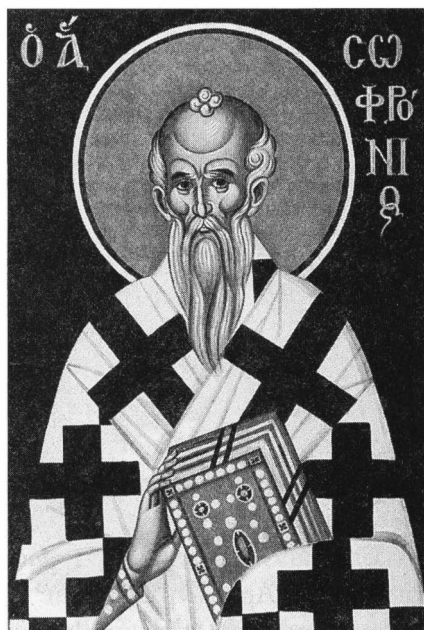
Born in Qatar on the western shore of Persian Gulf at the beginning of the seventh century, he was the Bishop of Nineveh (in present-day Iraq) for a short time before retiring into solitude, first in the wilderness of Mount Matout, and later in the monastery of Rabban Shapur. A selection of his *Ascetical Homilies*—translated from Syriac into Greek at the end of the eighth century, into Georgian in the tenth century, and into Slavonic in the fourteenth century—acquired a prominent place in the ascetic literature of the Orthodox Church, being used as a manual of prayer, contemplation, and spiritual warfare by those living in stillness. Commemorated January 28.]\*

---

\* St. Isaac is absent from the Greek hagiographical collections but is commemorated in the Slav collections. It is now generally known that he belonged to the Church of the East, which alone was present during the seventh century in the area he inhabited, and which did not recognize the Third and subsequent Ecumenical Councils.—Ed.



St. Isidore of Seville writing *The Etymologies*. Illumination from the Aberdeen Bestiary, twelfth century.



St. Sophronius of Jerusalem. Contemporary fresco from Ormylia Monastery, Greece.

### [St. ISIDORE, Archbishop of Seville

ca. 560–636

Born into a noble family of Cathagenes in Spain, he shared in the work of his older brother, St. Leander, Archbishop of Seville, in converting the Arian Visigoths to the Orthodox Faith. When his brother died, he was consecrated as his successor in Seville, the first see of the Church in Spain. He continued his work among the Visigoths, which eventually met with complete success: Arianism, which had been the original form of Christianity among the Visigoths, was eradicated. Known as a miracle-worker, he was also recognized by his contemporaries as the most learned Western European of his age—an estimation that is shared by scholars even today. His principal work, *The Etymologies*—a voluminous compilation of all the knowledge up to his time—was the primary source of knowledge in the West for many centuries. Commemorated April 4.]

**[St. SOPHRONIUS of Jerusalem****ca. 560–638**

In his late teens and early twenties he traveled throughout the monastic centers of Asia Minor, Egypt, and Rome with his spiritual father, Monk John Moschus, author of the monastic chronicle *The Spiritual Meadow*. Many years later, as a monk in a monastery near Carthage, he was the spiritual father of St. Maximus the Confessor, inspiring him to defend the Faith against the newly arisen heresy of Monothelitism.\* Elected Patriarch of Jerusalem in 634, St. Sophronius actively opposed the new heresy, sending a synodical letter to all the patriarchs on how it conflicts with Orthodox doctrine. This letter has been preserved along with a number of his sermons and poems, as well as his moving *Life of St. Mary of Egypt*, which is read in Orthodox churches every year during Great Lent. Commemorated March 11.]

**St. MAXIMUS the Confessor****580–662**

Born of a noble family of Constantinople, he was secretary of Emperor Heraclius. Having left the world and become a monk, he engaged in an energetic battle against the heresy of Monothelitism, gaining its condemnation at a council in Rome.\*\* For his confession of Orthodoxy his tongue was cut out and his hand cut off. Commemorated January 21 and August 13. His chief writings are on spiritual life (*Four Hundred Texts on Love* and others); his other works include explanations of the Liturgy and the books of St. Dionysius the Areopagite, and polemical writings against the Monothelites and Monophysites.\*\*\*

**[St. BEDE the Venerable****672–735**

He was a priest and monk at the Northumbrian monastery of St. Peter at Wearmouth (today part of Sunderland, England), and of its daughter monastery, St. Paul's, in modern Jarrow. His varied works in-

---

\* The idea that in Christ there is only one will.—ED.

\*\* The Lateran Council of 649. In 680, less than two decades after St. Maximus' repose, the Monothelite heresy was condemned at the Sixth Ecumenical Council, held in Constantinople.—ED.

\*\*\* A large part of St. Maximus' writings is also devoted to combating and correcting the errors of Origenism.—ED.





St. Maximus the Confessor.  
*Fresco from the Church of the Protaton,  
Karyes, Mount Athos, fourteenth century.*



St. Bede the Venerable.  
*Contemporary icon from Britain.*

clude *The Ecclesiastical History of the English People*, *The History of the Abbots of Wearmouth and Jarrow*, *The Life of St. Cuthbert of Lindisfarne*, commentaries on many books of the Old and New Testaments, a Martyrology, homilies, and hymns, as well as treatises on chronology, grammar, music, and natural phenomena. Commemorated May 25.]

### St. JOHN DAMASCENE

ca. 675–749

A minister under the caliph in Damascus, he wrote three letters in defense of the holy icons, for which he was slandered before the caliph and his hand was cut off. After his miraculous healing by the Mother of God, he abandoned the world and retired to St. Sabbas' monastery near Jerusalem, where he wrote many books. His most famous work is *On the Orthodox Faith*, which is the best summary of the teachings of the early Church Fathers. He also wrote polemical works against various



St. John Damascene.  
*Fresco by Monk Theophanes the Cretan,  
Stavronikita Monastery, 1545–1546.*



St. Cosmas of Maiuma.  
*Fresco from the Meteora Monastery of  
Varlaam, Greece, sixteenth century.*

heresies (most notably the three letters against the Iconoclasts) and sermons on feast days. He is renowned as the writer of many feast-day hymns and canons (including the service of Pascha), and as the compiler of the *Octoechos*, whose verses (especially the dogmatika) are a summing up of Orthodox teaching. Commemorated December 4.

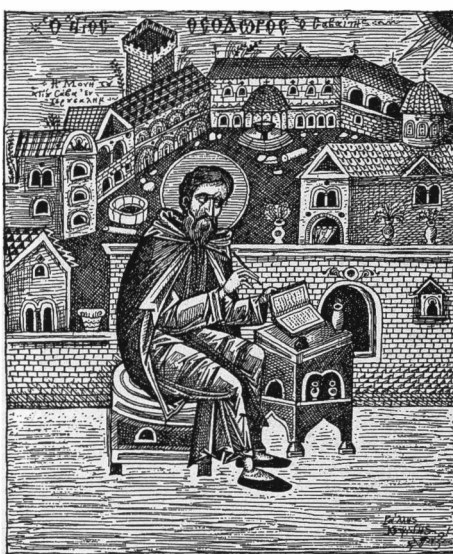
[St. COSMAS of Maiuma

† ca. 787

Orphaned at a young age, he was adopted by Sergius, the father of St. John Damascene. Together with St. John he received an excellent education under the tutelage of a learned monk from Sicily (also named Cosmas), and later became a monk of St. Sabbas' monastery. In 743 he was consecrated as Bishop of Maiuma, located on the southern coast of Palestine. He is well-known as a composer of liturgical canons, fourteen of which are sung every year in the Orthodox Church. His most fre-



St. Theodore the Studite.  
*Fresco from Decani Monastery,  
Kosovo, Serbia, 1338–1347.*



St. Theodore the Great Ascetic.  
*Iconographic drawing by  
Rallis Kopsidis, 1956.*

quently sung hymn is to the Mother of God: “More honorable than the Cherubim ...” He also wrote commentaries on the poems of St. Gregory the Theologian; his canon for the Nativity of Christ was based on a Nativity sermon of St. Gregory. Commemorated October 12 or 14.]

**[St. THEODORE the Studite (the Confessor) 759–826**

He was born into an aristocratic family in Constantinople. His uncle St. Plato of Sakkudion (+813)—a confessor of Orthodoxy against the Iconoclasts—inspired his entire family to embrace the monastic life. As abbot of the Studite monastery in Constantinople, St. Theodore shone as a guide of souls and a composer of liturgical hymns, including many hymns of the *Lenten Triodion*. When a new period of Iconoclasm began under Emperor Leo the Armenian, St. Theodore wrote treatises and letters in defense of the icons, for which he was exiled, scourged, and imprisoned. Shortly before his death he dictated his *Testament* for the guidance of the Studite monastery, which was later incorporated

into the Rules of monasteries on Mount Athos and elsewhere. Commemorated November 11.]

[St. THEODORE the Great Ascetic

†ca. 848

A monk of St. Sabbas' monastery, he was elected Bishop of Edessa in Syria.\* He was an outstanding preacher, and also a great apologist: his public disputations with those outside the Church led to the conversion of many to the Orthodox Faith. Leading a strict ascetic life, he was granted by God the gift of healing the sick. This, too, resulted in many non-believers embracing the Faith, especially Muslims. Two works attributed to him are included in *The Philokalia*. Commemorated July 19.]

St. PHOTIUS the Great

810–893

Of noble birth and a relative of martyrs and confessors, he occupied a high place at the Byzantine court when he was elected Patriarch of Constantinople, even though he was still a layman. He suffered much from the political intrigues of the court, but while he was Patriarch he was able to state clearly the Orthodox position against the pretensions to universal rule of the Pope of Rome and against the Western error of the *Filioque*. He also did much for the conversion of the Slavs, sending the mission of Sts. Cyril and Methodius. He wrote on the Procession of the Holy Spirit, against the Paulicians (a new Manichaean sect), dogmatic works, sermons, letters; he made an important collection of the Church's canons, and in his *Library* made an excellent critical compilation of a number of both Christian and pagan works. Commemorated February 6.

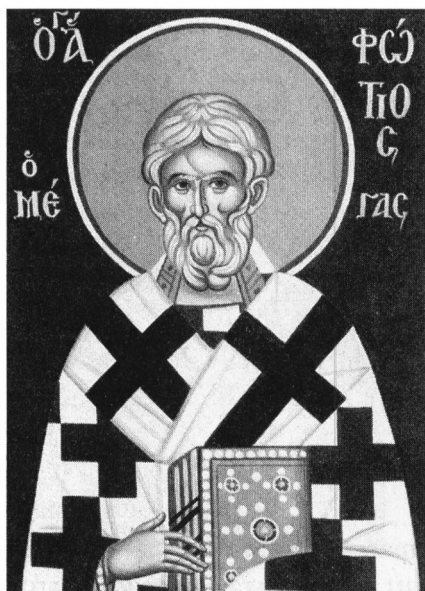
[St. SYMEON Metaphrastes

†late tenth century

Born in Constantinople, he was an imperial chancellor (logothete) during the reigns of three emperors. Retiring from the world and becoming a monk, he devoted himself to collecting and editing the Lives

---

\* It has been suggested in recent times that he was actually Bishop of Harran, near the present-day border of Turkey and Syria. See Hieromonk Makarios of Simonos Petra, *The Synaxarion*, vol. 6, p. 196 (2008).—ED.



St. Photius the Great.  
*Contemporary fresco from Ormylia  
Monastery, Greece.*



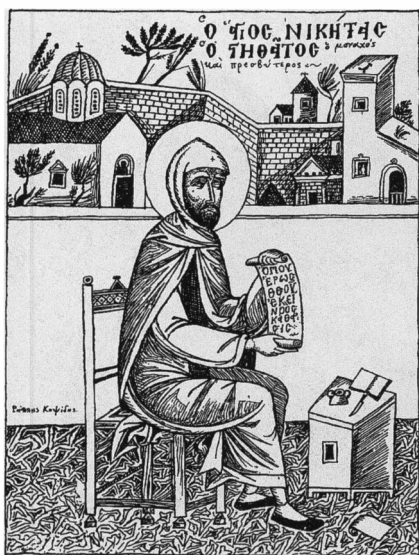
St. Symeon the New Theologian.  
*Contemporary fresco from Simonos Petra  
Monastery, Mount Athos.*

of the saints: a monumental work that remains the basis of Orthodox *Synaxaria* to this day. The name by which he is known, *Metaphrastes*, means “interpreter” or “translator.” He also adapted and abridged the ascetical treatises of Sts. Basil the Great and Macarius the Great; his version of the latter is included in *The Philokalia*. Commemorated November 9.]

### St. SYMEON the New Theologian

949–1022

Raised in the imperial court of Constantinople, he early attended the Studite monastery where, under the direction of Symeon the Devout, he labored in the strictest ascetic life. Elected abbot of the monastery of St. Mamas, he renewed it spiritually with his teachings. He suffered much from monks who did not desire such strict teaching, as well as over the veneration of his own spiritual father after the latter’s death. Commemorated March 12 and October 12. His homilies on



Nicetas Stethatos.

*Iconographic drawing by Rallis Kopsidis, 1956.*



St. Peter Damascene.

*Iconographic drawing by Rallis Kopsidis, 1952.*

spiritual life, on the highest as well as a common level, have an honored place in *The Philokalia*, and are so profound that they have earned him the title of “New Theologian.”

## [NICETAS STETHATOS

ca. 1000—ca. 1090

A priest-monk of the Studite monastery, he was the disciple and biographer of St. Symeon the New Theologian.\* Some years after St. Symeon's repose, as a result of a vision in which the Saint appeared to him, Nicetas prepared an edition of Symeon's works. At the time of the Schism of 1054, Nicetas wrote two books in defense of the Orthodox Church against the Latins. Among his other theological writings are treatises on the soul, spiritual contemplation, the new heaven and new earth, and the angelic and ecclesiastical hierarchies. His three Centu-

---

\* Nicetas' biography of St. Symeon was translated for the first time into English by Fr. Seraphim Rose and included in St. Symeon the New Theologian, *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption* (republished as *FCM*).—Ed.



Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid.  
*Printed Slavic icon of the  
seventeenth century.*



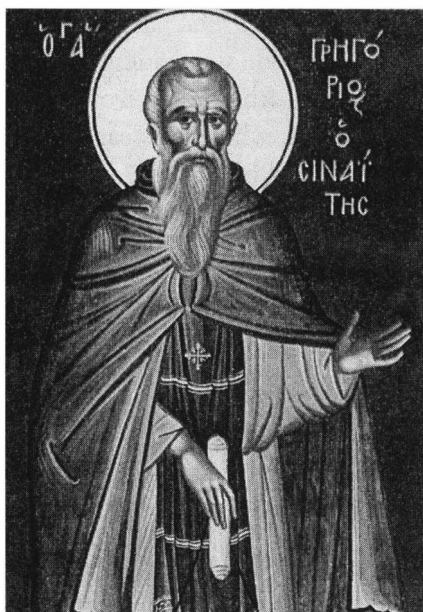
Theoleptus, Metropolitan  
of Philadelphia.  
*Contemporary Greek icon.*

ries of texts on the practice of the virtues, the purification of the *nous*, and the acquisition of higher knowledge are contained in *The Philokalia*.]

#### [St. PETER DAMASCENE

eleventh–twelfth century

Living in stillness in a small monastic community, he immersed himself in the writings of the Holy Fathers. Out of his study and practical application of these texts, he produced a rich treasury of instructions on prayer, watchfulness, and the cultivation of the virtues. This work was later included in its entirety in *The Philokalia*. Because it cites the teachings of numerous Fathers who came before St. Peter, St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain (see below) called it “a concentrated *Philokalia* within the more extended *Philokalia*.” Commemorated February 9.]



St. Gregory the Sinaite.  
*Contemporary fresco from Simonos Petra  
Monastery, Mount Athos.*



St. Gregory Palamas.  
*Fresco from Vatopaidi Monastery, Mount  
Athos, 1371.*

**Blessed THEOPHYLACT of Ohrid and Bulgaria ca. 1050–ca. 1110**

A native of Constantinople, he received a good classical education and became Archbishop of Ohrid in Bulgaria when it was still under Byzantine rule. He is mainly known for his commentaries on almost all the books of the New Testament, where he followed closely the commentaries of St. John Chrysostom. He wrote also homilies, letters, and an accusation against the errors of the Latins which, while mild in tone, emphasizes the impossibility of accepting the *Filioque*. [Commemorated December 31.]

**[THEOLEPTUS, Metropolitan of Philadelphia ca. 1250–1322**

After his monastic tonsure, he suffered imprisonment because of his outspoken opposition to the union between the Orthodox Church and the Church of Rome which was promulgated at the Council of Ly-



ons (1274). In 1284 he was elevated to the see of Philadelphia, where he served as metropolitan for nearly forty years. He was widely revered as a spiritual father and a teacher of hesychasm (the practice of noetic prayer and inner stillness). St. Gregory Palamas, who in his early years was Metropolitan Theoleptus' disciple, described him as "an authentic theologian and a trustworthy visionary of the truth of God's mysteries" (*In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts* 1.2.12). Some of Theoleptus' spiritual instructions are included in *The Philokalia*. Commemorated June 25.]

[St. GREGORY the Sinaite

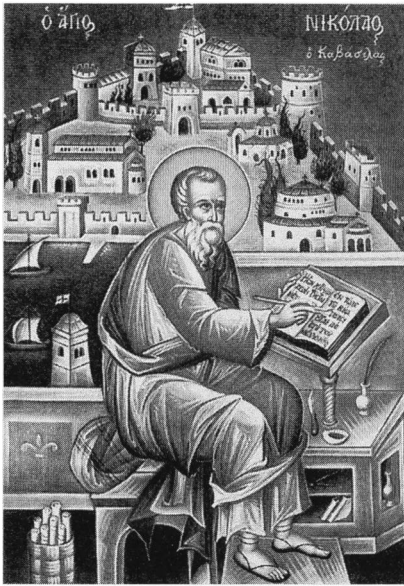
ca. 1265–1346

He spent the early years of his monastic life on Cyprus, Mount Sinai, and Crete. Having learned the practice of noetic prayer from the hermit Arsenius, he went to Mount Athos, where many monks flocked to him for instruction in the hesychast way of life. Due to incursions by the Turks, he and his disciples were forced to leave Athos, eventually settling in Paroria, on the frontier between Bulgaria and the Byzantine empire. Through his spiritual friendship with the rulers of Byzantium, Bulgaria, Serbia, and Wallachia, and through his numerous disciples of various nationalities, St. Gregory became the fountainhead of the vast hesychast movement that spread from Byzantium to the Slavic world. Five of his theological and ascetic works are found in *The Philokalia*. Commemorated April 6 and August 8.]

St. GREGORY Palamas

1296–1359

A learned monk of Mount Athos of exalted spiritual life; later he became Archbishop of Thessaloniki. He fought the heresy of the Latinizer Barlaam of Calabria, who rose against the contemplative life of the hesychast monks and taught that the light of Mount Tabor and the grace of God in general is something created. St. Gregory, in his many treatises on this subject, distinguishes between the Essence and the Energies of God, both being equally Uncreated; through the Uncreated Energies man can have true communion with God, which would not be the case if Barlaam's opinions were correct. Commemorated November 14 and on the Second Sunday of Lent—the latter feast a special recognition of his importance in the defense of Orthodoxy.



St. Nicholas Cabasilas.  
*Contemporary fresco from the Monastery  
of the Evangelist John the Theologian,  
Souroti, Thessaloniki, Greece.*

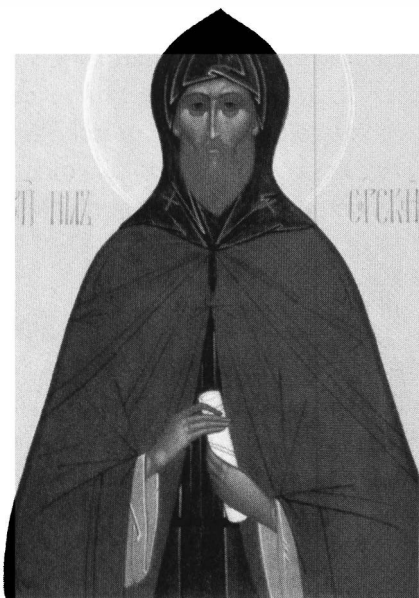


St. Symeon, Archbishop of  
Thessaloniki.  
*Contemporary Greek icon.*

[St. NICHOLAS Cabasilas

ca. 1322–after 1391

He received his spiritual formation from Dorotheus Blates, a close disciple of St. Gregory Palamas and later Metropolitan of Thessaloniki. Educated in Constantinople, he served for a time as imperial counselor. During a council held in Constantinople in 1351, he actively defended the hesychast theology of St. Gregory Palamas against the Saint's opponents. Later he retired from public life and gave himself over to prayer and contemplation. It is not known whether he remained a layman or became a monk, but it is recorded that many important figures in the empire, including the emperor himself, regarded him as their spiritual father. His two major works, *A Commentary on the Divine Liturgy* and *The Life in Christ*, elucidate the theology of the Holy Mysteries of the Church, explaining how they unite man with the God-man Christ. Commemorated June 20.]



St. Nilus of Sora.  
*Icon by the A. V. Mel'nikov School of  
Iconography, Sergiev Posad, Russia, 2001.*



St. Nilus the Myrrh-gusher.  
*Fresco from Vatopaidi Monastery,  
Mount Athos.*

**[St. SYMEON, Archbishop of Thessaloniki †1430**

He served as Archbishop of Thessaloniki from 1417 until his repose. During those difficult years, when the city was about to fall under the Turkish yoke, he tirelessly exhorted his flock to remain true to the Orthodox Faith and place all their hope in God. He wrote a discourse on the priesthood, composed many hymns and prayers, and compiled a spiritual commentary on all the rites of the Orthodox Church, which remains to this day as one of the primary sources of information on Byzantine liturgics. Commemorated September 15.]

**[St. NILUS of Sora 1433–1508**

Having begun his monastic life in Russia, he spent several years on Mount Athos in order to learn the hesychast way of life that was still flourishing there. On his return to Russia, he established there the

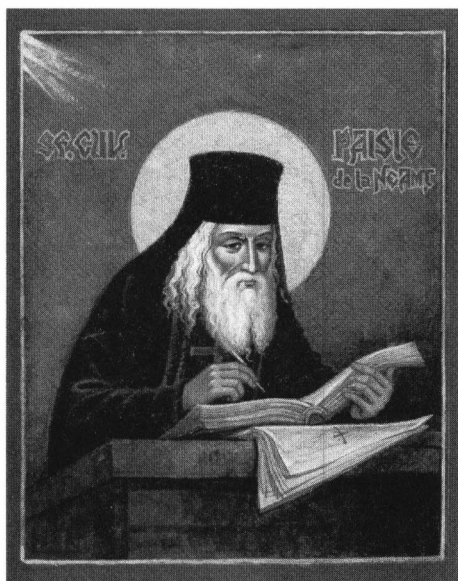
“skete” form of monasticism, which—being the “middle way” between living alone (eremitism) and living in large monasteries (coenobitism)—consists of a small community of monks residing in separate cells and coming together for church services. He composed a Rule of skete life for his monastic brethren, in which he imparted the tradition of the Holy Fathers on inner stillness, the practice of the Jesus Prayer, and the struggle against the passions. He taught that it is better for monasteries to be poor, without many possessions or land holdings, so that the inhabitants will not be distracted from their true calling. Commemorated April 7 and May 7.]

**[St. NILUS the Myrrh-gusher of Mount Athos †1651**

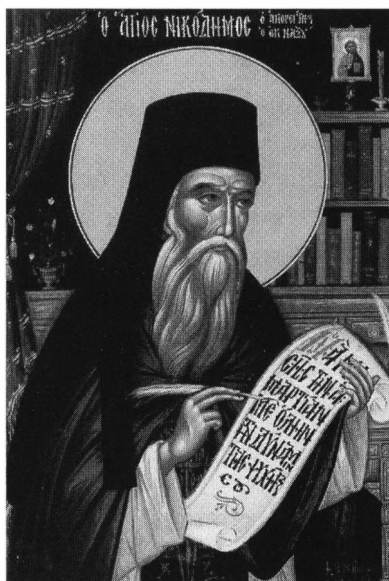
Born in the Peloponnese, he went with his uncle, Hieromonk Macarius, to the Monastery of Malevi, where he became a monk and a priest. Desiring greater solitude, he and his uncle went to live in a cell on Mount Athos. After Fr. Macarius' repose, St. Nilus found a cave on a sheer cliff overlooking the sea, almost inaccessible to any living thing. There he lived until his repose, unknown to all, with God as the only witness of his spiritual struggles. When he was buried near his cave, a fragrant myrrh flowed from his body so abundantly that it poured into the sea hundreds of feet below, where people came in boats to collect it for its healing properties. Accounts of his posthumous appearances, healings, and teachings have been recorded on Mount Athos. Commemorated May 7 and November 12.]

**[St. PAISIUS Velichkovsky 1722–1794**

Born in the Ukraine, as a young man he went to the sketes of Wallachia (in present-day Romania) for monastic training. From there he went to Mount Athos, where he sought out the writings of the hesychast Fathers, began to translate them from Greek into Slavonic, and put their teachings into practice. Soon monks—primarily of the Moldavian and Slavonic tongues—came to him seeking to learn the way of the Fathers. He and his disciples later settled in Moldavia (also now part of Romania), where a thousand monks gathered around him. He tirelessly continued to produce translations of hesychast writings, which eventually formed the Slavonic *Philokalia* (*Dobrotolyubiye*), pub-



St. Paisius Velichkovsky.  
*Contemporary Romanian icon.*



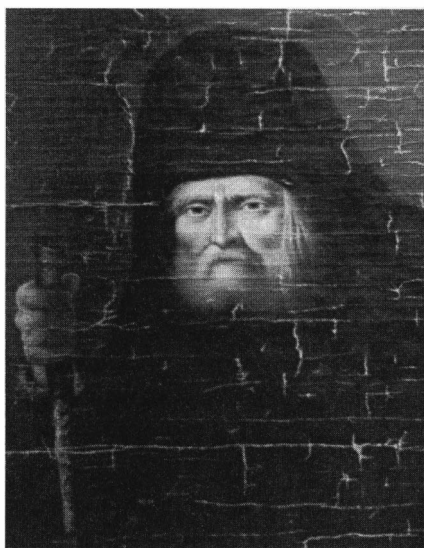
St. Nicodemus of the  
Holy Mountain.  
*Contemporary Greek icon.*

lished in Moscow in 1793. These translations, together with his influence through the activity of his disciples, led to a widespread blossoming of sanctity in nineteenth-century Russia. Commemorated November 15.]

### St. NICODEMUS of the Holy Mountain

1749–1809

A monk of various sketes of Mount Athos, he was a leader (together with St. Macarius of Corinth in Greece and St. Paisius Velichkovsky for Russia) of the eighteenth-century Orthodox movement of return to the sources of the Church's faith and piety. He combined the strictest ascetic life with an immense labor of writing. His works are all directed to the practical benefit of Orthodox Christians; they include Lives of all the major saints of the Church (*Great Synaxarion*) and of the New Martyrs of Greece, the *Evergetinos* (sayings of the desert fathers), *A Handbook of Spiritual Counsel*, *Unseen Warfare*,



St. Seraphim of Sarov.  
*Portrait of 1832.*



St. Philaret, Metropolitan of Moscow.  
*Nineteenth-century engraving.*

commentaries especially on the Epistles of St. Paul, *The Rudder* (a collection of the Church's canons), and many others.\* He was a zealous defender of Orthodox teaching and practice against the innovations of the Latins. Commemorated July 14.

[St. SERAPHIM of Sarov

1754–1833

As a young man he entered Sarov Monastery in Russia, remaining there until his repose. For his humility and great labors of prayer, he was granted visions of Christ, the Mother of God, and the heavenly world, and was vouchsafed the gifts of miracle-working and clairvoyance. Thousands of pilgrims flocked to him to ask his prayers and spiritual counsel. His teachings were written down by his disciples and published after his repose: *Spiritual Instructions to Laymen and Monks* (edited by St. Philaret, Metropolitan of Moscow) and *Conversation of*

---

\* Along with St. Macarius of Corinth, St. Nicodemus was responsible for preparing the Greek *Philokalia* for publication, which took place in 1782.—ED.

*St. Seraphim of Sarov on the Aim of the Christian Life.* Commemorated January 2 and July 19.]

[**St. PHILARET (Drozdov), Metropolitan of Moscow** 1782–1867

An ascetic and miracle-worker, he was at the same time an outstanding orator and a penetrating theological writer, fully in the tradition of the Holy Fathers who preceded him. As leader of the Russian Church, he gave crucial support to the spiritual revival generated by St. Paisius Velichkovsky and his monastic followers. He took part in preparing the publication of the Bible and Patristic writings in modern Russian, and authored over two hundred works of his own—the most influential being his *Longer Catechism of the Orthodox, Catholic, Eastern Church*, which has remained a standard text in Russia and other Orthodox countries since its publication in 1823. Commemorated November 19.]

**St. IGNATIUS Brianchaninov, Bishop of the Caucasus** 1807–1867

An offspring of the monastic tradition of St. Paisius Velichkovsky, he was a leading apologist in Russia for Orthodox monasticism and Patristic Orthodoxy against the errors of modern secular “enlightenment.” He was an especially keen critic of wrong approaches in spiritual life and exposed the many forms of spiritual deception (*prelest*). His works include *The Arena* (addressed to the monastics of the last times), *On the Prayer of Jesus*, and numerous homilies on aspects of the spiritual life. [Commemorated April 30.]

**St. THEOPHAN the Recluse, Bishop of Tambov** 1815–1894

After retiring from his bishopric in 1866, he conducted a work of Orthodox enlightenment in Russia similar to that of St. Nicodemus in Greece. He translated into Russian *The Philokalia*, *Unseen Warfare*, and many homilies of St. Symeon the New Theologian; he wrote detailed commentaries on the Epistles of St. Paul, several basic textbooks of spiritual life (*The Path to Salvation*, *The Spiritual Life and How to Be Attuned to It*), and numerous letters on spiritual and moral life. Like St. Ignatius, he was especially concerned to preserve the purity of the Or-

thodox worldview against modern “enlightenment.” [Commemorated January 10.]

**St. JOHN of Kronstadt** 1829–1908

A Russian parish priest who was a wonderworker in the spirit of the ancient saints of Orthodoxy, he revealed himself in his diaries and sermons as a defender of Patristic faith and piety against the errors of modern times. His *My Life in Christ* is a treasury of Orthodox attitudes and worldview. Commemorated October 19 and December 20.

**St. NECTARIOS, Metropolitan of Pentapolis and Wonderworker of Aegina** 1846–1920

Pious and humble from his childhood, he was ordained bishop in the Church of Alexandria, only to suffer deposition due to the envy of his colleagues. The last thirty years of his life he spent as director of a seminary school and then as builder and spiritual father of a convent in Aegina. His numerous miracles after his death have revealed him as a wonderworker of our times. Always intent on the Orthodox enlightenment of himself and others, he wrote numerous works on aspects of Orthodox faith and piety, including a thorough refutation of the errors of Roman Catholicism; his aim was always to strengthen Christians in the simplicity, love, and self-sacrifice of genuine Orthodoxy. Commemorated November 9.

*[Brief descriptions of other saints and elders of modern times are provided in appendix 2 above.]*





Detail of an icon of the Resurrection of Christ (the harrowing of hell),  
showing Adam being delivered from hell by Christ.  
*Fresco from the Chora Church of the Holy Savior,  
Constantinople, 1315–1321.*

# NOTES

*In notes for parts of the present book taken from Fr. Seraphim's writings or lectures, bracketed portions have been added by the editor. These bracketed portions provide information about alternate editions and translations of cited works, most of them published after Fr. Seraphim's repose.*

## Editor's Preface: THE STORY BEHIND THE Book

1. Phillip E. Johnson, *Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds*, pp. 98–99.

2. Everett Claire Olson, "The Evolution of Life," *Evolution after Darwin*, vol. 1, p. 523.

3. Eugene Rose, "God and Man: Their Relationship," May 4, 1953, term paper for Philosophy 55b course.

4. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, 5th Week of Great Lent, 1974.

5. Transcribed from Fr. Seraphim's "Orthodox Survival Course" on Western philosophy, 1975.

6. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Ken, undated. Published in full in Hieromonk Damascene, *Christ the Eternal Tao*, pp. 446–49.

7. René Guénon, *Crisis of the Modern World*, p. 8.

8. René Guénon, *The Reign of Quantity and the Signs of the Times*, p. 265.

9. Letter of Fr. Seraphim to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, 5th Week of Great Lent, 1974.

10. Eugene Rose, "Christian Realism

and Worldly Idealism," *The Orthodox Word*, no. 128 (1986), p. 133.

11. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, 5th Week of Great Lent, 1974.

12. St. Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 3.4.1, trans. Robert M. Grant, p. 126.

13. St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, *Sochineniya Episkopa Ignatiya Bryanchaninova* (The works of Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov), vol. 1, p. 560.

14. [Fr. Seraphim Rose], "The Holy Fathers of Orthodox Spirituality: Introduction 1," p. 195.

15. Ibid.

16. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), introduction, p. 18; chap. 15, p. 463.

17. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, April 5/18, 1973.

18. Ibid.

19. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, Jan. 31/Feb. 13, 1973.

20. [Alexey Young], "Wolves at the Door," part 2, *Nikodemos*, vol. 2, no. 2 (March–April 1973), pp. 14–19.

21. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, April 5/18, 1973.

22. Ibid.
23. Ibid.
24. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.4, *Tvoreniya svyatago otsa nashego Ioanna Zlatousto* (The works of our holy father John Chrysostom) 4, p. 107 [FC 74, pp. 177–78 (13.16)].
25. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, March 2/15, 1974.
26. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, July 4/17, 1973.
27. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, February 25/March 10, 1974.
28. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Alexey Young, St. Thomas Tuesday, April 10/23, 1974.
29. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Fr. I., July 3/16, 1977.
30. Pierre P. Grassé, *Evolution of Living Organisms* (New York, 1977), p. 202.
31. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, Feb. 22/March 6, 1976.
32. Henry M. Morris, ed., *Scientific Creationism*, revised ed. (1985), p. xiv.
33. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, Feb. 25/March 10, Second Sunday of Great Lent, 1974.
34. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Fr. I., July 3/16, 1977.
35. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Fr. Alexey Young, Meat-fare Saturday, Feb. 15/28, 1981.
36. Ibid.
37. See *Encyclopedia of Geomorphology*, vol. 2, ed. A. S. Goudie (2004), s.v. “neocatastrophism,” pp. 709–11; Trevor Palmer, *Controversy—Catastrophism and Evolution: The Ongoing Debate* (1999).
38. James F. Jekel, review of *The Mystery of Life’s Origin*, by Charles B. Thaxton, Walter L. Bradley, and Roger L. Olsen, *Yale Journal of Biology and Medicine*, vol. 58, no. 4 (July–Aug. 1985), p. 408.
39. Tim Stafford, “The Making of a Revolution,” *Christianity Today* (Dec. 8, 1997); Tim Stafford, “Darwinists Squirm under Spotlight: Interview with Phillip E. Johnson,” *Citizen Magazine* (Jan. 1992).
40. Tim Stafford, “Darwinists Squirm under Spotlight,” *Citizen Magazine* (Jan. 1992); Jeff Lawrence, “*Communiqué* Interview: Phillip E. Johnson,” *Communiqué: A Quarterly Journal* (Spring 1999).
41. Jeff Lawrence, “*Communiqué* Interview: Phillip E. Johnson.”
42. Personal communication, August 15, 1999.
43. [Fr. Seraphim Rose], “The Holy Fathers of Orthodox Spirituality: Introduction 1,” p. 188.
44. Alexey Nikolaevich Lunnyy (Lunarman), “Mutatsii i novyye geny: Mozhno li utverzhdai, chto oni sluzhat materialom makroevolyutsii?” (Mutations and new genes: Can we claim that they serve as material for macroevolution?), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 1 (2005), pp. 174–200.
45. J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, p. 147.
46. *The Christian Activist: A Journal of Orthodox Opinion*, no. 12 (Spring/Summer 1998), pp. 1–2.
47. Daniel H. Shubin, *A History of Russian Christianity*, vol. 4, p. 90; Paul

Miliukov, *Outlines of Russian Culture*, part 1, p. 181.

48. Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, editor's preface to *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka*, vol. 4 (2008), p. 5.

49. Ibid., p. 3.

50. Sergei Yurievich Vert'yanov, "Akademik Yu. P. Altukhov—pravoslavnyy khristianin, genetik, anti-evolyutsionist" (Academician Y. P. Altukhov—Orthodox Christian, geneticist, anti-evolutionist), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka*, vol. 4 (2008), pp. 260–69.

51. Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, editor's preface to *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka*, vol. 5 (2009), p. 9.

52. See Dr. Alexander Lalomov, "Problemnye voprosy nauchnogo kreacionizma" (Problematic questions of scientific creationism), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka*, vol. 4 (2008), pp. 178–91.

53. Talk given by Metropolitan Joseph of the Bulgarian Orthodox Diocese of the USA, Canada, and Australia, on September 3, 2007, at the St. Herman of Alaska Monastery, Platina, California. Translated from Metropolitan Joseph's preface to the Bulgarian edition of *Father Seraphim Rose: His Life and Works*, and published in *The Orthodox Word*, no. 254 (2007), p. 138.

54. Letter of Fr. Seraphim Rose to Dr. Alexander Kalomiros, 5th Week of Great Lent, 1974.

55. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 232; St. John

Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, FC 74, pp. 202–3 (15.14).

## Introduction: FR. SERAPHIM ROSE AND TWENTY-FIRST-CENTURY SCIENCE

1. The Berkeley Museum's Haeckel page is available on the web: <http://www.ucmp.berkeley.edu/history/haeckel.html>.

2. See Richard Dawkins, *The Blind Watchmaker*, pp. 1, 5–6.

3. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), introduction, p. 18.

4. Dawkins, *The Blind Watchmaker*, note 3, pp. 2–3.

5. Niles Eldredge, *Reinventing Darwin: The Great Debate at the High Table of Evolutionary Theory*, p. 95.

6. Tim Berra, *Evolution and the Myth of Creationism*, pp. 118–19.

7. Richard Lewontin, "Billions and Billions of Demons," *The New York Review of Books*, Jan. 9, 1997, pp. 28, 31.

## PART I: AN ORTHODOX PATRISTIC COMMENTARY ON GENESIS

### Foreword: WHY STUDY THE BOOK OF GENESIS?

1. Fr. George Calciu, *Father George Calciu: Interviews, Homilies, and Talks* (2010), p. 159.

## Chapter One: HOW TO READ GENESIS

1. St. John Damascene, *On Heresies* 64 FC 37, p. 126.

2. St. Athanasius the Great, *Four Discourses against the Arians* 2.48, NPNF 2 4, p. 375.

3. St. Macarius the Great, *On Patient Endurance and Discrimination* 5 (*Seven Homilies* 4.5), in *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova* (Spiritual discourses, epistles, and homilies), p. 385 [*Opuscula Ascetica* 4.5, PG 34.869A; *Philokalia* 3, p. 300 (37)].

4. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of Christ* 12, NPNF 2 7, p. 348.

5. St. Gregory Palamas, *In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)* 2.3.22, ed. and trans. [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, p. 432.

6. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 9.1, FC 46, pp. 135–36.

7. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatykh" otsa nashego Yefrema Sirina* (The works of our father among the saints Ephraim the Syrian) 6, p. 282 [FC 91, p. 74 (1.1)].

8. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 107 [FC 74, pp. 177–78 (13.15–16)].

9. Ibid. 13.3, p. 106 [FC 74, p. 175 (13.13)].

10. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Directions on Spiritual Training* 49, *Dobrotolyubiy* 2, 3rd ed. (1913), p. 660, in *Early Fathers from the Philokalia*, p. 196.

11. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Ascetical Homilies* 21, *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatykh" otsa nashego avvy Isaaka Siriyana, podvizh-*

*nika i otshel'nika* (The works of our father among the saints Abba Isaac the Syrian, the ascetic and hermit), p. 108 [trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, *Homily* 37, p. 180] [*Homily* 85 in the printed Greek text edited by Nikephoros Theotokis (1770)].

12. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.2, FC 42, pp. 6–7.

13. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 1.1, FC 46, p. 4.

14. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 14.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 110 [FC 74, p. 183 (14.6)].

15. Ibid. 2.2, p. 9 [FC 74, pp. 31–32 (2.5)].

16. Ibid. [FC 74, p. 32].

## Chapter Two: THE SIX DAYS OF CREATION (GENERAL OBSERVA- TIONS)

1. Blessed Augustine, *The City of God* 11.6 [NPNF 1 2, p. 208].

2. St. John Chrysostom, *Eight Homilies on Genesis* 1.3, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 731–32 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 34].

3. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 7.3, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 52 [FC 74, p. 95 (7.8)].

4. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 4.2, FC 46, pp. 56–57.

5. Ibid. 6.1, p. 83.

6. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 287 [FC 91, p. 80 (1.8.2)].

7. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 5.6, FC 46, p. 74.

8. Ibid. 5.10, p. 82.

9. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.2, FC 42, pp. 5, 7.

10. Ibid. 1.5, p. 8.

11. St. Athanasius the Great, *Four Discourses against the Arians* 2.48, 60, NPNF 2 4, pp. 374, 381.

12. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration 44: On New Week, Spring, and the Commemoration of the Martyr Mamas* 4, *Tvoreniya izbe vo svyatikh" otsa nashego Grigoriya bogoslova* (The works of our father among the saints Gregory the theologian) 1, pp. 656–57 [FC 107, p. 232].

13. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 3.3, 8.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 18, 60–61 [FC 74, pp. 44–45, 107 (3.12, 8.5)].

14. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, pp. 441–42.

15. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 8.7, NPNF 2 5, p. 394.

16. Ibid. 1.5, p. 389.

17. Ibid. 3.1, p. 390.

### Chapter Three: THE SIX DAYS (DAY BY DAY)

1. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.15, FC 42, pp. 14–15.

2. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 3.2, FC 46, pp. 38–39. [See also 2.7, p. 32.]

3. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 286. [This passage, quoted in the Russian edition of St. Ephraim's *Commentary*, is from *A Collection of Interpretations of Genesis of our Holy Father Ephraim the Syrian and Jacob, Bishop of Edessa: Excerpts from the Syriac Catena of Severus, Monk of Edessa*. The latter work was included in the first published Syriac edition of St. Ephraim's *Commentary on Genesis*, ed. J. S. Assemani, *Sancti Patris Nostri Ephraem Syri*

*Opera Omnia* (The Complete Works of our Holy Father Ephraim of Syria) (Rome, 1732–1743), from which the Russian edition of the *Commentary* was translated. The cited passage is found on p. 116 of the Syriac edition, where it is designated as belonging to St. Ephraim.]

4. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 2.1, FC 46, pp. 21–22.

5. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.7, FC 42, pp. 26, 28–29.

6. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 283 [FC 91, p. 76 (1.3.2)].

7. Ibid., p. 284 [FC 91, pp. 77–78 (1.5.1)].

8. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.8, FC 42, p. 31.

9. Ibid., pp. 32–33.

10. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 286–87. [From *A Collection of Interpretations of Genesis of our Holy Father Ephraim the Syrian and Jacob, Bishop of Edessa*, p. 116; see note 3 above.]

11. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.9, FC 42, p. 39.

12. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 287–88 [FC 91, pp. 81–82 (1.8.3–1.9.2)].

13. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 2.5, FC 42, p. 65.

14. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 2.8, FC 46, p. 33.

15. Ibid., pp. 33–34.

16. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 293 [FC 91, p. 85 (1.14.1–1.15.1)].

17. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 1.5, FC 46, p. 9.

18. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 1.5, FC 42, p. 18.

19. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 3.3–4, 7, FC 46, pp. 41–43, 47–48.
20. Ibid. 4.3, p. 57.
21. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 3.3, FC 42, p. 78.
22. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, pp. 457–58.
23. St. Ambrose, *Hexaemeron* 3.4, FC 42, p. 80.
24. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 5.5–6, FC 46, p. 74.
25. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 298 [FC 91, p. 90 (1.22.1)].
26. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 467.
27. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 6.4, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 44 [FC 74, p. 84 (6.12)].
28. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 5.1, FC 46, p. 67.
29. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 3.6, FC 42, p. 87.
30. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 6.4, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 45 [FC 74, p. 85 (6.14)].
31. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 6.2–3, 8, FC 46, pp. 85–86, 97.
32. St. Ambrose of Milan, *Hexaemeron* 4.1, FC 42, p. 126.
33. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 7.3, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 53 [FC 74, pp. 96–97 (7.10)].
34. Ibid., p. 52 [FC 74, p. 96 (7.8)].
35. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 7.1, FC 46, p. 105.
36. St. Ambrose, *Hexaemeron* 5.1, 2, FC 42, pp. 160–62.
37. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 7.2, FC 46, p. 107.
38. Ibid. 8.1, p. 117.
39. Ibid. 5.2, p. 69.
40. Ibid. 9.2, p. 137\* [SC 26bis.484].
41. St. Ambrose, *Hexaemeron* 3.16, FC 42, pp. 119–20.
42. Ibid. 6.3, p. 232.
43. Ibid. 5.9, p. 166.
44. Ibid. 3.10, pp. 99–100.
45. St. Ambrose, *On the Decease of His Brother Satyrus* 2.63, 70, NPNF 2 10, pp. 184–85.
46. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 467.
47. Ibid., p. 454.
48. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 302 [FC 91, p. 93 (1.27.2)].
49. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 9.3, FC 46, p. 138.
50. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 7.5, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 55 [FC 74, p. 99 (7.13)].
51. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 1.11, FC 46, p. 19.
52. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.2, FC 37, p. 205. [See also 1.12, p. 194.]
53. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 10.7, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 82 [FC 74, pp. 139–40 (10.18)].
54. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Dogmatic Poem* 8: *On the Soul*, lines 70–71, *Tvorennya* 2, p. 33 [PG 37.452A; PPS 21, p. 65].
55. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 300 [FC 91, p. 91 (1.25.1)].
56. Ibid., p. 287 [FC 91, p. 80 (1.8.1)].
57. St. Ambrose, *Hexaemeron* 1.13, FC 42, p. 13.

## Chapter Four: THE CREATION OF MAN

1. St. Basil, *On the Origin of Man* 1.3–4, SC 160.171–75 [PPS 30, pp. 32–33].
2. St. John Chrysostom, *Eight Homilies on Genesis* 2.1–2, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 735–37 [trans. Robert C. Hill, pp. 43–44].
3. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 45: *Second Oration on Pascha* 6–7, NPNF 2 7, pp. 424–25.
4. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 16.10, NPNF 2 5, p. 405.
5. St. Basil, *On the Origin of Man* 1.16–17, SC 160.207–11 [PPS 30, pp. 43–45].
6. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 16.7–9, 17.4, NPNF 2 5, pp. 405, 407.
7. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 160–61 [FC 82, pp. 10–11 (18.12)].
8. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 4.24, FC 37, p. 394.
9. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On Virginity* 8, 12, NPNF 2 5, pp. 352–53, 358.
10. St. Basil, *On the Origin of Man* 2.5, SC 160.235–39 [PPS 30, pp. 51–52].
11. Ibid. 1.19, SC 160.217–21 [PPS 30, pp. 46–47].
12. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 18, NPNF 2 5, pp. 407–8.
13. St. Basil, *On the Origin of Man* 2.6–7, SC 160.239–45 [PPS 30, pp. 52–54].
14. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 304–5 [FC 91, p. 95 (1.31.2)].
15. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.1, 4, in *The Sin of Adam*, pp.

64, 67, 75 [FCM, pp. 87–88, 90, 103].

16. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 12.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 95–96 [FC 74, pp. 158–60 (12.4–6)].

17. Blessed Theodoret, quoted in Metropolitan Macarius of Moscow and Kolomena, *Pravoslavno-dogmaticheskoye bogosloviye* (Orthodox dogmatic theology), vol. 1, pp. 430–43.

18. St. Basil, *On the Origin of Man* 2.4, SC 160.233 [PPS 30, p. 51].

19. Ibid. 2.3, SC 160.233 [PPS 30, p. 50].

20. Ibid. 2.2, SC 160.229–31 [PPS 30, p. 49].

21. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 12.5, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 99–100 [FC 74, pp. 165–66 (12.15)].

22. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Dogmatic Poem* 8: *On the Soul*, lines 1–3, 70–73, *Tvoreniya* 2, pp. 31, 33 [PG 37.446A–447A, 452A; PPS 21, pp. 62, 65].

23. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 103–4 [FC 74, pp. 72–73 (13.7, 9)].

24. Ibid. 12.5, p. 100 [FC 74, p. 166 (12.16)].

25. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.12, FC 37, p. 235.

26. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 28.1, 29.1–2, NPNF 2 5, pp. 419–21.

## Chapter Five: PARADISE

1. St. Ambrose, *Paradise* 1, FC 42, pp. 287–88.

2. Ibid., p. 289.

3. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.3–4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 105–6 [FC 74, pp. 175–76 (13.13–14)].



4. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 309 [FC 91, pp. 99–100 (2.5.12)].
5. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 10, *Dobrotolyubiye* 5, 2nd ed. (1900), p. 181 [*Philokalia* 4, p. 213].
6. Quoted in Fr. Seraphim Rose, *The Soul after Death*, p. 145 [4th ed., pp. 137–38].
7. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 230; St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 310 [FC 91, p. 101 (2.6.4)].
8. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 107 [FC 74, pp. 177–78 (13.15–16)].
9. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 5.5, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 791 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 67].
10. Ibid. 5.5–6, pp. 791–92 [trans. Robert C. Hill, pp. 67–68].
11. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, p. 311 [FC 91, pp. 101–2 (1.7)].
12. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 5.5, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 791 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 67].
13. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 45: *Second Oration on Pascha* 8, NPNF 2 7, p. 425.
14. St. Nilus of Sora, *The Skete Rule* 9, *Prepodobnyy Nil Sorskii pervoosnovatel' skitskago zhitiya v rossii, i ustav ego o zhitel'stve skitskom* (St. Nilus of Sora, founder of skete life in Russia, and his rule of skete life) (1864) [trans. George A. Maloney, p. 105].
15. St. Paisius Velichkovsky, *The Scroll, Six Chapters on Mental Prayer* 2, in *The Orthodox Word*, no. 48 (1973), pp. 18–19 [*Little Russian Philokalia* 4, p. 31].
16. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 232.
17. Ibid. 2.30, p. 265.
18. Ibid. 2.11–12, pp. 233–35.
19. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 1.5, FC 46, p. 9.
20. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 45: *Second Oration on Pascha* 8, NPNF 2 7, p. 425.
21. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, pp. 232–33.
22. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 5.7, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 793–94 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 69].
23. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 230.
24. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 6.1, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 799 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 73].
25. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 313–14 [FC 91, pp. 103–4 (2.9.3–2.10.1)].
26. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 14.5, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 115–16 [FC 74, pp. 190–91 (14.18–20)].
27. St. Ambrose, *Paradise* 11, FC 42, pp. 329–30.
28. Ibid. 10–11, pp. 327, 329.
29. St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 12.29, NPNF 2 7, p. 80.
30. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.2–3, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 121–22 [FC 74, pp. 198, 200 (15.6–7, 11)].
31. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 5.8, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 796 [trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 71].
32. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 315 [FC 91, p. 105 (2.12.1)].
33. Ibid. [FC 91, p. 105 (2.13.2–3)].
34. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 123–24

[FC 74, pp. 202–3 (15.14)].

35. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 316 [FC 91, p. 106 (2.14.2)].

36. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 123–24 [FC 74, p. 203 (15.14)].

37. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 231.

38. St. Seraphim of Sarov [*Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the Aim of the Christian Life* 5], *Little Russian Philokalia* 1, pp. 81–82 [5th ed., p. 90].

39. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 17, NPNF 2 5, p. 407.

40. St. Abba Dorotheus, *Teachings Profitable for the Soul* 1, in *Dushepoleznaya poucheniya* (Spiritual instructions), pp. 19–20 [trans. Constantine Scouteris, p. 69].

## Chapter Six: THE FALL OF MAN

1. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 6.2, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 800–801 [trans. Robert C. Hill, pp. 74–75]. [See also St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 16.2, FC 74, p. 209 (16.4)].

2. St. Ambrose, *Paradise* 12, FC 42, pp. 332–33.

3. *Ibid.*, p. 333.

4. *Ibid.*

5. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 3, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 318 [FC 91, p. 108 (2.16.1)].

6. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 16.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 132 [FC 74, p. 214 (16.11)].

7. *Ibid.* 16.5, pp. 133–34 [FC 74, pp. 216–18 (16.14–15)].

8. *Ibid.* 17.1, p. 138 [FC 74, p. 223 (17.3–4)].

9. St. Ambrose, *Paradise* 14, FC 42, p. 346.

10. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.2–3, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 140–42 [FC 74, pp. 226, 228 (17.8, 13)].

11. St. Ambrose, *Paradise* 14, p. 348.

12. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.5, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 145 [FC 74, p. 233 (17.22)].

13. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 3, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 329–30 [FC 91, pp. 117–18 (2.27.1–2.29.1)].

14. *Ibid.*, p. 326 [FC 91, pp. 114–15 (2.23.2)].

15. St. Abba Dorotheus, *Teachings Profitable for the Soul* 1, in *Dushepoleznaya poucheniya*, pp. 26–27 [trans. Constantine Scouteris, pp. 75–76].

16. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.6, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 146 [FC 74, pp. 234–35 (17.24–25)].

17. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Creation of the World* 6.7, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 813 [trans. Robert C. Hill, pp. 83–84].

18. Bishop Bessarion (Vissarion), *Tolkovaniye na parimii* (Commentary on Vesperal Scripture readings), vol. 1, pp. 55–56.

19. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 3, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 332 [FC 91, p. 119 (2.30.1)].

20. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.7–8, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 149–50 [FC 74, pp. 238, 240–41 (17.30–31, 36)].

21. *Ibid.*, 17.9, p. 152 [FC 74, pp. 243–44 (17.40–41)].

22. *Ibid.*, p. 153 [FC 74, pp. 244–45 (17.42)].

23. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 14.5, *Tvoreniya* 9, p. 665 [NPNF 1 11, pp. 444–45].

24. Ibid. 10.2, p. 595 [NPNF 1 11, p. 403].

25. St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 11.5, in *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova*, pp. 85–86.

26. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.2, 4, in *The Sin of Adam*, pp. 67–69, 75 [FCM, pp. 91–94, 103].

27. Idem, *Homily* 38.3, in *The Sin of Adam*, p. 62 [FCM, p. 83].

28. Idem, *Homily* 45.2–3, in *The Sin of Adam*, pp. 69, 73 [FCM, pp. 94, 100].

29. *The Festal Menaion*, trans. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, p. 134.

30. Ibid., p. 146.

31. Ibid., p. 147.

32. Ibid., p. 151.

33. Ibid., p. 369.

## Chapter Seven: LIFE OUTSIDE PARADISE

1. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Hymns on Paradise* 1.10–11, *Tvorennya* 5, pp. 359–60 [PPS 10, pp. 81–82].

2. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.3, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 160 [FC 82, p. 9 (18.10)].

3. *The Lenten Triodion*, trans. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, p. 169.

4. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.4, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 160–61 [FC 82, p. 10 (18.12)].

5. Ibid. 18.4, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 162 (FC 82, p. 12 (18.15)).

6. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 4, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 338 [FC 91, p. 124 (3.2.1)].

7. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.5, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 164 [FC 82, p. 16 (18.21)].

8. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 4, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 339 [FC 91, p. 125 (3.3.3)].

9. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.6, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 165–66 [FC 82, pp. 17–19 (18.22–24)].

10. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 4, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 341 [FC 91, p. 127 (3.6.1)].

11. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 19.3, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 171–72 [FC 82, p. 27 (19.11)].

12. Ibid., p. 173 [FC 82, p. 29 (19.13)].

13. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 4, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 346 [FC 91, p. 130 (3.11.1)].

14. Ibid., p. 345 [FC 91, p. 130 (3.10.1)].

15. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 20.2, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 179–81 [FC 82, pp. 38–44 (20.6)].

16. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 4, 6, *Tvorennya* 6, pp. 347, 351 [FC 91, pp. 131, 134 (4.2.2, 6.2.1)].

## Chapter Eight: THE FLOOD

1. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 6, *Tvorennya* 6, pp. 354–55 [FC 91, pp. 137–38 (6.7.1–2)]; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 22.5, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 208–9 [FC 82, pp. 79–80 (22.15)]. [See also Blessed Augustine, *City of God* 15.25, NPNF 1 2, p. 306.]

2. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 24.3, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 229–30 [FC 82, pp. 109–10 (24.7–8)].

3. Ibid. 24.4, pp. 232–33 [FC 82, pp. 113–14 (24.13)].

4. Ibid. 24.5, pp. 234–35 [FC 82, pp. 116–17 (24.16)].

5. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 7, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 357–58 [FC 91, p. 139 (6.9.2–3)].

6. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 25.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 244 [FC 82, pp. 129–31 (25.8–9)].

7. Ibid. 25.6, p. 251 [FC 82, p. 139 (25.19–20)].

8. Ibid. 25.6, p. 252 [FC 82, p. 140 (25.20)].

9. Ibid., 26.3, pp. 259–60 [FC 82, pp. 149–51 (26.8–10)]. [See also Blessed Theodoret, *Questions on Genesis* 52, LEC 1, p. 111.]

10. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 26.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 261–62 [FC 82, p. 153 (26.12)].

## Chapter Nine: THE DISPERSION OF THE PEOPLES

1. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 26.5, 27.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 264, 276 [FC 82, pp. 156, 171–72 (26.16, 27.12)].

2. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 9, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 361–62 [FC 91, p. 143 (6.14.1)]; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 27.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 276 [FC 82, p. 172 (27.13)].

3. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 27.5, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 276–78 [FC 82, pp. 172–74 (27.13–17)].

4. Ibid. 28.4, p. 291 [FC 82, p. 191 (28.11)].

5. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 9, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 363 [FC 91, p. 144 (7.1.1)].

6. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 29.2, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 299 [FC 82, pp. 202–3 (29.6).]

7. Ibid. 29.6, p. 306 [FC 82, pp. 212–13 (29.21)]. See also St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 9, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 364–65 [FC 91, p. 145 (7.3.1–2)].

8. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 9, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 364–66 [FC 91, p. 145 (7.3.1–3)].

9. Cf. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 29.7, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 309–10 [FC 82, pp. 216–17 (29.26)]. [See also St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 22, PPS 17, pp. 52–53.]

10. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 29.8, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 311 [FC 82, p. 219 (29.30)].

11. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 10, *Tvoreniya* 6, p. 366 [FC 91, p. 146 (8.1.1)].

12. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 30.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 318 [FC 82, p. 228 (30.11)].

## Chapter Ten: Questions and Answers

1. William B. N. Berry, *Growth of a Prehistoric Time Scale Based on Organic Evolution* (1968).

2. John C. Whitcomb and Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Flood: The Biblical Record and Its Scientific Implications* (1961).

3. “Putting Darwin Back in the Dock: ‘Scientific’ Creationists Challenge the Theory of Evolution,” *Time*, March 16, 1981, pp. 80–82.

4. Gary Parker, *Creation: Facts of Life* (1979) [revised and updated ed., 2006].

5. Duane T. Gish, *Evolution: The Fos-*

*sils Say No!* (1978) [revised ed.: *Evolution: The Fossils Still Say No!* (1995)].

6. Henry M. Morris, ed., *Scientific Creationism* (1974) [revised ed., 1985].

7. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.1, in *The Sin of Adam*, p. 67, [FCM, p. 90].

8. *Ibid.* 45.5, in *The Sin of Adam*, pp. 76–77 [FCM, pp. 104–5].

## PART II: THE PATRISTIC DOCTRINE OF CREATION

1. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 5.7, 5, FC 46, pp. 78, 73.

2. *Ibid.* 5.7, p. 77.

3. *Ibid.* 5.2, p. 69.

4. *Ibid.* 9.2, pp. 136–37\* [SC 26bis.484].

5. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Against Eunomius* 1.34, NPNF 2 5, p. 81.

6. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Answer to Eunomius' Second Book*, NPNF 2 5, p. 299.

7. St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 2.7, NPNF 2 7, p. 9.

8. *Ibid.* 12.30, p. 80.

9. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 39: *On the Holy Lights* 12, NPNF 2 7, p. 356.

10. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 29: *Third Theological Oration—On the Son* 11, NPNF 2 7, p. 305.

11. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.30, NPNF 2 9, p. 43b.

12. St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *Catechetical Lectures* 12.29, NPNF 2 7, p. 80.

13. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 4.14, NPNF 2 9, p. 85b [cf. FC 37, p. 364].

14. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 9.1, FC 46, pp. 135–36.

15. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 1, *Tvorennya* 6, p. 282 [FC 91, p. 74 (1.1.1)].

16. *Ibid.*, p. 287 [FC 91, p. 80 (1.8.2)].

17. *Ibid.*, p. 315 [FC 91, p. 105 (2.12.1)].

18. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 5.6, FC 46, p. 74.

19. *Ibid.* 5.10, p. 82.

20. *Ibid.* 7.1, p. 105.

21. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 7.3, *Tvorennya* 4, p. 52 [FC 74, pp. 95–96 (7.8)].

22. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 8.5, PG 44.145BC [NPNF 2 5, p. 394].

23. *Ibid.* 8.7, PG 44.148BC [NPNF 2 5, p. 394].

24. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 44: *On New Week, Spring, and the Commemoration of the Martyr Mamas* 4, *Tvorennya* 1, pp. 656–57 [FC 107, p. 232].

25. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 3.3, 8.2, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 18, 60–61 [FC 74, pp. 44–45, 107 (3.12, 8.5)].

26. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 2.8, FC 46, pp. 33–34.

27. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 44, *On New Week, Spring, and the Commemoration of the Martyr Mamas* 5, *Tvorennya* 1, p. 657 [FC 107, p. 233].

28. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Dogmatic Poem* 8: *On the Soul*, lines 70–71, *Tvorennya* 2, p. 33 [PG 37.452A; PPS 21, p. 65].

29. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 2.4, *Tvorennya* 4, pp. 11–12 [FC 74, p. 35 (2.11)].

30. Ibid. 15.2–3, pp. 121–22 [FC 74, pp. 199–200 (15.10–11)].
31. Ibid. 14.5, p. 116 [FC 74, p. 191 (14.20)].
32. Ibid. 13.4, p. 107 [FC 74, pp. 177–78 (13.15–16)].
33. Ibid. 13.3, p. 106 [FC 74, pp. 175–76 (13.13)].
34. Ibid. [FC 74, p. 175 (13.13)].
35. St. John Damascene, *On Heresies* 64, FC 37, p. 126.
36. St. Macarius the Great, *On Patient Endurance and Discrimination* 5 (*Seven Homilies* 4.5), in *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova* (Spiritual discourses, epistles, and homilies), p. 385 [*Opuscula Ascetica* 4.5, PG 34.869A; *Philokalia* 3, p. 300 (37)].
37. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior* 12, NPNF 2 7, p. 348.
38. St. Gregory Palamas, *In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)* 2.3.21–22, ed. and trans. [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, pp. 430–32.
39. St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 3, *Tvoreniya* 6, pp. 334–35 [FC 91, pp. 121–22 (2.3.1)].
40. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 9.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 69–70 [FC 74, pp. 121–22 (9.8–9)].
41. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.10, FC 37, p. 229.
42. Ibid., p. 228.
43. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 11, *Dobrotolyubiye* 5, 2nd ed. (1900), pp. 181–82 [*Philokalia* 4, p. 214].
44. Ibid. 10, p. 181 [*Philokalia* 4, p. 213].
45. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 14.5, *Tvoreniya* 9, p. 665 [NPNF 1 11, pp. 444–45].
46. St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 11.5, in *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova*, pp. 85–86.
47. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 38.2, in *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* (Homilies of St. Symeon the new theologian) 1, p. 319 [FCM, pp. 82–83].
48. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Ascetical Homilies* 21, *Tvoreniya*, p. 108 [trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, *Homily* 37, p. 180] [*Homily* 85 in the printed Greek text edited by Nikephoros Theotokis (1770)].
49. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 130, *Dobrotolyubiye* 5, 2nd ed. (1900), p. 213 [*Philokalia* 4, p. 248].
50. Ibid.
51. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Ascetical Homilies* 25, *Tvoreniya*, pp. 125–27 [trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, *Homily* 52, p. 255] [*Homily* 62 in the printed Greek text edited by Nikephoros Theotokis (1770)].
52. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 4.14, NPNF 2 9, p. 85b.
53. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, p. 107 [FC 74, pp. 177–78 (13.16)].
54. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.1–5, in *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* 1, pp. 367–83 [FCM, pp. 87–104].
55. St. Gregory Palamas, *In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)* 1.2, ed. and trans. [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, p. 12.
56. Ibid. 1.1.6, p. 20.
57. Ibid. 1.1.11, p. 34.
58. Ibid. 1.1.12, p. 36.
59. Ibid. 1.1.15, p. 44.

60. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 1.2, FC 46, p. 5.
61. Ibid. 3.3, p. 41.
62. Ibid. 6.1, p. 83.
63. St. Abba Dorotheus, *Teachings Profitable for the Soul* 1, in *Dushepoleznaya poucheniya*, pp. 19–20, 22, 28. [trans. Constantine Scouteris, pp. 69, 71, 76].
64. St. Abba Isaiah the Solitary, *Homilies to the Disciples* 2.1, “On the Natural Law,” *Dobrotolyubiye* 1, 2nd ed. (1883), p. 293 [trans. John Chrysavgis and Pachomius (Robert) Penkett, p. 43].
65. Ibid. 2.2, *Dobrotolyubiye* 1, p. 294 [trans. John Chrysavgis and Pachomius (Robert) Penkett, pp. 43–44].
66. St. Abba Dorotheus, *Teachings Profitable for the Soul* 12, “On the Fear of Future Torment,” in *Dushepoleznaya poucheniya* [trans. Constantine Scouteris, p. 197].
67. St. John Cassian, *Conferences* 13.12, in *Pisaniya prepodobnago otsa Ioanna Kassiana Rimlyanina*, p. 411 [ACW 57, pp. 478–79].
68. Ibid. 13.14, p. 414 [ACW 57, p. 483].
69. Ibid., p. 415 [ACW 57, p. 483].
70. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 14: *On Love for the Poor* 6–7, *Tvoreniya* 1, p. 208 [FC 107, pp. 41–42].
71. St. Seraphim of Sarov. *Beseda prepodobnago Serafima Sarovskago o tseli khristianskoy zhizni* (Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the aim of the christian life) 5, pp. 25–26 [St. Seraphim of Sarov, *Little Russian Philokalia* 1, 5th ed., pp. 89–90].
72. St. Gregory Palamas, *In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)* 1.1.11, ed. and trans. [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, p. 34.
73. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Answer to Eunomius’ Second Book*, NPNF 2 5, p. 299.
74. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On Virginity* 12, NPNF 2 5, p. 357.
75. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith*, 2.12, FC 37, p. 235.
76. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 30.34, p. 427.
77. Ibid. 28.1, 8, pp. 419–20.
78. Ibid. 29.1, 2, pp. 420–21.
79. St. Seraphim of Sarov. *Beseda prepodobnago Serafima Sarovskago o tseli khristianskoy zhizni* (Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the aim of the christian life) 5, p. 26 [St. Seraphim of Sarov, *Little Russian Philokalia* 1, 5th ed., p. 90].
80. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 82, *Dobrotolyubiye* 5, 2nd ed. (1900), p. 195 [Philokalia 4, p. 228].
81. Ibid. 46, p. 188 [Philokalia 4, p. 221].
82. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior* 12, *Tvoreniya* 1, p. 528 [SC 358.130, NPNF 2 7, p. 348].
83. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 8, 9, *Dobrotolyubiye* 5, 2nd ed. (1900), p. 181 [Philokalia 4, p. 213].
84. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 13.4, 15.4, *Tvoreniya* 4, pp. 107, 123 [FC 74, pp. 177, 202–3 (13.14, 15.14)].
85. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.1–5, in *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* 1, pp. 368–70, 381 [FCM, pp. 88, 90, 103–4].
86. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica*, part 1, question 98, article 1.

87. Ibid. I, 98.2.
88. Ibid. I, 97.2.
89. Ibid. I, 95.1.
90. Ibid. I, 97.3.
91. Ibid.
92. Ibid. I, 97.4.
93. Ibid. I, 97.3.
94. See ibid. I, 95.1.

### PART III: THE PHILOSOPHY OF EVOLUTION

#### Chapter One: SCIENCE AND THE HOLY FATHERS

1. Fr. Michael Pomazansky, “Besedy na shestodnev” sv. Vasiliya Velikago i besedy o dnyakh” tvoreniya o. Ioanna Kronshadttskago” (Talks on the six days by St Basil the Great and talks on the days of creation by St. John of Kronstadt), *Pravoslavny put’* (The Orthodox way) annual, 1958, pp. 39, 41.
2. I. V. Kireyevsky, *Polnoye sobraniye sochineniy* (Complete collected works), vol. 1, pp. 118–19.
3. Ibid., p. 119.
4. St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, *Sochineniya Episkopa Ignatiya Bryanchaninova* (The works of Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov), vol. 3, p. 125.

#### Chapter Two: A BRIEF CRITIQUE OF THE EVOLUTIONARY MODEL

1. Tracy I. Storer, *General Zoology*, p. 216.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid., p. 220.

4. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), chap. 10, pp. 292–93.

5. See J. P. Riley and G. Skirrow, ed., *Chemical Oceanography*, vol. 1 (1965), p. 164.

6. Melvin A. Cook, “Where Is the Earth’s Radiogenic Helium?,” *Nature*, vol. 179 (Jan. 26, 1957), p. 213; Henry Faul, *Nuclear Geology* (1954).

7. Paul Hazard, *The European Mind, 1680–1715*, p. xviii.

8. John Herman Randall, Jr., *The Making of the Modern Mind*, pp. 381–82.

9. Edwin A. Burt, ed., *The English Philosophers from Bacon to Mill*, pp. 593–94, quoting David Hume, *An Enquiry concerning Human Understanding*.

10. Carl L. Becker, *The Heavenly City of the Eighteenth-Century Philosophers*, pp. 68–69.

11. Randall, *Making of the Modern Mind*, p. 475.

12. Ibid., pp. 475–77.

13. Ibid., p. 478.

14. Ibid., pp. 478–79.

15. “Evolution: A Heresy?,” *Orthodox Observer*, no. 666 (Aug. 8, 1973), p. 3.

16. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 454.

17. St. Basil, *Hexaemeron* 5.10, FC 46, p. 82.

18. Ibid. 5.5–6, p. 74.

19. Ibid. 9.2, p. 137.

20. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2, FC 37, p. 235.

21. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 28.1, NPNF 2 5, p. 419.

22. Ibid.

23. Ibid.. 29.1–2, pp. 420–21.



Chapter Three: "CHRISTIAN EVOLUTIONISM"

1. "Evolution: A Heresy?," *Orthodox Observer*, no. 666 (Aug. 8, 1973), p. 3.
2. Pierre Lecomte du Noüy, *Human Destiny*, p. 167.
3. *Ibid.*, p. 177.
4. *Ibid.*, p. 104.
5. *Ibid.*, p. 112.
6. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Ascetical Homilies* 21, *Tvoreniya*, p. 108 [trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, *Homily* 37, p. 180] [*Homily* 85 in the printed Greek text edited by Nikephoros Theotokis (1770)].
7. Lecomte du Noüy, *Human Destiny*, p. 113.
8. *Ibid.*, p. 197.
9. *Ibid.*, p. 133.
10. *Ibid.*, p. 244.
11. *Ibid.*
12. *Ibid.*, p. 180.
13. Fr. Anthony Kosturos, "Questions and Answers," *Orthodox Observer*, Feb. 6, 1974.
14. Fr. Anthony Kosturos, "Questions and Answers," *Orthodox Observer*, Feb. 20, 1974.
15. Fr. Anthony Kosturos, "Questions and Answers," *Orthodox Observer*, Feb. 6, 1974.
16. Karl Rahner, S.J., "Original Sin, Polygenism, and Freedom," *Theology Digest*, vol. 21, no. 1 (Spring 1973).
17. Stephanus Trooster, S.J., *Evolution and the Doctrine of Original Sin*, pp. 2–3.
18. *Ibid.*, p. 18.
19. *Ibid.*
20. *Ibid.*, p. 130.
21. *Ibid.*, p. 44.
22. *Ibid.*, pp. 54–55, 132.

23. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.3, in *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* 1, p. 378 [FCM, p. 100; also in *Ethical Discourses* 1.3, PPS 14, p. 35].
24. Theodosius Dobzhansky, "On Human Life," *St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly*, vol. 17, nos. 1–2 (1973), p. 102.
25. Quoted in Charles E. Raven, *Teilhard de Chardin: Scientist and Seer*, p. 125.
26. John Hillaby, "A Geography of Genesis," *New Scientist*, March 25, 1965, p. 798.
27. Ralph Waldo Emerson, "Nature," chap. 8, in *The Selected Writings of Ralph Waldo Emerson*, p. 38.
28. Theodosius Dobzhansky, "On Human Life," p. 103.
29. Theodosius Dobzhansky, "Evolution: God's Method of Creation," *Concern*, Spring 1973.
30. Teilhard de Chardin, *How I Believe*, p. 11.
31. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, p. 154.
32. Pierre Leroy, S.J., "Teilhard de Chardin: The Man," foreword to *The Divine Milieu*, p. 22.
33. Quoted in Robert Speaight, *Teilhard de Chardin: A Biography*, p. 27.
34. Teilhard de Chardin, *Human Energy*, p. 110.
35. Frank N. Magill, ed., *Masterpieces of Catholic Literature in Summary Form*, p. 1054.
36. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Mystical Milieu: Writings in Time of War*, pp. 138–39.
37. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, p. 36.

38. Teilhard de Chardin, *Human Energy*, p. 10.

39. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Mystical Milieu*, p. 125.

40. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Phenomenon of Man*, p. 297.

41. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, pp. 154–55.

42. Frank Magill, ed., *Masterpieces of Catholic Literature*, p. 1058.

43. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, pp. 125–26.

44. Teilhard de Chardin, *How I Believe*, p. 37.

45. *Ibid.*, p. 41.

46. Frank Magill, ed., *Masterpieces of Catholic Literature*, p. 1021.

47. Thomas Corbishly, *The Spirituality of Teilhard de Chardin*, p. 100.

48. Teilhard de Chardin, *Science and Christ*, p. 164.

49. Speaight, *Teilhard de Chardin: A Biography*, p. 266.

50. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, pp. 150–51.

51. Speaight, *Teilhard de Chardin: A Biography*, pp. 335, 337.

52. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Divine Milieu*, p. 151.

53. Teilhard de Chardin, *Science and Christ*, p. 169.

54. Teilhard de Chardin, *La Vie Cosmique*, quoted by the editor in Teilhard de Chardin, *The Future of Man*, p. 304.

55. Teilhard de Chardin, *The Phenomenon of Man*, pp. 296–97.

56. Teilhard de Chardin, *Building the Earth*, p. 20.

57. *Ibid.*, pp. 21–22.

58. *Ibid.*, pp. 23–24.

59. *Ibid.*, pp. 24–27.

60. *Ibid.*, pp. 27–28.

61. *Ibid.*, p. 19.

62. *Ibid.*, p. 32.

63. Teilhard de Chardin, *Hymn of the Universe*, p. 34.

64. See Frank N. Magill, ed., *Masterpieces of Catholic Literature*, pp. 684–85.

65. Protopresbyter John Meyendorff, “Teyar de Sharden: Predvaritel’naya zametka” (Teilhard de Chardin: A preparatory note), in *Vestnik Russkogo Studencheskogo Khristianskogo Dvizheniya* (Messenger of the Russian Student Christian Movement) (Paris), nos. 95–96 (1970), p. 32.

66. Editor’s preface to “O. Teyar de Sharden i pravoslavnaya traditsiya” (Fr. Teilhard de Chardin and Orthodox tradition), by Fr. George Klinger, in *Vestnik Russkogo Studencheskogo Khristianskogo Dvizheniya*, no. 106 (1972), pp. 110–11.

67. Fr. George Klinger, “O. Teyar de Sharden i pravoslavnaya traditsiya” (Fr. Teilhard de Chardin and Orthodox tradition), in *Vestnik Russkogo Studencheskogo Khristianskogo Dvizheniya*, no. 106 (1972), pp. 111–32.

68. *Ibid.*, p. 111.

69. *Ibid.*, p. 113.

70. *Ibid.*, p. 128.

71. *Ibid.*, pp. 124–25.

## PART V: NOTES AND OUTLINES

### Chapter One: NOTES ON SCIENCE, EVOLUTION, AND CHRISTIAN PHILOSOPHY

1. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 38.3, in *Slova prepodobnago*

*Simeona novago bogoslova* 1, p. 319 [FCM, pp. 82–83.]

2. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 9.1, FC 46, pp. 135–36.

3. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 1.2, FC 37, p. 167.

4. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 45.1, in *The Sin of Adam*, p. 67 [FCM, p. 90.]

5. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Cross and the Thief* 1.2, PG 49.401.

6. St. Isaac the Syrian, *Ascetical Homilies* 19, *Tvoreniya*, p. 85 [trans. Holy Transfiguration Monastery, *Homily* 29, p. 143] [*Homily* 74 in the printed Greek text edited by Nikephoros Theotokis (1770)].

#### Afterword: FR. SERAPHIM'S LAST TALK ON CREATION AND EVOLU- TION

1. St. Basil the Great, *Hexaemeron* 9.2, FC 46, p. 137.

#### Appendix One: CREATED IN INCORRUPTION

1. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 65, CCSG 22.273, quoted in Hans Urs von Balthasar, *Cosmic Liturgy: The Universe according to Maximus the Confessor*, p. 185\*.

2. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.2, SC 122.184, PPS 14, pp. 26–27\* (also in FCM, p. 90).

3. Ibid. 1.5, SC 122.212 (FCM, p. 103). (This passage in SC 122 is missing in the PPS 14 translation.)

4. Ibid. 1.1, PPS 14, p. 21.

5. St. John Chrysostom, *Eight Homilies on Genesis* 2, trans. Robert C. Hill, p. 43.

6. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 30.34, NPNF 2 5, p. 427.

7. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 16.5, FC 74, p. 217 (16.14).

8. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 232.

9. Ibid. 2.12, PTS 12.76, FC 37, p. 235\*.

10. St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 15, PPS 17, p. 49.

11. St. Athanasius the Great, *On the Incarnation of the Word* 3, SC 199.272–74, NPNF 2 4, pp. 37–38\*.

12. Canon 109 of the “African Code,” in *The Seven Ecumenical Councils*, NPNF 2 14, p. 496. In *The Rudder* (Pedalion) of St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, this Canon is listed as Canon 120 of the Council of Carthage.

13. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior* 12, SC 358.130, NPNF 2 7, p. 348\*.

14. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 45, PG 91.1353B.

15. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 8, *Philokalia* (Greek) 4, p. 32, *Philokalia* 4, p. 213; see also 46, 81, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 221, 227.

16. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, 16.1, 17.1, 17.7, FC 74, pp. 202–3, 207, 222, 238 (15.14, 16.2, 17.1, 17.30); St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 45, PG 91.1353B.

17. St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching* 13, PPS 17, p. 48; St. Ephraim, *Commentary on Genesis* 2.12.1, FC 91, p. 105; St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 9, *Philokalia* 4, p. 213.

18. St. Athanasius the Great, *Commen-*

tary on the Psalms (Psalm 50:5), PG 27.240CD; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 17.1–3, NPNF 2 5, p. 407; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, FC 74, pp. 202–3 (15.14); *ibid.* 18.4, FC 82, pp. 10–11 (18.12–13); St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, 4.24, FC 37, pp. 231, 394; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 21, PPS 25, pp. 109–10; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Catechetical Discourses* 15.1, 26.4, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, pp. 193, 269–70.

19. St. Symeon the Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 13, PPS 15, p. 167.

20. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Statues* 11.3, PG 49.122, NPNF 1 9, p. 414\*. See Panayiotis Nellis, *Deification in Christ*, p. 74.

21. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.1, 1.5, PPS 14, pp. 26, 38; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 10, in [Fr.] Andrew Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 126; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 465; St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 8–9, *Philokalia* 4, p. 213.

22. St. Ephraim the Syrian, *Commentary on Genesis* 2.34.2, FC 91, p. 122; St. Basil the Great, *Homily Explaining That God Is Not the Cause of Evil* 6, PPS 30, p. 73; St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, pp. 464–65; *idem*, *On the Lord's Prayer* 4.2, ACW 18, p. 58; St. John Chrysostom, *On the Statues* 11.3, NPNF 1 9, p. 413; Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *Questions on Genesis* 11.1, LEC 1, p. 33; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 45, PG 91.1353B; St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 31.12–13, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 247–48.

23. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.9, FC 74, p. 243 (17.41); *idem*, *On the Statues* 11.3, NPNF 1 9, p. 413; Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *On the Incarnation of the Lord* 6, in István Pásztori-Kupán, *Theodoret of Cyrus*, p. 140; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.2, PPS 14, pp. 27–28; *idem*, *Catechetical Discourses* 5.7, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, pp. 96–97; *idem*, FCM, pp. 60, 91–92, 111.

24. St. Athanasius the Great, *On the Incarnation of the Word* 3, NPNF 2 4, p. 38; St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.1, 7, FC 74, pp. 222, 238 (17.1, 30); St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Catechetical Discourses* 25.4, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, p. 269.

25. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 45, PG 91.1353B; St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Catechetical Discourses* 5.7, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, p. 97; *idem*, FCM, p. 60. See also *Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the Aim of the Christian Life* 5, in *Little Russian Philokalia*, vol. 1, 5th ed., p. 90.

26. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.4, 16.1, 17.1, FC 74, pp. 202–3, 207, 222 (15.14, 16.2, 17.1).

27. St. John Chrysostom, *On Virginity* 14.3, 5, trans. Sally Rieger Shore, p. 21.

28. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Catechetical Discourses* 25.4, SC 113.56, trans. C. J. deCatanzaro, p. 269\*.

29. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61, CCSG 22.85, PPS 25\*, p. 131 (also in *idem*, *Various Texts on Theology, the Divine Economy, and Virtue and Vice* 4.33, *Philokalia* 2, p. 243).

30. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 10, in Louth, *Maximus the Con-*

fessor, p. 100 (also in idem, *Various Texts* 5.72, *Philokalia* 2, p. 277).

31. St. Theodore the Great Ascetic, *Theoretikon*, *Philokalia* 2, p. 44.

32. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 51, CCSG 7.395, quoted in Paul M. Blowers, *Exegesis and Spiritual Pedagogy in Maximus the Confessor*, p. 110 (also in St. Maximus, *Various Texts* 2.96, *Philokalia* 2, p. 208).

33. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 15.3, 15.4, 16.5, FC 74, pp. 201–3, 218 (15.12, 15.14, 16.16); see also 14.4–5, p. 190 (14.18).

34. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 60, *Philokalia* 4, p. 222.

35. St. Diadochus of Photiki, *On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination* 25, 29, *Philokalia* (Greek) 1, pp. 241–42, *Philokalia* 1, pp. 259–61\*.

36. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.17, FC 37, p. 241.

37. St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 16, *Philokalia* 4, p. 353.

38. St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, *Symvouleftikon encheiridion peri fylakis ton pente aisthiseon* (A Handbook of spiritual counsel on the guarding of the five senses), pp. 156–57, trans. Peter A. Chamberas, p. 150\*.

39. St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, *O aoratos polemos* (Unseen warfare), p. 101, trans. E. Kadloubovsky and G. E. H. Palmer, p. 149\*. (Although this work is based in part on *The Spiritual Combat* by Lorenzo Scupoli, the referenced passage, as well as the entire chapter from which it comes [ch. 27, “On Imagination and Memory”], is the work of St. Nicodemus.)

40. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior* 12, SC 358.130, NPNF 27, p. 348\*; also in *Oration* 45: *Second Oration on Pascha* 8, PG 36.632C, NPNF 27, p. 425\*.

41. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 45, PG 91.1352D–1356A.

42. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 42, in Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 219.

43. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.1, SC 122.176–78, PPS 14, pp. 22–23\* (also in FCM, p. 88).

44. Ibid., PPS 14, p. 21.

45. Ibid. 1.4, PPS 14, p. 38 (FCM, p. 103).

46. Ibid. 1.1, SC 122.182, PPS 14, p. 26\* (FCM, p. 90).

47. St. Bede the Venerable, *Commentary on Genesis* 1:29–30, ACW, p. 131.

48. St. Philaret (Drozdov), Metropolitan of Moscow, *Tolkovaniye na knigu Bytiya* (Commentary on the book of Genesis), p. 42.

49. St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.19, SC 20.146, ANF 2, p. 102\*.

50. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.10, NPNF 2 9, p. 28b.

51. St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion* 52.2, trans. Frank Williams, vol. 2, p. 69.

52. Archimandrite Sebastian (Dabovich), *Preaching in the Russian Church*, p. 101.

53. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 10, *Philokalia* (Greek) 4, p. 32, *Philokalia* 4, p. 213\*.

54. St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.17, ANF 2, p. 101, quoted on pp. 731–32 of the present book.

55. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 14.5, FC 74, p. 191 (14.19); see also 16.1, p. 209 (16.4).

56. Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *Questions on Genesis* 18.1, LEC 1, p. 41.

57. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.10, FC 37, p. 229. See also FCM, p. 92.

58. St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.17, ANF 2, p. 101.

59. St. Irenaeus, *Against Heresies* 5.33.4, SC 153.420–21, ANF 1, p. 563\*.

60. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.10, FC 37, p. 229.

61. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 7.3, NPNF 2 5, p. 393.

62. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 10.5, FC 74, p. 135 (10.11).

63. St. Basil the Great, *On the Origin of Man* 2.6, SC 160.242, PPS 30, p. 53\*.

64. St. Ignatius Brianchaninov, *Slovo o cheloveke* (Homily on man), p. 19.

65. Quoted in Victor Afanasiev, *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina*, p. 280.

66. St. Barsanuphius of Optina, *Talks with Spiritual Children*, July 30, 1911, in Victor Afanasiev, *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina*, p. 468.

67. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 41, PG 91.1305D–1308A, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 158\* (also in Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 212).

68. *Ibid.*, PG 91.1308B, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 158\* (also in Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 213).

69. Vladimir Lossky, *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*, pp. 109–10. See also Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, pp. 54, 57, 212–13, 219; St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 41, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 158.

70. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 41, in Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 213.

71. St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Commentary on Romans* 5:18–19, PG 74.788C–789B, in Fr. John S. Romanides, *The Ancestral Sin*, pp. 33–34\* (also in Vladimir Moss, *The Mystery of Redemption*, pp. 113–14).

72. St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 24.2, trans. George A. Maloney, p. 157.

73. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.11, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 120.

74. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 61, *Philokalia* 4, pp. 222–23.

75. St. Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, *O aoratos polemos* (Unseen warfare), pp. 101–2, trans. Kadloubovsky and Palmer, p. 149\*.

76. Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, p. 132. Cf. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 12.10, NPNF 2 5, p. 399.

77. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 3.1, FC 37, p. 267.

78. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.39, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 132.

79. St. Gregory Palamas, *To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia* 9, *Philokalia* 4, p. 296 (also in idem, *Treatise on the Spiritual Life*, p. 40).

80. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.7, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 118.

81. St. Gregory Palamas, *Topics of Natural and Theological Science* 39, *Philokalia* 4, p. 363.

82. St. Gregory Palamas, *To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia* 10, *Philokalia*, vol. 4, p. 296.

83. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.2, PPS 14, p. 27.

84. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 10, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, pp. 126–27.

85. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61, PPS 25, p. 132 (also in idem, *Various Texts on Theology, the Divine Economy, and Virtue and Vice* 4.33–35, *Philokalia* 2, p. 244).

86. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 8, PPS 25, p. 76.

87. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 3.1, PTS 12.107, FC 37, p. 267.

88. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.1, FC 82, p. 5 (18.3).

89. Ibid. 18.2, p. 6 (18.5).

90. St. John Chrysostom, *On the Statues* 11.4, PG 49.125, NPNF 1 9, p. 416\*. See Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 74.

91. Ibid. 11.3, PG 49.122, NPNF 1 9, p. 414. See Nellas, p. 74.

92. St. Athanasius the Great, *Commentary on the Psalms* (Psalm 50:5), PG 27.240CD.

93. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 18.4, FC 82, p. 10 (18.12).

94. St. John Chrysostom, *On Virginity* 15.2, SC 125.146, trans. Sally Rieger Shore, p. 23\*.

95. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 2.7, PPS 14, p. 109.

96. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.25, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 126.

97. St. Maximus, *Ad Thalassium* 42, PPS 25, pp. 120–21.

98. St. John Damascene, *Philosophical Chapters* 30, PG 94.592A, FC 37, p. 55\*.

99. St. Maximus, *Opuscula* 20, PG 91.236D, quoted in Polycarp Sherwood,

trans., *St. Maximus the Confessor: The Ascetic Life, The Four Centuries on Charity*, ACW 21, pp. 56–57.

100. St. Maximus, *Ad Thalassium* 42, PPS 25, pp. 120–21.

101. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 5.1, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 34.

102. Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 64.

103. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 14, PG 60.530A, NPNF 1 11, p. 444\*.

104. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 11, *Philokalia* 4, p. 214.

105. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.2, PPS 14, p. 28 (also in FCM, p. 91).

106. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 14, PG 60.530BC, NPNF 1 11, p. 444\*.

107. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.5, PPS 14, p. 38 (also in FCM, pp. 102–3).

108. Ibid. 1.2, PPS 14, p. 29 (FCM, p. 94).

109. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 14, PG 60.530C, NPNF 1 11, p. 444\*.

110. Ibid., PG 60.530D, NPNE, p. 445\*.

111. Ibid., PG 60.530D–531A, NPNE, p. 445\*.

112. St. John Damascene, *Commentary on Romans*, in idem, *Apanta ta erga* (Complete works) 9, pp. 116–23; Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria, *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, PG 124.445C–449A; St. Theophan the Recluse, *Tolkovaniye pervykh" vos'mi glav" poslaniya sv. Apostola Pavla k" Rimlyanam* (Commentary on the first eight chapters

of the epistle of the holy Apostle Paul to the Romans), pp. 503–15.

113. St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Against Heresies* 5.32.1, 5.36.3, ANF 1, pp. 561, 567.

114. St. Theophilus of Antioch, *To Autolycus* 2.17, ANF 2, p. 101.

115. St. Methodius of Olympus, *From the Discourse on the Resurrection* 1.8, ANF 6, p. 366.

116. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *Pravoslavna filosofija istine: Dogmatika Pravoslavne Crkve* (The Orthodox philosophy of truth: Dogmatics of the Orthodox Church), vol. 3, p. 792.

117. Idem, “A Deer Lost in Paradise,” in *Man and the God-man*, p. 112.

118. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 10, PG 60.476D, NPNF 1 11, p. 403\*.

119. St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 11.5, PG 34.548B, trans. A. J. Mason, p. 81\*.

120. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.28, FC 37, p. 259.

121. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61, PPS 25, p. 137.

122. St. Maximus, *Epistle* 10, PG 91.449B, quoted in von Balthasar, *Cosmic Liturgy*, p. 185\*.

123. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61, CCSG 22.95, in *Various Texts* 4.47, *Philokalia* 2, p. 248\* (also in PPS 25, p. 137).

124. *The Festal Menaion*, trans. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, p. 369.

125. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica, *Tvoreniya Svyatitelya Nikolaya Serbskogo (Velimirovicha)* (The works of St. Nikolai of Serbia [Velimirovich]) (2004), pp. 410–12.

126. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica, *Homilies*, trans. Mother Maria, vol. 2, p. 203.

127. St. Maximus the Confessor, *On the Lord's Prayer*, *Philokalia* 2, p. 302.

128. Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, pp. 101, 126.

129. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Soul and the Resurrection*, NPNF 2 5, p. 467.

130. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 31.12–13, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 247–48.

131. St. John Chrysostom, *Commentary on the Psalms* (Psalm 110 [111]), trans. Robert C. Hill, vol. 2, pp. 37–38.

132. St. Irenaeus of Lyons, *Against Heresies* 5.23.6, SC 211.460–63, ANF 1, p. 457\*.

133. St. Gregory the Theologian, *Oration* 38: *On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior* 12, NPNF 2 7, p. 348.

134. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Genesis* 17.9, FC 74, pp. 243–44 (17.40–41).

135. St. Mark the Ascetic, *On the Spiritual Law: Two Hundred Texts* 99, *Philokalia* 1, p. 117.

136. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 61, PPS 25, pp. 131–32.

137. Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *On the Incarnation of the Lord* 6, in István Pásztori-Kupán, *Theodoret of Cyrus*, p. 140.

138. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *Catechetical Orations* 35, NPNF 2 5, p. 503.

139. St. Basil the Great, *Homily Explaining That God Is Not the Cause of Evil* 7, PPS 30, p. 75.

140. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.1, 25, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 116, 126.



141. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 3.27, NPNF 2 9, p. 72b.
142. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.31, trans. Christopher Veniamin, pp. 128–29.
143. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on the Gospel of St. John* 67.2, FC 41, p. 232.
144. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 10, PG 60.475BC, NPNF 1 11, p. 402\*.
145. St. Cyril of Alexandria, *Commentary on Romans* 6:6, PG 74.796, in ACCS: New Testament 6, p. 159.
146. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.3, SC 122.200, PPS 14, p. 33\* (also in FCM, p. 98).
147. Ibid., SC 122.200, PPS 14, p. 33\* (FCM, p. 99).
148. St. Gregory Palamas, *Homily* 16.35, trans. Christopher Veniamin, p. 130.
149. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on Romans* 10, NPNF 1 11, p. 405.
150. St. John Chrysostom, *Homilies on 2 Corinthians* 6.2, NPNF 1 12, p. 307.
151. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Homily* 1.3, FCM, pp. 46–47 (*Ta evriskomena diirimena eis dyo* [The discovered works, divided into two parts], pp. 30–31; *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* [Homilies of St. Symeon the new theologian], vol. 1, p. 24).
152. Ibid., p. 47 (*Ta evriskomena diirimena eis dyo*, p. 31; *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova*, vol. 1, pp. 24–25).
153. St. Nicholas Cabasilas, *The Life in Christ* 4.[5], SC 355.280–82, trans. Carmino J. deCatanzaro, p. 120\*.
154. Ibid., SC 355.282, trans. deCatanzaro, p. 121\*.
155. Ibid. 4.[1], SC 355.262, trans. deCatanzaro, p. 113; see also Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 126.
156. St. Macarius the Great, *Fifty Spiritual Homilies* 26.2, trans. George A. Maloney, p. 164.
157. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 2.11, FC 37, p. 230.
158. Ibid. 2.3, p. 206.
159. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *A Sermon for the Feast of the Lights (On the Baptism of Christ)*, PG 46.600AB, NPNF 2 5, p. 524\*.
160. St. Nicholas Cabasilas, *The Life in Christ* 4.[18], trans. deCatanzaro, pp. 142–43.
161. St. John Damascene, *On the Orthodox Faith* 4.11, PTS 12.187, NPNF 2 9, p. 80b\*.
162. St. Theodore the Studite, *Canon of the Adoration of the Precious and Life-giving Cross* (Third Sunday of Great Lent), in *Triodion Katanyktikon*, p. 494, trans. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, *The Lenten Triodion*, pp. 342–43\*.
163. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.3, SC 122.202–4, PPS 14, p. 34\* (also in FCM, pp. 99–100).
164. Ibid., PPS 14, p. 35 (FCM, p. 100).
165. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *Pravoslavna filosofija istine: Dogmatika Pravoslavne Crkve* (The Orthodox philosophy of truth: Dogmatics of the Orthodox Church), vol. 3, pp. 795–96.
166. Ibid., pp. 792–93.
167. Ibid., pp. 797–98.
168. St. Gregory the Sinaite, *On Commandments and Doctrines* 46, *Philokalia* (Greek) 4, pp. 38, *Philokalia* 4, p. 221\*.
169. Blessed Theophylact of Ohrid

and Bulgaria, *The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*, PG 123.1121B, trans. Fr. Christopher Stade, p. 324\*.

170. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.3–5, SC 122.204, 206, 212, PPS 14, pp. 35–36, 38–39\* (also in FCM, pp. 100–1, 103–4).

171. St. Symeon the New Theologian, *Ethical Discourses* 1.5, SC 122.218–20, PPS 14, p. 41\* (FCM, p. 104).

172. St. Gregory Palamas, *The Triads* 1.3.36, trans. Robin Amis, p. 128.

173. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ambigua* 41, PG 91.1308B, in Louth, *Maximus the Confessor*, p. 158\* (also in Nellas, *Deification in Christ*, p. 213).

174. Lossky, *Mystical Theology*, p. 110.

175. St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ad Thalassium* 2, PPS 25, p. 100.

176. St. Gregory of Nyssa, *On the Making of Man* 17.2, NPNF 2 5, p. 407.

177. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), chap. 15, p. 463.

178. Carl Sagan, *Cosmos*, p. 30.

179. Carl Sagan, “A Gift for Vividness,” *Time* (Oct. 20, 1980), p. 68.

180. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *Na Bogocovecanskom putu* (On the Divine-human path) (1980), p. 216.

181. From the troparion (dismissal hymn) for Pascha, the Feast of the Resurrection of Christ.

## Appendix Two: MODERN SAINTS AND ELDERS ON EVOLUTIONISM

1. St. Ambrose of Optina, *Sovety suprugam i roditelyam* (Counsels to spouses and parents) (2009).

2. St. Theophan the Recluse, *Thoughts*

*for Each Day of the Year according to the Daily Church Readings from the Word of God*, trans. Lisa Marie Baranov (2010), pp. 272–73.

3. Ibid., pp. 227–28.

4. Ibid., pp. 127–28.

5. St. Theophan the Recluse, *Sozertsaniye i razmysleniye* (Contemplations and reflections) (1998), p. 146.

6. St. Theophan the Recluse, *Sobraniye pisem* (Collected letters), vol. 7 (1994), pp. 144–45.

7. Ibid., vol. 2, p. 112.

8. St. Theophan the Recluse, *Slova na Gospodskiye, Bogorodichnyye, i torzhestvennyye dni* (Homilies on Feasts of the Lord and the Theotokos, and festal days) (1883), p. 5.

9. Ibid., p. 196.

10. St. Theophan the Recluse, *Sobran- iye pisem*, vol. 2, p. 117.

11. St. John of Kronstadt, *Novyye groznyye slova* (New stern sermons) (1908), pp. 13, 91.

12. St. Barsanuphius of Optina, *Talks with Spiritual Children*, in Victor Afanasiev, *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina* (2000), p. 488.

13. Hieromartyr Vladimir, Metropolitan of Kiev, *Gde istinoye shchast'ye: V vere ili neverii?* (Where is true happiness? In faith or unbelief?) (1905), pp. 6–18.

14. St. Nectarios of Pentapolis, *Meleti peri athanasias tis psychis kai peri ton hieron mnimosynon* (Study concerning the immortality of the soul and the holy memorial services) (1901), p. 65; quoted in Constantine Cavarnos, *Modern Greek Philosophers on the Human Soul*, 2nd ed. (1987), p. 85.

15. St. Nectarios of Pentapolis, *Hypotyposis peri anthropou* (Sketch concerning

man) (1893), pp. 87–88; quoted in Constantine Cavarinos, *Biological Evolutionism*, 2nd ed. (1997), pp. 63–65.

16. Archimandrite Hilarion (Troitsky) [later Archbishop of Verey and Hieromartyr], “Voploshcheniye i smireniye” (The incarnation and humility), *Moskovskiy tserkovnyy vedomosti* (Moscow church herald), 1913, nos. 51–52; reprint in *Khristianstva net bez Tserkvi* (There is no Christianity without the Church) (2007), p. 349.

17. Hieromartyr Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver, *Raduyet’!* (Rejoice!) (1998), p. 164.

18. A. I. Kuznetsov, *O propovedyakh vладыki Fадdeya Uspenskogo / Patriarkh Tikhon i istoriya russkoi tserkovnoi smuty* (On the sermons of Vladika Thaddeus Uspensky / Patriarch Tikhon and the history of the Russian Church disturbance) (1994), p. 352.

19. Abbot Damascene (Orlovsky), *Mucheniki, ispovedniki, i podvizhniki blagochestiya Russkoy Pravoslavnoy Tserkvi XX stoletiya: Zhizneopisaniya i materialy k nim* (Martyrs, confessors, and ascetics of piety of the Russian Orthodox Church of the twentieth century: Biographies and material on them), book 6 (2002), p. 313.

20. Hieromonk Nestor (Kumysh), *Novomuchiniki Sankt-Peterburgskoy eparkhii* (New martyrs of the St. Petersburg diocese) (2003), p. 209.

21. Metropolitan Juvenaly of Krutitsa and Kolomena (Chairman of the Synodal Committee on Canonization), ed., *Zhitiya novomuchenikov i ispovednikov Rossiyskikh XX veka Moskovskoy eparkhii: Sentyabr’–oktyabr’* (Lives of the twentieth-century Russian new martyrs and confessors of the Moscow diocese: Sep-

tember–October) (2003), p. 122.

22. Abbot Damascene (Orlovsky), *Mucheniki, ispovedniki, i podvizhniki blagochestiya Russkoy Pravoslavnoy Tserkvi XX stoletiya: Zhizneopisaniya i materialy k nim*, book 7 (2002), p. 162.

23. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica, *Homilies*, vol. 2, trans. Mother Maria (1998), p. 280.

24. St. Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica, *Kroz tamnicki prozor* (Through the prison window) (1985), p. 95. Quoted in St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism*, trans. Benjamin Emmanuel Stanley (2000), pp. 172–73\*.

25. Ibid., pp. 43–44. Quoted in St. Justin (Popovich), *The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism*, trans. Benjamin Emmanuel Stanley, p. 163\*.

26. Father John [Schema-Abbot John (Alekseyev) of Valaam], *Christ Is in Our Midst: Letters from a Russian Monk*, trans. Esther Williams (1980).

27. Schema-Abbot John (Alekseyev) of Valaam, *Pisma valaamskogo startsa skhiigumena Ioanna* (Letters of the Valaam elder schema-abbot John) (1996), pp. 86–87.

28. Hiero-confessor Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky), Archbishop of Simferopol, “Nauka i religiya” (Science and religion), *Troitskoye slovo* (Trinity word), 2001, pp. 41–42.

29. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *Pravoslavna Crkva i Ekumenizam* (The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism) (1974), pp. 37–38; trans. Benjamin Emmanuel Stanley, p. 25\*.

30. St. Justin (Popovich) of Celije, *Na Bogocovecanskom putu* (On the Divine-human path) (1980), pp. 215–16.

31. Elder Paisius (Olaru) of Sihastria and Sihla, “Teachings of Elder Paisius,” *Orthodox Word*, no. 271 (2010), p. 121.

32. Archimandrite Sophrony (Sakharov), *Videt’ Boga kak On est’* (To see God as He is) (2006), p. 238.

33. Elder Paisios of Mount Athos, *With Pain and Love for Contemporary Man*, trans. Cornelia A. Tsakiridou and Maria Spanou (2006), pp. 327–29.

34. Elder Paisios of Mount Athos, *Spiritual Awakening*, trans. Fr. Peter Chamberas (2008), p. 65.

35. *Ibid.*, pp. 294–96.

36. Fr. George Calciu, *Father George Calciu: Interviews, Homilies, and Talks* (2010), p. 159.

37. *Ibid.*, pp. 166–68.

38. *Ibid.*, pp. 118–19, 121.

### Appendix Three: BIOLOGICAL EVIDENCE AND THE NEO-DARWINIAN PARADIGM

1. Ulrich Kutschera and Karl J. Niklas, “The Modern Theory of Biological Evolution: An Expanded Synthesis,” *Naturwissenschaften*, no. 91 (2004), p. 273.

2. Vladimir Alexeyevich [St. Hilarion] Troitsky, “Svyashchennoye Pisaniye, Tserkov’, i nauka” (Holy Scripture, the Church, and Science), *Moskovskiye tserkovnye vedomosti* (Moscow church herald), 1911, no. 50.

3. Colin Brown, *Philosophy and the Christian Faith* (1971), p. 147.

4. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 2nd ed. of 1859, reprint (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1996), chap. 14, p. 371.

5. See Martin Curd and J. A. Cover,

*Philosophy of Science: The Central Issues* (1998), pp. 62–82.

6. R. P. Feynman, R. B. Leighton, and M. Sands, *The Feynman Lectures on Physics* (1963), p. 1–1.

7. Karl Popper, *Conjectures and Refutations* (1963), pp. 33–39.

8. Gary Stix, “Darwin’s Living Legacy,” *Scientific American*, no. 300 (2009), pp. 38–43.

9. D. H. Erwin, “Macroevolution Is More Than Repeated Rounds of Microevolution,” *Evolution and Development*, 2000, no. 2, pp. 74–84.

10. Kutschera and Niklas, “The Modern Theory of Biological Evolution,” p. 259.

11. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), chap. 15, p. 444; chap. 2, p. 51.

12. G. Ledyard Stebbins, *Processes of Organic Evolution*, 2nd ed. (1971), p. 161.

13. See J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, 3rd ed. (2008).

14. W. J. Swanson and V. D. Vacquier, “The Rapid Evolution of Reproductive Proteins,” *Nature Reviews, Genetics*, 2002, vol. 3, pp. 137–44.

15. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), chap. 6, pp. 161, 170.

16. See, for example, Kutschera and Niklas, “The Modern Theory of Biological Evolution,” pp. 255–76.

17. Peter Van Roy, Patrick J. Orr, Joseph P. Botting, Lucy A. Muir, Jakob Vinther, Bertrand Lefebvre, Khadija el Hariri, Derek E. G. Briggs, “Ordovician Faunas of Burgess Shale Type,” *Nature*,

- vol. 465, no. 7295 (May 13, 2010), pp. 215–18, doi:10.1038/nature09038.
18. Niles Eldredge, *Reinventing Darwin: The Great Debate at the High Table of Evolutionary Theory* (1995), p. 95.
19. M. S. Conway, “Ediacaran-like Fossils in Cambrian Burgess Shale-type Faunas of North America,” *Palaeontology*, no. 36 (1993), pp. 593–635.
20. S. M. Stanley, “An Ecological Theory for the Sudden Origin of Multicellular Life in the Late Precambrian,” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 70 (1973), 1486–89.
21. M. S. Gordon, “The Concept of Monophyly: A Speculative Essay,” *Biology and Philosophy*, no. 14 (1999), p. 335.
22. D. H. Erwin, “Macroevolution Is More Than Repeated Rounds Of Microevolution,” *Evolution and Development*, 2000, no. 2, p. 81.
23. Donald R. Prothero, *Evolution: What the Fossils Say and Why It Matters* (2007).
24. Khomenkov, Alexander S. “Vozmozhno li teoreticheskaya biologiya?” (Is theoretical biology possible?), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 1 (2005), pp. 278–95.
25. Jeong Yul Kim, Sam Hyang Kim, Kyung Soo Kim, and Martin Lockley, “The Oldest Record of Webbed Bird and Pterosaur Tracks from South Korea (Cretaceous Haman Formation, Changseon and Sinsu Islands): More Evidence of High Avian Diversity in East Asia,” *Cretaceous Research*, no. 27 (2006), pp. 56–69.
26. Diego San Mauro, Miguel Vences, Marina Alcobendas, Rafael Zardoya, and Axel Meyer, “Initial Diversification of Living Amphibians Predated the Break-up of Pangaea,” *American Naturalist*, no. 165 (2005), pp. 590–99.
27. S. F. Gilbert, G. A. Loredó, A. Brukman, and A. B. Burke, “Morphogenesis of the Turtle Shell: The Development of a Novel Structure in Tetrapod Evolution,” *Evolution and Development*, 2001, no. 3, pp. 47–58.
28. Chun Li, Xiao-Chun Wu, Olivier Rieppel, Li-Ting Wang, and Li-Jun Zhao, “An Ancestral Turtle from the Late Triassic of Southwestern China,” *Nature*, vol. 456, no. 7221 (Nov. 27, 2008), pp. 497–501.
29. R. R. Reisz and J. J. Head, “Turtle Origins Out to Sea,” *Nature*, vol. 456, no. 7221 (Nov. 27, 2008), pp. 450–51.
30. See also Jerry Bergman and Wayne Frair, “Evidence for Turtle Evolution?,” *Journal of Creation*, no. 21 (2007), pp. 24–26.
31. Mark S. Springer, William J. Murphy, Eduardo Eizirik, and Stephen J. O’Brien, “Placental Mammal Diversification and the Cretaceous-Tertiary Boundary,” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 100 (2003), pp. 1056–61.
32. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 2nd ed. of 1859, reprint (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1996), chap. 6, p. 147.
33. J. R. Speakman, “The Evolution of Flight and Echolocation in Bats: Another Leap in the Dark,” *Mammal Review*, no. 31 (2001), pp. 111–30.

34. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 2nd ed. of 1859, reprint (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1996), chap. 6, p. 150.

35. J. Gatesy, C. Hayashi, M. A. Cronin, and P. Arctander, "Evidence from Milk Casein Genes That Cetaceans Are Close Relatives of Hippopotamid Artiodactyls," *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 13 (1996), pp. 954–63.

36. J. Gatesy and M. O. O'Leary, "Deciphering Whale Origins with Molecules and Fossils," *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, no. 16 (2001), pp. 562–70.

37. D. Lusseau, "The Emergence of Cetaceans: Phylogenetic Analysis of Male Social Behaviour Supports the Cetartiodactyla Clade," *Journal of Evolutionary Biology*, vol. 16 (2003), pp. 531–35.

38. Trisha Gura, "Bones, Molecules ... or Both?," *Nature*, vol. 406 (July 20, 2000), pp. 230–33.

39. Ann Gibbons, *The First Human: The Race to Discover Our Earliest Ancestors* (2006).

40. Elizabeth Pennisi, "Haeckel's Embryos: Fraud Rediscovered," *Science*, vol. 277, no. 5331 (Sept. 5, 1997), p. 1435.

41. M. K. Richardson, J. Hanken, M. L. Gooneratne, C. Pieau, A. Raynaud, L. Selwood, and G. M. Wright, "There Is No Highly Conserved Embryonic Stage in the Vertebrates: Implications for Current Theories of Evolution and Development," *Anatomy and Embryology*, no. 196 (1997), pp. 91–106.

42. Marvin L. Lubenow, *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils*, revised and updated ed. (2004), pp. 92–114.

43. See, for example, Fig. 34.46 in Peter H. Raven, George B. Johnson, Jonathan Losos, and Susan Singer, *Biology*, 7th ed. (2005).

44. See also Kate Wong, "The Human Pedigree," with illustrations by Viktor Deak, *Scientific American*, no. 300 (2009), pp. 46–49.

45. C. F. Spoor, B. Wood, and F. Zonneveld, "Implications of Early Hominid Labyrinthine Morphology for Evolution of Human Bipedal Locomotion," *Nature*, vol. 369 (June 23, 1994), pp. 645–48.

46. D. Curnoe and A. Thorne, "Number of Ancestral Human Species: A Molecular Perspective," *HOMO*, vol. 53, no. 3 (2005), pp. 201–24; Clive Finlayson, "Biogeography and Evolution of the genus *Homo*," *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 20 (2005), pp. 457–63.

47. Percival Davis and Dean H. Kenyon, *Of Pandas and People: The Central Question of Biological Origins*, ed. Charles B. Thaxton (1993); Stephen C. Meyer, Scott Minnich, Jonathan Money-maker, Paul A. Nelson, and Ralph Seelke, *Explore Evolution: The Arguments for and against Neo-Darwinism* (2007). See also p. 527n of the present book.

48. Niles Eldredge and Ian Tattersall, *The Myths of Human Evolution* (1982).

49. D. Curnoe and A. Thorne, "Number of Ancestral Human Species," pp. 201–24

50. Quoted in Wolf-Ekkehard Lönnig, "The Evolution of the Long-Necked Giraffe (*Giraffa camelopardalis* L.): What Do We Really Know?," part 2 (2007), p. 11, <http://www.weloenig.de/GiraffaSecondPartEnglish.pdf>.

51. Peter H. Raven, George B. John-

son, Jonathan Losos, and Susan Singer, *Biology*, 7th ed. (2005).

52. Ying Cao, Axel Janke, Peter J. Waddell, Michael Westerman, Osamu Takenaka, Shigenori Murata, Norihiro Okada, Svante Pääbo, and Masami Hasegawa, "Conflict among Individual Mitochondrial Proteins in Resolving the Phylogeny of Eutherian Orders," *Journal of Molecular Evolution*, no. 47 (1998), pp. 307–22; Trisha Gura, "Bones, Molecules ... or Both?," *Nature*, vol. 406 (July 20, 2000), pp. 230–33; J. Gatesy, and M. O. O'Leary, "Deciphering Whale Origins with Molecules and Fossils," *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, no. 16 (2001), pp. 562–70; K. L. Shaw, "Conflict between Nuclear and Mitochondrial DNA Phylogenies of a Recent Species Radiation: What MtDNA Reveals and Conceals about Modes of Speciation in Hawaiian Crickets," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 (2002), pp. 16122–27; Pamela S. Soltis, Douglas E. Soltis, Vincent Savolainen, Peter R. Crane, and Timothy G. Barraclough, "Rate Heterogeneity among Lineages of Tracheophytes: Integration of Molecular and Fossil Data and Evidence for Molecular Living Fossils," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 (2002), pp. 4430–35.

53. Michael S. Y. Lee, "Molecular Phylogenies Become Functional," *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 14 (2002), pp. 177–78.

54. Bärbel M. R. Stadler, Peter F. Stadler, Günter P. Wagner, and Walter Fontana, "The Topology of the Possible: Formal Spaces Underlying Patterns of

Evolutionary Change," *Journal of Theoretical Biology*, no. 213 (2001), pp. 241–74.

55. Eugene V. Koonin, "The Biological Big Bang Model for the Major Transitions in Evolution," *Biology Direct*, vol. 2, no. 21 (2007), p. 1.

56. L. V. Salvini-Plawen and E. Mayr, "On the Evolution of Photoreceptors and Eyes," *Evolutionary Biology*, no. 10 (1977), pp. 207–63.

57. Michael J. Behe, *Darwin's Black Box* (1996), p. 22. See also William A. Dembski, *No Free Lunch: Why Specified Complexity Cannot Be Purchased without Intelligence* (2002).

58. Michael J. Behe, *Darwin's Black Box*, p. 22.

59. Wolf-Ekkehard Lönnig, "Dynamic Genomes, Morphological Stasis, and the Origin of Irreducible Complexity," *Dynamical Genetics*, no. 37 (2004), pp. 101–19.

60. See, for example, David W. Deamer, "The First Living Systems: A Bioenergetic Perspective," *Microbiology and Molecular Biology Reviews*, no. 61 (1997), pp. 239–61; Eörs Szathmáry, "The Evolution of Replicators," *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of London*, B, no. 335 (2000), pp. 1669–76; Rodney Brooks, "The Relationship between Matter and Life," *Nature*, vol. 409 (Jan. 18, 2001), pp. 409–11.

61. Gordon C. Mills and Dean Kenyon, "The RNA World: A Critique," *Origins & Design*, no. 17 (1996), p. 9; Konstantin Violovan and Anatoliy Lisovski, "Problemy abiogeneza kak klyuch k ponimaniyu nesostoyatel'nosti evolyutsionnoy gipotezy" (Problems of

abiogenesis as a key to understanding the groundlessness of the evolutionary hypothesis), in Priest Daniel Sysoyev and Nikolai Kolchurinsky, eds., *Bozhestvennoye otkroveniye i sovremennaya nauka* (Divine revelation and contemporary science), Almanac, vol. 2 (2005), pp. 77–93.

62. Stephen C. Meyer, *Signature in the Cell: DNA and the Evidence for Intelligent Design* (2009), pp. 201–14.

63. Michael Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis* (1986), p. 264.

64. See, for example, M. W. Rowland, “Fitness of Insecticide Resistance,” *Nature*, vol. 327 (1987), p. 194.

65. See Lee M. Spetner, *Not by Chance! Shattering the Modern Theory of Evolution* (1998).

66. Alexey Nikolaevich Lunnyy (Lunarman), “Mutatsii i novyye geny: Mozhno li utverzhat’, chto oni sluzhat materialom makroevolyutsii?” (Mutations and new genes: Can we claim that they serve as material for macroevolution?), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 1 (2005), p. 192.

67. Ibid., p. 193.

68. Royal Truman, “Evaluation of Neo-Darwinian Theory Using the Avida Platform,” part 1, *PCID* 3.1.1 (Nov. 2004), [http://www.iscid.org/papers/Truman\\_ComplexFeatures1\\_070104.pdf](http://www.iscid.org/papers/Truman_ComplexFeatures1_070104.pdf).

69. Alexander S. Khomenkov, “Nepравdannyye stereotypy: O nekotorykh strategicheskikh oshibkakh v sovremennom kreatsionnom myshlenii” (Unjusti-

fied stereotypes: About some strategic errors in modern creationist thinking), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2006), pp. 276–93.

70. See, for example, John N. Thompson, *The Geographic Mosaic of Coevolution* (2005).

71. Robert L. Carroll, “Towards a New Evolutionary Synthesis,” *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 15 (2002), pp. 27–32; D. H. Erwin, “Macroevolution Is More Than Repeated Rounds of Microevolution,” *Evolution and Development*, 2000, no. 2, pp. 74–84.

72. Karen D. Crow and Günter P. Wagner, “What Is the Role of Genome Duplication in the Evolution of Complexity and Diversity?,” *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 23 (2006), pp. 887–92.

73. James F. Crow, “The High Spontaneous Mutation Rate: Is It a Health Risk?,” *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 94 (1997), pp. 8380–86; J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, 3rd ed. (2008).

74. Stephen C. Meyer, “The Origin of Biological Information and the Higher Taxonomic Categories,” *Proceedings of the Biological Society of Washington*, no. 117 (2004), pp. 213–39.

75. Werner Gitt, *In the Beginning Was Information* (1997), pp. 107, 141.

76. J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, 3rd ed. (2008).

77. Alexander S. Khomenkov, “Gar-



moniya zhivoy prirody i problema proiskhozhdeniya mira” (The harmony of living nature and the problem of the origin of the world), in Priest Daniel Sysoyev and Nikolai Kolchurinsky, eds., *Bozhestvennoye otkroveniye i sovremennaya nauka* (Divine revelation and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2005), pp. 192–97.

78. Daniel J. Fairbanks, *The Relics of Eden: The Powerful Evidence of Evolution in Human DNA* (2007), p. 45.

79. Ibid., pp. 13–14.

80. Richard Dawkins, *The God Delusion*, p. 161.

81. James A. Shapiro and Richard von Sternberg, “Why Repetitive DNA Is Essential to Genome Function,” *Biological Reviews*, no. 80 (2005), p. 17.

82. See, for example, Shapiro and Sternberg, “Why Repetitive DNA Is Essential to Genome Function,” pp. 1–24; Christian Biémont and Cristina Vieira, “Junk DNA as an Evolutionary Force,” *Nature*, vol. 443 (Oct. 5, 2006), pp. 521–24.

83. Ryan J. Taft and John S. Mattick, “Increasing Biological Complexity Is Positively Correlated with the Relative Genome-wide Expansion of Non-protein-coding DNA Sequences,” *Genome Biology*, vol. 5, no. 1 (2003), article P1, pp. 1–25; Ryan J. Taft, Michael Pheasant, and John S. Mattick, “The Relationship between Non-protein-coding DNA and Eukaryotic Complexity,” *BioEssays*, vol. 29, no. 3 (2007), pp. 288–99.

84. Ibid.

85. Kenneth Weiss, “How the Eye Got Its Brain,” *Evolutionary Anthropology*, no. 11 (2002), pp. 215–19.

86. See J. C. Sanford, *Genetic Entropy*

& *the Mystery of the Genome*, 3rd ed. (2008).

87. S. F. Gilbert, J. M. Opitz, and R. A. Raff, “Resynthesizing Evolutionary and Developmental Biology,” *Developmental Biology*, no. 173 (1996), pp. 357–72; R. L. Carroll, “Towards a New Evolutionary Synthesis. *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*,” no. 15 (2002), pp. 27–32; D. H. Erwin, “Macroevolution Is More Than Repeated Rounds of Microevolution,” *Evolution and Development*, 2000, no. 2, pp. 74–84; David Stove, *Darwinian Fairytales: Selfish Genes, Errors of Heredity, and Other Fables of Evolution* (2005). See the introduction by Phillip Johnson for additional examples.

88. Kutschera and Niklas, “The Modern Theory of Biological Evolution,” pp. 255–76.

89. Thomas J. Parsons, David S. Muniec, Kevin Sullivan, Nicola Woodyatt, Rosemary Alliston-Greiner, Mark R. Wilson, Dianna L. Berry, Koren A. Holland, Victor W. Weedn, Peter Gill and Mitchell M. Holland, “A High Observed Substitution Rate in the Human Mitochondrial DNA Control Region,” *Nature Genetics*, vol. 15 (1997), pp. 363–68.

90. Alexey Nikolaevich Lunnyy, “Vsled za gemoglobinom tirannozavra—myagkiye tkani s elastichnymi sosudami i yadernymi kletkami iz kostey chetyrekh dinozavrov, i vnov’—fragmenty belkov” (After discovering hemoglobin of *Tyrannosaurus*, soft tissues with elastic blood vessels and nucleated cells are extracted from bones of four dinosaurs, and again with traces of proteins), in Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i*

*sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2006), pp. 179–202.

91. M. Hasegawa, Y. Cao, and Z. Yang, “Preponderance of Slightly Deleterious Polymorphism in Mitochondrial DNA: Nonsynonymous/Synonymous Rate Ratio Is Much Higher within Species than between Species,” *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 15 (1998), pp. 1499–1505; Alec MacAndrew, “Misconceptions around Mitochondrial Eve” (2000), <http://www.evolutionpages.com/MitochondrialEve.htm>.

92. David Stove, *Darwinian Fairytales*, pp. 27–39, 307–26.

93. Jonathan Gallagher, “Galileo in Reverse,” *Liberty: Magazine of Religious Freedom*, May–June 2006, pp. 14–15, 28–29.

94. Eric Voegelin, “The Drama of Humanity Conversations, III,” in *The Collected Works of Eric Voegelin*, vol. 33 (2004), p. 307.

95. David Berlinski, “The Deniable Darwin,” *Commentary*, no. 101 (1996), pp. 1–13, [http://www.arn.org/docs/berlinski/db\\_deniabledarwin0696.htm](http://www.arn.org/docs/berlinski/db_deniabledarwin0696.htm).

96. Theodosius Dobzhansky, “Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution,” *The American Biology Teacher*, no. 35 (1973), pp. 125–29.

97. David Stove, *Darwinian Fairytales*, pp. 106–8, 145–49.

98. Geoffrey Carr, “The Proper Study of Mankind: A Survey of Human Evolution,” *The Economist*, Dec. 24, 2005, p. 11.

99. Mary Midgley, “Evolution as Religion: A Comparison of Prophecies,”

*Zygon: Journal of Religion & Science*, no. 22 (1987), p. 179.

100. Thomas S. Kuhn, *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, 3rd ed. (1996).

101. Mary Midgley, “Evolution as Religion,” p. 189.

102. Richard Lewontin, “Billions and Billions of Demons,” *The New York Review of Books*, Jan. 9, 1997, pp. 28, 31.

103. Vladimir Alexeyevich [St. Hilarion] Troitsky, “Svyashchennoye Pisaniye, Tserkov’, i nauka” (Holy Scripture, the Church, and science), *Moskovskiye tserkovnye vedomosti* (Moscow church herald), 1911, no. 50.

#### Appendix Four: THE AGE OF THE EARTH AND THE RATE OF GEOLOGICAL PROCESSES

1. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, 6th ed. of 1882, reprint (London: J. M. Dent, 1972), chap. 15, p. 455.

2. Steven A. Austin, ed., “Excess Argon within Mineral Concentrates from the New Dacite Lava Dome at Mount St. Helen Volcano,” *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 10, no. 3 (1996), pp. 335–43.

3. Steven A. Austin, ed., *Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe* (1994), p. 126.

4. V. L. Khomichev and S. D. Sidoras, “O dostovernosti radiologicheskogo datirovaniya” (On the reliability of radiometric dating), *Izotopnaya geokhronologiya protsessov magmatizma, rudoobrazovaniya, osadkonakopleniya, i metamorfizma* (Isotopic dating of processes of ore formation, magmatism, sedimentation, and metamorphism), *Materialy III Vserossiyskoy konferentsii po izotopnoy geo-*

*khronologii, tom 2* (Proceedings of the third All-Russian conference on isotopic geochronology, vol. 2), Moskovskii institut geologii rudnykh mestorozhdenii, Rossiskaya akademiya nauk (Moscow institute of the geology of ore deposits, Russian academy of science) (2006), pp. 379–84.

5. M. I. Buiakaite, Yu. O. Gavrilov, D. O. Gertsev, and D. I. Golovin, “K-Ar i Rb-Sr izotopnye sistemy porod yurskogo terrigennoho kompleksa Bol’shogo Kavkaza” (The K-Ar and Rb-Sr isotopic systems in rocks from the Jurassic terrigenous complex in the Great Caucasus), *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye (Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk)* (Lithology and mineral resources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), vol. 38, no. 6 (2003), pp. 613–21.

6. Anphimov, N. V., *Litogenez v etalonnom razreze rifea Severnoi Evrazii: Problemy litologii, geokhimii, i osadochnogo rudogeneza* (Lithogenesis in a reference cut of Riphean strata in North Eurasia: Problems of lithology, geochemistry, and sedimentary ore formation) (2001), pp. 139–53.

7. Sergei V. Meien, *Vvedenie v teoriyu stratigrafii* (Introduction to the theory of stratigraphy) (1989).

8. Larry A. Vardiman, Andrew A. Snelling, and Eugene F. Chaffin, eds., *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, vol. 1 (2000), p. 675.

9. V. S. Olkhovsky and V. I. Grantsev, “The Role of the Decay of Excited Radioactive Nuclei in Nuclear Chronometry,” *Ukrainskiy fizichnyi zhurnal* (Ukrainian journal of physics), vol. 45, no. 12 (2000), pp. 1413–18.

10. Andrew A. Snelling, “The Cause of

Anomalous Potassium-Argon ‘Ages’ for Recent Andesite Flows at Mt. Ngauruhoe, New Zealand, and the Implication for Potassium-Argon ‘Dating,’” *Proceedings of the Fourth International Conference on Creationism* (1998).

11. G. V. Voitkevich and A. E. Miroshnikov, eds. *Spravochnik po geokhimii* (A reference book on geochemistry) (1977), p. 183.

12. Sergei I. Romanovsky, *Fizicheskaya sedimentologiya* (Physical sedimentology) (1988).

13. Ibid., p. 22.

14. Ibid., pp. 22–23.

15. Ibid.

16. Meien, *Vvedenie v teoriyu stratigrafii* (Introduction in the theory of stratigraphy), p. 24.

17. L. L. Kulyamin and L. S. Smirnov, “Prilivno-otlivnye tsikly osadkonakopleniya v kembro-ordovikskikh peskakh Pribaltiki” (Tidal sedimentation cycles in Cambrian-Ordovician sands of the Baltic Region), *Doklad Akademii nauk SSSR, Ser. geol.* (Proceedings of Academy of science of the USSR, Geology series), vol. 212, nos. 1–3 (1973), p. 699.

18. M. A. Tugarova, M. V. Platonov, and E. I. Sergeyeva, “Litodinamicheskaya kharakteristika terrigenoy sedimentatsii kembro-nizhneordovikskoy tolshchi Leningradskoy oblasti (Istoricheskaya geologiya i evolyutsionnaya geografiya)” (Lithodynamic characteristics of terrigenous sedimentation in the Cambrian–Late Ordovician sequence of the Leningrad district [Historical geology and evolutionary geography]) (2001), p. 89.

19. Alexander V. Lalomov, “Skorost’ osadkonakopleniya i aktual’noe vremya

sedimentatsii” (Sedimentation rate and the actual sedimentation time), *Materialy tret'ego Vserossiyskogo litologicheskogo soveshchaniya* (Proceedings of the third All-Russian lithological conference) (2003), pp. 111–13.

20. Alexander V. Lalomov and S. E. Tabolitch, “Opredelenie vozrasta Val'kumeiskoi pribrezhno-morskoj rossypi, severo-vostok Sibiri” (Dating of the Val'kumei coastal-marine placer, East Siberian Sea), *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye* (*Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk*) (Lithology and mineral resources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), vol. 39, no 4 (2004), pp. 317–21.

21. Lalomov, “Skorost' osadkonakopleniya i aktual'noe vremya sedimentatsii” (Sedimentation rate and the actual sedimentation time), pp. 111–13.

22. J. L. Mero, *Mineral Resources of the Sea* (1967), p. 312.

23. Ibid.

24. V. A. Zhamoida and A. G. Grigoriev, “Vzaimnosvyaz' mezhdut protsessami konkretseobrazovaniya i kachestvom prirodnoy sredy v Finskom zalive (Baltiyskoye more)” (The interrelations between concretion forming processes and the marine environment in the Gulf of Finland [Baltic Sea]), *Mezhdunarodnoe konferentsiye “Poleznye iskopaemye kontinental'nykh shel'fov”* (International conference “Mineral deposits of continental shelves”), Abstracts. St. Petersburg: VNII Okeangeologia, 2005, pp. 58–59.

25. B. L. Shcherbov and V. D. Strakhovenko, “Konkretsii v osadkakh iskustvennogo pruda v Altayskom kraye” (Nodules in sediments of an artificial reservoir in the Altai territory), *Litologiya i*

*poleznye iskopaemye* (*Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk*) (Lithology and mineral resources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), no. 1 (2006), pp. 51–60.

26. S. B. Petukhov, “Geologicheskii paradox” (Geological paradox), in Alexander V. Lalomov, ed., *Sotvoreniye* (Creation), vol. 2 (2004).

27. P. N. Kropotkin, *Degazatsiya Zemli: geodinamika, geoflyuidy, neft i gaz* (The degassing of the Earth: Geodynamics, geofluids, petrol and gas), ed. A. D. Dmitrievsky and B. M. Valyaev (2002), p. 472.

28. A. A. Barenbaum, “Mekhanizm formirovaniya mestorozhdeniy nefti i gaza” (Mechanisms of the formation of oil and gas deposits), *Doklady Rossiyskoy akademii nauk* (Proceedings of the Russian academy of science), vol. 39, no. 6 (2004), pp. 802–5.

29. Meien, *Vvedenie v teoriyu stratigrafii*, p. 24.

30. Ibid., p. 30.

31. Ibid., p. 34.

32. Ibid., p. 37.

33. Ibid., p. 43.

34. Ibid., p. 89.

35. Ibid., p. 96.

36. Sergei I. Romanovsky, *Fizicheskaya sedimentologiya*, p. 25.

37. Meien, *Vvedenie v teoriyu stratigrafii*, p. 89.

38. Guy Berthault, “Analysis of the Main Principles of Stratigraphy on the Basis of Experimental Data,” *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye* (*Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk*) (Lithology and mineral resources [Journal of Russian academy of science]), vol. 37, no. 5 (2002), pp. 509–15.



The Prophet Moses.  
*Contemporary icon from Greece.*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

*In entries for the works of Holy Fathers, original sources are followed, when appropriate, by Russian translations (RT) and English translations (ET) that have been used by the author or editor of the present volume.*

*Names of saints of the Orthodox Church are in boldface.*

Afanasiev, Victor. *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2000.

Albright, William F. "Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands." In Robert Young, *Analytical Concordance to the Bible*. Reprint, New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1936.

**Alexander of Alexandria, St.** *Epistle to Alexander, Bishop of Constantinople*. PG, vol. 18, 1857. ET: *Epistles on the Arian Heresy, Epistle 1*. In ANF, vol. 6. Also reproduced in Blessed Theodoret of Cyrus, *Ecclesiastical History* (book 1). SC, vol. 501, 2006. (Also in PG, vol. 82, 1864.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 3.

[Alferov], Priest Timofey. "Dragons ... Animals, Not Apparitions." *Creation*, vol. 22, no. 3 (June 2000), pp. 14–16. <http://creation.com/dragons-animals-not-apparitions>.

———. *Dve kosmogonii* (Two cosmogonies). Moscow: Palmonik, 1999.

———. *Evolutsiya ili tleniye?* (Evolution or corruption?). Moscow, 1997.

———. *Nauka o sotvorenii mira* (Science on the creation of the world). Moscow, 1996.

———. *Pravoslavnoye mirovozzreniye i sovremennoye yestestvoznaniye* (The Orthodox worldview and contemporary natural science). Moscow: Palomnik, 2004.

———. *Prirodovedeniye* (Natural history). Moscow: Palomnik, 2001.

———. "St. John Damascene on Dragons." <http://www.creationism.org/crimea/engl/all1.htm>.

**Ambrose of Milan, St.** *Exposition of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*. SC, vol. 45, 1956; and vol. 52bis, 1958. (Also in PL, vol. 15, 1845.) ET: Theodosia Tomkinson, trans. Etna, Calif.: Center for Traditionalist Orthodox Studies, 1998.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *Hexaemeron (The Six Days)*. CSEL, vol. 32.1, 1896. (Also in PL, vol. 14, 1845.) ET: John J. Savage, trans. *Saint Ambrose: Hexaemeron, Paradise, and Cain and Abel*. FC, vol. 42, 1961. ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- . *Isaac, or the Soul*. CSEL, vol. 32.1, 1896. (Also in PL, vol. 14, 1845.) ET: Michael P. McHugh, trans. *St. Ambrose: Seven Exegetical Works*. FC, vol. 65, 1972.
- . *Letters*. PL, vol. 16, 1845. ET: *Letter 41, To Marcellina*, in NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- . *On Noah*. CSEL, vol. 32.1, 1896. (Also in PL, vol. 14, 1845.)
- . *On the Decease of His Brother Satyrus*. CSEL, vol. 73, 1955. (Also in PL, vol. 16, 1845.) ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- . *On the Duties of the Clergy*. CCSL, vol. 15, 2001. (Also in PL, vol. 16, 1845.) ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- . *On the Harmony of Matthew and Luke in the Genealogy of Christ*. PL, vol. 17, 1845.
- . *On the Mysteries*. SC 25bis, 1950. (Also in PL, vol. 16, 1845.) ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- . *Paradise*. CSEL, vol. 32.1, 1896. (Also in PL, vol. 14, 1845.) ET: John J. Savage, trans. *Saint Ambrose: Hexaemeron, Paradise, and Cain and Abel*. FC, vol. 42, 1961.
- . *Two Books concerning Repentance*. SC, vol. 179, 1971. (Also in PL, vol. 17, 1845.) ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 10.
- Ambrose of Optina, St.** *Sovety suprugam i roditelyam* (Counsels to spouses and parents). Moscow: Blagovest, 2009.
- Andrew, Archbishop of Caesarea.** *Commentary on the Apocalypse of John the Theologian*. Josef Schmid, ed. *Studien zur Geschichte des griechischen Apokalypse-Textes*, vol. 1. Munich: Karl Zink Verlag, 1955–56. (Also in PG, vol. 106, 1863.) ET: Eugenia Scarvelis Constantinou. *Andrew of Caesarea and the Apocalypse in the Ancient Church of the East: Studies and Translation*, part 1. Ph.D. diss., Université Laval, Quebec, 2008. ET: William C. Weinrich, trans. *Greek Commentaries on Revelation: Oecumenius and Andrew of Caesarea*. ACT, 2011.
- Andreyev, I. M.** “Nauchnoye znaniye i khristianskaya istina” (Scientific Knowledge and Christian truth). In *Vladimirskiy Pravoslavnyy Russkiy Kalendar’ na 1974 god*” (St. Vladimir Russian Orthodox Calendar for 1974). Jackson, N.J.: St. Vladimir Memorial Church, 1974.
- Anphimov, N. V.** *Litogenez v etalonnom razreze rifea Severnoi Evrazii*.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Problemy litologii, geokhimii i osadochnogo rudogeneza* (Lithogenesis in a reference cut of Riphean strata in North Eurasia. Problems of lithology, geochemistry and sedimentary ore formation). Moscow: MAIK Nauka/Interperiodika, 2001, pp. 139–53.
- Apemen, “Missing Links” & the Bible. A presentation by Philip Bell, directed and produced by Paul Varnum. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2010. DVD.
- Arkell, W. J. *Jurassic Geology of the World*. New York: Hafner, 1956.
- Aquinas, Thomas. *Summa Theologica*. Fathers of the English Dominican Province, trans. New York: Benziger Brothers, 1948. Reprint, Westminster, Md.: Christian Classics, 1981.
- Astronomy: What Do We Really Know?* A presentation by Dr. Jason Lisle, produced and directed by Paul Varnum. Hebron, Ky: Answers in Genesis, 2005. DVD.
- Athanasius the Great, St.** *Against the Heathen*. SC, vol. 18bis, 1947. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 4.
- . *Commentary on the Psalms*. PG, vol. 27, 1857.
- . *Defense of the Nicene Definition (De decretis)*. AW, vol. 2.1–2, 1935. (Also in PG, vol. 25b, 1857.) ET in Khaled Anatolios. *Athanasius*. London: Routledge, 2004. (ET also in NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 4.)
- . *Four Discourses against the Arians*. AW, vol. 1.2, 1998 (for *Discourses* 1–2); vol. 1.3, 2000 (for *Discourse* 3). (Also in PG, vol. 25b, 1857.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 4.
- . *On the Incarnation of the Word*. SC, vol. 199, 1973. (Also in PG, vol. 25b, 1857.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 4.
- . *On the Passion and Crucifixion of the Lord*. PG, vol. 28, 1887.
- Athenagoras of Athens. *A Plea for the Christians*. SC, vol. 3, 1943. (Also in PG, vol. 6, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 2.
- Augustine of Hippo, Blessed.** *Christian Instruction*. CCSL, vol. 32, 1962. (Also in PL, vol. 34, 1841.) ET: FC, vol. 2, 1947.
- . *The City of God*. CCSL, vols. 47–48, 1955. (Also in PL, vol. 41, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 2.
- . *Concerning the Nature of Good: Against the Manichaeans*. CSEL, vol. 25.2, 1892. (Also in PL, vol. 42, 1841.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 4.
- . *The Confessions*. CCSL, vol. 27, 1981. (Also in PL, vol. 32, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 1.
- . *The Harmony of the Gospels*. CSEL, vol. 43, 1904. (Also in PL, vol. 34, 1841.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 6.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *Letters* (nos. 108, 164, 193). CSEL, vol. 34.2, 1898 (for *Letter* 108); vol. 44, 1904 (for *Letter* 164); and vol. 57, 1923 (for *Letter* 193). (Also in PL, vol. 33, 1845.) ET: Wilfrid Parsons, trans. *Saint Augustine: Letters*. FC, vol. 18, 1953 (for *Letter* 108); vol. 20, 1955 (for *Letter* 164); and vol. 30, 1956 (for *Letter* 193).
- . *The Literal Meaning of Genesis*. CSEL, vol. 28.1, 1894. (Also in PL, vol. 34, 1841.) ET: John Hammond Taylor, S.J., trans. *St. Augustine: The Literal Meaning of Genesis*. ACW, nos. 41–42, 1982.
- . *On the Trinity*. PL, vol. 42, 1841. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 3.
- . *The Soliloquies*. CSEL, vol. 89, 1986. (Also in PL, vol. 32, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 7.
- . *Tractates on the Gospel of St. John*. CCSL, vol. 36, 1954. (Also in PL, vol. 35, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 7.
- Aurobindo, Sri. *The Life Divine*. Twin Lakes, Wisc.: Lotus Press, 1985.
- Austin, Steven A. “Excess Argon within Mineral Concentrates from the New Dacite Lava Dome at Mount St. Helen Volcano.” *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 10, no. 3 (1996), pp. 335–43.
- , ed. *Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe*. Santee, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1994.
- Austin, Steven A., and D. Russell Humphreys. “The Sea’s Missing Salt: A Dilemma for Evolutionists.” *Proceedings of the Second International Conference on Creationism*, vol. 2. Pittsburgh, Pa.: Creation Science Fellowship, 1991.
- Averky (Taushev) of Jordanville, Archbishop, and Fr. Seraphim (Rose). *The Apocalypse in the Teachings of Ancient Christianity*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1985. 2nd ed., 1995.
- Ayala, Francisco J. “Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution: Theodosius Dobzhansky: 1900–1975.” *The Journal of Heredity*, vol. 68 (Jan.–Feb. 1977), pp. 3–10.
- Bailey, Alice A. *The Externalization of the Hierarchy*. New York: Lucis Trust, 1957.
- Baker, Mace. *The Real History of Dinosaurs*. 2nd ed. Redding: Calif.: New Century Books, 1998.
- Balthasar, Hans Urs von. *Cosmic Liturgy: The Universe according to Maximus the Confessor*. San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 2003.
- Barenbaum, A. A. “Mekhanizm formirovaniya mestorozhdeniy nefi i gaza” (Mechanisms of the formation of oil and gas deposits). *Doklady Rossiys-*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- koy akademii nauk* (Proceedings of the Russian academy of science), vol. 39, no. 6 (2004), pp. 802–5.
- Barsanuphius of Optina, St.** *Keleynye zapiski 1892–1896* (Cell-notes 1892–1896). Moscow, 1991. Quoting from *Dushepoleznoye chteniye* (Soul-profitting reading), Aug. 1897.
- . *Talks with Spiritual Children*. In Victor Afanasiev. *Elder Barsanuphius of Optina*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2000.
- Barsanuphius the Great and John the Prophet, Sts.** *Letters* (*Letters* 69 and 605). SC, vol. 426, 1997 (for *Letter* 69); vol. 451, 2000 (for *Letter* 605). (*Letter* 605 also in PG, vol. 86a, 1865, as *Doctrina circa opinioniones Origenis, Evagrii et Didymi*.) RT: *Rukovodstvo k dukhovnoi zhizni* (Guidance toward spiritual life). Moscow, 1855. ET: [Fr.] John Chryssavgis, trans. *Barsanuphius and John: Letters*. 2 vols. FC, vols. 113–114, 2006–2007.
- Basil the Great, St.** *Hexaemeron* (The Six Days). SC, vol. 26bis, 1968. (Also in PG, vol. 29b, 1857.) ET: Sr. Agnes Clare Way, C.D.P., trans. *St. Basil: Exegetic Homilies*. FC, vol. 46, 1963. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 8.
- . *Homily Explaining That God Is Not the Cause of Evil*. PG, vol. 31, 1885. ET: Nonna Verna Harrison, trans. *St. Basil the Great: On the Human Condition*. PPS, vol. 30, 2005.
- . *The Long Rules*. PG, vol. 31, 1885. ET: Sr. M. Monica Wagner, C.S.C. *St. Basil: Ascetical Works*. FC, vol. 9, 1962.
- . *On the Holy Spirit*. SC, vol. 17, 1947. (Also in PG, vol. 32, 1886.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 8.
- . *On the Origin of Man*. SC, vol. 160, 1970. (Also in PG, vol. 30, 1888.) [Fr. Seraphim translated from the French version in SC, vol. 160. A Russian translation was published in *Zhurnal Moskovskoy Patriarkhii* (Journal of the Moscow Patriarchate), 1972, nos. 1 and 3, but Fr. Seraphim probably did not know of it.] ET: Nonna Verna Harrison, trans. *St. Basil the Great: On the Human Condition*. PPS, vol. 30, 2005.
- Batten, Don. “Age of the Earth: 101 Evidences for a Young Age of the Earth and the Universe.” Last modified June 4, 2009. <http://creation.com/age-of-the-earth>.
- Batten, Don, et al. *The Creation Answers Book*. 2nd ed. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Book Publishers, 2008. <http://creation.com/the-creation-answers-book-index>.
- Becker, Carl L. *The Heavenly City of the Eighteenth-Century Philosophers*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1970.
- Bede the Venerable, St.** *Commentary on 1 and 2 Peter*. CCSL, vol. 121,

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

1983. (Also in PL, vol. 93, 1862.) ET: Dom David Hurst, O.S.B., trans. *Bede the Venerable: Commentary on the Seven Catholic Epistles*. Kalamazoo, Mich.: Cistercian Publications, 1985.
- . *Commentary on Genesis* (book 1). CCSL, vol. 118A, 1967. (Also in PL, vol. 91, 1862). ET: Robert C. Hill and Carmen S. Hardin, trans. *Commentaries on Genesis 1–3: Severian of Gabala and Bede the Venerable*. ACT, 2010.
- . *Explanation of the Apocalypse*. CCSL, vol. 121a, 2001. (Also in PL, vol. 93, 1862.) ET: Rev. Edward Marshall, trans. *The Explanation of the Apocalypse by Venerable Beda*. Oxford: James Parker, 1878. <http://www.apocalyptic-theories.com/theories/bede/bede.html>.
- . *Homilies on the Gospels*. CCSL, vol. 122, 1955. (Also in PL, vol. 92, 1862.) ET: Lawrence T. Martin and David Hurst, O.S.B., trans. *Bede the Venerable: Homilies on the Gospels*. 2 vols. Kalamazoo, Mich.: Cistercian Publications, 1990.
- Behe, Michael J. *Darwin's Black Box: The Biochemical Challenge to Evolution*. New York: The Free Press/Simon & Schuster, 1996.
- . "Reply to My Critics: A Response to Reviews of *Darwin's Black Box: The Biochemical Challenge to Evolution*." *Biology and Philosophy*, no. 16 (2001), pp. 685–709.
- Bell, Philip. "Bishop Bell's Brass Behemoths." *Creation*, vol. 25, no. 4 (Sept. 2003), pp. 40–44. <http://creation.com/bishop-bells-brass-behemoths>.
- Bergman, Jerry. "Did Darwin Plagiarize His Evolution Theory?" *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 16, no. 3 (2002), pp. 58–63. [http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j16\\_3/j16\\_3\\_58-63.pdf](http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j16_3/j16_3_58-63.pdf).
- . *Slaughter of the Dissidents*. Vol 1. Southworth, Wash.: Leafcutter Press, 2008.
- . "Why Orthodox Darwinism Demands Atheism." *Answers Research Journal*, vol. 3 (2010), pp. 147–52. <http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/arj/v3/n1/orthodox-darwinism-atheism>.
- Bergman, Jerry, and Wayne Frair, "Evidence for Turtle Evolution?" *Journal of Creation*, no. 21 (2007), pp. 24–26.
- Bergman, Jerry, and George Howe. *"Vestigial Organs" Are Fully Functional*. Terre Haute, Ind.: Creation Research Society Books, 1990.
- Berlinski, David. "The Deniable Darwin." *Commentary*, no. 101 (1996), pp. 1–13. [http://www.arn.org/docs/berlinski/db\\_deniabledarwin0696.htm](http://www.arn.org/docs/berlinski/db_deniabledarwin0696.htm).
- . *The Devil's Delusion: Atheism and Its Scientific Pretensions*. New York: Random House, 2008.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Berra, Tim. *Evolution and the Myth of Creationism*. Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1990.
- Berry, William B. N. *Growth of a Prehistoric Time Scale Based on Organic Evolution*. San Francisco: W. H. Freeman, 1968.
- Berthault, Guy. "Analysis of the Main Principles of Stratigraphy on the Basis of Experimental Data." *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye (Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk)* (Lithology and Mineral Resources [Journal of Russian academy of science]), vol. 37, no. 5 (2002), pp. 509–15.
- . "Experiments on Lamination of Sediments, Resulting from a Periodic Graded-Bedding subsequent to Deposition—A Contribution to the Explanation of Lamination of Various Sediments and Sedimentary Rocks." *Comptes-Rendus Académie des Sciences, Paris*, Série II, 303 (Dec. 3, 1986), pp. 1569–74.
- . "Sedimentation of a Heterogranular Mixture: Experimental Lamination in Still and Running Water." *Comptes-Rendus Académie des Sciences, Paris*, Série II, 306 (Feb. 16, 1988), pp. 717–24.
- Bessarion (Vissarion), Bishop. *Tolkovaniye na parimii* (Commentary on Vespersal Scripture readings), vol. 1. St. Petersburg: I. L. Tuzov, 1894.
- Bickerman, E. J. *Chronology of the Ancient World*. Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1968.
- Big Problems with the Big Bang*. A presentation by Dr. Jason Lisle, produced and directed by Paul Varnum. Hebron, Ky: Answers in Genesis, 2005. DVD.
- Biémont, Christian, and Cristina Vieira. "Junk DNA as an Evolutionary Force." *Nature*, vol. 443 (Oct. 5, 2006), pp. 521–24.
- Blowers, Paul M. *Exegesis and Spiritual Pedagogy in Maximus the Confessor: An Investigation of the Quaestiones ad Thalassium*. Notre Dame, Ind.: University of Notre Dame Press, 1991.
- Bouteneff, Peter C. *Beginnings: Ancient Christian Readings of the Biblical Creation Narratives*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Baker Academic, 2008.
- Bradshaw, David. "Divine Freedom in the Greek Patristic Tradition." *Quaestiones Disputatae* (online journal), forthcoming.
- Brooks, Rodney. "The Relationship between Matter and Life." *Nature*, vol. 409 (Jan. 18, 2001), pp. 409–11.
- Brown, Colin. *Philosophy and the Christian Faith*. Wheaton, Ill.: Tyndale, 1971.
- Brown, Michael H. *The Search for Eve*. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.
- Bufeyev (Bufeev), Archpriest Constantine, ed. *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science). Moscow: Department of Religious Education and Catechism of the Russian Orthodox Church, and the Missionary-Enlightenment Center "Shestodnev." vol. 1, 2005; vol. 2, 2006; vol. 3, 2007; vol. 4, 2008; vol. 5, 2009. Available for download at [www.shestodnev.ru](http://www.shestodnev.ru).
- . *Pravoslavnoye veroucheniye i teoriya evolyutsii* (Orthodox doctrine and the theory of evolution). St. Petersburg: Society of St. Basil the Great, 2003. Available for download at <http://www.shestodnev.ru/PravVer/PravVer.htm>.
- Buiakaite, M. I., Yu. O. Gavrilov, D. O. Gertsev, and D. I. Golovin. "K-Ar i Rb-Sr izotopnye sistemy porod yurskogo terrigenogo kompleksa Bol'shogo Kavkaza" (The K-Ar and Rb-Sr isotopic systems in rocks from the Jurassic terrigenous complex in the Great Caucasus). *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye* (*Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk*) (Lithology and Mineral Resources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), vol. 38, no. 6 (2003), pp. 613–21.
- Burtt, Edwin A., ed. *The English Philosophers from Bacon to Mill*. New York: Random House, 1939.
- Calciu, Fr. George. *Father George Calciu: Interviews, Homilies, and Talks*. St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, comp. and ed. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2010. [An expanded version of Fr. George Calciu, *Christ Is Calling You!*, published by the St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood in 1997.]
- Cao, Ying, Axel Janke, Peter J. Waddell, Michael Westerman, Osamu Takenaka, Shigenori Murata, Norihiro Okada, Svante Pääbo, and Masami Hasegawa. "Conflict among Individual Mitochondrial Proteins in Resolving the Phylogeny of Eutherian Orders." *Journal of Molecular Evolution*, no. 47 (1998), pp. 307–22.
- Carr, Geoffrey. "The Proper Study of Mankind: A Survey of Human Evolution." *The Economist*, Dec. 24, 2005, p. 11.
- Carroll, Robert L. "Towards a New Evolutionary Synthesis." *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 15 (2002), pp. 27–32.
- Catchpoole, David. "Angkor Saw a Stegosaur?" *Creation*, vol. 29, no. 4 (Sept. 2007), p. 56. <http://creation.com/angkor-saw-a-stegosaur>.
- Catchpoole, David, and Jonathan Sarfati. "'Schweitzer's Dangerous Discovery.'" Last modified July 19, 2006. <http://creation.com/schweitzers-dangerous-discovery>

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- The Catholic Encyclopedia*. New York: Robert Appleton, 1911.
- Cavarnos, Constantine. *Biological Evolutionism*. 2nd ed. Belmont, Mass.: Institute for Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies, 1997.
- . *Modern Greek Philosophers on the Human Soul*. 2nd ed. Belmont, Mass.: Institute for Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies, 1987.
- Censorinus. *De Die Natali*. Ivan Cholodniak, ed. St. Petersburg: Russian Imperial Academy of Sciences, 1889.
- Chaffey, Tim, and Jason Lisle. *Old-Earth Creationism on Trial*. Green Forest, Ark: Master Books, 2008.
- Chamberlain, J. W., and D. M. Hunten. *Theory of Planetary Atmospheres*. 2nd ed. London: Academic Press, 1987.
- Charlesworth, J. K. *The Quaternary Era*, vol. 2. London: Edward Arnold, 1957.
- Chittick, Donald E. *The Puzzle of Ancient Man: Evidence for Advanced Technology in Past Civilizations*. 3rd ed. Newberg, Oreg.: Creation Compass, 2006.
- Chris, Raymond. "Scientists Report Finding Fossils of Dinosaurs in Antarctica's Interior"; "Discovery of Leaves in Antarctica Sparks Debate over Whether Region Had Near-Temperate Climate." *Chronicle of Higher Education*, March 20, 1991.
- Clement of Alexandria. *Stromateis* (books 2, 3, and 6). CS, vol. 38, 1954 (book 2). GCS, vol. 52, 1960 (book 3). SC, vol. 446, 1999 (book 6). (Also in PG, vol. 8, 1857.) ET: John Ferguson, trans. *Clement of Alexandria: Stromateis, Books One to Three*. FC, vol. 85, 1991 (for books 2 and 3). ET: ANF, vol. 2 (for book 6).
- . *The Instructor* (book 3). SC, vol. 158, 1970 (book 3). (Also in PG, vol. 8, 1857.) ET: Simon P. Wood, C.P., trans. *Clement of Alexandria: Christ the Educator*. FC, vol. 23, 1954.
- Coates, Howard. "Aboriginal Flood Legend." *Creation*, vol. 4, no. 3 (Oct. 1981).
- Coates, Howard, and W. H. Douglas, comp. "Australian Aboriginal Flood Stories." Introduction by John Mackay. *Creation*, vol. 4, no. 1 (March 1981).
- Cohen, Andrew, and Ken Wilber, "A Kosmic Roller-Coaster Ride," *Enlightenment Next: The Magazine for Evolutionaries*, no. 40 (May–July, 2008).
- Colbert, E. H. "Evolutionary Growth Rates in the Dinosaurs." *Scientific Monthly*, August 1949.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Constance, Lincoln. "Systematic Botany—An Unending Synthesis." *Taxon*, vol. 13, no. 8 (Nov. 1964), pp. 257–73.
- Constantinou, Eugenia Scarvelis. *Andrew of Caesarea and the Apocalypse in the Ancient Church of the East: Studies and Translation*, part 1. Ph.D. diss., Université Laval, Quebec, 2008.
- Conway, M. S. "Ediacaran-like Fossils in Cambrian Burgess Shale—type Faunas of North America." *Palaeontology*, no. 36 (1993), pp. 593–635.
- Cook, Melvin A. "Where Is the Earth's Radiogenic Helium?" *Nature*, vol. 179 (Jan. 26, 1957).
- Cooper, Bill. *After the Flood: The Early Post-Flood History of Europe*. West Sussex, England: New Wine Press, 1995.
- . "The Early History of Man, Part 1: Living Dinosaurs from Anglo-Saxon and Other Early Records." *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 6, no. 1 (April 1992), pp. 49–66.
- Corbishly, Thomas. *The Spirituality of Teilhard de Chardin*. New York: Paulist Press, 1971.
- Cosmas of Maiuma, St. *Canon of the Nativity of Christ*. In *Menaion tou Dekembriou* (Menaion for December). Athens: Apostoliki Diakonia of the Church of Greece, 1975. ET in *The Festal Menaion*. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, trans. London: Faber and Faber, 1969. Reprint, South Canaan, Pa.: St. Tikhon's Seminary Press, 1990.
- Cosmos: Created & Young*. Featuring Dr. D. Russell Humphreys, directed by Larry James. Wall, Pa.: Cornerstone Television; Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2009. DVD, 4 discs.
- Cranfill, S. A. *They Came from Babel*. Reno, Nev.: The Write House, Ltd., 1994.
- Created Cosmos*. Written and designed by Dr. Jason Lisle, produced by Benjamin Wilt. Hebron, Ky.: Answers in Genesis, 2007. DVD.
- Creation & Cosmology*. A presentation by Dr. Danny Faulkner, directed and produced by Paul Varnum. Hebron, Ky.: Answers in Genesis, 2007. DVD.
- Crow, James F. "The High Spontaneous Mutation Rate: Is It a Health Risk?" *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 94 (1997), pp. 8380–86.
- Crow, Karen D., and Günter P. Wagner. "What Is the Role of Genome Duplication in the Evolution of Complexity and Diversity?" *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 23 (2006), pp. 887–92.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Curd, Martin, and J. A. Cover. *Philosophy of Science: The Central Issues*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1998.
- Curnoe, D., and A. Thorne. "Number of Ancestral Human Species: A Molecular Perspective." *HOMO*, vol. 53, no. 3 (2005), pp. 201–24.
- Cyprian of Carthage, St. *Treatise 2, On the Dress of Virgins*. CSEL, vol. 3, 1868–1871. (Also in PL, vol. 4, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- . *Treatise 7, On Mortality*. CCSL, vol. 3.1, 1976. (Also in PL, vol. 4, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- Cyril of Alexandria, St. *Against Julian* (book 1). SC, 322, 1985. (Also in PG 76, 1863.) ET of excerpts in Norman Russell. *Cyril of Alexandria*. London: Routledge, 2000.
- . *Catena on 1 Peter 3:18–20*. PG, vol. 74, 1863. ET in ACCS: New Testament, vol. 11, 2000.
- . *Commentary on Romans 5:18–19*. PG, vol. 74, 1863. ET in ACCS: New Testament, vol. 6, 1998.
- . *Commentary on the Gospel of St. John*. PG, vols. 73–74, 1863. ET of vol. 1: P. E. Pusey, trans. LFC, vol. 43, 1874. ET of vol. 2: Thomas Randell, trans. LFC, vol. 48, 1885.
- . *Commentary on the Prophet Isaiah*. PG, vol. 70, 1864.
- . *Glaphyra on Genesis*. PG, vol. 69, 1864.
- . *Thesaurus on the Holy and Consubstantial Trinity*. PG, vol. 75, 1863.
- Cyril of Jerusalem, St. *Catechetical Lectures*. PG, vol. 33, 1886. ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 7.
- Dalrymple, G. B., and J. G. Moore. "Argon 40: Excess in Submarine Pillow Basalts from Kilauea Volcano, Hawaii." *Science*, vol. 161, no. 3846 (Sept. 13, 1968), pp. 1132–35.
- Damascene (Orlovsky), Abbot. *Mucheniki, ispovedniki, i podvizhniki blagochestiya Russkoy Pravoslavnoy Tserkvi XX stoletiya: Zhizneopisaniya i materialy k nim* (Martyrs, confessors, and ascetics of piety of the Russian Orthodox Church of the twentieth century: Biographies and material on them), books 6 and 7. Tver: Bulat, 2002.
- Damascene, Hieromonk. *Father Seraphim Rose: His Life and Works*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2003. 3rd ed., 2010.
- Danilevsky, Nikolai Yakovlevich. *Darvinizm: Kriticheskoye issledovaniye* (Darwinism: A critical study). St. Petersburg, 1885.
- Dart, Raymond A., with Dennis Craig. *Adventures with the Missing Link*. London: Hamish Hamilton, 1959.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Darwin, Charles. *The Autobiography of Charles Darwin: 1809–1882*. Nora Barlow, ed. New York: W. W. Norton, 1958.
- . *The Correspondence of Charles Darwin*, vol. 8, 1860. Frederick Burkhardt, ed. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993.
- . *The Origin of Species*. 2nd ed. of 1859. Reprint, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1996.
- . *The Origin of Species*. 6th ed. of 1882. Reprint, London: J. M. Dent, 1971.
- Darwin, Francis, ed. *The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin*. 2 vols. London: John Murray, 1887.
- Davis, Percival, and Dean H. Kenyon. *Of Pandas and People: The Central Question of Biological Origins*. Edited by Charles B. Thaxton. 2nd ed. Dallas: Haughton, 1993.
- Dawkins, Richard. *The Blind Watchmaker*. New York: Norton, 1986.
- . *The God Delusion*. New York: Houghton Mifflin, 2008.
- . *The Root of All Evil?* Channel 4 (U.K.), broadcast Jan. 2006.
- Deamer, David W. “The First Living Systems: A Bioenergetic Perspective.” *Microbiology and Molecular Biology Reviews*, no. 61 (1997), pp. 239–61.
- Dembski, William A. *The End of Christianity: Finding a Good God in an Evil World*. Nashville, Tenn.: B&H Publishing Group, 2009.
- . *No Free Lunch: Why Specified Complexity Cannot Be Purchased without Intelligence*. Lanham, Md.: Rowman & Littlefield, 2002.
- Dembski, William A., Wayne J. Downs, and Fr. Justin B. A. Frederick, eds. *The Patristic Understanding of Creation: An Anthology of Writings from the Church Fathers on Creation and Design*. Reisel, Tex.: Erasmus Press, 2008.
- Denton, Michael. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*. Bethesda, Md.: Adler & Adler, 1986.
- Dewar, Douglas. *Difficulties of the Evolutionary Theory*. London: Thynne, 1931.
- . *More Difficulties of the Evolutionary Theory*. London: Thynne, 1938.
- DeYoung, Don. *Thousands ... Not Billions*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2005.
- Diadochus of Photiki, St. *On Spiritual Knowledge and Discrimination*. SC, vol. 5bis, 1955. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 1, 1979. ET: Cliff Ermatinger, trans. *Following the Footsteps of the Invisible: The Complete Works of Diadochus of Photike*. Trappist, Ky.: Cistercian Publications; Collegeville, Minn.: Liturgical Press, 2010.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- DiMichele, W. A., A. K. Behrensmeier, T. D. Olszewski, C. C. Labandeira, J. M. Pandolfi, S. L. Wing, and R. Bobe. "Long-Term Stasis in Ecological Assemblages: Evidence from the Fossil Record." *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, no. 35 (2004), pp. 285–322.
- "Discovery Institute's Science Education Policy." Posted Aug. 17, 2010. <http://www.discovery.org/a/3164>
- Distant Starlight—A Forum*. Featuring Dr. John Hartnett and Dr. D. Russell Humphreys. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2011. DVD.
- Dizikes, Peter. "Missing Links." *The Boston Globe*. Oct. 23, 2005.
- Dobzhansky, Theodosius. "Changing Man." *Science*, vol. 155, no. 3761 (Jan. 27, 1967), pp. 409–15.
- . "Ethics and Values in Biological and Cultural Evolution." *Zygon: Journal of Religion & Science*, vol. 8, nos. 3–4 (Sept.–Dec. 1973), pp. 261–81.
- . "Evolution: God's Method of Creation." *Concern*, Spring 1973.
- . "Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution." *American Biology Teacher*, vol. 35 (1973), pp. 125–29.
- . "On Human Life." *St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly*, vol. 17, nos. 1–2 (1973), pp. 100–104.
- Dorotheus of Gaza, Abba, St.** *Teachings Profitable for the Soul*. SC, vol. 92, 1963. (Also in PG, vol. 88, 1860). RT: *Dushepoleznaya poucheniya* (Spiritual instructions). Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 1900. ET: Constantine Scouteris, trans. *Abba Dorotheos: Practical Teaching on the Christian Life*. Athens, 2000. ET: Eric P. Wheeler, trans. *Dorotheos of Gaza: Discourses and Sayings*. Kalamazoo, Mich.: Cistercian Publications, 1977.
- Dragons or Dinosaurs?* Directed by André van Heerden. St. Catharines, Ontario: Cloud Ten Pictures; Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2010. DVD.
- Driver, Rebecca. "Australia's Aborigines ... Did They See Dinosaurs?" *Creation*, vol. 21, no. 1 (Dec. 1998), pp. 24–27. <http://creation.com/australias-aborigines-did-they-see-dinosaurs>.
- Eliade, Mircea. *A History of Religious Ideas*, vol. 1. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1978.
- Eldredge, Niles. *Reinventing Darwin: The Great Debate at the High Table of Evolutionary Theory*. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1995.
- , and Ian Tattersall. *The Myths of Human Evolution*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1982.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Emerson, Ralph Waldo. *The Selected Writings of Ralph Waldo Emerson*. Brooks Atkinson, ed. The Modern Library. New York: Random House, 1968; reprint, 1992.
- Empedocles. *Fragments*. In Arthur Fairbanks, ed. and trans. *The First Philosophers of Greece*. London: K. Paul, Trench, Trubner, 1898.
- Encyclopedia of Geomorphology*. A. S. Goudie, ed. London: Routledge, 2004.
- Engeln, O. D. von, and Kenneth E. Caster. *Geology*. New York: McGraw Hill, 1952.
- Ephraim the Syrian, St.** *A Collection of Interpretations of Genesis of our Holy Father Ephraim the Syrian and Jacob, Bishop of Edessa: Excerpts from the Syriac Catena of Severus, Monk of Edessa*. Syriac text with Latin translation in J. S. Assemani, ed. *Sancti Patris Nostri Ephraem Syri Opera Omnia*. Rome, 1732–43.
- . *Commentary on Genesis*. Syriac text with Latin translation in J. S. Assemani, ed. *Sancti Patris Nostri Ephraem Syri Opera Omnia* (The Complete Works of our Holy Father Ephraim of Syria). Rome, 1732–1743. Critical edition: R. M. Tonneau, ed. *Sancti Ephraem Syri in Genesim et in Exodum commentarii* (The Commentaries on Genesis and Exodus of Saint Ephraim of Syria), CSCO, vols. 152–53, 1955. RT: *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatykh" otsa nashego Yefrema Sirina* (The works of our father among the saints Ephraim the Syrian), vol. 6. Sergiyev Posad: Moscow Theological Academy, 1887. ET: Edward G. Mathews, Jr. and Joseph P. Amar, trans. *St. Ephrem the Syrian: Selected Prose Works*. FC, vol. 91, 1994.
- . *Hymns against Heresies*. CSCO, vols. 169–70, 1957.
- . *Hymns on Faith*. CSCO, vols. 154–55, 1955.
- . *Hymns on Paradise*. CSCO, vols. 174–75, 1957. RT: *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatykh" otsa nashego Yefrema Sirina* (The works of our father among the saints Ephraim the Syrian), vol. 5. Sergiyev Posad: Moscow Theological Academy, 1887. ET: Sebastian Brock, trans. *St. Ephrem the Syrian: Hymns on Paradise*. PPS, vol. 10, 1998.
- . *Hymns on the Epiphany*. CSCO, vols. 186–87, 1959. ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 13.
- . *Hymns on the Nativity*. CSCO, vols. 186–87, 1959. ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 13. ET: Kathleen E. McVey, trans. *Ephrem the Syrian: Hymns*. New York: Paulist Press, 1989.
- . *Nisibene Hymns*. CSCO, vols. 218–19, 1961. ET: NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 13.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Epiphanius of Salamis (Constantia) on Cyprus, St. *Ancoratus*** (The Well-anchored Man). GCS, vol. 15, 1915. (Also in PG, vol. 43, 1864.)
- . *Panarion* (The Medicine Chest). GCS, vol. 25, 1915 (chaps. 1–33); vol. 31, 1922 (chaps. 34–64); vol. 37, 1933 (chaps. 65–80). (Also in PG, vols. 41–42, 1863.) ET: Frank Williams, trans. *The Panarion of Epiphanius of Salamis*. 2 vols. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1987.
- Erwin, D. H. “Macroevolution Is More Than Repeated Rounds of Microevolution.” *Evolution and Development*, 2000, no. 2, pp. 74–84.
- “Evolution: A Heresy?” *Orthodox Observer*, no. 666 (Aug. 8, 1973), p. 3.
- Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed*. Directed by Nathan Franskowski. Santa Fe: Premise Media, 2008. DVD.
- Fairbanks, Daniel F. *The Relics of Eden: The Powerful Evidence of Evolution in Human DNA*. Amherst, N.Y.: Prometheus Books, 2007.
- Faul, Henry. *Nuclear Geology*. New York: John Wiley, 1954.
- Faulkner, Danny. *Universe by Design: An Explanation of Cosmology and Creation*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2004.
- The Festal Menaion*. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, trans. London: Faber and Faber, 1969. Reprint, South Canaan, Pa.: St. Tikhon’s Seminary Press, 1990.
- Feynman, R. P., R. B. Leighton, and M. Sands. *The Feynman Lectures on Physics*. Reading, Mass: Addison-Wesley, 1963.
- Fields, Weston W. *Unformed and Unfilled: A Critique of the Gap Theory*. Collinsville, Ill.: Burgener Enterprises, 1976.
- Finegan, Jack. *Handbook of Biblical Chronology*. Revised ed. Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1998.
- Finlayson, Clive. “Biogeography and Evolution of the Genus *Homo*.” *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 20 (2005), pp. 457–63.
- Fitzgerald, Allan D., ed. *Augustine through the Ages: An Encyclopedia*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: William B. Eerdmans, 1999.
- Florovsky, [Protopresbyter] Georges. *Creation and Redemption*. Belmont, Mass.: Nordland, 1976.
- . *Ways of Russian Theology*, part 2. Robert L. Nichols, trans. Belmont, Mass.: Nordland, 1979.
- The Footsteps of Leviathan: Fossil Evidence of Creation*. VHS. Produced by Keziah and American Portrait Films. Cleveland, Ohio: American Portrait Films, 1996.
- Gallagher, Jonathan. “Galileo in Reverse.” *Liberty: Magazine of Religious Freedom*, May–June 2006, pp. 14–15, 28–29.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Gatesy, J., C. Hayashi, M. A. Cronin, and P. Arctander. "Evidence from Milk Casein Genes That Cetaceans Are Close Relatives of Hippopotamid Artiodactyls." *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 13 (1996), pp. 954–63.
- Gatesy, J., and M. O. O'Leary. "Deciphering Whale Origins with Molecules and Fossils." *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, no. 16 (2001), pp. 562–70.
- Geological Evidences for Very Rapid Strata Deposition in the Grand Canyon*. A presentation by Dr. Steven A. Austin. Florence, Ky.: Answers in Genesis, 2003. DVD.
- Gibbons, Ann. *The First Human: The Race to Discover Our Earliest Ancestors*. New York: Doubleday, 2006.
- Gibbs, W. Wayt. "Profile: George F. R. Ellis." *Scientific American*, vol. 273, no. 4 (Oct. 1995), pp. 53–55.
- Gilbert, S. F., G. A. Loredó, A. Brukman, and A. B. Burke, "Morphogenesis of the Turtle Shell: The Development of a Novel Structure in Tetrapod Evolution." *Evolution and Development*, 2001, no. 3, pp. 47–58.
- Gilbert, S. F., J. M. Opitz, and R. A. Raff. "Resynthesizing Evolutionary and Developmental Biology." *Developmental Biology*, no. 173 (1996), pp. 357–72.
- Gilson, Etienne. *The Christian Philosophy of St. Augustine*. New York: Vintage Books, 1967.
- Gish, Duane T. *Dinosaurs by Design*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1992. Reprint, 2008.
- . *Evolution: The Fossils Say No!* San Diego, Calif.: Creation-Life Publishers, 1978. Revised ed.: *Evolution: The Fossils Still Say No!* El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1995.
- Gitt, Werner. *In the Beginning Was Information*. Bielefeld, Germany: CLV, 1997.
- Gordon, M. S. "The Concept of Monophyly: A Speculative Essay." *Biology and Philosophy*, no. 14 (1999), pp. 331–48.
- Gould, Stephen Jay. "Darwinism Defined: The Difference between Fact and Theory." *Discover*, Jan. 1987, pp. 64–70.
- . "The Ediacaran Experiment." *Natural History*, vol. 93, no. 2 (1984), pp. 14–23.
- . *Ever Since Darwin*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1979.
- . "Non-overlapping Magisteria." *Natural History*, vol. 106 (March 1997), pp. 16–22.
- . *The Panda's Thumb*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1980.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . “The Return of Hopeful Monsters.” *Natural History*, vol. 86, no. 6 (June–July, 1977), pp. 22–30.
- Gould, Stephen Jay, and Niles Eldredge. “Punctuated Equilibria: The Tempo and Mode of Evolution Reconsidered.” *Paleobiology*, vol. 3 (Spring 1977), pp. 115–51.
- Grand Canyon: Monument to the Flood*. El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 2002. DVD.
- Grant, Robert M. *Early Christians and Animals*. London: Routledge, 1999.
- Grassé, Pierre P. *L'Évolution du vivant*. Editions Albin Michel: Paris, 1973. ET: *Evolution of Living Organisms*. New York: Academic Press, 1977.
- The Great Dinosaur Mystery*. Written and directed by Paul S. Taylor. Gilbert, Ariz.: Films for Christ Association/Eden Communications, 2007. DVD. <http://www.christiananswers.net/dinosaurs/video.html>.
- Green, Richard E., et al. “A Draft Sequence of the Neanderthal Genome.” *Science*, vol. 328, no. 5979 (May 7, 2010), pp. 710–12.
- Gregory of Nyssa**, St. *Against Eunomius*. GNO, vols. 1–2, 1960 (for books 1–3). PG, vol. 45, 1863 (for all books). ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5. [Book 2 of this work in PG and NPNF is treated as a separate work in GNO, where it is titled *Refutation of the Confession of Eunomius*.]
- . *Answer to Eunomius' Second Book*. GNO, vol. 2, 1960. (Also in PG, vol. 45, 1863.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5. [Following PG, this work is titled *Answers to Eunomius' Second Book* in NPNF, but whereas PG includes it as books 12b and 13 of *Against Eunomius*, NPNF presents it as a separate work. In GNO, it is designated as book 2 of *Against Eunomius*.]
- . *Apologia to His Brother Peter on the Hexaemeron*. GNO, vol. 4.1, 2009. (Also in PG, vol. 44, 1863.) ET: Richard McCambley, trans., at <http://www.sage.edu/faculty/salomd/nyssa/>.
- . *Catechetical Oration (Great Catechism)*. SC, vol. 453, 2000. (Also in PG, vol. 45, 1863.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.
- . *On the Holy Spirit (Against the Macedonians)*. GNO, vol. 3.1, 1987. (Also in PG, vol. 45, 1863.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.
- . *On the Lord's Prayer*. GNO, vol. 7.2, 1992. (Also in PG, vol. 44, 1863.) ET: Hilda C. Graef, trans. *St. Gregory of Nyssa: The Lord's Prayer, The Beatitudes*. ACW, no. 18, 1954.
- . *On the Making of Man*. PG, vol. 44, 1863. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.
- . *On the Soul and the Resurrection*. PG, vol. 46, 1863. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *On Those Who Have Fallen Asleep*. GNO, vol. 9, 1967. (Also in PG, vol. 46, 1863.) ET: Richard McCambley, trans., at <http://www.sage.edu/faculty/salomd/nyssa/>.
- . *On Virginity*. SC, vol. 119, 1966. (Also in PG, vol. 46, 1863.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.
- . *A Sermon for the Feast of the Lights (On the Baptism of Christ)*. PG, vol. 46, 1863. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 5.
- Gregory Palamas, St.** *In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)*. Greek with French translation in [Fr.] Jean Meyendorff, ed. and trans. *Défense des saints hésychastes*. Louvain: Spicilegium Sacrum Lovaniense, 1959. ET: Robin Amis, trans. *Gregory Palamas: The Triads, Book One*. Chicago: Praxis Institute Press, 2002. ET: Nicholas Gendle, trans. *Gregory Palamas: The Triads* [selected passages]. Mahwah, N.J.: Paulist Press, 1983.
- . *The Homilies*. Panayiotis K. Chrestou, ed. *Grigoriou tou Palama: Apanta ta erga* (Gregory Palamas: The complete works), vols. 9–11. Thessaloniki, 1985–1986. (Also in PG, vol. 150, 1865.) ET: *Saint Gregory Palamas: The Homilies*. Christopher Veniamin, trans. Waymart, Pa.: Mount Thabor, 2009.
- . *To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia*. Panayiotis K. Chrestou, ed. *Grigoriou tou Palama: Apanta ta erga* (Gregory Palamas: The complete works), vol. 5. (Also in PG, vol. 150, 1865.) ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 4, 1995. ET: [Fr.] Daniel M. Rogich, trans. *St. Gregory Palamas: Treatise on the Spiritual Life*. Minneapolis: Light and Life, 1995.
- . *Topics of Natural and Theological Science*. Greek text with ET: Robert E. Sinkewicz, trans. and ed. *St. Gregory Palamas: The One Hundred and Fifty Chapters*. Toronto: Pontifical Institute of Mediaeval Studies, 1988. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 4, 1995.
- Gregory the Sinaite, St.** *On Commandments and Doctrines*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 4. Athens, 1976. RT: *Dobrotolyubiye*, vol. 5. 2nd ed. Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1900. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 4, 1995.
- Gregory the Theologian, St.** *Dogmatic Poems*. PG, vol. 37, 1862. RT: *Dogmatic Poem 8, On the Soul; Dogmatic Poem 18, On the Genealogy of Christ*. In *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatikh" otsa nashego Grigoriya bogoslova* (The works of our father among the saints Gregory the theologian). 2 vols. St. Petersburg: P. P. Soikina (19th century: no date). ET: *Dogmatic Poem 8, On the Soul; Dogmatic Poem 10, Against Apollinarius*. In Peter

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Gilbert, trans. *On God and Man: The Theological Poetry of St. Gregory of Nazianzus*. PPS, vol. 21, 2001.
- . *Moral Poems*. PG, vol. 37, 1862. ET: *Moral Poem 14, On Human Nature*. In Peter Gilbert, trans. *On God and Man: The Theological Poetry of St. Gregory of Nazianzus*. PPS, vol. 21, 2001.
- . *Orations* (nos. 14, 18, 28–29, 31, 38–41, 43–45). PG, vol. 35, 1885 (for *Orations* 14, 18); SC, vol. 250, 1978 (for *Orations* 28–29, 31); SC, vol. 358, 1990 (for *Orations* 38–41); SC, vol. 384, 1992 (for *Oration* 43); PG, vol. 36, 1885 (for *Orations* 44–45). RT: *Oration 14, On Love for the Poor; Oration 38, On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior; Oration 44, On New Week, Spring, and the Commemoration of the Martyr Mamas*. In *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatikh*” ota nashego Grigoriya bogoslova (The works of our father among the saints Gregory the theologian). 2 vols. St. Petersburg: P. P. Soikina (19th century: no date). ET: *Oration 18, On the Death of His Father; Oration 28, Second Theological Oration; Oration 29, Third Theological Oration—On the Son; Oration 31, Fifth Theological Oration—On the Holy Spirit; Oration 38, On the Theophany, or the Nativity of the Savior; Oration 39, On the Holy Lights; Oration 40, On Holy Baptism; Oration 41, On Pentecost; Oration 43, Panagyric on St. Basil; Oration 45, Second Oration on Pascha*. In NPNE, 2nd series, vol. 7. ET: *Orations* 14 and 44. In Martha Vinson, trans. *St. Gregory of Nazianzus: Select Orations*. FC, vol. 107, 2003.
- Gribbin, John, and Jeremy Cherfas. “Descent of Man—or Ascent of Ape?” *New Scientist*, vol. 91 (Sept. 3, 1981), pp. 518, 592.
- Grigg, Russell M. “Dinosaurs and Dragons: Stamping on the Legends.” *Creation*, vol. 14, no. 3 (June 1992), pp. 10–14. <http://creation.com/dinosaurs-and-dragons-stamping-on-the-legends>.
- Grinnell, George. “Reexamination of the Foundations.” *Pensée*, vol. 2, no. 2 (May 1972).
- Grumel, V. *La Chronologie*. Bibliothèque Byzantine: Traité d’Etudes Byzantines 1. Paris, 1958.
- Guénon, René. *Crisis of the Modern World*. London: Luzac, 1975.
- . *The Reign of Quantity and the Signs of the Times*. London: Luzac, 1953.
- Gura, Trisha. “Bones, Molecules ... or Both?” *Nature*, vol. 406 (July 20, 2000), pp. 230–33.
- Haber, Francis C. *The Age of the World: Moses to Darwin*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1959.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ham, Ken. *The Great Dinosaur Mystery Solved*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1998. Paperback ed., 2000.
- , general ed. *The New Answers Book*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2006.
- , general ed. *The New Answers Book 2*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2008.
- Ham, Ken, Carl Wieland, and Don Batten. *One Blood: The Biblical Answer to Racism*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1999.
- Hartnett, John. *Starlight, Time and the New Physics: How We Can See Starlight in Our Young Universe*. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2007.
- Hasegawa, M., Y. Cao, and Z. Yang. "Preponderance of Slightly Deleterious Polymorphism in Mitochondrial DNA: Nonsynonymous/Synonymous Rate Ratio Is Much Higher within Species than between Species." *Molecular Biology and Evolution*, no. 15 (1998), pp. 1499–1505.
- Hazard, Paul. *The European Mind, 1680–1715*. New York: Meridian Books, 1963.
- The Heavens Declare*. A presentation featuring Dr. John Hartnett, directed by Steve Skinner. Rock Rapids, Iowa: Bridgestone Multimedia Group, 2009. DVD.
- Heller, Michael. *Creative Tension: Essays on Science and Religion*. Radnor, Pa.: Templeton Foundation Press, 2003.
- Hilarion (Alfeyev), Metropolitan of Volokolamsk. Interview by Dmitry Didrov and Dmitry Gubin. *Vremennno dostupen* (Temporarily open). ATV, May 1, 2009. <http://hilarion.ru/2010/02/24/818>.
- Hilarion (Troitsky), Archbishop of Verey, Hieromartyr. "Voploshcheniye i smireniye" (The incarnation and humility). *Moskovskiye tserkovnye vedomosti* (Moscow church herald), 1913, nos. 51–52. Reprinted in *Khristianstva net bez Tserkvi* (There is no Christianity without the Church). Moscow: Sretensky Monastery, 2007. <http://www.pravoslavie.ru/sm/5834.htm>.
- . "Svyashchennoye Pisaniye, Tserkov', i nauka" (Holy Scripture, the Church, and science). [Written when the author was still a laymen, under the name Vladimir Alexeyevich Troitsky.] *Moskovskiye tserkovnye vedomosti* (Moscow church herald), 1911, no. 50. <http://www.pravoslavie.ru/sm/5835.htm>.
- Hilary of Poitiers, St. *On the Councils*. PL, vol. 10, 1845. ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 9.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *On the Trinity*. SC, vol. 443, 1999 (books 1–3); vol. 448, 2000 (books 4–8); vol. 462, 2001 (books 9–12). (Also in PL, vol. 10, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 9.
- Hillaby, John. “A Geography of Genesis.” *New Scientist*, March 25, 1965, pp. 798–801.
- Hippolytus of Rome**, *St. Against Noetus*. PG, vol. 10, 1857. ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- . *Chronicle*. Adolf Bauer, ed. *Die Chronik des Hippolytos* [includes Latin and Greek versions]. Leipzig: J. C. Hinrich, 1905.
- . *Commentary on Daniel*. SC, vol. 14, 1947. (Also in PG, vol. 10, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- . *Fragments on Genesis*. PG, vol. 10, 1857. ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- . *On Christ and Antichrist*. GCS 1.2, 1897. (Also in PG, vol. 10, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- . *The Refutation of All Heresies*. PTS, vol. 25, 1986. ET: ANF, vol. 5.
- Hodge, Bodie, and Laura Welch. *Dragons: Legends & Lore of Dinosaurs*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2011.
- Howell, F. Clark, and the editors of Time-Life Books. *Early Man*. New York: Time-Life Books, 1968.
- Humphreys, D. Russell. “Creationist Cosmologies Explain the Anomalous Acceleration of Pioneer Spacecraft.” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 21, no. 2 (Aug. 2007), pp. 61–70. <http://creation.com/creationist-cosmologies-explain-the-anomalous-acceleration-of-pioneer-spacecraft>.
- . “The Creation of Planetary Magnetic Fields.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, vol. 21, no. 3 (Dec. 1984). [http://www.creationresearch.org/crsq/articles/21/21\\_3/21\\_3.html](http://www.creationresearch.org/crsq/articles/21/21_3/21_3.html).
- . “Evidence for a Young World.” Institute for Creation Research *Impact*, no. 384 (June 2005). <http://www.icr.org/article/1842/>.
- . “Mercury’s Magnetic Field Is Young.” Posted Aug. 26, 2008. <http://creation.com/mercurys-magnetic-field-is-young>.
- . “New Time Dilation Helps Creation Cosmology.” *Journal of Creation*, vol. 22, no. 3 (Dec. 2008), pp. 84–92. <http://creation.com/new-time-dilation-helps-creation-cosmology>.
- . *Starlight and Time: Solving the Puzzle of Distant Starlight in a Young Universe*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1994.
- Humphries, Conor. “Russian Church Wants End to Darwin School ‘Monopoly.’” *Reuters*, June 10, 2010. <http://in.reuters.com/article/idINTRE6584JX20100609>.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Huxley, Leonard. *Life and Letters of Thomas Henry Huxley*. Vol. 3. London: Macmillan, 1900.
- Huxley, Thomas Henry. *Science and Hebrew Tradition: Essays*. New York: D. Appleton, 1898.
- Ioanichie Balan, Archimandrite. *Shepherd of Souls: The Life and Teachings of Elder Cleopa*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2000.
- Ignatius (Brianchaninov), Bishop of the Caucasus, St.** *Slovo o cheloveke* (Homily on man). Moscow: Blagovest, 2001.
- . *Sochineniya Episkopa Ignatiya Bryanchaninova: Asketicheskiye opyty* (The works of Bishop Ignatius Brianchaninov: Ascetic experiences). Vols. 1 and 3. St. Petersburg: I. L. Tuzov, 1886.
- The Image of God: Human Origins—Creation or Evolution?* Directed by Gillian Brown, produced by Gillian Brown and Keziah Films. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, n.d. DVD.
- Inherently Wind: A Hollywood History of the Scopes Trial*. A presentation by Dr. David Menton, directed by Paul Varnum. Florence, Ky.: Answers in Genesis, 2003. DVD.
- Irenaeus of Lyons, St.** *Against Heresies*. [The actual name of this work, given by the author himself, is *On the Refutation and Overthrow of Knowledge Falsely So-called*.] SC, vols. 263–64, 1979 (book 1); vols. 293–94, 1982 (book 2); vols. 210–11, 1974 (book 3); vol. 100, 1965 (book 4); vols. 152–53, 1969 (book 5). (Also in PG, vol. 7a [books 1–4], 1857; vol. 7b [book 5], 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 1. ET of selected passages in Robert M. Grant. *Irenaeus of Lyons*. London: Routledge, 1997.
- . *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching*. SC, vol. 406, 1995. ET: [Fr.] John Behr, trans. *St. Irenaeus of Lyons: On the Apostolic Preaching*. PPS 17, 1997.
- Isaac the Syrian, St.** *Ascetical Homilies*. Syriac edition: Paul Bedjan, ed. *Mar Isaacus Ninivitaë: De Perfectione Religiosa* (Mar Isaac of Nineveh: On Spiritual Perfection). Otto Harrassowitz, 1909. Greek edition: Nikephoros Theotokis, ed. Leipzig, 1770. RT in *Tvoreniya izhe vo svyatikh* "otsa nashego avvy Isaaka Siriyanina, podvizhnika i otshel'nika" (The works of our father among the saints Abba Isaac the Syrian, the ascetic and hermit). 2nd ed. Sergiyev Posad, 1893. ET: Holy Transfiguration Monastery, trans. *The Ascetical Homilies of St. Isaac the Syrian*. Boston: Holy Transfiguration Monastery, 1984.
- . *Directions on Spiritual Training* [passages of St. Isaac's writings selected by St. Theophan the Recluse for inclusion in the Russian edition

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- of *The Philokalia*]. *Dobrotolyubiye*, vol. 2. 3rd ed. Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1913. ET: E. Kadloubovsky and G. E. H. Palmer, trans. *Early Fathers from the Philokalia*. London: Faber and Faber, 1954.
- Isaiah the Solitary, Abba, St.** *Homilies to the Disciples*. Monk Avgoustinos, ed. *Abba Isaia: Logoi* (Abba Isaiah: Discourses). Jerusalem: Holy Sepulchre Press, 1911. Reprint, Volos, 1962. (Also, in Latin translation, in PG, vol. 40, 1863.) RT: *Dobrotolyubiye*, vol. 1. 2nd ed. Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1895. ET: John Chrysavgis and Pachomius (Robert) Penkett, trans. *Abba Isaiah of Scetis: Ascetic Discourses*. Kalamazoo, Mich.: Cistercian Publications, 2002.
- Isidore of Seville, St.** *The Etymologies*. W. M. Lindsay, ed. *Isidori Hispalensis Episcopi: Etymologiarum Sive Originum* (Isidore, Bishop of Seville: Etymologies or Origins). Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1911. ET: Stephen A. Barney, W. J. Lewis, J. A. Beach, and Oliver Bergof, trans. *The Etymologies of Isidore of Seville*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2010.
- Jekel, James F. Review of *The Mystery of Life's Origin*, by Charles B. Thaxton, Walter L. Bradley, and Roger L. Olsen. *Yale Journal of Biology and Medicine*, vol. 58, no. 4 (July–Aug. 1985).
- Jerome, Blessed.** *Hebrew Questions on Genesis*. CCL, vol. 78, 1958. ET: C. T. R. Hayward, trans. *Saint Jerome's Hebrew Questions on Genesis*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1995.
- . *To Pammachius against John of Jerusalem*. CCL, vol. 79.1, 1999. (Also in PL, vol. 23, 1845.) ET: NPNF, 2nd Series, vol. 6.
- John (Aleksyev), Schema-Abbot of Valaam. *Christ Is in Our Midst: Letters from a Russian Monk*. Esther Williams, trans. Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1980.
- . *Pisma valaamskogo startsa skhiigumena Ioanna* (Letters of the Valaam elder schema-abbot John). Moscow: Sisterhood of Nun-Martyr Grand Duchess Elizabeth, 1996.
- John Cassian, St.** *Conferences*. SC, vol. 42bis, 1955 (*Conferences* 1–7); vol. 54, 1958 (*Conferences* 8–17); vol. 64, 1959 (*Conferences* 18–24). RT: Bishop Peter, trans. *Pisaniya prepodobnago otsa Ioanna Kassiana Rimlyanina* (*Writings of the venerable father John Cassian the Roman*). Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1892. ET: Boniface Ramsey, trans. *John Cassian: The Conferences*. ACW, vol. 57, 1997.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- John Chrysostom, St.** *Commentary on the Psalms*. PG, vol. 55, 1862. ET: Robert Charles Hill, trans. *Commentary on the Psalms*. 2 vols. Brookline, Mass.: Holy Cross Orthodox Press, 1998.
- . *Eight Homilies on Genesis*. SC, vol. 433, 1998. (Also in PG, vol. 54, 1862.) RT: *Tvoreniya svyatago otsa nashego Ioanna Zlatoustsa* (The works of our holy father John Chrysostom), vol. 4. St. Petersburg: St. Petersburg Theological Academy, 1898. ET: Robert Charles Hill, trans. *St. John Chrysostom: Eight Sermons on the Book of Genesis*. Brookline, Mass.: Holy Cross Orthodox Press, 2004.
- . *Homilies on First Corinthians*. PG, vol. 61, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st Series, vol. 12.
- . *Homilies on Genesis*. PG, vols. 53–54, 1862. RT: *Tvoreniya svyatago otsa nashego Ioanna Zlatoustsa* (The works of our holy father John Chrysostom), vol. 4. St. Petersburg: St. Petersburg Theological Academy, 1898. ET: Robert Charles Hill, trans. *Saint John Chrysostom: Homilies on Genesis*. FC, vol. 74, 1986 (*Homilies* 1–17); vol. 82, 1990 (*Homilies* 17–45); vol. 87, 1992 (*Homilies* 46–67).
- . *Homilies on Hebrews*. PG, vol. 63, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 14.
- . *Homilies on Romans*. PG, vol. 60, 1862. RT: *Tvoreniya svyatago otsa nashego Ioanna Zlatoustsa* (The works of our holy father John Chrysostom), vol. 9. St. Petersburg: St. Petersburg Theological Academy, 1903. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 11.
- . *Homilies on Second Corinthians*. PG, vol. 61, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st Series, vol. 12.
- . *Homilies on the Acts of the Apostles*. PG, vol. 60, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 11.
- . *Homilies on the Gospel of St. John*. PG, vol. 59, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 14. ET: Sister Thomas Aquinas Goggin, S.C.H., trans. *Commentary on Saint John the Apostle and Evangelist*. FC, vol. 33, 1957 (*Homilies* 1–47); vol. 41, 1959 (*Homilies* 48–88). ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 14.
- . *Homilies on the Gospel of St. Matthew*. PG, vols. 57–58, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 10.
- . *Homilies on Timothy*. PG, vol. 62, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 13.
- . *On the Creation of the World*. PG, vol. 56, 1862. RT: *Tvoreniya svyatago otsa nashego Ioanna Zlatoustsa* (The works of our holy father John

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Chrysostom), vol. 6. St. Petersburg: St. Petersburg Theological Academy, 1900. [This work, consisting of six homilies, has come down under St. John Chrysostom's name, but scholars now attribute it to Severian, Bishop of Gabala (†after 408).] ET: Robert C. Hill and Carmen S. Hardin, trans. *Commentaries on Genesis 1–3: Severian of Gabala and Bede the Venerable*. ACT, 2010.
- . *On the Cross and the Thief, Homily 1*. PG, vol. 49, 1862.
- . *On the Name of the Cemetery and on the Cross*. PG, vol. 49, 1862.
- . *On the Statues*. PG, vol. 49, 1862. ET: NPNF, 1st series, vol. 9.
- . *On Virginity*. SC, vol. 125, 1966. (Also in PG, vol. 48, 1862.) ET: Sally Rieger Shore. John Chrysostom. *On Virginity, Against Remarriage*. Lewiston, N.Y.: The Edwin Mellen Press, 1983.
- John Damascene, St.** *Commentary on Romans*. Panayiotes K. Chrestou, ed. *Ioannou tou Damaskinou: Apanta ta erga* (John Damascene: The complete works), vol. 9. Thessaloniki, 1991.
- . *Homily on Holy Saturday*. P. B. Kotter, ed. *Die Schriften des Johannes von Damaskos*, vol. 5 (PTS, vol. 29), 1988. (Also in PG, vol. 96, 1891.)
- . *On Dragons*. Panayiotes K. Chrestou, ed. *Ioannou tou Damaskinou: Apanta ta erga* (John Damascene: The complete works), vol. 5. Thessaloniki, 1991. (Also in PG, vol. 94, 1859.) RT: Fr. Maxim Kozlov, trans. *Ioann Damaskin: Tvoreniya—Khristologicheskkiye i polemicheskkiye traktaty* (John Damascene: Works—Christological and polemical treatises). Moscow: Martis, 1997.
- . *On Heresies*. P. B. Kotter, ed. *Die Schriften des Johannes von Damaskos*, vol. 4 (PTS, vol. 22), 1981. (Also in PG, vol. 94, 1864.) ET: Frederic H. Chase, Jr., trans. *Saint John of Damascus: Writings*. FC, vol. 37, 1958.
- . *On the Orthodox Faith*. P. B. Kotter, ed. *Die Schriften des Johannes von Damaskos*, vol. 1 (PTS, vol. 12), 1973. (Also in PG, vol. 94, 1859.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 9. ET: Frederic H. Chase, Jr., trans. *Saint John of Damascus: Writings*. FC, vol. 37, 1958.
- . *On the Two Wills in Christ*. P. B. Kotter, ed. *Die Schriften des Johannes von Damaskos*, vol. 4 (PTS, vol. 22), 1981.
- . *Philosophical Chapters*. PG, vol. 94, 1859. ET: Frederic H. Chase, Jr., trans. *Saint John of Damascus: Writings*. FC, vol. 37, 1958.
- John of Kronstadt, St.** *Besedy o dnyakh" tvoreniya* (Talks on the days of creation). *Polnoye sobraniye sochineniy* (Complete collected works), vol. 1. St. Petersburg, 1893. Reprint, L. C. Yakovlevoi, 1994.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *Novyye groznyye slova* (New stern sermons). St. Petersburg: Synodal Publishing House, 1908. Reprint, Moscow: Skit, 1993.
- Johnson, Bill. "Thunderbirds: Did the American Indians See 'Winged Dinosaurs'?" *Creation*, vol. 24, no. 2 (March 2002), pp. 28–32. <http://creation.com/thunderbirds>.
- Johnson, Phillip E. *Darwin on Trial*. 3rd ed. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2010.
- . *Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1997.
- . "Evolution as Dogma: The Establishment of Naturalism." *First Things*, Oct. 1990. Reprint, Richardson, Tex.: Foundation for Thought and Ethics, 1990. <http://www.arn.org/docs/johnson/pjdogma1.htm>.
- . *Objections Sustained: Subjective Essays on Evolution, Law & Culture*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1998.
- . *Reason in the Balance: The Case against Naturalism in Science, Law & Education*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1995.
- . *The Right Questions: Truth, Meaning & Public Debate*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2002.
- . *The Wedge of Truth: Splitting the Foundations of Naturalism*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2000.
- Johnson, Phillip E., and John Mark Reynolds. *Against All Gods: What's Right and Wrong about the New Atheism*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 2010.
- Josephus, Flavius. *Antiquities of the Jews*. In William Whiston, trans. *Josephus: Complete Works*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Kregel, 1960.
- Julius Africanus. *The Five Books of Chronography*. PG, vol. 10, 1857. ET: ANF, vol. 6.
- . *The Epistle to Aristides*. PG, vol. 10, 1857. ET: ANF, vol. 6.
- Justin (Popovich) of Celije, St. *Man and the God-man*. Alhambra, Calif.: Sebastian Press/Western American Diocese of the Serbian Orthodox Church, 2009.
- . *Na Bogocovekanskom putu* (On the Divine-human path). Belgrade, 1980.
- . *Pravoslavna Crkva i Ekumenizam* (The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism). Thessaloniki: Publishing House of Hilandar Monastery, Mount Athos, 1974. ET: Benjamin Emmanuel Stanley. *Archimandrite Justin Popovic: The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism*. Birmingham: Lazarica Press, 2000.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *Pravoslavna filosofija istine: Dogmatika Pravoslavne Crkve* (The Orthodox philosophy of truth: Dogmatics of the Orthodox Church), vol. 3. Belgrade, 1978.
- Justin Martyr, St. *Apology*. PTS, vols. 38/47, 1994/1997; reprint, 2005. SC, vol. 507, 2006. (Also in PG, vol. 6, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 1.
- . *Dialogue with Trypho*. PTS, vols. 38/47, 1994/1997; reprint, 2005. (Also in PG, vol. 6, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 1.
- . *On the Resurrection—Fragments*. PG, vol. 6, 1857. ANF, vol. 1.
- Juvenaly, Metropolitan of Krutitsa and Kolomena (Chairman of the Synodal Committee on Canonization), ed. *Zhitiya novomuchenikov i ispovednikov Rossiyskikh XX veka Moskovskoy eparkhi: Sentyabr'—oktyabr'* (Lives of the twentieth-century Russian new martyrs and confessors of the Moscow diocese: September–October). Tver: Bulat, 2003.
- Kalomiros, Alexander. *Oi exi avges* (The six dawns). Thessaloniki: Zephyr, 1993. ET: *The Six Dawns*, in *The Ark*, 1997.
- Kelso, A. J. *Physical Anthropology*. 1st ed. New York: J. B. Lipincott, 1970.
- Khomenkov, Alexander S. “Garmoniya zhivoy prirody i problema proiskhozhdeniya mira” (The harmony of living nature and the problem of the origin of the world). In Priest Daniel Sysoyev and Nikolai Kolchurinsky, eds. *Bozhestvennoye otkroveniye i sovremennaya nauka* (Divine revelation and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2005), pp. 192–97.
- . “Nepравdannyye stereotypy: O nekotorykh strategicheskikh oshibkakh v sovremennom kreationsnom myshlenii” (Unjustified stereotypes: About some strategic errors in modern creationist thinking). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed. *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2006), pp. 276–93.
- . “Vozmozhno li teoreticheskaya biologiya?” (Is theoretical biology possible?). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed. *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 1 (2005), pp. 278–95.
- Khomichev, V. L., and S. D. Sidoras. “O dostovernosti radiologicheskogo datirovaniya” (On the reliability of radiometric dating). *Izotopnaya geokhronologiya protsessov magmatizma, rudoobrazovaniya, osadkonakopleniya i metamorfizma* (Isotopic dating of processes of ore formation, magmatism, sedimentation and metamorphism). *Materialy III Vserossiyskoy konferentsii po izotopnoy geokhronologii, tom 2* (Proceedings of the



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- third Russian conference on isotopic geochronology, vol. 2). Moskovskii institut geologii rudnykh mestorozhdenii, Rossiiskaya akademiya nauk (Moscow institute of the geology of ore deposits, Russian academy of science). Moscow: GEOS, 2006, pp. 379–84.
- Kim, Jeong Yul, Sam Hyang Kim, Kyung Soo Kim, and Martin Lockley. “The Oldest Record of Webbed Bird and Pterosaur Tracks from South Korea (Cretaceous Haman Formation, Changseon and Sinsu Islands): More Evidence of High Avian Diversity in East Asia.” *Cretaceous Research*, no. 27 (2006), pp. 56–69.
- Kireyevskiy, I. V. *Polnoye sobraniye sochineniy* (Complete collected works), vol. 1. Moscow, 1911. Reprint, Westmead, Farnborough, Hants., England: Gregg International, 1970.
- Kitts, David G. “Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory.” *Evolution*, vol. 28 (Sept. 1974), pp. 458–72.
- Klinger, Fr. George. “O. Teyar de Sharden i pravoslavnaya traditsiya” (Fr. Teilhard de Chardin and Orthodox tradition). *Vestnik Russkogo Studentskogo Khristianskogo Dvizheniya* (Messenger of the Russian Student Christian Movement), Paris, no. 106 (1972), pp. 109–32.
- Klinghoffer, David, ed. *Signature of Controversy: Responses to Critics of Signature in the Cell*. Seattle: Discovery Institute Press, 2010.
- Knight, R. D., S. J. Freeland, and L. F. Landweber. “Rewriting the Keyboard: Evolvability of the Genetic Code.” *Nature Reviews, Genetics*, 2001, no. 2, pp. 49–58.
- Kolchurinsky, Nikolai. *Mir—Bozhiye tvoreniye* (The world—God’s creation). Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity—St. Sergius Lavra, 2000; reprint, 2004.
- Koonin, Eugene V. “The Biological Big Bang Model for the Major Transitions in Evolution.” *Biology Direct*, vol. 2, no. 21 (2007). doi:10.1186/1745-6150-2-21.
- Kopp, Joseph V. *Teilhard de Chardin: A New Synthesis of Evolution*. Paramus, N.J.: Deus Books/Paulist Press, 1964.
- Kosenko, Anton. “Pis’mo v” redaktsiyu: Voprosy knigi Bytiya” (Letter to the editor: Questions on the book of Genesis). *Pravoslavnaya zhizn’* (Orthodox life), vol. 49, no. 12 (Dec. 1999).
- Kosturos, Fr. Anthony. “Questions and Answers.” *The Orthodox Observer*, Feb. 6, 1974.
- . “Questions and Answers.” *The Orthodox Observer*, Feb. 20, 1974.
- Kropotkin, P. N. *Degazatsiya Zemli: geodinamika, geoflyuidy, neft, i gaz* (The degassing of the Earth: Geodynamics, geofluids, petrol, and gas). Edited

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- by A. D. Dmitrievsky and B. M. Valyaev. Moscow: GEOS, 2002.
- Kuhn, Thomas S. *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. 3rd ed. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1996.
- Kulyamin, L. L., and L. S. Smirnov. "Prilivno-otlivnye tsikly osadkonakopleniya v kembro-ordovikskikh peskakh Pribaltiki" (Tidal sedimentation cycles in Cambrian-Ordovician sands of the Baltic Region). *Doklad Akademii nauk SSSR, Ser. geol.* (Proceedings of Academy of science of the USSR, Geology series), vol. 212, nos. 1–3 (1973), pp. 696–99.
- Kutschera, Ulrich, and Karl J. Niklas, "The Modern Theory of Biological Evolution: An Expanded Synthesis," *Naturwissenschaften*, no. 91 (2004), pp. 255–76.
- Kuznetsov, A. I. *O propovedyakh vладыki Faddeya Uspenskogo / Patriarkh Tikhon i istoriya russkoi tserkovnoi smuty* (On the sermons of Vladika Thaddeus Uspensky / Patriarch Tikhon and the history of the Russian Church disturbance). St. Petersburg: Satis, 1994.
- Lactantius. *Divine Institutes* (books 2 and 6). SC, vol. 337, 1987 (book 2); vol. 509, 2007 (book 6). (Also in PL, vol. 6, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 7.
- . *The Manner in Which the Persecutors Died*. SC, vol. 39, 1954. (Also in PL, vol. 7, 1844.) ANF, vol. 7.
- Lalomov, Alexander V. "Paleohydrology of Jurassic Conglomerate of the Crimean Peninsula." Abstracts of the European Geoscience Union. General Assembly. Nice, France, 2004.
- . "Problemnye voprosy nauchnogo kreatsionizma" (Problematic questions of scientific creationism). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed. *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 4 (2008), pp. 178–91.
- . "Skorost' osadkonakopleniya i aktual'noe vremya sedimentatsii" (Sedimentation rate and the actual sedimentation time). *Materialy tret'ego Vserossiyskogo litologicheskogo soveshchaniya* (Proceedings of the third All-Russian lithological conference). Moscow: Moscow State University, 2003, pp. 111–13.
- , ed. *Sotvoreniye* (Creation). Almanac of the Society of Creation Science. Vols. 1–2. Moscow: Palomnik, 2002, 2006.
- Lalomov, Alexander V., and S. E. Tabolitch. "Opredelenie vozrasta Val'kumeiskoi pribrezhno-morskoi rossypi, severo-vostok Sibiri" (Dating of the Val'kumei coastal-marine placer, northeastern Siberia). *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye (Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk)* (Lithology and mineral re-

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- sources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), vol. 39, no 4 (2004), pp. 317–21. ET: “Dating of the Val’kumei Coastal-Marine Placer (East Siberian Sea).” [http://www.creationworldview.org/articles\\_view.asp?id=114](http://www.creationworldview.org/articles_view.asp?id=114).
- Lamarck, Jean-Baptiste Pierre Antoine de Monet, Chevalier de. *Philosophie zoologique*. Paris, 1809.
- Lawrence, Jeff. “Communiqué Interview: Phillip E. Johnson.” *Communiqué: A Quarterly Journal*, Spring 1999. [http://communiquéjournal.org/q6\\_johnson.html](http://communiquéjournal.org/q6_johnson.html)
- Leakey, L. S. B. *Adam’s Ancestors*. London: Methuen, 1934. 4th ed., rewritten, 1953.
- Leakey, M. D. *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1971.
- Leakey, Richard. *The Making of Mankind*. London: Michael Joseph, 1981.
- Lecomte du Nouÿ, Pierre. *Human Destiny*. New York: Longmans, Green, 1947.
- Lee, Michael S. Y. “Molecular Phylogenies Become Functional.” *Trends in Ecology and Evolution*, no. 14 (2002), pp. 177–78.
- Lemaître, Canon Georges. *The Primeval Atom: An Essay on Cosmogony*. New York: D. Van Nostrand, 1950.
- The Lenten Triodion*. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, trans. London: Faber and Faber, 1978. Reprint, South Canaan, Pa.: St. Tikhon’s Seminary Press, 2002.
- Leonid (Kavelin), Fr. *Elder Macarius of Optina*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1995.
- Leontios, Monk. *Profiteies* (Prophecies). Holy Monastery of Dionysiou, Mount Athos, 2003. Reprint, 2006.
- Leroy, Pierre, S.J. “Teilhard de Chardin: The Man.” Foreword to *The Divine Milieu*. Bernard Wall, trans. New York: Harper & Row, 1960.
- Levin, Harold L. *The Earth through Time*. 8th ed. Hoboken, N.J.: John Wiley & Sons, 2006.
- Lewontin, Richard. “Billions and Billions of Demons.” *The New York Review of Books*, Jan. 9, 1997, pp. 28, 31.
- Li, Chun, Xiao-Chun Wu, Olivier Rieppel, Li-Ting Wang, and Li-Jun Zhao. “An Ancestral Turtle from the Late Triassic of Southwestern China,” *Nature*, vol. 456, no. 7221 (Nov. 27, 2008), pp. 497–501.
- Lisle, Jason. *Taking Back Astronomy: The Heavens Declare Creation*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2006.
- Lönnig, Wolf-Ekkehard. “Dynamic Genomes, Morphological Stasis, and the

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Origin of Irreducible Complexity.” *Dynamical Genetics*, no. 37 (2004), pp. 101–19.
- . “The Evolution of the Long-Necked Giraffe (*Giraffa camelopardalis* L.): What Do We Really Know?,” part 2 (2007), p. 11. <http://www.weloennig.de/GiraffaSecondPartEnglish.pdf>.
- Lossky, Vladimir. *The Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*. London: James Clarke, 1957. Reprint, Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir’s Seminary Press, 1997.
- Louth, [Fr.] Andrew. *Maximus the Confessor*. London: Routledge, 1996.
- Louth, [Fr.] Andrew, ed., in collaboration with Marco Conti. *Genesis 1–11*. ACCS: Old Testament, vol. 1, 2001.
- Lubenow, Marvin L. *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils*. Revised and updated ed. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Baker Books, 2004.
- Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky), Archbishop of Simferopol, Hiero-confessor. “Nauka i religiya” (Science and religion). *Troitskoye slovo* (The Trinity word), 2001.
- Lunnyy (Lunarman), Alexey Nikolaevich. “Mutatsii i novyye geny: Mozhno li utverzdat’, chto oni sluzhat materialom makroevolyutsii?” (Mutations and new genes: Can we claim that they serve as material for macro-evolution?). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 1 (2005), pp. 174–200.
- . “Vsled za gemoglobinom tirannozavra—myagkiye tkani s elastichnymi sosudami i yadernymi kletkami iz kostey chetyrekh dinosavrov, i vnov’—fragmenty belkov” (After discovering hemoglobin of *Tyrannosaurus*, soft tissues with elastic blood vessels and nucleated cells are extracted from bones of four dinosaurs, and again with traces of proteins). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 2 (2006), pp. 179–202.
- Lusseau, D. “The Emergence of Cetaceans: Phylogenetic Analysis of Male Social Behaviour Supports the Cetartiodactyla Clade.” *Journal of Evolutionary Biology*, vol. 16 (2003), pp. 531–35.
- Lyell, Charles. *Principles of Geology: Being an Attempt to Explain the Former Changes of the Earth’s Surface, by Reference to Causes Now in Operation*. 3 vols. London: John Murray, 1830–1833.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- MacAndrew, Alec. "Misconceptions around Mitochondrial Eve" (2000). [www.evolutionpages.com/Mitochondrial%20Eve.htm](http://www.evolutionpages.com/Mitochondrial%20Eve.htm).
- Macarius, Metropolitan of Moscow and Kolomena. *Pravoslavno-dogmaticeskoye bogosloviye* (Orthodox dogmatic theology). St. Petersburg, 1883.
- Macarius the Great of Egypt, St. *Fifty Spiritual Homilies***. PG, vol. 34, 1903. RT in *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova* (Spiritual discourses, epistles, and homilies). 4th ed. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 1904. ET: A. J. Mason, trans. *Fifty Spiritual Homilies of St. Macarius the Great*. London: SPCK, 1921. Reprint, Willits, Calif.: Eastern Orthodox Books, 1974. (This reprint also contains an introduction by Ivan M. Kontzevitch and an article by Fr. Seraphim Rose refuting the theory of the "Messalian origin" of the Macarian homilies.) ET: George A. Maloney, trans. *Fifty Spiritual Homilies and the Great Letter*. Classics of Western Spirituality. New York: Paulist Press, 1992.
- . *The Great Letter*. In Werner Jaeger, ed. *Two Rediscovered Works of Ancient Christian Literature: Gregory of Nyssa and Macarius*. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1954. (Also in PG, vol. 34, 1903.) ET: George A. Maloney, trans. *Fifty Spiritual Homilies and the Great Letter*. Classics of Western Spirituality. New York: Paulist Press, 1992.
- . *On Patient Endurance and Discrimination (Opuscula Ascetica 4)*. PG, vol. 34, 1903. RT: *Sedm' slov*" (Seven homilies), *Homily 4*. In *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova* (Spiritual discourses, epistles, and homilies). 4th ed. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 1904. ET: *St. Symeon Metaphrastes: Paraphrase of the Homilies of St. Macarius of Egypt, Homily 3*. In *Philokalia*, vol. 3, 1984.
- . *On the Freedom of the Nous (Opuscula Ascetica 7)*. PG, vol. 34, 1903. RT: *Sedm' Slov*" (Seven homilies), *Homily 7*. In *Dukhovniya besedy, poslaniye i slova* (Spiritual discourses, epistles, and homilies). 4th ed. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 1904. ET: *St. Symeon Metaphrastes: Paraphrase of the Homilies of St. Macarius of Egypt, Homily 6*. In *Philokalia*, vol. 3, 1984.
- Makarios of Simonos Petra, Hieromonk. *The Synaxarion: The Lives of the Saints of the Orthodox Church*. 7 vols. Ormylia (Chalkidike), Greece: Holy Convent of the Annunciation of Our Lady, 1998–2008.
- Magill, Frank N., ed. *Masterpieces of Catholic Literature in Summary Form*. New York: Harper & Row, 1965.
- Mark the Ascetic, St. *On the Spiritual Law: Two Hundred Texts***. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 1, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 1, 1979.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Martin, Malachi. *The Jesuits*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1987.
- Matthews, L. Harrison. Introduction to *The Origin of Species* by Charles Darwin. London: J. M. Dent & Sons, 1971.
- Maximus the Confessor, St.** *Ad Thalassium* (Questions 1–2, 21, 42, 51, 61, 65). CCSG, vol. 7 (Questions 1–55), 1980; vol. 22, 1990 (Questions 56–65). (Also in PG, vol. 90, 1865.) ET: Questions 2, 21, 42, 61. In Paul M. Blowers and Robert Louis Wilken, trans. *On the Cosmic Mystery of Jesus Christ: Selected Writings from St. Maximus the Confessor*. PPS, vol. 25, 2003.
- . *Ambigua* (nos. 7, 8, 10, 41–42, 45). PG, vol. 91, 1865. ET: *Ambigua* 7, 8, 42. In Paul M. Blowers and Robert Louis Wilken, trans. *On the Cosmic Mystery of Jesus Christ: Selected Writings from St. Maximus the Confessor*. PPS, vol. 25, 2003. ET: *Ambigua* 10, 41. In [Fr.] Andrew Louth. *Maximus the Confessor*. London: Routledge, 1996.
- . *Epistles*. PG, vol. 91, 1865.
- . *Four Hundred Texts on Love*. SC, vol. 9, 1945. (Also in PG, vol. 90, 1865.) ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 2, 1981. ET: Polycarp Sherwood, trans. *St. Maximus the Confessor: The Ascetic Life, The Four Centuries on Charity*. ACW, vol. 21, 1955.
- . *Mystagogy*. PG, vol. 91, 1865. ET: George C. Berthold, trans. *Maximius Confessor: Selected Writings*. New York: Paulist Press, 1985.
- . *On the Lord's Prayer*. CCSG 23, 1991. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 2, 1981.
- . *Opuscula*. PG, vol. 91, 1865.
- . *Questions and Doubts*. CCSG, vol. 10, 1982. (Also in PG, vol. 90, 1865.) ET: Despina D. Prassas, trans. DeKalb. Ill: Northern Illinois University Press, 2010.
- . *Various Texts on Theology, the Divine Economy, and Virtue and Vice*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 2, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 2, 1981.
- Maximus the Greek, St.** *Tvoreniya* (Works). 3 vols. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 1910. Reprint, Moscow, 1996.
- Mayr, Ernst. *One Long Argument: Charles Darwin and the Genesis of Modern Evolutionary Thought*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1993.
- . *Systematics and the Origin of Species, from the Viewpoint of a Zoologist*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1942.
- . *Toward a New Philosophy of Biology*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1988.
- Meien, Sergei V. *Vvedenie v teoriyu stratigrafii* (Introduction to the theory of stratigraphy). Moscow: Nauka, 1989.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Mero, J. L. *Mineral Resources of the Sea*. Amsterdam: Elsevier, 1967.
- Methodius of Olympus (or Patara), St. *Extracts from the Work on Things Created*. PG, vol. 41, 1863. ET: ANF, vol. 6.
- . *From the Discourse on the Resurrection*. PG, vol. 18, 1857. ET: ANF, vol. 6.
- . *On the Resurrection*. Quoted in St. Epiphanius of Salamis, *Panarion*, chap. 64. GCS, vol. 31, 1922. (Also in PG, vol. 41, 1863.) ET: Frank Williams, trans. *The Panarion of Epiphanius of Salamis*. Vol. 2 (books 2 and 3). Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1987.
- Meyendorff, Protopresbyter John. “Teyar de Sharden: Predvaritel’naya zametka” (Teilhard de Chardin: A preparatory note). *Vestnik Russkogo Studencheskogo Khristianskogo Dvizheniya* (Messenger of the Russian Student Christian Movement), Paris, nos. 95–96 (1970), p. 32.
- Meyer, Stephen C. “The Origin of Biological Information and the Higher Taxonomic Categories.” *Proceedings of the Biological Society of Washington*, no. 117 (2004), pp. 213–39.
- . *Signature in the Cell: DNA and the Evidence for Intelligent Design*. New York: HarperOne, 2009.
- Meyer, Stephen C., Scott Minnich, Jonathan Moneymaker, Paul A. Nelson, and Ralph Seelke. *Explore Evolution: The Arguments for and against Neo-Darwinism*. Melbourne: Hill House, 2007.
- Michael, Bishop. *Yevangelije ot” Luka na Slavyanskom” i Russkom” narechii c” predisloviyami i podrobnymi ob” yasnitel’nymi primechaniyami* (The Gospel of Luke in the Slavonic and Russian languages with prefaces and detailed explanatory notes). Kiev: Kievo-Pechersky Lavra, 1899.
- Midgley, Mary. “Evolution as Religion: A Comparison of Prophecies.” *Zygon: Journal of Religion & Science*, no. 22 (1987). [http://www.aaas.org/spp/dser/03\\_Areas/evolution/perspectives/Midgley\\_1987.shtml](http://www.aaas.org/spp/dser/03_Areas/evolution/perspectives/Midgley_1987.shtml).
- Miliukov, Paul. *Outlines of Russian Culture*, part 1. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1942.
- Miller, Hugh. *The Testimony of the Rocks; or, Geology in Its Bearings on the Two Theologies, Natural and Revealed*. Boston: Gould and Lincoln, 1857.
- Mills, Gordon C., and Dean Kenyon. “The RNA World: A Critique.” *Origins & Design*, no. 17 (1996), pp. 9–16.
- Milton, Richard. *Shattering the Myths of Darwinism*. Rochester, Vt.: Park Street Press, 1997.
- Moore, Ruth. *Evolution* (Life Nature Library). New York: Time-Life Books, 1962.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Moorhead, Paul S., and Martin M. Kaplan, eds. *Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution*. Witmar Institute Symposium Monograph, no. 5. Philadelphia: Witmar Institute Press, 1967.
- Moreland, J. P., and John Mark Reynolds. *Three Views on Creation and Evolution*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Zondervan, 1999.
- Morozova, Elena. *Vvedeniye v yestestvoznaniye* (Introduction to natural science). Moscow: Palomnik, 2001.
- Morris, Henry M. *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Baker Book House, 1984.
- . *The Long War against God*. Grand Rapids, Mich.: Baker Book House, 1989.
- , ed. *Scientific Creationism*. San Diego, Calif.: Creation-Life Publishers, 1974. Revised ed., Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1985.
- , comp. *That Their Words May Be Used against Them*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1997.
- Morris, John D. *Dinosaurs, the Lost World, and You*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 1999.
- . *The Young Earth*. Revised and expanded ed. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2007.
- Morris, John D., and Steven A. Austin. *Footprints in the Ash: The Explosive Story of Mount St. Helens*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2003.
- Morris, John D., and Frank J. Sherwin. *The Fossil Record: Unearthing Nature's History of Life*. Dallas: Institute for Creation Research, 2010.
- Mortenson, Terry. "Orthodoxy and Genesis: What the Fathers *Really* Taught." *TJ* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 16, no. 3 (Dec. 2001), pp. 48–53.
- Moss, Vladimir. *The Mystery of Redemption*. England: St. Michael's Press, 2004.
- The Mystery of Our Declining Genes*. A presentation by Dr. John Sanford. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2009. DVD.
- Nectarios of Pentapolis, St. *Hypotyposis peri anthropou* (Sketch concerning man). Athens, 1893.
- . *Meleti peri athanasias tis psychis kai peri ton hieron mnimosynon* (Study concerning the immortality of the soul and the holy memorial services). Athens, 1901.
- Nedel'ko, Vitaly Il'ich, and Andrei Giorgievich Khundzhua. *Osnovy sovremennogo yestestvoznaniya: Pravoslavnyy vzglyad* (Fundamentals of contemporary natural science: An Orthodox view). Moscow: Palomnik, 2008.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Nellas, Panayiotis. *Deification in Christ*. Norman Russell, trans. Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1987.
- Nestor (Kumysh), Hieromonk. *Novomuchiniki Sankt-Peterburgskoy eparkhii* (New martyrs of the St. Petersburg diocese). St. Petersburg: Satis, 2003.
- A New English Translation of the Septuagint* [NETS]. Albert Pietersma and Benjamin G. Wright, eds. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007.
- "New Findings Challenge Established Views on Human Genome." *NIH News*, June 13, 2007. <http://www.genome.gov/25521554>.
- Nicetas Stethatos. *Contemplation of Paradise*. SC, vol. 81, 1961.
- . *On Spiritual Knowledge, Love and the Perfection of Living*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 3, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 4.
- Nicholas Cabasilas, St. *The Life in Christ*. SC, vol. 355, 1989 (books 1–4); vol. 361, 1990 (books 5–7). (Also in PG, vol. 150, 1865.) ET: Carmino J. deCatanzaro, trans. *The Life in Christ*. Crestwood, N. Y.: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1998.
- Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, St. *O aoratos polemos* (Unseen warfare). Athens: Phos, 2000. ET (from the Russian edition): E. Kadloubovsky and G. E. H. Palmer, trans. *Unseen Warfare, as edited by Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain and revised by Theophan the Recluse*. Crestwood, N.Y.: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 2000.
- . *Symvouleftikon encheiridion peri fylakis ton pente aisthiseon* (A handbook of spiritual counsel on the guarding of the five senses). Athens: Panagopoulos, 2001. ET: Peter A. Chamberas, trans. *Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain: A Handbook of Spiritual Counsel*. New York: Paulist Press, 1989.
- Niermann, D. L. (Lee). "Dinosaurs and Dragons." *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 8, no. 1 (1994), pp. 85–104.
- Nietzsche, Friedrich. *Also sprach Zarathustra* (Thus spake Zarathustra). Stuttgart: Reclam, 1986.
- Nikolai (Velimirovich) of Zica, St. *Homilies*, vol. 2. Mother Maria, trans. Birmingham, England: Lazarica Press, 1998.
- . *Kroz tamnicki prozor* (Through the prison window). Himmelsthür, Germany, 1985.
- . *The Prologue of Ohrid*, vol. 2. Fr. T. Timothy Tepsic, trans. Alhambra, Calif: Sebastian Press/Western American Diocese of the Serbian Orthodox Church, 2002. 2nd ed., 2008.
- . *Tvoreniya Svyatitelya Nikolaya Serbskogo (Velimirovicha)* (The works

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- of St. Nikolai of Serbia [Velimirovich]). Minsk, Belarus: St. Elizabeth Monastery Press, 2004.
- Nilus of Sinai, St. *Letters*. PG, vol. 79, 1865.
- Nilus of Sora, St. *The Skete Rule. Prepodobnyy Nil Sorskii pervoosnovatel' skitskago zhitiya v rossii, i ustav ego o zhitel'stve skitskom* (St. Nilus of Sora, founder of skete life in Russia, and his rule of skete life). St. Petersburg: Elagin, 1864. ET: George A. Maloney, trans. *Nil Sorsky: The Complete Writings*. New York: Paulist Press, 2003.
- Noble, C. S., and J. J. Naughton. "Deep Ocean Basalts: Inert Gas Content and Uncertainties in Age Dating." *Science*, vol. 162, no. 3850 (Oct. 11, 1968), pp. 265–67.
- Noebel, David A. *Understanding the Times: The Religious Worldviews of Our Day and the Search for Truth* (unabridged edition). Eugene, Oreg.: Harvest House, 1991.
- North American Commission on Stratigraphic Nomenclature. "North American Stratigraphic Code." *AAPG Bulletin*, vol. 89, no. 11 (Nov. 2005), pp. 1547–91. [http://ngmdb.usgs.gov/Info/NACSN/05\\_1547.pdf](http://ngmdb.usgs.gov/Info/NACSN/05_1547.pdf).
- Oakley, Todd. H., and Clifford W. Cunningham. "Molecular Phylogenetic Evidence for the Independent Evolutionary Origin of an Arthropod Compound Eye." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 (2002), pp. 1426–30.
- Oard, Michael (Mike) J. "Evolutionary Troubles with the Origin and Demise of Dinosaurs." *Journal of Creation*, vol. 25, no. 2 (2011), pp. 8–9.
- . "Excellent Summary of Scientific Evidence for Creation and the Flood, but Controversial in Some Areas," review of *Earth's Catastrophic Past: Geology, Creation & the Flood*, by Andrew A. Snelling. *Journal of Creation*, vol. 25, no. 1 (2011), pp. 33–40.
- . *Flood by Design: Receding Water Shapes the Earth's Surface*. Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2008.
- . *The Frozen Record*. El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 2005.
- Oecumenius. *Commentary on the Apocalypse*. M. Groote, ed. *Oecumenii commentarius in Apocalypsin*. Leuven: Peeters, 1999. ET: John N. Suggit, trans. *Oecumenius: Commentary on the Apocalypse*. FC, vol. 112, 2006. ET: William C. Weinrich, trans. *Greek Commentaries on Revelation: Oecumenius and Andrew of Caesarea*. ACT, 2011.
- Olkhovsky, V. S., and V. I. Grantsev. "The Role of the Decay of Excited Radioactive Nuclei in Nuclear Chronometry." *Ukrainskiy fizichniy*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- zhurnal* (Ukrainian journal of physics), vol. 45, no 12 (2000), pp. 1413–18. Available online under the title “What Values of the Age of the Universe and Earth Does the Nuclear-Chronometry Method Indicate?” <http://www.creation.webzone.ru/>.
- Olson, Everett Claire. “The Evolution of Life.” In *Evolution after Darwin: The University of Chicago Centennial*, vol. 1. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1960.
- “Open Letter to the Scientific Community.” *New Scientist*, May 22–28, 2004, p. 20.
- Origen. *Against Celsus* (book 6). SC, vol. 147, 1969. ET: Henry Chadwick, trans. *Origen: Contra Celsum*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1953.
- . *On First Principles* (book 2). SC, vol. 253 (1978). (Also in PG, vol. 11, 1857.) ET: *Origen: On First Principles*. Gloucester, Mass.: P. Smith, 1973.
- . *Selecta on Genesis*. PG, vol. 12, 1862.
- The Orthodox Study Bible*. St. Athanasius Academy of Orthodox Theology, ed. Nashville, Tenn.: Thomas Nelson, 2008.
- O’Toole, Christopher J. “The Philosophy of Creation in the Writings of St. Augustine.” Ph.D. diss., Catholic University of America, Washington, D.C., 1944.
- Paisios of Mount Athos, Elder. *Me pono kai agapi gia ton synchrono anthropon* (With pain and love for contemporary man). Souroti, Thessaloniki: Holy Monastery of the Evangelist John the Theologian, 1998. ET: Cornelia A. Tsakiridou and Maria Spanou, trans. Souroti, 2006.
- . *Pneumatiki aphypnisi* (Spiritual awakening). Souroti, Thessaloniki: Holy Monastery of the Evangelist John the Theologian, 1999. ET: Fr. Peter Chamberas, trans. Souroti, 2008.
- Paisius (Velichkovsky), St. *The Scroll: Six Chapters on Mental Prayer* (chap. 2). *The Orthodox Word*, no. 48 (1973), pp. 17–22. Also in *Little Russian Philokalia*, vol. 4. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1994.
- Palmer, Trevor. *Controversy—Catastrophism and Evolution: The Ongoing Debate*. New York: Kluwer Academic/Plenum, 1999.
- Parker, Gary. *Creation: Facts of Life*. San Diego, Calif.: Creation-Life Publishers, 1979. Revised and updated ed.: Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2006.
- Parsons, Thomas J., David S. Muniec, Kevin Sullivan, Nicola Woodyatt,

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Rosemary Alliston-Greiner, Mark R. Wilson, Dianna L. Berry, Koren A. Holland, Victor W. Weedn, Peter Gill, and Mitchell M. Holland. "A High Observed Substitution Rate in the Human Mitochondrial DNA Control Region." *Nature Genetics*, vol. 15 (1997), pp. 363–68.
- Pavle (Stojcevic), Patriarch of Serbia. *Da nam budu jasnija neka pitanja nase Vere* (Clarifying some questions about our Faith), vol. 1. Belgrade: Stamparija Srpske Patrijarsije, 1998.
- Pennisi, Elizabeth. "Haeckel's Embryos: Fraud Rediscovered." *Science*, vol. 277, no. 5331 (Sept. 5, 1997), p. 1435.
- Peter Damascene, St. *A Treasury of Divine Knowledge*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 3, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 3, 1984.
- Petukhov, S. B. "Geologicheskii paradox" (Geological paradox). In Alexander V. Lalomov, ed., *Sotvoreniye* (Creation), vol. 2. Moscow: Palomnik, 2004.
- Philaret (Drozdov), Metropolitan of Moscow, St. *Tolkovaniye na knigu Bytiya* (Commentary on the book of Genesis). Moscow, 1867. Reprint, Moscow: Lepta Press, 2004.
- Philo of Alexandria. *The Giants*. David Winston, trans. *Philo of Alexandria: The Contemplative Life, The Giants, and Selections*. New York: Paulist Press, 1981.
- . *On the Creation*. Charles Duke Yonge, trans. *The Works of Philo Judaeus*. London: H. G. Bohn, 1854. Also under the title *Cosmogony* in David Winston, trans. *Philo of Alexandria: The Contemplative Life, The Giants, and Selections*. New York: Paulist Press, 1981.
- Photius the Great, St. *Homilies* (*Homily 5, On the Annunciation; Homily 7, On the Annunciation; Homily 9, On the Nativity of the Most Holy Mother of God; Homily 12, On Holy and Great Saturday*). S. Aristarches, ed. *Tou en agiois patros imon Photiou: Logoi kai omiliai ogdoikonta treis* (Our father among the saints Photius: Eighty-three orations and homilies). 2 vols. Constantinople, 1900. ET: Cyril Mango, trans. *The Homilies of St. Photius, Patriarch of Constantinople*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1958.
- Pomazansky, Protopresbyter Michael. "Besedy na shestodnev" sv. Vasiliya Velikago i besedy o dnyakh" tvoreniya o. Ioanna Kronshtadtskago" (Talks on the six days by St. Basil the Great and talks on the days of creation by St. John of Kronstadt). In *Pravoslavny put'* (The Orthodox way) annual. Jordanville, N.Y.: Holy Trinity Monastery, 1958.
- . *Orthodox Dogmatic Theology*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1983. 3rd ed., 2005.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Popper, Karl. *Conjectures and Refutations*. London: Routledge and Keagan Paul, 1963.
- Porfir'yev, Priest Yevgeniy. *Pravoslavnaya yestestvenno-nauchnaya apologetika* (Orthodox natural-science apologetics). Krasnodar, 2006.
- Price, Richard, ed. *The Acts of the Council of Constantinople of 553*. 2 vols. Liverpool: Liverpool University Press, 2009.
- Proceedings of the International Conference on Creationism*. Pittsburgh, Pa.: Creation Science Fellowship. Volumes for 1990, 1994, 1998, 2003, and 2008.
- Proclus of Constantinople, St.** *Homilies (Homily 4: On the Birth of Our Lord Jesus Christ)*. PG, vol. 65, 1864.
- Prothero, Donald R. *Evolution: What the Fossils Say and Why It Matters*. New York: Columbia University Press, 2007.
- "Putting Darwin Back in the Dock: 'Scientific' Creationists Challenge the Theory of Evolution." *Time*, March 16, 1981, pp. 80–82.
- Rahner, Karl, S.J. "Original Sin, Polygenism, and Freedom." *Theology Digest*, vol. 21, no. 1 (Spring 1973).
- Randall, John Herman, Jr. *The Making of the Modern Mind: A Survey of the Intellectual Background of the Present Age*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1926. Revised ed. [not used by Fr. Seraphim], 1940.
- Raup, David. "Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology." *Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin*, no. 50 (Jan. 1979), pp. 22–25.
- . "Evolution and the Fossil Record." *Science*, vol. 213, no. 4505 (July 17, 1981), p. 289.
- . "Probabilistic Models in Evolutionary Paleobiology." *American Scientist*, vol. 65, no. 1 (Jan.–Feb. 1977), pp. 55–57.
- Raven, Charles E. *Teilhard de Chardin: Scientist and Seer*. New York: Harper & Row, 1962.
- Raven, Peter H., George B. Johnson, Jonathan Losos, and Susan Singer. *Biology*, 7th ed. New York: McGraw Hill Higher Education, 2005.
- Reisz, R. R., and J. J. Head. "Turtle Origins Out to Sea." *Nature*, vol. 456 (Nov. 27, 2008), pp. 450–51.
- Rensch, Bernhard. *Evolution above the Species Level*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1959.
- Riasanovsky, Nicholas V. *A History of Russia*. 3rd ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 1977.
- Richards, E. G. *Mapping Time: The Calendar and its History*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1998.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Richardson, John. *Nietzsche's New Darwinism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004.
- Richardson, M. K., J. Hanken, M. L. Gooneratne, C. Pieau, A. Raynaud, L. Selwood, and G. M. Wright. "There Is No Highly Conserved Embryonic Stage in the Vertebrates: Implications for Current Theories of Evolution and Development." *Anatomy and Embryology*, no. 196 (1997), pp. 91–106.
- Riley, J. P., and G. Skirrow, eds. *Chemical Oceanography*, vol. 1. London: Academic Press, 1965.
- Rincon, Paul. "Neanderthal Genes 'Survive in Us.'" *BBC News*, May 6, 2010. <http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/science/nature/8660940.stm>.
- Romanides, [Fr.] John S. *The Ancestral Sin*. George S. Gabriel, trans. Ridge-wood, N.J.: Zephyr, 2002.
- Romanovsky, Sergei I. *Fizicheskaya sedimentologiya* (Physical sedimentology). Leningrad: Nedra, 1988.
- Ross, Hugh. "Genesis One, Dinosaurs, and Cavemen." Pasadena, Calif.: Reasons to Believe website, updated July 8, 1997.
- Roth, Ariel A. "'Flat Gaps' in Sedimentary Rock Layers Challenge Long Geologic Ages." *Journal of Creation*, vol. 23, no. 2 (2009). [http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j23\\_2/j23\\_2\\_76-81.pdf](http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j23_2/j23_2_76-81.pdf).
- . *Origins: Linking Science and Scripture*. Hagerstown, Md.: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1998.
- Rowland, M. W. "Fitness of Insecticide Resistance." *Nature*, vol. 327 (1987), p. 194.
- Sagan, Carl. *Cosmos*. New York: Random House, 1980.
- . "A Gift for Vividness." *Time* (Oct. 20, 1980).
- Saint-Simon, Claude-Henri de. *Le Nouveau Christianisme* (The New Christianity). Paris, 1825.
- Salvini-Plawen, L. V., and E. Mayr. "On the Evolution of Photoreceptors and Eyes." *Evolutionary Biology*, no. 10 (1977), pp. 207–63.
- Sanford, J. C. *Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*. 3rd ed. Waterloo, N.Y.: FMS Publications, 2008.
- San Mauro, Diego, Miguel Vences, Marina Alcobendas, Rafael Zardoya, and Axel Meyer. "Initial Diversification of Living Amphibians Predated the Breakup of Pangaea." *American Naturalist*, no. 165 (2005), pp. 590–99.
- Sarfati, Jonathan. *The Greatest Hoax on Earth? Refuting Dawkins on Evolution*. Atlanta, Ga.: Creation Book Publishers, 2010.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *Refuting Compromise: A Biblical and Scientific Refutation of "Progressive Creationism."* Green Forest, Ark.: Master Books, 2004.
- Schindewolf, O. H. "Comments on Some Stratigraphic Terms." *American Journal of Science*, vol. 255 (June 1957), pp. 394–99.
- Schweitzer, M. H., J. L. Wittmeyer, J. R. Horner, and J. K. Toporski. "Soft-tissue Vessels and Cellular Preservation in *Tyrannosaurus rex*." *Science*, vol. 307, no. 5717 (March 25, 2005), pp. 1952–55.
- Scott, Eugenie C. "Monkey Business." *The Sciences*, Jan.–Feb. 1996, pp. 20–25.
- Sebastian (Dabovich), Archimandrite. *Preaching in the Russian Church*. San Francisco: Cubery, 1899.
- Seilacher, Adolf. "Vendobionta and Psammocorallia: Lost Constructions of Precambrian Evolution." *Journal of the Geological Society, London*, vol. 149, no. 4 (1992), pp. 607–13.
- The Septuagint with Apocrypha: Greek and English*. Sir Lancelot C. L. Brenton, trans. London: Samuel Bagster & Sons, 1851. Reprint, Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson, 1986.
- Seraphim (Rose), Hieromonk. "The Holy Fathers of Orthodox Spirituality: Introduction 1: The Inspiration and Sure Guide to True Christianity Today." *The Orthodox Word*, no. 58 (1974), pp. 188–95.
- . *Nihilism: The Root of the Revolution of the Modern Age*. Forestville, Calif.: Fr. Seraphim Rose Foundation, 1994. 2nd ed. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 2001.
- . *Orthodoxy and the Religion of the Future*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1975. 5th ed., 2004.
- . *The Place of Blessed Augustine in the Orthodox Church*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1983. 3rd ed., 2007.
- . *The Soul after Death*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1980. 4th ed., 2004.
- . "The Theological Writings of Archbishop John." *The Orthodox Word*, nos. 175–76 (1994), pp. 142–58.
- Seraphim (Rose), Fr., and Fr. Herman (Podmoshensky), comp. and trans. *The Northern Thebaid*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1975. Revised ed., 1995.
- Seraphim of Sarov, St. *Beseda prepodobnago Serafima Sarovskago o tseli khristianskoy zhizni* (Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the aim of the Christian life). San Francisco: Orthodox Christian Books & Icons, 1968. Reprinted in *Russkiy palomnik* (Russian pilgrim), no. 2, 1990. ET

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- in St. Seraphim of Sarov, *Little Russian Philokalia*, vol. 1. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1978. 5th ed., 2008.
- Service Books of the Orthodox Church*, vol. 2: *The Divine Liturgy of St. Basil the Great, The Liturgy of the Presanctified Gifts*. St. Tikhon's Seminary Press, South Canaan, Pa., 1984.
- Shapiro, James A., and Richard von Sternberg. "Why Repetitive DNA Is Essential to Genome Function." *Biological Reviews*, no. 80 (2005), pp. 1–24.
- Shaw, K. L. "Conflict between Nuclear and Mitochondrial DNA Phylogenies of a Recent Species Radiation: What MtDNA Reveals and Conceals about Modes of Speciation in Hawaiian Crickets." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 (2002), pp. 16122–27.
- The Shepherd of Hermas*. SC, vol. 53bis, 1958. (Also in PG, vol. 2, 1886.) ET: ANF, vol. 2.
- Shcherbov, B. L., and V. D. Strakhovenko. "Konkretsii v osadkakh iskustvennogo pruda v Altayskom kraye" (Nodules in sediments of an artificial reservoir in the Altai territory). *Litologiya i poleznye iskopaemye (Zhurnal Rossiyskoy akademii nauk)* (Lithology and mineral resources [Journal of the Russian academy of science]), no. 1 (2006), pp. 51–60.
- Shubin, Daniel H. *A History of Russian Christianity*, vol. 4. New York: Algora, 2006.
- Simpson, George Gaylord. "The World into Which Darwin Led Us." *Science*, vol. 131, no. 3405 (April 1, 1960), pp. 966–74.
- Smith, Wolfgang. *Teilhardism and the New Religion*. Rockford, Ill.: Tan Books, 1988.
- Snelling, Andrew A. "The Cause of Anomalous Potassium-Argon 'Ages' for Recent Andesite Flows at Mt. Ngauruhoe, New Zealand, and the Implication for Potassium-Argon 'Dating.'" *Proceedings of the Fourth International Conference on Creationism*. Pittsburgh, Pa.: Creation Science Fellowship, Pittsburgh, 1998. [http://www.icr.org/research/index/researchp\\_as\\_r01/](http://www.icr.org/research/index/researchp_as_r01/).
- . "Doesn't the Order of Fossils in the Rock Record Favor Long Ages?" In *The New Answers Book 2*, edited by Ken Ham. Green Forest, Ark: Master Books, 2008, chap. 31, pp. 341–54. <http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/nab2/do-rock-record-fossils-favor-long-ages>.
- . *Earth's Catastrophic Past: Geology, Creation & the Flood*. 2 vols. Dallas: Institute for Creation Research, 2009.
- . "Order in the Fossil Record." *Answers*, Jan.–March 2010, pp. 64–68. <http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/am/v5/n1/order-fossil-record>.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Snobelen, Stephen D. "Isaac Newton, Heretic: The Strategies of a Nicodemite." *British Journal for the History of Science*, vol. 32 (1999), pp. 381–419.
- Soltis, Pamela S., Douglas E. Soltis, Vincent Savolainen, Peter R. Crane, and Timothy G. Barraclough. "Rate Heterogeneity among Lineages of Tracheophytes: Integration of Molecular and Fossil Data and Evidence for Molecular Living Fossils." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 99 (2002), pp. 4430–35.
- Sophronius of Jerusalem, St.** *Orations (Oration 2: On the Annunciation of the Most Holy Theotokos)*. PG, vol. 87c, 1865.
- Sophrony (Sakharov), Archimandrite. *Saint Silouan the Athonite*. Rosemary Edmonds, trans. Tolleshunt Knights by Maldon, Essex, England: Stavropigic Monastery of St. John the Baptist, 1991.
- . *Videt' Boga kak On est'* (To see God as He is). Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 2006.
- Sozomen (Salminius Hermias Sozomenus). *The Ecclesiastical History*. SC, vol. 418, 1996. (Also in PG, vol. 67, 1864.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 2.
- Speaight, Robert. *Teilhard de Chardin: A Biography*. London: Collins, 1967.
- Speakman, J. R. "The Evolution of Flight and Echolocation in Bats: Another Leap in the Dark." *Mammal Review*, no. 31 (2001), pp. 111–30.
- Spetner, Dr. Lee M. *Not by Chance! Shattering the Modern Theory of Evolution*. New York: Judaica Press, 1998.
- Spoor, F., M. G. Leakey, P. N. Gathogo, F. H. Brown, S. C. Antón, I. McDougall, C. Kiarie, F. K. Manthi, and L. N. Leakey. "Implications of New Early *Homo* Fossils from Ileret, East of Lake Turkana, Kenya." *Nature*, vol. 448 (Aug. 9, 2007), pp. 688–91.
- Spoor, F., B. Wood, and F. Zonneveld. "Implications of Early Hominid Labyrinthine Morphology for Evolution of Human Bipedal Locomotion." *Nature*, vol. 369 (June 23, 1994), pp. 645–48.
- Springer, Mark S., William J. Murphy, Eduardo Eizirik, and Stephen J. O'Brien. "Placental Mammal Diversification and the Cretaceous-Tertiary Boundary." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 100 (2003), pp. 1056–61.
- Stadler, Bärbel M. R., Peter F. Stadler, Günter P. Wagner, and Walter Fontana. "The Topology of the Possible: Formal Spaces Underlying Patterns of Evolutionary Change." *Journal of Theoretical Biology*, no. 213 (2001), pp. 241–74.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Stafford, Tim. "Darwinists Squirm under Spotlight: Interview with Phillip E. Johnson." *Citizen Magazine*, Jan. 1992.
- . "The Making of a Revolution." *Christianity Today*, Dec. 8, 1997.
- Staniloae, Fr. Dumitru. *Orthodox Spirituality*. Archimandrite Jerome (Newville) and Otilia Kloos, trans. South Canaan, Pa.: St. Tikhon's Seminary Press, 2002.
- Stanley, S. M. "An Ecological Theory for the Sudden Origin of Multicellular Life in the Late Precambrian." *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, no. 70 (1973), pp. 1486–89.
- Starlight, Time and the New Physics*. A presentation by Dr. John Hartnett. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2010. DVD.
- Stebbins, G. Ledyard. *Processes of Organic Evolution*, 2nd ed. Upper Saddle River, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1971.
- Steenberg, M. C. [Hieromonk Irenaeus]. "Children in Paradise: Adam and Eve as 'Infants' in Irenaeus of Lyons." *Journal of Early Christian Studies*, vol. 12, no. 1 (Spring 2004), pp. 1–22.
- . *Irenaeus on Creation: The Cosmic Christ and the Saga of Redemption*. Supplements to Vigiliae Christianae, vol. 91. Leiden: Brill Academic, 2008.
- Stefanatos, Dr. Joanne. *Animals and Man: A State of Blessedness*. Minneapolis: Light and Life, 1992.
- Stix, Gary. "Darwin's Living Legacy." *Scientific American*, no. 300 (2009), pp. 38–43.
- Storer, Tracy I. *General Zoology*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1951.
- Stove, David. *Darwinian Fairytales: Selfish Genes, Errors of Heredity and Other Fables of Evolution*. New York: Encounter Books, 2005.
- Swanson, W. J., and V. D. Vacquier. "The Rapid Evolution of Reproductive Proteins." *Nature Reviews, Genetics*, vol. 3 (2002), pp. 137–44.
- Swift, Dennis L. "Messages on Stone." *Creation*, vol. 19, no. 2 (March 1997), pp. 20–23. <http://www.answersingenesis.org/creation/v19/i2/stone.asp>.
- Symeon Metaphrastes, St.** *Paraphrase of the the Homilies of St. Macarius [the Great] of Egypt*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 3, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 3, 1984.
- Symeon of Thessaloniki, St.** *On the Sacraments*. PG, vol. 155, 1866.
- Symeon the New Theologian, St.** *Catechetical Discourses*. SC, vol. 96, 1953 (chaps. 1–5); vol. 104, 1964 (chaps. 6–22); vol. 113, 1965 (chaps.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 23–24). ET: C. J. deCatanzaro, trans. *Symeon the New Theologian: The Discourses*. New York: Paulist Press, 1980.
- . *Ethical Discourses* (*Discourses* 1–2, 13). SC, vol. 122, 1966 (for *Discourses* 1–2); vol. 129, 1967 (for *Discourse* 13). ET: [Fr.] Alexander Golitzin, trans. *St. Symeon the New Theologian: On the Mystical Life: The Ethical Discourses*. Vol. 1 (PPS 14), 1995 (for *Discourses* 1–2); vol. 2 (PPS 15), 1996 (for *Discourse* 13).
- . *Ta evriskomena diirimena eis dyo* (The discovered works, divided into two parts) [a compilation of St. Symeon's writings, translated into eighteenth-century Greek]. Hieromonk Dionysios Zagoraios, comp. and trans. Venice, 1790; reprint, Thessaloniki, 1886. RT: St. Theophan the Recluse, trans. *Slova prepodobnago Simeona novago bogoslova* (Homilies of St. Symeon the new theologian). 2 vols. Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1890, 1892. ET (from the Russian edition): *Homilies* 1–2, 10, 37–38, 45, 66. Fr. Seraphim Rose, trans. *The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption*. Platina, Calif.: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 1979. Reprinted 1994, 2001 under the title *The First-Created Man* (FCM).
- Sysoyev, Deacon Daniel. *Letopis' nachala* (Chronicle of the beginning). Moscow: Sretensky Monastery, 1999. Available for download at <http://www.creatio.orthodoxy.ru/books.html>.
- , ed. *Shestodnev protiv evolyutsii* (The hexaemeron vs. evolution). Moscow: Palomnik, 2000. Available for download at [www.creatio.orthodoxy.ru/books.html](http://www.creatio.orthodoxy.ru/books.html).
- Sysoyev, Priest Daniel. “*Kto kak Bog?*” ili skol'ka dlilsya den' tvoreniya (“Who is like God?” or, How long did a day of creation last?). Moscow: St. John of Kronstadt Rehabilitation Center, 2003.
- Sysoyev, Priest Daniel, and Nikolai Kolchurinsky, eds. *Bozhestvennoye ot-kroveniyeye i sovremennaya nauka* (Divine revelation and contemporary science). Almanac. Vols. 1–2. Moscow: Church of the Prophet Daniel, 2004, 2005.
- Szathmary, Eörs. “The Evolution of Replicators.” *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of London*, B, no. 335 (2000), pp. 1669–76.
- Taft, Ryan J., and John S. Mattick. “Increasing Biological Complexity Is Positively Correlated with the Relative Genome-wide Expansion of Non-protein-coding DNA Sequences.” *Genome Biology*, vol. 5, no. 1 (2003), article P1, pp. 1–25.
- Taft, Ryan J., Michael Pheasant, and John S. Mattick. “The Relationship be-

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- tween Non-protein-coding DNA and Eukaryotic Complexity." *BioEssays*, vol. 29, no. 3 (2007), pp. 288–99.
- Tattersall, Ian. "The Many Faces of *Homo habilis*." *Evolutionary Anthropology*, vol. 1, no. 1 (1992).
- Taylor, Ian T. *In the Minds of Men: Darwin and the New World Order*. 6th ed., revised and updated. Minneapolis: TFE, 2008.
- Taylor, Kenneth N., ed. and comp. *Evolution and the High School Student*. Wheaton, Ill.: Tyndale House, 1972.
- Taylor, Paul S. *The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible*. Revised ed. Colorado Springs, Colo.: Cook Communications Ministries, 1998.
- Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre. *Activation of Energy*. René Hague, trans. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1970.
- . *Building the Earth*. Noel Lindsay, trans. West Nyack, N.Y.: Cross Currents reprint, 1959.
- . *Christianity and Evolution*. René Hague, trans. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, A Harvest Book, 1969.
- . *The Divine Milieu*. Bernard Wall, trans. New York: Harper & Row, 1960.
- . *The Future of Man*. Norman Denny, trans. London: Collins, 1965.
- . *The Heart of Matter*. René Hague, trans. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1979.
- . *How I Believe*. René Hague, trans. New York: Harper & Row, 1969.
- . *Human Energy*. J. M. Cohen, trans. London: Collins, 1969.
- . *Hymn of the Universe*. Simon Bartholomew, trans. New York: Harper & Row, 1965.
- . *Lettres à Léontine Zanta* (Letters to Leontine Zanta). Paris: Desclée de Brouwer, 1965.
- . *The Mystical Milieu: Writings in Time of War*. René Hague, trans. New York: Harper and Row, 1968.
- . *The Phenomenon of Man*. Bernard Wall, trans. Introduction by Sir Julian Huxley. New York: Harper & Row, 1959.
- . *Science and Christ*. René Hague, trans. London: Collins, 1968.
- Tertullian. *On Idolatry*. CCLSL, vol. 2, 1954. (Also in PL, vol. 1, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 3.
- . *On the Apparel of Women*. SC, vol. 173, 1971. (Also in PL, vol. 1, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 4.
- . *On the Veiling of Virgins*. SC, vol. 424, 1997. (Also in PL, vol. 2, 1844.) ET: ANF, vol. 4.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- . *A Treatise on the Soul*. CCSL, vol. 2, 1954. ET: ANF, vol. 3.
- TeSelle, Eugene. *Augustine the Theologian*. New York: Herder and Herder, 1970.
- Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver, Hieromartyr. *Raduytec'!* (Rejoice!). Moscow: Yeleon, 1998.
- Thaxton, Charles B., Walter L. Bradley, and Roger L. Olsen. *The Mystery of Life's Origin: Reassessing Current Theories*. Dallas: Lewis and Stanley, 1984.
- Theodore the Great Ascetic, St. *Theoretikon*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 1, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 2, 1981.
- Theodore the Studite (the Confessor), St. *Canon of the Adoration of the Precious and Life-giving Cross* (Third Sunday of Great Lent). In *Triodion Katanyktikon*. Athens: Apostoliki Diakonia of the Church of Greece, 1994. ET in *The Lenten Triodion*. Mother Mary and Archimandrite Kallistos Ware, trans. London: Faber and Faber, 1978. Reprint, South Canaan, Pa.: St. Tikhon's Seminary Press, 2002.
- Theodoret of Cyrus, Blessed. *Ecclesiastical History* (book 1). SC, vol. 501, 2006. (Also in PG, vol. 82, 1864.) ET: NPNF, 2nd series, vol. 3.
- . *Letter 181, To Abundius, Bishop of Como*. SC, vol. 429, 1998.
- . *On the Incarnation of the Lord*. PG, vol. 75. ET in István Pásztori-Kupán, *Theodoret of Cyrus*. London: Routledge, 2006.
- . *The Questions on Genesis*. Greek with English translation: Robert Charles Hill, trans. *Theodoret of Cyrus: The Questions on the Octateuch*, vol. 1, *On Genesis and Exodus*. LEC, vol. 1, 2007. (Greek also in PG, vol. 80, 1860.)
- . *The Questions on Joshua*. Greek with English translation: Robert Charles Hill, trans. *Theodoret of Cyrus: The Questions on the Octateuch*, vol. 2, *On Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, and Ruth*. LEC, vol. 2, 2007.
- Theokritoff, George, with Elizabeth Theokritoff. "Genesis and Creation: Towards a Debate." *St. Vladimir's Theological Quarterly*, vol. 46, no. 4 (Nov. 4, 2002), pp. 365–90.
- Theoleptus, Metropolitan of Philadelphia. *Texts*. In *Philokalia* (Greek), vol. 4, 1976. ET: *Philokalia*, vol. 4, 1995.
- Theophan the Recluse, Bishop of Tambov, St. *Mysli na kazhdyy den' goda po tserkovnym" chteniyam" iz" slova Bozhiya* (Thoughts for each day of the year according to the church readings from the word of God). Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1881. Reprint, Holy Dormition Pskov-Caves Monastery, 1991. ET: Lisa Marie Baranov,

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- trans. *Thoughts for Each Day of the Year according to the Daily Church Readings from the Word of God*. Platina, Calif: St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood/Moscow: Sretensky Monastery, 2010.
- . *Slova na Gospodskiye, Bogorodichnyye, i torzhestvennyye dni* (Homilies on feasts of the Lord and the Theotokos, and festal days). Moscow: Athonite Russian Monastery of St. Panteleimon, 1883.
- . *Sobraniye pisem* (Collected letters), vols. 2 and 7. Holy Dormition Pskov-Caves Monastery, 1994.
- . *Sozertsaniye i razmyshleniye* (Contemplations and reflections). Moscow: Pravilo Very, 1998.
- . *Tolkovaniye pervykh" vos'mi glav" poslaniya sv. Apostola Pavla k" Rimlyanam* (Commentary on the first eight chapters of the epistle of the holy Apostle Paul to the Romans). Moscow, 1890.
- Theophilus of Antioch, St.** *To Autolycus*. SC, vol. 20, 1948. (Also in PG, vol. 6, 1857.) ET: ANF, vol. 2.
- Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria, Blessed.** *Commentary on 1 Peter*. PG, vol. 125, 1864.
- . *Commentary on Romans*. PG, vol. 124, 1864.
- . *The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*. PG, vol. 123, 1864. ET: Fr. Christopher Stade, trans. *Blessed Theophylact: The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. Luke*. House Springs, Mo.: Chrysostom Press, 1997.
- . *The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. John*. PG, vols. 123–24, 1864. ET: Fr. Christopher Stade, trans. *Blessed Theophylact: The Explanation of the Holy Gospel according to St. John*. House Springs, Mo.: Chrysostom Press, 2007.
- Thomas, Brian. "Dinosaur Soft Tissues: They're Real!" Posted Aug. 11, 2009. <http://www.icr.org/article/4819>.
- . "Fossil Discoveries Disrupt Evolutionary Timescales." Posted June 28, 2010. <http://www.icr.org/article/5501/>.
- . "Hadrosaur Soft Tissues Another Blow to Long-Ages Myth." Posted May 12, 2009. <http://www.icr.org/article/4621/>.
- Thompson, Damian. *The End of Time*. Hanover, N.H.: University Press of New England, 1997.
- Thompson, John N. *The Geographic Mosaic of Coevolution*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005.
- Törönen, Melchisedec. *Union and Distinction in the Thought of St. Maximus the Confessor*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2007.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- "T-rex with Gout." *Creation*, vol. 19, no. 4 (Sept. 1997), p. 8. <http://creation.com/focus-194>.
- Trooster, Stephanus, S.J. *Evolution and the Doctrine of Original Sin*. John A. Ter Haar, trans. Glen Rock, N.J.: Newman Press, 1968.
- Truman, Royal. "Evaluation of Neo-Darwinian Theory Using the Avida Platform," part 1. *PCID* 3.1.1 (Nov. 2004). [http://www.iscid.org/papers/Truman\\_ComplexFeatures1\\_070104.pdf](http://www.iscid.org/papers/Truman_ComplexFeatures1_070104.pdf).
- Tugarova, M. A., M. V. Platonov, and E. I. Sergeyeva. "Litodinamicheskaya kharakteristika terrigenoy sedimentatsii kembro-nizhneordovikskoy tolshchi Leningradskoy oblasti (Istoricheskaya geologiya i evolyutsionnaya geografiya)" (Lithodynamic characteristics of terrigenous sedimentation in the Cambrian–Late Ordovician sequence of the Leningrad district [Historical geology and evolutionary geography]). St. Petersburg: NOU Amadeus, 2001, pp. 81–91.
- Unlocking the Mystery of Life*. Directed by Lad Allen. La Mirada, Calif.: Illustra Media, 2002. DVD.
- Van Roy, Peter, Patrick J. Orr, Joseph P. Botting, Lucy A. Muir, Jakob Vinther, Bertrand Lefebvre, Khadija el Hariri, Derek E. G. Briggs. "Ordovician Faunas of Burgess Shale Type." *Nature*, vol. 465, no. 7295 (May 13, 2010), pp. 215–18. doi:10.1038/nature09038.
- Vardiman, Larry. *The Age of the Earth's Atmosphere* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1990.
- . *Climates before and after the Genesis Flood: Numerical Models and Their Implications* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 2001.
- . *Ice Cores and the Age of the Earth* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1993.
- . *Sea-Floor Sediments and the Age of the Earth* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1996.
- . "Temperature Profiles for an Optimized Water Vapor Canopy." Presented at the Fifth International Conference on Creationism, Pittsburgh, Pa., Aug. 4–9, 2003. <http://www.icr.org/i/pdf/research/Canopy.pdf>.
- Vardiman, Larry, with Karen Boussetlot. "Sensitivity Studies on Vapor Canopy Temperature Profiles." Presented at the Fourth International Conference on Creationism, Pittsburgh, Pa., Aug. 3–8, 1998. [http://www.icr.org/research/index/researchp\\_lv\\_r05/](http://www.icr.org/research/index/researchp_lv_r05/).
- Vardiman, Larry, and D. Russell Humphreys. "A New Creationist Cosmology: In No Time at All." Part 1: *Acts & Facts*, vol. 39, no. 11 (Nov.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 2010), pp. 12–15. <http://www.icr.org/article/5686/>. Part 2: *Acts & Facts*, vol. 40, no. 1 (Jan. 2011), pp. 12–14. <http://www.icr.org/article/5830/>. Part 3: *Acts & Facts*, vol. 40, no. 2 (Feb. 2011), pp. 12–14. <http://www.icr.org/article/5870/>.
- Vardiman, Larry, Andrew A. Snelling, and Eugene F. Chaffin, eds. *Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, vols. 1 and 2. El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 2000 and 2005.
- Veith, Gene Edward. “Admitting Its Mistakes.” *World Magazine*, vol. 14, no. 27 (July 17, 1999).
- Vert’yanov, Sergei. “Akademik Yu. P. Altukhov—pravoslavnyy khristianin, genetik, antievolyutsionist” (Academician Y. P. Altukhov—Orthodox Christian, geneticist, anti-evolutionist). In Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, ed., *Pravoslavnoye osmysleniye tvoreniya mira i sovremennaya nauka* (The Orthodox interpretation of the creation of the world and contemporary science), vol. 4 (2008), pp. 260–69.
- . *Obshchaya biologiya* (General biology). 2nd ed. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 2006.
- . *Proiskhozhdeniye zhizni: fakty, gipotezy, dokazatel'stva* (The origin of life: facts, hypotheses, evidence). 4th ed. Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 2007.
- Violovan, Konstantin, and Anatoliy Lisovski. “Problemy abiogeneza kak klyuch k ponimaniyu nesostoyatel'nosti evolyutsionnoy gipotezy” (Problems of abiogenesis as a key to understanding the groundlessness of the evolutionary hypothesis). In Priest Daniel Sysoyev and Nikolai Kolchurinsky, eds. *Bozhestvennoye otkroveniye i sovremennaya nauka* (Divine revelation and contemporary science). Almanac, vol. 2 (2005), pp. 77–93.
- Vivekananda, Swami. “Swami Vivekananda on Darwin, Evolution, and the Perfect Man.” *What Is Enlightenment?* Spring/Summer 2002, pp. 58–63, 150–51. <http://www.enlightennext.org/magazine/j21/vivekananda.asp>.
- Vladimir, Metropolitan of Kiev, Hieromartyr. *Gde istinoye shchast'ye: V vere ili neverii?* (Where is true happiness? In faith or unbelief?). St. Petersburg, 1905. Reprint, Moscow: St. Ignatius of Stavropol Publishing House, 1998.
- Voegelin, Eric. “The Drama of Humanity Conversations, III.” In *The Collected Works of Eric Voegelin*, vol. 33. William Petropulos and Gilbert Weiss, eds. Columbia, Mo.: University of Missouri Press, 2004.
- Voices for Evolution*. 2nd ed. M. Matsumura, ed. Berkeley, Calif.: National Center for Science Education, 1995.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Voitkevich, G. V., and A. E. Miroshnikov, eds. *Spravochnik po geokhimii* (A reference book on geochemistry). Moscow: Nedra, 1977.
- Vorob'yev, Sergei. *Zakon Bozhiy*, tom 1: *Bibleyskaya istoriya Vekhhogo Zaveta* (The law of God, vol. 1: The biblical history of the Old Testament). Sergiyev Posad: Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, 2009. Available for download at <http://vertyanov.ru/books/>.
- Weiss, Kenneth. "How the Eye Got Its Brain." *Evolutionary Anthropology*, no. 11 (2002), pp. 215–19.
- Wells, Jonathan. "Abusing Theology: Howard Van Till's 'Forgotten Doctrine of Creation's Functional Integrity.'" *Origins & Design*, vol. 19, no. 1 (1998), pp. 16–20.
- . *Icons of Evolution: Science or Myth?* Washington, D.C.: Regnery, 2000.
- . *The Myth of Junk DNA*. Seattle: Discovery Institute Press, 2011.
- . "Second Thoughts about Peppered Moths." *The Scientist*, vol. 13, no. 11 (May 24, 1999), p. 13. <http://www.the-scientist.com/article/display/18561/>.
- Werner, Dr. Carl. *Evolution: The Grand Experiment*, vol. 2—*Living Fossils*. Green Forest, Ark.: New Leaf Press/Audio Visual Consultants, 2009.
- West, Ronald R. "Paleontology and Uniformitarianism." *Compass*, vol. 45 (May 1968), pp. 212–18.
- What You Aren't Being Told about Astronomy*, vol. 1: *Our Created Solar System*. Featuring Spike Psarris. Creation Astronomy Media, 2009. DVD.
- Whitcomb, John C., and Henry M. Morris. *The Genesis Flood: The Biblical Record and Its Scientific Implications*. Phillipsburg, N.J.: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing, 1961.
- Wieland, Carl. "Creation in the Physics Lab: An Illuminating Interview with Physicist Dr. D. Russell Humphreys." *Creation*, vol. 15, no. 3 (June 1993), pp. 20–23. <http://creation.com/creation-in-the-physics-lab-creation-magazine-russell-humphreys>.
- . "Dinosaur Soft Tissue and Protein—Even More Confirmation." Posted May 6, 2009. <http://creation.com/dinosaur-soft-tissue-and-proteineven-more-confirmation>.
- . "Sensational Dinosaur Blood Report." *Creation*, vol. 19, no. 4 (Sept. 1997), pp. 42–43. <http://creation.com/sensational-dinosaur-blood-report>.
- Williams, Alex, and John Hartnett. *Dismantling the Big Bang: God's Universe Rediscovered*. Green Forest, Ark: Master Books, 2005.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Wong, Kate. "The Human Pedigree." With illustrations by Victor Deak. *Scientific American*, no. 300 (2009), pp. 46–49.
- Woodmorappe, John. "The Fossil Record: Becoming More Random All the Time." *Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal* (now *Journal of Creation*), vol. 14, no. 1 (2000), pp. 110–16. [http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j14\\_1/j14\\_1\\_110-116.pdf](http://creation.com/images/pdfs/tj/j14_1/j14_1_110-116.pdf).
- . *The Mythology of Modern Dating Methods* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1999.
- . *Noah's Ark: A Feasibility Study* (technical monograph). El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1996. Reprint, 2003.
- . *Studies in Flood Geology*. 2nd ed. El Cajon, Calif.: Institute for Creation Research, 1999.
- Young, Fr. Alexey. *A Man Is His Faith: Ivan Kireyevsky and Orthodox Christianity*. London: St. George Information Service, 1980.
- . "Wolves at the Door," part 2. *Nikodemos*, vol. 2, no. 2 (March–April 1973), pp. 14–19.
- Young, Robert. *Analytical Concordance to the Bible*. Reprint, New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1936.
- The Young Sun*. Featuring Drs. Danny Faulkner, Ron Samec, and Jason Lisle. Eight Mile Plains, Qld., Australia: Creation Ministries International, 2009. DVD.
- Zhamoida, V. A., and A. G. Grigoriev. "Vzaimnosvyaz' mezhdu protsessami konkretseobrazovaniya i kachestvom prirodnoy sredy v Finskom zalive (Baltiyskoye more)" (The interrelations between concretion forming processes and the marine environment in the Gulf of Finland [Baltic Sea]). Mezhdunarodnoye konferentsiye "Poleznye iskopaemye kontinental'nykh shel'fov" (International conference "Mineral deposits of continental shelves"). Abstracts. St. Petersburg: VNII Okeangeologia, 2005.



Adam (detail).

*Fresco by Theophanes the Greek in the Church of the Transfiguration  
of the Savior, Novgorod, Russia, 1378.*

# ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

We wish to thank the following people for the valuable contributions they have made to this multifaceted work, either through answering our questions, offering insights and suggestions, reviewing portions of the manuscript, researching various topics, or helping with translations:

Hieroschemamonk Ambrose (Young)  
Mace Baker, Ph.D. (biology)  
David Bradshaw, Ph.D. (philosophy)  
Archpriest Constantine Bufeyev, M.Div., Ph.D. (geology)  
Duane T. Gish, Ph.D. (biochemistry)  
John Hartnett, Ph.D. (physics)  
William Hoesch, M.S. (geology)  
Hieromonk Irenaeus (M. C. Steenberg), Ph.D. (theology)  
Hieromonk James (Corazza)  
Phillip E. Johnson, J.D.  
Gennady Kalyabin, Ph.D. (physics)  
Dean Kenyon, Ph.D. (biology)  
Alexander Lalomov, Ph.D. (geology)  
Alexey Lunnyy, Ph.D. (biology)  
Vladimir Maricic  
Katherine McCaffery  
Michael McCormick, M.Div.  
Henry M. Morris, Ph.D. (hydraulic engineering)  
Archpriest Michael Oyer, M.Div.  
Tychon Pino  
Silviu Podariu, Ph.D. (cosmology)  
Anna Radovic, Ph.D. (genetics)  
Priest Joshua Resnick  
Vincent Rossi

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Frank J. Sherwin, M.S. (zoology)  
Mikhail Skvortsov, Ph.D. (physics)  
Wolfgang Smith, Ph.D. (physics, mathematics)  
Thomas Sturdivant  
Aaron Taylor  
Priest Philip Tolbert, M.Div.  
Christopher Veniamin, Ph.D. (theology)  
Sergei Vert'yanov, Ph.D. (physics)  
Yuri Zharikov, Ph.D. (zoology)

# SCRIPTURE INDEX

## Genesis

thesis	2:2 . . . . . 687	3:16–17 . . . . . 719
1:1 . . . 145, 156–57nn, . . . . . 448n	2:4–6 . . . . . 210	3:17 . . 269n, 301, 548, . . . . 548n, 727, 727n
1:1–2 . . . . . 148, 664	2:5 . . . . . 212, 708	3:17–18 . . . . . 733
1:2 . . . . 149–50, 155n	2:5–6 . . . 162, 704, 708	3:17–19 . 269–70, 689, . . . . . 744
1:2–5 . . . . . 121n	2:7 . . 211, 211nn, 215n, . . . 479–80, 553, 776n	3:18 . . . . 703–4, 708
1:3 . . . . . 151	2:7–8 . . . . . 283	3:19 . . . . . 719, 742
1:4 . . . . . 152	2:8 . . . . . 220, 220n	3:20 . . . . . 274
1:4–5 . . . . . 152	2:8–9 . . . . . 463	3:21 . . 224, 249n, 275, . . . 275–76n, 452–53, . . . 487, 719–20, 720n
1:5 . . . . . 153	2:9 . . . 222, 222n, 444	3:22 . . . . . 276n
1:6–8 . . . . 159, 161n	2:10–14 . . . . . 224	3:22–23 . . . . . 276
1:7 . . . . . 404	2:15 . . . . . 225, 232n	3:24 . . . . 119, 277, 283, . . . . . 759
1:9–10 . . . . . 164	2:16 . . . . . 229	4:1 . 203, 232n, 288, 722
1:11 . . . . . 552	2:16–17 . . . . . 227	4:2–5 . . . . . 291
1:11–12 . . . . . 38	2:17 . . 271, 716, 718n	4:4 . . . . . 292n
1:11–13 . . . . 165–66	2:18–22 . . . 234, 776n	4:6–7 . . . . . 295
1:12 . . . . . 704	2:19 . . . . . 454	4:8 . . . . . 298, 776n
1:14 . . . . . 160	2:19–20 . . . . . 697	4:9–16 . . . . . 298–99
1:14–19 . . . . . 169	2:21–22 . . . . . 238	4:17–22 . . . . . 302
1:20 . . . . . 160	2:21–3:6 . . . . . 776n	4:23–24 . . . . . 304–5
1:20–23 . . . . . 175	2:23 . . . . . 242	4:25–26 . . . . . 305
1:20–26 . . . . . 38	2:23–24 . . . 247, 697	5:1–21 . . . . . 306–7
1:22 . . . . . 205	2:25 . . . . . 232n, 249	5:4–5 . . . . . 302
1:24 . . . . . 552	3:1 . . . . . 253	5:22–24 . . . . . 316
1:24–25 . . . . . 188	3:1–6 . . . . 255, 776n	5:25–32 . . . . . 317
1:26 . 199n, 367, 432n, . . . . . 475, 483	3:5 . . . . . 744	5:29 . . . . . 341n
1:26–27 . . . . . 195	3:6 . . . . . 745, 745n	5:32 . . . . . 324n
1:26–30 . . . . . 209	3:7 . . . 249n, 257, 718, . . . . . 720n	6:1–4 . . . . . 318
1:27 . . . . . 776n	3:8 . . . . . 259, 259n	6:2–4 . 306, 412, 412nn, . . . . . 413n
1:28 . . . . . 205	3:9 . . . . . 262	6:3 . . . . . 412n
1:29–30 . 207, 453–54, . . . . . 896	3:10–13 . . . . . 263	6:5 . . . . . 320
1:30 . . . 162, 706, 708	3:14 . . . . . 301	6:6–8 . . . . . 323
1:31 . . . 209, 708, 731, . . . . . 763, 779, 896	3:14–15 . . . 253, 265, . . . . . 265nn	
2:1–3 . . . . . 192	3:15 . . . . . 267n, 400	
	3:16 . . . . . 268, 548	

# SCRIPTURE INDEX

6:9–11 . . . . . 324  
 6:12–14 . . . . . 324  
 6:13 . . . . . 319n, 324n  
 6:15–17 . . . . . 325  
 6:18–19 . . . . . 327  
 6:19 . . . . . 352n  
 6:20–23 . . . . . 328–29  
 7:1–3 . . . . . 329  
 7:4–9 . . . . . 331  
 7:10 . . . . . 338  
 7:11–12 . . . . . 162  
 7:11–17 . . . . . 338  
 7:17–24 . . . . . 339  
 7:21–23 . . . . . 337n  
 8:1–3 . . . . . 342  
 8:3 . . . . . 343  
 8:4–5 . . . . . 343  
 8:6–7 . . . . . 343  
 8:8–14 . . . . . 343  
 8:15–19 . . . . . 345–47  
 8:20 . . . . . 329  
 8:20–22 . . . . . 347–48  
 8:22 . . . . . 163  
 9:1 . . . . . 354n  
 9:1–2 . . . . . 349  
 9:3 . . . . . 163, 208, 349,  
 . . . . . 454, 896  
 9:3–7 . . . . . 349  
 9:8–17 . . . . . 350  
 9:11 . . . . . 335  
 9:18–19 . . . . . 352  
 9:20–21 . . . . . 352  
 9:22–25 . . . . . 354  
 9:26–27 . . . . . 356  
 9:28–29 . . . . . 358  
 10:1–4 . . . . . 358  
 10:5 . . . . . 360, 362n  
 10:6–20 . . . . . 360–61  
 10:11 . . . . . 356  
 10:20 . . . . . 362n  
 10:21 . . . . . 361  
 10:22–32 . . . . . 361  
 10:31–32 . . . . . 362n  
 11:1–2 . . . . . 361  
 11:1–9 . . . . . 362n

11:2 . . . . . 362n  
 11:3–4 . . . . . 362  
 11:5 . . . . . 363, 365n  
 11:6 . . . . . 365  
 11:7 . . . . . 365  
 11:8 . . . . . 367  
 11:9 . . . . . 367  
 11:10–26 . . . . . 367–68  
 47:9 . . . . . 412

## Exodus

3:1–5 . . . . . 128  
 4:12 . . . . . 127  
 12:2 . . . . . 194  
 20:11 . . . . . 127n  
 31:17 . . . . . 127n  
 31:18 . . . . . 129

## Leviticus

18:9 . . . . . 303

## Numbers

12:8 . . . . . 127  
 21:9 . . . . . 122

## Joshua

17:13 . . . . . 356n

## 4 Kingdoms

2:1, 11 . . . . . 316

## 2 Maccabees

7:28 . . . . . 156n

## Psalms

13:1 . . . . . 514n  
 18:1 . . . . . 824  
 32:6 . . . . . 146n  
 32:9 . . . . . 146n  
 36:11 . . . . . 399  
 48:21 . . . . . 455, 488, 860  
 50:5 . . . . . 495n, 722  
 81:6 . . . . . 256  
 89:4 . . . . . 668–69n  
 90:13 . . . . . 459

91:3 . . . . . 709  
 94:5 . . . . . 165  
 103:21 . . . . . 123  
 103:32 . . . . . 150, 150n  
 148:5 . . . . . 790

## Job

33:4 . . . . . 151  
 38:4–14 . . . . . 190  
 38:7 . . . . . 159  
 38:14 . . . . . 815, 815n

## Wisdom (of Solomon)

1:13 . . . . . 456, 734  
 1:13:14 . . . . . 689, 703  
 2:23 . . . . . 486  
 2:23–24 . . . . . 690, 692  
 2:24 . . . . . 255, 735  
 11:20 . . . . . 509

## Sirach (Wisdom of Jesus Son of Sirach)

18:1 . . . . . 140n

## Isaiah

9:6 . . . . . 197  
 11:6–7 . . . . . 706  
 11:6–10 . . . . . 706n  
 11:8–9 . . . . . 706  
 27:1 . . . . . 268n  
 30:26 . . . . . 772  
 45:2 . . . . . 164  
 53:9 . . . . . 749  
 55:9 . . . . . 467  
 65:17 . . . . . 763  
 65:25 . . . . . 706  
 66:7 . . . . . 652n  
 66:22 . . . . . 763

## Ezekiel

18:20 . . . . . 718n  
 44:2 . . . . . 652n

## Susanna

42 . . . . . 555

# SCRIPTURE INDEX

## Matthew

1:1–17 . . . . . 314  
 3:16 . . . . . 345n  
 4:3–4 . . . . . 257n  
 5:5 . . . . . 399, 573  
 5:48 . . . . . 811  
 8:4 . . . . . 409n  
 10:16 . . . . . 613  
 10:29–30 . . . . . 576  
 11:28 . . . . . 341n  
 12:8 . . . . . 653n  
 13:24–30 . . . . . 185  
 15:28 . . . . . 358  
 19:5 . . . . . 247n  
 19:7–8 . . . . . 409n  
 20:28 . . . . . 749  
 22:30 . . . . . 174, 291  
 24:29 . . . . . 174–75  
 24:37–39 . . . . . 327n  
 25:41 . . . . . 266, 390–91  
 27:45–50 . . . . . 753n  
 28:2 . . . . . 766

## Mark

1:10 . . . . . 345n  
 1:44 . . . . . 409n  
 4:26 . . . . . 186  
 7:10 . . . . . 409n  
 10:3 . . . . . 409n  
 10:6 . . . . . 200n, 776n  
 10:7–8 . . . . . 247n  
 10:39 . . . . . 754n  
 15:33–37 . . . . . 753n  
 16:12 . . . . . 771n

## Luke

1:35 . . . . . 280n  
 1:38 . . . . . 280n  
 3:22 . . . . . 345n  
 3:23–38 . . . . . 314, 631  
 3:38 . . . . . 661, 672  
 5:14 . . . . . 409n  
 10:18 . . . . . 159  
 10:42 . . . . . 794, 794n  
 11:50–51 . . . . . 298n, 776n

12:6–7 . . . . . 576  
 12:50 . . . . . 749n, 754n  
 12:57 . . . . . 476  
 16:29–31 . . . . . 409n  
 17:21 . . . . . 127  
 17:26–27 . . . . . 327n  
 18:8 . . . . . 813  
 20:36 . . . . . 772  
 20:37 . . . . . 409n  
 21:15 . . . . . 467n  
 21:18 . . . . . 576  
 23:43 . . . . . 225, 390, 759  
 24:13–32 . . . . . 771n  
 24:31 . . . . . 766  
 24:43 . . . . . 766  
 24:44 . . . . . 409n

## John

1:1 . . . . . 145  
 1:3 . . . . . 145–46, 212  
 1:29 . . . . . 749  
 3:14 . . . . . 122  
 3:14–15 . . . . . 749n  
 3:36 . . . . . 712n  
 5:17 . . . . . 192, 687, 774  
 5:29 . . . . . 761n  
 5:45–46 . . . . . 409n  
 6:29 . . . . . 226  
 7:19 . . . . . 409n  
 7:22–23 . . . . . 409n  
 9:3 . . . . . 211n  
 9:6 . . . . . 211n  
 10:30 . . . . . 199n  
 11:25–26 . . . . . 818  
 12:27 . . . . . 749n  
 14:2 . . . . . 399  
 14:9 . . . . . 199n  
 16:13 . . . . . 32  
 18:36 . . . . . 108  
 19:23 . . . . . 249n  
 20:19 . . . . . 766

## Acts

8:26 . . . . . 491n  
 10:3 . . . . . 491n

15:20 . . . . . 350  
 15:29 . . . . . 350  
 17:28 . . . . . 793  
 21:25 . . . . . 350  
 27:22–24 . . . . . 328

## Romans

1:16 . . . . . 121, 434  
 1:18 . . . . . 712n  
 1:20 . . . . . 183  
 1:26 . . . . . 806  
 2:14–15 . . . . . 476  
 5:12 . . . . . 271n, 690, 734,  
     . . . . . 735n, 749, 752, 778  
 5:12–19 . . . . . 776n  
 5:14 . . . . . 751  
 5:15 . . . . . 752  
 5:16 . . . . . 752  
 5:17 . . . . . 395n, 690, 734,  
     . . . . . 751, 752  
 5:18 . . . . . 752  
 5:19 . . . . . 713, 752  
 6:3–4 . . . . . 754  
 6:6 . . . . . 754  
 6:7 . . . . . 743  
 6:8 . . . . . 754  
 8:8 . . . . . 319  
 8:15 . . . . . 147n  
 8:18–21 . . . . . 732  
 8:18–23 . . . . . 762  
 8:19 . . . . . 690  
 8:19–22 . . . . . 271, 271n,  
     . . . . . 638, 896  
 8:19–23 . . . . . 727, 731–33  
 8:20 . . . . . 456, 573, 690,  
     . . . . . 727–28, 730, 763  
 8:20–21 . . . . . 690, 735n  
 8:21 . . . . . 59n, 182n, 239,  
     . . . . . 450, 728, 730, 763,  
     . . . . . 772  
 8:21–22 . . . . . 82  
 8:21–23 . . . . . 690  
 8:28 . . . . . 402n  
 8:29 . . . . . 766



# SCRIPTURE INDEX

## 1 Corinthians

1:10–11 . . . . . 751n  
 1:20 . . . . . 467  
 2:4 . . . . . 129  
 2:16 . . . 31, 466–67, 480  
 4:7 . . . . . 477  
 7:7–8 . . . . . 205  
 11:8–9 . . . . . 776n  
 12:6 . . . . . 147n  
 13:12 . . . . . 397  
 15:20 . . . . . 761, 786  
 15:21 . . . . . 733–34  
 15:21–22 . . . 395n, 690,  
 . . . . . 776n, 777, 783n  
 15:23 . . . . . 786  
 15:26 . . . . . 743, 777  
 15:42 . . . . . 764  
 15:44 . . . 489, 764, 766, 769  
 15:45 . . . . . 776n  
 15:50–53 . . . . . 764  
 15:52 . . . . . 761

## 2 Corinthians

3:6 . . . . . 755  
 11:3 . . . . . 776n  
 12:2 . . . . . 221  
 12:3–5 . . . . . 221

## Galatians

3:19 . . . . . 267n  
 3:28 . . . . . 201  
 4:4 . . . . . 267n  
 4:6 . . . . . 147n  
 4:24 . . . . . 122–23n

## Ephesians

2:14 . . . . . 756  
 3:9 . . . . . 146  
 4:6 . . . . . 147n  
 4:8–10 . . . . . 753n  
 4:13 . . . . . 811  
 5:6 . . . . . 712n

## Philippians

3:13 . . . . . 206  
 3:21 . . . . . 766

## Colossians

1:15 . . . . . 199n, 341n  
 1:16 . . . . . 146, 158–59  
 1:18 . . . . . 769  
 2:12–14 . . . . . 755  
 2:14 . . . . . 249n  
 2:14–15 . . . . . 750

## 1 Thessalonians

5:23 . . . . . 479

## 2 Thessalonians

2:15 . . . . . 825

## 1 Timothy

2:5–6 . . . . . 749  
 2:13–14 . . . . . 776n  
 6:13 . . . . . 756  
 6:15–16 . . . . . 739

## 2 Timothy

1:13 . . . . . 825  
 4:1 . . . . . 768n

## Hebrews

1:3 . . . 199n, 742, 793  
 2:9 . . . . . 749  
 9:15 . . . . . 748, 778  
 9:26 . . . . . 774  
 9:28 . . . . . 774  
 10:12 . . . . . 786  
 11:3 . . . . . 156n, 165  
 11:4 . . . . . 292n  
 11:5 . . . . . 316  
 13:9 . . . . . 809

## James

2:19 . . . . . 560

## 1 Peter

3:15 . . . . . 657  
 3:18 . . . . . 750n  
 3:18–19 . . . . . 753n  
 3:18–20 . . . . . 340  
 4:5 . . . . . 768n  
 4:6 . . . . . 753n

## 2 Peter

2:5 . . . . . 334n, 337n  
 3:3–6 . . . . . 337n  
 3:5 . . . . . 334n  
 3:6 . . . . . 334n, 337n  
 3:8 . . . . . 668–69n  
 3:10 . . . . . 769  
 3:12 . . . . . 769  
 3:13 . . . 732, 762, 772

## 1 John

1:7 . . . . . 783  
 3:8 . . . . . 267  
 3:12 . . . . . 292n

## Jude

1:3 . . . . . 31

## Apocalypse

1:7 . . . . . 768n  
 1:8 . . . . . 145  
 2:7 . . . . . 276  
 2:25 . . . . . 825  
 3:3 . . . . . 825  
 3:11 . . . . . 825  
 11:3–12 . . . 317, 317n  
 12:7 . . . . . 254  
 12:7–8 . . . . . 159  
 20:2 . . . . . 402n  
 21:1 . . . . . 573, 762–63  
 21:5 . . . . . 786  
 21:23 . . . . . 175  
 22:2 . . . . . 276  
 22:14 . . . . . 276

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

<b>Alexander of Alexandria, St.</b>	4.1 . . . . . 173	<i>Paradise</i>	
	5.1, 2 . . . . . 179	1 . . . . . 220–21	
<i>Epistle to Alexander, Bishop of Constantinople</i>	5.9 . . . . . 185	3 . . . . . 347n	
4 . . . . . 217n	6.3 . . . . . 183	10–11 . . . . . 240–42	
11 . . . . . 217n	<i>Isaac, or the Soul</i>	11 . . . . . 238	
	1.1 . . . . . 316n	12 . . . . . 255–56	
<b>Ambrose of Milan, St.</b>		14 . . . . . 261–63	
	<i>Letters</i>	<i>Two Books concerning Repen- tance</i>	
<i>Exposition of the Holy Gos- pel according to St. Luke</i> . . . . . 631n	41.21 . . . . . 345n	2.11.99 . . . . . 275n	
3.15 . . . . . 631n	<i>On Noah</i>	<b>Ambrose of Optina, St.</b>	
10.110 . . . . . 249n	4.8 . . . . . 320n	<i>Counsels to Spouses and Par- ents</i> . . . . . 787	
	4.10 . . . . . 323n	<b>Andrew, Archbishop of Cae- sarea</b>	
<i>Hexaemeron</i> . . 114, 114n, . . 551, 553, 638, 883	<i>On the Decease of His Brother Satyrus</i>	<i>Commentary on the Apoca- lypse of John the Theolo- gian</i> . . . . . 933	
1.2 . . . . 127–29, 139	1.30 . . . . . 316n	30 . . . . . 317n	
1.5 . . . . 139, 158–59	2.63, 70 . . . . . 186	<b>Athanasius the Great, St.</b>	
1.7 . . . . . 149, 155n	2.85 . . . . . 155n	<i>Against the Heathen</i>	
1.8 . . . . . 150	<i>On the Duties of the Clergy</i>	41 . . . . . 217n	
1.9 . . . . . 151	1.25.121 . . . . . 347nn	<i>Commentary on the Psalms</i>	
1.10 . . . . . 442n	3.18.108 . . . . . 337n	Ps. 50:5 . . . 495n, 694,	
1.13 . . . . . 194	<i>On the Harmony of Matthew and Luke in the Geneal- ogy of Christ</i> . . . 631n	. . . . . 721n, 722	
1.15 . . . . . 145	<i>On the Mysteries</i>		
2.4 . . . . . 161n	3.10–11 . . . . . 341n		
2.5 . . . . . 152	3.11 . . . . . 344n		
3.3 . . . . . 164	4.24 . . . . . 345n		
3.4 . . . . . 165			
3.6 . . . . . 168			
3.10 . . . . . 185–86			
3.16 . . . . . 183			

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

- Defense of the Nicene Definition* . . . . . 302, 314, 927  
 11.6 . . . . . 134  
 12.10 . . . . . 314n  
 13.24 . . . . . 337n  
 14.26 . . . . . 721n  
 15.9–15 . . . 314n, 387n  
 15.13–14 . . . . 642n  
 15.23 . . . . . 320n  
 15.25 . . . . . 323  
 15.27 . . . . . 332n, 337n
- Four Discourses against the Arians*  
 1.20–21 . . . . . 217n  
 1.51 . . . . . 735n  
 2.2 . . . . . 190n, 217n  
 2.19 . . . 139n, 183–84n  
 2.21 . . . . . 217n  
 2.31 . . . . . 190n  
 2.48 . . . . . 117  
 2.48, 60 . . . . . 139  
 3.59–67 . . . . . 217n
- Life of St. Anthony* . . . 919
- On the Incarnation of the Word* . . . . . 919  
 2 . . . . . 132n  
 2–3 . . . . . 156n  
 3 . . . 156n, 189n, 692, . . . . . 694  
 4 . . . . . 739n  
 4–5 . . . 738, 738–39n  
 54 . . . . . 810n
- On the Passion and Crucifixion of the Lord* . . 249n, . . . . . 276n
- Athenagoras of Athens, St.**
- A Plea for the Christians*. 911  
 24–25 . . . . . 320n
- Augustine of Hippo, Blessed**
- Christian Instruction*  
 3.36.53 . . . . . 362n
- The City of God* . 115, 134n,
- Concerning the Nature of the Good: Against the Manichaeans*  
 26 . . . . . 156n  
 27 . . . . . 156n
- The Confessions* . 115n, 927  
 11.5 . . . . . 156n  
 12.7, 17, 22, 28 . . 217n  
 13.33 . . . . . 156n
- The Harmony of the Gospels*  
 2.3 . . . . . 631n
- Letters*  
 108 . . . . . 341n  
 164 . . . . . 341n  
 193 . . . . . 317n
- The Literal Meaning of Genesis* . . . . 115n, 134n  
 3.12 . . . . . 115n  
 4.22–35 . . . . . 140n  
 5.17 . . . . . 141n  
 5.20, 23 . . . . . 115n  
 6.2, 15 . . . . . 115n  
 9 . . . . . 721n  
 9.17 . . . . . 115n  
 9.19 . . . . . 347n
- On the Trinity* . . . . 115n
- The Soliloquies* . 115n, 927
- Tractates on the Gospel of St. John*  
 9.11 . . . . . 341n
- Barsanuphius of Optina, St.**
- Cell-notes 1892–1896*  
 . . . . . 653n
- Talks with Spiritual Children*  
 . . . 709–10, 795–96
- Barsanuphius the Great and John the Prophet, Sts.**
- Letters*  
 69 . . . . . 255n  
 605 . . . . . 31n
- Basil the Great, St.**
- Hexaemeron* . . 113, 113n, 114n, 442n, 502–4, 551–53, 601, 618, 638, . . 641, 883–84, 920  
 1.1 . . . . . 129  
 1.2 . . . . 471, 503–4n  
 1.5 . . . . . 158, 229  
 1.7 . . . . . 190n  
 1.11 . . . . . 189  
 2.1 . . . . . 148–49  
 2.2 . . . . . 504n  
 2.2–3 . . . . . 156n  
 2.3 . . . . . 155n  
 2.4–5 . . . . . 121n  
 2.6 . . . . . 150n  
 2.7 . . . . . 145–46  
 2.8 . 152–53, 442, 546n  
 3.2 . . . . . 145–46  
 3.3 . . . . . 471  
 3.3–4 . . . . . 161  
 3.7 . . . . . 161  
 3.9 . . . . . 121n  
 4.2 . . . . . 136–37  
 4.3 . . . . . 164

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

5.1 . . . . . 168	<b>Bede the Venerable, St.</b>	<i>Catena on 1 Peter</i>
5.2 . . . . . 182, 426		1 Pet. 3:18–42 . . . 342n
5.5 . . . . . 425	<i>Commentary on 1 and 2 Peter</i>	
5.5–6 . . . 166–67, 552	1 Pet. 3:20 . . . . . 337n	<i>Commentary on Romans</i>
5.6 . . . . . 138, 438	2 Pet. 2:5 . . . 334–35n	Rom. 5:18–19 . . 712–13
5.7 . . . . . 424, 426		Rom. 6:6 . . . . . 753
5.10 . . . 138, 438, 552	<i>Commentary on Genesis</i>	
6.1 . . . . . 137, 471	Gen. 1.1 . . . . . 448n	<i>Commentary on the Gospel of</i>
6.2–3 . . . . . 171	Gen. 1:10–13 . . . 194n	<i>St. John</i>
6.8 . . . . . 171	Gen. 1:29–30 . . . 704	6.1 . . . . . 211n
7.1 . . . . . 179, 439		
7.2 . . . . . 179	<i>Explanation of the Apocalypse</i>	<i>Commentary on the Prophet</i>
8.1 . . . . . 181	4 . . . . . 317n	<i>Isaiah</i>
9.1 . . 120–21, 434, 651		1.4 . . . . . 123n
9.2 . . . . 182–83, 427,	<i>Homilies on the Gospels</i>	5.6 . . . . . 706n
. . . . . 552–53, 685	1.12 . . 341n, 344n, 345n	
9.3 . . . . . 188	1.14 . . . . . 298n	<i>Glaphyra on Genesis</i>
9.6 . . . . . 199n		1.12 . . . . . 752n
		2.2 . . . . . 320n
		2.31 . . . . . 337n
		2.32, 36 . . . . . 341n
<i>Homily Explaining That God</i>	<b>Clement of Alexandria</b>	
<i>Is Not the Cause of Evil</i>	<i>The Instructor</i>	<i>Thesaurus on the Holy and</i>
6 . . . . . 694	3.2 . . . . . 320n	<i>Consubstantial Trinity</i>
7 . . . . . 746		15 . . . . . 217n
8 . . . . . 255n	<i>Stromateis</i>	
	2.16 . . . . . 217n	<b>Cyril of Jerusalem, St.</b>
	3.95 . . . . . 276n	<i>Catechetical Lectures</i> . . 114,
<i>The Long Rules</i>	6.16 . . . . . 140n	. . . . . 922
22 . . . . . 275n		2.7 . . . . . 288n, 431
<i>On the Holy Spirit</i>	<b>Cosmas of Maiuma, St.</b>	3.6 . . . . . 316n
16.38 . . . . 147n, 491n		4.18 . . . . . 740n
23.54 . . . . . 491n	<i>Canon of the Nativity of</i>	12.5 . . . . . 255n
	<i>Christ</i> . . . 652n, 938	12.15 . . . . . 280n
<i>On the Origin of Man</i> . . 113,	<b>Cyprian of Carthage, St.</b>	12.29 . . 242–43, 281n,
. . . . . 884		. . . . . 432
1.3–4 . . . . . 195–97	<i>On the Dress of Virgins</i>	12.30 . . . . . 431
1.16–17 . . . . . 200	. . . . . 320n	16.27 . . . . . 306n
1.19 . . . . . 206	<i>On Mortality</i> . . . . . 316n	17.10 . . . 341nn, 345n
2.2 . . . . . 213–14		
2.3 . . . . . 213	<b>Cyril of Alexandria, St.</b>	<b>Diadochus of Photiki, St.</b>
2.4 . . . . . 212		<i>On Spiritual Knowledge and</i>
2.5 . . . . . 205–6	<i>Against Julian</i>	<i>Discrimination</i> . . 931
2.6 . . . . . 707	29 . . . . . 197n	
2.6–7 . . . . . 207–8		

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

4 . . . . . 200n	2.17.3 . . . . . 692n	<i>Hymns on the Nativity</i>
25 . . . . . 698	2.20 . . . . . 257n	1.15 . . . . . 245n
29 . . . . . 698	2.23.2 . . . . . 264	1.16 . . . . . 212n
78 . . . . . 200n, 720n	2.25.1 . . . . . 276n	1.22–23 . . . . . 341n
79 . . . . . 481n	2.27.1–2.29.1 . . . . . 263–64	1.48 . . . . . 320n
89 . . . . . 200n	2.30.1 . . . . . 268	
<b>Dorotheus of Gaza, St.</b>	2.34.1 . . . . . 276n	<i>Interpretation of the Books of the Bible</i> . . . . . 113
<i>Teachings Profitable for the Soul (Spiritual Instruc- tions)</i> . . . . . 932	2.34.2 . . . . . 694	
1 . . . . . 251–52, 264–65, . . . . . 472–73	3.2.1 . . . . . 292	<i>Nisibine Hymns</i>
12 . . . . . 475	3.3.3 . . . . . 295	1.4 . . . . . 324n
	3.6.1 . . . . . 300	36.7 . . . . . 316n
	3.10.1 . . . . . 302	
	3.11.1 . . . . . 302	
	4.2.2 . . . . . 319	
	5.2.1 . . . . . 316n	<b>Epiphanius of Salamis, St.</b>
	6.1.1 . . . . . 324n	<i>Ancoratus</i> . . . . . 924
	6.2.1 . . . . . 319	54–64 . . . . . 446n
<b>Ephraim the Syrian, St.</b>	6.3 . . . . . 320n	
<i>Commentary on Genesis</i> . 19, . . . . . 883	6.3.1–3 . . . . . 319n	<i>Panarion</i> . . . . . 924
[FC chapter and section numbers]	6.4.1 . . . . . 319n	1.39.7 . . . . . 337n
1 . . . . . 147, 150	6.5.1 . . . . . 321n	32.6–8 . . . . . 341n
1.1 . . . . . 121	6.7.1–2 . . . . . 323	39.4 . . . . . 347n
1.1.1 . . . . . 436	6.9.2–3 . . . . . 332–33	39.6 . . . . . 303n
1.3.2 . . . . . 149	6.12.2 . . . . . 352n	39.8 . . . . . 360n
1.5.1 . . . . . 149	6.14.1 . . . . . 350	52.2 . . . . . 704–5
1.7 . . . . . 226	7.1.1 . . . . . 352	52.3 . . . . . 275n
1.8.1 . . . . . 194	7.3.1–2 . . . . . 354	63.4.10 . . . . . 446n
1.8.2 . . . . . 138, 436	7.3.1–3 . . . . . 354	64.4 . . . . . 276n
1.8.3–1.9.2 . . . . . 152	7.4.1 . . . . . 356n	64.65 . . . . . 276n
1.14.1–1.15.1 . . . . . 154	8.1.1 . . . . . 358	64.66 . . . . . 275n
1.22.1 . . . . . 167		65.4.9–65.5.4 . . . . . 158n
1.25.1 . . . . . 194	<i>Hymns against Heresies</i>	67.47 . . . . . 222n
1.27.2 . . . . . 188	19.1–8 . . . . . 320n	70.3 . . . . . 202n
1.31.2 . . . . . 209		78.18–19 . . . . . 267–68n
2.3.1 . . . . . 453	<i>Hymns on Faith</i>	
2.5.12 . . . . . 222	46.9 . . . . . 320n	
2.6.4 . . . . . 224		<b>Gregory of Nyssa, St.</b>
2.9.3–2.10.1 . . . . . 235	<i>Hymns on Paradise</i>	<i>Against Eunomius</i>
2.12.1 . . . . . 245, 436, 694	1.4 . . . . . 408n	1.26 . . . . . 156n, 217n
2.13.2–3 . . . . . 247	1.10–11 . . . . . 284	1.34 . . . . . 430, 431n
2.14 . . . . . 232n	1.11 . . . . . 320n	1.38 . . . . . 432n
2.14.2 . . . . . 249	<i>Hymns on the Epiphany</i>	2.13 . . . . . 718n
2.16.1 . . . . . 257	8.16 . . . . . 150n	3.1 . . . . . 216–17n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

3.3 . . . . . 144n	28.1 . . . . . 218, 554	6.16 . . . . . 337n
3.3-4 . . . . . 431n	28.1, 8 . . . . . 484	16.1 . . . 255n, 735n, 748
4.2 . . . . . 216-17n	29.1-2 . . . . . 218-19, . . . 484-85, 554-55	16.7 . . . . . 716-17
<i>Answer to Eunomius' Second     Book</i> . 430, 431n, 481	30.34 . . . . . 483, 691	16.11 . . . . . 713
<i>Apologia to His Brother Peter     on the Hexaemeron</i> . . . . . 113n, 155n	<i>On the Soul and the Resurrec-     tion</i> . . 114, 142-43, . . 165, 167, 187, 203n, . . 275n, 475n, 550-51, . . . . . 694, 741	16.25 . . . . . 723, 748
<i>Catechetical Oration (Great     Catechism)</i> . 114, 923	<i>On Those Who Have Fallen     Asleep</i> . . . . . 275n	16.31 . . . . . 750
5 . . . . . 189-90n	<i>On Virginity</i> 8 . . . . . 205	16.35 . . . . . 754
6 . . . . . 255n	12 . . 205, 275n, 475n, . . . . . 482, 739n	16.39 . . . . . 716
8 . . . . . 275n	<i>A Sermon for the Feast of the     Lights (On the Baptism     of Christ)</i> . . . . . 757	17.2 . . . . . 157n
25 . . . . . 810n		17.14 . . . . . 215n
35 . . . . . 746		18.2 . . . . . 215n
<i>On the Faith: To Simplicius</i> . . . . . 14, 431n		21.1 . . . . . 316n
<i>On the Holy Spirit (Against     the Macedonians)</i> 13 . . . . . 147n		22.7 . . . . . 347n
<i>On the Lord's Prayer</i> 4.2 . . . . . 694		31 . . . . . 692n
<i>On the Making of Man.</i> 114, . . . . . 625, 923		31.1 . . . . . 275n
1.5 . . . . . 144		31.12-13 . 694, 741-42
3 . . . . . 197n		37.8 . . . . . 203n
3.1 . . . . . 144		53.31 . . . . . 316n
7.3 . . . . . 707		57.2 . . . . . 215n
8.5 . . . . . 439-40		57.5 . . . . . 320n
8.7 . . . . . 143, 440		57.6 . . . . . 306n
12.10 . . . . . 714-15		57.9 . . . . . 341n
16.7-9 . . . . . 201-2		57.10 . . . . . 341n
16.10 . . . . . 199-200		58.8 . . . . . 215n
16.12 . . . . . 217n		60.3 . . . . . 215n
17 . . . . . 251, 721n		
17.1-3 . . . . . 694		
17.2 . . . . . 291n, 777		
18 . . . . . 207		
	<b>Gregory Palamas, St.</b>	
	<i>In Defense of the Holy Hesychasts (The Triads)</i> 1.1.6 . . . . . 466	<i>To the Most Reverend Nun Xenia</i> 8 . . . . . 740n
	1.1.11 . . . 466-67, 480	9 . . . . . 642n, 716
	1.1.12 . . . . . 467	10 . . . . . 717
	1.1.15 . . . . . 467	
	1.2 . . . . . 466	<i>Topics of Natural and Theo-     logical Science</i> 16 . . . . . 698
	1.3.36 . . . . . 772	21-22 . . . 155n, 157n
	2.1.5 . . . . . 467n	27 . . . . . 202n
	2.3.21-22 . . . . . 448	38-40 . . . . . 202n
	2.3.22 . . . . . 120	39 . . . . . 200n, 717
	<i>Homilies</i> . . . . . 884-85	49-50 . . . . . 230n
	4.6 . . . . . 337n	62 . . . . . 320n
	5.1 . . . . . 725	64 . . . . . 200n
	6.7-10 . . . . . 157n	103 . . . . . 190n
	6.10 . . . . . 215n	135 . . . . . 190n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

<b>Gregory the Sinaite, St.</b>	45.28 . . . . . 255n	10.28–29 . . 155n, 217n
<i>On Commandments and Doctrines</i>	<b>Hilarion (Troitsky), Archbishop of Verey, Hieromartyr</b>	<b>Ignatius (Brianchaninov), Bishop of the Caucasus, St.</b>
8 . . . 487, 692n, 693–94		
9 . . . 245n, 487–88, 694		
10 . . . 222–23, 456, 705	“The Incarnation and Humanity” . . . 799–801	<i>Homily on Man</i> . . . 708
11 . . . . . 456, 728		
46 . . . . . 487, 693, 766	“Holy Scripture, the Church, and Science” . . . . 825, 859–60	<i>Works</i>
60 . . . . . 698		Vol. 1 . . . . . 33
61 . . . . . 713–14		Vol. 3 . . . . . 507–8
81 . . . . . 693		
82 . . . . . 486–87		
130 . . . . . 458	<b>Hilary of Poitiers, St.</b>	<b>Irenaeus of Lyons, St.</b>
<b>Gregory the Theologian (of Nazianzus), St.</b>	<i>On the Councils</i>	<i>Against Heresies</i> . . . . 913
	10 . . . . . 217n	1.5.5 . . . . . 276n
	17 . . . . . 217n	1.22.1 . . . . . 146n
<i>Dogmatic Poems</i>	83 . . . . . 217n	2.2.5 . . . . . 146n
8 . . . . . 193, 216, 443, . . . . . 631n	<i>On the Trinity</i> . . . . 919	2.10.4 . . . . . 156n
	4.16 . . . . . 156n	2.14.4 . . . . . 156n
<i>Moral Poems</i>	5.4 . . . . . 217n	3.12.11 . . . . . 41n
14 . . . . . 477n	8.53 . . . . . 217n	3.20.1 . . . . . 739n
	11.8 . . . . . 217n	3.21.10 . . . . . 212n
<i>Orations</i>	12.16 . . . . 217n, 432n	3.22.4 . . . . . 280n
14.6–7 . . . . . 477–78	<b>Hippolytus of Rome, St.</b>	3.23.2 . . . . . 432n
18.17 . . . . . 347n		3.23.5 . . . . . 275n
28.17 . . . . . 337n	<i>Against Noetus</i>	4.Preface.4 . . . . 197n
28.18 . . . . . 316n	10 . . . . . 190n	4.18.3 . . . . . 298n
29.11 . . . . . 431	<i>Chronicle</i> . . . . . 315n	4.20.1 . . . . . 197n
31.11 . . . . . 431n	24–228 . . . . . 360n	4.36.4 . . . . . 320n
38.9–10 . . . 159n, 190n		4.38.1 . . . . . 232n
38.12 . . . 120, 446–47, . . . 487, 693, 699, 744	<i>Commentary on Daniel</i>	5.Preface. . . . . 810n
39.12 . . . . 431, 431n	4.35 . . . . . 317n	5.4.1 . . . . . 740n
39.13 . . . . . 255n	<i>Fragments on Genesis</i> . 155n	5.5.1 . . . . . 307n, 316n
40.45 . . . . . 768n		5.6.1–2 . . . . . 202n
41.4 . . . . . 316n	<i>On Christ and Antichrist</i>	5.15.2 . . . . . 211n
43.67 . . . . . 113n	43 . . . . . 317n	5.15.4 . . . . . 263n
43.70 . . . . . 316n	<i>The Refutation of All Heresies</i>	5.16.2 . . . . . 199n
44.4 . . . . . 141, 440	1.5 . . . . . 557n	5.18.3 . . . . . 146n
44.5 . . . . . 442–43		5.19.1 . . . . . 280n
45:6–7 . . . . 197–99		5.21.1 . . . 257n, 267n
45:8 . . . . . 226, 230, 699		5.23.6 . . . . . 743–44
		5.23.7 . . . . . 267n
		5.24.4 . . . . . 255n
		5.29.1 . . . . . 142n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

5.29.2 . . . . .	337n	<i>To Pammachius against John</i>	4.3 (4.7–8) . . . . .	161n
5.32.1 . . . . .	731	<i>of Jerusalem</i> . . . . .	6.4 (6.12) . . . . .	168
5.33.3–4 . . . . .	706n		6.4 (6.14) . . . . .	171
5.33.4 . . . . .	706	<b>John Cassian, St.</b>	7.3 (7.8) . . . . .	136, 177, 439
			7.3 (7.10) . . . . .	175–77
<i>Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching</i>		<i>Conferences</i>	7.5 (7.13) . . . . .	189
5 . . . . .	147n	3.7 . . . . .	8.2 (8.5) . . . . .	142, 440–41
12 . . . . .	232n	8.7.1–4 . . . . .	9.4 (9.8–9) . . . . .	454
13 . . . . .	245n, 694	8.20–21 . . . . .	10.5 (10.11) . . . . .	707
15 . . . . .	692	8.21.1 . . . . .	10.7 (10.18) . . . . .	192
16 . . . . .	255n	13.12 . . . . .	12.2 (12.4–6) . . . . .	210–11
18 . . . . .	320n	13.14 . . . . .	12.2 (12.5) . . . . .	410n
19 . . . . .	337n		12.5 (12.15) . . . . .	215
22 . . . . .	356	<i>Institutes</i>	12.5 (12.16) . . . . .	218
32 . . . . .	212n	4.30 . . . . .	13.2 (13.7, 9) . . . . .	216–17
			13.3 (13.13) . . . . .	124, 445
<b>Isaac the Syrian, St.</b>		<b>John Chrysostom, St.</b>	13.3–4 (13.13–14) . . . . .	221–22
<i>Ascetical Homilies</i>		<i>Commentary on the Psalms</i>	13.4 (13.14) . . . . .	488
29 . . . . .	663	6 . . . . .	13.4 (13.16) . . . . .	41
37 . . . . .	127, 562	9 . . . . .	13.4 (13.15–16) . . . . .	122,
52 . . . . .	458–59	110 . . . . .	. . . . .	224–25, 444–45
54 . . . . .	642n		13.4 (13.16) . . . . .	461–62
77 . . . . .	235n	<i>Eight Homilies on Genesis</i>	14.2 (14.6) . . . . .	130
		. . . . .	14.4–5 (14.18) . . . . .	697
<i>Directions on Spiritual Training</i>		1.3 . . . . .	14.5 (14.18–20) . . . . .	238
49 . . . . .	125–27	2 . . . . .	14.5 (14.19) . . . . .	705–6
		2.1–2 . . . . .	14.5 (14.20) . . . . .	444
		7 . . . . .	15.2–3 (15.6–7, 11) . . . . .	243
			15.2–3 (15.10–11) . . . . .	444
<b>Isaiah the Solitary, St.</b>		<i>Homilies on 1 Corinthians</i>	15.3 (15.12) . . . . .	697
<i>Homilies to the Disciples</i>		7.4 . . . . .	15.4 (15.14) . . . . .	84, 247,
2.1 . . . . .	473	17.2 . . . . .	. . . . .	249–50, 488,
2.2 . . . . .	473	34.7 . . . . .	. . . . .	694, 697
		37.4 . . . . .	16.1 (16.2) . . . . .	694
			16.1 (16.4) . . . . .	705–6
<b>Isidore of Seville, St.</b>		<i>Homilies on Genesis</i> . . . . .	16.2 (16.4) . . . . .	737n
<i>The Etymologies</i> . . . . .	934	. . . . .	16.4 (16.11) . . . . .	257
9.2 . . . . .	360n	. . . . .	16.5 (16.14) . . . . .	691, 716n
		[PG (FC) chapter and section numbers]	16.5 (16.14–15) . . . . .	259
		2.2 (2.5) . . . . .	16.5 (16.16) . . . . .	697
<b>Jerome, Blessed</b>		2.2 (2.6) . . . . .	16.5 (16.16–17) . . . . .	. . . . .
<i>Hebrew Questions on Genesis</i>		2.4 (2.11) . . . . .	. . . . .	392–93n
10.2–29 . . . . .	360n	3.3 (3.12) . . . . .	16.6 (16.18) . . . . .	231n
		. . . . .	17.1 (17.1) . . . . .	694–95
		. . . . .		



# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

17.1 (17.3–4) . . . 259–61	27.4 (27.12) . . . . . 349	<i>Homilies on 2 Corinthians</i>
17.2–3 (17.8, 13) . . . . .	27.4 (27.13) . . . . . 350	6.2 . . . . . 755–56
. . . . . 261–62	27.5 (27.13–17) . . . 350	
17.4 (17.17) . . . . . 269n	28.4 (28.11) . . . . . 352	<i>Homilies on Timothy</i>
17.5 (17.22) . . . . . 263	29.2 (29.6) . . . . . 352	9 . . . . . 776n
17.6 (17.24–25) . . . 266	29.6 (29.21) . . . 354, 354n	
17.7 (17.30) . . . . . 694	29.7 (29.26) . . . . . 356	<i>On the Creation of the World</i>
17.7–8 (17.30–31, 36) . . . . .	29.8 (29.30) . . . . . 356	5.5 . . . . . 225–26
. . . . . 268–69	30.2 (30.5) . . . . . 362n	5.5–6 . . . . . 225
17.9 (17.40–41) . . . 270,	30.3 (30.10) . . . . 365n	5.7 . . . . . 231
. . . . . 744–45	30.4 (30.11) . . . . . 367	5.8 . . . . . 243–45
17.9 (17.41) . . . . . 694		6.1 . . . . . 234–35
17.9 (17.42) . . . 270–71		6.2 . . . . . 253–54
18.1 (18.3) . . . . . 720	<i>Homilies on the Acts of the</i>	6.7 . . . . . 266
18.2 (18.5) . . . . . 720	<i>Apostles</i>	
18.3 (18.10) . . . . . 285–88	2 . . . . . 156n	<i>On the Cross and the Thief</i>
18.4 (18.12) . . . 204, 290,		1.2 . . . . . 663
. . . . . 722	<i>Homilies on the Gospel of St.</i>	
18.4 (18.12–13) . . . 694	<i>John</i>	<i>On the Name of the Cemetery</i>
18.4 (18.15) . . . . . 291	[NPNF section numbers]	<i>and on the Cross</i> . . . 249n
18.5 (18.21) . . . . . 295	25.2 . . . . . 245n, 754n	
18.6 (18.22–24) . . . . .	46.4 . . . . . 225n	<i>On the Priesthood</i> . . . . 925
. . . . . 295–98	48.1 . . . . . 255n	
19.3 (19.3) . . . . . 302	56.2 . . . . . 211n	<i>On the Statues</i>
19.3 (19.11) . . . . . 301	67.2 . . . . . 750	11.3 . . . . . 694, 721
20.1 (20.3) . . . . . 303n	71.3 . . . . . 324n	11.4 . . . . . 721
20.2 (20.6) . . . . . 305		
21.4 (21.13–14) . . . 317n	<i>Homilies on the Gospel of St.</i>	<i>On Virginity</i> . . . . . 885
22.2 (22.7) . . . . . 413n	<i>Matthew</i>	14–15 . . . . . 721n
22.2–3 (22.6–8) . . . 320n	1.6 . . . . . 41n	14.3, 5 . . . . . 695
22.5 (22.15) . . . . . 323	6.9 . . . . . 337n	15.2 . . . . . 722
23 (23) . . . . . 324n	8.5 . . . . . 356n	
23.1 (23.3) . . . . . 323n	20.6 . . . . . 337n	<i>John Damascene, St.</i>
24.3 (24.7–8) . . . . . 324		<i>Canon of Pascha</i> . . . . 652n
24.4 (24.13) . . . . . 328	<i>Homilies on Hebrews</i>	
24.5 (24.16) . . . . . 329	22.1–2 . . . . . 156n	<i>Canon of Theophany</i> . . . 736
25.2 (25.8–9) . . . . . 339	22.5 . . . . . 317n	
25.2 (25.10) . . . . . 337n		<i>Commentary on Romans</i> 731
25.5 (25.16) . . . . . 334n	<i>Homilies on Romans</i>	
25.6 (25.19–20) . . . 339	10 . . . . . 692n, 734,	<i>Homily on Holy Saturday</i>
25.6 (25.20) . . . . . 337n,	. . . . . 751–52, 754	26 . . . . . 753n
. . . . . 339–40	10.2 . . . . . 272	
26.3 (26.8–10) . . . . 342	14 . . . . . 728–31, 781n	<i>On the Orthodox Faith</i> . . 114,
26.4 (26.12) . . . . . 343–44	14.5 . . . . . 271–72, 456	. . . . . 551, 936
26.5 (26.16) . . . 347n, 349	19 . . . . . 347n	

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

- 1.2 . . . . . 657–58  
1.8 . . 190n, 216n, 431n  
1.12 . . . . . 189  
1.13 . . . . . 60n, 490n  
2 . . . . . 553  
2.1 . . . . . 546n  
2.2 . . . . . 189  
2.3 . 159n, 400n, 490n,  
. . . . . 739n, 757  
2.4 . . . . . 400n  
2.5 . . . . . 155n  
2.7 . 155n, 171n, 546n  
2.9–10 . . . . . 155n  
2.10 . 254n, 455, 704,  
. . . . . 706–7  
2.11 . 84, 224, 228, 230,  
. 234, 250, 691, 694,  
. . . . . 757  
2.11–12 . . . . . 229  
2.12 . 155n, 218, 481n,  
. . . 483, 691, 740n  
2.17 . . . . . 698  
2.28 . . . . . 734  
2.30 . . 228–29, 255n,  
. 400n, 431–32, 692n  
3.1 . . . . 716, 719–20  
3.27 . . . . . 749–50  
4.8 . . . . . 217n  
4.11 . . . . . 759  
4.14 . 432, 461, 631n,  
. . . . . 652n  
4.24 . 204, 245n, 721n,  
. . . . . 694  
4.25 . . . . . 352n  
4.26 . . . . . 317n
- The Fount of Knowledge* 551
- On Dragons* . . . 898, 898n
- On Heresies* . . . . 446n  
64 . . . . . 110, 446
- On the Two Wills in Christ*  
16 . . . . . 202n
- 30 . . . . . 202n
- Philosophical Chapters* . 551  
30 . . . . . 724
- John of Kronstadt, St.**
- New Stern Sermons*  
. . . . . 794–95
- Talks on the Days of Creation*  
. . . 116n, 184n, 502,  
. . . . . 504, 794
- Julius Africanus**
- Epistle to Aristides*  
1–3 . . . . . 631n
- Five Books of Chronography*  
. . . . . 315n
- Fragment 2 . . . . 320n
- Justin Martyr, St.**
- Apology*  
1.5 . . . . . 320n  
2.7 . . . . . 337n
- Dialogue with Trypho*  
19 . . . . . 347n  
62 . . . . . 197n  
100 . . . . . 280n  
119 . . . . . 347n  
124 . . . . . 692n  
128 . . . . . 197n
- On the Resurrection—Fragments*  
7 . . . . . 202n
- Justin (Popovich) of Celije, St.**
- Man and the God-man* . 733
- On the Divine-human Path*  
. . . . . 784, 810–12
- The Orthodox Church and Ecumenism* . . 809–10
- The Orthodox Philosophy of Truth: Dogmatics of the Orthodox Church*  
Vol. 3 . 732–33, 762–65
- Lactantius**
- Divine Institutes*  
2.15 . . . . . 320n  
6.10 . . . . 347n, 432n
- The Manner in Which the Persecutors Died*  
2 . . . . . 317n
- Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky), Archbishop of Simferopol, Hiero-confessor**
- “Science and Religion”. 809
- Macarius the Great, St.**
- Fifty Spiritual Homilies*. 923  
4.22 . . . . . 337n  
9.6 . . . . . 337n  
11.5 . 272, 456–57, 734  
24.2 . . . . . 713  
26.2 . . . . . 757  
26.9 . . . . . 642n  
49.4 . . . . . 217n
- On the Freedom of the Nous*  
150 . . . . . 86n
- On Patient Endurance and Discrimination*  
5 . . . . . 119–20, 446  
6 . . . . . 402n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

<b>Mark the Ascetic, St.</b>	<i>Opuscula</i> . . . . . 885	<b>Nectarios of Pentapolis, St.</b>
<i>On the Spiritual Law</i>	8 . . . . . 32n	<i>Sketch concerning Man</i> . 798
99 . . . . . 745	20 . . . . . 724	
	<i>Questions and Doubts</i>	<i>Study concerning the Immor-</i>
	92 . . . . . 701n	<i>ality of the Soul and the</i>
<b>Maximus the Confessor, St.</b>	1.3 . . . . . 722n	<i>Holy Memorial Services</i>
	I.28 . . . . . 701n	. . . . . 798–99
<i>Ad Thalassium</i> . . . . . 885		
1 . . . . . 475n	<i>Various Texts on Theology, the</i>	<b>Nicetas Stethatos</b>
2 . . . . . 774	<i>Divine Economy, and</i>	<i>On Spiritual Knowledge</i>
21 . . . . . 694	<i>Virtue and Vice</i>	4 . . . . . 202n
41 . . . . . 711–12	2.96 . . . . . 697	8 . . . . . 200n
42 . . . . . 723–25	4.33 . . . . . 695–96	
51 . . . . . 697	4.33–35 . . . . . 719	<i>On the Practice of the Virtues</i>
61 . . . . . 255n, 692n,	4.47 . . . . . 735	17–18 . . . . . 85n
. . . . . 695–96, 719,	5.72 . . . . . 696	
. . . . . 734–35, 745		
65 . . . . . 689		
	<b>Maximus the Greek, St.</b>	
<i>Ambigua</i> . . . . . 32n, 885		<b>Nicholas Cabasilas, St.</b>
7 . . . . . 217n, 477n, 724n	<i>Works</i>	<i>A Commentary on the Divine</i>
8 . . . . . 719	Vol. 2 . . . . . 735n	<i>Liturgy</i> . . . . . 945
10 . . . . . 694, 696, 718		
41 . . . . . 203n, 291n, 721n,	<b>Methodius of Olympus, St.</b>	<i>The Life in Christ</i> . . . . 945
. . . . . 774		2.[10] . . . . . 761n
42 . . . . . 198n, 212n, 219n,	<i>Extracts from the Work on</i>	4.[1] . . . . . 757
. . . . . 701n, 702	<i>Things Created</i>	4.[5] . . . . . 756
45 . . . . . 250n, 693–94,	2–5 . . . . . 217n	4.[18]. . . . . 759
. . . . . 699–701, 701n	7 . . . . . 190n	
<i>Epistles</i>	<i>From the Discourse on the Res-</i>	<b>Nicodemus of the Holy</b>
10 . . . . . 735	<i>urrection</i>	<b>Mountain, St.</b>
<i>Four Hundred Texts on Love</i>	1.2 . . . . . 276n	<i>A Handbook of Spiritual</i>
3.25 . . . . . 200n	1.4 . . . . . 275n	<i>Counsel</i> . . . . . 699, 948
3.27–28 . . . . . 739n	1.8 . . . . . 732	
4.3–4 . . . . . 190n	1.13 . . . . . 692n	<i>Unseen Warfare</i> . . 699, 714,
4.6 . . . . . 217n	3.9 . . . . . 222n	. . . . . 948
<i>Mystagogy</i>	<i>On the Resurrection</i> (as	<b>Nikolai (Velimirovich) of</b>
7 . . . . . 746n	quoted in the <i>Panarion</i>	<b>Zica, St.</b>
<i>On the Lord's Prayer</i> . 200n,	of St. Epiphanius of Sa- lamiis) . . . . . 222n	“Death Is Unnatural”
. . . . . 740		. . . . . 736–37, 784n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

<i>Homilies</i> Vol. 2 . . . 737–38, 805	<b>Peter Damascene, St.</b>	<i>Orations</i> . . . . . 935 2 . . . . . 281n, 768n
<i>The Prologue of Ohrid</i> Vol. 2 . . . . . 726	<i>A Treasury of Divine Knowledge</i> Book 1 . . . . . 402n	<b>Sozomen</b>
<i>Through the Prison Window</i> . . . . . 805–7	<b>Philaret, Metropolitan of Moscow, St.</b>	<i>Ecclesiastical History</i> 7.26 . . . . . 899
<i>Works</i> . . . . . 736–37	<i>Commentary on the Book of Genesis</i> . . 116n, 141n . . . . . 157n, 704	<b>Symeon Metaphrastes, St.</b>
<b>Nilus of Sinai, St.</b>	<b>Photius the Great, St.</b>	<i>Paraphrase of the Homilies of St. Macarius</i> . . . 86n, . . . . 402n, 717, 940
<i>Letters</i> . . . . . 928 2.223 . . . . . 123n	<i>Homilies</i> 5.7 . . . . . 212n 7.5 . . . . . 280–81n 9.5 . . . . . 432–33n 9.8 . . . . . 255n 12.3 . . . . . 255n	<b>Symeon the New Theologian, St.</b>
<b>Nilus of Sora, St.</b>	<b>Proclus of Constantinople, St.</b>	<i>Catechetical Discourses</i> 5.5 . . . . . 265n 5.7 . . . . . 250n, 694 15.1 . . . . . 694 25.4 . . . . . 694–95 26.4 . . . . . 694
<i>The Skete Rule</i> 9 . . . . . 226	<i>Homilies</i> 4 . . . . . 280n, 929	<i>The Discovered Works</i> (Russian: <i>Homilies</i> ; English: <i>The Sin of Adam and Our Redemption/ First-Created Man</i> ) . . 114, . . . 114n, 464n, 885–87, . . . 887n, 941n, 950 1.3 . . . . . 755–56 38.2 . . . . . 457 38.3 . . . . 274, 649–50 45.1 . . . 209, 398, 662 45.1–5 . . . . 463–64, . . . . . 488–89 45.2 . . . . . 273 45.2–3 . . . . . 274 45.3 . . . . . 573 45.4 . . . . 209, 273 45.5 . . . . . 399
<b>Oecumenius</b>	<i>Tome of Proclus</i> . . . . 929	
<i>Commentary on the Apocalypse</i> . . . . . 932 11.3–6 . . . . . 317n	<b>Seraphim of Sarov, St.</b>	
<b>Origen</b>	<i>Conversation of St. Seraphim of Sarov on the Aim of the Christian Life</i> . . . . . 949–50 5 . . . 215, 250, 479–80, . . . . 480n, 485–86, . . . . . 572, 694	
<i>Against Celsus</i> 6.50–51, 60–61 . . 140n	<i>Spiritual Instructions</i> . . 949	
<i>On First Principles</i> 2.8.3 . . . . . 701n	<b>Sophronius of Jerusalem, St.</b>	
<i>Selecta on Genesis</i> 29 . . . . . 222n	<i>Life of St. Mary of Egypt</i> . 935	
<b>Paisius (Velichkovsky), St.</b>		
<i>The Scroll</i> 2 . . . . . 227		

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

## *Ethical Discourses*

- 1.1 . . . 546n, 691, 694,  
                    702–4
- 1.2 . . . 690, 692n, 694,  
                    718, 728–29
- 1.3 . . . 753, 760–61
- 1.3–5 . . . . . 769
- 1.4 . . . . . 703–4
- 1.5 . . . 690, 694, 729,  
                    772
- 2.4 . . . . . 337n, 341n
- 2.7 . . 281n, 347n, 723
- 13 . . . . . 694

## **Symeon of Thessaloniki, St.**

- On the Sacraments*
- 38 . . . . . 721n

## **Tertullian**

- On the Apparel of Women*
- 1.2 . . . . . 320n
- On Idolatry*
- 9 . . . . . 320n
- On the Veiling of Virgins*
- 7 . . . . . 320n
- A Treatise on the Soul*
- 50 . . . . . 317n

## **Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver, Hieromartyr**

- Rejoice!* . . . . . 801–2

## **Theodore the Great Ascetic, St.**

- Theoretikon* . . . . 696–97

## **Theodore the Studite (the Confessor), St.**

- Canon of the Adoration of the  
Precious and Life-giving  
Cross*
- Kontakion . . . . . 759

## **Theodoret of Cyrus, Blessed**

- Ecclesiastical History* . . 930
- History of the Lovers of God*  
                    . . . . . 930

## *Letters*

- 181 . . . . . 347n
- On the Incarnation of the  
Lord*
- 6 . . 255n, 694, 745–46

- Questions on Genesis* . . 884
- 3 . . . . . 491n
- 3–4 . . . . . 158n
- 11.1 . . . . . 161n, 694
- 16 . . . . . 171n
- 18.1 . . . . . 706
- 19.2 . . . . . 197n
- 25 . . . . . 222n
- 26 . . . . . 228n
- 27 . . . . . 393n
- 32 . . . . . 254n
- 37.2 . . . . 203n, 205n
- 39 . . . . . 275n, 276n
- 40 . . . . . 288n
- 43 . . . . . 303n
- 45 . . . . . 317n
- 47 . . . . . 320n, 412n
- 52 . . . . . 342
- 53 . . . . . 347n
- 55 . . . . . 329n
- 56 . . . . . 352n
- 58 . . . . . 356n

## *Questions on Joshua*

- 1 . . . . . 123n

## **Theoleptus, Metropolitan of Philadelphia, St.**

## *Texts*

- 4 . . . . . 85n

## **Theophan the Recluse, St.**

## *Collected Letters*

- Vol. 2 . . . . . 792, 794
- Vol. 7 . . . . . 792

- Commentary on the First  
Eight Chapters of the  
Epistle of the Holy Apos-  
tle Paul to the Romans*  
                    . . . . . 731

## *Contemplations and Reflec- tions* . . . . . 790–92

- Homilies on Feasts of the Lord  
and the Theotokos, and  
Festal Days* . . 793–94

- Thoughts for Each Day of the  
Year* . . . . . 789–90

## **Theophilus of Antioch, St.**

- To Autolycus* . . . . . 912n
- 1.25 . . . . . 232n
- 2.4 . . . . . 156n
- 2.10 . . . . . 217n
- 2.15 . . . . . 168n
- 2.17 . . 705–6, 731–32
- 2.18 . . . . . 197n
- 2.19 . . . . . 704
- 2.24 . . . . . 692n
- 2.27 . . . . . 692n

# INDEX OF WORKS BY SAINTS AND EARLY CHURCH WRITERS

3.18 . . . . . 335n	<i>Commentary on Romans</i> . .	<i>Explanation of the Holy Gos-</i>
3.18–19 . . . . . 337n	. . . 731, 731n, 735n	<i>pel according to St. John</i>
3.24–30 . . . . . 315n		Jn. 9:6–7 . . . 211–12n
3.26 . . . . . 156n		
<b>Theophylact of Ohrid and</b>	<i>Explanation of the Holy Gos-</i>	<b>Vladimir (Bogoyavlensky),</b>
<b>Bulgaria, Blessed</b>	<i>pel according to St. Luke</i>	<b>Metroplitan of Kiev and</b>
	Lk. 3:23–28 . . . 631nn	<b>Gallich, Hieromartyr</b>
	Lk. 9:6–7 . . . 211–12n	
<i>Commentary on 1 Peter</i>	Lk. 24:13–24 . . . 771n	<i>Where Is True Happiness?</i>
1 Pet. 3:20 . . . . . 337n	Lk. 24:36–44 . . . 768	. . . . . 796–97



Righteous Noah.  
*Fresco from Sopocani Monastery, Serbia, 1263–1268.*

# GENERAL INDEX

*Page numbers for illustrations are in boldface italics.*

- Aaron, Righteous, **565**
- Abel (son of Adam), Righteous, 114, 288, 290, **293**, **299–300**, 299–302, 305, **310**, **567**, 677
- Church commemoration of, 565n
- generation of, different from the creation of Adam, 144n, 245n, 430
- historicity of, 304, 662, 662n
- murder of, **279**, **294**, **296–97**, 298, 298nn, **416**
- sacrifice of, **290**, 291–92, 292nn, **294**, 295, 348
- spoken of by Christ, 298n, 662n, 776n
- as a type of Christ, 298n, 752n
- Aberdeen Bestiary*, illumination from, **934**
- abiogenesis, 54, 789, 789n, 843. *See also* evolution: of the first cell, hypothetical
- abortion, 33
- Abraham, Patriarch, 314, 325, 351, 356n, 368, **369**, 476, **565**
- absurdism, philosophy of, 595, 595n
- Academy of Asian Studies, San Francisco, 26
- Access Research Network, 888
- Acts & Facts*, 49, 380, 680, 903n
- Adam, 114, **309**, **418**, 433, 492–93, **496**, **566–67**, 601, 638, 669, **770**, 885–86, 907
- banishment of, from Paradise (*see* Paradise: banishment of Adam and Eve from)
- begets children after the fall, 288, **289**, 290, 302–5, 431, 431n
- blamed for not guiding Eve, 269n
- body and physical condition of, before the fall (*see* man [humanity]: body and physical condition of, before the fall)
- body and physical condition of, changed at the fall (*see* man [humanity]: body and physical condition of, changed at the fall)
- and Christ, parallels and comparisons between, 211–12n, 249n, 252, 257n, 263n, 277–78, 281–82, 281n, 394–95, 395n, 403, 432, 461, 473, 482, 489, 573, 631n, 723, 751–52, 751–52nn, 762–64, 769, 774–77, 782–83nn (*see also* Jesus Christ, Lord: as the Second or New Adam)
- Church commemoration of, **565**, 565, 565n
- clothed with a garment of skin (*see* “garments of skin”)
- clothed with glory (*see* man [humanity]: clothed with glory and wrapped in grace before the fall)
- consequences of the fall of (*see* fall of man)
- corruption of the nature of (*see* nature/essence of man: change/corruption of)
- created physically mature, 232n, 249
- creation of, 85n, 117, 117n, 140n, 144n, 146, **191**, 192–94, 194n, 198n, 209–19, 211–12n, **213–14**, 215n, 226, 240, 245n, 247, **248**, 283, 303n, 314, 393–94, 410, 431, 443–45, 446n, 449, 465, 479–81, 483–87, 483n, 553–56, 623, 670–72, 692, 703, 719, 815n (*see also* man [humanity]: body and soul of, created simultaneously; man [humanity]: created in grace)
- creation of, compared with the creation of Eve, 245n, 303n, 431n
- creation of, compared with the virgin birth of Christ, 212n, 281n, 631n



## GENERAL INDEX

### Adam (*continued*)

creation of, distinguished from the birth of his descendants, 115n 117–18, 117n, 144n, 430–32, 431n, 432–33n, 438, 449, 465, 555–56, 556n, 625, 631n, 671–72, 781n

death of (*see* fall of man: man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at)

dialogue of, with God, 261–65, 265n, 269–71, 295, 298

Eve created from the rib of (*see* Eve: creation of)

as an “evolved beast,” false conception of, 44, 240, 417, 423, 428n, 449–51, 465, 472, 495, 624, 644, 660, 662, 664, 671–72

as the first-created man, 84–85, 210, 301, 333, 431, 432n, 672, 693

genealogy from, 304, 306, 630, 631n, 642, 661–62, 672

goes to hell at death and is raised from hell by Christ, 106, 662, 723, 758, 759

historicity of, 41n, 74, 387–88, 446n, 447, 450, 455, 486, 564–70, 637, 662, 672–73, 751–52n, 775–76, 776n, 778, 782–83nn

immortality and incorruption of (*see* immortality: of man’s body before the fall [conditional]; incorruption: of man’s body before the fall [conditional])

innocence of, 228, 239

life-span and historical dating of, 163, 163–64n, 302, 306, 314, 324, 358, 387–88, 450, 642, 642n, 649, 653, 663, 672

as lord and king of creation, with dominion over the creatures, 209, 235, 235n, 238–39, 250, 272, 333, 333–34n, 349, 456–57, 463, 703, 705–7, 734 (*see also* man [humanity]: dominion over the lower creation of)

names the animals (*see* animals: named by Adam)

names Eve, 247, 274–75

nature of: *see* nature/essence of man and Noah, comparisons and parallels between, 323, 333, 333–34n, 347, 347nn, 349–50, 352, 358

“opening of the eyes” of, 257, 259

original occupation of, 226

in Paradise, 220, 226–30, 234–35, 247, 249n, 250–51, 456, 463–64, 488–89, 493, 695, 885

outside Paradise, 283–85, 284, 286–87, 288, 288n, 290, 406, 408

as the progenitor of the human race, 117, 117n, 198, 347, 347nn, 352, 358, 394, 432n, 662, 662n, 725

as prophet, 247, 249, 254n, 392n, 396–97

punishment of/sentence on, 268–71, 276n, 278–79, 300–301, 348, 398, 548, 708, 719, 742–45

regaining the original state of, 239, 251–52, 333, 395–96, 472–73, 572–73, 756–57

relationship of, with God, 85n, 86, 229, 250

self-justification of/lack of repentance in, 263–65, 265n, 268

sorrow and repentance of, 248, 279, 284, 286, 288, 288n, 290, 299–300, 416

spiritual death of (*see* fall of man: man experienced spiritual death/death of the soul [“stripping of grace”] at)

spiritual immaturity of, 230–31, 232n, 392–93

state originally possible for, if he had not fallen, 252, 391–94, 488–89, 702–3, 764–65, 774

temptation of, 16, 159, 227, 231, 233, 248, 254, 254n, 255n, 256–57, 257n, 270n, 280, 392–93, 392–93n, 400–401, 444, 737n, 744–45

transgression/disobedience of, 43, 74, 86, 135, 233, 251–52, 254, 256, 258, 260, 270n, 278, 301, 392, 392–93n, 454–57, 461, 463, 465, 473, 564, 624, 649–51, 698, 712–13, 723, 725, 734,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 745, 751, 755, 823, 885 (*see also* fall of man)
- tries to hide from God, 159, 261, 261, 262, 263n, 277
- virginity and dispassionateness of (*see* man [humanity]: virginity and dispassionateness of, before the fall)
- wisdom and mind of, before the fall (*see* man [humanity]: wisdom and mind of, before the fall)
- Afanasiev, Victor
- Elder Barsanuphius of Optina*, 899
- Africa, 383, 384n, 469, 844, 846, 917
- Agassiz, Louis, 24, 824
- age of the world, 45, 65, 67, 77, 115–16, 184n, 314–15, 314n, 315n, 317, 347n, 370, 372, 387, 387n, 450, 459, 463, 513, 516n, 518, 533, 541, 637, 641–63, 642n, 649, 663, 672, 680, 868, 888n, 893–95, 901–2, 909. *See also* chronology, Biblical; evolutionary/uniformitarian time scale; genealogies, Old Testament; genealogy of Christ
- agnosticism/agnostics, 22, 54, 57, 60, 537, 593n, 610, 657, 667, 886. *See also* atheism/atheists
- air, 146, 151, 153, 163, 250, 486, 853, 899
- creation of, 154, 155n
- creatures of (*see* birds)
- of the first-created world, 704
- Albright, William F.
- “Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands,” 358n
- Alleuts, 470n
- Alexander of Alexandria, St., 217n, 916, 917–18
- Alexander of Hales, 494
- Alexander the Great, 362
- Alexandria, 388, 913, 915, 917–18, 929, 951
- Alexy, Archbishop of Orekhovo-Zuevo, 67n, 68
- Alexy II, Patriarch of Moscow and All Russia, 66, 70–72
- Alferov, Fr. Timofey
- “Dragons ... Animals, Not Apparitions,” 898–99
- Evolution or Corruption?*, 909–10
- Natural History*, 910
- Orthodox Worldview and Contemporary Natural Science, The*, 898n, 910
- “St. John Damascene on Dragons,” 898, 898n
- Two Cosmogonies*, 182n
- Alferov, Zhores, 877
- allegorical interpretation of Scripture. *See* Scriptural interpretation
- Altukhov, Y. P., 71
- Ambrose of Milan, St., 38, 108, 113–14, 150, 161n, 168n, 238, 275n, 316n, 320n, 551, 553, 601, 638, 883, 923–24, 924, 926
- on Adam and Christ, 249n
- on the angelic powers, 158–59
- on Cain and Abel, 114
- on creation having been made for man, 142n, 323n, 729n
- on the creation of Eve, 240, 242, 245n
- on the distinction between the kinds of creatures, 183–86, 184n, 427–28n, 515, 670, 674
- on the fall of man and its consequences, 255–56, 261–63
- on the genealogy of Christ, 631nn
- on God’s acts of creation, 138–39, 145, 149–52, 155n, 164–65, 168, 173, 179, 194, 546
- on the length of the Six Days, 138n, 442n
- on Noah and the Flood, 337n, 341n, 344n, 345n, 347nn
- on Paradise, 114, 220–21, 255
- on the revelation given to Moses, 127, 129
- Ambrose of Optina, St., 787, 788
- American Biology Teacher*, 91n, 575n, 582n
- American Civil Liberties Union (A.C.L.U.), 48, 379n
- American Journal of Science*, 372n
- American Scientist*, 525n
- amphibians, 520n, 526n
- creation of, 179
- Ananias, Holy Youth, 565
- Anaximander of Miletus, 557n, 823

## GENERAL INDEX

- Andree, Richard, 335n
- Andrew, Archbishop of Caesarea, 317n, 933
- Andrew the Fool for Christ of Constantino-  
ple, St., 223, 390, 399, 399n, 403
- Andreyev, I. M.  
    *Orthodox Apologetic Theology*, 112n  
    "Scientific Knowledge and Christian  
    Truth," 548n
- angels, 121n, 127, 140n, 141n, 190, 280n,  
    378, 408, 458, 562, 749, 759, 766n,  
    773, 806, 941  
    cannot beget human beings, 319–20, 413n  
    comparative corporeality and incorporeal-  
    ity of, 400n, 490, 490–91n, 770,  
    770–71n  
    creation of, 158–59, 158n, 159n, 197–98,  
    291n  
    distinction between the kinds of, 158,  
    183n  
    dwell in heaven, 757  
    fallen (*see* demons [fallen angels]; devil [the  
    enemy, Satan])  
    image of God in, 202n  
    immortality of, 739n  
    immutability of, after choice of good or  
    evil, 400n  
    incorruption of, 732  
    and man, before the fall, 228, 250  
    man as the link between the material world  
    and, 710–11  
    nature of, 490, 739n  
    not the "sons of God," 319–20, 320n,  
    412–13, 412n, 413n  
    present activity of, 491  
    Prophet Moses made equal to, 129  
    state of, likened to the state of man before  
    the fall, 84, 198, 202, 204, 228, 245n,  
    247, 251, 290, 291n, 488, 492, 495,  
    659, 694–95, 711, 714, 720, 722, 765,  
    777  
    state of, likened to the state of man in the  
    general resurrection, 174, 208, 251,  
    548, 772, 777  
    vision of, 458, 548, 918  
    *See also* Cherubim
- anger, 206–7, 275n, 300, 400, 402, 495  
    of God, 123, 266, 266n, 268, 712, 712n  
    (*see also* anthropomorphic expressions  
    concerning God)
- Anglicanism. *See* Church of England (Angli-  
canism)
- animals/beasts/irrational creatures, 121, 127,  
    329n, 389, 458, 562, 656n, 889  
    appreciation for, 83, 697  
    aboard the Ark, 325, 328, 328–29, 330,  
    331–33, 332nn, 333–34n, 335n,  
    338–39, 342, 345, 347, 352n  
    as beheld in Divine vision, 458  
    brought into Paradise, 141, 234–35, 238,  
    398, 444, 454  
    changed and became corruptible as a result  
    of man's fall, 83, 208, 253, 265–66,  
    301, 450–57, 452n, 464, 548, 573,  
    649, 651–52n, 707, 727, 731–34, 738,  
    779  
    "clean" and "unclean," 329, 331, 347–48  
    created for the sake of man, 323n, 455, 729  
    (*see also* created order: made for the sake  
    of man)  
    created with the appearance of age,  
    193–94, 194n  
    creation of, 136, 139, 141n, 142, 154,  
    155n, 157n, 168, 171n, 175, 176, 177,  
    177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 188, 193–94,  
    194n, 210, 212, 234, 434, 437, 438–40,  
    440n, 449, 453, 455, 455n, 517, 520,  
    547, 552–53, 686, 707n  
    death of, during the Flood, 323, 323n,  
    327, 335n, 337n, 339–40, 344, 348,  
    897  
    definition of the Biblical "kinds" of,  
    181–85, 184n  
    definition of "species" of, 181n  
    distinctness and fixity of the kinds of, 49,  
    71n, 92, 94–96, 115n, 144, 157n, 168,  
    179, 181–88, 183–84nn, 382, 389,  
    427–28, 515, 519, 519n, 529, 548–53,  
    618, 643, 674  
    domestic, 83, 238, 266  
    evolutionism places man on the same qual-

## GENERAL INDEX

- itative level as, 107–8, 219, 512–13n, 660, 796–98, 806, 819, 860
- as examples in moral teaching, 552, 686
- fossils of (*see* fossils)
- God's covenant with, after the Flood, 163, 350
- growth and development of, 111, 192, 206, 429, 687
- hypothetical evolution of, 23, 34, 98, 102, 144, 381, 388, 423–30, 427–28n, 516–29, 569, 633, 670, 674, 779–80, 823–56
- hypothetical evolution of man from (*see* man [humanity]: hypothetical evolution of)
- "language" of, 250
- man as qualitatively different from, 142, 212, 219, 234, 247, 475, 477, 479–80, 660, 796–98, 819
- man could eat, after the Flood, 163–64n, 329, 329n, 349–50
- man's dominion over, 238, 269, 272–73, 333–34n, 349, 454, 456–57, 463–64, 734
- named by Adam, 232, 234–35, **236–37**, 238, 247, 249–50, 392, 396–98, 444, 454, 697, 705–6, 898
- offered in sacrifice after the Flood, **348**, 348
- once lived in now-Arctic regions, 162, 405, 405nn
- as representing the Gentiles, 341n
- as representing the passions, 206–7, 238, 252
- scientific knowledge concerning, 459, 502, 504, 685
- skins of (*see* "garments of skin")
- state of, before the fall, 208, 235n, 238–39, 266, 333, 334n, 398, 454–57, 463–64, 573, 602, 649, 705–8, 706n, 731–32
- state of, beyond the general resurrection, 271, 274, 399, 464, 573, 602, 706, 706n, 731–32
- submitted to and lived in harmony with man before the fall, 85, 235n, 238–39, 253, 254n, 266, 269, 272–73, 333, 334n, 454–57, 463–64, 705–8, 734
- terrestrial, 188, 504, 686
- transmigration of souls into, false idea of (*see* reincarnation/transmigration of souls)
- variation within the kinds of, 102, 382, 424–25, 515, 519
- vegetarian before the fall, 162, 207–8, 453–54, 706–8
- what man has in common with, 143–44, 201–2, 202n, 205, 207, 238, 240, 291, 394, 429, 475n, 479, 488, 714
- See also* amphibians; apes; bears; birds; cattle (oxen); dinosaurs; fish; horses; lions; mammals; mammoths; reptiles; sea monsters; snakes; whales
- Anna, Righteous, mother of the Most Holy Mother of God, 432–33n
- Annunciation, **106**
- Answers in Genesis, 680n
- Answers Research Journal*, 37n
- Antarctica, 405n
- anthropology, 84, 282, 568, 625, 784, 791, 798, 807, 811–12, 836
- Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic, 41n, 42, 419, 465, 475, 690, 796, 810–11
- anthropomorphic expressions concerning God, 109, 122–23, 145–46, 243, 342, 445, 671, 712n. *See also* anger: of God; Scriptural interpretation: where not to be literal in
- Antichrist, 38, 60, 282, 595, 597, 611, 655, 656n, 825, 914
- antimatter, 547, 591, 591–92n
- Antioch, 315n, 911, 925, 930–31
- apes, 94, 98, 840
- alleged descent of, from men, 678, 678n
- alleged descent of man from, 70, 107, 240, 282, 383–85, 383–84n, 385n, 417, 469–70, 472, 480, 486, 495–97, 512–13n, 527, 543, 577n, 618, 644, 678, 678n, 780, 787, 798, 803–4, 806, 809, 812–13, 812n, 836–38, 864
- aboard the Ark, 332

## GENERAL INDEX

- Apocalypse (Revelation), book of, 34n, 108, 130–31, 159, 276, 317n, 402n, 411, 685, 932–33
- apologetics/apologists, Christian, 115, 315n, 557n, 672, 799, 820, 908–9, 911–12, 917, 923, 928, 939, 950
- Apologia Educational Ministries, 907
- apostasy/apostates, 28, 50, 302, 465, 492, 497–98, 595
- Apostles (disciples of the Lord), Holy, 31–32, 31n, 41n, 211n, 315, 350, 356, 391, 403, 749, 762, 766, 768, 769, 771, 782, 822, 912n
- Aquinas, Thomas, 492–94, 493n, 572  
*Summa Theologica*, 492, 494–95n, 618, 715n, 721n
- Ararat, mountains of, 343
- Arcadius, Emperor, 928
- Archaeopteryx*, 526n, 833–34
- archeology, 358n, 659n, 893
- Arctic, 405, 405n, 826n
- ARCTUR Geological Research Laboratory, 67, 882
- Arianism/Arius, 139, 557, 917, 919–23, 929, 934
- Ark, 303n, 327–29, **330**, 335, 337n, **340**, 340, 342–43, 344n, 345, **346**, 347, 347n, **348**, 350, 354n, 910  
 building of, 325, **326–27**  
 calling of animals into, 330, 332–33, 338–39  
 capacity of, 332, 332n  
 chastity preserved in, 352, 352n  
 dinosaurs in, 897, 899  
 “kinds” of animals in, 332n  
 size of, 325, 325n  
 as a type of the Church, 341, 341n  
 as a type of the Mother of God, 341n  
 wood of, as a prefiguration of the Cross, 341n
- Arkell, W. J.  
*Jurassic Geology of the World*, 405n
- Arsenius, hermit, teacher of St. Gregory the Sinaite, 944
- artificial selection. *See* breeding, selective
- asceticism/ascetics, 82–83, 85–86, 85n, 115, 226, 251–52, 473, 481, 490, 507, 597n, 656n, 801, 816, 818, 919, 930, 939–40, 948, 950
- writings on, 85n, 251, 920, 923, 925, 928, 933, 940, 944  
*See also* desert dwellers/desert fathers
- Asia/Asians, 405n, 470n, 836–37, 874. *See also* China/Chinese people; Japanese people
- Asia Minor, 919, 935
- Assyria, 224, 362
- astronomy, 70, 75, 75n, 110, 173, 371, 374, 533n, 536, 682, 901–6
- astrophysics, 376n, 902, 906
- Athanasius the Great, St., 114, 217n, 316n, 432n, 735n, 810, **918**, 919  
 on Adam and Christ, 249n  
 on the creation of Adam, 117–18, 117n, 430, 555–56, 670  
 on creation out of non-being, 156n  
 on each kind of creature preserving its own essence, 183–84n  
 on the “garments of skin,” 275–76n  
 on God’s acts of creation, 139, 139n  
 on God’s motive in creating, 189–90n  
 on man’s incorruption before the fall, 494–95n, 692, 694, 722, 722n, 738–41, 738–39nn, 741n  
 on non-Christian theories of origins, 132n, 156n  
 on sexual procreation as not originally intended for man, 291n, 494–95n, 721n, 722, 722n, 741n
- atheism/atheists, 42n, 60, 67n, 376, 501, 506, 537, 580, 653n, 886  
 and evolutionism, 36, 36–37n, 42n, 63–64, 72, 94, 186, 379, 451, 514, 558–60, 575n, 579, 582–83, 582n, 606–7, 610, 614, 621, 657, 678n, 791n, 802, 824n, 891–92  
 and Marxism/Communism, 64, 186, 558, 599n, 802, 819  
*See also* agnosticism/agnostics
- Athenagoras of Athens, 320n, 412, 911

## GENERAL INDEX

- Athos, Mount, 656n, 813–14, 939, 944, 946–48  
 icons from, 126, 294, 322, 369, 425, 441, 912, 916, 918, 920–21, 924–28, 932, 936–37, 940, 943, 946
- ATP (adenosine triphosphate), 843
- Augustine, Blessed, 91, 115, 156nn, 217n, 283, 302, 317n, 337n, 341nn, 475–76, 631n, 661, 926, 926–27  
 on the Biblical chronology, 115n, 314, 314n, 387, 387n, 642, 642n, 672  
 on the creation of the world, 115n, 134, 134n, 140–41n, 545  
 on the dispersion of the peoples, 362n  
 on human sexual procreation, 721n  
 on the kinds of creatures taken aboard the Ark, 332n  
 on man's conditional immortality in the beginning, 547, 547n  
 Orthodox approach to, 32n, 115n  
 on the "sons of God," 412n, 320n
- Aurobindo, Sri, 34n, 497n
- Austin, Steven A., 866  
 "Excess Argon within Mineral Concentrates from the New Dacite Lava Dome at Mount St. Helens Volcano," 866  
*Footprints in the Ash*, 900  
*Grand Canyon: Monument to Catastrophe*, 373n, 864n, 866, 900  
 "Sea's Missing Salt, The," 532–33n
- Australia/Australians, 54, 571n, 680, 860, 902
- Australian Aboriginal peoples, 335n, 837, 898
- Australopithecus*, 383, 383–84n, 836–37, 864
- Averky (Taushev), Archbishop of Syracuse and Abbot of Holy Trinity Monastery, Jordanville  
*Apocalypse in the Teachings of Ancient Christianity, The*, 402n
- Ayala, Francisco J.  
 "Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except in the Light of Evolution: Theodosius Dobzhansky: 1900–1975," 575n
- Azarias, Holy Youth, 565
- Babel. *See* Tower of Babel
- Babylon, 125, 334–35, 360, 362, 362n, 367, 683
- bacteria, 95, 98, 525, 826, 830–31n, 844–47, 876
- Baer, Karl Ernst von, 64
- Baha'i Faith, 654
- Bailey, Alice, 34n  
*Externalization of the Hierarchy, The*, 593n
- Baker, Mace  
*Real History of Dinosaurs, The*, 895–900, 907
- Baptism, Holy, 150, 228n, 341, 341n, 344n, 345n, 574, 657n, 749n, 754–56, 754n, 913–14, 919, 926, 931. *See also* Mysteries, Holy
- Barlaam of Calabria, 447–48, 466, 468, 491, 661, 944
- Barsanuphius of Optina, St., 795, 795  
 on the cosmos before the fall, 82, 709–10, 786, 796, 905–6  
 on dragons, 899  
 on evolutionism, 64, 84, 108n, 795–96  
 on the laws of nature, 653n
- Barsanuphius the Great and John the Prophet of Gaza, Sts., 255n, 656n, 930, 931  
 on the teaching of the saints, 31n, 447n
- Basil the Great, St., 30, 38, 91, 108, 113–14, 113n, 114n, 425, 433, 442n, 445, 551, 601, 638, 651, 883–84, 919–23, 920, 940  
 on the absence of carnivory and death before the fall, 207–8, 707, 707n  
 on the angelic powers, 158, 490–91  
 on the command "Be fruitful and multiply," 205–6, 205n  
 on the creation of man, 195, 197, 200, 212–14  
 on the distinction between the kinds of creatures, 179, 181–83, 183n, 184n, 424–27, 427–28n, 552–53, 670, 674  
 on the fall of man and its consequences, 255n, 275n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Basil the Great, St. (*continued*)
- on the false notion of pre-eternal and uncreated matter, 156n, 504n
  - on the firmament, 160–61, 161n, 404
  - on God “speaking” in the first chapter of Genesis, 109n, 145–46
  - on God’s acts of creation, 136–38, 145–46, 148–49, 152–53, 155n, 166–68, 168n, 171, 179, 181, 188, 438–39, 546, 552–53, 686
  - on the grandeur of God’s creation, 189
  - on the Holy Trinity as Creator, 147n, 150n, 195, 197
  - on the image of God in man, 200
  - on the length of the Six Days, 138n, 442, 545, 546n
  - on man’s dominion, 206
  - and natural science, 439, 503–5, 618, 622–23, 641, 674, 685–86
  - on non-Christian theories of origins, 471, 503–4, 503–4n
  - on not reducing Genesis to an allegory, 40, 120–21, 121n, 434
  - on the origin of death, 746
  - on Paradise, 229
  - on the revelation given to Moses, 129–30, 471
  - on the Son of God as the image of the Father, 199n
- Basilosaurus*, 835n
- bats, 834–35
- Batten, Don
- “Age of the Earth,” 893, 902
  - Creation Answers Book, The*, 524n, 895–96, 898–900
  - One Blood: The Biblical Answer to Racism*, 892
- bears, 206, 239, 239, 333n, 405n, 835
- varieties of, 181n
- Beck, Don, 34n
- Bede the Venerable, St., 317n, 935–36, 936
- on Abel and Christ, 298n
  - on the Ark and the Flood, 334–35n, 337n, 341n, 344n, 345n, 409n
  - on God’s first creations being fashioned in mature form, 194n
  - on plants before the fall, 704
  - on upholding the historical meaning of Scripture, 448n
- Behe, Michael J., 59n, 842, 842n
- Darwin’s Black Box*, 57, 97, 97n, 381n, 831n
  - “Reply to My Critics,” 831n
- Benedict XVI, Pope, 571n
- Bentham, Jeremy, 536
- Berdyayev, Nicholas, 597n, 600
- Bergman, Jerry
- “Did Darwin Plagiarize His Evolution Theory?,” 893
  - Slaughter of the Dissidents*, 72n
  - “Vestigial Organs” Are Fully Functional, 522n
  - “Why Orthodox Darwinism Demands Atheism,” 37n
- Bergson, Henri, 34n
- Berkeley, California, 56, 102
- Berlinski, David, 857
- Devil’s Delusion: Atheism and Its Scientific Pretensions, The*, 853n
- Berry, William B. N.
- Growth of a Prehistoric Time Scale Based on Organic Evolution*, 370
- Berthault, Guy, 571n
- “Experiments on Lamination of Sediments,” 374n
  - “Sedimentation of a Heterogranular Mixture,” 374n
- Bethlehem, 926
- Bible, Holy, 22, 41n, 48, 67n, 71n, 74, 90, 113, 130, 332n, 358n, 378, 409, 422, 479, 667, 667n, 685, 785, 808–9, 868, 890, 897, 901
- versions/translations of, 18, 516n, 664n, 950 (*see also* King James Version of the Bible; Masoretic Text of the Old Testament; Septuagint Text of the Old Testament; Vulgate Version of the Bible)
- See also* chronology, Biblical; Holy Scripture; New Testament; Old Testament; Scriptural interpretation

## GENERAL INDEX

- Bickerman, E. J.  
*Chronology of the Ancient World*, 315n
- big bang theory, 174, 376, 376n, 668, 901–2, 904–5
- biochemistry/biochemists, 46, 54, 57, 70, 381n, 582n, 681n, 842n, 846
- Biola University, La Mirada, California, 58
- biology/biologists, 22, 24, 24n, 46, 55–56, 58, 61, 64, 70–71, 75, 91–94, 97, 110, 181n, 523n, 528n, 540, 540–41n, 582n, 632–34, 806, 836, 839–40, 842n, 854, 855n, 856, 860, 880, 891, 909
- evolutionary, 181n, 381n, 540–41n, 575n, 582n, 658n, 666n, 822n, 828, 852, 857
- molecular, 54, 61, 70, 97, 582n, 659n, 840, 843, 852, 890
- systems, 582n
- textbooks of, 71, 836, 839, 854, 906–7, 909
- See also biochemistry/biochemists; biophysics/biophysicists; genetics; morphology; paleobiology; physiology; zoology
- biophysics/biophysicists, 61, 529n, 571n, 855, 889
- biosphere (concept of Teilhard de Chardin), 581, 581n
- birds, 160, 333, 341n, 350, 860  
*Archaeopteryx*, 526n, 833–34  
 aboard the Ark, 328, 338, 342, 345, 347  
 created with the appearance of age, 193–94  
 creation of, 139, 139n, 175, 176–77, 177, 178, 180, 184n, 193–94, 439, 686, 808  
 death of, during the Flood, 337n, 339  
 distinctness and fixity of the kinds of, 182–83, 184n, 187–88, 427, 550–53, 670, 809  
 doves (see dove[s])  
 eagles, 182–83, 333, 427, 552–53, 670  
 as examples in moral teaching, 552, 613, 686  
 falcons, 333  
 finches, 95, 386, 519, 828, 830  
 flycatchers, 826n  
 God's covenant with, after the Flood, 350  
 hypothetical evolution of and from, 381–82, 382n, 519–21, 526, 526n, 826, 828, 830, 833–35, 838  
 “language” of, 250  
 man's dominion over, 195, 205–6, 239, 239, 349  
 named by Adam, 238  
 offered in sacrifice after the Flood, 347–48  
 ravens (see raven)  
 sea-, not aboard the Ark, 332n  
 sent as scouts after the Flood, 343–44, 344, 344n, 345, 345n, 346, 347, 347n, 351  
 sparrows, 333, 809  
 swallows, 809  
 variation within the kinds of, 95, 386, 519, 828, 830  
 vegetarian before the fall, 207–8, 706  
 vision of, in Paradise, 223
- black holes, 375
- Blavatsky, H. P., 34n
- Blowers, Paul M., 701n
- Boch, Walter J.  
 “Evolution by Orderly Law,” 633
- Bohr, Niels, 824
- Bonaventure, 494
- Books & Culture*, 60n
- Boston Globe*, 582n
- botany/botanists, 47, 634
- breeding, selective (artificial selection), 181n, 184, 515, 519n, 826, 829, 854
- Brenton, Sir Lancelot C. L., 283n
- Britain, 890  
 icon from, 936
- British Journal for the History of Science*, 534n
- Brown, Michael H.  
*Search for Eve, The*, 659n
- Brown University, Providence, Rhode Island, 93n
- Bruno, Giordano, 580
- Bucharest, Romania, 819–20
- Büchner, Ludwig, 791, 791n
- Buddhism, 389, 511
- Bufeyev, Fr. Constantine, 66, 68, 80, 908  
*Orthodox Doctrine and the Theory of Evolu-*



## GENERAL INDEX

- tion, 908  
*Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science, The*, 67, 70, 908
- Buffon, George Louis, 462n
- Bulgakov, Fr. Sergius N., 600
- Bulgaria, 943  
 icon from, 395
- Bulgarian Orthodox Church, 83
- Bushmen, 470n
- Byzantine calendar. *See* calendar, Orthodox (Byzantine)
- Byzantine Empire/Byzantium, 315n, 939, 943–44, 946
- Cain (son of Adam), 114, 290, 293, 300, 305, 408, 677  
 builds a city, 301, 302, 304  
 conception of, by Adam and Eve, 288, 289  
 descendants of, 284, 302, 315, 319, 319n, 321, 321n  
 envy of, 292, 295, 298n  
 as the “first-born man,” 431  
 generation of, different from the creation of Adam, 555–56  
 goes off to the land of Nod, 284, 302, 406  
 historicity of, 304, 662  
 likened to the Pharisees, 298n  
 mark on, 299, 302  
 sacrifice of, 290, 291–92, 292nn, 294, 295, 298n  
 seeks to incline God to mercy, 279, 299, 299  
 slays Abel, 279, 294, 296, 297, 298, 298nn, 301, 305, 416  
 wife of, 302–3, 303n, 564, 566
- Calciu, Fr. George, 107, 107n, 817, 818–21, 821n
- calendar, Orthodox (Byzantine), 315n, 338n, 387n, 605, 663
- Cambrian rocks/Cambrian Explosion, 523–24n, 832–33, 848, 855, 873. *See also* Precambrian rocks
- Camus, Albert, 595n
- Canaan/Canaanites, 352, 354, 356, 356n, 357, 358, 360–61
- Canaanite woman, 358
- Canada, 70, 860
- Cappadocia, 921, 933
- carbon-14 (radiocarbon) dating, 372, 384, 462, 529–31, 531nn, 623, 862, 894 *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- carnivory  
 absent in the world before the fall, 59, 83, 135–36n, 162, 207–8, 222, 222n, 227, 230, 252, 255, 452–55, 463, 489, 651n, 706–8, 779, 896  
 not practiced by man until after the Flood, 163, 163–64n, 328–29, 349
- Carroll, Robert L., 849
- Carthage, 915, 935
- catacombs, icons from, 104, 254, 258, 290, 340, 345, 914
- catastrophism/neocatastrophism, 53–54, 861, 861n, 873, 880–82, 880n
- Catchpole, David  
 “Angkor Saw a Stegosaur?,” 898  
 “Schweitzer’s Dangerous Discovery,” 896
- catechisms. *See* Orthodox Church: catechisms of
- Catholic Encyclopedia*, 715n
- cattle (oxen), 121, 183, 195, 207, 253, 265, 302, 323, 339, 405n, 434, 488, 557n, 705–6, 860, 899  
 aboard the Ark, 328–29, 331, 333, 338, 342, 347  
 creation of, 139, 188, 552  
 named by Adam, 234
- Cavarnos, Constantine  
*Biological Evolutionism*, 888
- cells, 845–47, 854, 854–55n, 896  
 complexity and information content of, 62, 95, 842–43, 852, 889–90  
 hypothetical chemical evolution of the first (*see* evolution: of the first cell, hypothetical)
- Censorinus  
*Die Natali*, 557n
- Chaffey, Tim  
*Old-Earth Creationism on Trial*, 451n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Chalmers, Thomas, 664n  
 Chamberlain, J. W., and D. M. Hunten  
*Theory of Planetary Atmospheres*, 533n  
 charismatic movement, 600, 611, 621  
 Charlesworth, J. K.  
*Quaternary Era, The*, 405n  
 Cherubim, 119, 277, 277, 278, 408, 446, 938  
 children, 204, 231, 232n, 233, 290–91, 304n, 320, 324–25, 352, 354n, 361, 445, 451, 816–18  
     of Adam and Eve, 302–3, 566  
     education of, 70–71n, 803, 906–10  
     pain in giving birth to, 268–69, 279, 548, 719, 722  
 chiliasm, 34–36, 34nn, 82, 563, 590, 590n, 594, 596, 597n, 609n, 656, 885, 913, 913n, 914  
     defined, 34n  
 chimpanzees, 851  
     hypothetical evolution of, 678n  
 China/Chinese people, 87, 515, 518, 578n, 586n, 834n, 837n  
     language of, 26  
     philosophy of, 25  
     tales of dragons of, 899  
*See also Asia/Asians*  
 Chittick, Donald E.  
*Puzzle of Ancient Man, The*, 901  
 Chris, Raymond  
     “Scientists Report Finding Fossils of Dinosaurs in Antarctica’s Interior,” 405n  
     “Discovery of Leaves in Antarctica,” 405n  
 Chrismation, Holy, 755–56. *See also* Mysteries, Holy  
*Christian Activist*, 63–64, 417  
 Christian civilization, 28, 540  
 “Christian evolutionism,” 39, 45, 50, 76, 110, 135n, 169n, 219, 334n, 417, 442–43, 451n, 467, 484–85, 493–94, 544, 549, 553–54, 557–602, 621, 630, 638, 643, 667, 780n, 783n, 814, 820–21, 821n. *See also* “Orthodox evolutionism”; theistic evolutionism  
 Christian philosophy, 433, 501, 505–7, 510–11, 529, 551, 553, 558, 560, 622–23, 659, 673–75  
 “Christian Science,” 422  
 Christianity, 108, 233, 506–7, 509, 534, 534n, 535, 540, 548n, 655, 911  
     anti-, 605–6  
     apostasy from (*see* apostasy/apostates)  
     confession of (*see* faith: confession of and persecution for Christian)  
     conversion/converts to, 27–29, 37, 52, 67, 67n, 350, 505n, 611, 618, 645, 911, 913, 915–16, 919, 929, 934, 939  
     enemies of, 657  
     “enlightened,” 434, 569–70, 651  
     and evolutionism, 35, 39, 79, 91, 449, 497–98, 543–44, 556n, 559, 561, 584, 586–89, 594, 654–55, 663, 667, 782, 800, 805, 816 (*see also* evolution: as incompatible with Orthodox Christianity)  
     “of the future,” 587, 594, 594n, 611  
     mutation of, 594, 594n  
     “new,” 498, 580n, 584, 594n, 600  
 Orthodox, 27, 31, 35, 49–50, 52, 63–64, 90, 107, 315n, 333, 443, 449, 465, 497–98, 501, 505n, 507n, 509–11, 543, 556, 556n, 559, 564, 574, 584, 587, 598, 600, 609–14, 618, 623, 645, 654–55, 658–59, 783, 791, 791n, 913, 917, 919–23, 925, 929–30, 933–41, 943–44, 946, 948–51  
     traditional, 28, 50, 59–61, 59n, 79–80, 452n, 571n, 585n, 780n, 796, 807, 901  
 Christology, 42, 199n, 212n, 814, 932–33, 932n. *See also* Jesus Christ, Lord  
*Chronicle of Higher Education*, 405n  
 chronography, Christian, 315n, 915  
 chronology, Biblical, 127, 314–15, 315n, 370, 387, 387n, 516, 641–42, 642n, 663, 672, 868, 873, 912n, 915, 936  
     difference between Greek and Hebrew, 314–15, 314n, 387, 516n, 642, 642n, 663, 672  
*See also* age of the world; genealogies, Old Testament; genealogy of Christ

## GENERAL INDEX

- Church of England (Anglicanism), 515, 679  
Church of the East, 933n  
clairvoyance, 29, 396, 446, 787, 795, 931, 949  
Clark, T., 351  
Clement of Alexandria, 140n, 217n, 276n, 320n, 913  
Cleopatra (Ilie) of Sihastria, Elder, 223n  
Cleopas, Apostle of the Seventy, 771n  
Coates, Howard  
    "Aboriginal Flood Legend," 335n  
    "Australian Aboriginal Flood Legends," 335n  
"coats of skin." *See* "garments of skin"  
coelacanth, 526n, 838  
Cohen, Andrew  
    "Kosmic Roller-Coaster Ride, A," 593n  
Colbert, E. H., 405n  
    "Evolutionary Growth Rates in the Dinosaurs," 405n  
Colorado River, 864–65  
Colorado State University, 374n  
Columbia University, New York City, 633  
commandments of God, 243, 319, 488, 702, 896  
    in acts of creation, 124, 136–39, 144, 146, 146n, 148, 155n, 157n, 164–65, 181–83, 186, 188, 195, 210–11, 222, 427, 438–39, 445, 552, 704, 790  
    allowing man to eat meat, 329, 329n, 349  
    to Cherubim, 119, 446  
    to creation, 273, 464, 729, 769  
    for man not to eat blood, 350  
    for man not to eat of the tree, 188, 204, 226–27, 229–31, 231n, 232n, 233–35, 251, 256, 257nn, 259, 263–65, 269, 273, 276n, 291n, 319, 349, 392, 392n, 393n, 401, 463, 472–73, 488–89, 495, 692, 702, 705, 712, 716, 722–23, 727, 734  
    for man to give names to the creatures, 250  
    for man to increase and multiply, 204, 205n, 303–4, 349  
    to Noah, 325, 328, 329, 331, 338, 347, 349–50, 352n  
    *See also* Jesus Christ, Lord: commandments of  
common ancestry thesis, 98, 427n, 429n, 678nn, 831–32, 834, 838–39, 841, 851, 853  
Communion, Holy, 756–57. *See also* Mysteries, Holy  
Communism, 362–63, 590, 591n, 809  
    and evolutionism, 64, 107, 558n, 799, 819  
    and the "Living Church," 65, 799  
    persecution of Christianity under, 107n, 796, 803, 812, 818–19  
    spirituality added to, 591  
    *See also* Marxism/Marxists; socialism  
comparative embryology. *See* embryology; Haeckel's Law (theory of recapitulation)  
comparative morphology. *See* morphology: comparative  
comparative physiology. *See* physiology: comparative  
*Compass*, 523n  
*Concern*, 575, 581, 612, 654  
Constance, Lincoln, 47, 634  
    "Systematic Botany—An Unending Synthesis," 634n  
Constantine, Emperor, Equal-to-the-Apostles, St., 917  
Constantinople, 315n, 387n, 918, 923n, 927–29, 935, 935n, 938–40, 943  
    illumination, fresco, and ivory carvings from, *130, 262, 286, 952*  
Constantinou, Eugenia Scarvelis  
    *Andrew of Caesarea and the Apocalypse*, 932n  
Constantius II, Emperor, 918n  
contemplation, spiritual, 86, 123n, 125, 137, 158, 471, 793, 933, 941, 944–45  
    as practiced by and intended for man before the fall, 120, 227–30, 232n, 446–48, 699, 738n  
continents, formation of, 332, 406. *See also* Flood: geography before and after  
Cooper, Bill  
    *After the Flood*, 898, 901  
    "Early History of Man, The," 898

## GENERAL INDEX

- Copernican model, 375, 379, 513. *See also* heliocentrism; sun: earth goes around
- Copernicus, Nicolaus, 371, 375, 682
- Cornell University, Ithaca, New York, 62, 73n, 307n, 681n, 889
- corruption (decay)
- “bondage” of, 59n, 82, 182n, 271, 450, 690, 727–28, 730, 762, 769, 896
  - entered the world as a result of man’s fall (*see* fall of man: man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at)
  - man and the cosmos will be delivered from, at the general resurrection (*see* incorruption: of the cosmos in the general resurrection; incorruption: of man’s body in the general resurrection)
  - precedes human sin, according to evolutionism and uniformitarianism, 82, 450–51, 451n, 452n, 456, 651–52n, 659n, 779–81, 780n, 781n
- See also* incorruption
- corruption of human nature. *See* nature/essence of man: change/corruption of
- Cosmas of Maiuma, St., 937, 937–38
- on the virgin birth of Christ, 652n
- cosmogony
- evolutionary, 133, 143, 375–76, 376n, 388, 901
  - Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic, 375, 449, 901
- cosmology, 137
- ancient, 137–39
  - creationist models of, 903–6, 903n, 905n
  - evolutionary/naturalistic/secular models of, 186, 862, 902–5
  - shaped by belief systems, 902–5
- Council of Lyons (1274), 943–44
- Councils of the Church, 387n, 791n, 933
- of Alexandria (A.D. 321), 917
  - First Ecumenical (the first of Nicaea) (325), 917, 919
  - of Laodicea (364), 320n
  - Second Ecumenical (the first of Constantinople) (381), 34n, 913n, 921–23
  - of Carthage (419), 693
  - Third Ecumenical (of Ephesus) (431), 929, 933
  - Fourth Ecumenical (of Chalcedon) (451), 32n, 930, 932
  - of Constantinople (543), 923n
  - Fifth Ecumenical (the second of Constantinople) (553), 315n, 693n, 771n, 923n
  - Lateran (649), 935, 935n
  - Sixth Ecumenical (the third of Constantinople) (680), 315n, 693n, 935n
  - Quinisext (692), 315n, 693, 693n
  - Seventh Ecumenical (the second of Nicaea) (787), 32n
  - of Constantinople (1351), 945
  - All-Russian (1918), 796
- covenants between God and man
- Abrahamic, 351
  - New, 122–23n, 281n, 748, 758
  - Noahic, 163, 327, 349–51
  - Old, 122–23n, 748
- Cranfill, S. A.
- They Came from Babel*, 901
- created order
- age of (*see* age of the world)
  - can raise man’s mind to the Creator, 188–90, 229, 504, 696–97, 786, 793
  - distinction between, and the Creator, 60n, 86n, 190n, 216–17n, 477, 477n, 823n
  - existence of, depends at all times on God’s power/grace, 739n, 740n
  - fully formed in the beginning, 144, 167, 167n, 155n, 192–94, 194n, 232n
  - God participates in, through His Energies, 60n, 86n, 183, 229, 403–4, 477n, 482n, 691, 711, 715n, 739n, 740, 740n, 757, 766, 774, 944
  - God’s economy of (*see* economy, Divine)
  - God’s intention for (*see* man [humanity]: original designation of/state meant to be achieved by)
  - “groaning” of, 82–83, 239, 271, 573, 732, 762 (*see also* corruption [decay]: “bondage” of)
  - has a temporal beginning/is not coeval with God, 149, 217n, 739n

## GENERAL INDEX

### created order (*continued*)

made for the sake of man, 142, 142n, 173,  
189–90, 194n, 323, 323n, 691,  
728–31, 729n, 761, 768, 776

not created for destruction, 74, 348, 363,  
650, 689, 703–4, 708, 734, 769, 771n

nothing incidental or intrinsically evil in,  
402n (*see also* evil: not created by God)

original and future incorruption of (*see*  
incorruption)

originally made perfect in the sense of flaw-  
less, but not in the sense of having  
reached its final state, 35n, 71n, 127,  
138, 144, 152, 155n, 157n, 158, 159n,  
166–67, 192, 215, 243, 438, 444, 458,  
475n, 479, 482, 485, 494, 552, 555,  
562, 572, 625, 655, 690, 702, 710–11,  
760, 764, 777, 786, 800–801, 808,  
810–11, 815, 822–23

transformation/transfiguration/renewal/  
re-creation/restoration of, at the general  
resurrection, 35, 43, 74, 82, 208, 251,  
271, 274, 323, 348, 388, 399, 464, 474,  
573, 650, 656, 702, 706, 728–32, 731n,  
760–72, 774, 777, 782, 786, 885, 941  
(*see also* deification [*theosis*]; incorrup-  
tion: of the cosmos in the general resur-  
rection; incorruption: of man's body in  
the general resurrection)

unity of, 429, 451, 520, 727, 853

“very good” in the beginning, 59n, 75, 81,  
209, 453, 651n, 708, 712, 731, 738,  
779, 785, 822, 896

*See also* nature (created order)

### creation

cannot be fully comprehended by man,  
40n, 131, 137–38, 165, 211, 245, 429,  
436, 444, 509, 545, 548–49

cannot be understood by projecting back  
from present experience, 134–36, 138,  
150, 156–58, 165, 192, 386, 437, 443,  
544–45, 651, 669, 675, 686–87, 894,  
905–6

commandments of God in (*see* command-  
ments of God: in acts of creation)

continuous creative activity of God distin-  
guished from the original acts of,  
117–18, 117n, 150, 192, 430, 545, 687  
effortless, 38, 78, 81, 155n, 585n

as a free act of God's will, 136, 141–42,  
146, 158, 165, 190n, 216n, 440

generation, growth, and development of  
creatures distinguished from the original  
acts of, 111, 115n, 117–18, 117n, 144n,  
167, 167n, 156–57, 169, 192, 194n,  
206, 430–32, 431n, 432–33n, 438,  
449, 465, 555–56, 556n, 625, 631n,  
672, 781n

God's instantaneous acts of, 38, 78, 81,  
137–42, 139n, 144, 155n, 158,  
166–67, 167n, 179, 181, 188, 201n,  
217–19, 245, 375, 433, 436, 438–39,  
442, 483–84, 546, 548, 552, 585n, 675,  
808, 901

God's motive in, 127, 142, 189, 189–90n,  
199–200, 440, 458, 562, 691

mere potentiality of future development  
distinguished from, 155–57, 155n,  
157n, 167, 169, 643–44

as miraculous and supernatural, 22, 38,  
134–38, 166, 169, 240, 243, 245, 245n,  
281n, 386, 394, 432–33n, 438–39,  
486, 643, 665, 668–69, 824, 905

natural processes distinguished from, 135,  
137, 165, 219, 438, 443

not by a limited demiurge, 81n, 132, 132n,  
156, 156n

not out of God's Essence, 190n, 216–17n

not out of pre-eternal and uncreated  
matter, 132, 132n, 156, 156n, 503–4n

not totally instantaneous (*see* Six Days: not  
a literary device to describe a totally in-  
stantaneous creation)

orderly sequence of the acts of, 141–43,  
171n, 175, 177, 234, 410n, 428,  
439–41, 547, 625, 901

out of non-being, 109, 127, 131, 154–56,  
156–57nn, 189n, 192, 199, 210,  
216–17n, 245n, 432n, 458, 562, 687,  
738–39nn

## GENERAL INDEX

- as unique and unrepeatable, 21, 192, 421n, 665
- See also* Adam: creation of; animals: creation of; amphibians: creation of; angels: creation of; animals/beasts/irrational creatures: creation of; birds: creation of; cattle (oxen): creation of; earth: creation of; Eve: creation of; firmament: creation of; fish: creation of; flowers: creation of; heaven/heavens (visible): creation of; heavenly bodies ("lights in the firmament of the heavens"): creation of; light: creation of; man (humanity): body and soul of, created simultaneously; man (humanity): created in grace; man (humanity): creation of; moon: creation of; plants: creation of; reptiles: creation of; Six Days; solar system: creation of; soul: creation of; sun: creation of; trees: creation of; water(s): creation of; whales: creation of
- Creation* (magazine), 335n, 895–96, 898–99, 903n
- Creation Era of Constantinople, Imperial, 315n. *See also* calendar, Orthodox (Byzantine); chronology, Biblical
- creation/evolution debates, 93n, 380, 514, 680–81, 681nn
- creation *ex nihilo*. *See* creation: out of non-being
- Creation Ex Nihilo Technical Journal*. *See Journal of Creation*
- Creation Ministries International, 73n, 680n, 888
- creation model, 48–49, 72–73, 373–74, 377n, 379, 513, 524n, 640, 643, 664, 822–24, 823n, 682, 880, 902
- Patristic, 134, 375, 673
- creation myths. *See* myths
- Creation Research Society, 370, 681–82, 682n, 868
- Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 682n, 903n
- creation science/creation scientists, 47–49, 48n, 57–59, 62, 72–73, 73n, 75n, 77, 87, 184n, 337, 372, 378–80, 379n, 520, 530, 549, 641, 680–83, 681–82nn, 882, 888, 888n, 891–92, 894–96, 900, 900n, 906–8, 910
- Creation Science Movement (England), 48n
- Cro-Magnon Man, 543
- Cross of Christ. *See* Jesus Christ, Lord: Cross of
- Cush, land of, 224
- Cyprian of Carthage, St., 316n, 320n, 914, 915–16
- Cyprian of Jordanville, Archimandrite, icon by, 922
- Cyprus, 656n, 918, 918n, 924, 944
- Cyril and Methodius, Equals-to-the-Apostles, Sts., 939
- Cyril of Alexandria, St., 32n, 211n, 217n, 320n, 337n, 341n, 706n, 928, 929
- on Christ's harrowing of hell, 342n, 753n
- on the corruption of human nature, 712–13, 725n, 752–53
- on the interpretation of Scripture, 40, 123n
- Cyril of Jerusalem, St., 601, 921, 921–22
- on Adam beholding Paradise after his banishment, 288n
- on the creation of Adam, 431, 438, 556
- on the creation of Eve, compared with the virgin birth of Christ, 242–43, 281n, 432
- on the immortality of the soul, 740n
- Dalrymple, G. B., and J. G. Moore
- "Argon 40: Excess in Submarine Pillow Basalts," 532n
- Dana, J. Jay, 452n
- Daniel, Prophet, 565, 681
- Danilevsky, Nikolai Y.
- Darwinism: A Critical Study*, 64
- dark matter and energy, 904
- Darrow, Clarence, 379, 679
- Dart, Raymond
- Adventures with the Missing Link*, 629
- Darwin, Charles, 92, 497n, 505n, 516, 518–19, 526n, 540n, 579, 608, 609n,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 783n, 791, 795, 823n, 828–32, 836, 838, 840–42, 859
- Descent of Man, The*, 789n, 798
- influence of Charles Lyell's uniformitarianism on, 53, 462n, 517–18n, 861–62, 880, 880n
- Origin of Species, The*, 22, 28, 64, 94, 508n, 512, 541n, 779–80, 789n, 834, 834n, 841
- philosophical materialism of, 36–37n, 438n
- quotations from the writings of, 34, 36–37n, 94, 525, 779–80, 783n, 826, 829, 834–35, 834n
- religious doubts of, 59n
- Darwin, Erasmus, 188, 462n, 508n, 516, 540n, 551, 609n
- Zoonomia*, 516n
- Darwin, Robert, 540n
- Darwin Centennial, 22–25, 24n, 35, 46, 48, 593n
- Darwinism/Darwinian theory, 22n, 53–65, 59n, 102, 376n, 505n, 525, 823–25, 824n, 855n, 857–59, 857n, 861
- Advaita Vedanta Hinduism and, 497n
- attempts to add God to, 36, 823n
- as a creation myth, 858
- as a faith, 523, 527, 540, 540–41n, 857–58
- history of, 462n, 508n, 512–19, 517–18n, 521n, 679, 823n, 829–32, 892–93
- inherent godlessness of (*see* evolution: inherent godlessness of)
- Marxism and, 64, 186, 558n, 809, 815–16, 857–58
- Orthodox Christianity and, 38, 64–72, 70–71n, 80–81, 497n, 779–80, 787–90, 788–89n, 798, 804, 809–10, 814–17, 822–25
- promotion of, 22–24, 512, 783n, 791n, 859
- reconsideration of, 76, 89
- scientific critiques of, 46, 48, 53–64, 71, 72n, 87, 93–100, 95n, 381–82, 381n, 382n, 523–25nn, 526nn, 828, 830–31nn, 832–42, 849–50, 853–55, 880, 890–92, 895, 906
- See also* evolution; gradualism, Darwinian; neo-Darwinism/neo-Darwinian synthesis
- “daughters of men,” 284, 318, 318–20
- as the descendants of Cain, 319, 319n
- See also* “sons of God”
- David, Prophet and Psalmist, 165, 307, 409, 495n, 565, 709, 752
- Davis, Percival
- Of Pandas and People*, 906–7
- Dawkins, Richard, 63, 94–95, 99–100, 582n, 824, 824n
- Blind Watchmaker, The*, 55, 381n, 514n
- God Delusion, The*, 42n, 857n
- Greatest Show on Earth, The*, 891–92
- Root of All Evil?, The* (documentary), 783n
- Dawson, Charles, 384
- Day-Age theory, 111n, 429n, 546n, 663, 663–64n, 668–69, 668–69n, 807–8
- Days of creation. *See* Six Days
- death
- of animals, 182n, 208, 451–54, 548, 707, 707n, 733, 780
- blunts man's pride, 785
- Christ delivers man from, 274, 280–81, 280n, 394–95, 395n, 432, 452n, 650, 748–65, 772, 774–78, 782–84, 786 (*see also* redemption/salvation)
- as a creative power and necessary agent in man's origin, according to Darwinism, 779–80, 782–83
- entered the world as a result of man's fall (*see* fall of man: man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at)
- fear of, makes man more temperate and inclined to spiritual struggle, 273, 743
- introduced into the creation by the devil, 255, 280–81, 301, 692, 735–37, 737n, 742, 748, 811
- life after, 108, 341–42, 400n, 575n, 717, 723, 740, 757
- of man and animals during the Flood (*see* animals/beasts/irrational creatures:

## GENERAL INDEX

- death of, during the Flood; man [humanity]: death of, during the Flood)
- man incapable of repentance after, 400n
- marriage devised to prevent the human race from being destroyed by, 204
- not made by God, 456, 703, 733–34, 741, 746, 785
- opens the way for man's refashioning into a better state, 746, 748
- precedes human sin, according to evolutionism and uniformitarianism, 81–82, 450–51, 451n, 452n, 456, 651–52n, 779–81, 780n, 781n
- prevents pain and suffering from lasting forever, 276n, 745–46
- prevents sin and evil from lasting forever, 273, 743–46, 785
- providentially allowed by God, 273, 743–46, 748, 785
- sentence of, 270–71, 273–74, 432, 649, 718n, 727, 738, 742
- as the separation of the soul from the body, 717, 746, 746n, 748, 750, 760–61, 782
- of the soul (*see* fall of man: man experienced spiritual death/death of the soul ["stripping of grace"] at)
- as unnatural relative to the Divine economy of creation, 736–38, 743, 807
- debates. *See* creation/evolution debates
- Decani Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, frescos from, 148, 151, 160, 166, 177, 191, 242, 261, 278, 284, 289, 294, 297, 299, 300, 301, 305, 308, 318, 326, 327, 344, 346, 353, 355, 357, 364, 938
- Decius, Emperor, 915
- "deep time." *See* evolutionary/uniformitarian time scale
- de-historicizing of Scripture. *See* Scriptural interpretation: reductionist allegorical
- deification (*theosis*), 86, 199, 482n, 487, 691, 702, 711, 748, 753, 757, 763–64, 772, 774, 782, 786, 801, 810–11, 810n
- false, 362
- deism/deists, 60, 536, 538, 563, 576, 612, 622, 644, 657
- Dembski, William A., 59n, 63n
- Design Inference, The*, 58
- End of Christianity, The*, 452n
- demiurge, pagan/Gnostic idea of, 81n, 132, 132n, 156, 156n
- democracy, 590–91
- demons (fallen angels), 121n, 280n, 297, 378, 390–91, 401, 403, 413n, 491, 534n, 560, 806, 923n
- age of, 642n
- apparitions of, 899
- fall of, 159, 255, 400n
- See also* devil (the enemy, Satan)
- dendrochronology, 372
- dendrology, 571n
- Denton, Michael, 843, 891
- Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, 28n, 54, 382n, 526nn, 527n, 608n, 892
- Descartes, René, 28, 428, 537
- desert dwellers/desert fathers, 86, 446, 919, 923, 925–26, 948
- Deuteronomy, 409
- devil (the enemy, Satan), 185–86, 216, 476, 534n, 656n, 716, 742, 749, 918, 931
- age of, 642n
- Christ redeems man from servitude to, 750
- envy of, 255, 255n, 268n, 400, 692, 735, 748
- fall of, 159, 255, 400n, 714
- false teaching of the eventual salvation of, 923n
- in hell, 390–91, 723
- as inspirer of false teachings and of unbelief, 216, 498, 612, 810, 812
- introduced death into the creation, 255, 280–81, 301, 692, 735–37, 737n, 742, 748, 811
- limited power of, after the coming of Christ, 268, 400–403
- "seed" of, 266–67, 267–68n
- temptation of Adam and Eve by, 159, 233, 253–57, 254n, 257n, 266, 267–68n, 270n, 280–81, 301, 400–401, 444, 701, 735–36, 737n, 738–39n, 742, 748, 811



## GENERAL INDEX

- devil (the enemy, Satan) (*continued*)  
     unintentionally contributes to the good,  
     401–3, 402n  
     *See also* demons (fallen angels)
- devolution, 61, 845, 850
- Dewar, Douglas, 48n  
     *Difficulties of the Evolution Theory*, 608,  
     608n  
     *More Difficulties of the Evolution Theory*,  
     608n
- DeYoung, Don  
     *Thousands ... Not Billions*, 531n, 894
- Diadochus of Photiki, St., 200n, 397n, 481n,  
     930, 931  
     on the fall of man, 720n  
     on man's perceptive faculty, 698
- Diderot, Denis, 462n
- DiMichele, W. A., et al.  
     "Long-term Stasis in Ecological Assem-  
     blages," 848n
- Dimitry, Archbishop of Tobolsk and Tyu-  
     men, 67n
- dinosaurs, 378, 378n, 405n, 527n, 624,  
     651n, 834, 854, 854–55n, 895–900,  
     898nn, 907, 910. *See also* dragons
- Dionysios (Zagoraios), Hieromonk, 887n
- Dionysiou Monastery, Mount Athos, frescos  
     from, 294, 916, 927
- Dionysius, Master, icons by, 312, 747, 758,  
     767
- Dionysius the Areopagite, St., 935
- Discover*, 574n
- Discovery Institute, 58n, 842n, 888
- disease/sickness, 425, 653n, 846, 939  
     absent in the original creation, 81, 694,  
     708, 779, 896  
     originated with the fall of man, 135–36n,  
     273n, 275n, 651n, 741, 744, 763, 779,  
     896
- dispassion, 84–86, 249–51, 256, 259, 398,  
     643, 700, 746
- Dizikes, Peter  
     "Missing Links," 582n
- DNA (deoxyribonucleic acid), 62, 383n,  
     385n, 837, 839, 842–43, 845, 848–49,  
     889–90  
     "junk," 846–47n, 850–53, 852n
- Dobzhansky, Theodosius, 573–77, 574nn,  
     598, 621, 660, 857  
     "Changing Man," 593n  
     "Ethics and Values in Biological and Cul-  
     tural Evolution," 575n, 576n, 582–83n  
     "Evolution: God's Method of Creation,"  
     575, 612  
     "Nothing in Biology Makes Sense Except  
     in the Light of Evolution," 575n, 582n  
     religious views of, 574–76, 575n, 612, 644  
     scientific research of, 528, 574, 574n  
     on Teilhard de Chardin, 577, 581–82,  
     582–83nn, 593n, 654
- dogmas/dogmatic teaching, 41–42, 46, 66,  
     77, 114, 122, 410, 445, 461–62, 474,  
     510, 542n, 597, 667, 673, 923–24, 937,  
     939
- Dominicans, 575n, 591n
- Donatists, 927
- Donatus, Bishop of Euroea in Epirus, St., 899
- Dormition of the Most Holy Mother of God  
     Church, Arkhangelskoye-Tyurikovo,  
     Russia, 66
- Dorotheus Blaes, Metropolitan of Thessalo-  
     niki, 945
- Dorotheus of Gaza, Abba, St., 114, 601, 638,  
     931–32, 932  
     on man's original state and his fall, 252–53,  
     264–65, 265n, 395, 472–73, 475, 572
- Dostoyevsky, Fyodor  
     "Grand Inquisitor, The," 594
- Dousikon Monastery, Pyli, Trikala, Greece,  
     fresco from, 932
- dove(s), 333  
     as an example in moral teaching, 552, 613  
     of Noah, foreshadows the descent of the  
     Holy Spirit at Christ's Baptism, 345n  
     offered in sacrifice after the Flood, 348  
     sent as a scout after the Flood, 343–44,  
     345, 345n, 346, 347, 347n, 351
- dragons, 459, 895, 897–99, 907. *See also* di-  
     nosaurs
- Dubois, Eugene, 836

## GENERAL INDEX

- Duke University, Durham, North Carolina, 842n
- earth, 161, 197–98, 308, 316n, 903–4  
   age of (*see* age of the world)  
   area of, outside Paradise, 208–9, 234–35, 273, 398, 463, 728  
   before the sun and the other heavenly bodies, both in time and in significance, 135, 165–69, 168n, 171, 173–74, 375–77, 429, 901 (*see also* sun: created after the earth and the plants)  
   Cain cursed from, 299–301, 321n  
   change in the geography of, as a result of the Flood, 225, 332, 334–35n, 406, 408–9  
   condition of, before the fall, 207, 455, 488, 703–4, 708  
   condition of, before the Flood, 161–63, 404–5, 404–5nn (*see also* Flood: world-wide climate before)  
   corruptible state of, after the fall, 82, 86–87, 229, 273, 390, 463, 704, 728  
   created out of nothing, 156n, 245n  
   creation of, 121, 127n, 129, 131, 136, 145–46, 148, 148–49, 154, 156–57nn, 171, 173–75, 190, 194, 209, 375–76, 390, 436, 449, 503–4n, 703, 708, 822, 901  
   creations “brought forth” from, 138, 144, 165–67, 171, 177, 181–83, 187–88, 194n, 210, 426, 438–39, 552  
   crust of, 53, 877  
   curse on, 209, 264, 269–70, 269n, 272–73, 301, 317, 348, 463, 548, 689, 708, 719, 727–28, 744, 868  
   false religious devotion to, 82, 583–86, 591n, 594n  
   “finished” on the Seventh Day, 192  
   Flood covered the entire (*see* Flood: universality of)  
   God’s covenant with (*see* covenants between God and man: Noahic)  
   goes around the sun, 24, 371, 375, 682, 685, 824 (*see also* Copernican model; heliocentrism)  
   history of, 23, 96, 119, 221, 513, 874, 879–80  
   as the home of life, 377  
   land dried on, on the Third Day, 164–65, 194n  
   man unites heaven and, 711  
   meek will inherit, 399, 573  
   naturalistic theories of the origin of, 173, 375–76, 503–4n, 789, 789n, 822, 870–71, 881, 901  
   new (*see* new heaven and new earth)  
   not a natural property of, to bring forth life, 181, 188  
   Paradise originally located on (*see* Paradise [Eden]: originally a place on the earth)  
   renewal of (*see* created order: transformation/transfiguration/renewal/re-creation/restoration of, at the general resurrection)  
   Scriptures written from the perspective of, 124, 377  
   “soul” of (*see* “soul of the world,” false idea of)  
   “unfinished” on the First Day, 148–49, 155n, 338  
   whole of, paradisaical and incorrupt before the fall, 209, 272–73, 398, 463–64, 690, 703, 708, 728, 781n
- ecclesiology, 42  
 economics, 874–75, 877  
*Economist*, 858  
 economy, Divine, 42, 281n, 710, 738, 743, 762, 768, 786  
 Ecumenical Councils. *See* Councils of the Church  
 ecumenism, 35, 38, 44, 609–10, 609–10n, 612–13, 654, 809  
 Eden. *See* Paradise (Eden)  
 Ediacaran biota, 523, 523–24n, 833  
 Egypt/Egyptians, 627, 923, 927, 931, 935  
   chronology of ancient, 314n  
 Eldredge, Niles, 53, 53n, 96–97, 382n, 526nn, 832, 832n, 838  
   “Punctuated Equilibria,” 526n

## GENERAL INDEX

- elements. *See* material elements
- Eliade, Mircea  
*History of Religious Ideas, A*, 335n
- Elijah (Elias), Prophet, 120, 316, 316n, 317n, 448, **565**
- Elisha, Prophet, **565**
- Ellis, George F. R., 904
- embryology, 46, 92–94, 93n, 380, 520–21, 521n, 633, 639, 659, 836, 844n, 852.  
*See also* Haeckel's Law (theory of recapitulation)
- Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 580
- Emilia, St., 920
- Empedocles, 557n, 823
- ENCODE Project Consortium, 852n
- Encyclopedia Britannica*, 95, 514, 619
- end of the world, 130, 137, 411, 602, 656n, 762, 886. *See also* created order: transformation/transfiguration/renewal/re-creation/restoration of, at the general resurrection
- Energies of God, Uncreated, 60n, 85n, 86n, 147n, 403, 477n, 493n, 691, 715n, 772, 944. *See also* grace
- Engeln, O. D. von, and Kenneth E. Caster  
*Geology*, 408n
- Engels, Friedrich, 558n, 791n
- England, 46, 48n, 81, 384, 512, 535, 608n, 791n, 805, 813, 935–36. *See also* Britain; Church of England (Anglicanism)
- Enlightenment, age of, 28, 502, 515–17, 534–39, 534n, 543, 583n, 595n, 649  
*Enlightenment Next*, 593n
- Enoch, apocryphal book of, 320n
- Enoch, city of, **301**, 302
- Enoch, son of Cain, 302
- Enoch, son of Jared, 306–7, **313**, 316, 316–17nn, **565**
- Enosh, son of Seth, 284, 305–6, 306n, **308**, **312**
- entropy, 607n, 680  
 genetic, 850  
*See also* second law of thermodynamics
- envy/jealousy, 951  
 of Cain, 295, 298n
- of the devil, 255, 255n, 268n, 400, 692, 735, 748
- of the Pharisees, 298, 818
- Ephraim the Syrian, St., 19, 38, 40, 52, 113, 283, 316n, **435**, 435, 437, 439, 445, 552–55, 601, 619, 638, 646, 883, **918**, 919
- on Adam outside Paradise, 284
- on Adam's gift of prophecy, 235, 247
- on Cain and Abel, 284, 292, 295, 300, 302, 321n
- on Canaan and his descendants, 354, 356n
- on creation having the appearance of age from the beginning, 167, 193–94, 232n
- on the creation of Eve, 245, 245n, 436, 672
- on the fall of man and its consequences, 188, 209, 257, 257n, 263–64, 268, 276n
- on the false idea of a totally instantaneous creation, 140, 436, 439–40
- on the "garments of skin," 275n, 452–53
- on God's acts of creation, 138, 149, 152, 154, 155n, 167, 188, 436, 438, 442, 546, 669
- on the Holy Trinity as Creator, 147, 150, 150n, 276n
- on the length of the Six Days, 134, 138, 436–38, 545, 640
- on Noah and the Flood, 319n, 324, 332–33, 341n, 352, 352n, 358
- on Paradise, 209, 222, 224, 390, 408n
- on the "sons of God" and "daughters of men," 284, 302, 319–21, 319n, 321n, 412
- on the state of man before the fall, 226, 249, 276n, 692n, 694
- Epicureans, 132n
- epicycles, 371, 379, 386, 522, 571, 682–83
- Epiphanius of Salamis, St., 158n, 202n, 222n, 275n, 276n, 303n, 360n, 924, **925**
- compares Eve and the Mother of God, 267–68n, 281n
- on the first-created world, 162n, 704–5
- on Noah and the Flood, 337n, 341n, 347n

## GENERAL INDEX

- on not reducing Genesis to an allegory, 110n, 446n
- on the "seed of the woman," 267–68n
- Epiphany Journal*, 63n, 417
- eschatology, 35n, 42, 690, 774, 777
- Eskimos, 470n
- Essence/Nature of God, 60n, 86n, 157n, 190n, 198, 216–17n, 229, 403, 431n, 534, 691, 711, 715n, 739n, 944. *See also* Energies of God, Uncreated
- essence/nature of man. *See* nature/essence of man
- Ethiopia, 224
- Eucharist, Holy, 756–57. *See also* Mysteries, Holy
- Eudoxus, 404n
- eugenics, 100
- Euphrates River, 224–25, 362, 406, 408
- Euphrosynus the Cook, St., 223, 390, 406–7, 407, 547
- Eutyches, 930, 932n
- Eve, 418, 770, 907
  - under Adam's headship, 257n, 269, 269n
  - banishment of, from Paradise (*see* Paradise: banishment of Adam and Eve from)
  - clothed with a garment of skin (*see* "garments of skin")
  - clothed with glory (*see* man [humanity]: clothed with glory and wrapped in grace before the fall)
  - conceives and gives birth after the fall, 203, 288, 289, 305, 431, 565n, 566, 776n
  - consequences of the fall of (*see* fall of man)
  - created physically mature, 232n, 249
  - created with the same wisdom, strength, and power as Adam, 250, 256, 486
  - creation of, 16, 106, 115n, 240, 241, 242, 244, 245, 245n, 246, 247, 248, 281n, 303n, 393–94, 395, 410, 431n, 432, 432–33n, 436, 443–45, 446n, 486, 489, 643, 672–73, 697, 703, 776n
  - creation of, compared with the virgin birth of Christ, 242–43, 281n, 432, 432n
  - death of (*see* fall of man: man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at)
  - as equal in honor to Adam before the fall, 269, 269n
  - as the first-created woman, 210, 564
  - goes to hell at death and is raised from hell by Christ, 106, 723, 758, 759
  - historicity of, 41n, 74, 486, 776n, 783n
  - immortality and incorruption of (*see* immortality: of man's body before the fall [conditional]; incorruption: of man's body before the fall [conditional])
  - knew God's command indirectly, through Adam, 256
  - and the Mother of God, comparisons and parallels between, 242–43, 266–67, 267–68n, 280, 280–81n, 432, 432–33n
  - named by Adam, 247, 274–75
  - "opening of the eyes" of, 84–85, 257, 259
  - outside Paradise (*see* Adam: outside Paradise)
  - punishment of/sentence on, 268–69, 269n, 276n, 278–79, 548, 719
  - of the same nature as Adam (*see* woman: of the same nature as man)
  - self-justification of/lack of repentance in, 264–65, 268
  - sorrow and repentance of, 248, 279, 284, 290, 299–300, 416
  - spiritual death of (*see* fall of man: man experienced spiritual death/death of the soul ["stripping of grace"] at)
  - spiritual immaturity of, 232n
  - temptation of, 16, 227, 248, 254–57, 255n, 257n, 266, 280, 281n, 392–93n, 444, 454, 737n, 744–45, 776n
  - transgression/disobedience of, 254, 257, 258, 260, 266, 267–68n, 495n, 712, 723, 725, 745, 776n, 823 (*see also* fall of man)
  - tries to hide from God, 159, 261, 261, 277
  - virginity and dispassionateness of (*see* man [humanity]: virginity and dispassionateness of, before the fall)
- Everest, Mount, 334
- evil, 231, 256, 276, 288, 298, 348, 402–3,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 476, 570, 624, 732–33, 738, 742, 748,  
763, 784, 811
- choice between good and, 231, 233–34,  
275n, 392, 392–93n, 400n, 713, 723  
(*see also* tree of the knowledge of good  
and evil)
- curtailed by death, 743–44, 746
- distinction between good and, 185–86,  
255, 466, 563, 666n, 737
- inclination toward, 367, 713 (*see also* sin:  
man acquired an inclination toward, at  
the fall)
- knowledge of, 232–33, 255, 276, 392–93,  
392–93n, 744 (*see also* tree of the knowl-  
edge of good and evil)
- of man at the time of the Flood, 323–24
- not created by God, 390, 402n, 731
- not the “darkness” mentioned in Gen.  
1:2–5, 121n, 150
- passions, 713
- powers, 150
- thoughts, 226, 713–14
- evolution
- as an alternative, or rival thought-pattern,  
to Orthodoxy, 35, 510, 610, 614,  
653–59
  - of animals (*see* animals: hypothetical evolu-  
tion of)
  - and atheism (*see* atheism/atheists: and  
evolutionism)
  - belief in, born of lack or loss of belief in  
God, 80–81, 101, 438, 485, 555, 612,  
789–90, 792, 794–802, 805–7, 809,  
812–13, 816–20, 825
  - as a bestial philosophy, 84, 478–79, 790,  
795–97
  - as a blind process, 81, 81n, 575–76, 795,  
831
  - can be neither proved nor disproved by sci-  
ence, 39, 47, 51, 71n, 73–74, 87, 421,  
423–24, 470–71, 529, 540–41n, 614,  
619–21, 666, 670, 674, 674n, 857
  - and chiliasm, 34–36, 34n, 609–10n, 656
  - “Christian” (*see* “Christian evolutionism”)
  - and common ancestry (*see* common an-  
cestry thesis)
  - and Communism/Marxism, 64, 107, 186,  
558, 558n, 799, 809, 815–16, 819
  - compared with ancient pagan mythology  
and speculations concerning origins, 38,  
132–33, 136–39, 156–57, 386, 503–4,  
557n, 641, 790, 793, 823, 858
  - compared with the ancient idea of the  
preexistence of the body, 484–85,  
553–56
  - compared with the ancient idea of the  
transmigration of souls, 187, 388–89,  
549–51, 670, 674–75
  - as a deep-seated primordial force, 34, 613
  - defined, 91–92, 94, 100, 132–33, 386,  
422–26, 626, 826–27
  - deification of, 587n
  - distinguished from growth and develop-  
ment of creatures, 92–93, 132, 380,  
424, 427, 521, 626
  - distinguished from variation (*see* variation,  
biological: distinguished from evolu-  
tion)
  - effect of belief in, on the world, 540–43
  - as a faith, 22–23, 44, 48, 62, 74, 77, 84,  
107n, 523, 527, 529, 533, 540–41,  
540–41n, 605, 607–8, 612, 620–22,  
632, 683, 799, 828, 854, 858–59
  - false anthropology (doctrine of man) of,  
84, 419, 465, 468, 471–72, 475, 478,  
480, 484–86, 625, 654, 662, 784, 796,  
798, 807, 810–812, 812n
  - of the first cell, hypothetical, 54, 62, 95,  
842–43, 890
  - “has become conscious of itself,” 23, 593,  
593n
  - Hinduism and, 34n, 497, 497n
  - historical and philosophical roots of, 28,  
45, 50, 90, 428, 462n, 502, 510,  
512–13, 515–19, 516n, 517–18n,  
533–40, 540n, 657
  - hoaxes in the propagation of, 384, 469,  
521n, 577, 577n, 607, 633, 639, 836
  - and the idea of progress, 35, 539–43, 584,  
609–10n, 799–800

## GENERAL INDEX

- as incompatible with Orthodox Christianity, 36–38, 43, 63–67, 70–72, 70–71n, 79–82, 81n, 84, 90–91, 101, 115n, 132n, 135, 135n, 142–44, 155n, 157–58, 157n, 169, 173–74, 184n, 187–88, 207, 217–19, 240, 282, 303n, 304, 308, 334n, 370, 375, 385–86, 417, 423, 426–33, 437–45, 449–98, 502–4, 509–11, 543–602, 605–46, 649–75, 678–87, 691, 778–84, 787–825, 859–60, 893, 901, 908–9 (*see also* Orthodox Christians opposed to evolutionism)
- influence of, on morality, 24, 186, 541–42, 576n, 665–66, 790, 794–95, 798
- inherent godlessness of, 21–23, 36–37, 36–37n, 59, 80–81, 91n, 92, 94, 100–101, 438, 438n, 575n, 607, 620, 790, 792–98, 801–20, 825
- introduces a new scale of values, 542–43
- involves denial of immutable Truth, 26, 541, 584–87, 585n, 597
- involves unwitting blasphemy against Christ, 815
- as a key in the program of anti-Christianity, 38, 60, 606, 611
- lack of transitional forms for (*see* transitional [intermediate] forms: lack of)
- leads to the idea of Superman, 282, 512–13n, 549, 563–64, 588, 594
- lines of descent in, hypothetical, 98, 527, 527n, 835–37, 838
- lobby groups for, 58, 681n
- macro-, 826–27, 847
- of man (*see* man [humanity]: hypothetical evolution of)
- mechanism of, 36n, 57, 61–62, 87, 92, 94–97, 99–100, 380–81, 529n, 780–81, 783, 826–29, 831, 843, 850, 853, 857 (*see also* mutations; natural selection)
- micro-, 826–27, 833
- as a naturalistic origins story, 21–23, 26, 38, 46, 73–74, 84, 90–91, 100–101, 421n, 427–28n, 556, 623, 632, 792, 858 (*see also* naturalism)
- need for Orthodox Christians to understand the scientific side of the question of, 45–46, 613, 636–37, 639, 641
- not strictly speaking a heresy, 497, 511, 556n, 610, 613, 617
- “Orthodox” (*see* “Orthodox evolutionism”)
- as philosophy, 35, 38, 45, 50, 59, 80–81, 84, 90, 100, 420–22, 421n, 424, 427–28, 438, 454, 456, 461–62, 470, 475, 486, 509–10, 533, 540, 543, 557–59, 576, 595, 598, 600, 610n, 619, 623, 628, 630, 632, 638, 643, 651, 654–60, 674, 674n, 778, 794
- places man on the same qualitative level as animals, 107–8, 219, 512–13n, 660, 796–98, 806, 819, 860
- “prebiotic,” 843 (*see also* abiogenesis)
- “proofs” of/evidence for, 45, 47, 92–94, 93nn, 97–98, 379–80, 384, 425, 469–70, 515n, 519–33, 574, 608, 619–20, 628, 633–34, 636–37, 639, 641, 644, 649, 659, 659n, 669–70, 674n, 827, 833, 839, 857n
- rejects Divine authority so as to give free reign to the passions, 790, 794, 797
- as a religious idea, 23–24, 107n, 282, 509, 575n, 582, 586, 588, 609–10, 613–14, 653–54, 660, 677, 857
- scientific criticism of and evidence against, 46–49, 54–67, 70–77, 72n, 73n, 79, 90–102, 307n, 378–80, 423–24, 519–33, 608, 608n, 630, 633–34, 637, 639, 641, 659, 659n, 666, 680–83, 680n, 681n, 682n, 801, 861–64, 867, 870–71, 878–81, 888–910
- “spiritual,” 505n, 561, 564, 606, 614
- taught in public and church schools, 24, 48, 58–59, 58n, 65–66, 70–72, 70–71n, 91, 91n, 93, 370, 379, 612, 615, 615n, 632, 657, 677, 803, 814, 819, 824n, 854, 855n, 859
- theistic (*see* theistic evolutionism)
- “theology” of, 84, 133, 465, 468, 510, 543,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 559, 582, 606–7, 612, 617, 628, 638,  
668, 670, 784, 812
- undermines Christian soteriology, 42–43,  
282, 650, 774–84, 799–801, 810–12,  
815, 893, 901
- as a universal theory, 133, 186–88, 427n,  
563–64, 582, 582–83nn, 592, 596–97,  
609n, 612, 621, 654–55, 672
- worldview of (*see* worldview: evolutionary)
- See also* Darwinism/Darwinian theory;  
evolutionary model; evolutionary time  
scale; worldview: evolutionary; neo-  
Darwinism/neo-Darwinian synthesis
- Evolution* (journal), 523n
- Evolution Protest Movement, 48n
- Evolutionary Anthropology* (journal), 841n
- evolutionary model, 24, 46, 48, 54, 76,  
373–74, 379, 513, 522–23, 643, 682,  
822–25, 823n, 871, 901
- evolutionary/uniformitarian time scale (“mil-  
lions of years,” “deep time”), 54, 62,  
111, 308, 371–72n, 373, 374n,  
383–84n, 409, 423, 452n, 462, 462n,  
470n, 513–14, 516n, 523–24, 527,  
527n, 529–33, 529n, 530n, 531n, 533,  
533n, 823n, 832, 837–38, 848n, 854,  
854–55n, 861–878, 881–82, 893–97,  
903n
- as incompatible with Orthodox Christian-  
ity, 45, 134–35, 135n, 184n, 200n,  
298n, 370, 386–88, 429n, 443, 450,  
451n, 452n, 518, 545–46, 546n,  
623–24, 624n, 637, 641–43, 651,  
651–52n, 653, 662–64, 669, 672, 780,  
780n, 781n, 782–83, 805, 807–8, 814,  
868–69, 873–74, 889–90, 893,  
897–99, 902, 905
- Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed* (film), 72n
- extinction of creatures, 182, 182n, 183n,  
184n, 382–83, 383n, 444, 451n,  
526–27, 527n, 651, 835–37, 835n,  
838, 897, 900
- extraterrestrials (UFOs, outer-space beings),  
320, 378, 378n, 413
- eye, hypothetical evolution of, 95, 381, 381n,  
841–42, 841n, 842n
- Ezekiel, Prophet, 565
- Fairbanks, Daniel J., 851
- faith
- Abel’s sacrifice offered in, 292n
- of Abraham, 476
- Apostle Peter as a symbol of, 448
- of the Canaanite woman, 358
- in Christ and salvation through Him,  
228n, 280n, 341n, 342n, 409n, 749n,  
753n, 754, 759, 800–801, 818, 825
- in Christ’s Resurrection, 768, 771n
- in Christ’s Second Coming and the future  
age, 43, 337, 411, 650, 777–78
- confession of and persecution for Chris-  
tian, 67n, 107n, 804, 809, 818–19
- Darwinism as (*see* Darwinism/Darwinian  
theory: as a faith)
- difference between natural knowledge and  
Christian, 458–60
- of Enoch, 316
- evolution as (*see* evolution: as a faith)
- in God’s creation of man and the world, 43,  
72, 107, 139n, 156–57nn, 165, 243,  
432–33n, 443, 445, 461, 520, 548,  
631n, 662, 672, 807–8, 822–25
- growth in Christian, 79
- in human immortality, 542, 650, 777
- in human progress, 34, 536–37, 609–10n
- loss of Christian, 81, 790, 791n, 792, 794,  
796–97, 807, 812, 816
- man’s attempts to undermine or destroy  
Christian, 64, 556, 792, 816, 819,  
824–25
- in materialism, 859
- of the Mother of God, 280n
- in the Newtonian universe, 621–22
- in “pure reason,” 595n
- reason and natural science exalted above  
Christian, 536–37, 537n, 791n, 793,  
809
- science enlightened by Christian, 667,  
669, 673
- teachings of creation and evolution both

## GENERAL INDEX

- founded on, 48, 74, 520, 529, 533, 540–41n, 683
- understanding of Genesis influences Christian, 77, 638, 691, 777–79, 782–86
- in the veracity of the historical meaning of Scripture, 40–41, 42n, 43, 77, 120, 122, 124, 139n, 222, 255, 316–17n, 411, 443–46, 461–62, 731, 775–78, 776n, 782, 807–8
- in the virgin birth of Christ, 461, 631n, 649
- fall of man
  - all departed human souls went to hades after, until the time of man's redemption by Christ, 265n, 340, 342, 342n, 452n, 662, 723, 751, 753, 753n, 757, 759
  - consequences but not the guilt of, passed on to Adam and Eve's descendants, 712–13, 725
  - God's foreknowledge of, 175, 203–4, 203n, 205n, 455, 455n, 707n
  - human nature changed and corrupted at (*see* nature/essence of man: change/corruption of)
  - human sexual reproduction/married life began after, 75n, 85, 174–75, 202–5, 202n, 203n, 247, 249, 251, 256, 259, 267–68n, 275n, 280n, 290–91, 291n, 398, 494–95n, 548, 643, 694–97, 700, 721–22, 721n, 722n, 741n
  - law of nature changed at, 74, 135–36n, 437, 457, 461, 486, 547–48, 649–50, 653, 710, 907
  - man acquired an inclination toward sin at, 279, 713, 725, 743–46, 785, 797
  - man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at, 42–43, 59n, 61, 74, 81–87, 135–36n, 182n, 204, 209, 217, 224, 228–29, 232n, 263, 270–74, 271nn, 275n, 276n, 279–81, 280n, 281n, 301, 390, 394–95, 395n, 398, 432, 451–57, 452n, 463–64, 482, 486–89, 494–95n, 547–48, 572–73, 638, 649–51, 651–52n, 656, 662, 669, 673, 689–95, 694n, 699–712, 701n, 707n, 716–25, 717–18n, 727–46, 735n, 738–39nn, 741n, 748–53, 752n, 760–63, 774–83, 781n, 782–83n, 785–86, 807, 810–11, 823, 885, 893, 896
  - man experienced spiritual death/death of the soul (“stripping of grace”) at, 271n, 282, 714–18, 716n, 717–18n, 720, 723, 725, 741–42, 748, 753, 759, 781
  - man made to labor after, 269–70, 269n, 279, 301, 663, 694–95, 705, 709, 719, 727n, 744–45
  - man passionate after (*see* passions: man not originally subject to)
  - man subjected to pain, suffering, disease, and infirmities after, 135–36n, 268–70, 273n, 275n, 276n, 651n, 717–19, 741, 744, 763, 779, 896
  - man subjected to the elements after, 85, 250, 250n, 485, 493, 572, 694
  - man's body and physical condition changed at (*see* man [humanity]: body and physical condition of, changed at the fall)
  - wife placed in submission to her husband at, 268–69
- See also* Adam: transgression/disobedience of; Eve: transgression/disobedience of; Paradise: banishment of Adam and Eve from
- fascism, 590–91
- fashions, intellectual, 37, 44, 46, 51, 173–74, 413, 495, 510, 615, 621, 623, 628, 645, 650, 666, 816–17
- fasting, 257, 338, 349, 352
- Father, God the, 585n, 597n, 754, 806
  - beginningless generation of the Son from, 190n, 216–17n, 431n, 652n
  - Christ's offering to, 749, 755
  - Christ's prayer to, 749n
  - as Creator, 146–47, 147n, 195, 197
  - glory of, 754, 756
  - man's designation to become in the likeness of, 811
  - the Son as the image of, 199n



## GENERAL INDEX

- Father, God the (*continued*)  
 uninterrupted Providence of, 192, 687, 774
- Faulkner, Danny  
*Universe by Design*, 902, 906
- Feuerbach, Ludwig Andreas von, 791, 791n
- Feynman, Richard Phillips, 827, 827n
- Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago, 524n, 527n
- Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin*, 526n
- Fields, Weston W.  
*Unformed and Unfilled*, 664n
- Filioque*, 939, 943
- Finegan, Jack  
*Handbook of Biblical Chronology*, 315n
- fire, 250, 362, 459, 485  
 creation of, 154, 155n  
 Divine, 760  
 from heaven, consumed the sacrifice of Abel, 295  
 of hell, 266, 771n  
 renewal of the creation through, at the end of the world, 769
- firmament, 152, 308, 351, 411  
 birds fly across, 175, 177  
 "breaking" of, 163, 334, 404  
 creation of, 139n, 146, 159, 170, 173  
 heavenly lights in, 4, 169, 170  
 meaning of, 160–61, 160n, 161n  
 separation of waters above and below by, 121n, 159, 404
- first-created man, 38, 84–85, 117, 209, 301, 333, 428n, 430, 450, 463, 465, 479, 482, 486–87, 489, 491, 555, 564, 565n, 598, 658, 695, 699, 700n, 704, 716, 739n, 765, 783n  
 nature of (*see* nature/essence of man: original, before the fall)  
*See also* Adam; man (humanity)
- first-created world, 462, 492, 601, 638, 784  
 absence of carnivory in, 208n, 707  
 climate of, 162n, 704–5  
 descriptions of, 463–65, 708–9  
 incorruption of, 43, 460, 463, 487, 649–50, 707–10, 707n, 761–62, 779 (*see also* fall of man: man and the cosmos subjected to death and corruption at; incorruption)
- knowledge of, not accessible to natural science and rational investigation, 74–75, 78, 165, 449, 457–58, 460, 489, 495, 650, 675, 708, 710, 886
- known through revelation, grace, Divine vision, 74–75, 78, 86, 457–58, 489, 650, 710, 886–87
- material of, 490
- nature of, 29, 49, 74–75, 224, 443, 450, 490, 675, 710
- restoration of incorruption of, 761–62, 777
- understanding of, linked with one's understanding of redemption and the future age, 42–43, 782–83
- See also* created order
- fish, 121, 207, 331, 332n, 434, 439, 519, 521, 526–27, 743, 867  
 burial of, in the Flood, 524  
 creation of, 139, 176–78, 180, 184n, 686  
 hypothetical evolution of and from, 23, 92, 520n, 526n, 557n, 633, 826, 853  
 "kinds" of, 184n, 185  
 man's dominion over, 195, 205, 349
- Fitzgerald, Allan D.  
*Augustine through the Ages*, 141n
- Flood, 319, 325, 336, 345, 874  
 accounts of, found in ancient cultures throughout the world, 335n  
 conditions before and after, 163, 163–64n, 285, 304, 321, 348–49, 351–52, 408, 687, 900  
 creatures buried during, 524, 524–25n, 896–97  
 date and duration of, 317, 342–43  
 death of man and animals during (*see* animals/beasts/irrational creatures: death of, during the Flood; man [humanity]: death of, during the Flood)
- eternal salvation of some people who died in, 340–42

## GENERAL INDEX

- geography before and after, 225, 332, 334–35n, 406, 408–9
- geological strata laid down during, 373, 373n, 408n, 409, 410n, 518n, 524–25, 524–25n, 900
- God's promise not to repeat, 163, 348, 350, 404
- history of mankind after, 347, 347nn, 351, 358, 361, 363, 367, 897, 901
- mankind allowed to eat meat after, 163, 208, 329, 329n, 348–49
- Paradise seen until, 408
- spoken of by Christ, 327n
- universality of, 49, 58n, 65, 74, 163, 325, 327, 331–35, 335n, 337–40, 337n, 348, 373, 404, 408–9, 682, 729n, 900
- worldwide climate before, 163, 308, 321, 329, 351, 404–5, 404–5nn
- See also* geology; Flood
- Florovsky, Fr. Georges, 619
  - Creation and Redemption*, 156n
  - Ways of Russian Theology*, 542n
- flowers, 23, 148, 187, 551, 842
  - creation of, 149, 177, 439
  - in Paradise, 222, 456, 705
  - in the renewed creation, 771n, 772
- fluorine dating, 629
- Fondi, Roberto, 571n
- Forefathers, Old Testament
  - Adam among, 278, 565, 565, 565n, 693, 699, 712, 717, 722, 725, 800
  - commemorated as saints of the Church, 565, 565, 565n, 662
- foreknowledge/foresight of God, 152, 168n, 175, 203–4, 203n, 205n, 267, 291n, 410n, 455, 455n, 555, 707n, 746, 749n
- forgiveness, 83, 264–65, 299, 755, 819, 914
- Forgiveness Sunday, 288, 565n
- fossils, 111, 373, 378, 528, 531n, 608, 829, 831, 848, 876, 891, 909
  - abundance of, 525, 526n, 832
  - catastrophic deposition of, 53, 524–25, 896
  - circular reasoning employed when interpreting, 371–72, 522–23, 523n, 878–80, 894
- dinosaur, 405n, 854, 854–55n, 895–97
- Flood model of interpreting, 524, 524–25n, 897
- formation of, 525, 525n
- human and allegedly pre-human, 383–85, 383–84nn, 385n, 468–70, 469n, 470nn, 543, 577–78, 578n, 836–38, 864, 892, 892n
- index, 526–27, 527n
- not a record of the incorrupt first-created world, 135–36n, 651, 651–52n, 659n, 896
- not a record of the Six Days, 135–36n
- role of evolutionary theory in interpreting, 370–71, 371–72n, 523n, 530n, 660, 836–38, 867, 878–80
- stasis/lack of transitional forms in the record of, 53, 53n, 96–98, 101, 382n, 523, 523–24n, 525–27, 526nn, 670, 825, 832–38, 848n, 895
- stochastic deposition of, 371, 523–24, 524–25n
- testify to a universally warm climate in the past, 404–5, 405n
- France/French people, 26, 46, 70, 129, 339n, 374n, 535–36, 571n, 577, 599, 791n, 912
  - icons from, 129, 920, 927
- Franciscan Spirituals, 597n
- Frazer, James George, 335n
- Free Church of Scotland, 664n
- freedom/free will
  - of angels and demons, 400n
  - of God, 190, 199, 585n, 738n, 761, 850
  - of man, 199–200, 230–33, 270, 392, 401, 403, 455, 476–77, 487, 568–69, 661, 692, 692n, 702, 712, 715n, 723–25, 790, 799, 802, 850
- Freemasonry, 540n, 609–10, 609n, 654
- French Academy of Sciences, 46, 374n
- French Revolution, 534, 539–40, 540n, 792
- Freudianism, 857–58
- fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*), 528, 528n, 574, 574n, 844, 844n

## GENERAL INDEX

- fruits
  - given to man and animals for food in the beginning, 207–8, 255, 453–55, 694–96, 694n, 704, 707–8
  - in Paradise, 208, 223, 231, 255, 456–57, 463, 694–96, 694n, 703–5, 728
  - present at the moment trees were created, 149, 165–67, 181, 439
  - present before the creation of the sun, 168, 171
- futility
  - as corruption, 209, 271, 271n, 273, 456, 464, 573, 638, 690, 727–28, 730, 732, 762
  
- Gabriel (Igoshkin), Archimandrite, Hiero-confessor, 802, **803**, 804
- Gabriel, Archangel, 280n
- Gagarin, Yuri, 657n
- Galápagos Islands, 519, 830
- galaxies, 377, 641, 901–2
- Galileo, 510
- Ganges River, 225, 406
- Gap theory, 624n, 664, 664n
- “garments of skin,” 224, 249n, 275, 275–76n, 452–53, 487, 719–20, 720n
- Gaul, 399n, 917, 919
  - icon from, **129**
- Gaza, 361, 924, 931
- Gebser, Jean, 34n
- genealogies, Old Testament, 306, 308, 314, 317, 358n, 386, 516, 637
- genealogy of Christ, 305, 314, 314n, 319, 630–31, 631n, 638, 661, 672
- genetic code, 382, 389, 855, 857n. *See also* information, biological/genetic
- genetic engineering, 91n, 100
- genetics, 22, 54, 73, 92, 100, 184n, 304n, 307n, 381, 519n, 529n, 571, 574, 574n, 659, 659n, 823n, 825–32, 826n, 830–31nn, 837, 841n, 843–56, 859
  - molecular, 46, 61, 70, 830, 839, 856
  - phylo-, 839–40, 839n, 841n, 842n
  - plant, 62
  - population, 70–71, 830, 842n, 856
  - See also* genomes; Hox genes; mutations
- genomes, 826, 828, 831–32, 844, 846–47n, 852n
  - cannot come into being through mutation/selection, 844–54
  - deterioration of, 62, 304n, 307n, 529n, 845, 849–50, 854, 889–90
  - See also* information, biological/genetic
- Gentiles, 341n, 350, 356, 360–61, 476
- geocentricism, 682. *See also* Ptolemaic model
- geochronology, 872, 876, 878, 881
- geological strata/layers, 45, 111, 513, 522, 637, 829, 861, 863–64, 867, 877, 891
  - age determination of, based on duration of sedimentation, 871–73, 881
  - age determination of, based on radiometric dating, 863, 867, 871
- alleged “non-sedimentation periods” in the formation of, 871–73
- catastrophic deposition of, 53–54, 374n, 880–81, 896, 900
- circular reasoning in the interpretation of, 522–23, 523n
- creatures appear suddenly in, 523, 523–24n, 525
- dated by index fossils, 526–27, 527n
- “disconformities,” “paraconformities,” “pseudoconformities” in, 371n
- do not correspond to the Six Days, 374–75, 429, 429n, 545
- do not fit evolutionary/uniformitarian expectations, 370–71, 371n, 522–23, 523–24n, 525–27, 832–35, 838, 879–81
- laid down during the Flood, 373, 373n, 408n, 409, 410n, 518n, 524–25, 524–25n, 900
- rapid deposition of, 374n, 871–73, 880–81, 896, 900
- role of evolutionary theory in interpreting/dating, 371–72, 371–72n, 380, 522–23, 530n, 871, 878–80
- See also* stratigraphy
- geology/geologists, 66–67, 70, 75, 77, 94,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 110, 119, 134, 371–72n, 374n, 405n,  
408n, 452n, 462n, 517, 517–18n,  
523–25nn, 525, 531n, 571n, 633–34,  
659, 663n, 861–82, 891, 893–95  
catastrophism in (*see* catastrophism/neo-  
catastrophism)  
Flood, 54, 332, 337, 373n, 409, 524–25n,  
874, 900–901, 900n  
uniformitarian (*see* uniformitarianism)
- geophysics, 571n  
George, Great Martyr, 251  
Georgia, Republic of, 70  
language of, 933  
German Federal Physics and Technology In-  
stitute (Physikalisch-Technische Bundes-  
anstalt), 850  
Germany/Germans, 24n, 64, 93, 371n,  
385n, 505n, 512, 535, 791n, 836, 839,  
847, 850, 856n  
giants, 320–21, 360  
Gibbons, Ann, 836  
Gibbs, W. Wayt  
“Profile: George F. R. Ellis,” 904  
Gibeon/Gibeonites, 356n  
Giertych, Maciej, 571n  
Gihon River, 224  
Gilbert, S. F., 834  
Gilson, Etienne  
*Christian Philosophy of St. Augustine, The*,  
115n  
Gish, Duane T., 681n  
*Dinosaurs by Design*, 896, 900, 907  
*Evolution: The Fossils Say No!*, 465  
Gitt, Werner, 850  
*Glasgow Herald*, 571n  
globalism, 35  
Gnosticism, 41n, 276n, 913–14  
Valentinian, 81n, 156n, 320n  
Golden Age, 537  
Goldhaber, Maurice, 591–92n  
Goldschmidt, Richard, 24, 381, 381n, 382nn  
Gomorrah, 361  
goodness  
of angels, 400n  
choice between evil and, 202, 230–31,  
233–34, 275n, 292–93n, 400n, 661,  
692, 713, 723, 725n, 739n (*see also* tree  
of the knowledge of good and evil)  
comes from bad things, through God’s  
Providence, 401–3, 403n  
of the creation after the general resurrec-  
tion, 763  
distinction between evil and, 185–86, 255,  
466, 563, 666n, 737  
of human nature, 475–77  
of God, 149, 151, 198, 209, 212, 266, 268,  
273, 284, 295, 307n, 333–34n, 464,  
658, 697, 717n, 748  
of God, as the reason for His creating the  
world, 127, 142, 189, 189–90n,  
199–200, 440, 458, 562  
knowledge of, 232–33, 232n, 255, 276,  
392–93n, 476, 737, 744 (*see also* tree of  
the knowledge of good and evil)  
of man’s original condition, 204, 263, 269,  
392, 475, 486, 488, 742  
of marriage, 204–5  
of the original creation, 59n, 75, 81, 152,  
159n, 164, 166, 169, 175, 188–89, 197,  
453, 651, 708, 712, 731, 738, 763, 779,  
785, 822, 896  
of wisdom that comes from God, 466  
Gould, Stephen Jay, 53, 99, 382n, 521n,  
575n, 577n, 832n  
“Darwinism Defined,” 574n  
“Ediacaran Experiment, The,” 523n  
*Ever Since Darwin*, 36n, 517n, 518n  
“In the Mind of the Beholder,” 666n  
“Non-overlapping Magisteria,” 658n  
*Panda’s Thumb, The*, 381n  
“Punctuated Equilibria,” 526n  
“Return of Hopeful Monsters, The,” 53n,  
381n  
Gracanica Monastery, Kosovo, Serbia, frescos  
from, 917, 925, 930  
grace, 267–68n, 319, 324, 345n  
angels founded in good by, 400n  
Blessed Augustine’s teachings on, 475–76,  
661, 927  
in the creation of man, 215–16, 215n, 218,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 250, 479, 481–83, 483n, 691, 740–41, 740n
- deification of man and the cosmos through, 691, 702, 711, 772, 774, 811
- Divine inspiration through, 130, 396, 458
- existence of created things depends on, 739n, 740n
- experience of, in the Church, 74, 85–87, 251, 356, 358, 395n, 403–4, 482, 751, 809, 812, 814, 819, 887
- God's participation in creation through (see created order: God participates in, through His Energies)
- man's experience of and union with, before the fall, 84, 227–28, 247, 250–52, 256, 263, 392n, 482, 483n, 494, 691–92, 697, 699–700, 702, 715, 735, 738–39n, 741
- man's loss of, at the fall, 259, 474, 714–16, 715n, 716n, 718, 725, 741
- in man's redemption, 395n, 749, 751
- and nature, relationship between, 465, 476, 481–83, 482nn, 494n, 702, 738–41, 738–39nn, 740n, 755 (see also immortality: whether men and angels possess, by grace or by nature; incorruption: whether man possesses, by grace or by nature)
- in the origin of man, according to "Christian evolutionism," 417, 472, 568, 570, 643, 664, 671, 781n
- in Paradise, 223, 456, 705
- protects one from the devil, 401–2
- restoration of incorruption through, 763, 777
- reuniting of man with, through Christ, 86n, 228n, 396, 482, 755–57, 760
- Roman Catholic teaching on, 395–96, 465, 492–94, 493n, 572, 660, 715n
- seeking and obtaining, 356, 358, 756, 799–800, 809
- in the state beyond the general resurrection, 251–52
- as Uncreated, 493n, 715n, 944
- See also Energies of God, Uncreated; Holy Spirit: grace of; Jesus Christ, Lord: grace of; Uncreated Light
- gradualism, Darwinian, 53n, 381, 514n
- Grahamland, 405n
- Grand Canyon, 373, 373n, 517, 522, 864–66, 864n, 900
- Grassé, Pierre P.  
*L'Evolution du vivant*, 46
- Gray, Asa, 37n
- Greece  
 astronomy and cosmology of ancient, 138–39, 386, 404, 404n, 641  
 chronologies and genealogies of ancient, 314n, 358n, 642  
 clergy and theological writers of, 44, 417, 420, 544, 637, 644–66, 645n, 888  
 Flood accounts of ancient, 335n  
 gods and mythology of ancient, 321, 790–91  
 icons from, 170, 180, 237, 294, 328, 407, 425, 435, 496, 565, 726, 912, 916, 918, 920–22, 924–28, 932, 934, 936–38, 940–43, 945–46, 948, 988  
 idea of a "Golden Age" in ancient, 537  
 Orthodox tradition of the semantron in, 332n  
 Patristic thought of, 140n  
 philosophy and science of ancient, 386, 389, 471, 503–4n, 507, 557n, 641, 915  
 saints and elders of, 81, 496–97, 497n, 506, 601, 698, 797–99, 814–18, 888, 897, 898n, 931, 948–51  
*Synaxaria* of, 911, 933n
- Greek language and terminology, 19, 35n, 44, 78, 85, 117n, 160n, 179n, 220, 269n, 283, 387, 396, 410, 419, 440n, 481n, 490, 490n, 498, 516n, 616n, 631n, 839, 915, 929, 933, 947
- Greek Orthodox Archdiocese of America, 559, 561, 564, 598, 621
- Green, Richard E.  
 "Draft Sequence of the Neanderthal Genome, A," 385n
- greenhouse effect, 162, 351, 404
- Greenland, 405n, 470n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Gregory of Nyssa, St., 114, 190n, 550, 601, 619, 639, 669, 675, 810n, 923, 923n, 924
- against the confusion of created natures, 144, 187–88, 549–50, 670, 674
- against the confusion of the created and the Uncreated, 216–17n
- on the creation of man, 142–44, 144n, 197n, 199–202, 218–19, 430, 431n, 432n, 438–40, 483–85, 556n, 625, 638, 671, 691, 741
- on creation out of non-being, 156n, 199
- in defense of the institution of marriage, 205
- on the division between male and female human beings, 201–2, 203n
- on the fall of man and its consequences, 255n, 271n, 275, 275n, 655–56, 694n, 714, 717–18n
- on the false idea of the preexistence and transmigration of souls, 187–88, 549–51, 554, 644, 670, 671
- on the false idea of the preexistence of the body, 218–19, 484–85, 554–55, 644, 671
- on the “garments of skin,” 275, 275n
- on God’s acts of creation, 142–44, 155n, 164–65, 167, 167n, 187, 428, 439–40, 625, 707
- on God’s foreknowledge of the fall, 202–3, 707n
- on the Holy Trinity as Creator, 147n
- on human nature, 143–44, 199, 201–2, 207, 218–19, 291, 429, 475n, 481–82, 554–55, 718n, 738–39, 741
- on the image and likeness of God in man, 199–202, 483, 739n
- on man’s condition before the fall, 251, 694, 739, 739n, 741, 777
- on the origin of human sexual reproduction, 291n, 495n, 721n, 741n
- on Paradise, 205, 251, 757, 777
- on St. Basil’s *Hexaemeron*, 113n
- on the state beyond the general resurrection, 187, 251, 746, 757, 777
- Gregory Palamas, St., 85n, 115, 320n, 482, 494n, 601, 618, 661, 943, 944–45
- on the age of Adam, 642, 642n
- on the creation of man, 215n, 483n
- on the distinction between theology and secular knowledge, 466–67, 467n, 505n, 623n, 666n
- on Enosh, 306n
- on the Essence and Energies of God, 403
- on the fall of man and its consequences, 255n, 271n, 275n, 713, 716–19, 717n, 723, 725, 735n, 741–42, 748, 750
- on the “garments of skin,” 275n
- on the glorified bodies of Christ and the Mother of God, 203n
- on God’s acts of creation, 155n, 157n, 190n
- on the image and likeness of God in man, 200n, 202n, 717
- on imagination, 698
- on the immortality of the soul, 716–17, 740n
- on literal and symbolic interpretations of Scripture, 120, 227, 447–48, 619
- on man’s condition before the fall, 694, 716, 741–42
- on Noah and the Flood, 337n, 341n, 347n
- on the origin of death, suffering, and illness, 271n, 275n, 692n, 716–19, 717n, 735n, 741–42, 748
- on Patristic teaching, 466–67, 480
- on redemption, 748, 750, 754, 775
- on the state beyond the general resurrection, 772
- on the translation of Enoch, 316n
- on the tree of knowledge, 120, 227, 230n, 447–48, 619, 717
- Gregory the Sinaite, St., 490, 601, 618, 638, 710, 943, 944
- on the “eight primary visions,” 458
- on the fall of man and its consequences, 694n, 697–98, 713–14, 728
- on Paradise, 115, 222–23, 456–57, 547, 705, 705n
- on the state of man and the cosmos before

## GENERAL INDEX

- the fall, 82, 245n, 397n, 455–57, 486–88, 491, 692n, 693–94, 693nn, 694n, 697–98, 705, 728, 766
- on the state of man beyond the general resurrection, 487–88, 490–91, 548, 766
- Gregory the Theologian (of Nazianzus), St., 32n, 114, 190n, 272n, 316n, 393n, 441, 601, 920, 921, 922, 926, 938
- on the angelic powers, 159n, 197–98
- on Christ's glorified body, 768n
- on Christ's incarnation, 811n
- on the creation of man, 114, 193, 216, 431, 431n, 438, 547, 556n, 669, 671
- on death as a gain, 744
- on the fall and its consequences, 255n, 275n, 487, 693n, 720n, 766n, 811n
- on the "garments of skin," 275n, 487
- on the genealogy of Christ, 314, 631, 631nn, 638
- on God's acts of creation, 141, 159n, 197–99, 440, 442–43, 547
- on human nature, 114, 477
- on the image of God in man, 141, 477
- on man as a mixture of two worlds, 197–99, 201, 219, 477–78
- on man's condition before the fall, 226, 230, 230n, 232n, 693, 693n, 699, 700nn
- on Noah and the Flood, 337n
- on Paradise, 226–27, 230
- on St. Basil's *Hexaemeron*, 113n
- on the state beyond the general resurrection, 693n
- on the tree of knowledge, 120, 446–48, 619
- Gribbin, John, and Jeremy Cherfas  
"Descent of Man—or Ascent of Ape?," 678n
- Grigg, Russell M.  
"Dinosaurs and Dragons: Stamping on the Legends," 895, 898–99
- Grinnell, George James  
"Reexamination of the Foundations," 37n
- Grumel, V.  
*La Chronologie*, 315n
- Guénon, René, 26–27  
*Reign of Quantity and the Signs of the Times, The*, 26
- Habakkuk, Prophet, 316n
- Haber, Francis C.  
*Age of the World, The*, 546n
- hades. *See* hell
- Haeckel, Ernst, 92–93, 521, 521n, 836  
*Riddle of the Universe, The*, 512
- Haeckel's Law (theory of recapitulation), 92–93, 93nn, 380, 521, 521n, 633, 633n, 639, 825, 836.
- Ham (son of Noah), 317, 324, 324n, 326, 338, 346, 348, 352, 354, 356, 357, 358, 360–61, 362n
- Ham, Ken  
*Great Dinosaur Mystery Solved, The*, 896, 898, 900  
*New Answers Book, The*, 304n, 524n  
*One Blood: The Biblical Answer to Racism*, 892  
"Order in the Fossil Record," 524n
- Hartnett, John, 903–6  
*Dismantling the Big Bang*, 902  
*Starlight, Time and the New Physics*, 903n
- Harvard University, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 381n, 582n
- Haskell, Edward, 34n
- Hazard, Paul  
*European Mind, The*, 534
- heaven, 221, 259, 268n, 316n, 491, 673, 694–95, 806, 819
- angels in, 146, 280, 490–91n
- battle of angels in, 159, 254–55
- Christ's Ascension into, 771n
- distinguished from Paradise, 221–23, 222n, 229, 234, 389–90, 398–99
- experience of, 390, 399, 399n, 403, 814, 918, 949
- in the future age, 35, 650, 656
- man barred from, at the fall, 723, 757
- man meant for, 234, 249, 390, 400, 692, 698, 772
- reopened to man by Christ, 757, 759, 774

## GENERAL INDEX

- See also* Kingdom of Heaven
- heaven/heavens (visible), 4, 127, 127n, 164, 175, 192, 210, 221, 273, 295, 316, 327, 339, 362, 398, 446, 446n, 453, 458–59, 562, 690
- creation of, 121, 129, 131, 136, 145–46, 146n, 148, 148–50, 154, 155n, 156–57nn, 158–59, 159n, 169, 171, 174–75, 194–95, 197, 209–10, 337n, 436, 449, 463, 503–4n, 703
- dissolution and renewal of, 769, 772 (*see also* new heaven and new earth)
- firmament and, 159–61, 169, 173, 175, 177
- “opening” and “closing” of, during the Flood, 162, 329, 334, 334n, 338, 342, 404
- heavenly bodies (“lights in the firmament of the heavens”), 124, 154, 174, 371, 377n, 771n, 893, 905–6
- creation of, 4, 139, 139n, 169, 170, 171, 171n, 172, 173–74, 375–76, 901
- naturalistic theories of the origin of, 375–76, 901
- plants created prior to, 167–68, 168n, 171, 171n, 901
- See also* moon; planets; stars; sun
- Heber, 361, 367–68
- Hebrew language, 113, 154, 160, 179n, 283, 305, 314, 314n, 323, 387, 410, 435, 516n, 897, 915
- Hebrews, 152, 194, 361
- chronology of, 642, 663, 672 (*see also* chronology: Biblical)
- origin of the name of, 361
- See also* Jews
- Hegel, Georg, 505n
- Hegelianism, 654
- Heidelberg Man, 469
- heliocentrism, 510. *See also* Copernican model; sun: earth goes around
- helium, 533, 533n, 868–69, 894
- hell (hades), 106, 265n, 340, 342, 342n, 390, 400, 452n, 491, 662, 723, 751, 753, 753n, 757, 758, 759, 771n
- Heller, Michael
- Creative Tension: Essays on Science and Religion*, 376n
- Helvétius, Claude, 536
- Heraclius, Emperor, 935
- heresy, 40, 110, 132n, 268n, 282, 307n, 445, 484, 509, 534n, 551, 553–54, 556–57, 559–61, 600, 675, 806, 884, 913–14, 917–20, 924, 929–31, 930n, 932n, 935–37, 935nn, 944
- evolutionism not, strictly speaking, 497, 511, 556n, 610, 613, 617
- See also* Orthodox Church: teachings condemned by
- Herman (Podmoshensky), Fr., 29, 44, 50, 83, 625, 627, 630, 645
- Northern Thebaid, The*, 239
- Herman of Alaska, St., 333
- hesychasm/hesychasts, 120, 447, 465–66, 698n, 944–47
- definition of, 120n
- “higher” criticism of the Bible, modern, 41n, 409–11
- Hilarion (Alfeyev), Metropolitan of Volokolamsk, 70–71n
- Hilarion (Troitsky), Archbishop of Verey, Hieromartyr, 799–801, 800, 824n
- on evolutionism, 35n, 799–801
- on faith and unbelief, 825
- on science, 825, 859–60
- Hilarion the Great, St., 929
- Hilary of Poitiers, St., 156n, 217n, 917, 919
- on the creation of man, 432n
- Hinduism, 34n, 388–89, 422, 497
- Advaita Vedanta, 497n
- Hippolytus of Rome, St., 155n, 217n, 315n, 317n, 360n, 557n, 624, 914, 914–15
- hippopotamuses, 836
- historical interpretation of Scripture. *See* Scriptural interpretation
- Hitchcock, Edward, 452n
- Hitler, Adolph, 362
- Hodge, Bodie, and Laura Welch
- Dragons: Legends & Lore of Dinosaurs*, 898
- Holmes-Houtermans model, 870



## GENERAL INDEX

### Holy Fathers

- believing and thinking as do, 43, 429, 433, 485, 649–50, 777, 781–82
- common, integral, harmonious teaching (consensus) of, 31–33, 31n, 32nn, 39–40, 60, 74, 75n, 79–81, 114n, 115n, 120, 134n, 140–41n, 144, 152, 166–67, 169, 179, 202n, 215n, 232n, 308, 315n, 337n, 414, 447–48, 459, 480–82, 483n, 494–95n, 547, 552, 598, 654, 669, 689–90, 701n, 706–8, 707n, 721, 725, 731–32, 740–41, 741n, 762, 776, 778–80
- contradictions, real or imagined, in the writings of, 30–32, 32nn, 39, 80, 114n, 115n, 116, 140–41n, 202n, 215, 232n, 320n, 412–13, 413n, 447, 479–82, 482, 707n, 721n
- Divine inspiration of, 32, 32n, 78, 113n, 451, 544, 649, 710, 886–87
- Faith of, 30, 32n, 66
- harmonization of apparent contradictions in Scripture by, 41n, 192, 314n, 410–11, 411n, 631, 631nn, 672
- have the mind of Christ, 31, 81, 466, 480
- humble, reverent approach toward, 31, 34, 80, 116–18, 131, 419, 433, 460, 498, 511, 642, 646, 650–51, 655
- as interpreters of Holy Scripture, 38–42, 41n, 49, 74, 78–79, 87, 89, 108, 112, 116, 119–24, 122–23n, 127, 131, 138, 140, 173, 224, 227, 240, 253, 265, 275–76n, 307–8, 314, 411, 413, 433–37, 440, 445–49, 459–61, 483, 485, 495, 504, 514, 556, 619, 638, 641–42, 658, 660, 667, 667n, 675, 684–85, 689–90, 726, 733, 751–52n, 764, 931, 933 (*see also* Scriptural interpretation; Six Days: Patristic commentaries on)
- love for, 30, 131, 419–20, 458, 626–27
- mind of, 29–31, 78, 80, 82, 87, 601, 646
- mind of the Church found in the writings of, 30–32, 39, 81, 112, 114n, 122n, 411, 511
- misuse of out-of-context quotations from, 79, 111n, 116–18, 117n, 479–80, 485, 546n, 600–601, 614, 625–26, 628, 639, 667, 669, 671, 700n, 701n
- modern attempts to revise or reinterpret the teaching of, 30, 80, 89–91, 111n, 446–47, 450, 457, 468, 479, 485, 490, 498, 601, 639, 654, 780
- philosophy of, 501, 510–11, 553, 673–75
- prayer to, 30
- refutation of Origenist teachings by, 40, 218, 222n, 445–46, 446n, 483–84, 550–51, 553–54, 700n, 701n, 771n, 916, 923–24, 923n, 935n
- refutation of pagan scientific and philosophical speculations by, 132–33, 132n, 155–57, 156–57n, 168n, 188–89, 218, 503–4, 503–4n, 553–55, 557n
- science and, 27, 118–19, 132–33, 137, 162, 174, 426, 429, 439, 449, 459–61, 501–5, 649–51, 667, 673–74, 677, 685–86
- study of the writings of, 30–31, 38–39, 50–51, 116, 506, 598, 618, 626, 709, 942
- teaching of, incompatible with evolutionism, 38–40, 49, 63, 72, 78–80, 90–91, 122, 135, 143–44, 153, 155n, 157n, 169, 183–84n, 188, 217–19, 240, 303n, 375, 389, 419–20, 422–23, 427–28n, 428–45, 449–68, 471–80, 483–86, 495, 497–98, 497n, 502, 511, 544–57, 600–602, 625–28, 643, 649–51, 651–52n, 658, 662, 669–75, 778–84, 781n, 782–83n, 810–12, 893, 901 (*see also* evolution: as incompatible with Orthodox Christianity)
- theology of (*see* theology: Orthodox Patristic)
- timelessness of the teaching of, 33, 623
- tradition of, as a continuation of the tradition of the Apostles, 31–32
- view the same reality from different sides, 199, 202n, 214–15, 275–76n, 389, 480–82, 494n, 696, 720n, 724–25,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 724n, 738–41, 739n, 740n  
wisdom of, different from the wisdom of this world, 419, 433, 443, 460, 466, 480, 482, 491, 494–95n, 495, 497n, 498, 501, 662  
*See also* anthropology: Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic; cosmogony: Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic; creation model: Patristic; worldview: Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic
- Holy Monastery of the Evangelist John the Theologian, Souroti, Thessaloniki, Greece, 814  
fresco from, 945
- Holy Scripture  
Divine inspiration of, 40, 116, 122–23n, 130–31, 160, 174, 253, 410n, 449, 467n, 649, 651, 684, 708, 912 (*see also* Holy Spirit: writing of Scripture inspired by; revelation, Divine: contained in the Holy Scriptures)  
*See also* Bible, Holy; Scriptural interpretation
- Holy Spirit, 318, 340, 412n, 491n, 750n, 762, 793, 819  
Apostles and Fathers inspired by, 32, 467, 649  
breathed into man at his creation, 215–16, 215n, 479–81, 483, 483n, 756  
Christ's offering to, 755  
in the conception and birth of Christ, 280n, 474  
as Creator, 146n, 147, 147n, 150–51, 159, 195  
in the deification of man, 702, 757  
descent of, at Christ's Baptism, 345n  
dwells in the Church, 32n  
dwelt in man until the fall, 755–56  
grace of, 85n, 86n, 215, 345n, 479, 481, 483, 483n, 755–56, 702  
guidance of, 32, 320n  
Noah's dove as a type of, 345n  
Old Testament prophets inspired by, 129–30, 175, 306n, 434  
procession of, from the Father, 939  
reunited with man in Baptism, through Christ's redemptive work, 86n, 755–56  
writing of Scripture inspired by, 32, 121, 129–30, 175, 210, 222n, 410n, 434, 467, 649, 651 (*see also* Holy Scripture: Divine inspiration of; revelation, Divine: contained in the Holy Scriptures)
- Holy Trinity  
appearance of, to Abraham, 196  
“consultation” of, in the creation of man, 195, 197, 197n  
as Creator, 146–47, 147n, 150, 195, 197, 197n, 823  
economic actions of, 42  
false ideas about, 534n, 600  
Persons of, share the same Nature, 431n  
revelations of, in Genesis, 195, 196, 197, 197n, 276, 276n, 367 (*see also* revelation, Divine: regarding the Holy Trinity)
- Holy Trinity Monastery and Seminary, Jordanville, New York, 548n  
icon from, 922
- Holy Trinity–St. Sergius Lavra, Russia, 71
- Holzschuh, Josef, 571n
- hominids, 384n, 451n, 780, 783n, 837
- Homo erectus*, 383, 383–84n, 470nn, 837
- Homo habilis*, 383–84n
- Homo neanderthalensis*, 385n, 837. *See also* Neanderthal Man
- Homo sapiens*, 385, 385n, 470, 470n, 837
- hope  
chiliastic, 583, 588n, 591n, 593  
of the creation, in the general resurrection, 271, 456, 727, 730–31, 762  
in God, 305, 657, 946  
of man, in the general resurrection, 203n, 786  
in Paradise and the Kingdom of Heaven, 252  
“hopeful monster” theory, 53n, 381–82, 381n, 382n. *See also* punctuated equilibrium
- Horeb, Mount, 128

## GENERAL INDEX

- horses, 182, 183n, 184n, 185, 405n, 427, 553, 670, 899  
 hypothetical evolution of, 526n, 527, 527n, 838  
 Howe, George  
   *"Vestigial Organs" Are Fully Functional*, 522n  
 Howell, F. Clark  
   *Early Man*, 619  
 Hox genes, 844, 844n, 848–49, 855  
 human nature. *See* nature/essence of man  
 humanism, 25, 411, 535, 543, 588n, 620, 657  
   evolutionary, 22  
 Hume, David, 538, 539n, 542, 595n  
 humility, 33, 87, 264–65, 473, 497, 656n, 799–801, 949  
 Humor Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, fresco from, 770  
 humors, bodily, 186, 487n, 693, 693n, 766  
 Humphreys, D. Russell, 903–5  
   *Cosmos: Created and Young* (video), 893  
   "Creation of Planetary Magnetic Fields, The," 903n  
   "Creationist Cosmologies Explain the Anomalous Acceleration of Pioneer Spacecraft," 904  
   "Evidence for a Young World," 893, 902  
   "Mercury's Magnetic Field Is Young," 903n  
   "New Creationist Cosmology, A," 903n  
   "New Time Dilation Helps Creation Cosmology," 903n  
   "Sea's Missing Salt, The," 532–33n  
   *Starlight and Time*, 903n  
 Humphries, Conor  
   "Russian Church Wants End to Darwin School 'Monopoly,'" 70–71n  
 Hutton, James, 462n  
 Huxley, Julian, 22–25, 35, 579, 579n, 583, 593n, 621, 668  
 Huxley, Leonard  
   *Life and Letters of Thomas Henry Huxley*, 609n  
 Huxley, Thomas Henry, 22, 37n, 512, 514, 514n, 579, 609n, 791n  
   *Science and Hebrew Tradition*, 783n  
 hybrids, 184–85, 184n, 670  
 Iconoclasm/Iconoclasts, 937–38  
 idolatry/worship of false gods, 60, 321, 342n, 403, 651, 713, 793  
 Ignatius Brianchaninov, Bishop, St., 162n, 491, 507n, 508, 787–88, 950  
   on Christianity and science, 507, 507n  
   on the first-created world, 708–9  
   on the harmony of Patristic teaching, 33  
   on materialistic fantasies, 507–8, 508n, 788–89n  
 illumination, Divine, 229, 488, 691, 716, 793, 813, 820  
 image of God. *See* Jesus Christ, Lord: as the image of God the Father; man [humanity]: image of God in  
 imagination, 85, 396–97, 698–700, 714  
 immortality  
   of angels and demons, 400, 739n  
   of the creation beyond the general resurrection, 763, 777  
   death prevents man's sin from having, 743–46, 785  
   denied by evolutionary naturalism, 783, 797–98, 811–12  
   of Divine conceptions, 226–27  
   of God, 193, 216, 443, 480, 482, 800  
   of the image of God in man, 811–12  
   of life in God, 268n  
   of man's body before the fall (conditional), 35, 198, 209, 229, 247, 251, 272–74, 276, 396, 398, 453, 463, 473, 480, 482, 482n, 488, 492–93, 547, 572, 656, 662, 690, 692–94, 692n, 694n, 699, 702, 708, 723–25, 738–41, 776  
   of man's body in the general resurrection, 35, 274, 464, 573, 650, 656, 729, 738, 761n, 764, 769, 777  
   of man's soul, 475, 478, 481, 534n, 542, 716, 740n, 798  
   possessed by God alone, strictly speaking, 739, 739n  
   whether men and angels possess, by grace

## GENERAL INDEX

- or by nature, 481–83, 482nn, 494n, 699, 723–25, 736–41, 738–39nn, 740n
- Imperial Creation Era of Constantinople, 315n. *See also* calendar, Orthodox (Byzantine)
- incorruption
  - of the angelic powers, 159n, 400n, 732
  - belief in the original, linked to belief in redemption by Christ, 42–43, 78–79, 690–91, 774–84, 901
  - belief in the original, linked to belief in the future age of incorruption, 43, 650, 690–91, 776–78
  - cannot be placed within the “millions of years,” or Day-Age, schema, 651, 651–52n, 893, 901
  - cannot be reconciled with evolutionism, 456, 486, 651, 691, 778–84
  - cannot be understood by natural science, 460–61, 651–52
  - of Christ’s glorified body, 489
  - comes from God, 82, 727, 738
  - of the cosmos, tied to and dependent on the incorruption of man, 727, 729–33, 738, 760–63, 768, 776
  - of the cosmos before the fall, 43, 74, 82–83, 209, 271–74, 273n, 398, 455–57, 460, 463–64, 487, 573, 649–51, 651–52n, 662, 689–91, 702–4, 707n, 708–10, 727–29, 738, 760, 762–63, 772, 774, 776–80, 782, 785–86, 796, 893
  - of the cosmos in the general resurrection, 43, 127, 271–72, 274, 452n, 456, 458, 464, 562, 573, 650, 729–32, 760–64, 768–69, 774, 777, 782, 786
  - does not correspond with what scientists study in the fossil record, 651–52n
  - given to man through Christ’s redemptive work, 281n, 761–62
  - of God/Christ, 800
  - in heaven, 692
  - of man’s body before the fall (conditional), 35, 43, 82–84, 86, 209, 247, 272, 274, 456, 463–64, 486–89, 494–95n, 572–73, 650, 651–52n, 656, 689–94, 692n, 701n, 702, 704, 710, 718–20, 723–24, 727, 729, 738–41, 738–39nn, 741n, 760, 761n, 765–66, 768, 772, 774, 776–80, 786, 893
  - of man’s body in the general resurrection, 43, 83, 272, 274, 452n, 456, 464, 487, 489, 573, 650, 729–30, 760–62, 764–66, 768, 777, 786, 800
  - of man’s food before the fall, 463, 694, 694n, 704, 729
  - miracles of, 652
  - of Paradise, 209, 222–24, 272–73, 456, 463–64, 574, 690, 703, 705, 728, 781n
  - of Paradise alone, false idea of, 781n
  - relative, of the bodies of saints, 760
  - restoration of the original, 43, 208, 271, 274, 464, 487, 573, 706, 728–32, 760–63, 766, 768–69, 772, 774, 777, 782, 785–86
  - of the virgin birth of Christ, 460–61, 651–52, 652n
  - whether man possesses, by grace or by nature, 494n, 572, 723–25, 738–41, 738–39nn, 740n
- India/East Indians 388, 401
- Indonesia, 836–37
- inferiority complex in Christians, 661, 666
- infinite monkey theorem, 514n
- information, biological/genetic, 61–62, 92, 95, 182n, 184n, 389, 529n, 801, 826, 830–31, 831n, 843–52, 856, 889–90, 910
- Inherit the Wind* (film), 379, 379n. *See also* Scopes Trial
- insects, 331, 388–89, 833, 835, 844–45. *See also* fruit flies (*Drosophila melanogaster*)
- Institut de Mécanique des Fluides, Marseilles, 374n
- Institute for Creation Research, 49, 370, 378, 513, 524n, 640, 680, 681n, 868n, 888, 893–94, 901
- intelligent design (ID), 54, 57–62, 59n, 73, 77, 87, 452n, 529n, 592n, 842n, 855, 855n, 888–90, 888n, 901, 907

## GENERAL INDEX

- intermediate forms. *See* transitional (intermediate) forms
- International Academy of Science, 66
- International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA) of the United Nations, 902
- International Nativity Educational Readings, 67, 70, 689
- interpretation of Scripture. *See* Scriptural interpretation
- invertebrates. *See* insects; marine invertebrates
- Ionanichie (Balan), Archimandrite  
*Shepherd of Souls: The Life and Teachings of Elder Cleopa*, 223n
- Ionesco, Eugene, 595n
- Iraq, 363, 933
- Irenaeus of Lyons, St., 315n, 316n, 320n, 337n, 810n, 887, **912**, 912–14  
on Adam as the progenitor of the human race, 432n  
on Apostolic tradition, 31  
compares Cain and the Pharisees, 298n  
compares the creation of Adam with Christ's birth from a virgin and His healing of the blind man, 211–12n  
compares Eve and the Mother of God, 267n, 280n  
on creation having been made for man, 142n  
on the "garments of skin," 275–76n  
on God "searching out" Adam, 263n  
on the historicity of the Genesis account, 40–41n  
on the Holy Trinity as Creator, 147n, 197n  
on the image of God in man, 202n  
on the immortality of the soul, 740n  
on the life-spans of the Patriarchs, 307n  
on man's conditional immortality before the fall, 692n, 743–44  
on the original and future incorruption of the cosmos, 706, 706n, 731, 739n, 777  
on redemption, 263n, 267n  
refutation of Gnosticism by, 41n, 81n, 156n  
on the "seed of the woman," 267n  
on the state of man before the fall, 232n, 245n, 692n, 693  
on the temptation of Adam and Eve, 255n, 257n  
on the Word of God as Creator, 146n, 211–12n  
on the Word of God as the image of God, 199n
- Irenaeus, Hieromonk (M. C. Steenberg), 81n  
"Children in Paradise," 40–41n, 232n  
*Irenaeus on Creation*, 40–41n, 81n, 887
- iron-manganese nodules, 875–77
- irreducible complexity, 97, 840–42
- Isaac, Patriarch, **565**, 752n
- Isaac the Syrian, St., 114, 506, 601, 654, **932**, 933, 933n  
on the age of the world, 459, 642, 642n, 663
- on the kinds of knowledge, 125–26, 458–59  
on regaining the original state of Adam, 235n  
on the vision of the beginning of things, 127, 458, 562
- Isaiah, Prophet, 410, **565**, 652n, 706, 706n, 822
- Isaiah the Solitary, St., **922**, 923  
on man's original condition, 473
- Isidore of Seville, St., 360n, **934**, 934
- isochron method, 865, 867, 869. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Israel/Israelites, 356n
- Israelis, 61, 855, 889
- Italy, 70, 571n  
icon from, **924** (*see also* Sicily: icons from)
- Izvestiya*, 824n
- Jacob, Patriarch, 412, 414, **565**
- James, Apostle, brother of St. John the Theologian, 448
- Japanese people, 899
- Japheth (son of Noah), 317, 324, 324n, **326**, 338, **346**, **348**, 352, 354, **355**, 356, **357**, 358, 361, 362n
- Jared, 306–7, **312**, 313
- Jastrow, Robert, 54

## GENERAL INDEX

- Java Man, 469–70, 470n, 577, 607, 662  
 jealousy. *See* envy/jealousy  
 Jeans, James, 514n  
 Jefferson, Thomas, 534n  
 Jeremiah, Prophet, 316n, **565**  
 Jerome, Blessed, 276n, 360n, **926**, 926  
 Jerusalem, 356n, 913, 935–36  
     heavenly, 772  
 Jesuits, 376n, 468, 567, 569, 577, 579, 591n  
 Jesus Christ, Lord, 205, 263n, 419, 498, 789,  
     791n, 884. *See also* Son of God; Word  
     (*Logos*) of God  
     Ascension of, 771n  
     Apostles of (*see* Apostles [disciples of the  
     Lord], Holy)  
     as the beginning and end of all things, 139,  
     145  
     belief/faith in, 226, 341n, 461, 799–800,  
     816, 819, 825 (*see also* faith)  
     blasphemy against, 587n, 815  
     Body and Blood of, 756–57  
     brings man and the cosmos to the state  
     originally intended for them, 252, 396,  
     403, 573, 757, 763–66, 768–72,  
     770–71n, 774, 777, 782, 786  
     the Church as the Body of, 30, 784, 812  
     Church of, 78, 85, 341n, 511, 597, 706n,  
     756, 764  
     commandments of, 473  
     conversion to (*see* Christianity: conver-  
     sion/converts to)  
     as Creator, 117n, 141, 145–47, 146n,  
     147n, 150, 156n, 159n, 165, 181, 183,  
     189n, 193, 195, 197–98, 211n, 212n,  
     216, 281n, 395, 430, 440, 443, 552,  
     556, 625  
     Cross of, 43, 228n, 249n, 277–78, 280,  
     281n, 282, 341n, 398, 749n, 750–52,  
     750n, 754–56, 754n, 759, 768,  
     774–75, 786, 899  
     Crucifixion/death of, 43, **106**, 249n, 274,  
     280, 282, 282n, 298n, 340, 452n, 573,  
     650, 746, **747**, 748–57, 749n, 750n,  
     753n, 754n, 759, 761, 768, 774–75,  
     782–83, 783n, 786, 885  
     defeat of the devil by, 267–68, 267–68n,  
     281, 402, 736  
     deification of man and the cosmos by, 757,  
     764, 772, 774, 801, 810  
     descent into hell of, **106**, 340–42, 342n,  
     662, 723, 753, 753n, 757, **758**, 759  
     Divine Nature of, 534n, 557, 933  
     false teachings concerning, 139, 282,  
     452n, 561–63, 584, 586–90, 587n,  
     596–97, 596n, 597n, 599n, 600, 612,  
     930, 930n, 932–33, 932n, 935n  
     feast of the Epiphany of, 281  
     feast of the Exaltation of the Cross of, 750n  
     feast of the Nativity of, 565n, 652n, 938  
     feast of the Resurrection of (Pascha), 652n,  
     937  
     flock of, 107n  
     following after, 398, 402  
     fullness of revelation given by, 78  
     genealogy of (*see* genealogy of Christ)  
     glorified (resurrected, spiritual) body of,  
     203n, 391, 403, 489, 766, **767**, 768–71,  
     768n, 771n  
     as God and God-man, 203n, 211n, 403,  
     748, 776, 778, 782, 784, 810–12, 814,  
     945  
     on God's uninterrupted Providence, 192  
     grace of, 85–86, 395n, 482, 738–39n  
     as the Head of the Church, 31  
     healings/miracles by, 211n, 243, 358, 653,  
     805  
     in heaven, 403  
     and the Holy Spirit, 32, 345n  
     human nature of, 473, 557, 933  
     as the image of God the Father, 199n  
     incarnation (coming) of, 130, 199n, 203n,  
     235n, 263n, 267n, 268, 268n, 281,  
     314–15, 315n, 316n, 342n, 356, 356n,  
     358, 391, 402–3, 402n, 458, 461, 474,  
     599, 642, 655–56, 690, 723, 736, 753,  
     753n, 755–56, 761, 768n, 774,  
     799–801, 810–11, 932n  
     inspiration from, 86–87  
     Kingdom of, 34n  
     as the Light, 403

## GENERAL INDEX

### Jesus Christ, Lord (*continued*)

on the making of man and woman at the beginning of creation, 200n, 776n  
on marriage, 247n  
mind of, 31, 81, 466, 480  
on Moses as the giver of the Law, 409n  
on Noah and the Flood, 327n, 662n  
overcomes the division between male and female, 201, 203n  
Passion (suffering) of, 278, 298n  
physical resurrection of man by, 760–66, 761n, 768–72, 770–71nn, 774–78, 783n, 786  
prayer to, 817–18  
re-creation by, 243, 755  
redemption/salvation by (*see* redemption/salvation)  
reopening of Paradise and heaven to man by, 663, 757, 759, 774  
restoration of man and the cosmos to incorruption by, 453, 760–66, 768–72, 770–71n, 774–78, 782, 786, 800–801  
restoration of man's original nature and condition by, 85–86, 86n, 235n, 252, 274, 396, 461, 473–74, 482, 573, 740, 760–66, 768–72, 774–78, 782, 786  
Resurrection of, **106**, 274, 282n, 341n, 391, 395n, 443, 452n, 453, 489, 573, 650, 652, 652n, 746, 748–49, 751, 753–54, 757, **758**, 760–61, 765–66, 766n, **767**, 768, 774–77, 782, 786, 818, 885, **952**  
sacrifice of, 274, 650, 754–56, 774, 786  
Second Coming of, 43, 267, 317, 327n, 337n, 402, 402n, 458, 479, 763–64, 768n (*see also* Last Judgment)  
as the Second or New Adam, 249n, 252, 281, 281n, 394, 432, 461, 473, 482, 489, 573, 631n, 723, 762–63, 769, 774 (*see also* Adam: and Christ, parallels and comparisons between; Adam, creation of, compared with the virgin birth of Christ)  
as the “seed of the woman,” 266–68, 267–68n

“seed” sowed by, 185–86  
sinlessness of, 748–50, 774, 782–83, 786  
on the slaying of Abel, 298n, 662n, 776n  
as the Son of Man, 186, 316n, 327n, 487, 653n, 749, 749n, 766  
soul of, 342n, 749n, 753  
spiritual resurrection of man by, 755–57, 759, 777  
temptation of, in the wilderness, 257n  
Transfiguration of, 448  
as Truth, 27  
types and prefigurations of, 40–41, 122n, 211–12n, 249n, 257n, 263n, 266–68, 267–68n, 280–81n, 298n, 341n, 345n, 394–95, 395n, 432, 432–33n, 751–52, 751–52nn, 775–76  
union with, 761n, 945  
virgin birth of, 212n, 242, 267n, 280–81n, 291n, 432n, 460–61, 631n, 649, 652, 652n, 815  
visions of saints and elders of, 403, 816, 818, 918, 949  
and Western Europe, 805–6  
words of, 32, 122n, 127, 192, 200, 247n, 298n, 316n, 327n, 409n, 774, 776n  
Jesus Prayer, 947, 950  
Jews, 140n, 153, 267, 298n, 319, 320n, 341n, 350, 356, 360n, 409n, 752, 775.  
*See also* Hebrews  
Joachim of Fiore, 597n, 600  
Job, Righteous, 151, 159, 190, 401, 476, 815, 815n, 897  
John (Alekseyev) of Valaam, Schema-Abbot, **806**  
on the Day-Age theory, 807–8  
John (Maximovitch) of Shanghai and San Francisco, Archbishop, St., 29, 60  
John Cassian, St., 159n, 255n, 316n, 320n, 475–76, 627, **927**, 928  
on human nature, 476, 478–79, 661  
on the “sons of God,” 413n  
John Chrysostom, St., 38, 52, 108, 112–13, 113n, 161n, 211n, 283, **441**, 504, 551, 601, 619, 638, 646, 732, 883–85, 920, **925**, 925, 927–29, 943

## GENERAL INDEX

- on Adam and Christ, 751–52, 775, 782n
- on Adam and Noah as progenitors of the human race, 347n
- on Adam naming the animals, 238, 392n, 697, 705–6
- on Adam outside Paradise, 285, 288
- on Adam's wisdom and gift of prophecy, 238, 247, 254, 392n, 697
- on the age of mankind, 663
- on the angelic powers, 413n
- on anthropomorphic statements concerning God in Scripture, 124, 222, 243, 259, 261, 365n, 445, 556, 667, 712n
- on Baptism, 754–55, 754n
- on Cain and Abel, 295, 298, 301–2
- on the change in man's body at the fall, 272, 456, 721
- on the consequences of man's fall, 249–50, 259, 268–72, 290, 301, 456, 716n, 720–22, 721n, 728–30, 743–45, 750–52, 781n, 782n
- on creation having been made for man, 142n, 189, 323n, 691, 728–29, 729n, 731
- on the creation of Adam, 197, 214–17, 245n, 671
- on the creation of Eve, 243, 245n, 443–44, 643, 672
- on creation out of non-being, 131, 156n, 192
- on the curse on Canaan, 352, 354, 354n, 356, 356n
- on death as a deterrent to sin, 743
- on the devil, 253–54, 255n, 257, 266, 750
- on the Divine inspiration of Scripture, 130–31, 175–76, 210, 410n, 562, 684
- on the false notion of pre-eternal and uncreated matter, 156–57n
- on the "garments of skin," 275n, 720, 720n
- on the general resurrection and the restoration of incorruption, 194n, 272, 456, 730–31
- on God creating out of His will, not out of necessity, 136, 141–42, 190n
- on God's acts of creation, 136, 141–42, 167–68, 171, 194n, 210–11, 439–42
- on God's "rest" on the Seventh Day, 192, 687
- on the Holy Trinity as Creator, 197
- as interpreter of St. Paul's Epistles, 726, 731, 731n
- on Lamech's repentance, 305
- on man's authority over animals in the beginning, 238, 333–34n, 454, 705–6
- on Noah and the Flood, 323n, 324, 324n, 328–29, 333–34n, 337n, 338–40, 344, 347n, 350, 352, 729n
- on the order of the Six Days, 141–42, 167–68, 171, 175–76, 410n, 440–41
- on the origin of death, suffering, and corruption, 268–72, 456, 720, 727–31, 734, 743–45, 750–52, 781n, 782n
- on the origin of human sexual desire and procreation, 203, 247, 290, 291n, 488, 694–95, 721n, 722
- on Paradise, 122, 124, 221–22, 222n, 224–26, 231, 231n, 234–35, 259, 392n, 444–45, 488, 694, 722
- on the Prophet Moses, 130–31, 142, 175, 215, 221, 562
- on redemption/salvation, 175, 462, 750–52, 754–55, 775, 782n
- on the serpent in Eden, 253–54, 266, 454, 737n
- on the "sons of God," 320n, 412n, 413n
- on the soul, 216–17
- on the state of man and the cosmos before the fall, 84, 225, 234–35, 238, 247, 249–50, 290, 334–35, 454, 488, 691, 692n, 694–95, 707, 722, 744, 885
- on the temptation and fall of Adam and Eve, 253, 255n, 257, 259, 261–63, 266, 269n, 334n, 392–93n, 454, 737n
- on the Tower of Babel, 362, 362n, 365n, 367
- on the translation of Enoch, 316–17n
- on the two creation narratives in Genesis, 410n



## GENERAL INDEX

- John Chrysostom, St. (*continued*)  
 on the two trees in Paradise, 231, 231n, 259, 392–93n  
 on typology in Scripture, 40–41, 122n, 225n, 556, 751–52, 752n  
 on upholding the historical meaning of Scripture, 40–42, 41n, 122, 122n, 124, 224–25, 225n, 444–45, 461–62, 752n, 776n  
 on why Cain could marry his own sister, 303n  
 on why God created the sun after the earth and the plants, 167–68, 168n, 171
- John Damascene, St., 114, 232n, 317n, 391n, 551, 601, 631n, 731, 731n, 936–37, 937  
 on the angelic powers, 159n, 400n, 490n, 739n  
 on the change in man's body at the fall, 275n, 693n, 719–20, 766n  
 on chastity being maintained on the Ark, 352n  
 on the consequences of man's fall, 204, 205n, 455, 715, 719–20, 734, 736, 775  
 on the creation of Eve, compared with the virgin birth of Christ, 281n, 432, 432n  
 on the deification of man, 229, 691, 702  
 on the devil, 255n, 281, 400n, 736  
 on the distinction between the created and the Uncreated, 60n, 190n, 216n  
 on the distinction between the creation of the world and the begetting of the Son of God, 217–18n  
 on the distinction between the creation of the world and the generation of creatures, 431–32, 431n, 438, 556, 556n  
 on the division between male and female human beings, 202n, 204  
 on dragons, 898–99, 899n  
 on the "garments of skin," 275n, 719–20, 720n  
 on God creating out of His will, not out of His Essence, 190n, 216n  
 on God's acts of creation, 155n, 171n  
 on God's attributes, 658  
 on God's foreknowledge of the fall, 202n, 204, 205n, 455  
 on God's motive in creating, 189  
 on how Adam and Eve were created differently, 245n  
 on the image of God in man, 202n  
 on imagination, 698  
 on immortality, 692n, 739n, 740n  
 on the incorruption of Christ's birth, 461, 652  
 on the length of the Six Days, 138n, 546n  
 on man's body and soul being created simultaneously, 218, 483–84, 553, 644, 671  
 on the meaning of the term "nature," 724  
 on not reducing Genesis to an allegory, 110, 110n, 445–46  
 on the *nous*, 481n  
 on the origin of death, suffering, and corruption, 281, 719–20, 734, 736, 749, 775  
 on the origin of human sexual desire and procreation, 204, 205n, 250, 291n, 721n  
 on Paradise, 224, 228–29, 234, 757, 759  
 on redemption, 281, 736, 749–50, 753n, 759, 775  
 on the serpent in Eden, 254n  
 on the soul, 740n  
 on the state of man and the cosmos before the fall, 162n, 228–29, 250, 455, 691, 692n, 693, 704, 706–7, 715  
 on the tree of knowledge, 230, 393n
- John Moschus, Monk  
*Spiritual Meadow, The*, 935
- John of Kronstadt, St., 116, 116n, 502, 504, 552, 674, 794–95, 795, 951  
 on the distinction between the "kinds" of creatures, 184n  
 on evolutionism, 64, 794–95
- John Paul II, Pope, 571n, 820–21, 821n
- John the Theologian, Apostle and Evangelist, 130, 146, 272n, 448, 762–63, 912, 912n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Apocalypse of (*see* Apocalypse [Revelation], book of)
- Gospel of, 211–12n, 687
- Johnson, Hewlett, 598
- Johnson, Phillip E., 22, 37n, 53n, 54–60, 55, 58n, 60n, 62–63, 76, 76n, 825, 825n, 826n, 828, 890–91
- Against All Gods*, 58n, 891
- Darwin on Trial*, 56, 96, 97n, 98n, 382n, 519n, 524n, 526nn, 528n, 549n, 577n, 659n, 890–91
- Defeating Darwinism by Opening Minds*, 379n, 891, 906
- “Evolution as Dogma,” 28n
- “Fr. Seraphim Rose and Twenty-First-Century Science,” 89–102
- Objections Sustained*, 60n, 381n, 891
- Reason in the Balance*, 100, 891
- Right Questions, The*, 891
- Wedge of Truth, The*, 891
- Jonah, Prophet, 356, 361
- Joseph, Metropolitan of the Bulgarian Eastern Orthodox Diocese of the USA, Canada, and Australia, 83
- Joseph the Fair, Righteous, son of Jacob, 752n
- Josephus, Flavius, 320
- Antiquities of the Jews, The*, 320n, 360n
- Joshua the son of Nun, Righteous, 356n, 565, 752n
- Journal of Creation*, 75n, 88, 325n, 371n, 524n, 893, 897–98, 900n, 903n, 904
- Journal of the Geological Society, London*, 523–24n
- judgment of God, 152, 264, 268, 302, 658, 720, 723, 725, 735, 746, 752, 752n, 868. *See also* Last Judgment
- Julius Africanus, 315n, 320n, 631n, 915
- Jupiter, 374
- Justin (Popovich) of Celije, St., 465n, 506n, 736n, 784n, 805, 807, 808, 910
- on the creation’s condition being tied to man’s fall and resurrection, 732–33, 762–63, 777
- on evolutionism, 81, 84, 784, 809–12, 812n
- on man’s body in the resurrection, 764–65
- Justin Martyr, the Philosopher, St., 197n, 202n, 320n, 337n, 347n, 412, 692n, 887, 911, 912
- compares Eve and the Mother of God, 280n
- on Noah and Christ, 341n
- Kafka, Franz, 595n
- Kalomiros, Alexander, 43–47, 52, 65, 76, 84, 90, 92, 93n, 117n, 417, 419, 421n, 440n, 451n, 452n, 480n, 605, 616–17, 624–29, 632, 635–40, 642–46, 669, 672, 675, 780, 781n, 910
- Against False Union*, 44, 498
- “Eternal Will, The,” 63
- Six Dawns, The*, 155n
- Kansas State University, 523
- Kant, Immanuel, 595n, 789n, 856
- Kardec, Allan, 791, 791n
- Katherine, Nun, icon by, 930
- Kazakhstan, 804
- Kelso, A. J.
- Physical Anthropology*, 383–84n
- Kenya, 384n
- Kenyon, Dean H., 58, 571n, 860, 888
- Of Pandas and People*, 906–7
- Kerkut, G. A.
- Implications of Evolution*, 46
- Khomiakov, Alexey, 516
- Khomichev, V. L., 866
- Khrushchev, Nikita, 657n
- Kilauea Volcano, Hawaii, 532n
- Kim, Jeong Yul, 833
- kinds (of creatures), 206, 222, 231, 456, 502, 686, 704, 724
- alleged transmutation/transformation of, 39, 71n, 94–96, 115n, 381, 389, 423–30, 427–28n, 516, 519, 549, 674
- aboard the Ark, 328, 332, 338, 347
- Biblical references to, 166, 168, 175, 179, 188, 328, 338, 347, 426, 428, 549, 552, 674
- confusion of, linked to moral relativism, 186

## GENERAL INDEX

- kinds (of creatures) (*continued*)
- creation of, 166, 168, 171, 175, 177, 179, 188, 439, 517, 576, 808
  - definition of, given by contemporary Protestant creation scientists, 184n
  - definition of, given by Holy Fathers, 181–85, 181n, 184n
  - distinctness, integrity, and fixity of, 38–39, 49, 71n, 94–96, 115n, 166–68, 175, 181–88, 183–84nn, 238, 247, 328, 338, 347, 381–82, 389, 423–30, 427–28n, 515, 519, 529, 549, 551–52, 618, 669, 809n, 895
  - do not necessarily correspond to the “species” of modern taxonomy, 38n, 181–86, 181n, 184n, 332n, 382, 549, 669 (*see also* species)
  - fluidity of, in the philosophy of Nietzsche, 512–13n
  - Greek and Hebrew words for, 179n
  - impossibility of knowing the number of, in the original creation, 148n, 548–49, 549n
  - named by Adam, 235, 238, 247
  - physical extinction of, 182n, 183n, 382
  - similarities between, 520
  - variation within, 38–39, 382, 424, 470, 515, 519, 549n, 669, 889, 892 (*see also* variation, biological)
- King James Version of the Bible, 271n, 283, 358n
- Kingdom of God, 127, 186, 599, 764
- Kingdom of Heaven, 106, 174–75, 185, 200, 202, 234, 316n, 458, 563, 656, 728, 790. *See also* heaven
- Kireyevsky, Ivan V., 49, **500**, 505–6, 505n, 537, 618, 667
- Kirschner, Marc, 582n
- Kitts, David G.
- “Paleontology and Evolutionary Theory,” 523n
- Klinger, Fr. George
- “Fr. Teilhard de Chardin and Orthodox Tradition,” 600
- Klinghoffer, David
- Signature of Controversy*, 890
- Knight, R. D., et al.
- “Rewriting the Keyboard: Evolvability of the Genetic Code,” 857n
- knowledge, 26, 30, 50, 87, 116, 141n, 190, 387, 396, 460, 471, 551–52, 580, 737, 805, 930, 934
- degrees/hierarchy of, 125, 127, 614–15, 638, 651, 667, 700, 820, 942
  - of Divine things, 467
  - of the end of the world, 137, 602
  - of evil (*see* evil: knowledge of)
  - of the first-created world, 220, 449, 457, 489, 675, 708 (*see also* first-created world)
  - of the future, 918 (*see also* clairvoyance; foreknowledge/foresight of God; prophecy)
  - of God, 738n, 786
  - of goodness (*see* goodness: knowledge of)
  - grace-filled, 507
  - of history, 466
  - human faculty of, 430, 481
  - natural, 125, 458–59, 710
  - nature of, changed at the fall, 489
  - of the origin of the world, 102, 137, 161, 220, 429, 458–59, 545, 560, 602, 643, 651, 668, 675, 684, 886
  - of Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic teaching, 29, 123, 388, 810
  - of Paradise, 220
  - possessed by Adam before the fall, 396, 700, 738n
  - possessed by the devil, 257
  - rationalism has reduced the standard and undermined the certainty of, 538–39
  - revealed, 101, 219, 396, 459, 461, 465, 503, 668, 670, 675, 684, 810, 913 (*see also* revelation, Divine)
  - science has replaced theology as the standard of, 535, 673, 792–93
  - scientific, of the natural world, 24–25, 27, 45, 77, 124, 137, 162, 164–65, 182n, 386, 449, 458–59, 465–66, 468, 489, 501–6, 508–9, 526n, 535–36, 539,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 614, 637, 641–42, 651, 659, 661, 666–68, 675, 685, 792–94, 804, 809, 823, 825, 854, 856, 858–59, 858n, 881, 886, 910
- secular, 465–66, 466n, 468, 491, 501–2, 505, 505n, 507n, 666n
- spiritual, 125, 205, 466, 668, 698, 786, 793, 942
- supranatural, 125, 127
- theological, 465, 468, 504–5, 507n, 509, 535, 651 (*see also* theology)
- of the Uncreated *logoi*, 86n
- Kolbe Center for the Study of Creation, 571n
- Kolchurinsky, Nikolai
- Divine Revelation and Contemporary Science*, 910
- World—God's Creation, The*, 910
- Kolomenskoye Museum, Moscow, icon from, 416
- Koonin, Eugene, 840
- Kopp, Joseph V.
- Teilhard de Chardin: A New Synthesis of Evolution*, 591n
- Kopsidis, Rallis, iconographic drawings by, 938, 941
- Kosturos, Fr. Anthony, 564, 566–67
- Kuhn, Oskar, 839
- Kuhn, Thomas Samuel, 97, 858, 858n
- Kulyamin, L. L., 873
- Kuryatova, Anna, 66, 70
- Kuryatova, Elena, 66
- Kutschera, Ulrich, 822
- Kyrill, Patriarch of Moscow and All Russia, 67n
- labor
- of Noah and his family on the Ark, 338
- ascetic, 82, 656n, 756, 940, 949
- as a result of the fall, 269n, 270, 279, 301, 489, 663, 694–95, 705, 709, 719, 727n, 744–45
- Lactantius, 317n, 320n, 347n, 412, 432n, 917
- Lalomov, Alexander, 67, 68, 77, 531n, 882, 894
- “Age of the Earth and the Rate of Geological Processes, The,” 96n, 861–82
- Sotvoreniye* (Creation), 67, 882, 910
- Stones Cry Out, The* (video), 882
- Lamarck, Jean-Baptiste Pierre Antoine de Monet, Chevalier de, 462n, 497n, 508n, 518, 798
- Philosophie zoologique*, 517, 798
- Lamech, 302, 304–5, 305, 317
- Laplace, Pierre-Simon, 789n
- Last Judgment, 34n, 733, 768n, 770, 771n.
- See also* Jesus Christ, Lord: Second Coming of; judgment of God
- Laughlin, William S., 470n
- Lawrence, Jerome, and Robert Edwin Lee
- Inherit the Wind* (play), 379n
- Leadbeater, C. W., 34n
- lead-lead (Pb-Pb) dating, 865–66, 869. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Leakey, Louis S. B., 383, 383–84n, 577n
- Adam's Ancestors*, 629
- Leakey, Mary D., 383
- Olduvai Gorge*, 383–84n
- Leakey, Meave G.
- “Implications of New Early *Homo* Fossils from Ileret, East Lake Turkana,” 384n
- Leakey, Richard E., 892n
- Making of Mankind, The*, 385n
- Leander, Archbishop of Seville, St., 934
- Lecomte du Noüy, Pierre, 561–64, 577, 588, 621
- Human Destiny*, 561
- Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, 842n
- Leibniz, Gottfried, 622
- Lemaître, Abbé Georges
- Primeval Atom, The*, 376n
- Lenin, Vladimir, 599n
- Lent, Great, 108, 113, 113n, 288, 419, 565n, 604, 624, 626, 759, 791n, 884, 919, 935, 938, 944
- Lenten Triodion*, 938
- Leo the Armenian, Emperor, 938
- Leonid (Kavelin), Fr.
- Elder Macarius of Optina*, 505n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Leontiev, Constantine, 49
- Leontios of Dionysiou Monastery, Monk  
*Prophecies*, 656n
- Levin, Harold L.  
*Earth through Time, The*, 530n
- Lewin, Roger  
*Bones of Contention*, 892n
- Lewontin, Richard, 100–101, 859
- liberalism, 48, 64, 577, 598, 616
- Liberty University, Lynchburg, Virginia, 58
- light, 82, 183n, 190, 245  
creation of, 138, 139n, 146, 149, *151*,  
151–54, 171, 171n, 174–75, 195, 197,  
436  
of the heavenly bodies, 169, 171n, 902,  
904–6 (*see also* heavenly bodies [“lights  
in the firmament of the heavens”])  
material nature of, different before the fall,  
82, 709, 905–6  
original (created on the First Day, before  
the creation of the heavenly bodies),  
138, 139n, 146, 149, *151*, 151–54, 168,  
171, 171n, 173–75, 195, 197, 436  
of Paradise, 757–58  
of the sun, 168–69, 171, 171n, 173–74,  
377  
*See also* Uncreated Light
- likeness of God. *See* man [humanity]: likeness  
of God in
- lions, 135, 177, 253, 416, 553
- Lisle, Jason  
*Old-Earth Creationism on Trial*, 451n  
*Taking Back Astronomy*, 902, 906
- literal interpretation of Scripture. *See* Scrip-  
tural interpretation
- Lives of Saints, 86, 223, 333, 817, 899, 911n.  
*See also Synaxaria*
- “Living Church,” 64–65, 799
- “living fossils,” 526–27, 526n, 527n
- Locke, John, 536
- logoi* of creatures, 85–86, 140n, 182n, 217n,  
477n, 699  
definition of, 86n
- Lomonosov, Mikhail, 824
- long-suffering of God, 262, 340
- Lönnig, Wolf-Ekkehard  
“Evolution of the Long-Necked Giraffe,  
The,” 854n
- Lossky, Vladimir, 711, 714, 740, 774  
*Mystical Theology of the Eastern Church*,  
*The*, 86n, 140n, 156n, 477n, 482n,  
483n, 548n, 711n, 715n, 887
- Lot, Righteous, 335
- Louth, Fr. Andrew, 727  
*Genesis 1–11* (Ancient Christian Com-  
mentary on Scripture: Old Testament,  
vol. 1), 884–85  
*Maximus the Confessor*, 203n, 291n
- love  
of angels for God, 158  
of animals for man, 235  
Apostle John as a symbol of, 448  
as an attribute of God, 822  
of God, in His creation of man and the cos-  
mos, 189–90n  
of God for man, 142, 189n, 215, 250,  
262–63, 266, 288n, 333–34n, 440,  
730, 742–43, 749  
lack of, in the last times, 656n  
lack of, of man for God, 292, 292n, 713  
of man for God, 158, 402n, 700, 702, 711,  
761n, 818n, 919, 951  
for nature, 552  
for one’s fellow man, 812, 818n, 819–20,  
919, 951  
for the saints and their writings, 33, 131,  
419–20, 458, 626–27, 726, 801, 814  
for science, 804  
for the truth, 26
- Lovet, Tim  
“Which Cubit for Noah’s Ark?,” 325n
- Lubenow, Marvin L.  
*Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assess-  
ment of Human Fossils*, 385n, 892
- Luke (Voino-Yasenetsky), Archbishop of  
Simferopol, Hiero-confessor, **808**, 808  
on Darwinism, 809
- Luke, Apostle and Evangelist, 314n, 631n,  
771n  
Gospel of, 314, 631, 631n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Lunar Society, 540n  
 Lunnyy (Lunarmann), Alexey N., 846–47  
   “Mutations and New Genes,” 61–62  
 Lyell, Charles, 517, 530, 530n, 861–62, 880n  
   *Principles of Geology*, 462n, 517–18n
- Macarius, Hieromonk, uncle of St. Nilus the Myrrh-gusher, 947  
 Macarius of Corinth, St., 948, 949n  
 Macarius of Optina, St., 505, 505n  
 Macarius the Great, St., 102n, 114, 217n, 271n, 337n, 601, 922, 923, 940  
   on the age of the demons, 642n  
   on the benefit of trials and afflictions, 402n  
   on the Cherubim with the flaming sword, 119–20n, 277, 446  
   on creation’s bondage to corruption, 272, 456–57, 734  
   on man’s corruption at the fall, 713, 717n  
   on man’s deification, 757  
   on the offerings of Cain and Abel, 292n  
   on the restoration of human nature, 86n, 757
- Macrina the Elder, St., 920  
 Macrina the Younger, St., 203n, 549, 550, 920, 920–21  
   *Life of*, 923  
 Madagascar, 526n  
 Maillet, Benoît de, 462n  
 male and female distinction in man, 195, 200–4, 203n, 210, 306, 557n, 672n, 776n  
   made by God in foreknowledge of the fall, 174–75, 202–4, 249, 455, 548
- Malevi Monastery, the Peloponnese, 947  
 mammals, 451n, 520, 633, 826, 834–35, 837–38, 840  
 mammoths, 405n  
 man (humanity)  
   age of (*see* age of the world)  
   body and physical condition of, before the fall, 84, 86, 204, 209, 224, 228, 245n, 268, 270–75, 275–76n, 282, 388, 391, 394, 406, 456, 463–64, 472, 572–73, 573n, 486–91, 493–94, 494–95n, 547–58, 643, 650, 690, 692–95, 693n, 694n, 699–704, 701n, 710–11, 719–22, 720n, 721n, 728–29, 740–42, 741n, 744, 765–66, 769, 775–77, 780, 781n, 782  
   body and physical condition of, changed at the fall, 43, 224, 271–72, 275, 275n, 282, 388, 456, 463–64, 487, 487n, 494–95n, 572–73, 693, 693n, 713, 716–25, 717–18n, 720n, 724, 724n, 728–30, 732, 735, 741–42, 744–46, 748, 750, 753, 765, 775, 781n, 885  
   body and soul of, created simultaneously, 201n, 217–19, 219n, 482–85, 553–55, 644, 671  
   body of, after the general resurrection (*see* resurrected, spiritual body: of man in the general resurrection)  
   clothed with glory and wrapped in grace before the fall, 84, 228, 249, 259, 276n, 282, 464, 488, 691, 715–16, 720  
   created in grace, 215–16, 215n, 218, 250, 479, 481–83, 483n, 691, 740–41, 740n  
   created in mature form, 194n, 232n  
   created perfect in the sense of flawless, but not in the sense of having reached his final state, 35n, 71n, 127, 155n, 157n, 192, 215, 243, 444, 475n, 479, 482, 485, 494, 555, 572, 625, 690, 702, 710–11, 760, 764, 777, 786, 800–801, 810–11, 815, 822–23  
   creation of (*see* Adam: creation of; Adam: creation of, compared with the creation of Eve; Adam: creation of, compared with the virgin birth of Christ; Adam: creation of, distinguished from the birth of his descendants; Eve, creation of; Eve, creation of, compared with the virgin birth of Christ)  
   as the crown of creation, 70, 194, 200, 250, 479  
   death of (*see* death)  
   death of, during the Flood, 323–25, 323n, 327, 327n, 335, 335n, 337, 337n, 339–42, 342n, 344, 348

## GENERAL INDEX

- man (humanity) (*continued*)
- desire and pleasure in, before the fall, 695–97, 704, 719
  - division of, into male and female (*see* male and female distinction in man)
  - dominion over the lower creation of, 85, 141–42, 188, 195, 198–99, 205–6, 209, 235, 235n, 238–39, 250, 269, 272–73, 333, 333–34n, 349, 398, 440–42, 454–57, 463–64, 488, 662, 690–91, 703, 705–7, 731–35, 763
  - hypothetical evolution of, 23, 44, 47, 70, 71n, 84, 98, 107, 117n, 144, 186, 207, 217, 240, 282, 383–85, 383–84n, 385n, 417, 423, 428, 449–51, 465, 469–72, 475, 480, 486, 495–97, 512–13n, 527, 543, 555, 557n, 569, 571, 571n, 577n, 618, 624–25, 638, 643–44, 660, 662, 671–72, 678–79, 678n, 778–80, 781n, 787, 798, 790, 803–4, 806, 809, 812–13, 812n, 815, 820, 836–38, 864, 892
  - image of God in, 85n, 141, 174–75, 195, 197–202, 199n, 200n, 202n, 203n, 206, 210, 213, 216, 218–19, 221, 227, 234, 251, 306, 349, 393–94, 432n, 440, 443, 472–73, 475, 475n, 477–78, 480, 483, 487, 576n, 660, 692, 702, 717, 739n, 766, 811–13, 811n
  - immortality of (*see* immortality)
  - “inbreathing” of, at creation, 85n, 198, 211, 211n, 214–18, 215n, 250, 394, 417, 472, 479, 481, 483–85, 483n, 553–54, 660, 671, 781n
  - incorruption (original and future) of (*see* incorruption)
  - invulnerability of, before the fall, 250–51, 250n, 485–86, 493, 572
  - likeness of God in, 85n, 147n, 195, 197, 200, 200n, 207, 227, 432n, 475, 483, 702, 717, 738–39nn, 811, 813
  - as a mingled creation (part heavenly, part earthly), 197–98, 207, 219, 477–78, 710–11
  - nakedness of, before the fall, 228, 232n, 245, 249–50, 249n, 257–59, 263, 265–66, 288, 392, 453, 699–700, 700n, 718
  - nature of (*see* nature/essence of man)
  - original designation of/state meant to be achieved by, 234, 252, 390, 394, 396, 403, 488–89, 572, 691–92, 702–3, 710–11, 711n, 761–66, 772–74, 777, 782, 786
  - as qualitatively different from the beasts, 219, 660, 798
  - senses of (*see* senses, bodily)
  - soul of (*see* soul, human)
  - spirit of (*see* *nous* [spirit] of man)
  - spiritual condition of, before the fall, 84–86, 85n, 86n, 115, 226–30, 245n, 247, 249–52, 259, 270, 276n, 282, 290, 396, 406, 464, 472–73, 482, 488–89, 493–94, 495n, 543, 547, 572, 643, 650, 691, 702–3, 705, 710–11, 715–16, 720, 741, 765–66, 775, 777, 782, 800–801, 887
  - virginity and dispassionateness of, before the fall, 75n, 85, 202–5, 202n, 203n, 247, 249, 251, 256, 259, 267–68n, 275n, 280n, 290–91, 398, 494–95n, 548, 643, 694–97, 700, 721–22, 721n, 722n, 741n (*see also* sexual procreation: not originally intended as man’s mode of increase)
  - wisdom and mind of, before the fall, 85, 235, 238, 249–50, 254n, 392–93n, 396–98, 697–99, 699, 714
- Manichaeans, 156n, 388, 401, 927, 939
- Marcus Aurelius, Emperor, 911
- marine invertebrates, 96, 524, 530n, 562, 830
- Mark the Ascetic, St., 745
- marriage, 324, 327n
- Adam’s prophecy of, 247
  - began after the fall, 204–5, 247, 290, 495n, 722
  - blessed by God, 204–5, 247n, 290
  - of Cain, 303, 303n
  - between descendants of Cain and descen-

## GENERAL INDEX

- dants of Seth, 284, 302, 319
- not in the resurrection, 174, 291
- Mars, 682
- Marseilles, France, 374n, 928
- Martin, Fr. Malachi
  - Jesuits, The*, 591n, 599n
- martyrs, 67, 87, 317, 399, 565n, 584, 911, 912, 912–16, 914, 916, 939. *See also*
  - New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia;
  - New Martyrs of Greece
- Marx, Karl, 558n, 599n, 791n
  - Das Kapital*, 558n
- Marxism/Marxists, 64, 186, 558, 591n, 599n, 809, 815–16, 857–58
- Masonry. *See* Freemasonry
- Masoretic Text of the Old Testament, 160n, 179n, 387, 516n, 727n, 745n. *See also*
  - Hebrew language
- material elements, 164, 211, 718, 814
  - created on the First Day, 141n, 149, 154–57, 155n, 157n, 198
  - man invulnerable to, before the fall, 85, 250, 250n, 485, 493, 572, 694
  - reforged and transmuted in the resurrection, 769
  - See also* matter
- materialism, 22, 25–26, 60, 63, 74, 90, 101–2, 503, 508, 508n, 549, 558n, 789n, 791n, 792, 794, 804, 819, 849, 857, 859
- metaphysical, 91, 100
- philosophy of, 36n, 56, 80–81, 90, 438n, 825
- See also* naturalism
- mathematics, 24–25, 58, 70, 307n, 375, 507, 514, 535, 561, 571n, 857, 905, 909, 915
- matter, 125, 142, 154–58, 225, 554, 571, 571n, 585, 591, 595, 714, 794, 798
  - different in the resurrection, 548, 769
  - is not evil, 388
  - non-living, 100, 789n
  - pre-eternal and uncreated, false idea of, 132, 132n, 156, 156n, 503–4n
  - organic, 382, 531, 823
  - of Paradise, 390, 547–48
  - self-organization and self-development of, false idea of, 132n, 157–58, 157n, 174, 503n, 789nn, 802, 814–15, 819–21, 821n, 823–24, 823n, 850
  - Teilhardian worship of, 578–79n
  - very likely different before the fall, 75, 457, 547–48, 548n, 710
  - See also* antimatter; dark matter and energy; material elements
- Matthew, Apostle and Evangelist, 766n
  - Gospel of, 312, 631
- Matthews, L. Harrison, 541n
- Maupertuis, Pierre Louis, 462n
- Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology, Leipzig, 385n
- Maximinus, Emperor, 915
- Maximus the Confessor, St., 200n, 212n, 217n, 255n, 275n, 688, 692n, 720n, 766n, 935, 935nn, 936
  - on death and corruption entering the cosmos at the fall, 689, 693n, 718–19, 723–25, 724n, 734–35, 745
  - on the dependence of created existence on Divine participation and grace, 739n, 740
  - on the division between male and female human beings, 203n
  - on the fall and its consequences, 475n, 689, 695–97, 700–701, 712, 718–19, 723–25, 724n, 734–35, 745, 885
  - on harmonizing Patristic teachings, 32n
  - on human nature, 723–25, 724n, 740–41
  - on the imagination, 698
  - on the *logoi* of creatures, 86n, 217n
  - on man's conditional immortality and incorruption in the beginning, 692n, 694n, 699–701, 701n, 723–24, 740
  - on man's original calling, 702, 711, 711n, 765, 774
  - on the passions, 475n, 698, 700
  - on pleasure and pain, 695–98, 719, 745
  - on sexual procreation as not originally intended for man, 291n, 721n, 722n
  - on the simultaneous creation of man's body



## GENERAL INDEX

- and soul, 219n
- on the state of man and the cosmos beyond the general resurrection, 693n, 746n, 774
- on the state of man before the fall, 250n, 475n, 486n, 693–97, 693n, 694n, 699–701, 701n
- on the teachings of St. Gregory the Theologian, 32n, 198n, 477n, 699–700, 700nn
- on traces of God's majesty in the creation, 697, 786
- understands Scriptural accounts both symbolically and historically, 120, 448
- on what might have been if man had not fallen, 391n, 702, 711, 765, 774
- Maximus the Greek, St., 735n
- Maxwell, James Clerk, 824
- Mayr, Ernst, 575n
  - One Long Argument*, 36n
  - Systematics and the Origin of Species*, 181n
  - Toward a New Philosophy of Biology*, 823n
- McMaster University, Hamilton, Ontario, 37n
- Meien, Sergei V., 867, 872–73, 879–81
- Melchizedek, Righteous, 565
- memory
  - of man before the fall, 235, 397, 697–98
  - of man after the fall, 698, 713–14
- Menaion, 474
  - Festal, The*, 652n, 750n
- Mendel, Gregor, 824
- Mendeleyev, Dimitry, 824
- Menton, David
  - Inherently Wild: A Hollywood History of the Scopes Trial* (video), 379n
- mercy of God, 265n, 274, 276, 279, 295, 298, 302, 319, 348, 720, 744–45, 785
- Mesonyx*, 835–36
- Mesopotamia, 363
- Messalian (Euchite) sect, 931
- Messenger of the Russian Student Christian Movement*, 599–600
- metaphysics/metaphysical assumptions, 27, 73, 91, 100, 421n, 515n, 611, 665, 667–70, 673, 819
- Meteora, Greece, frescos from, 236–37, 407, 435, 496, 926, 937
- meteorites, 862, 870–71
- Methodius of Olympus, St., 190n, 217n, 692n, 916, 916
  - on creation's fall to corruption and restoration to incorruption, 732
  - on the "garments of skin," 275n, 276n
  - on Paradise, 222n
- Methuselah, 163–64n, 302, 307, 316–17, 662
- Meyendorff, Fr. John (Jean), 467n, 599
- Meyer, Stephen C.
  - Signature in the Cell*, 62–63, 659n, 890–91
- Michael, Bishop
  - Gospel of Luke in the Slavonic and Russian Languages, The*, 631n
- Michelangelo, 146
- Middle Ages, 534, 537–39, 572, 583n
- Midgley, Mary, 858–59
- Miller, Hugh
  - Testimony of the Rocks, The*, 663–64n
- Miller, Kenneth, 93n
- Miller and Urey experiment, 843
- "millions of years" schema. *See* evolutionary/uniformitarian time scale
- Milton, Richard
  - Shattering the Myths of Darwinism*, 374n, 527n, 532n
- mind of the Church. *See* Orthodox Church: mind of
- mind of the Fathers. *See* Holy Fathers: mind of
- mineralogy, 66–67
- miracles, 102, 243, 251, 333, 536, 656n, 843
  - of Christ, 653
  - of God's acts of creation, 94, 136, 240, 243, 245n, 394, 437–39, 486, 660n
  - of incorruption, 652–53
  - of saints, 29, 116n, 497n, 653, 794, 797, 809, 923, 929, 934, 949–51
- Misael, Holy Youth, 565
- mitochondria, 840, 855
- Mivart, St. George Jackson, 596
  - On the Genesis of Species*, 513

## GENERAL INDEX

- Moldavia, 223n, 947  
     icons from (*see* Romania: icons from)  
 monasticism, 507n, 656n, 813–14, 919–20, 923–30, 932, 935, 938, 942–44, 946–47, 950  
 Monophysitism, 557, 930, 930n, 935  
 Monothelitism, 935, 935n  
 Monreale Cathedral, Sicily, mosaics from, 176, 296  
 Montanism, 600, 914  
 Montesquieu, Charles-Louis de Secondat, baron de La Brède et de, 462n  
 moon, 148, 175, 183n, 377n, 404, 772, 815  
     created with the appearance of age, 193–94  
     creation of, 4, 139n, 170, 172, 375  
     before the fall, 82, 809, 905–6  
     plants created before, 170–71, 173  
     recession of, from the earth, 902  
 Moore, Ruth  
     *Evolution*, 633n  
 Moorhead, Paul S., and Martin M. Kaplan  
     *Mathematical Challenges to the Neo-Darwinian Interpretation of Evolution*, 514n  
 morality, 542n, 561, 855  
     changing standards (“evolution”) of, 186, 541, 561, 564, 576n, 860  
     influence of evolutionary thought on, 24, 186, 541–42, 576n, 665–66, 790, 794–95, 798  
     Patristic teachings on, 115n, 503–5, 686, 924, 927, 950  
     questions of, 33  
     relative, 42n, 186, 282 (*see also* relativism)  
 Moreland, J. P.  
     *Three Views on Creation and Evolution*, 58n  
 Morgan, Thomas Hunt, 574n  
 Morozova, Elena  
     *Introduction to Natural Science*, 910  
 morphology, 93, 99, 834, 837, 840, 849  
     comparative, 519–20, 838–39, 853  
 Morris, Henry M., 48, 666  
     *Biblical Basis for Modern Science, The*, 664nn, 897, 901  
     *Genesis Flood, The*, 48, 338, 373, 373n, 409, 672n, 896, 900  
     *Long War against God, The*, 893  
     *Scientific Creationism*, 378–79, 640, 680  
     *That Their Words May Be Used against Them*, 896, 898  
 Morris, John D.  
     *Dinosaurs, the Lost World, and You*, 900  
     *Footprints in the Ash*, 900  
     *Fossil Record, The*, 896  
     *Young Earth, The*, 525n, 531n, 532n, 533n, 893–94  
 Mortenson, Terry  
     “Orthodoxy and Genesis: What the Fathers Really Taught,” 88  
 Moscow, Russia, 61, 66–67, 77, 416, 598–99, 796, 803–4, 882, 908, 948  
 Moscow Kremlin, 70  
 Moscow Patriarchate, 67, 70n, 689, 909. *See also* Russian Orthodox Church  
 Moscow Society for Creation Science, 882, 908, 910  
 Moscow State University, 71, 909  
 Moscow State University of Railway Engineering, 68–69, 689  
 Moses, Prophet, 104, 113n, 126, 138–39, 143, 153–54, 156n, 158–59, 168, 212, 215, 218, 221, 232n, 404n, 434, 467, 479, 484, 565  
     Divine revelation imparted to, 78, 86–87, 127, 127n, 128–29, 129–31, 175, 409, 459, 471, 497, 554, 562, 675, 684–85  
     God’s covenant with, 351  
     historicity of, 120, 409n  
     law of, 329, 409n  
     *Life of*, 923  
     as a prophet of the past, 78, 130–31, 562  
     spoken of by Christ, 409n  
     as a symbol of judgment, 120, 448  
     as a type of Christ, 122n, 749n, 752n  
     writing of the book of Genesis by, 125, 127, 409, 409n  
 Mother of God, Most Holy (Virgin Mary, *Panagia*), 815n  
     compared and contrasted with Eve, 242–43, 266–67, 267–68n, 280, 280–81n, 432, 432–33n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Mother of God, Most Holy (Virgin Mary, *Panagia*) (*continued*)
- creation of Adam compared with the virginal birthgiving by, 212n
  - creation of Eve compared with the virginal birthgiving by, 242–43, 281n, 432, 432–33n
  - glorified body of, 203n
  - healing through, 936
  - hymn to, 938
  - miraculous birth of, compared with the creation of Adam and Eve, 432–33n
  - “seed” of, conquers the devil, 266–67, 267–68n
  - virginal, painless, incorrupt birthgiving by, 212n, 242–43, 267, 267–68n, 281n, 341n, 432, 432n, 460–61, 631n, 649, 652, 652n, 815
  - visions of St. Seraphim of, 949
- multiverse hypothesis, 592n
- music, 302, 936
- Muslims, 67n, 936, 939
- mutations, 96, 891
- accumulation of, linked to reduced life expectancy, 304n, 307n, 849
  - adaptive (positive), 61, 780, 844–46
  - as a basic mechanism in neo-Darwinian evolution, 61–62, 94, 381, 518, 529n, 660, 780, 823n, 828, 843, 889
  - cannot reverse or even neutralize degradation of genomes, 62, 849–50, 856, 889 (*see also* genomes: deterioration of)
  - deformities caused by, 94, 304n, 528, 528n, 844
  - deleterious, 844–46, 849, 889
  - do not increase functional, prescriptive genetic information, 61–62, 381, 528–29, 528–29nn, 844–47, 849, 889 (*see also* information, biological/genetic)
- Mysteries, Holy, 225n, 753, 811, 922, 931, 945. *See also* Baptism, Holy; Chrismation, Holy; Eucharist, Holy
- mythologizing of the book of Genesis. *See* Scriptural interpretation: reductionist allegorical
- myths
- ancient, 125, 136, 156, 222, 489, 683, 783n, 790, 793, 798, 898
  - modern, 378, 380, 666n, 856, 858
- National Association of Biology Teachers (NABT), 91, 91n, 100
- National Center for Science Education, 58, 91n, 681n
- Nativity of the Mother of God–St. Therapont Monastery, Russia, icon from, 758
- Natural History*, 381n, 521n, 523n, 658n, 666n
- natural selection, 22n, 36n, 37n, 57, 61–62, 92, 381, 462n, 513, 518, 529nn, 575–76, 823n, 826, 828–29, 831, 835, 843, 847, 849, 853, 853n, 889, 891
- naturalism, 95, 468, 476, 621, 623
- of ancient theories of origins, 38, 132, 168n, 503–4n, 557n, 823
  - definition of, 21, 90, 632, 792
  - evolutionary, 23, 89, 90–91, 98–100, 132n, 556, 823, 823n, 891, 901
  - faith in, 22, 44, 84
  - false identification of, with science, 21–28, 28n, 37, 46, 60, 77, 792, 804
  - historical roots of, 28n, 535, 543
  - metaphysical, 100
  - of modern theories of origins, 22, 26, 38, 90, 168n, 240, 789–90, 789nn, 792, 821n, 823, 823n, 856, 890–91, 901, 903–4
  - philosophy of, 21, 28, 28n, 48, 59, 90, 100, 102, 461–62, 544, 804, 871
  - presuppositions/assumptions of, 22, 28, 48, 59, 73, 96n, 100, 102, 421n, 513, 591n, 792, 849, 871
  - worldview of, 652n
- nature (created order), 21, 36–37n, 57, 92, 133, 136–38, 142–43, 147n, 152, 165, 179, 184–86, 192, 427, 438, 440, 440n, 466, 471, 544, 552–53, 559–60
- before the fall, 208, 707, 738, 763
  - as the central idea of the Enlightenment, 535–37, 541, 543, 622

## GENERAL INDEX

- change and development in, 424, 427
- changed/corrupted at the fall, 548n, 732–33, 736–37, 762–63
- contemplation of, 808
- as creator (in evolutionism), 90, 100, 575n, 798, 829
- force of, 404
- freed from corruption at the general resurrection, 763, 777
- identified with God (in pantheism), 580
- knowledge of, 449, 502–3, 503n, 509, 535, 666n, 686, 700
- law(s) of, 74, 135, 135–36n, 137–38, 164, 208, 219, 333, 437, 457, 461, 486, 545, 547–48, 649–50, 653, 653n, 687, 710, 850, 905, 907
- love of, 552
- as a reminder of Paradise, 252
- See also* created order
- Nature* (journal), 384n, 857n
- nature and grace. *See* grace: and nature, relationship between
- nature/essence of angels, 158, 159n, 198, 490–91n, 255, 413, 490
- Nature/Essence of God. *See* Essence/Nature of God
- nature/essence of man, 26, 49, 114, 118, 131, 143, 144, 174, 198, 202, 203n, 207, 215–18, 217n, 231, 235, 238, 270, 292, 347n, 356, 423, 429, 431n, 471–87, 497, 542, 555, 576n, 625, 628, 657, 671, 675, 700, 702, 735, 739n, 742, 765
- change/corruption of, 233, 266, 275, 395–96, 474–75, 475n, 489, 493–94, 494–95n, 572–73, 573n, 660, 712–25, 715n, 717–18n, 724n, 734–41, 741n, 745–46, 774, 785, 799, 810, 887
- condition and actions against, 252, 473, 712, 735
- creation of, 199, 201, 224, 482, 695
- fallen, 273, 395–98, 472–74, 713
- image of God in, 478, 483
- knowledge of, 230
- oneness of, in man and woman, 234, 240, 242–43, 247, 303n, 394
- original, before the fall, 78, 83–84, 86n, 251, 256, 282, 329, 395–96, 406, 428n, 450, 465, 472–79, 475n, 482, 494, 494–95n, 572, 601–2, 643, 661, 673, 738–41, 810, 887
- restoration/resurrection of, 274, 394, 473, 761n
- Roman Catholic doctrine of, 472, 476, 481, 492–93, 660–61
- unity of, 303n, 430–31, 431n, 475, 556n, 725, 725n, 751–53
- natures/essences of created things, 60n, 78, 121, 149, 158, 183–84n, 186, 436, 510
- before the fall, 454
- distinction between/incapable of mixing, 86, 144, 152, 155n, 167, 182–83, 186–88, 382, 386, 497, 550–53, 556, 643, 654, 670, 674–75, 809
- Naucratus, St., 921
- Neanderthal Man, 384–85, 385n, 469–70, 470n, 527, 543, 623, 661, 821, 837
- Nebraska Man, 836
- nebular hypothesis, 789n. *See also* earth: naturalistic theories of the origin of
- Nectaros of Pentapolis, St., 497n, 797, 951
- on evolutionism, 81, 495, 497, 618, 797–99, 888
- Nedel'ko, Vitaly Il'ich, and Andrei Giorgievich Khundzhua
- Fundamentals of Contemporary Natural Science*, 909
- Nektary (Kontzevitch), Bishop of Seattle, 29, 65
- Nektary of Optina, St., 29
- neocatastrophism. *See* catastrophism/neocatastrophism
- neo-Darwinism/neo-Darwinian synthesis, 24, 24n, 46, 53–54, 58n, 59n, 61–62, 64, 71, 381n, 514n, 540n, 780, 822, 829, 833n, 843–44, 847, 854, 858, 889–90
- definition of, 22n, 529n, 823n
- See also* Darwinism/Darwinian theory
- Neptune, 903n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Nestorianism/Nestorius, 928–30
- New Age, 563, 590, 594  
     “of the Holy Spirit,” 597n
- New Age movement, 593n
- “new Christianity,” 498, 580n, 584, 594n, 600. *See also* “new religion”
- new heaven and new earth, 82, 323, 573, 762–63, 941
- New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia, 35n, 65, 399, 401, 796–97, 797, 799–804, 800, 802–3, 808–9, 824
- New Martyrs of Greece, 948
- “New Order,” 35, 595
- “new religion,” 23, 594n
- New Scientist*, 469n, 678n, 902
- New Testament, 40, 41n, 123n, 131, 337n, 341n, 597n, 600, 689–90, 751n, 810, 911, 936, 943  
     era, 263n, 652  
     *See also* Bible, Holy; chronology, Biblical; Scriptural interpretation
- New Valaam Theological Academy, 50–51, 105
- New Zealand, 532n, 866, 870
- Newsweek*, 824n
- Newton, Sir Isaac, 516, 534–36, 534n, 539, 584, 620, 620n, 622–23, 824  
     *Principia Mathematica*, 535
- Ngauruhoe, Mount (New Zealand), 532n, 866, 870, 870n
- Nicephorus, disciple of St. Andrew the Fool for Christ, 223
- Nicetas Stethatos, 228n, 941, 941–42, 941n  
     on the image and likeness of God in man, 200n, 202n  
     on man’s restoration to his original state, 85n
- Nicholas Cabasilas, St., 945, 945  
     on Christ’s redemptive work, 756–57n, 759n  
     on the Holy Eucharist, 756–57n  
     on the state beyond the general resurrection, 761n
- Nicholas Pokrovsky, Priest, Hieromartyr, 802–4
- Nicodemus of the Holy Mountain, St., 942, 948, 948–49, 949n  
     on imagination, 698–99, 714
- Niermann, D. Lee  
     “Dinosaurs and Dragons,” 897
- Nietzsche, Friedrich, 512  
     *Thus Spake Zarathustra*, 512–13n  
     *Untimely Meditations*, 513n
- nihilism, 29, 790
- Niklas, Karl J., 822
- Nikolacopoulos, George, icon by, 328
- Nikolai (Velimirovich), Bishop of Zica, St., 805  
     on evolutionism, 81, 805–7, 809  
     on the origin of death, 736–38, 784n, 807  
     on St. John Chrysostom as an interpreter of St. Paul, 726
- Nikon of Optina, Hiero-confessor, 709
- Nile River, 225, 406
- Nilus of Sinai, St., 41n, 927, 927–28  
     on the interpretation of Scripture, 123n  
     on the “tilling” and “keeping” of Paradise, 226
- Nilus of Sora, St., 946, 946–47  
     on the “tilling” and “keeping” of Paradise, 226
- Nilus the Myrrh-gusher, St., 946, 947  
     on the last times, 656, 656n
- Nimrod, 360
- Nineveh, 356, 360, 933
- Niphon, Bishop of Constantia, St.  
     on the last times, 656, 656n
- Noah, Righteous, 162, 225, 303n, 322, 331, 341, 351, 406, 408, 565, 662, 1062  
     and Adam, comparisons and parallels between, 323, 333, 333–34n, 347, 347nn, 349–50, 352, 358  
     animals enter the Ark with, 328, 329, 330, 331–33, 332nn, 333–34n, 338  
     aboard the Ark, 327n, 329, 331, 338–39, 342–43  
     builds and prepares the Ark, 325, 326, 327, 329, 338, 340  
     chastity of, 324, 324n, 352, 352n  
     Christ’s words about, 327n, 662n

## GENERAL INDEX

- commandments of God to, 325, **328**, 329,  
 331, 338, 347, 349–50, 352n  
 covenant between God and, 163, 327,  
 349–51, 404  
 cultivates a vineyard and drinks wine, 352,  
 353, 354, **355**  
 declining life-spans of people after, 307n  
 genealogy from Adam to, 306–17  
 generations of the sons of, 317, 324, 352,  
 356, 356n, 358, 358nn, 360–61, 454  
 given permission to eat flesh, 163,  
 163–64n, 329, 349  
 historicity of, 335, 337, 337n, 662, 662n  
 leaves the Ark, **340**, 345–46, **346**  
 life-span of, 163–64n, 339, 358  
 meaning of the name of, 317  
 as the new progenitor of the human race,  
 334–35nn, 337, 337n, 347, 347nn,  
 349, 352, 356, 358  
 offers sacrifice, 329, 347–48, **348**  
 prophecies concerning his descendants,  
 354, 356, 356n, **357**, 358  
 righteousness and obedience of, 324,  
 324n, 329, 333, 333–34n, 347, 347n  
 sends the raven and the dove, 343–44, **344**,  
**345**, 345n, **346**, 347, 347n, **351**  
 as a type of Christ, 341n  
 wife of, 327, 331, 338, 341n, 345, **346**,  
 347, **348**, 352n  
 Noble, C. S., and J. J. Naughton  
 “Deep Ocean Basalts,” 532n  
 Nod, land of, 284, 299, 302  
 Noebel, David A.  
*Understanding the Times*, 893  
 noosphere (concept of Teilhard de Chardin),  
 581, 581n, 592, 594, 612  
 “North American Stratigraphic Code,” 372n  
 North Carolina State University, 896  
*nous* (spirit) of man, 340, 479–80, 697–98,  
 740n, 742, 753n, 942  
 grace united with, at the moment of man’s  
 creation, 482, 483n  
 as the highest faculty of the soul, 202n,  
 215, 480–81, 481n  
 “image of God” refers to, 202n  
 knowledge given to, 125, 793  
 state of, before the fall, 228, 696  
 state of, in the general resurrection, 772  
 united with the body, 198  
*See also* soul, human  
 “NOVA” (television program), 93n  
 Oakley, Todd H., and Clifford Cunningham  
 “Molecular Phylogenetic Evidence for the  
 Independent Evolutionary Origin of an  
 Arthropod Compound Eye,” 842n  
 Oard, Michael J.  
 “Evolutionary Troubles with the Origin  
 and Demise of Dinosaurs,” 895  
 “Excellent Summary of Scientific Evidence  
 for Creation and the Flood,” 900  
*Flood by Design*, 900  
*Frozen Record, The*, 901  
 oceans. *See* seas/oceans  
*Octoechos*, 281n, 937  
*Odontochelys*, 834  
 Oecumenius, 317n, 932–33, 932n  
 Old Calendarists, 645  
 old earth/progressive creationism, 57, 115n,  
 135n, 169n, 334n, 429n, 451n, 663n,  
 780n  
 Old Testament, 29, 39, 41nn, 113, 123,  
 341n, 516, 516n, 565n, 597n, 600,  
 689, 751–52n, 791n, 810, 897, 907,  
 936. *See also* Bible, Holy; chronology,  
 Biblical; Forefathers, Old Testament; ge-  
 nealogies, Old Testament; Masoretic  
 Text of the Old Testament; Patriarchs,  
 Old Testament; Prophets, Old and New  
 Testament; Scriptural interpretation;  
 Septuagint Text of the Old Testament  
 Olduvai Gorge, Tanzania, 383–84n  
 Olkhovskiy, V. S., 869  
 Olson, Everett Claire, 24  
 Omega Point (concept of Teilhard de Char-  
 din), 589, 599, 612  
 omnipotence of God, 38, 87, 555, 562, 585n,  
 658, 675, 794, 805, 807–8, 814  
 Optina Monastery, Russia  
 elders of, 29, 64–65, 82, 84, 108n, 505,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 505n, 618, 653n, 709, 786–87, 788,  
795, 795–96, 899, 905  
icons from, 648, 912  
Origen, 140n, 218, 222n, 388, 446n, 483,  
550, 553–54, 701n, 771n, 915–16,  
923–24  
Origenism/Origenists, 40, 218, 445–46,  
446n, 484, 700n, 701n, 771n, 923n,  
935n  
“original sin,” 282, 536, 568–69, 715n  
*Origins & Design*, 91n, 115n  
Ormylia Monastery, Greece, frescos from,  
934, 940  
Orthodox Christianity/Orthodoxy. *See*  
Christianity: Orthodox  
Orthodox Christians opposed to evolution-  
ism, 63–64, 80  
hierarchs and clergy, 65–67, 67nn, 68–69,  
70–72, 70–71n, 80, 83, 107, 107n,  
644–45  
Patristic scholars and theological writers,  
44, 65–67, 67n, 68–69, 79–80, 645n,  
888, 907–10, 1039–40  
saints and elders, 65, 80–82, 84, 184n,  
495, 497, 497n, 787–821, 888, 899  
scientists, 61–62, 64–67, 68–69, 70–77,  
87, 184n, 531n, 846, 860, 882, 890,  
894, 905n, 906–10, 1039–40  
Orthodox Church, 27, 30–33, 35, 42, 44,  
64–67, 83, 89, 115n, 116n, 140–41n,  
206–7, 228n, 243, 272n, 277, 409, 461,  
463, 467, 471–72, 480, 597, 601, 646,  
649, 656, 656n, 662, 693n, 800, 808,  
816, 912n, 916, 941, 943, 948–49  
asceticism of (*see* asceticism/ascetics)  
attacks on, 38, 610–11, 792, 799, 814, 825  
as the Body of Christ, 30, 784, 811–12  
calendar of, 315n, 338n, 387n, 605, 663  
canons, decrees, and laws of, 32n, 303,  
315n, 320n, 574n, 693, 693n, 939, 949  
catechisms of, 114, 601, 887n, 910,  
922–23, 950  
Councils of (*see* Councils of the Church)  
education in, 66, 70–71, 910, 915, 951  
evolutionism leaves no place for, 784, 812  
experience of Divine grace in, 74, 81, 85,  
398, 685  
fullness of Divine revelation in, 77–78,  
684  
glorification of saints by, 64, 116n, 508,  
574, 796, 799, 801–2, 911n  
guided by the Holy Spirit, 320n, 410n  
hierarchy of, 29, 35n, 65–68, 67n, 70–72,  
70n, 303n, 315n, 399n, 447, 491,  
656n, 787, 791n, 796, 799, 801, 805,  
808, 824n, 859n, 899, 911–12,  
914–26, 929–31, 933–35, 939,  
943–45, 949–51  
Holy Scripture truly interpreted in and by,  
30, 39, 74, 77, 87, 112, 113n, 114n,  
122–23n, 127, 320n, 386, 409–13,  
683–86, 733, 751–52n, 933  
iconography of, 146, 907, 936, 938  
man is spiritually resurrected and united  
with God in, 398, 753, 756, 760, 764,  
801, 811, 945  
mind of, 30–32, 32n, 39, 81, 112, 114n,  
122n, 511, 601  
missionary work of, 29, 66, 67n, 70, 705,  
794, 807, 907–8  
monasticism of (*see* monasticism)  
Old Testament images and types of, 298n,  
341, 341nn, 706n  
prophecy concerning the future of, 130  
schism from, 534n, 799 (*see also* Schism of  
Rome)  
services of (*see* services of the Church, Di-  
vine)  
spiritual life in, 79, 511  
teachings condemned by, 34n, 771n, 791,  
791n, 884, 913n, 915, 917, 923n, 929,  
935, 935n (*see also* heresy)  
testimony of, 203n, 428n, 692  
theology/teaching of (*see* theology: Ortho-  
dox Patristic)  
tradition of, 32n, 80, 125, 127, 656n, 913  
worldview of (*see* worldview: Orthodox  
Scriptural-Patristic)  
written histories of, 929–30  
Orthodox Church in America (American

## GENERAL INDEX

- Metropolia), 599
- "Orthodox evolutionism," 37, 44, 63, 78–79, 417, 433, 449–50, 451n, 480, 494n, 502, 509, 559–61, 564–6, 568, 573–77, 574n, 575n, 581–82, 598–601, 612, 616, 621, 624–28, 632, 642–45, 662, 669, 674, 908. *See also* "Christian evolutionism"; theistic evolutionism
- "Orthodox Interpretation of the Creation of the World and Contemporary Science, The," conferences and conference proceedings, 61, 67, 67n, 68–69, 70, 72, 689, 890, 908
- Orthodox Missionary Center "Shestodnev," 66–67, 68–69, 70–71, 907–8
- Orthodox Observer*, 559, 564, 616n
- Orthodox Theological Society of America, 574
- Orthodox Word*, 67n, 107n, 595n, 656n, 899n
- "Orthodoxy and the Natural Environment" conference, 689
- O'Toole, Christopher J.  
*Philosophy of Creation in the Writings of St. Augustine, The*, 115n
- Owen, Richard, 24
- oxen. *See* cattle (oxen)
- Pachomios of Mount Athos, Fr., icon by, 932
- paganism/pagans, 60, 160, 471, 478, 506, 535, 911, 913–15, 919, 923, 927, 929–30, 939
- belief in transmigration of souls of, 187
- creation myths of, 156–57, 156n, 489
- pain
- death prevents, from lasting forever, 276n, 745–46
- not felt by Adam when his rib was taken out, 243, 245
- not felt by the Mother of God in giving birth, 461, 652, 652n
- originated at the fall, 268, 269n, 271, 275n, 276n, 279, 548, 570, 692, 694–95, 699, 718–20, 722, 724n, 744–45, 762
- pleasure and, 652n, 695–96, 699, 719, 745
- See also* suffering
- Paisios (Ezrepidis) of Mount Athos, Elder, 81, 814–18, 817, 818n
- Paisios (Olaru) of Sihastria and Sihla, Elder, 812–13, 813
- Paisius Velichkovsky, St., 693n, 947–48, 948, 950
- on man in Paradise, 227
- Pajaro Dunes, California, 56, 58
- Palatine Chapel, Palermo, Sicily, mosaic from, 241
- paleoanthropology, 383–84n. *See also* fossils: human and allegedly pre-human
- paleobiology, 523n, 525n
- Paleobiology* (journal), 526n
- Paleontology Museum, UC Berkeley, 93
- paleontology/paleontologists, 24, 53–54, 58, 119, 371n, 381n, 382nn, 385n, 470, 514, 518, 522–27, 523–25nn, 526nn, 568, 571n, 577, 629, 658n, 666n, 678n, 823n, 825, 832–40, 832n, 838n, 867, 876, 878–79
- as a less precise science, 658–59, 659n
- theology and, 658–59
- "trade secret" of, 53, 96–97
- See also* fossils
- Palestine, 356n, 915, 928–29, 931, 937
- Paley, William, 36n
- panentheism, 60, 585n
- definition of, 60n
- Pantaenus of Alexandria, 913
- pantheism, 60, 282, 580
- definition of, 585n
- papacy, 587, 939
- Papua New Guinea, 837
- Paradise (Eden), 35, 114–15, 130, 232n, 233, 239, 253, 256, 267–68n, 278, 280–81, 290, 298, 316n, 389n, 398, 445–46, 491–95, 543, 565n, 569–70, 572, 638, 643, 653, 655, 657, 717, 766, 778
- Adam brought into/placed in, 221, 227, 255, 281n, 283, 390, 398, 463, 472–73, 692



## GENERAL INDEX

### Paradise (Eden) (*continued*)

animals brought into, 141, 234–35, 238, 398, 444, 454  
 animals named in (*see* animals: named by Adam)  
 banishment of Adam and Eve from, 16, 83, 106, 119, 204, 248, 249n, 251, 259, 261, 265n, 273, 276–77, 276n, 277–79, 283–84, 287, 288n, 290, 392n, 397, 406, 408, 416, 446, 463–64, 473, 684, 708, 720, 723, 735, 743, 757, 775  
 cannot be known through natural science, 457–58, 495  
 condition of man in (*see* man [humanity]: body and physical condition of, before the fall; man [humanity]: spiritual condition of, before the fall)  
 creation/planting of, 124, 220, 220n, 222, 390, 445, 463, 486  
 distinguished from heaven, 221–23, 222n, 229, 234, 389–90, 398–99  
 distinguished from the rest of the original creation, 208–9, 234–35, 390  
 double (material and spiritual) aspect of, 220–21, 224–29, 228n, 389  
 as existing even now, 220–25, 223n, 252, 390, 399, 406–7, 456, 547, 705n  
 experienced in its fullness at the general resurrection, 220, 251–52, 391, 772, 777  
 fruits in (*see* fruits: in Paradise; trees: in Paradise; tree of life; tree of the knowledge of good and evil)  
 gates of, 278, 652n, 759  
 incorruption of, 222–24, 273, 390, 456, 463, 547, 690, 705, 709  
 location of, 124, 220–21, 224–25, 283–84, 445  
 man lived near and in sight of, after the fall, 285, 285, 288, 288n, 299, 302, 308, 321n, 406, 408  
 man's "tilling" and "keeping" of, 225–27  
 "material" of, 224, 227, 389–90, 548  
 Moses' naming of the place of, 220–22, 220n

not cursed by God at man's fall, 273, 390, 728  
 not mythological, unhistorical, or merely allegorical, 41, 110, 119, 122, 224–25, 225n, 227–28, 228n, 277, 281–82, 444–47, 446n, 570, 673, 775  
 originally a place on the earth, 124, 221–22, 222n, 224–25, 228, 252, 273, 283–84, 389–90, 398, 406, 445, 463, 486  
 as a place for man's training, 229–31  
 plants in (*see* plants [vegetation, herbs]: in Paradise)  
 reminders of, 83, 252  
 reopened to man by Christ, 249n, 252, 390, 394, 400, 652n, 663, 757, 759, 774  
 rivers of, 122, 224–25, 225n, 444–45  
 trees in (*see* tree of life; tree of the knowledge of good and evil; trees: in Paradise)  
 vegetarianism practiced in, 208  
 virginity practiced in, 204–5, 290–91, 722  
 visions of, 128, 220–24, 223n, 252, 390, 399, 406–7, 547  
 wholeworld originally incorrupt like, 209, 272–73, 398, 463–64, 690, 703, 708, 728, 781n  
*See also* first-created world  
 Paris, France, 561, 579n, 599–600  
 Parker, Gary  
     *Creation: Facts of Life*, 378, 524n, 891  
 Pascal, Blaise, 824  
 passibility, 724, 724n  
 passions, 143, 175, 206–7, 252, 259, 278, 292, 295, 298n, 352, 655, 656n, 713–14, 790, 795, 797, 947  
 cannot be attributed to God, 712n  
 man not originally subject to, 75n, 84–85, 85n, 208, 238, 247, 249–52, 256, 259, 275n, 398, 473, 475, 475n, 482, 486, 488, 643, 694, 696, 698, 700–701, 713–14, 739n  
 not present after the general resurrection, 746  
 Pasteur, Louis, 824

## GENERAL INDEX

- Patriarchs, Old Testament, 127, 225, 324,  
356, 386, 408, 637, 653  
historicity of, 308–9, 450, 637, 653  
life-spans of, 163, 163–64n, 304, 307,  
314, 410, 412–14  
*See also* Forefathers, Old Testament
- Patristics. *See* Holy Fathers
- Paul, Apostle, 206, 319, 328, 402n, 466,  
479–80, 599, 726, 753n, 765, 925,  
949–50  
on Baptism, 754–55  
caught up to Paradise and the third heaven,  
83, 221–22, 222n, 224, 252, 390  
on Christ as Creator, 146  
on the coming of Christ, 267n  
on creation's bondage to corruption, 43,  
271, 573, 690, 727–30, 732, 762, 781n  
on death entering the world through man's  
sin, 42, 271n, 394–95, 396n, 690,  
733–34, 735n, 751–52, 775–78, 781n,  
782–83nn  
on the life of virginity, 205  
on the parallel between one man as the  
source of death and One Man as the  
Source of life, 394–95, 395n, 662n,  
734, 751–52, 775–78, 782–83nn  
on redemption, 394–95, 395n, 662n, 749,  
751–52, 754–56, 761–66, 769,  
774–78, 782–83nn  
on the resurrection of man and the restora-  
tion of creation's incorruption, 271,  
464, 690, 729–32, 743, 761–66, 769,  
782–83nn  
St. John Chrysostom as the greatest inter-  
preter of the Epistles of, 726  
on the translation of Enoch, 316  
typology in the Epistles of, 122–23n, 751,  
751–52n  
understands Old Testament figures and  
events as historical, 122–23n, 751–52n,  
776n, 782–83nn
- Paul Andreyev, Protopresbyter, Hieromartyr,  
802, 803, 804
- Paul of Obnora, St., 239, 333
- Paulician sect, 939
- Pavle, Patriarch of Serbia  
*Clarifying Some Questions about Our Faith*,  
303n
- Pavlov, Ivan, 824
- Peking Man, 469–70, 470n, 578, 578n, 607
- Pelagianism, 115n, 661, 927
- Peleg, 361, 368
- Pennsylvania State University, 841n
- peppered moth experiment, 95, 95n
- Peter, Apostle, 337n, 340–41, 448, 657,  
668–69n, 753n, 762, 765, 769
- Peter, Bishop of Sebaste, St., 921
- Peter Damascene, St., 402n, 941, 942
- Peter I, Tsar of Russia, 315n
- petroleum deposits, 531n, 877–78
- pharaohs, 127, 412
- Pharisees, 298n, 476, 653n, 818
- Philaret, Metropolitan of Moscow, St., 116,  
116n, 787–88, 949, 950  
on plants before the fall, 704  
on the Six Days, 141n, 157n
- Philo of Alexandria  
*Giants, The*, 320n  
*On the Creation*, 140n
- Philokalia, The*, 85n, 86n, 157n, 202n,  
230n, 402n, 481n, 642n, 696, 717n,  
720n, 739n, 740n, 928, 931, 939–42,  
944  
English, 490, 490n  
Greek, 490n, 923, 949n  
Russian, 455, 490n, 638, 693n, 788, 923,  
950  
Slavonic, 693n, 947–48  
writers of, on the image and likeness of  
God, 200n
- Philotheou Monastery, Mount Athos, icon  
from, 425
- philotimo*, 818, 818n
- Photius the Great, St., 212n, 255n, 280–81n,  
735n, 939, 940  
compares Eve and the Mother of God,  
280–81n, 432–33n  
on the creation of Adam and Eve, 432–33n  
on the Holy Fathers, 32n
- photosynthesis, 842, 855

## GENERAL INDEX

- physics, 54, 70, 75n, 95, 571n, 591n, 877,  
902–3, 903n, 905, 909  
before the fall, 75, 75n  
of clouds, 405n  
laws of, 75n, 102, 849, 905  
“new,” of the Renaissance and Enlighten-  
ment, 28, 584  
*See also* astrophysics; biophysics; geophys-  
ics
- physiology, 46, 561, 582n  
comparative, 520
- Pilbeam, David, 385n
- Piltdown Man, 384, 384nn, 469, 577,  
577nn, 607, 836
- Pioneer effect, 904
- Pishon River, 224
- Pitesti prison, Romania, 818
- Pithecanthropus*, 836
- Pius IX, Pope, 596
- placer deposits, 67, 874–75
- planets, 371, 374–75, 377, 377n, 404, 522,  
682  
age of, 901–2, 903n  
atmospheres of, 533n  
life on other, speculation about, 100,  
377–78  
magnetic fields of, 902, 903n  
naturalistic theories of the origin of,  
375–76, 789n  
*See also* Jupiter; Mars; Neptune; Saturn;  
Uranus; Venus
- plants (vegetation, herbs), 181n, 344, 437,  
439, 440n, 833, 848n, 853, 856  
carnivorous, 842  
created before the sun, 135, 167–68, 168n,  
170–71, 171n, 173, 375, 429  
created with the appearance of age, 138,  
144, 166–67, 167n, 193–94, 194n,  
438, 552  
creation of, 135, 138–39, 142, 144,  
165–68, 166, 167n, 171, 177, 181, 187,  
193–94, 194n, 210, 212, 222, 390,  
438–39, 449, 552  
distinctness and fixity of the kinds of,  
165–66, 168, 182, 184–86, 424–26  
genetics of, 62, 889  
given to man and animals as their only  
source of food in the beginning, 59, 83,  
135–36n, 162, 207–8, 222, 222n, 227,  
230, 252, 255, 452–55, 463, 489, 651n,  
706–8, 779, 896  
grasses, 121, 135, 144, 166, 166, 173, 193,  
208, 212, 321, 429, 434, 708, 801  
growth of, from seed, 117n, 192, 687, 815  
hypothetical evolution of, 23, 98, 102,  
144, 388–89  
man must labor to cultivate, after the fall,  
269–70  
as man’s only food until after the Flood,  
163, 163–64n, 328–29, 349  
Genesis references to, are not merely sym-  
bolic, 120–21, 434  
not poisonous before the fall, 704, 779  
not subject to putrefaction or diseases be-  
fore the fall, 222–23, 456, 547, 705, 708  
once thrived in now-Arctic regions, 162,  
405, 405n  
in Paradise, 83, 222–23, 252, 395, 456,  
704–5, 757  
seeds originally come from, not plants from  
seeds, 167, 187, 194n  
variation within the kinds of, 515, 826,  
829–30, 854  
vascular, 855  
what man has in common with, 143–44  
without thorns and thistles before the fall,  
269–72, 703–4, 708, 728, 744, 779  
*See also* trees; fruits
- Plato, 337n, 507, 915
- Plato of Sakkudion, St., 938
- Platonism, 132n, 156n
- platypuses, 526n, 838
- pleasure, 207, 275n, 475, 695–98, 700, 713,  
734, 745, 785, 806  
before the fall, 695–97, 704, 719  
pain and, 652n, 695–96, 699, 719, 745
- Pneumatology, 42. *See also* Holy Spirit
- Podariu, Silviu, 905n, 1043
- Polycarp of Smyrna, St., 912, 912n
- polygenism, 544, 567–68, 637, 672

## GENERAL INDEX

- Pomazansky, Fr. Michael, 502–3, 623, 637, 640, 660, 674  
*Orthodox Dogmatic Theology*, 502n, 887, 911
- Pomona College, Claremont, California, 24–27
- Pontcharra, Jean de, 571n
- Pontifical Academy of Sciences, 571n
- Pope, Alexander, 621–22
- Popper, Karl Raimund, 827, 827n
- Porfir'yev, Fr. Yevgeniy  
*Orthodox Natural-Science Apologetics*, 909
- potassium-argon (K-Ar) dating, 373, 529–31, 531–32n, 862–67, 869–70.  
*See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Pothinus, Bishop of Lyons, Hieromartyr, 912
- prayer, 30, 39, 51, 82, 85–86, 107, 300, 574, 627, 814, 816–17, 820, 916, 919, 921, 931, 933, 942, 944–47, 949  
in the Ark, 338, 352  
mental/noetic, 120n, 227, 463  
in Paradise, 226–27, 251, 472  
perfect, 458  
*See also* Jesus Prayer; services of the Church, Divine
- Precambrian rocks, 523, 523–24n, 864–66.  
*See also* Ediacaran biota
- preexistence of the body, heresy of, 218–19, 484–85, 553–55
- preexistence of the soul, heresy of, 218, 388, 484–85, 550–51, 553–54, 556, 638, 675, 701n, 915–16
- prehistory, alleged evolutionary, 652n, 659, 659n, 669
- prepodobny*, meaning of, 333
- Price, Richard  
*Acts of the Council of Constantinople of 553, The*, 923n
- pride, 342, 362, 367, 622  
of Adam and Eve, 271, 744–45  
blunted by death, 785  
of the devil and his angels, 255, 735  
fed by faith in evolution and progress, 799–801  
of modern ideas and knowledge, 164, 655, 868
- Proclus of Constantinople, St., 280n, 928, 929  
and St. John Chrysostom, 726, 726, 929
- progress, modern idea of, 26, 28, 30, 33, 35, 379, 539–40, 542–43, 655  
faith in, 34, 536–37, 579n, 584, 599n, 609–10n, 799–801
- progressive creationism. *See* old-earth/progressive creationism
- prophecy, 362, 536, 555, 815, 931  
Adam's gift of, 84, 247–48, 254, 392n, 697  
of the beginning of the world, 40, 78, 130–31, 562, 684–85, 886  
false, 512, 512–13n, 577, 580–81, 583, 593, 595, 597n, 600, 914
- Lamech's, 317  
of the last times and the end of the world, 130, 411, 656, 656n, 684–85, 886  
Noah's, 356, 356n  
of the state beyond the general resurrection, 706, 706n, 771–72
- Prophet Daniel Missionary Movement, 67n
- Prophets, Old and New Testament, 31n, 130–31, 225, 249, 298n, 306n, 411. *See also* David, Prophet and Psalmist; Elijah (Elias), Prophet; Isaiah, Prophet; John the Theologian, Apostle and Evangelist; Jonah, Prophet; Moses, Prophet
- Protection of the Mother of God Monastery, Bussy-en-Othe, France, icons from, 920, 927
- Protestant scientists opposed to evolutionism, 47–49, 58, 72–75, 73n, 75n, 78, 184n, 672, 680–81, 680n, 681n, 903–7
- Protestantism, 47–49, 58, 72–75, 75n, 78, 109, 184n, 409, 433, 460, 465, 535, 537, 616, 621, 627, 672, 680, 684, 903–7  
influence of evolutionism and uniformitarianism on, 91, 451n, 452n, 616, 663–64nn  
theology of (*see* theology: Protestant)
- protology, 42, 887

## GENERAL INDEX

- Providence, Divine, 23, 132n, 192, 494, 576, 621, 644, 687, 721, 742, 745–46
- Psalms, 123, 146n, 409, 445, 495n, 722
- pseudo-religion/pseudo-spirituality/pseudomysticism, 26, 36, 60, 67n, 598, 609, 614
- pseudoscience, 46, 461, 614, 618, 827
- psychic and spiritual, confusion of, 26
- psychology, 400, 542, 542n, 680, 855, 858
- pterodactyls, 526, 526n
- Ptolemaic model, 371, 374–75, 379, 513, 522. *See also* geocentrism
- punctuated equilibrium, 53, 53n, 96, 97n, 382n, 526n, 836n. *See also* “hopeful monster” theory
- Pythagoras/Pythagorean philosophy, 404n, 580
- Rabban Shapur, monastery of, 933
- radioisotopes, 75n, 531n, 862–65, 867–71, 875, 878
- radiometric (radioisotope) dating, 45, 372–73, 380, 384, 462, 529–33, 529–32nn, 623, 637, 861–71, 873, 876, 881, 894–95
- based on naturalistic, uniformitarian, evolutionist assumptions, 96n, 373, 462, 530–33, 530–32nn, 642, 863–65, 868, 870–71, 881
- discrepant data derived from, when dating rocks of known ages, 532, 532n, 863–66
- role of evolutionary theory in choosing “ages” derived from, 867, 879
- See also* carbon-14 (radiocarbon) dating; isochron method; lead-lead (Pb-Pb) dating; potassium-argon (K-Ar) dating; rhenium-osmium (Re-Os) dating; rubidium-strontium (Rb-Sr) dating; samarium-neodymium (Sm-Nd) dating; uranium decay dating
- Radovic, Anna, 860, 890, 1043
- Rahner, Karl, 567–68, 567n
- “Original Sin, Polygenism, and Freedom,” 568
- rain, 351
- earth not originally watered by, 162, 210, 212n, 455, 704, 708
- during the Flood, 162, 331, 338, 342–43
- not mentioned in Genesis until the time of Noah, 162
- not needed in the creation of the plants, 194n, 211
- rainbow, 308
- as a sign of God’s covenant, 163, 350–51, 351, 404
- Randall, J. H., Jr., 540–42, 540n
- Making of the Modern Mind, The*, 536, 620n
- RATE (Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth) project, 868–69, 868n, 894–95
- books about, 531n, 894–95
- rationalism, 25, 28–29, 420, 448, 466, 468, 495, 512, 517, 534nn, 535, 538–39, 583n, 595, 615, 625, 627, 635, 657–58
- in Latin Scholasticism, 493–94
- in Patristic scholarship, 447, 480–82
- in Scriptural interpretation, 41n, 49, 153, 210, 234, 253, 304, 307–8, 314, 331–33, 450, 544, 627
- Raup, David M., 524n, 838n
- “Conflicts between Darwin and Paleontology,” 526n
- “Evolution and the Fossil Record,” 525n
- “Probabilistic Models in Evolutionary Paleobiology,” 525n
- raven
- as a figure of sinfulness, 344n
- sent as a scout after the Flood, 343–44, 344, 344n, 347n
- reason, 121n, 123n, 517n, 559, 588, 622, 714, 801, 905, 911, 913
- as an aspect of God’s image in man, 199, 393n, 475n
- cannot apprehend the “how” of creation, 165
- destructive use of, 537–39
- must be submitted to faith and revelation, 466–67, 480, 505, 536–37, 537n, 807, 809–10
- natural, 477

## GENERAL INDEX

- possessed by man but not by the other corporeal creatures, 143, 206, 323n, 393n, 430, 475n, 481, 730, 739n
- religion of/faith in/exaltation of, 535–38, 541, 795
- Roman Catholic teaching on, 493–94
- suicide of, 537, 542–43, 595, 595n
- recapitulation, theory of. *See* Haeckel's Law (theory of recapitulation)
- redemption/salvation, 40, **106**, 203n, 220, 228n, 235n, 251, 263n, 274, 277, 280–82, 282n, 298n, 340–42, 341n, 342n, 391, 395n, 396, 398, 401, 452n, 467n, 474, 573, 649–50, 662–63, 662n, 711n, 723, 725, 736, 746, **747**, 748–57, **758**, 759–66, 768–72, 774–78, 782–84, 786, 799–801, 810–12, 885, 919
- belief in, linked to belief in the original incorruption of man and the cosmos, 42–43, 78–79, 690–91, 774–84, 901
- belief in, undermined by evolutionism, 42–43, 282, 650, 778–84, 799–801, 810–12, 815, 893, 901
- of the body, 282n, 573, 732, 748–50, 753, 761–62, 764–70, 775
- of both man and the cosmos, 77, 87, 274, 690–91, 762–74, 782, 784
- creation “groans” for man's, 82–83, 239, 271, 573, 732, 762
- economy of, 762
- gift of, 761n
- God's concern for man's, 175, 263n, 474, 745
- God's foreknowledge of man's, 267, 746, 749n
- Gospel/word of, 206, 356
- offered to everyone, 356, 358
- order of, 282n, 753–57, 759–61
- Scriptures and dogmas given for, 108, 377, 461–62
- of the soul, 33, 107, 280, 282n, 342, 342n, 377, 396, 452n, 563, 589, 748–50, 753, 753n, 757
- universal (*see* universal salvation, false teaching of)
- See also* Jesus, Christ, Lord
- Reformation, 534, 537
- reincarnation/transmigration of souls, 187, 388–89, 389n, 549–51, 638, 670, 675.
- See also* preexistence of the soul, heresy of
- relativism, 42n, 186, 282, 563, 595
- Renaissance, 28, 534, 537, 539, 580
- Renan, Ernest, 791, 791n
- Rensch, Bernhard
- Evolution above the Species Level*, 24n
- repentance, 83, 85n, 280n, 288, 323, 356, 756, 785, 816, 919, 926
- of Adam and Eve, 233, 266, 288, 288n
- consequences of the fall can lead man to, 744
- the devil incapable of, 400, 400n
- initial lack of, in Adam and Eve, 263–65, 265n, 268, 295n
- lack of, in Cain, 295, 298, 300, 302
- of Lamech, 304–5, **305**
- man incapable of, after death, 400n
- of Nineveh, 356, 358, 361
- of the thief on the cross, 759
- time given by God to man for, before the Flood, 319, 319n, 327, 333, 339
- reptiles, 341n, 434, 520
- aboard the Ark, 328, 338, 342, 347
- creation of, 179
- death of, during the Flood, 323, 339
- distinctness and fixity of the kinds of, 184n, 187, 550
- flying, 526
- hypothetical evolution of and from, 92, 381–82, 382n, 521, 526n, 826, 834–35, 838
- “language” of, 250
- marine, 179
- named by Adam, 238
- vegetarian before the fall, 207–8, 453–54
- resurrected, spiritual body
- of Christ, 203n, 391, 403, 489, 766, **767**, 768–71, 768n, 771n
- of man in the general resurrection, 35, 43, 83, 86, 186–87, 203n, 272, 274, 282n,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 388, 391, 394, 452n, 456, 464, 486–87, 487n, 489–91, 548, 573, 650, 656, 693n, 729–30, 732, 738, 746, 746n, 749, 754, 759–66, 761n, 768–72, 770–71n, 774, 777, 786, 800, 911, 916
- resurrection, general, 43, 77, 79, 114, 174, 186–87, 194n, 203n, 251, 274, 282n, 395n, 452n, 458, 464, 487n, 489, 573, 638, 690, 693n, 706, 706n, 723, 729, 731–32, 731n, 746, 746n, 748, 753–54, 759–66, 761n, 768–69, 771–72, 771n, 773, 774, 777, 783n, 786, 789, 818, 911, 916
- resurrection, spiritual, 282, 748, 753, 755–57, 759–60, 775, 777, 782
- Resurrection of Christ. *See* Jesus Christ, Lord: Resurrection of
- Revelation, book of. *See* Apocalypse (Revelation), book of
- revelation, Divine, 316n, 327, 412, 465, 805, 913
- application of, to human life, 659
- cannot contradict true knowledge of the natural world, 46, 459, 502, 637, 665–66, 668, 686
- contained in the Holy Scriptures, 30, 40, 71n, 86–87, 112, 157, 457, 683–85, 779 (*see also* Holy Scripture: Divine inspiration of; Holy Spirit: writing of Scripture inspired by)
- regarding the creation and original condition of the cosmos, 29, 78, 86, 101–2, 127, 132, 136–37, 153, 157, 173, 219, 387, 457, 459, 461, 471, 489, 497, 503, 509, 602, 641–42, 650, 668, 670, 673, 675, 683–85, 710, 779, 798–99, 804 (*see also* first-created world: known through revelation, grace, Divine vision)
- regarding the end of the world and the future age, 130, 602, 762–73
- fullness of, given to the Church, 78
- Holy Fathers refuted philosophical-scientific theories in conflict with, 503–4, 503–4n
- regarding the Holy Trinity, 42 (*see also* Holy Trinity: revelations of, in Genesis)
- human wisdom divorced from and exalted above, 121, 434, 498, 505, 509, 537n, 623n, 651, 661, 668, 798–99, 812n
- imparted to Adam, 396
- imparted to the Apostles, 31n, 130, 221, 222n, 763
- imparted to the Old Testament Prophets, 31n, 130
- imparted to the Prophet Moses (*see* Moses, Prophet: Divine revelation imparted to)
- imparted to the saints, 75, 787, 886, 918
- regarding the nature of man, 472
- Orthodox theology based on, 27, 75, 77, 504, 623, 650
- private interpretation of, 665
- reason and science must be enlightened by, 537, 667, 673
- as understood and interpreted by the Holy Fathers, 29–30, 40, 49, 77, 79, 87, 112, 127, 132, 153, 173, 459, 504, 544, 684–85, 779
- Revolution, age of, 516, 534, 540, 593
- Revolution Society, 540n
- Reynolds, John Mark, 58
- Against All Gods*, 58n, 891
- Three Views on Creation and Evolution*, 58n
- rhodium-osmium (Re-Os) dating, 862. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Riasanovsky, Nicholas V.
- History of Russia, A*, 315n
- Richards, E. G.
- Mapping Time*, 315n
- Richardson, John
- Nietzsche's New Darwinism*, 513n
- Richardson, Michael, 521n
- Rincon, Paul
- "Neanderthal Genes 'Survive in Us,'" 385n
- RNA (ribonucleic acid), 843
- Roman Catholic scientists opposed to evolutionism, 58, 73, 110n, 571n
- Roman Catholicism, 422, 501, 506, 510, 513, 535, 537, 567n, 588n, 597n, 599n, 618, 621, 941, 943, 949, 951

## GENERAL INDEX

- current papal position within, concerning evolutionism, 571n
- influence of, on Orthodoxy, 507n, 568, 598–601
- influence of evolutionism and uniformitarianism on, 90–91, 110, 281–82, 335–36, 543, 567–73, 571n, 577–98, 610, 616, 621, 638, 643
- teaching of, regarding grace, 465, 476, 481–82, 482n, 493–94, 493n, 572, 660–61, 715n
- teaching of, regarding human nature and the original state of man, 395–96, 465, 472, 476, 482, 491–94, 494–95n, 509, 571–73, 571n, 573n, 618, 638, 658, 660–61, 715n
- Romania
- elders and confessors of, 107, 107n, 223n, 812–13, 818–21, 821n
  - icons from, 4, 172, 178, 193, 214, 244, 246, 260, 277, 287, 293, 770, 948
  - language of, 79
  - saints of, 947–48
  - scientists from, 905n
- Romanovsky, Sergei I., 871–73, 880–81
- Physical Sedimentology*, 871n
- Rome, 588, 913–14, 926, 935, 939
- icons from, 104, 254, 258, 290, 340, 345, 914
- Ross, Hugh
- “Genesis One, Dinosaurs, and Cavemen,” 451n
- Ross, Marcus R., 58
- Roth, Ariel A.
- “‘Flat Gaps’ in Sedimentary Rock Layers Challenge Long Geologic Ages,” 371n
  - Origins: Linking Science and Scripture*, 524n
- Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, 540n
- rubidium-strontium (Rb-Sr) dating, 862, 865–67, 869. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Russia
- defense of the Orthodox doctrine of creation in, 64–67, 70–75, 70–71n, 77, 81, 787–97, 799–804, 807–9, 882, 888, 894, 898n, 906–10
  - elders of and from, 806, 807–8, 813, 813–14
  - evolutionism in, 64–66, 70–71n, 72, 508n, 621, 824n, 825
  - hierarchs and clergy of and from, 29, 65–67, 67nn, 68–69, 70–72, 70–71n, 898, 908–10
  - icons from, 16, 106, 128, 196, 213, 239, 248, 279, 285, 297, 309–13, 330–31, 336, 348, 359, 365–66, 416, 418, 550, 566–67, 648, 688, 747, 758, 767, 773, 946, 1042
  - monasteries of, 29, 65, 618, 709, 787, 795, 807, 946, 949
  - New Martyrs and Confessors of (*see* New Martyrs and Confessors of Russia)
  - Patristic works translated and studied in, 419, 505n, 506, 948
  - philosophers of and from, 500, 505–6, 505n, 537, 597n, 600, 618, 645, 667
  - saints of and from, 29, 33, 60, 64–65, 81–82, 84, 116, 116n, 141n, 157n, 184n, 215, 226, 239, 239, 250, 333, 478, 479–86, 491, 493, 502, 504–5, 505n, 507–8, 507n, 508, 508n, 552, 572, 628, 639, 644, 653n, 655, 671, 674, 704, 708–9, 731, 786–97, 788, 795, 797, 799–804, 800, 802–3, 808, 808–9, 824, 859, 946, 946–51, 948–49
  - scientists of and from, 61, 64–67, 68–69, 70–77, 184n, 372n, 528, 531n, 574, 806, 807–9, 808, 824, 846, 860, 866–67, 871–72, 876, 880, 882, 890, 894, 906–10, 1039–40
  - theological tradition of, 635
  - theological writers of and from, 65–67, 477n, 482n, 483n, 502–4, 502n, 548n, 598–99, 619, 627, 674, 711, 711n, 714, 715n, 740, 774
  - use of the Imperial Creation Era in, 315n
- Russian (Bolshevik) Revolution, 64, 401–2, 799
- Russian language and terminology, 19, 29,



## GENERAL INDEX

- 79, 354, 419, 479, 481n, 485, 490, 490n, 693n, 883, 887n
- Russian Ministry of Education, 71
- Russian National Institute for Ocean Geology, St. Petersburg, 882
- Russian Orthodox Church, 44, 64–67, 116n.  
*See also* Moscow Patriarchate
- Russian Orthodox Church Outside of Russia, 645n
- Russkiy palomnik* (Russian pilgrim), illustrations from, **106, 239**
- sabbath, 192, 653n
- “Sacred Heart,” 596, 596n
- Sadducees, 789
- Sagan, Carl, 107, 376, 780, 782  
*Cosmos*, 107n
- St. Andrew School of Iconography, Indianapolis, Indiana, icon from, **930**
- St. Anthony of Siya Monastery, Russia, icon from, **106**
- St. Dimitry Cathedral, Vladimir, Russia, fresco from, **773**
- St. Gregory Palamas Monastery, Hayesville, Ohio, 37n
- St. Helens, Mount, 374n, 863–64, 866, 870, 900
- St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood, 29, 419, 479, 498
- St. Herman of Alaska Monastery, Platina, California, 87, 89, 479, **604, 676**
- St. John the Baptist Monastery, Essex, England, 813
- St. John the Forerunner, Far Monastery of, Greece, wall paintings from, **170, 180**
- St. John the Forerunner Monastery at Studios, Constantinople, 938, 940–41
- St. Mamas Monastery, Constantinople, 940
- St. Nicholas Anapavvas Monastery, Meteora, Greece, frescos from, **236–37, 407, 496**
- St. Nicholas Ranch, Dunlap, California, 689
- St. Nicholas-Ugresh Seminary, Russia, 66
- St. Paul Monastery, Jarrow, 935
- St. Paul of Obnora Monastery, Russia, icons from, **747, 767**
- St. Peter Monastery, Wearmouth, 935
- St. Petersburg, Russia, 824n, 873, 882
- St. Sabbas Monastery, Palestine, 936–37, 939
- St. Vladimir National Calendar for 1974*, 548n
- St. Vladimir’s Orthodox Theological Seminary, 574, 598, 612, 644
- St. Vladimir’s Seminary Press, 884–85
- St. Vladimir’s Theological Quarterly*, 88, 575, 581
- Saint-Simon, Claude-Henri de, 580  
*New Christianity, The*, 580n
- Sakellarios, Leo, 130
- salvation. *See* redemption/salvation
- Salvius of Albi, Gaul, St., 399, 399n
- samarium-neodymium (Sm-Nd) dating, 869. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope) dating
- Samuel, Prophet, **565**
- San Diego, California, 49, 83, 370, 378, 513, 640, 680
- San Francisco, California, 26, 29–30, 56
- San Francisco State University, 58, 888
- San Mauro, Diego, 834
- Sanford, J. C.  
*Genetic Entropy & the Mystery of the Genome*, 62, 304n, 307n, 659n, 889–90  
*Mystery of Our Declining Genes, The*, 73n, 890
- Sarfati, Jonathan  
*Greatest Hoax on Earth?, The*, 891–92  
*Refuting Compromise*, 451n, 664nn  
“Schweitzer’s Dangerous Discovery,” 896–97
- Sarov Monastery, Russia, 949
- Saturn, 374–75
- Scetis, 923
- Schelling, Friedrich, 505n
- Schindewolf, Otto, 24, 382n  
“Comments on Some Stratigraphic Terms,” 371–72n
- Schism of Rome, 50, 534n, 536, 537n, 583n, 941
- Scholasticism, 465, 482, 492, 494, 534n, 536–37, 618, 621, 658

## GENERAL INDEX

Schweitzer, Mary H., 896

"Soft-tissue Vessels and Cellular Preservation in *Tyrannosaurus rex*," 855–56n

science

cannot answer question of beginnings (*see* first-created world: knowledge of, not accessible to natural science and rational investigation; incorruption: cannot be understood by natural science; Paradise [Eden]: cannot be known through natural science; Six Days: not subject to scientific observation and measurement)

distinction between empirical evidence (facts) and metaphysical/philosophical assumptions in, 21–22, 27–28, 36–37n, 48, 52, 59, 66, 73–74, 80–81, 90, 97–100, 102, 118n, 133, 314, 370–73, 379–80, 386, 420–29, 438–39, 449, 460–63, 468, 470, 485, 502–6, 510, 513, 515n, 517–18, 523n, 529–33, 540, 540–41n, 576, 591–92n, 609, 612, 619–20, 625, 628, 630, 633–36, 642, 651, 659n, 666, 666n, 669–70, 673–75, 683, 686, 789, 792, 794, 809, 823n, 824, 832, 838–39, 839n, 849, 854, 856, 863–71, 881, 894, 903–5

false identification of, with naturalism, 21–28, 28n, 37, 46, 60, 77, 792, 804

Holy Fathers and (*see* Holy Fathers: science and)

ideas of, subject to being overthrown by later generations, 118, 118n, 467n, 584, 620–22

must be raised up by, not exalted above, faith and revelation, 535–37, 667, 669, 673, 792–93, 809–10

origins/historical vs. operational/observational, 421n, 427–28n, 904

theology and (*see* theology: and science)

true knowledge from, cannot contradict revealed truth, 46, 459, 502, 637, 665–66, 668, 686

*See also* animals/beasts/irrational creatures: scientific knowledge concerning; knowledge: scientific, of the natural

world

*Science*, 380, 385n, 470n, 525n, 532n, 593n, 633, 678n, 855n

science fiction, 377n, 413, 607

*Sciences, The*, 681n

*Scientific American*, 904

*Scientific Creationism*. *See* Morris, Henry M.

scientific method, 666n, 828

*Scientific Monthly*, 405n

scientific worldview. *See* worldview: scientific

Scofield Reference Bible, 664n

Scopes Trial, 378–79, 379n, 666, 679

Scotland, 111n, 540n, 571n

Scott, Eugenie, 681n

Scriptural interpretation

historical/literal/realistic, 39–43, 40–41nn, 42n, 74, 78–79, 87, 109–11, 119–22, 121n, 122–23n, 134, 153, 194, 211, 222–25, 225n, 227, 235, 243, 247, 253, 275, 275–76n, 282, 303n, 304, 332, 413, 428, 433–36, 440, 442–48, 446n, 448n, 450, 455, 460–62, 465, 486, 514, 555–56, 562, 564–65, 619, 630–32, 634, 642, 645, 650, 653, 662, 662n, 667, 672–73, 682n, 684, 720n, 727, 751–52n, 775, 776n, 777–78, 782–83, 782–83n

multiple levels of, 40–41, 40–41n, 119–20, 122–23, 122–23n, 225n, 275, 275–76n, 413, 446–48, 448n, 556, 619, 720n, 751–52n

non-reductionist allegorical (non-reductionist symbolic, figurative, metaphorical), 40, 40–41n, 78–79, 119–20, 122–23, 122–23n, 225n, 275, 275–76n, 341n, 344n, 413, 434–35, 445–48, 448n, 487, 556, 619, 720n, 913

over-literal, 109, 514, 679

rationalistic criticism in (*see* rationalism: in Scriptural interpretation)

reductionist allegorical (reductionist symbolic, figurative, metaphorical)/de-historicizing/mythologizing, 39–41, 40–41nn, 42n, 43, 78–79, 109–11,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 115n, 119–22, 121n, 122–23n, 125, 134, 140–41n, 150, 224, 225n, 227, 253, 275–76n, 281–82, 303n, 304, 335, 413, 428, 433–36, 443–449, 446n, 460–62, 486, 543, 555–56, 561–62, 564, 569–70, 577, 601, 619, 630, 637, 650, 661–62, 672–73, 683, 775, 777–78, 782–83nn, 915
- spiritual/mystical, 39–40, 120, 122, 122–23n, 142, 145, 174, 189, 220, 227, 253, 267, 277, 413, 436–37, 446–48, 556, 735, 742
- typological, 39–41, 78–79, 122n, 225n, 341n, 345n, 546n, 728, 751, 751–52nn, 783n
- where not to be literal in, 109, 122–23, 145–46, 243, 360, 413, 445, 485, 514, 556, 644, 671, 712n
- See also* Holy Fathers: as interpreters of Holy Scripture; Holy Scripture
- sea-floor sediments, 901
- seas/oceans, 135, 164–65, 175, 179, 190, 352n, 374n, 503n, 527, 532–33, 532–33n, 807, 871–77, 947
- creatures of, 139n, 154, 175, 176–78, 179, 180, 195, 205, 332n, 349, 524, 848 (*see also* fish; marine invertebrates; reptiles: marine; whales)
- See also* water(s)
- Seattle, Washington, 58n, 89
- second law of thermodynamics, 75n, 606–7, 607n
- sedimentology, 374n, 871, 881
- seed, 207, 210–11, 321, 329, 348, 453, 638
- Adam's creation without, 631n
- Christ's birth without, 631n
- creation of, 168n, 177n, 439
- determines and is determined by kind, 165–68, 182, 185–86, 389, 425–26, 618, 674
- development from, 117n, 192, 245n, 687
- distinctness and integrity of each, 155n, 185, 553
- no emission of human, before the fall, 694, 721
- originally comes from plants, not plants from seed, 167, 187, 194n
- planting of, 705
- "seed of the woman," 265–67, 267–68n
- Seilacher, Adolf
- "Vendobionta and Psammocorallia," 523–24n
- self-will, 269, 792
- senses, bodily, 82n, 125, 161, 171n, 238, 243, 444, 473, 488, 538, 696–97, 702, 717, 769, 771n, 772, 793, 819
- of man before the fall, 228, 251, 472–73, 696–97, 699–700, 702
- Septuagint Text of the Old Testament, 18–19, 160n, 179n, 283, 283n, 314n, 358n, 727n, 745n
- age of the world according to, 314–15, 315n, 387, 516n
- See also* chronology, Biblical: difference between Greek and Hebrew
- Seraphim of Sarov, St., 481n, 628, 949, 949–50
- on Adam and Eve before the fall, 250, 480, 482, 485–86, 572
- on the creation of Adam and Eve, 215, 218, 250, 479–86
- in harmony with animals, 215, 333, 478
- Seraphim Rose, Hieromonk, 2, 19, 20, 21, 24–40, 42–45, 47–54, 59–60, 63–66, 74–80, 82–87, 89–91, 96n, 101–2, 105, 117n, 134n, 139n, 155n, 163–64n, 205n, 231n, 239, 275n, 314n, 315n, 370, 377n, 378n, 379n, 384n, 393n, 404n, 421n, 427–28n, 429n, 452n, 464n, 469n, 480n, 489n, 490n, 494n, 501, 502n, 505n, 512, 513n, 515n, 529n, 546n, 548n, 556n, 557n, 573n, 574n, 604, 609–10n, 631n, 645n, 652n, 658n, 666n, 667n, 668n, 671n, 676, 680n, 705n, 709–10, 775, 777–80, 781n, 798n, 822, 825, 844, 883–87, 887n, 891, 893, 899–900, 905, 908, 910, 911, 911n, 941n
- Apocalypse in the Teachings of Ancient Christianity, The*, 402n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of God, The*, 28, 34, 50
- lectures of, 21, 50–51, 75–76, 91, 105–414, 107n, 389n, 512–57, 533n, 534n, 537n, 558–602, 574n, 677–87
- letters of, 21, 44, 52, 63, 63n, 65, 76, 93n, 107n, 112n, 417, 419–98, 580n, 605–46, 609–10nn, 645n, 778–79
- Nihilism: The Root of the Revolution of the Modern Age*, 29n, 89, 595n
- Northern Thebaïd, The*, 239
- notes of, 135–36n, 272n, 501–11, 515n, 631n, 649–64, 659n
- Orthodoxy and the Religion of the Future*, 377n, 378n, 597n
- outlines of, 665–75
- “Philosophy of the Absurd, The,” 595n
- Place of Blessed Augustine in the Orthodox Church, The*, 32n, 115n, 661n
- Soul after Death, The*, 389n, 390, 399n, 491n, 507n
- “Survival Course” of, 49–50, 60, 76, 505n, 512, 533n, 534n, 537n, 558, 580n, 595n
- “Theological Writings of Archbishop John, The,” 899n
- Serbia, 70
- icons from, 148, 151, 160, 166, 177, 191, 242, 261, 278, 284, 289, 294, 297, 299, 300, 301, 305, 308, 318, 326, 327, 344, 346, 353, 355, 357, 364, 917, 925, 930, 938, 1062
- Patriarch of, 303n
- rulers of, 944
- saints and righteous ones of, 81, 84, 465n, 506n, 705, 726, 732–33, 736–38, 736n, 762–64, 777, 784, 784n, 805–7, 806, 808, 809–12, 812n, 910
- Serbian language and terminology, 79, 303n, 736n, 784n
- Serenus of Egypt, Abba, 159n
- Sergius, father of St. John Damascene and stepfather of St. Cosmas of Maiuma, 937
- Sergius of Nurma, St., 239
- Sergius of Radonezh, St., 233–34
- Seridus of Gaza, Abba, St., 931
- Sermonti, Giuseppe, 571n
- serpent (in the Garden), 230, 233, 253–55, 254, 254n, 257, 263–68, 267–68n, 280n, 281, 281n, 301, 391, 399–400, 402, 444, 454, 736, 737n, 742, 744, 776
- services of the Church, Divine, 82, 154, 203n, 225n, 272, 277–78, 281, 281n, 288, 332n, 391–92, 453, 460, 474, 565, 565n, 601, 652n, 661–62, 736, 750, 759, 763, 791, 791n, 919–20, 924, 936–38, 946–47. *See also* prayer
- Seth (son of Adam)/Sethites, 284, 302, 303n, 305–6, 308, 311, 312, 315, 318–21, 319n, 320n, 321n
- seven ages of the world, 546n
- Seventh Day, 140n, 141, 192, 193, 440, 442–43, 546n
- Severus of Antioch, 932n
- sexual dimorphism. *See* male and female distinction in man
- sexual procreation
- blessed by God within marriage, 204–5, 290
- “natural to man” in his original condition, according to Roman Catholic teaching, 494–95n, 721n
- not known to angels, 413n, 722
- not known to man before the fall (*see* man [humanity]: virginity and dispassionateness of, before the fall)
- not known to man in the general resurrection, 202–3, 203n, 291
- not originally intended as man’s mode of increase, 174–75, 204, 291, 291n, 494–95n, 721–22, 721n, 722n, 741n
- between the “sons of God” and the “daughters of men,” 413n
- Shapiro, Robert, 54
- Shem (son of Noah), 317, 324, 324n, 326, 338, 346, 348, 352, 354, 355, 356, 356n, 357, 358, 359, 361, 362n, 367–68

## GENERAL INDEX

- Sherwin, Frank J., 1040  
*Fossil Record, The*, 896  
 Shestodnev center. *See* Orthodox Missionary Center "Shestodnev"  
 Shinar, land of, 360–62  
*Shoes of the Fisherman, The. See* West, Morris L.  
 Siberia, 405, 405n, 876  
 sickle-cell anemia, 844, 846  
 Sicily, 937  
   icons from, *176, 241, 296*  
 Sidoras, S. D., 866  
 Simonos Petra Monastery, Mount Athos, frescos from, *926, 940, 943*  
 simplicity, 125, 229, 392, 467, 480, 699–700, 700n, 951  
 Simpson, George Gaylord  
   "World into Which Darwin Led Us, The," 678n
- sin  
   as alienation from God, 718  
   attached to and driven into human nature at the fall, 713, 734  
   awareness of, tied to belief in God, 812  
   of Cain, 295, 300–302  
   Christ redeems man from, 43, 749–56, 762–63, 774–76, 782–84, 782–83n, 786, 811 (*see also* redemption/salvation)  
   Christ wholly without, 749–51, 775  
   condition of, 252, 263, 473, 495n, 673, 732–33, 762–63, 800  
   death prevents, from lasting forever, 273, 743–46, 785  
   disease of, 713, 774  
   experiential awareness of, 233, 392–93n  
   of Ham, 352, 354  
   hatred of, 288n  
   of Lamech, 305  
   law of, 713  
   man acquired an inclination toward, at the fall, 279, 713, 725, 743–46, 785, 797  
   man cleansed of, in Holy Baptism, 754–55  
   man's first act of (*see* fall of man)  
   man's freedom to, 486–87  
   as natural, according to the evolutionary worldview, 784, 811  
   "original," 282, 536, 568–69, 715n  
   raven as a figure of, 344  
   self-deception through, 809–10  
   sown by the devil, 186, 735, 810–11  
   struggle against, 256  
 Sinai, Mount, *129, 927, 944*  
*Sinanthropus*, 470nn. *See also* Peking Man  
 Six Days, 65, 79, 134–95, 209–10, 220, 253, 410, 434, 453, 516, 608, 624, 624n, 629, 684, 908  
   First Day, 138, 141n, 145–59, *148, 151*, 162, 164, 169, 171, 171n, 175, 338, 436, 442, 442n, 545, 546n, 807  
   Second Day, 153, 159–63, *160*, 442n  
   Third Day, 136, 138, 152–53, 164–68, *166*, 170, 222, 390, 438, 442n  
   Fourth Day, 4, 152–53, 168n, 169, *170*, 171, *172*, 173–75, 375, 429  
   Fifth Day, 136, 168, 175, *176–78*, 177, 179, *180*, 181–88, 439, 453  
   Sixth Day, 159, 181, 188–90, *191*, 209, 245, 390, 453, 463, 547, 703  
   Seventh Day (*see* Seventh Day)  
   cannot be understood by projecting back from present experience (*see* creation: cannot be understood by projecting back from present experience)  
   define the nature of time, 675  
   do not conform to ancient scientific and philosophical speculations, 132, 138–39  
   do not fit into the modern evolutionary framework, 135, 158–59, 169, 240, 386, 429, 450, 459–60, 485, 545–49, 643, 651–52n, 675, 901  
   geological strata laid down after, 373–74, 545  
   God's reasons for creating in, 140–43, 440–42  
   instantaneous creative acts during (*see* creation: God's instantaneous acts of)  
   length of, 111, 134–35, 138, 217, 436–38, 442, 442n, 545–46, 546n, 548, 634, 640, 668–69, 675

## GENERAL INDEX

- material elements created on the First Day  
of, 141n, 154–57, 155n, 157n
- as miraculous and supernatural, 134–38,  
166, 240, 386, 439, 643, 669, 905 (*see also*  
creation: as miraculous and super-  
natural)
- not a literary device to describe a totally  
instantaneous creation, 115n, 121,  
139n, 140–42, 140–41n, 436, 439–42,  
675n
- not merely an allegory, 121, 121n, 436
- not subject to scientific observation and  
measurement, 74, 75n, 134–38,  
135–36n, 373–74, 386, 429, 643, 668,  
905–6
- not to be equated with vast ages, 111,  
111n, 134–35, 140, 217, 429, 443, 450,  
545–47, 546n, 651–52n, 663,  
663–64n, 668–69, 668–69n, 807–8
- Patristic commentaries on, 30, 113–14,  
113nn, 115n, 134n, 551, 601, 685–86
- Patristic model of, 134, 375
- references to, in the book of Exodus, 127n  
*See also* creation
- Slavonic language and terminology, 693n,  
933, 947
- sleep  
of Adam during the creation of Eve, 238,  
243, 247  
not required by man before the fall, 245,  
245n, 487–89, 495n, 694
- Smirnov, L. S., 873
- Smith, Wolfgang, 63n, 571n  
*Teilhard and the New Religion*, 587n
- snake charmers, 401
- snakes, 98, 266, 401. *See also* serpent (in the  
Garden)
- Snelling, Andrew A., 870  
“Cause of Anomalous Potassium-Argon  
‘Ages’ for Recent Andesite Flows at Mt.  
Ngauruhoe, New Zealand, The,” 866  
*Earth’s Catastrophic Past, The*, 338n, 524n,  
895, 900, 900n  
*Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*,  
894–95
- Snobelen, Stephen D.  
“Isaac Newton, Heretic,” 534n
- sobriety/watchfulness (*nepsis*), 85–86, 125,  
205, 238, 396–97, 931, 942
- socialism, 580, 591n, 594  
international, 35
- Sodom, 335, 361
- solar system, 871, 902  
age of, 680  
creation of, 871, 902  
naturalistic theories of the origin of, 789,  
789n, 870–71, 881, 901
- Solomon, King, 467
- Solvychegodsk Museum of History and Art,  
icon from, 213
- Son of God, 199n, 203, 257, 267n, 274,  
597n, 650, 690, 755–56, 800–801  
beginningless generation of, from the Fa-  
ther, 190n, 216–17n, 431n  
as Creator, 146–47, 147n, 195, 197,  
280–81n (*see also* Jesus Christ, Lord: as  
Creator)  
of one Essence with the Father and the  
Holy Spirit, 431n  
*See also* Jesus Christ, Lord; Word (*Logos*) of  
God
- “sons of God,” 284, 318, 318–20, 412–13,  
412nn  
as the descendants of Seth, 306, 318, 320n,  
413n  
*See also* “daughters of men”
- Sophronius of Jerusalem, St., 281n, 693n,  
934, 935  
on Christ’s glorified body, 768n
- Sophrony (Sakharov) of Essex, Archiman-  
drite, 81, 813, 813–14  
*Saint Silouan the Athonite*, 698n
- Sopocani Monastery, Serbia, fresco from,  
1062
- soteriology, 42, 690, 774, 776, 782–83n,  
810, 893, 901. *See also* redemption/sal-  
vation
- soul, human, 114, 120, 122, 143, 206, 208,  
211n, 227, 229, 265, 272, 277, 292,  
295, 350, 402n, 424, 434, 445–46, 457,

## GENERAL INDEX

- 461, 492–94, 505n, 571, 699, 710, 715n, 734, 776n, 931, 941
- “breathed” into man together with Divine grace, 214–18, 215n, 394, 481, 483–85, 483n, 553
- changed at the fall, 698–99, 713–14, 720n, 782
- “Christian evolutionary” idea of the origin of, 219, 553–55, 571, 571n, 638, 664, 671, 820–21, 821n
- comparative materiality of, 491n, 770, 770–71n
- created simultaneously with the body, 217–19, 219n, 482–85, 553–55, 644, 671
- creation of, 213, 215–16, 216n, 218–19, 479–80, 483
- death as the separation of the body from, 717, 746, 746n, 748, 750, 760, 782
- death of (spiritual death), 271n, 716–17, 717–18n, 723, 725, 742, 748, 753, 759, 781 (*see also* fall of man: man experienced spiritual death/death of the soul [“stripping of grace”] at)
- deification of, 753, 764, 772, 782
- depths of, 125, 481n
- disbelief in, 792, 802
- “eye” of, 466, 481n
- in heaven, 753, 757
- in hell, 340, 343n, 452n, 723, 753, 753n
- image of God found in, 198, 202, 202n, 219, 394, 477, 483
- imaginative faculty of, 698–99, 714
- immortality of, 475, 478, 481, 534n, 542, 716, 740n, 798
- “increase” of, 205–6
- knowledge given to, 125, 127, 205–6, 458, 504, 562
- Manichaean ideas concerning, 388
- man’s will belongs properly to, 718n
- not a part of God, 216–17, 216n, 477n
- not originally meant to be separate from the body, 394, 746n, 761
- not taken from Adam in the creation of Eve, 242
- nous* or “spirit” as the highest faculty of, 202n, 215, 480–81, 481n
- original designation of, 488, 702, 764 (*see also* man [humanity]: original designation of/state meant to be achieved by)
- reunited with grace, 755–57, 759–60 (*see also* resurrection, spiritual)
- reunited with the body in the resurrection, 764
- salvation of, 33, 107, 280, 282n, 342, 342n, 377, 396, 452n, 563, 589, 748–50, 753, 753n, 757
- state of, before the fall, 85n, 486–87, 495n, 643, 695, 698–99, 714
- See also* preexistence of the body, heresy of; preexistence of the soul, heresy of; reincarnation/transmigration of souls
- “soul of the world,” false idea of, 580, 581n, 592, 594n, 622
- souls of animals, 188, 272, 350, 457, 734, 796
- Southern Methodist University, Dallas, Texas, 56
- Soviet cosmonauts, 657, 657n
- Soviet scientists, 574, 607
- Soviet Union/Soviet regime/Soviets, 64–66, 71–72, 354, 558, 599n, 621, 657n, 677, 679, 799, 801–4, 825
- Sozomen (Salminius Hermias Sozomenus), 899, 929–30
- space probes, 377, 903n, 904
- space travel, 22, 657, 657n
- Spain, 934
- Speakman, John R., 835
- species, 94, 96, 132, 171, 179, 182n, 183–86, 307n, 382, 385, 385n, 405n, 424–27, 424n, 430, 470, 470n, 516–18, 520–21, 525, 526n, 527–29, 527n, 540, 549, 551, 560, 576, 612, 615n, 637, 651, 651n, 662, 669, 789, 798, 809, 809n, 823, 828–31, 836–37, 839, 848–49, 854, 856, 861, 896
- changing, arbitrary definition of, in modern science, 181n, 515, 528, 528n, 674

## GENERAL INDEX

- do not necessarily correspond to the  
 "kinds" mentioned in Genesis, 38n,  
 181–86, 181n, 184n, 332n, 382, 549,  
 669 (*see also* kinds [of creatures])  
 lack of transitional (*see* transitional [inter-  
 mediate] forms: lack of)  
 man's attempts to make new, 184, 528,  
 528n, 574n  
 "ring" or "sister," 826, 826n  
 Spencer, Herbert, 512  
 Spetner, Lee, 855  
     *Not by Chance!*, 61–62, 514n, 529n, 659n,  
     889  
 spirit, human. *See nous* (spirit) of man  
 "spirit of the age"/"spirit of the times"/zeit-  
 geist, 497, 506, 510, 542n, 610,  
 616–17, 621–22  
 Spiritism, 422, 790–91  
 spiritual body. *See* resurrected, spiritual body  
 spiritual resurrection. *See* resurrection, spiri-  
 tual  
 Spyridon (Efimov), Archimandrite, 29  
 Stadler, Bärbel M. R., 840  
 Stanhope, Charles (3rd Earl Stanhope), 540n  
 Staniloae, Fr. Dumitru  
     *Orthodox Spirituality*, 86n  
 Staro Nagoricane Monastery, Kumanovo,  
 frescos from, 914, 916  
 stars, 23, 148–49, 160, 175, 371, 374–77,  
 682, 772  
     creation of, 4, 139, 139n, 159, 169, 170,  
     172, 174, 190, 375, 437  
     light from, 902  
     *See also* heavenly bodies ("lights in the fir-  
     mament of the heavens")  
 Stavronikita Monastery, Mount Athos, fres-  
 cos from, 126, 322, 369, 441, 912, 918,  
 920–21, 924–25, 928, 937  
 Stefanatos, Joanne  
     *Animals and Man: A State of Blessedness*,  
     333n  
 Stein, Ben, 72n  
 Steiner, Rudolph, 34n  
 Storer, Tracy I.  
     *General Zoology*, 423, 469, 519–21, 520n  
 Stove, David  
     *Darwinian Fairytales*, 853n  
 stratigraphy, 371–72n, 523n, 867, 872–73,  
 875, 878–81. *See also* geological strata/  
 layers  
 Strel'tsov, F. V., icons by, 418  
 Struve, Nikita, 599  
 Studite Monastery. *See* St. John the Forerun-  
 ner Monastery at Studios, Constanti-  
 nople  
 subjectivism, 539n  
 Sucevita Monastery, Moldavia, Romania,  
 frescos from, 4, 172, 178, 193, 214,  
 244, 246, 260, 277  
 suffering, 59n, 278, 762  
     allowed by God for man's correction, 198,  
     744–45  
     of Christ, 340, 749, 750n, 768, 771n  
     death prevents, from lasting forever, 276n,  
     745–46  
     evidence of, found in fossils, 135–36n,  
     651–52n, 896  
     of man for Christ, 799, 819, 915, 919–20,  
     939–40, 943, 951  
     not felt by Adam when his rib was taken  
     out, 243  
     originated at the fall, 81, 83, 135–36n,  
     257n, 272, 273n, 276n, 452n,  
     651–52n, 695, 717, 719–20, 724n,  
     725, 727–30, 733, 744–45, 779,  
     784–85  
     *See also* pain  
 sun, 123, 163, 183n, 351, 377n, 445, 756,  
 772, 902  
     created after the earth and the plants, 135,  
     139n, 148, 152–53, 165, 167–69, 171,  
     171n, 173, 210–11, 375–76, 429, 546n  
     creation of, 4, 170, 172, 174–75, 221  
     earth goes around, 24, 371, 375, 682, 685,  
     824 (*see also* Copernican model; helio-  
     centricism)  
     before the fall, 82, 709, 905–6  
     naturalistic theories of the origin of, 173,  
     375–76, 789n, 881, 901  
     specialness of, 377



## GENERAL INDEX

- Super-humanity (concept of Teilhard de Chardin), 588
- Superman, concept of, 282, 512–13n, 549, 563–64, 594
- Swedenborg, Emanuel, 789n
- Swift, Dennis L.  
 “Messages on Stone,” 898
- Symbol of Faith, 34n, 416
- symbolism, 350, 362. *See also* Scriptural interpretation
- Symeon Metaphrastes, St., 86n, 402n, 717, 939–40
- Symeon the Devout, 940
- Symeon the New Theologian, St., 85n, 272n, 463, 464n, 601, 618, 648, 651, 654, 656, 688, 940, 940–41, 941n  
 on Christ’s glorified body, 489, 769–71, 771n  
 on Christ’s redemptive work, 274, 723, 753–56, 885  
 on creation having been made for man, 142n, 729  
 on the creation of Eve, compared with the virgin birth of Christ, 281n  
 on Creation Week, 546n, 703  
 on the fall of man and its consequences, 114, 209, 250n, 265n, 271n, 273, 457, 463–64, 649–50, 690, 718, 718n, 720n, 723, 728–29, 753, 885  
 on the Holy Mysteries, 755–56  
 on the law of nature changing at the fall, 74–75, 135–36n, 457, 649–50, 710  
 on Noah, the Ark, and the Flood, 337n, 341n, 347n  
 on the relative materiality of angels and souls, 491n, 770–71n  
 on the state of man and the cosmos before the fall, 114, 209, 250n, 272–74, 398, 463–64, 486n, 488–90, 573, 638, 662, 669, 690–91, 692n, 694–96, 694n, 702–4, 729, 756, 760, 765, 768–69, 781n, 885–87  
 on the state of man and the cosmos beyond the general resurrection, 274, 391n, 399, 464, 474, 488–89, 573, 650, 729, 760–61, 768–72, 770–71nn, 885–87  
 on what might have been if man had not fallen, 488–89, 702–3, 764–65
- Symeon of Thessaloniki, St., 291n, 721n, 945, 946
- Synaxaria*, 911n, 939n, 940, 948. *See also* Lives of Saints
- Syria, 930, 939, 939n
- Syriac language and terminology, 19, 245n, 933
- Sysoyev, Fr. Daniel, 66–67, 67n, 69  
*Chronicle of the Beginning*, 908  
*Divine Revelation and Contemporary Science*, 910  
*Hexaemeron vs. Evolution, The*, 908  
*Who Is Like God?*, 908–9
- Table of Nations, 358n
- Tabor, Mount, 447, 619, 944
- Tanzania, 383–84n
- Tattersall, Ian, 526n, 838  
 “Many Faces of *Homo habilis*, The,” 383n
- Taxon* (journal), 634n
- taxonomy, 98, 181, 181n, 383n, 831, 833, 838–41, 853
- Taylor, Ian T.  
*In the Minds of Men*, 574n, 892–93, 895
- Taylor, Kenneth N.  
*Evolution and the High School Student*, 620n
- Taylor, Paul  
*Great Dinosaur Mystery, The* (video), 898, 907  
*Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible, The*, 907
- technology, 22, 877
- Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre, 45, 50, 376n, 468, 510, 558, 577–602, 610–11, 610n, 617, 623, 636, 638, 667, 671  
*Activation of Energy*, 594n  
 attempts of, to merge Christianity and evolution, 579, 581–82, 586–90, 594n, 597, 599  
 attempts of, to merge religion and science, 579–81, 591, 594–95, 655

## GENERAL INDEX

- blasphemy of, 587n, 597–98  
 chiliasm of, 34, 590, 596, 656  
*Christianity and Evolution*, 585n, 588n  
 on Communism/Marxism, 590–91, 591n, 599n  
*Heart of Matter, The*, 578–79n, 581n, 585n, 587n, 596n  
 involved in the discovery of Piltdown Man, 384, 469, 577, 577n  
 jargon of, 582–83, 607  
 and Julian Huxley, 579, 579n, 593n, 621  
*Letters to Leontine Zanta*, 594n  
 love for the world/earth of, 578–79n, 581n, 583–86, 592, 594n  
 as “mystic,” 578, 583, 588, 596, 598, 655  
 the new, “mutated” Christianity of, 580n, 584, 585n, 586–89, 588n, 594, 594n  
 the “new revelation” of, 582, 586, 595–97  
 “Orthodox” endorsement of the thought of, 561, 577, 581–82, 582n, 593n, 598–601, 612, 621, 654  
 pantheism/panteism of, 282, 580, 585n, 594, 594n  
*Phenomenon of Man, The*, 579, 579n, 585n, 593n, 598  
 as a predecessor of Antichrist, 282, 595, 597, 655  
 as “prophet,” 577, 581–82, 583, 593, 595  
 “religion of the future” of, 587–88, 594n, 611  
 and the “Sacred Heart,” 596, 596n  
*Science and Christ*, 585n, 594n  
 as scientist, 384, 468–70, 577–78, 577n, 578n  
 spiritual experiences of, 578–79n, 581n  
 and Theodosius Dobzhansky, 577, 581–82, 582–83nn, 593n, 612, 654  
 unitary view of, 582–83, 582–83n, 587, 592, 612, 654–55  
 worship of matter by, 578–79n  
*Temporarily Open* (television program), 71n  
 temptation, 231, 288, 402, 507n, 813  
   of Adam (*see* Adam: temptation of)  
   of Eve (*see* Eve: temptation of)  
   of Job, 476  
 Tertullian, 317n, 320n, 412, 913–14, 916  
 TeSelle, Eugene  
   *Augustine the Theologian*, 115n  
 Thaddeus (Uspensky), Archbishop of Tver, Hieromartyr, 801, 802  
   on evolutionary naturalism, 801–2  
 Thailand, 837  
 Thaxton, Charles B., Walter L. Bradley, and Roger L. Olsen  
   *Mystery of Life's Origin, The*, 54, 607n  
 theistic evolutionism, 81, 81n, 509–10, 514, 549, 606–7, 643, 663n, 812n, 823n. *See also* “Christian evolutionism”; “Orthodox evolutionism”  
 Theodore the Great Ascetic, St., 938, 939, 939n  
   on man’s original state and on his fall, 696–67  
 Theodore the Studite (the Confessor), St., 938, 938–39  
   on Christ reopening Paradise to man, 759  
 Theodoret of Cyrus, Blessed, 158n, 197n, 203n, 205n, 254n, 255n, 275–76n, 288, 317n, 320n, 352n, 412n, 491n, 694, 884, 930  
   on animals before the fall, 706  
   on Cain’s wife, 303n  
   on the creation of man, 211–12  
   on death, 745–46  
   on the distinction between Paradise and heaven, 222n  
   on the interpretation of Scripture, 122–23n, 228n  
   on Noah, 347n, 356n  
   on the tree of knowledge, 393n  
   on why God allowed man to eat meat after the Flood, 329n  
   on why God created plants before the heavenly lights, 171n  
 Theodosius of Chernigov, St., 574  
 Theodosius I, the Great, Emperor, St., 927  
 Theodosius II, Emperor, 929  
 Theokritoff, George and Elizabeth  
   “Genesis and Creation: Towards a Debate,” 88

## GENERAL INDEX

- Theoleptus, Metropolitan of Philadelphia, St., 942, 943–44  
on God's relationship with Adam before the fall, 85n
- theology, 29, 59, 70, 111, 420, 448, 625–26, 639, 908–10, 932, 932n  
based on Divine revelation, 27, 75, 77, 504, 623, 650  
in the book of Genesis, 40, 449  
and evolutionism, 84, 426, 428n, 465, 468, 510–11, 543–44, 559–60, 567–68, 582, 605–10, 612–17, 620–21, 628, 640–45, 657–60, 659n, 671, 784, 809–12  
modernist, 37, 42n, 91, 411, 542, 542n, 544–45, 577, 598–601, 615–16, 886
- Orthodox Patristic, 27, 33, 42, 49, 59n, 64–67, 75–77, 84, 86n, 118, 124, 277–78, 281, 391, 426, 428n, 431, 447, 455, 461, 465–68, 481, 482n, 489, 493n, 497, 501–5, 507n, 511, 544, 551, 559–60, 564, 566, 598, 605, 622–23, 651n, 660, 662, 673, 689–92, 698, 715n, 731, 739n, 740–41, 779, 787, 810n, 822, 887, 913, 915–16, 922, 928, 931, 941, 944–45, 950
- Pauline, 783n
- Protestant, 422, 476, 660–61, 664n (*see also* Protestantism)
- Roman Catholic, 281, 422, 465, 481–82, 482n, 493n, 501, 567, 579, 586, 621, 661, 715n (*see also* Roman Catholicism)
- and science, 37, 66, 75, 84, 118, 133, 419, 426, 449, 458, 468, 502–5, 505n, 508, 535, 601, 606, 608–9, 614, 620, 637–38, 640–43, 650–51, 657–59, 662, 666, 668, 670, 673, 820–21
- Theology Digest*, 568
- Théon, Max, 34n
- Theophan the Recluse, St., 64, 460n, 506n, 638, 655, 693n, 731, 731n, 735n, 787–94  
on evolutionism, 788–92  
on spiritual and scientific knowledge, 793–94
- Theophanes, Monk of Mount Athos, 656n
- Theophanes the Cretan, Monk, frescos by, 126, 236–37, 322, 369, 407, 441, 496, 912, 918, 920–21, 924–26, 928, 937
- Theophanes the Greek, frescos by, 196, 309–11, 313, 331
- Theophilus of Antioch, St., 156n, 162n, 197n, 217n, 692n, 887, 911–12  
on animals before the fall, 705–6, 731–32  
on the Biblical chronology, 315n, 912n, 915  
on the Flood, 335n, 337n  
on the tree of knowledge, 232n  
on why God created plants before the heavenly lights, 168n  
on the world before the fall, 704
- Theophylact of Ohrid and Bulgaria, Blessed, 212n, 337n, 731, 731n, 735n, 942, 943  
on Christ's glorified body, 693n, 766, 768, 771n  
on the genealogy of Christ, 631n
- Theosebia, St., 921
- theosis*. *See* deification
- thief on the cross (good thief, wise thief), 225, 390
- Third Age of the Holy Spirit (concept of Joachim of Fiore), 597, 597n, 600
- Thomas, Apostle, 629, 766, 767
- Thomas, Brian  
"Dinosaur Soft Tissues," 897  
"Hadrosaur Soft Tissues Another Blow to Long-Ages Myth," 897
- Thompson, Damian  
*End of Time, The*, 546n
- thought(s)  
discernment of, 918  
"double," 85, 397  
evil, 226, 713–14, 812, 816  
God's, 145, 403–4, 467  
human faculty of, 143, 295, 430, 467, 481, 488, 546, 552, 709, 772, 802, 814  
man's, before the fall, 85, 228, 249, 397, 713  
mastery and control over, 206, 226, 295
- Tigris River, 224–25, 362, 406, 408

## GENERAL INDEX

- Tikhon, Patriarch of Moscow and All Russia,  
 Hiero-confessor, 796, 799, 801  
*Time* (magazine), 378  
*Times Literary Supplement*, 890  
*TJ*. See *Journal of Creation*
- Törönen, Melchisedec  
*Union and Distinction in the Thought of St. Maximus the Confessor*, 86n
- Tower of Babel, 360–63, **364–66**, 367, 677  
 dispersion of humanity after, 360–62, 362n, 367, 901
- tradition  
 evolutionism and Christian, 597, 600, 654, 657  
 human reason exalted above Christian, 536–38, 537n  
 of the Orthodox Church and her Holy Fathers, 31, 32n, 44, 65, 74, 80, 125, 127, 316, 332n, 388, 433, 446, 463, 467, 482n, 485, 491–92, 501, 507n, 635, 654, 656n, 698n, 715n, 913, 947, 950  
 of the Prophet Moses, 409  
 of true worship in the Old Testament, 315
- Transfiguration of Christ, 448. See also Tabor, Mount
- transfiguration of man by Christ, 203, 673
- transfiguration of the world at the general resurrection, 82, 348, 762, 885. See also created order: transformation/transfiguration/renewal/re-creation/restoration of, at the general resurrection
- transformism, evolutionary, 427–28n, 429n, 880n
- transitional (intermediate) forms  
 alleged, 97, 520n, 525–26, 526nn, 569, 585n, 831, 833–34, 835n, 836, 841, 853  
 lack of, 53, 53n, 97, 382n, 520n, 523, 525–26, 526nn, 809, 832–34, 836–38, 840–41, 848, 853, 895
- transmigration of souls. See reincarnation/transmigration of souls
- tree of life, 222, 224, 227–28, 228n, 231, 276–77, 276n, 572, 692  
 as an actual tree, 227, 228n  
 double (material and immaterial) aspect of, 228  
 man could have lived forever by eating from, 276, 276n, 694n, 743–44  
 tree of the knowledge of good and evil, 222, 224, 226–34, 231n, 232n, 251, **254**, 255, **258**, 259, **260**, 263, 269, 271–72, 276n, 349–50, 392–93, 392–93n, 395, 472–73, 701n, 716–17, 734, 742, 745, 745n, 752  
 as an actual tree, 42–43, 119–20, 227, 228n, 446n, 446–48, 619  
 compared with the tree of Christ's Cross, 249n, 277–78, 280, 281n, 282, 775  
 name of, 228n, 393n  
 as a symbol of contemplation, 119–20, 230, 446–48, 619
- tree-ring dating, 372
- trees, **20**, 82–83, 148, 344, 389, 897  
 created before the sun, 135, 167–68, 375, 429  
 created with the appearance of age, 138, 144, 167, 193–94, 194n, 438, 552  
 creation of, 138, 144, 165–68, **166**, 181, 193–94, 194n, 438, 552  
 distinctness and fixity of the kinds of, 168, 182, 187, 426, 550–51  
 fruit of (see fruits)  
 given to animals for food in the beginning, 207–8  
 given to man for food in the beginning, 83, 207–8, 222, 222n, 227, 255, 453, 463, 489 (see also tree of life)  
 growth, development, and variation of, not the same as Darwinian evolution, 92, 98, 424, 427  
 incorruption of, before the fall, 82–83, 223, 456, 547, 705  
 in Paradise, 83, 222–23, 222n, 227, 229, 231, 255, 257, 259, 446n, 456, 463, 489
- Trempeles, Panagiotis, 544–45, 559–61, 598
- Triadology, 42. See also Holy Trinity
- Tribrachidium*, 523

## GENERAL INDEX

- Trinity–Sypanov St. Pachomius of Nerekhta  
Convent, Russia, fresco from, **688**
- Trooster, Stephanus, 569–70  
*Evolution and the Doctrine of Original Sin*,  
569
- Troyan Monastery, Bulgaria, icon from, **395**
- Truman, Royal, 847
- Turkey/Turks, 939n, 944, 946
- turtles, 521, 834, 838
- Tver, Russia, 801
- typology. *See* Scriptural interpretation: typological
- Tyrannosaurus rex*, 854–55n, 896–97
- Tzortzis, frescos by, **294**, **916**, **927**
- UFOs. *See* extraterrestrials
- Ukraine/Ukrainians, 869, 947
- Uncreated Light, 403, 447–48, 488, 619,  
772, 818, 944. *See also* Energies of God,  
Uncreated; grace
- UNESCO (United Nations Educational, Sci-  
entific and Cultural Organization), 23
- uniformitarianism, 380, 456, 880, 880n,  
886, 894  
assumptions of, 53, 96n, 102, 219, 373,  
387, 517, 517–18n, 530, 669, 861n,  
881  
evolutionism and, 370–71n, 462n,  
517–18, 517–18n  
history of, 462n, 517–18, 517–18n  
inspired Darwin, 53, 462n, 517–18n  
time scale of (*see* evolutionary/uniformitar-  
ian time scale)
- Unitarianism, 654
- unity of religions, 563, 587, 654
- universal salvation, false teaching of, 654,  
915, 923, 923n
- universalism, 592, 609n, 654–55
- University of California, 24
- University of California, Berkeley, 26, 47, 54,  
93, 381, 634
- University of California, Davis, 574
- University of Chicago, 22
- University of Connecticut, 470n
- University of Edinburgh, 633
- University of Oklahoma, 523n
- University of Queensland, Brisbane, Austra-  
lia, 860
- University of South Carolina, Lancaster, 902
- University of Southampton, England, 46
- University of Western Australia, Perth, 902
- Unlocking the Mystery of Life* (video), 888–89,  
891
- Upjohn Company, 681n
- Ur, Ziggurat of, **363**
- uranium decay dating, 529, 529n, 531, 532n,  
862. *See also* radiometric (radioisotope)  
dating
- Uranus, 903n
- Usener, Hermann, 335n
- Ussher, Archbishop James, 515, 516n
- Valentinianism. *See* Gnosticism: Valentinian  
vanity, 471  
as futility or corruption, 271n (*see also* fu-  
tility: as corruption)
- Vardiman, Larry  
*Age of the Earth's Atmosphere, The*, 533n  
*Climates before and after the Genesis Flood*,  
404–5n  
“New Creationist Cosmology, A,” 903n  
*Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth*, 531n,  
894–95  
*Sea-Floor Sediments and the Age of the Earth*,  
901  
“Sensitivity Studies on Vapor Canopy  
Temperature Profiles,” 404–5n  
“Temperature Profiles for an Optimized  
Water Vapor Canopy,” 404–5n
- variation, biological, 385, 829, 832, 837,  
843, 889, 891–92, 909  
distinguished from evolution, 39–40, 95,  
99, 102, 132–33, 181n, 383n, 386, 424,  
470, 514–15, 515n, 519, 519n, 528,  
669–70, 674n, 826–28, 830  
referred to as “microevolution,” 826–27,  
833
- Varlaam (Nikol'sky), Abbot, Hieromartyr,  
**802**, 802–3
- Vatican II (Council), 567n

## GENERAL INDEX

- Vatopaidi Monastery, Mount Athos, frescos from, 918, 943
- vegetarianism. *See* plants (vegetation, herbs): given to man and animals as their only source of food in the beginning; plants (vegetation, herbs): as man's only food until after the Flood
- Veith, Gene Edward  
 "Admitting Its Mistakes," 527n
- Venantius Fortunatus, Bishop of Poitiers, St., 917
- Venus, 163, 375
- Vert'yanov, Sergei Y.  
*General Biology*, 71, 906, 909  
*Origin of Life: Facts, Hypotheses, Evidence, The*, 909
- "vestigial" organs, 522, 522n, 853
- virgin birth of Christ. *See* Jesus Christ, Lord: virgin birth of
- virginity  
 of Adam and Eve in Paradise, 75n, 203–5, 247, 249, 267–68n, 280n, 290, 494–95n, 548, 694–95, 721–22, 721n (*see also* man [humanity]: virginity and dispassionateness of, before the fall)  
 as higher than marriage, 205  
 of man in the general resurrection, 291  
 of Noah until the age of five hundred, 324n
- virtue, 185–86, 275, 318, 554, 743, 921  
 of the angels, 400n, 711, 765  
 belongs to man's nature, 475–76, 714  
 cultivation, practice, and pursuit of, 86, 424, 811, 942  
 of Job, 476  
 of man in the beginning, 251, 256, 472–73, 475, 711, 714, 765  
 of Noah, 324, 324n, 328, 333–34n
- Visigoths, 934
- vision, Divine, 78, 86n, 127, 227, 230, 251, 455, 457–60, 472, 489, 493–95, 497, 562, 661, 710, 761n, 771, 886
- visions of Paradise and heaven, 128, 220–24, 223n, 252, 390, 399, 406–7, 547
- Vivekananda, Swami, 34n, 497n
- Vladimir (Bogoyavlensky), Metropolitan of Kiev and Gallich, Hieromartyr, 796, 797  
 on evolutionism, 796–97
- Vladimir, Russia, fresco from, 774
- Voegelin, Eric, 856, 856n
- Voices for Evolution*, 91n
- volcanoes, 363, 374n, 406, 532n, 863–66, 870, 870n, 900
- Volokolamsk region, Russia, 804
- Voltaire (François-Marie Arouet)  
*Candide*, 622
- Vorob'yëv, Sergei  
*Law of God, The*, 909
- Voronet Monastery, Moldavia, Romania, frescos from, 287, 293
- Voyager 2 spacecraft, 903n
- Vulgate version of the Bible, 140n, 926
- Waddington, C. H.  
*Principles of Embryology*, 633
- Wallachia, 944, 947
- watchfulness. *See* sobriety/watchfulness (*nepsis*)
- water vapor canopy theory, 404–5n
- water(s), 250, 332n, 374n, 455, 485, 517, 706, 827, 853, 875–76  
 creation of, 149, 154, 155n  
 creations "brought forth" from, 136, 150, 154, 175, 177, 179, 439  
 of the Flood, 162–63, 327, 331, 334–35, 334–35nn, 337n, 338–44, 341n, 345n, 350, 404, 405n  
 gathering together of, on the Third Day, 136, 139n, 164–65, 171, 807  
 Genesis references to, are not merely symbolic, 120–22, 121n, 224, 434, 444, 446n  
 of the land (ground) in the beginning, 162, 210, 224–25, 704–5, 708, 808–9 (*see also* Paradise [Eden]: rivers of)  
 not a natural property of, to bring forth life, 181 (*see also* earth: not a natural property of, to bring forth life)
- obedience to the command of God of, 136, 164, 179

## GENERAL INDEX

- water(s) (*continued*)  
 “salvation by,” 341, 341n, 344n, 755 (*see also* Baptism, Holy)  
 separation of, above and below the firmament, on the Second Day, 121n, 159, 404  
 Spirit “moves” or “hovers” over, 147, 150 (*see also* Holy Spirit: as Creator)  
*See also* seas/oceans  
 Weismann, August, 540n  
 Weiss, Kenneth M., 853  
 “How the Eye Got Its Brain,” 841n  
 Wells, Jonathan  
 “Abusing Theology,” 91n, 115n  
*Icons of Evolution*, 95n, 521n  
*Myth of Junk DNA, The*, 852n  
 “Second Thoughts about Peppered Moths,” 95n  
 West, Morris L.  
*Shoes of the Fisherman, The*, 610  
 West, Ronald R.  
 “Paleontology and Uniformitarianism,” 523n  
 Western civilization/society, 28, 50, 81, 505n, 533, 805, 823  
 Western Europe, 28, 492, 535, 794, 805, 934  
 Western influence/captivity, 437, 492, 497, 507n, 598, 624, 632, 635–36, 662  
 Western philosophy/thought/mentality, 25, 28, 50, 420, 428, 437, 447, 465–66, 497, 505n, 512, 534n, 535, 542n, 618, 625–26, 639, 662, 715n, 790, 794, 799, 805, 823  
 Westernizing reforms of Peter I, 315n  
 whales, 840  
 creation of, 179, 180  
 hypothetical evolution of, 608n, 834–36, 835nn, 838  
*What Is Enlightenment?*, 497n  
 Whitcomb, John C.  
*Genesis Flood, The*, 48, 338, 373, 373n, 409, 672n, 896, 900  
 Whitehead, Alfred North, 34n  
 Wieland, Carl  
 “Creation in the Physics Lab,” 903n  
 “Dinosaur Soft Tissue and Protein,” 897  
*Dragons of the Deep*, 907  
*One Blood: The Biblical Answer to Racism*, 892  
 “Sensational Dinosaur Blood Report,” 896  
 Wilber, Ken, 34n  
 “Kosmic Roller-Coaster Ride, A,” 593n  
 will of God, 31n, 223, 325, 402n  
 the world created by, 136, 146, 158, 165 (*see also* creation: as a free act of God’s will)  
 William of Auxerre, 494  
 Williams, Alex  
*Dismantling the Big Bang*, 906  
 Wilson, Jeffrey  
 “Pre-Fall Physics,” 75n  
 wine, 352, 354  
 Winning, Cardinal Thomas J., 571n  
 woman  
 creation of (*see* Eve, creation of)  
 “debt of gratitude” of, paid by the Mother of God, 242–43, 280–81n  
 distinction between man and (*see* male and female distinction in man)  
 enmity between the serpent (devil) and, 253, 265–67, 267–68n  
 of the same nature as man, 234, 240, 242–43, 247, 303n, 394  
 “seed” of, 265–67, 267–68n  
*See also* Eve; man (humanity)  
 Woodmorappe, John  
 “Fossil Record: Becoming More Random All the Time, The,” 524n  
*Mythology of Modern Dating Methods, The*, 895  
*Noah’s Ark: A Feasibility Study*, 332n, 899  
*Studies in Flood Geology*, 524, 901  
 Word (*Logos*) of God, 199n, 263n, 460, 652n, 738–39n, 755, 768n  
 as Creator, 117n, 141, 146, 146n, 147n, 150, 156n, 159n, 165, 181, 183, 189n, 193, 198, 212n, 216, 395, 440, 443, 552 (*see also* Jesus Christ, Lord: as Creator)

## GENERAL INDEX

- logoi* of created things contained within, 86n  
 uninterrupted Providence of, 687  
*See also* Jesus Christ, Lord; Son of God  
 world. *See* age of the world; created order; end of the world; first-created world  
 “world soul.” *See* “soul of the world,” false idea of  
 World War II, 590, 876  
 worldview, 70, 871, 905  
   Enlightenment, 28, 515–16, 534, 536–537, 539  
   evolutionary, 21–22, 26, 60, 80, 534, 539, 559, 576, 597, 778–81, 781n, 788, 807, 812n, 858  
   modern secular, 80, 690–91, 801, 908  
   naturalistic, 37, 652n, 871  
   Orthodox Scriptural-Patristic, 27, 36, 40, 43, 50, 72, 80, 84, 114, 452n, 498, 504, 597, 674, 690–91, 778–81, 781n, 788, 801, 812n, 905  
   scientific, 119, 534, 539, 673–74  
   “unitary,” 583, 655  
 Yolla Bolly, Mount, 20  
 Young, Arthur M., 34n  
 Young, Fr. Alexey (now Hieroschemamonk Ambrose), 37–38, 37n, 44–45, 49, 52, 76, 558, 580n, 605–6, 609n, 611–14, 616–19, 624, 627–30, 632, 635, 645  
   *A Man Is His Faith*, 505n  
 Yugoslavia, 837  
 Zachariah, Prophet, 565  
 Zachariah, Righteous, father of St. John the Baptist, 491n  
 zeitgeist. *See* “spirit of the age”/“spirit of the times”/zeitgeist  
 Zharikov, Yuri, 76, 184n, 860, 890, 907, 1044  
   “Biological Evidence and the Neo-Darwinian Paradigm,” 383n, 822–60  
 ziggurats, 362, 363  
 zoology/zoologists, 22, 25, 70, 76, 83, 99, 184n, 383n, 384, 519–20, 607, 633, 806–7, 860, 890, 907  
   textbook of, 423, 469, 519–21, 520n  
 Zuckerman, Solly (Baron Zuckerman), 383n  
*Zygon: Journal of Religion & Science*, 575n, 576n, 582–83n





## ST. HERMAN OF ALASKA BROTHERHOOD

Since 1965, the St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood has been publishing Orthodox Christian books and magazines.

Write for our free catalog, featuring over fifty titles.

St. Herman of Alaska Brotherhood  
P. O. Box 70, Platina, CA 96076 USA

You can also view our catalog and order online, at

[www.sainthermanpress.com](http://www.sainthermanpress.com)